



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

卷之五 雜著 四庫全書



Per. 2621 dr.  $\frac{53}{3}$



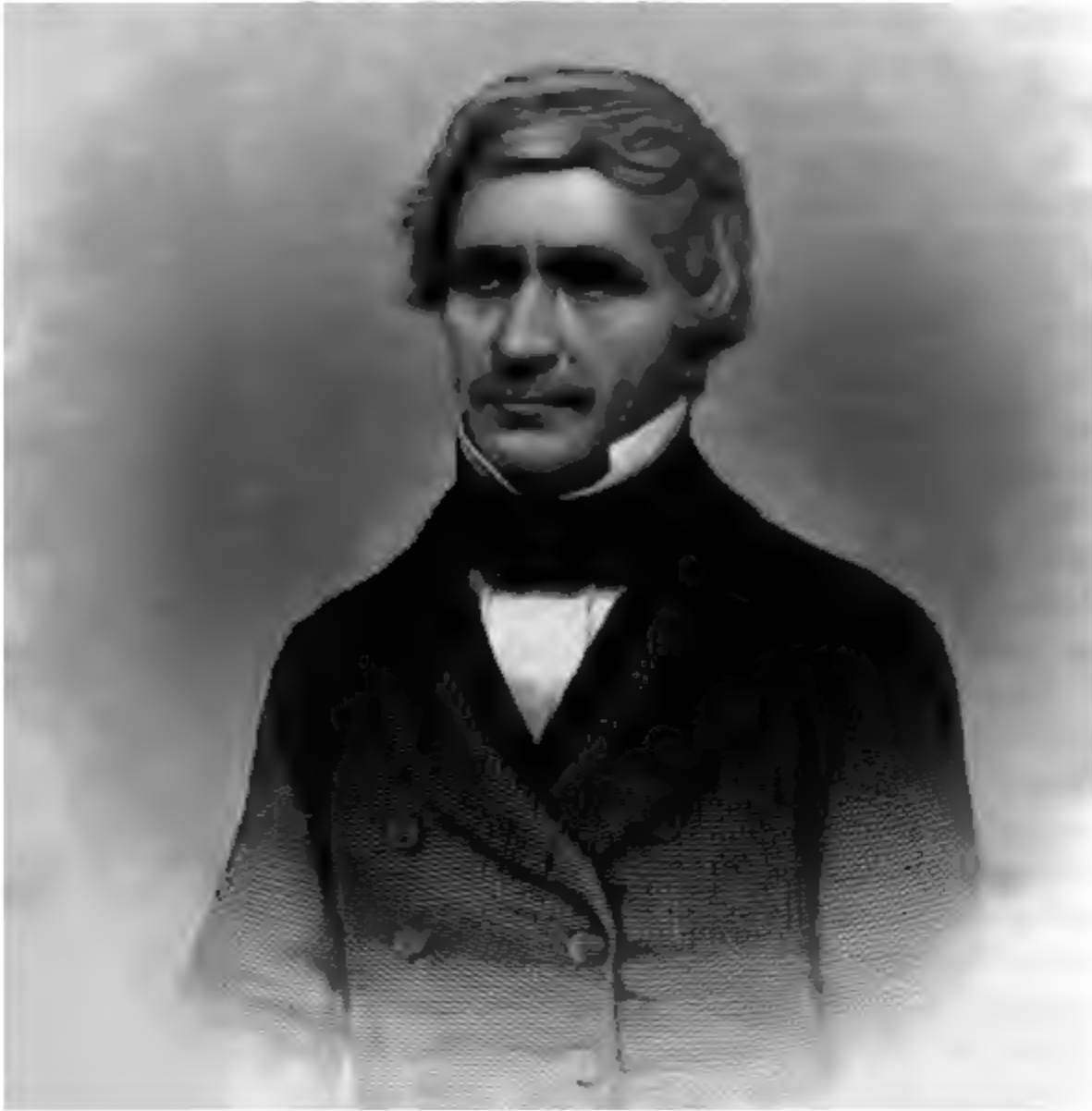












Author "The Home"

*J. H. Wichern*



*Author "The Home"*

THE  
AMERICAN  
Journal of Education.

EDITED BY  
HENRY BARNARD, LL.D.

---

VOLUME III.

---

HARTFORD, F. C. BROWNELL.  
LONDON: TRÜBNER & CO., 12 PATERNOSTER ROW.  
1857.



1

---

**ENTERED, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1857, by**

**HENRY BARNARD,**

**In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of Connecticut.**

---



THE  
American Journal of Education.

No. VIII.—MARCH, 1857.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
<b>PORTRAIT OF JOHN HENRY WICHERN</b> .....	1
Founder of the Rough House, or Institute of Rescue at Horn, near Hamburg. ....	1
<b>I. J. H. WICHERN AND THE ROUGH HOUSE</b> .....	5
Illustrations— <i>Figure</i> 1. Perspective of Grounds and Buildings .....	7
"        "        2. Plan of Sites and Walks .....	9
<b>II. REFORMATORY EDUCATION</b> .....	10
The Rough House near Hamburg .....	10
Parkhurst Prison for Juvenile Criminals .....	19
<b>III. ROGER ASCHAM</b> .....	23
Biography .....	23
Landor's Imaginary Conversation between Roger Ascham and Lady Jane Grey ..	30
<b>IV. TOXOPHILUS: or the Scholē of Shootinge.</b> By Roger Ascham .....	41
The Recreations of Scholars .....	41
<b>V. CULTIVATION OF THE FACULTIES OF EXPRESSION.</b> By William Russell, Normal Institute, Lancaster, Mass. ....	49
<b>VI. COLLEGE GOVERNMENT—or the Student's Code of Honor.</b> By Horace Mann, LL.D.	65
<b>VII. LETTERS TO A YOUNG TEACHER.</b> By Gideon F. Thayer, Boston, Mass. ....	71
Moral Education .....	71
<b>VIII. DUTY OF THE STATE IN REGARD TO EDUCATION.</b> By D. Bethune Duffield, De- troit, Michigan .....	81
<b>IX. PHILOLOGICAL CONTRIBUTIONS.</b> By Prof. Josiah W. Gibbs, D.D. ....	101
English Conjugation .....	101
<b>X. MENTAL SCIENCE—AS A BRANCH OF POPULAR EDUCATION.</b> By Prof. Joseph Ha- ven, A. M., Amherst College, Mass. ....	125
<b>IX. WILLIAM RUSSELL</b> .....	130
Portrait .....	130
Biographical Sketch .....	130
List of Publications .....	144
<b>XII. AMERICAN ASSOCIATION FOR THE ADVANCEMENT OF SCIENCE</b> .....	147
<b>XIII. THE SCHOOL AND THE TEACHER IN LITERATURE</b> .....	155
Rev. Thomas Fuller, D. D. ....	155
<i>The Good Schoolmaster</i> .....	155
Oliver Goldsmith .....	158
<i>The Village Schoolmaster</i> .....	158
James Delille .....	158
<i>The Village Schoolmaster in France</i> .....	159
Robert Lloyd .....	160
<i>Wretchedness of a Poor Usher</i> .....	160
<b>XIV. QUALIFICATIONS OF A LEXICOGRAPHER OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE</b> .....	161
A Review of Webster's American Dictionary of the English Language. By Isaiah Dole, A. M., Gorham, Maine. ....	161
<b>XV. PUBLIC HIGH SCHOOL</b> .....	185
Its Objects and Advantages .....	185

	PAGE
<b>XVI. FREE ACADEMY AT NORWICH, CONN.</b> .....	190
Address at Inauguration, by Dr. Wayland, of Providence, .....	193
"                "                President Woolsey, of Yale College .....	194
"                "                President Goodwin, of Trinity College .....	195
"                "                Prof. Noah Porter, of Yale College .....	200
"                "                Prof. Worthington Hooker, " .....	203
"                "                President Smith, Wesleyan University .....	204
"                "                Mr. Barnard .....	205
"                "                Mr. Elbridge Smith .....	208
<b>XVII. AN AMERICAN UNIVERSITY.</b> By an Alabamian .....	213
<b>XVIII. TRANSYLVANIA UNIVERSITY AND STATE NORMAL SCHOOL, KENTUCKY.</b> .....	219
<b>XIX. EDUCATIONAL MISCELLANY AND INTELLIGENCE</b> .....	220
<b>UNITED STATES</b> .....	220
New Jersey State Normal School .....	220
Illustrations— <i>Figure</i> 1. Perspective .....	221
"                "                2. First Floor .....	223
"                "                3. Second Floor .....	224
"                "                4. Third Floor .....	225
New Jersey Farnum Preparatory Normal School .....	222
Baltimore Public Library, Lectures, and Gallery of Fine Arts .....	226
Donation of George Peabody, to the City of Baltimore .....	226
<b>BELGIUM</b> .....	231
International Philanthropic Congress .....	231
<b>SCOTLAND</b> .....	200
Lord Elgin's Address at Glasgow .....	200
<b>ENGLAND</b> .....	241
Lyceums, Mechanic Institutions and Libraries .....	241
Inauguration of the Lyceum at Oldham .....	241
<i>Address of Lord Stanley</i> .....	241
<i>Address of Sir J. P. K. Shuttleworth</i> .....	240
<i>Address of W. J. Fox</i> .....	250
Salford Royal Museum and Library .....	251
Mechanics Institute at Manchester .....	251
Lewes Mechanics' Institution .....	252
<i>Lecture of Rev. Dr. Booth</i> .....	252
Sir E. Bulwer Lytton's Address to the Boys of the Bishop Stortford High School .....	259
United Association of Schoolmasters .....	262
<i>List of Lecturers</i> .....	262
<i>Discussion on the Religious Test of Membership</i> .....	263
<i>Lecture of Rev. Dr. Booth</i> .....	265
New Educational Museum .....	270
Economic Library .....	271
<b>IRELAND</b> .....	272
Twenty-Second Annual Report of Commissioners of National Education .....	272
<b>GERMANY</b> .....	273
Correspondence of Hermann Wimmer, Ph. D. .....	273
Dr. Charles Vogel .....	273
Dr. Adolphus Diesterweg .....	273
Charles Justus Blöckman .....	274
Pestalozzian Foundation in Dresden .....	274
Normal School for Female Teachers in Saxony .....	274
Austria—Real Schools .....	275
Educational Statistics for 1856 .....	278
Mecklenberg .....	278
<b>XX. OBITUARY</b> .....	279
Rev Thomas Robbins, D. D. .....	279
Thomas Dowse .....	284
<b>NOTICES</b> .....	288
Reformatory Conference in New York .....	288
Normal Institute at Lancaster, Mass. .....	288

## I. JOHN HENRY WICHERN.

Founder of the Rough House, or Institution of Rescue at Horn, near Hamburg.

---

JOHN HENRY WICHERN, whose name will ever be associated with one of the most interesting educational and reformatory movements of the age, as founder and superintendent of the Rough House, (*Rauhe Haus*,) near Hamburg, was born in that city on the 21st of April, 1808.\* His father was a notary and sworn translator, and gave his son the advantages of the best education which Hamburg afforded. He attended the *Johanneum* and the academic gymnasium of his native city, and afterward, till 1830, pursued a course of theological study at Göttingen and Berlin. Soon after passing his examination in theology at Hamburg, he went practically to work, visiting the poor and the needy in the corners and the streets of the city, and undertaking the direction of a free Sunday school for poor children, in which he soon assembled four or five hundred scholars and about forty volunteer teachers. Wichern declined the propositions made him at this time to enter upon the duties of a clergyman, as his thoughts were already occupied in planning such an institution as he opened near Hamburg, in the *Rough House*, at Micheltas, 1833.

The Rough House, (*Rauhe Haus*,) was the name, by which a small property, on a lane leading out of the village of Horn, four miles from Hamburg was known, consisting of small thatched cottage, shadowed by a large chestnut tree, and two or three acres of ground partially cleared up, through which straggled a little brook. In the prosecution of a plan, suggested by his missionary labors among the poor of Hamburg, of establishing a House of Rescue for destitute, vagrant, and vicious children, not yet convicted by the courts of crime, Mr. Wichern, aided by a voluntary association of like minded men, and by a small donation of three hundred dollars, took possession of this rough cottage with his mother, and in a few weeks received into his family three boys of the worst description, and adopted them as his children. One by one, he added to their number from the same class until his family circle, with himself and mother, embraced fourteen persons—twelve of them, the least hopeful of the juvenile population of the city. And there under that thatched roof, with that unpromising ground, with the help of his devout mother, with a well spring of Christian charity in the hearts, and words of kindness on the lips of both, Mr. Wichern succeeded in inspiring those children with the attachments of a home—in cultivating filial affections, almost dormant—

---

\* We are indebted for the principal facts of this Memoir to the *Conversations-Lexicon*.



in forming habits of profitable industry, and laying the foundations of a good moral character on which they subsequently built up a useful life. From these small beginnings, without the aid at any time of large governmental grants, and of but one large legacy [of \$13,500,] the institution has expanded, until in 1854, the grounds included thirty-two acres, portions of which are tastefully laid out in walks and shrubbery, and all of which are highly cultivated; to the original Rough House have been added fourteen buildings of plain but substantial construction, scattered in a picturesque manner about the grounds, and the principles of Family Organization, Christian Training and Industrial occupation have been preserved and improved, until it has become the working model for a new order of preventive and reformatory agencies in every country of Europe.

Since 1840, as the foundation of asylums for destitute children has followed in Germany, France and England, Dr.\* Wichern has aided various enterprises of a similar character. He had already united under the name of the Inner Mission almost all active efforts in Germany for the moral and religious improvement of the destitute and vicious, when chiefly through his instrumentality, the Central Committee for the Inner Mission, was appointed at the first Ecclesiastical Convention, (*die Kirchen-Tag*), at Wittenberg, in Sept. 1848. Through this committee of which he was a member, Wichern gained a much wider field for his activity. At the annual meeting of the *Kirchen-Tag*, and on his travels in every part of Germany he aids by word and deed the establishment of societies and institutions for the promotion of education, and the care of the sick, poor and imprisoned.

Upon his return from a journey to England in 1851, the Prussian government employed him to visit the houses of correction, and prisons of the kingdom, and to attempt their improvement. Prevented by these active duties from literary exertions he has published but little. His work on "the Inner Mission of the German Evangelical Church" (Hamb. 1849,) presents his principles concerning free christian charity and its relations to the ecclesiastical and social questions of the day. Since 1844 he has published the "Flying Leaves of the Rough House," (*Fliegende Blätter des Rauhen Hause*), in which are contained a portion of the addresses which he has made at the different ecclesiastical conventions.

The accompanying diagrams, copied from a number of the "Flying Leaves," exhibit the outward aspects of the Rough House, as they appeared to the Editor of this Journal in 1854,—and the article which follows, will present the principles on which it has been conducted.

---

\* In 1851, he received from the University of Halle, the degree of Doctor of Philology.



MAINE HOUSE—near Hallowell—Maine.

Entering the grounds, which are enclosed only by a hedge, at the gate which fronts the chapel, on the right, (1,) is the original Rough House, the cradle of the institution, and just back of it the large chestnut tree, beneath which so many happy reunions have been celebrated. In the Rough House are accommodations for a family of twelve boys, the chief of this family and several of the brothers. There is also an apartment where the new comers are received until they can be distributed into their appropriate groups, and the business office. Passing up the gravelled walk, is a side path to the left, which leads to the (2,) Book Bindery, (*Buch-binderei*), and (3,) the Stereotype Foundry, in which some of the inmates are employed under trained workmen. Further to the left (4,) stands the Swiss House, (*Schweizer-Haus*), erected in 1834. This is the Porter's Lodge and the Printing Office, with accommodations for a family of twelve boys, and their chief, and two brothers. Directly beyond the lodge and the bindery is the lake, into which the labor of the boys has expanded the once straggling brook, and on its borders droop the willow and the ash, beneath which (16,) stands the Fisherman's Hut, (*Fischerhütte*), erected in 1846, for the residence of a group of boys, with two brothers.

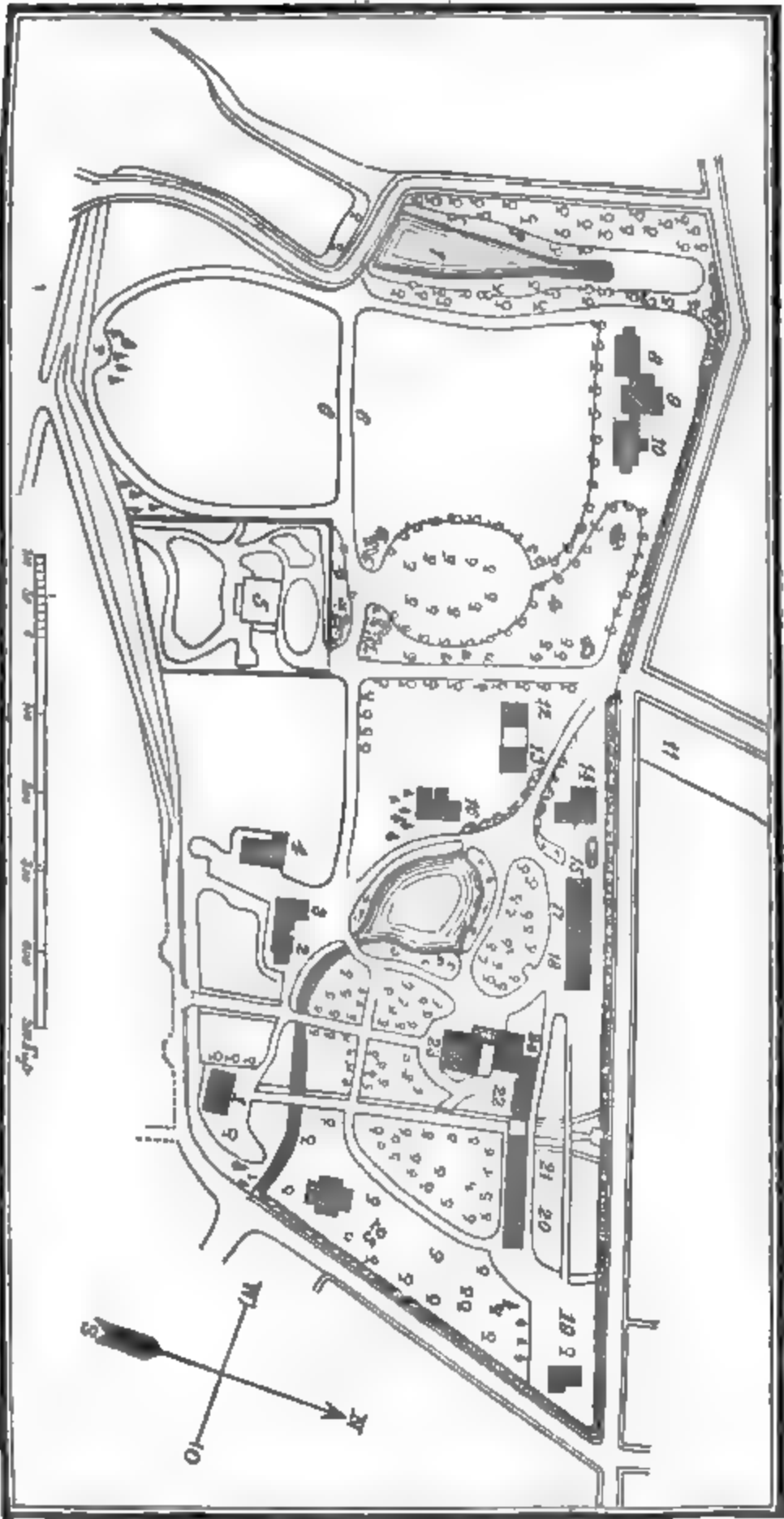
On the right and just beyond the Rough House, stands (25,) a new dwelling erected in 1853, for the residence of a family of twelve boys, and a circle of brothers and assistants. The structure is very convenient, and the cost was about \$1,500. In the northeast corner of the grounds, (16,) is the Bee Hive, (*Bienenkorb*), erected in 1841, with accommodations for a group of twelve boys, and a circle of brothers.

Directly in front of the gate by which we entered, and in full sight, is (23, 24,) a group of buildings, in which is the chapel, (*Anstaltsküche*), erected in 1835, the school-rooms, the library, the preparatory department for the girls, and (23,) the residence of the director of all this portion of the institution. Here too is the linen room, the store room, and the only kitchen on the premises. Adjoining the church is (22,) the dwelling for two families of girls, and to the right (20,) the Wash House, (*Wascherei*), and Drying House, (21.)

Passing to the left from the church, and its associated buildings, we pass on the right (18, 17,) the House of Industry, (*Arbeitshaus*), with workshops for carpentering, shoemaking, slipper manufacturing, tailoring, weaving, &c., with apartments (15,) called the Shepherd's Cot, (*Hirtenhütte*), for a family of boys, and a circle of brothers. Beyond and back, screened by the trees, are (14,) the barn and stables; and on the left (13,) is the bakery, (12,) and residence of the farmer.

In the northwest corner, fronting on a beautiful lawn, and with a back ground of oaks, (8, 9, 10,) the Institute of the Brothers of the Inner Mission, with chambers, school-rooms and library, for the teachers and brothers, hospital and bathing accommodations for the whole establishment, and the book-store, and counting-room.

Beyond the lawn (6,) stands (5,) the Mother House, (*Mütterhaus*), the private residence of the family of the Superintendent.





## II. REFORMATORY EDUCATION.

---

### RAUHE HAUS, NEAR HAMBURGH.

To the full account we have given in another place\* of the *Rauhe Haus* [Rough-House] or "Institution of Rescue," established and conducted by T. H. Wichern, at Horn, near Hamburg, we add extracts from the Annual Reports and published journals of that eminently successful philanthropist, as we find them in *Miss Carpenter's Reformatory Schools*. His experience will be most valuable to all who are desirous of conducting similar institutions; it will encourage them under failures, warn them against unreasonable expectations, and at the same time prove to them that in due time we shall reap if we faint not.

"On the 8th of October, 1832, on a Monday, at the house of the schoolmaster, Mr. B., where the members of the male Visiting Society had assembled, the question was raised: 'If the kingdom of Christ is again to be firmly established in our city, it is necessary, among other things, to found a house for the sole object of rescuing the children from sin and disbelief!'

"The assembly consisted almost entirely of men limited in means, and unaccustomed to conduct public undertakings. The next meeting was appointed for November.

"In the meantime it occurred, that as a member of our society, was one day sitting at his desk, engaged in his business, a man nearly unknown to him, and wholly unacquainted with our plan, came up to him, with 300 dollars in his hand, and said, 'This shall be yours for the benefit of the poor; but I wish that, if possible, this sum should be expended in a religious institution, and in preference upon a newly founded one.' This happened on the 25th of October.

"It now became necessary, before our November meeting, publicly to acknowledge the receipt of this sum. We were obliged to seek some man of sufficient importance and influence, who might give assurance for its fitting employment. With one voice we proposed Mr. S. H., who acceded to our request, and publicly acknowledged, with us, the receipt of the money, and for the first time the name, 'House of Rescue,' was publicly announced; a riddle to all.

"Nor was this all, A. W. Gehren, of our city, had for some years back been moved to leave by will considerable sums for religious purposes, for example, the erection of a church, the endowment of a ship-preacher, the foundation of a religious lending-library, and lastly a sum of some thousands for a *House of Rescue*; and Mr. S. H. was appointed executor. He therefore, on joining us, offered us 17,500 dollars for our object. We thus hoped, in the following year, to hire a house and receive some children.

"In January, 1833, several of our friends resolved to issue a popular periodical for the benefit of the *House*. On the first Saturday in January, when we issued the first number, a female friend, long maternally inclined toward us, was moved to present 100 dollars for the proposed house; and in the following weeks we learned that some maid-servants had joined together to contribute their mite. A poor shoemaker's workman brought to me the whole of his little savings. Many similar gifts followed.

"By July, 1833, after many difficulties and anxieties, we found ourselves in secure possession of the 'Rauhe Haus.' It was the property of Mr. S. H., and was just at this period most unexpectedly vacated by the previous tenants. Under its thatched roof, were several apartments; by it ran a deep brook, shadowed by the finest chestnut tree in the neighborhood; beside it lay a large garden, with a fish pond. On September 12th, we ventured to call a larger assembly of friends together; when more than a hundred joined hearts and hands, and we might consider the House of Rescue founded. On the 1st of November, I and my mother entered on the occupation of it, and immediately received the three first boys."

We learn from M. Wichern's speech at the public meeting held in Hamburg, for the foundation of an "Institution of Rescue," September 12th, 1833, two facts of great significance, which, he says, "attest among many others, that here, also, we need some such institution. First, a distinct prison-school for juvenile criminals has, within

---

\* Barnard's National Education in Europe, p. 48.

the last five years, been found necessary in Hamburg. This institution, opened with 19 children, has, up to this time received more than 200; and many have been refused for want of room. It now contains more than 150. Secondly, no one interested in such matters can deny the increasing depravation of a certain class of our population. How largely the juvenile poor have participated in this general demoralization, is evidenced by the fact, that a special *Penal School* has been obliged to be appended to the poor school."

We find thus existing in Hamburg, at the very time when M. Wichern enforced the necessity of this "House of Rescue," a public pauper school, which however, was so unsuccessful in its training of the children committed to its care, as to require the addition of a special "penal school;" and a "prison school," in which were at that time 50 children, no inconsiderable number for one town. Why did these not answer the desired object, the prevention and correction of juvenile crime? And why was their very existence regarded as a proof of the necessity of the establishment of another kind of institution? The reason will be obvious to those who have become acquainted with the real condition of delinquent children. A public pauper school, as such, will never raise above pauperism and vice; it can only do so when elements are thrown into it which can be supplied *only by voluntary effort*; no "prison school" can ever enlist the child in the work of its own reformation, and without this it is next to hopeless. M. Wichern felt, then that a new principle was to be developed; that was to be the restoration of the child to a healthy moral condition, by placing him as far as possible, in the position in which the Heavenly Father would have him placed, a well-ordered family, where his best faculties and dispositions should be developed, and where he should be prepared to be a useful self-supporting member of society.

This institution was not to send forth branded convicts, but moral patients, restored to health, and who henceforth should mingle unmarked with those around them. The appropriated designation, "House of Rescue," was therefore dropped, and the new institution took its name from that belonging to the old rough cottage first employed, the "Rauhe Haus." "I particularly recommend," says M. Wichern, "the founders of similar institutions to select some indefinite name, such as *Rauhe Haus*, the name by which the building had *previously* been known. 'Orphan,' 'vagabond,' &c., are not desirable or appropriate appellations." The child is, on admission, at once made to understand that he is now to begin a new life; his former sins will not be remembered against him; there is to be no punishment inflicted on him for former transgressions; he comes as a returning prodigal to a father's house. "A full forgiveness of all *past* is announced to them immediately upon crossing the threshold of the *Rauhe Haus*." The introduction of a number of new scholars at once into the school at times proved so injurious to the discipline of the whole, that M. Wichern regrets that they had not a separate probationary department, which would probably in many cases be a desirable addition to such a school, for he remarks, "every one does not submit at once to discipline. *But those longer established, generally make common cause with the masters, and are the most influential means of reconciling the new comers*" The children are received at the request of the magistrates, not sent as a punishment,—at the desire of the parents,—or on the application of the children themselves; but in no case are they retained without the permission of the parents. When the character of the school was established by ten years trial, even respectable parents were glad to obtain admission for unruly children. "From May 13th, 1843, to May 13th, 1844," says the report, "73 cases have been announced to us, nearly all suitable. In a great number of these cases, the children were brought to us by *excellent parents*, entreating their admission, *and as much from the better as from the lower classes*." A list is given of these parents; in all cases the children had been unruly and more or less vicious; some were described by the parents "as good in general, except an inveterate habit of lying, stealing, and the like;" in various instances as perfectly brutal, some almost demon-like, both boys and girls. *Very few of them had come under the notice of the police.*

In order to carry out as much as possible the family system, the children are divided into groups of twelve, each independent of the rest in special training and instruction,

assembling only on particular occasions. The girls and boys are in separate houses. Each group or family is under the management of an assistant master or "Brother," the whole being under the general superintendence of M. Wichern, who appears to breathe his spirit into the entire establishment. These Brothers, at first selected and appointed especially with a view to this institution only, now form a society which supplies missionaries and teachers to various parts of Germany, from which they are sent here to receive a most admirable preparation for future usefulness. "The assistants of the institutions," says the report, "called by the children Brothers, receive no salary, but in its stead such instruction from the superintendent as may enable them hereafter to take the management of similar institutions. They are young men acquainted with some manual trade or with agriculture, or able in other ways to make themselves practically useful, and who are willing, from Christian love, to devote themselves to these destitute children."

M. Wichern's guiding principle in this institution is thus stated by him. "One great cause of demoralization of the lowest class, is the pressure of shameless, self-abandoned poverty. We therefore establish as a principle that the way of life in our institution shall not tend to make the children forget that they belong to this class of the poor; the children on the other hand, shall be trained to feel that *poverty in itself is not an evil, but depends upon the spirit in which it is borne*. According to this principle will be regulated the clothing, and the food, which must be wholesome, but as simple as possible, also the instruction, which will be limited to reading, writing, arithmetic, and singing. The children shall indeed learn to implore their daily bread from their Father in Heaven; but at the same time to earn it from their fellow men honestly and unrepiningly, in the sweat of their brow; and the whole course of life and occupation will have for its aim to prepare them for obtaining by their own energies, those comforts and necessities which some procure with great expense from the labor of others."

Let us now then trace M. Wichern's experience by extracting passages from his annual reports, occupying a period from April, 1835, to the present time. We give his own simple details.

"1834. It has often been asked, how these boys, almost all accustomed to theft, behave in this respect. Every occasional visitor may see, that with regard to our own property we employ no precautions, and suffer no loss. Nor have we had complaints on this point from without, though from the first I have daily sent out many of the children into the town, or for miles into the country around. From the commencement, however, we have expressly excluded them from the kitchen. Their lingering propensity to theft principally takes the form of gluttony, which in some is its only manifestation. Single instances, however, may show the prevailing spirit. Last summer, three boys had plucked three gooseberries in the garden; the others learned it, and would not be satisfied till the three came to me and confessed their fault. Once, after some serious conversation, one, among several others, came to tell me of his having gathered the *pease* of another, and his regret for the vexation and disappointment which he had caused.

"1835. Lying, and a spirit of disorder and indecorum, are the dark side of the picture which we have to present, and often tax severely the most enduring patience. At one period, in consequence of repeated acts of pilfering, &c., I ordered the morning and evening family-worship to be for a time suspended. This produced a powerful effect on the minds of all. And after our regular services had been resumed, I learnt, for the first time, that during their suspension many little associations had been formed among the children, for reading and explaining the Word of God among themselves. One evening, as I was passing through the garden, I heard singing, and found seven or eight boys, who had assembled to hear one of their companions read the Scriptures.

"A party of boys planned and completed a hut similar to that built by D. But they discovered in the timber-work a piece of wood, which one of their number had abstracted without permission from the larger building. This discovery excited them all against G.; and a boy of 12 years, a favorite for his obliging disposition, ran eagerly to fetch an axe, with which, in presence of the offender, he struck so lustily on the laboriously-erected edifice, that the whole was soon a heap of ruins. None of the before delighted builders ever took any farther account of it.

"1837. For a year and a half no child has run away. It has been again proved that for an institution which is pervaded by the right spirit, no wall is precisely the *strongest* wall, and thus such an institution seems enabled to spread an attracting influence, like a net, around it, beyond its local limits. With regard to the children who

have left us, all are in the service of artizans, except one, who is an errand boy. One girl is in service. Hitherto we have not had any instances of relapse into evil habits; on the contrary, those who have left us persevere in the way of life to which they have been trained. To this their employers bear witness. One master having had a boy from the institution a year in his service, has asked for and engaged a second in addition."

"The progress made by the children in their education is on the whole satisfactory. All the boys, except one, will soon be able to read fluently; this one, 18 years old, will probably never do so. In winter, about three hours daily are given to instruction; in summer about 2 1-2. The remaining time, excepting holidays, and prayer-hours, are devoted to labor. We still require a more advanced practical training and employment for those boys whose superior faculties demand further development. I have however always avoided merely mechanical trades. Our object is to call *all* the powers into exercise, in combination with moral aims. The four assistants who have entered since the beginning of 1836, were previously artizans, or practical men in some department.

"Some lads, on visiting their parents, and finding the house unswept, have taken up a broom, and performed voluntarily that to which no compulsion could force them. And when the parents have wished the children to remain with them for the night, the reply has been: 'That will not do; not one of us can be spared, we are all wanted to help each other.'

"Last year 11 or 12 pieces of money were taken from a grown up member of the family; suspicion could of course fall only upon the boys; but our search was unavailing. After more than six weeks, some of us heard several of the boys, in conversing together, make great use of the word *eleven*. I accordingly sent for these boys, without letting them know for what purpose, or allowing them to speak to each other. There were five of them. From the first, whom I spoke to in my room, nothing could be extracted; and it was afterwards discovered that he had really not been concerned in the affair. The rest were called in, one by one, and all persisted that they had only been talking of 11 nails. All agreed in referring to an incident that had occurred that day to which the 11 nails bore reference. Nearly half a year afterwards it was discovered that they had really been speaking of the 11 pieces of money, which one of them had stolen; and had been much perplexed at finding themselves overheard. But, while prevented by the presence of an overlooker from *speaking*, one of them had stealthily *pointed* to his hand, then touched with one finger a *nail* in a bench; the other three understood the sign, and all accordingly agreed in one tale.

"I have allowed certain boys, who have proved themselves trustworthy, and who are old enough, to take a share in superintending the others, under the name of *Peace-Boys*. They have no positive authority, either to command or even to reprove; but are only to influence and remind. They are chosen every month, in the family gatherings on Saturday evening; any one who proves himself wholly unworthy, being excluded.

"Any one acquainted with the daily outbreaks among us of rudeness and coarseness, of obstinacy, audacity, and shameless lying, will easily believe that corporal chastisement is sometimes necessary. For serious offences also, I have found *special oversight*, combined with *silence*, extremely effectual. A boy under sentence of silence may not speak to any but the grown up residents; he is closely watched both in work and in leisure hours, to maintain this isolation. Against the incredibly numerous instances of *destructiveness*, we have long contended in vain; no oversight, nor even corporal punishment, avails to check them. All is however altered, since I have assigned regular pocket-money to each boy, and deducted, from the fund so applied, part at least in payment of damages. *All destructible articles seem suddenly to have acquired at least a negative worth for all.*

"The state of health has been satisfactory. During the 4 1-2 years since the foundation of the institution, we have had, thank God! no death, among children or elders. The scrofulous tendency, with which most on their entrance are infested, remains our greatest evil. *Accidents* occupy the next place.

"1838. A change of assistants has caused much difficulty. The superintendent of the girls' house had left, and her place was not immediately supplied. The old sin quickly reappeared among them with a few consolatory exceptions. All our regulations, and the efforts of three plain tradesmen's wives, selected one after the other to superintend them, proved unavailing. The utmost that could be attained was superficial decorum, which might have partially deceived me, had I not lived so entirely among the children. The girls' department was like a garden from which the care of the gardener had been withdrawn. Among other bad symptoms were the *gradual cessation of the songs*, before so frequent; and the *extinction of all interest in God's Word*.

"Among the boys the evil took a different form. We need only hint at the disorders resulting among *them* from the irregularities of the girls. Hypocrisy, and mutual accusations are other features of the picture, which became daily more gloomy.

Frivolity, shamelessness, grievous ingratitude, audacious perverseness, excessive laziness, strife and ill-nature, were the more ordinary manifestations of the inward evil. A certain satiety of bodily food even, no less than the bread of life, prevailed; and we tried the experiment of enforced abstinence from both. The experiment succeeded to a great extent with a considerable number, but only temporarily. The crisis had not yet arrived. Several attempts at escape, false accusations, and a series of offences of the most scandalous character, gradually drew attention to two boys as the principal authors of the mischief. One, 19 years old, had for three years abused our patience; the other had been four years with us. Both finally made their escape, and fell into the hands of the police. From this time our community gradually recovered its moral health.

"1843. During the past year we have had eleven attempts at escape (successful and unsuccessful.) Three of these originating in temporary causes, are of little importance; the other eight were serious, planned deliberately and cunningly, residents of some standing, and accompanied by aggravating circumstances. The majority of the boys showed themselves very zealous in the pursuit. It has occurred that a runaway has voluntarily returned; but most have been traced with much difficulty. There have also, of course, been many instances of *underhand* disobedience and bad conduct in the course of the year.

"We now turn to the brightest side; but here the very multiplicity of instances baffles our endeavor to give a just notion of our progress. On the whole, the spirit of obedience, gratitude, industry, reverence for God's Word, and religious ordinances, the spirit of love and truth, reign among our children; so that any one dwelling among them must be happy, notwithstanding occasional temporary disturbances, from which no society can be exempt.

"*I instance first, the renewed love of the children to their parents and relations.* This is almost always the result of their residence here; and none can fully appreciate the change, without being aware of the dreadful estrangement, or ill-treatment on one side or both, which before existed. Money has more than once been offered me by parents as the price of their children's amendment.

"—, a girl, who had formerly attacked her mother's life, now sits in tears a whole afternoon, if disappointed of a visit from her. When asked the cause, she replied that when she lived with her mother, she did not love her, and often wished to leave her; but that she now loves her infinitely. And her actions prove that love and fidelity, not only to her mother, but to all, have become part of her being. We sometimes overhear, (without *listening*, which is wholly forbidden here,) two children talking together of their love for parents and brethren, a feeling before unknown to them. When the 'Brothers' visit the parents on Sunday, they are frequently shown letters received by them from the children, often most expressive of renewed filial love. One young boy had wholly estranged the affection of his parents by his excesses; when he one afternoon went from us to visit them, they wholly ignored his presence, not recognizing him by even an angry word. Yet at length a letter from him rejoiced them with the *conviction* of his amendment; the *means* remained a riddle to them. These people were in comparatively easy circumstances. Another mother, excellent but poor, had wholly despaired for her son; now this boy is often accessible to no other influence than that exercised on him by the mention of his mother, and after a visit from him she repeated his words, addressed to her: 'How glad I am to have gone to the Rauhe Haus; now if my mother should die, I should not be the cause of it, as I should have been before when I gave her so much trouble.' A gay, powerful lad returned weeping from a visit to his parents. His brother had run away from home. When he described his mother's grief, he wept still more violently; but in relating how his father had bade her not trouble herself so much about the lad, his heart seemed ready to break. All night he could not sleep, and next morning insisted on starting off to Hamburg in search of his brother. And this boy when he came to us three years ago, had nearly destroyed his mother by twenty attempts at running away.

"We might go on to speak of those already long dismissed, who have commended their brothers to us, or have supported their families by their own labor.

"We frequently allow the children to go home; last year nearly fifty have sometimes visited their parents on the same afternoon. At certain hours, 7, 7 1-2, or 8, all return punctually, and never but once has any real evil arisen.

"The *mutual* influence of the children on each other is wonderful. For instance: A very wild intractable boy, of considerable age, entered, after his novitiate, one of the families. A certain gentleness, and susceptibility to affection, occasionally gleamed through his rude nature. He seemed to suit none of the boys in that house; but another boy, far less developed in all respects, attached himself to him. The intercourse was undisguised, and gave cause for both hope and fear. The younger seemed bound to the elder by some instinct, till his milder nature, without intention on his own part, seems to have *leavened* the whole character of the other.

"We have little difficulty in disposing of our dismissed pupils; on the contrary, it is impossible for us to comply with all the applications from master artisans in Ham-



burgh and its environs, and even more remote districts. At Easter, 1845, 33 such applications were made, and several who had before had apprentices from us.

"Our surveillance of those who have left us is in no respect altered. It is no police superintendence, but a paternal oversight, exercised by the writer of this report, in co-operation with the resident brothers. If necessary we visit the apprentices at their masters' houses weekly, but in the ordinary way, only once a fortnight; and every fortnight I assemble them on Sunday afternoon or evening, in summer at the Institution, in winter in the town. When on Good Friday 70 of us celebrated the Lord's supper, there were among the number all our apprenticed pupils but one, who was hindered by no fault of his own. It is not to be expected that among so many young people no disorders should arise; but a whole month frequently passes without any complaints of the apprentices; and when such do occur, they are mostly of such faults as are common among all apprentices; there are individuals, however, of whom no complaint has ever been heard. Our correspondence, were its publication allowable, would be the strongest proof that our labor has not been lost."

The daily routine of the families is thus given in the Report for 1843-4.

"The best houses (unfortunately only three) have the rooms on the ground floor. Each contains a dwelling room, with tables, benches, and chests; and a sleeping-room adjoining for the 12 children. The 'brother' or 'sister' shares both rooms with them. These three houses have an adjoining kitchen, with an apparatus for washing, shoe cleaning, &c. All the furniture is home-made. Before the house is a play-ground, more or less shaded. Round the play-ground lie the flower beds of the twelve inmates and of the 'brothers;' adjoining is a well-kept kitchen garden. Such vegetables as are raised by the childrens' own labor, afford the family certain extra delicacies for the table, instead of being merely converted, like the rest, into common soup.

"At half-past four in summer, five in winter, the tower bell rings, and the whole family rises. The brother or sister pronounces a short morning prayer; the beds are made, and all wash and dress. In summer all the boys go to bathe in the pond. The rooms are then arranged, the shoes cleaned, &c. Those who have time sit down to study, or work in the kitchen garden. The brother regulates all. At six the bell again rings, and the family accompany the brother, their bibles under their arm, to the prayer hall, where the whole number are assembled to family devotion. After about an hour the several families return to breakfast in their own dwellings. Then the family is dispersed among the various workshops till twelve. (An hour's instruction, however, generally precedes these labors.) At twelve the family reassemble, with the brother. One of them appointed to that office, has already prepared the table; two others fetch from the 'mother-house' the food prepared in the general kitchen, the brother pronounces a short prayer at the commencement and conclusion, and all eat their meal amid familiar conversation; each having his own plate. Then follows a free interval, in which they play, cultivate their flower-beds, read, &c. The 'table waiters' for the day wash the dishes and arrange the room. An hour from the commencement of the meal the bell rings for work. At half-past four each family reassembles for the evening repast. From five to seven, work and instruction, not in the private dwelling. From seven to eight, leisure time, each family circle reassembling; at eight, the general family devotion; and at a quarter to nine, having supped, each family withdraws to its dwelling, and shortly after to bed. The brother sleeps in the midst of his family but goes later to bed. Every Saturday two or three children of each family scour the house thoroughly; and from five to six in the evening, the whole family unite to put their play-ground and kitchen garden in order."

The weekly conferences and the peculiar occupations of the Sundays and holidays must not be omitted. They are recorded in the reports for 1845 and 1846.

"From six to seven on Saturday evening each family holds a 'weekly discourse;' that is, a 'weekly text' is selected at this hour by the family; and the following Saturday the brother makes this the ground of an address to the children on the domestic occurrences of the past week. Each member is now instructed, by a 'table of occupations,' what employment is allotted to him for the following week; and all those who have had charge of the domestic affairs during that just past, are required to deliver back their various utensils, in good order to the presiding brother.

"The weekly conferences are as follows: Each brother writes, in the course of the week, a journal, in which he notes everything worthy of remark respecting his children. These papers are delivered to the superior, for careful perusal; and these furnish materials for the conference at which all the brothers, without exception, are present.

"On Sunday none but indispensable work is done. Clean linen and best clothes are put on. The families take it by turns to go early in the morning, with gardening implements, to the 'Raube Haus grave' in the churchyard, where three inmates have reposed for nearly eleven years. The grave is marked by a tall oaken cross, with the words: 'Christ is my life.' The children put the spot in order, weed the flower-bed

round the cross, and sometimes hang up a garland. In the afternoon, after the short service, all the families go for a walk, greeting kindly many whom they meet. A few children are visited by their parents, others go to visit them.

"Many festivals are celebrated. At Advent, the children have each their own *poor* allotted to them; these they visit, with gifts purchased from their savings, or made by themselves. The birthdays of the 'father' and the 'brothers' are generally discovered, however carefully concealed, and gifts are prepared with all possible secrecy in play-hours. One of themselves, on his birthday, is often awakened by the song and greetings of his comrades; and when the family is gathered at table, he has generally a gift from each. One boy, on such an occasion, remained so melancholy as to cause questions; it was found on that very day twelve months, he had tried to escape. Nine days before the present birthday, he had vainly endeavored to dissuade a new comer from doing the like.

"Every superintendent of a family is confined to his own circle, in which he is in like manner free from the interference of others; while the neighborly intercourse of the various families is also a peculiar and valuable feature."

Since the foundation of the Institution in 1833, 207 children, 157 boys and 50 girls have been received into it:

"117 have left us; the condition of these is as follows:

Now under the exclusive care of their parents	21
Emigrated	6
Sailors	9
Day-laborers	8
Agricultural laborers, gardeners, &c.	5
At various trades	48
Student	1
Female servants	13
Dead	6
	<hr/> 117."

Of all these only five can be deemed failures, three males and one female having been imprisoned, one female having become a vagrant.

Such are the results of nearly twenty years of patient labor; labor made sweet by the consciousness that it was God's work which was being carried on. The spirit which animated it is manifested in the following address of its founder on one of their anniversaries.

"*For the Anniversary of the Swiss House, July 20, 1834.*

"Yearly, on the 20th of July, the Rauhe Haus, with all therein small and great, remembers how on this day, in the year 1834, our dear Swiss House was consecrated to the Saviour, as the good Shepherd; on a Sunday noon, in such bright sunshine that only God's love could shine more brightly.

"But since God has blessed us with rich and manifold blessings through the erection of this house, and since besides this house was the first which the hands of our dear boys aided, strongly and strenuously, to build, for themselves and their succeeding brothers, we will relate among ourselves the history of this house; how it originated, when it was begun, and, how it was finally completed, to God's honor, his creatures' joy, his childrens' blessing.

"Therefore we thus relate:

"We know of the 12th Sept., 1833, in what spirit and with what aim the Rauhe Haus was founded, and how it was occupied by twelve boys to the end of that year. These twelve boys were our William, Charles, Christian, David I., Edward, John, Cornelius, Nicholas, George I., Thomas, Augustus, Frederick; all of honorable memory among us; who have adorned the Rauhe Haus with many a permanent memorial of their joint industry, not to be forgotten. We will name in this place only one;—the removal of the wall, which once surrounded our garden to the west and south. The labor was completed on 25th Jan. 1834. They designed to show thereby to all future comrades and friends forever, that the Rauhe Haus is a house of free love, which suffers no walls, no bolts; because the love of Christ binds more strongly than either walls or bolts. At times even till late in the night, by lamplight, these boys spared not the sweat of their brow, to accomplish this first united labor, till house and garden lay clear to all eyes; a sign at the same time that our work is not done in a corner, but publicly before the eyes of men, as before God.

"Then came the month of February, and with it the first life of spring in the year 1834. Many blessed and sanctifying days had the Father in heaven already bestowed on his poor family in the Rauhe Haus, to his praise be it said, hope glanced with longing toward our native city, asking whether the faithful God would make it possible

that yet other dear children, in our house, should learn to approach Him through His Son. Parents and friends of children in need of help and rescue, knocked at our door, till then scarcely opened but to inmates, and begged for the reception of the children whom they loved.

"What we even then would willingly have done, we could not; for we had no roof to shelter more than the first twelve. But lo! Love soon found the means; we need but believe in her, and she bestows herself with all her treasures. So the unexpected question could be but to the twelve, whether they would willingly help to build a new house for themselves, and would give up the old to new comrades, twelve boys. What could be more agreeable to the *Rauhe Haus*' boys than this? and all had taken up their tools for the new work, when, on the 24th of February of that year, the worthy master, Lange, made his appearance, with yard-measure, and square, to measure out the site of the future '*Swiss House*.'

"He measured the ground according to its present measurement, namely. 48 feet by 24, to the west of the old *Rauhe Haus*; the front of the new building looking to the south.

"With great energy, the ground was dug out by the twelve young laborers, before Thursday, the 11th of March; and on that day, at one o'clock, amid praises and thanksgivings, prayers and supplications, the foundation-stone was laid, at the south-western corner, by the treble hammer stroke of Mr. S. S., of happy memory; whom may God bless for all his love to our house! Now with diligence and joy went on the building from below, under the hands of small and great; while from above, the true Architect in heaven built and blessed; nor were His praises wanting; from the summit of the building and scaffolding echoed far around the lovely songs of those who here saw from day to day a new hut for their own future dwelling arise beneath the labor of their own hands.

"It was on the 16th of April, 1834, that the carpenter resolved to erect the gable; the day passed in the severe labor; already the sun was sinking to night in the west, beyond *Hamburg*, when the work was completed. In the Mother-house, we had already twined with ribbons the gay garlands of honor; with song and jubilee the band of builders conducted him to the scaffolding; and quickly he gained the giddy height, surrounded by worthy associates of the carpentering craft, after artisan fashion. Meanwhile, on the firm earth below, the household, and some friends of the neighborhood, had grouped themselves, looking up to the orator; who, unpracticed in oratory, unfortunately began at the end, what we wished to hear from the beginning. He was *Sotschinger*, the wood polisher. He uncovered his head, and delivered a poetic address; scanning at one view the beautiful distance of meadows and fields, houses and gardens, the *Elbe* and the *Bill*, *Hamburg*'s houses and towers.

"We thanked the carpenter for his address; for he had spoken truly; the Lord had already begun to carry out the blessing, and has more than once shown that He pronounced to this blessing a true amen.

"Without mischance or danger, the work now proceeded to its completion.

"Meanwhile we were seeking some friend of the Lord and of His children, who would be ready to gather round himself in the new *Swiss House*, the first family, emigrating for 'the old house,' like a swarm of bees. And before the completion of the building, a young man wandered hither to us from *Switzerland*, impelled by the love of the Lord; and on the 26th June, led by the Lord, he crossed our threshold for the first time. It was *Joseph Baumgartner*, whom few of our present inmates know personally, but whose remembrance we bless in love. On the 2nd July, *Byckmeyer* followed him. Both aided in giving the finishing stroke to the work of adorning and decking the house for the 30th July; because on that day we wished to consecrate to the Saviour this, the first of our children's houses, and to obtain his blessing on it. And the remembrance of that day we to-day especially renew.

"It was on a Sunday noon, on a summer's day, which the love of God had adorned with all the pomp and glory of His light. What we could, we also did, for our dear *Swiss House*. The upper story was furnished with twelve clean beds for the twelve future inmates. Within and without the new house was richly and ingeniously adorned with flowers and garlands. By about one o'clock, a large number of friends of our house had assembled; they were for the most part those whose love had helped us to build the house. For the first time sounded our organ, a former rich gift from a benefactor already named, and invited by its tones the voices of the assemblage.

"A few words from the Father of the Family explained to the assembled friends the design of the festival; then I turned to you, or rather to the first twelve of our children, who were gathered around us. I still remember well the words in which I then addressed you, from the greatest to the least, from *David* to *Christian*, and I think that you all will willingly recall with me a portion of what was then spoken.

"That you may be helped—for this are you all assembled around us; and that you will let yourselves be helped, you have often promised me with your whole heart. See, now, what has come to pass, and think of these benefits from the Lord, that you may become and remain truly His. Oh, that the Spirit of God might come over you, that you would allow yourselves to be subdued by this love of God! How large a



portion has been bestowed on you, your hearts declare; that you felt it, your tears bear witness; but how often you forgot it, how often you look backwards, instead of forward to the goal toward which we strive. My dear, beloved children, does your past way of life in this place bear witness of *this* or not? However that may be—a new house, a new heart! New benefits, new thanks! New love from God, new giving up of the heart to Him who gives us all! Shall not this be our vow to-day? Dear children, you vow it to-day before the eyes of many witnesses: of those who have helped us to build the house—from whom you imploringly hope that they will continue to be mindful of our poverty, and will freely show compassion, that you may want for nothing. You know not how to thank men, but I hope—the Lord, who provides for you such benefits from Christian hands—Him you can thank! What better way to do so, than to consecrate yourselves, albeit in great weakness, to your Lord and Saviour, to serve Him in Godly fear and filial love all your life long? Begin this to-day afresh; and then we and our friends here present, your benefactors, will devote to God the Swiss House, as we name it; committing it in His name to all the protection and guardianship of His paternal love,' &c., &c.

"In heartfelt love, and with uncovered heads, the members of the household now extended to each other the hand of brotherhood, and consecrated themselves, with the new house, to the good Shepherd as his abiding inheritance. We then besought Him to deign to enter the hut, as guardian and defence; to dwell therein as the lord and owner; to supply us therein perpetually with bodily and spiritual bread: to awaken therein the longing for that far better and eternal abode of peace, which He in yonder fatherland prepares for each one who loves His appearing and patiently expects His salvation.

"The spirit of true joy and religious confidence filled all who were there assembled; in the name of all, the beloved pastor of the parish spoke, to direct us once more to Him, who, as the once crucified, now glorified Saviour, had prepared us for this festival. The old became young with the children, the children grave with the old; and all wandered yet again through the beautiful light rooms, in which nothing but simplicity and sufficiency was to be seen, which make rich that poverty which has found its wealth in Christ.

"Among those present was an old lady of 80, a widow, an Anna, who, before this, had often entered with benedictions the circle of our children; a handmaid of the Lord, and who loved me also till her end, with a mother's love. Her heart was actually broken for joy; overcome by the witnessed fulfillment of her blessing, she was compelled, without seeing more, to hasten home in her carriage. Exhausted, she sought repose, sought it four weeks; then found it in the bosom of the God whom she had served, rather silently than loudly; in the home of peace, of which the consecrated Swiss House had been to us an image. Her memory still remains to us in the benediction, her likeness you see to-day in our house with your own eyes.

"The twelve above mentioned who, on the 21st July, took the Swiss House for their abode, and slept there for the first time, on the 22d of July vacated the old house, and so it became possible to assemble the second family. These boys were received from the 31st July to the 15th October, 1834.

"The sweetest, richest experience of God's grace were our portion; and we experienced, for instance, on the first Sunday, that the Lord had remained in the house in blessing. All minds opened to His Spirit and His love, and perhaps in those very days He sowed a seed which—God grant it!—will bring forth abiding fruit to everlasting life. But seldom are such days of *perceptible* blessing vouchsafed to us. Pray ye of the Swiss House: seek, knock, that you may again find, and hold fast, love and life.

"To-day, on the anniversary of the Swiss House Dedication, all those of the first family of the Swiss House, who then solemnized it with us, have already returned to common life, and are earning their bread as carpenters, tailors, husbandmen, artizans, smiths, sailors, shoemakers, sailmakers, gardeners, &c. Our dear friend, Johann Baumgartner, who assembled here the first boy family, has already removed to a distance; there afar off, by his own hearth, to provide for other children, home and salvation.

"Upon all these members of the household has God's grace been variously manifested in the Swiss House. May the gracious God still remain with them! And with *them* may He bless anew the house, which we to-day adorn to do Him honor; which to-day we consecrate anew to Him, that *in* and *with* it we may remain confided to His mercy and grace."

#### PARKHURST PRISON IN ENGLAND.

In contrast with a home and industrial school, into which the organization of the colony at Mettray, and the Rauhen Haus of Hamburg, may be resolved, we present an account of the Parkhurst Prison, established by the English Government in the Isle of Wight, in 1837, for juvenile offenders. We propose to examine the principles,

## PARKHURST PRISON FOR JUVENILE CRIMINALS, ENGLAND.

THE following account of Parkhurst Prison, is derived from the evidence of Captain Hall, the Governor, before the Committee of the House of Lords in 1847, and of Lieutenant-Colonel Jebb, the Visitor:—

“This is a penal establishment for boys who have been sentenced to transportation, usually between the ages of 10 and 18, but even at 8 or 9 many have been thus sentenced, with a view of getting them here, and not long ago there were as many as 60 or 70 at this tender age. On the boy's first arrival at the prison he is placed in a probationary ward, where he is kept in separate confinement for 4 months or more. During this time he is not allowed to hold any intercourse with the other boys, but for at least five hours he is at different times in the presence of others, either for exercise, instruction, or religious service, and during the time he is in his cell, he is supplied with occupation and books, and is visited by the officers of the establishment. This is not, therefore, a stringent separate system. The boys appear in good spirits, cheerful and happy, nor does their health in any way suffer; indeed, boys have frequently asked to go back to the probationary ward after having left it, from feeling there a degree of security from temptation to commit prison offences, and consequently to incur punishment. After this the boys are placed together where they learn trades, and converse or play with each other, under the eye of warders—the meals being taken together, 360 in a large hall. The boys remain at Parkhurst from 2 to 3 years, sometimes longer, during this time a highly favorable change is generally perceptible in the whole disposition of the boy; there is a great difference between the first and second year, and a still greater difference between the third and the former year. The state of health has been remarkably good, only fourteen deaths having occurred during 8 years, among nearly 1,200 boys. On leaving Parkhurst they are generally sent to the colonies, and much depends on the circumstances in which they are there placed. In Western Australia, there is an officer of the government, styled the Guardian of Juvenile Emigrants, who is appointed to apprentice the boys and to see that the conditions of the indentures are fulfilled, visiting them once in six months. It is feared that in other colonies such provision has not yet been made, and that the boys are consequently exposed, on arriving, to much danger of falling back into dishonest means of gaining a livelihood. Excellent reports have been received recently of the conduct of boys sent out to Western Australia;—of 62 boys, 50 were first-rate lads, but 12, about 1-5th, were very troublesome, and great difficulty was felt in disposing of them. This has also been experienced in making satisfactory arrangements for those sent very young to Parkhurst, who after passing through the appointed time, and having received the requisite instruction, were not old enough to be sent abroad, and having a prison brand affixed to them, could not be otherwise placed out. For such cases, Col. Jebb feels it would be most desirable to provide District Penal Schools similar to Parkhurst, where they could be properly arranged for, leaving only the boys above the age of 15 to come into the hands of government for transportation.”

Thus far the establishment would seem a good one, were it restricted to such boys of 15 or 16 and upwards, as have so thoroughly resisted every attempt to reform them, that their absolute removal from society is the only safeguard from their evil influence on it. But what is to become of the young boys,—of the female convicts altogether? These have been quite uncared for in the provision made for the older boys.

Above 2000 of the annual fresh supply of male juvenile delinquents are under the age for Parkhurst. Mr. Neison's statistic tables show that, during the 9 years for which the tables are drawn, females constituted one-fifth of the total tried at assizes; about one-fourth of the summarily convicted, and of the whole number re-committed, one-third were females. But of those 14 years of age and under, only between one-seventh and one-eighth were girls. A yet more striking fact is derivable from a paper delivered into the Lords' Committee in 1847, by Mr. Chalmers, Governor of Aberdeen Prison. The percentage of female prisoners in all the prisons of Scotland, is nearly one half; of juvenile female prisoners under 17, between one-fifth and one-sixth? but the percentage of *re-committants of juvenile female prisoners is greater by one-half* than that of males. This statistic fact would indicate that young girls are generally much less prone to crime than boys of the same age, but that their tendency to it rapidly increases with their age, and that when they have once embarked in a criminal career, they become more thoroughly hardened than the other sex. The correctness of these painful results is proved by the testimony of the Bishop of Tasmania before the Lords.

After speaking of the fearful condition of the female convicts in the colonies, which surpasses in degradation and vice even that of the men he adds :—

“Female felons are so bad, because, before a woman can become a felon at all, she must have fallen much lower, have unlearned much more, have become much more lost and depraved than a man. Her difficulty of regaining her self-respect is proportionally greater. There is nothing to fall back upon—no one to look to. I believe that the experience of almost every parish priest in England would lead him to the conclusion that there are many cases in which in our village girls are kept straight, not so much by their own good principle, as by the check imposed upon them through the dread of shame, the fear of fathers, mothers, friends and relations. Let that check be once removed, and their future progress is rapidly downward. When they go out as convicts every thing is gone, every restraint is removed, they can fall no lower.”

An experienced temperance advocate has stated that, while the cases of drunken men who have become reformed and steady teetotalers have come very frequently before him, *he has never known an instance of a woman, given to intoxication, being really converted*; this will probably be common experience. The records of the teacher's journal are quite in accordance with these painful facts.

“One little girl only, at all connected with our school, has been taken before the magistrates, while such occurrences among the boys are frequent. We have not, then, in the school, the criminal class of girls, and only in a few cases the sisters of the boys who have been convicted of theft; that many girls who are already known thieves, exist in Bristol, the weekly police reports sufficiently show; *but these will not come to school*. Nor will the low and degraded girls that infest the neighborhood; in the early period of the school several of these came for a time, but have since discontinued. The girls who attend are rather the very poor and low, than the vicious. Their general appearance usually strikes strangers as superior to what would be expected in such a school; this arises from the circumstance that girls are more easily able to improve their dress by their industrial habits, and also that girls are more quickly susceptible of improvement than boys. Any effort, therefore, soon tells on them; but this very flexibility of nature, renders them more liable to fall when under bad influence. On the other hand it is far more difficult to call out their intellectual powers than those of the boys, and thus to interest them in their lessons; this arises not only from the difference in their natures, but from the circumstance that while the boys have been sharpening their powers by roving the streets, the girls have been confined to their wretched home. The dullness and stupidity they manifest, united with great vulgarity, is a serious hindrance to their improvement, but persevering efforts has done much for them.”

When we reflect that the early moulding of the young child's mind depends almost entirely on the mother, and that these neglected children, who are in great danger of joining the criminal class, if they have not done so, are to become the parents of the next generation, surely express provision should be made for their training and reformation. As yet they have been unprovided for by the government, and Parkhurst only exists for the boys.

Let us now endeavor to ascertain from public documents how far the juvenile prison at Parkhurst is fulfilling its mission. As confinement here is the only authorized mode of disposing of young transports, rather than subjecting them to the system adopted for adults, Sergeant Adams frequently sent juvenile offenders to it, before the rules of admission were defined, yet this is the opinion he expressed of the Institution before the Lords in 1847 :

“I was about three weeks ago at Parkhurst, in the Isle of Wight. They there act upon the principle of cooping up, and it seems to me a mistaken one. They have 40 solitary cells, and every child who is sent to Parkhurst is locked up in one of those cells for four months after he goes. I call it solitary; perhaps the word ‘separate’ is the term used, but it is solitary in this respect, that he is there for the whole twenty-four hours, with the exception of when he is in chapel, and two hours when he is at school, where he is in such a pen that he can see nobody but the minister. His sole employment is knitting, and reading good books. No good conduct can make him there less than four months, and if his conduct is not good, he is there until his conduct is good. At this time there are several boys who have been in those cells from six to twelve months. It seems to me that it can only make them sullen. \* \* When the prison was first established, the boys were allowed occasionally a game of play; that was entirely put an end to. Within the last three months they have been allowed occasionally to play at leap-frog, but no other game. Of course, if boys are allowed to

play at leap-frog and no other game. leap-frog will be the only game at which they will not care to play. I asked what were the rewards held out for good conduct, and they told me the only rewards were permission to attend the evening school, and the privilege of going to the governor to get information of their friends. Why, one half of them have no friends to ask after, and as to the other half, the less they know of them the better. The privilege also of attending evening school, though a great and proper one, might be rendered more valuable if accompanied by the privilege of half a holiday, and a game of cricket. That they can behave ill in their solitary cell is quite clear, because otherwise a boy could not be there for twelve months; but what that ill behavior is, or what the good behavior is, I did not ask, for I thought I ought not to pry into those questions."

Such is the opinion of the prison expressed by a benevolent and experienced man. Let us turn for further particulars to the printed reports presented to both Houses of Parliament.

"The number of prisoners, 79, sent back to Milbank for transportation in 1846, was, from peculiar circumstances, unusually great. A number of ill-disposed and discontented boys having been discovered, who manifested no desire to avail themselves of the course of instruction and training pursued at Parkhurst, but mischievously employed themselves in unsettling and perverting others, it was deemed expedient to remove the greater portion of them in the month of April, and the salutary effect of that step has been very apparent since that time in the improved conduct of the remaining prisoners. The other individuals returned for transportation were boys, who having repeatedly incurred minor punishments for misconduct, had been placed in the penal class, and while there, did not evince any real desire to amend."

It seems, then, that after some years of experience, sufficient moral power was not obtained to control as many as 79, who were therefore sent back to people another country. At Mettrai, the number of morally incurable was, even from the earliest times, only occasionally one or two. We see also that even this strict penal discipline cannot preserve the less vicious from moral contamination, from "ill-disposed and discontented boys." The last report will show whether any great progress in moral influence has been made in five years. The Governor reports:—

"The number of attempts to escape has been very large this last year, (1849,) 34 prisoners in all have run away, 30 of these while out at farm labor. All of them, however, were speedily re-captured. None of the boys who made these attempts had so far as I can ascertain, any hope or expectation that they would really be able to secure their liberty; but having found that two boys who had run from the land, and had committed a robbery previous to their re-capture, were removed to Winchester Gaol, they determined to try to get relief by such a course of proceeding, from the restraint and discipline of Parkhurst, which they found to be intolerably irksome. Having no power of forethought or rational consideration, they yielded to the impulse of an unfounded notion, that *any* change from Parkhurst would be for the better."

When a youth who had twice attempted to escape from his former confinement, was asked why he did not make a similar effort at Mettrai, he replied, "*because there are no walls;*" from that penal asylum there have been for many years no escapes; here there are "enclosures long believed to be impassable," sentinels with loaded guns, and a certainty that there is no possible escape from the island? yet the inhabitants of the surrounding district are in constant fear of finding runaways in their houses, nor is the apprehension diminished by the fact of two conflagrations having been kindled by the prisoners during the last year. Why does this state of feeling exist at Parkhurst? The Visitors give in their report a sufficient clue to it.

"Among youths such as are confined at Parkhurst, who are precocious without experience, very restless and adventurous without being guided by reason, very excitable, credulous when one of themselves asserts a fact, or advances a proposal, yet suspicious of all that may be stated or urged by their officers, even to an extent that could hardly be believed by those who did not continually watch the workings of their minds, it is most difficult to make them understand what is for their immediate, as well as their prospective benefit."

What wonder is it, that with such a state of feeling, with nothing to exercise and give free vent to their "restless and adventurous" spirit, with no "direct and sufficiently powerful stimulus in the way of remuneration for work efficiently done," their pent up energies should break out into frequent acts of disrespect to the officers, violence, wanton damage of property, and even theft, as well as disorder and prohibited

talking, for which an average of 445 boys incurred, in 1844, 4105 separate punishments, (among them 165 whippings,) making an average of above 10 per diem! If the governor is able to state in the last report, that the behavior of the majority "was generally quiet, orderly, and obedient; he feels obliged to add:—

"That while there has been a general observance of outward regularity and attention to the prison rules among the greater portion of the boys, and serious breaches of order have been of comparatively rare occurrence, there has not been that evidence of a general and growing desire to improve in moral conduct and industrial energy, which I anxiously looked for, and the apparent absence of which causes me much disappointment. Prisoners are generally indolent, boys especially."

Those who have accorded in the principles of reformatory action which were laid down in the first chapter, and have been our guide in the consideration of all the schools that have passed before us, will feel no surprise that the governor's hopes are unfulfilled, not, it may be, through any fault of his own, but through the radical error of the whole system. It attempts to fashion children into machines, instead of self-acting beings, to make them obedient prisoners within certain iron limits, not men who have been taught how to *use their liberty without abusing it*; without this knowledge, and the power of employing it, we have seen that the best instruction, the Word of God itself, but little avails its possessor. Such a system must fail; for the boy whose heart has never been purified and softened by any good home influences, who has always done "what is right in his own eyes," will never give a *willing* obedience where his powers can have no free exercise, where there is no softening power of love to subdue him, where he can never hear from woman what should have been the entreating tones of a mother, where he regards with profound suspicion the appointed agents of his reformation. It is utterly vain to look for any real reformation where the heart is not touched, where the inner springs of action are not called into healthful exercise; this can not possibly be done for children under the mechanical and military discipline of Parkhurst.

We have thus endeavored to scrutinize the system adopted in this establishment, and to point out its radical defects, because it is the only reformatory prison for boys existing under government direction, and is regarded by many as a model one. Of the details of its management it is unnecessary to speak; they appear, from the reports to be well planned, and carried out with due attention to the health of the boys, and their instruction in mental and industrial pursuits, while the expense is probably as moderate as is possible under the circumstances. There is only one other point to which we would draw attention. Parkhurst is especially intended for the training of boys, who at the end of two, or at most three years, will be prepared to go out as colonists, and the regulations now laid down, make 14 and upwards, the age of admission. The governor has, in his report, stated his opinion:—

"That the admission of youths of 18 and upwards, or of lads who have pursued a course of crime for several years, till they have become habituated to and hardened in it, is very much to be lamented, as it seriously impedes all efforts made for the reformation of our inmates. Such characters as those above described, having been many times imprisoned, have lost all sense of degradation, have no desire to become respectable characters, and have no intention to earn their subsistence by honest means whenever they may regain their liberty. Abject slaves themselves to sensual appetites and propensities, the only voluntary activity they manifest is a continual effort, by persuasion, by threats, by false promises, or by ridicule, to make other prisoners pursue their vicious example in opposing all means which may be tried for their moral improvement."

But at the end of the preceding year there were 393 out of 622, 18 years of age and upwards, some of them "convicted of atrocious crimes," which, he justly feared, would "afford subject for eager investigation and debasing discourse among a certain class of the prisoners." When young men have arrived at that degree of audacious depravity, can it be doubted that unless sufficient moral force is in action to neutralize their influence, they must be most unsafe companions for boys? And if youths have been allowed thus to go on in a career of crime until they have been "so many times imprisoned, that they have lost all sense of degradation," surely a school for boys is a most unfit place for them.

### III. BIOGRAPHY OF ROGER ASCHAM.

---

WE shall commence in our next number the publication of Roger Ascham's great work—"The Schoolmaster;" one of the earliest and most valuable contributions to the educational literature of our language. As an appropriate introduction, we give a sketch of the author's life drawn mainly from Hartley Coleridge's "Northern Worthies," and the "*Biographical Dictionary*" commenced by the *Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge*.

ROGER ASCHAM was the third son of John and Margaret Ascham, and was born in the year 1515, at Kirby Wiske, near Northallerton in Yorkshire, where his father resided as steward to the noble family of Scroope. His parents, who were highly esteemed in their station, after living together for forty-seven years, both died on the same day and nearly at the same hour. Their son Roger displayed from his childhood a taste for learning, and was received into the family of Sir Anthony Wingfield, who caused him to be educated with his own sons, under the care of their tutor, Mr. Robert Bond;\* and in the year 1530, placed him at St. John's College, Cambridge, then the most flourishing† in the University. Ascham applied himself particularly to the study of Greek, to which a great impulse had recently been given by the dispersion of the learned Greeks throughout Europe, in consequence of the taking of Constantinople. He made great proficiency in Greek as well as Latin, and he read Greek lectures, while yet a youth, to students still younger than himself. He took the degree of A. B. in February, 1534, and on the 23d of the next month was elected‡ fellow of his college, through the influence of

---

\* "To conclude, let this, amongst other motives, make schoolmasters careful in their place, that the eminences of their scholars have commended their schoolmasters to posterity, which otherwise in obscurity had been altogether forgotten. Who had ever heard of R. Bond in Lancashire, but for the breeding of learned Roger Ascham, his scholar?" *Fuller's Holy and Profane States—The Good Schoolmaster*.

† Dr. Grant in his "*Oratio de vita et obitu Rogeri Ascham*" thus compliments Sir John's College:—"Yea, surely, in that one college, which at that season, for number of most learned doctors, for multitude of erudite philosophers, for abundance of elegant orators, all in their kind superlative, might rival or outvie all mansions of literature on earth, were exceedingly many men, most excellent in all politer letters, and in knowledge of languages."

‡ "Dr. Nicholas Medcalf"—writes Ascham later in life, "was a man meanly learned himself, but not meanly affectioned to set forth learning in others. He was partial to none, but indifferent to all; a master of the whole, a father to every one in that college. There was none so poor, if he had either will to goodness, or wit to learning, that could lack being there,



the master, Dr. Medcalf, himself a northern man, who privately exerted himself in Ascham's favor, notwithstanding he had exhibited a leaning toward the new doctrines of protestantism, and had even been exposed to public censure for speaking against the pope. He took the degree of A. M. in 1536, at the age of twenty-one, and began to take pupils, in whose instruction he was very successful. He also read Greek publicly in the university, and privately in his own college.

In 1544, on the resignation of Sir John Cheke, he was chosen University Orator,\* an office which he filled with general approbation.

In the following year, (1545,) appeared his "Toxophilus, or, the Schole of Shootinge," a treatise on archery, which he composed with a double view; in the first place, to exhibit a specimen of English prose composition in a purer taste than then prevailed, and in the second, to attract the attention of King Henry VIII., then on the point of setting out on his Boulogne expedition, and to obtain the means of visiting Italy, which he much desired. He succeeded perfectly in the first object, and partially in the second; for the king was so well pleased, that he settled on the author a pension of 10*l.* per annum—at that time a considerable sum, especially to a poor scholar. Ascham about this time acquired other great patrons. He enjoyed a pension from Archbishop Lee, acted for some time as tutor to Henry and Charles Brandon, the two sons of the Duchess of Suffolk, and attracted the friendly regards of the Chancellor Wriothesly, and other eminent men.

In 1548, on occasion of the death of William Grindal, who had been his pupil at Cambridge, Ascham was appointed instructor in the learned languages to the Lady Elizabeth, afterwards Queen, a situation which he filled for some time with great credit to himself and satisfaction to his pupil.

Of Ascham's own attachments, as well as methods of study and teaching, we have the best record in his letters and the Schoolmaster. He held fast the truth, that it is only by its own free agency that the intellect can either be enriched or invigorated;—that true knowledge is an act, a continuous immanent act, and at the same time an operation of the reflective faculty on its own objects. How he applied

---

or should depart thence for any need. \* \* This good man's goodness shall never be out of my remembrance all the days of my life. For next to God's Providence, surely that day was, by that good father's means, *dies natalis* unto me for the whole foundation of the poor learning I have, and of all furthermore that hitherto elsewhere I have obtained." The human heart is capable of no more generous feeling than the genuine gratitude of a scholar to his instructor. It is twice blessed; honorable alike to the youth and to the elder; and never can exist when it is not just.

\* Public Orator is Spokesman on public occasions, and corresponding Secretary of the University. It is an office of great honor and high precedence.

this idea to the purposes of education, his "Schoolmaster," written in the maturity of his powers, and out of the fullness of his experience, sufficiently shows. But the idea, though undeveloped, wrought in him from his earliest youth; his favorite maxim was *Docendo discas*. The affectionate wish and strenuous effort to impart knowledge is the best possible condition for receiving it. The necessity of being intelligible to others brings with it an obligation to understand ourselves; to find words apt to our ideas, and ideas commensurate to our words; to seek out just analogies and happy illustrations. But, above all, by teaching, or more properly by reciprocal intercommunication of instruction, we gain a practical acquaintance with the universal laws of thought, and with the process of perception, abstracted from the actions of the individual constitution: for it is only by a sympathetic intercourse with other minds that we gain any true knowledge of our own. Of course we speak of free and friendly *teaching*, not of despotic *dictation*, than which there is no habit more likely to perpetuate presumptuous ignorance.

The study of the Greek language was at that time new in western Europe, and in England a mere novelty. To Ascham it was as "the trouble of a new delight;" every lesson which he gained he was eager to impart; he taught Greek, he wrote Greek, he talked Greek, no wonder if he dreamed in Greek. There might be a little vanity in this: but whatever vanity he possessed, (and he certainly loved to talk of himself,) was so tempered by modesty, and blended with such candor, such glad acknowledgment of other's merits, that the sternest judgments could hardly call it a foible. By this industrious communication and daily practice, he acquired, at a very early period, such a command of the Greek vocabulary, and so vernacular a turn of phrase, that his senior, Robert Pember, to whom he had addressed an epistle in that tongue, assures him that his letter might have been written at Athens. But the critical nicety of modern scholarship was then unknown, and it was very unlikely that Pember himself felt or understood that perfect *atticism* upon which he compliments his young friend. Pember's epistle of course is in Latin, interspersed with Greek, and curious enough to be worthy of translation. It is to this effect:—"Dearly beloved Roger,—I render thee thanks for thy Greek epistle, which might seem to have been indited at ancient Athens, so exactly hast thou attained the propriety of Greek phrase: of exquisite penmanship it is, as are all thine. *Use diligence, that thou may'st be perfect, not according to the stoical, but to lyrical perfection, that thou may'st touch the harp aright.* Continue to read Greek with the boys, for thou wilt profit more by one little fable of



Æsop, read and explained by thyself, than if thou shouldst hear the whole Iliad expounded in Latin by the learnedest man now living. Peruse Pliny, in which author is the greatest knowledge of things, along with the most florid opulence of Latin speech.”\*

In this letter we may notice, first, the testimonial to the beauty of Ascham’s penmanship,† which proved a principal means of his advancement: secondly, a proof that he was actually engaged in the tuition of *boys*: thirdly, that in his plans, both for his own improvement, and for that of his pupils, he diverged from the common routine of lectures: fourthly, that his friend, well discerning the bent and purpose of his genius, urged him to proceed with those humane and elegant studies, on which some austerer judgments looked with an evil eye. From one passage of this epistle, a biographer has observed that “Mr. Robert Pember advised him to learn instrumental music, which would prove a very agreeable entertainment to him after his severer studies, and was easy to be attained by him, as he was already a great master of vocal music.” It is certainly very possible, that Pember may have given him such advice, but it is nevertheless certain, that he does not give it in the letter in question. There is no allusion at recreation at all. The whole drift of the writer is an exhortation to perseverance in a course of study already commenced.‡

---

\* I wish young scholars paid attention to this recommendation. Pliny is never read at school, and very seldom at college; yet I have the high authority of Southey for saying, that he is the most instructive of all the Roman authors. The extent of his knowledge is almost marvelous; his veracity, where he speaks from personal observation, is daily approved by modern experiment and discovery; and even his credulity adds to his value, by disclosing more fully the actual state of physical science in his age and country. It is surely quite as interesting to know what properties the passions or the imaginations of men have ascribed to a plant or animal, as to count its stamina and petals, or ascertain the number of its vertebrae. Both are very useful. But the highest recommendation of Pliny is his moral wisdom, his almost Christian piety, his intelligent humanity. Of all the Romans he was the least of a Roman, and approximated nearest to the pure idea of man.

† The importance of good penmanship is still appreciated by the English government. In 1854, Viscount Palmerston, then Home Secretary, caused a letter to be addressed to the Secretary of the Privy Council on Education, in which he submits “for their Lordships consideration that one great fault in the system of instruction in the schools of the country lies in the want of proper teaching in the art of writing. The great bulk of the middle and lower orders write hands too small and indistinct, and do not form their letters; or they sometimes form them by alternate broad and fine strokes, which makes the words difficult to read. The hand writing which was generally practised in the early part and middle of the last century was far better than that now in common use; and Lord Palmerston would suggest that it would be very desirable that the attention of schoolmasters should be directed to this subject, and that their pupils should be taught rather to imitate broad printing than fine copper-plate engraving.”

‡ The words of the original are—“Da operam, ut sis perfectus, non Stoicus, ἀλλὰ Λυρικός, ut belle pulses lyram.” No doubt in the same sense that Socrates was commanded by the Oracle to make music; or, to appeal to a far higher authority, as David “shewed a dark speech on the harp,” i. e. opened and exalted the understanding by the aid of the imagination. S. T. Coleridge remarks on this note of his son Hartley,—neither has Hartley caught the true meaning of the words ἀλλὰ Λυρικός, as opposed to Stoicus. The Stoicus—the sovereignty of the highest by the sacrifice of the inferior; Lyricus, the whole as a beautiful one, by harmonious subordination.

So far was Ascham from devoting himself to music with that intensity which Pember has been supposed to recommend, that he appears to have had no manner of taste, but rather a platonic antipathy for it, even as an amusement. Nor would he be well pleased with the present course of education in his University, if we judge by the sentiments which he expresses in his *Schoolmaster*, and *Toxophilus*.

"Some wits, moderate enough by nature, be many times marred by over much study and use of some sciences, namely, music, arithmetic, and geometry. These sciences, as they sharpen men's wits over much, so they charge men's manners over sore, if they be not moderately mingled, and wisely applied to some good use of life. Mark all mathematical heads, which be wholly and only bent to those sciences, how solitary they be themselves, how unapt to serve in the world. This is not only known by common experience, but uttered long before by wise men's judgment and sentence. Galen saith, much music marreth men's manners, and Plato hath a notable place of the same thing, and excellently translated by Tully himself. Of this matter I wrote once more at large, twenty years ago, in my book of shooting." The passage of the *Toxophilus* referred to, is as follows:—"Whatsoever ye judge, this I am sure, that lutes, harps, barbitons, sambukes, and other instruments, every one which standeth by quick and fine fingering, be condemned of Aristotle, as not to be brought in and used among them, which study for learning and virtue. Much music marreth men's manners, saith Galen. Although some men will say that it doth not so, but rather recreateth and maketh quick a man's mind, yet methinks, by reason it doth, as honey doth to a man's stomach, which at the first receiveth it well; but afterwards it maketh it unfit to abide any strong nourishing meat, or else any wholesome sharp and quick drink; and, even so in a manner, these instruments make a man's wit so soft and smooth, so tender and queasy, that they be less able to brook strong and rough study. Wits be not sharpened, but rather made blunt, with such soft sweetness, even as good edges be blunted, which men whet upon soft chalk-stones."

These opinions require considerable limitation. Music is so high a delight to such as are really capable of enjoying it, that there is some danger of its encroaching too much upon the student's time, and it is frequently a passport to very undesirable company; but if these evils be avoided, its effects on the mind are extremely salutary and refreshing. Nothing calms the spirit more sweetly than sad music; nothing quickens cogitation like a lively air. But the truth was, that honest Roger had no ear, and like a true Englishman of an age when Kings

were wrestlers, and queens not only presided at tournaments, but "rained influence" upon bear baitings, delighted rather in muscular exertion than in fine fingering. That the practice of music no way impairs the faculty of severe thought, is sufficiently evinced by the fact that Milton was a skillful musician,\* and that most of the German philosophers of the present day, who in mental industry excel the whole world, play on some instrument. Mathematical pursuits are so far from disqualifying men for business, that of all others they are most necessary to such as are intended for public life. Be it as it may, with music and mathematics, it is certain that Ascham did teach Greek and Latin with eminent success.

It must be an affair of delicate management to teach Greek to a princess; but Ascham had a love and a genius for teaching, and Elizabeth possessed in an extraordinary degree the facility of her sex in learning languages. She had then little or no expectation of reigning. Her situation was one of peculiar difficulty: she needed a spirit at once firm and yielding; and displayed in earliest youth a circumspection and self-control in which her latter years were deficient. Ascham found her a most agreeable pupil; and the diligence, docility, modest affection, and self-respective deference of the royal maiden, endeared an office which the shy scholar had not undertaken without fears and misgivings. His epistles to his friends are full of the princess' commendations and his own satisfaction; and in his later works he refers to this part of his life with honest pride. In this happy strain he writes to John Sturmius, of Strasburg:—"If you wish to know how I am thriving at Court, you may assure yourself that I had never more blessed leisure in my college than now in the palace. The Lady Elizabeth and I are studying together, in the original Greek, the crown orations of Demosthenes and Æschines. She reads her lessons to me, and at one glance so completely comprehends, not only the idiom of the language and the sense of the orator, but the exact bearings of the cause, and the public acts, manners, and usages of the Athenian people, that you would marvel to behold her." In like temper he told Aylmer, afterward Bishop of London, that he learned more of the Lady Elizabeth than she did of him. "I teach her words," said he, "and she teaches me things. I teach her the tongues to speak, and her modest and maidenly looks teach me works to do; for I think she is the best disposed of any in Europe." In several of his Latin epistles, and also in his "Schoolmaster," he explains and recommends his mode of instructing the princess with evident exultation at

---

\* Much music is Galen's phrase, and see the last lines of Milton's sonnet—

He who of these delights can judge, and spare  
To interpose them oft, is not unwise.

his success. It was the same method of double translation pursued with such distinguished results in the tuition of the young sovereign, by Sir John Cheke, from whom Ascham adopted it: and, indeed, like many of the best discoveries, it seems so simple that we wonder how it ever could be missed, and so excellent, that we know not why it is so little practiced. It had, indeed, been suggested by the younger Pliny, in an epistle to Fuscus, and by Cicero, in his Dialogue de Oratore. "Pliny," saith Roger, "expresses many good ways for order in study, but beginneth with translation, and preferreth it to all the rest. But a better and nearer example herein may be our noble Queen Elizabeth, who never yet took Greek nor Latin grammar in her hand after the first declining of a noun and a verb; but only by this double translating of Demosthenes and Isocrates daily without missing, every forenoon, and likewise some part of Tully every afternoon, for the space of a year or two, hath attained to such perfect understanding in both the tongues, and to such a ready utterance in the Latin, and that with such a judgment, as they be few in number in both Universities, or elsewhere in England, that be in both tongues comparable to her Majesty." And so in an epistle to Sturmius:—"It is almost incredible to how excellent an understanding both of Greek and Latin I myself conducted our sacred Lady Elizabeth by this same double translation, constantly and in brief time delivered in writing." In the same letter he insists upon the pupil making the translations with his or her own hand, *proprio, non alieno stylo*, whence it may be concluded that Elizabeth was her own amanuensis on these occasions.

We may well allow a teacher to be a little rapturous about the proficiency of a lady, a queen, and his own pupil; but after all due abatements, the testimony remains unshaken both to the talent of the learner, and the efficiency of the system of instruction.

For two years the most perfect harmony subsisted between Elizabeth and her preceptor. The intervals of study were occasionally *relieved* with chess, at which Ascham is said to have been an adept. It is to be hoped that he had too much prudence and gallantry to beat the Lady oftener than was necessary to convince her that he *always* played his best. True, the royal virgin was not then Queen, or even presumptive heir; but no wise man would take the conceit out of a chess-player, that stood within the hundredth degree of relationship to the throne. Elizabeth was not the only distinguished female whose classical studies were assisted by our author; he taught Latin to Anne, Countess of Pembroke, to whom he addressed two letters in that language, still extant.

The court of the young Edward was filled with lovers of learning,

in whose society and patronage Ascham enjoyed himself fully, as Sir John Cheke his old friend, Lord Paget, Sir William Cecil, and the Chancellor Wriothesly. He had a share in the education of the two Brandons, and he partook the favor of the youthful King, who honoring knowledge, and all its professors, must have especially esteemed it in the instructor of his *Lady Temper*, as the amiable boy used to call his favorite sister. It was at this period that he became acquainted with the lovely Jane Grey, a creature whose memory should singly put to rout the vulgar prejudice against female erudition.

At the end of two years, however, upon a disgust he felt at the conduct of some of the princes's attendants, he suddenly threw up his appointment, and retired to his college. He afterward had reason to regret the precipitancy of his conduct, which was, perhaps, never entirely forgotten, though he succeeded in a great measure in regaining the favor of Elizabeth.

Returning to his duties, as public orator at Cambridge, he still retained his pension, and the confidence of the worthiest persons about court. His interest must have been very considerable, if, as Lloyd quaintly expresses it, "he hindered those who had *dined* on the church from *supping* on the universities;" He was certainly esteemed by Elizabeth, and of her he spoke with enthusiasm to his latest day, not without a pleasing consciousness of his own services in making her what she was. Thus, in the "Schoolmaster," his latest work, he makes her perfections a reproach to all her male subjects. "It is your shame, (I speak to you all, you young gentlemen of England,) that one maid should go beyond ye all in excellency of learning, and knowledge of divers tongues. Point out six of the best given gentlemen of this court, and all they together show not so much good will, bestow not so many hours daily, orderly, and constantly, for the increase of learning and knowledge, as doth the queen's Majesty herself. Yes, I believe that besides her perfect readiness in Latin, Italian, French, and Spanish, she readeth now at Windsor more Greek every day than some prebendary of this church doth Latin in a whole week. Amongst all the benefits which God hath blessed me withal, next the knowledge of Christ's true religion, I count this the greatest, that it pleased God to call me to be one poor minister in setting forward there excellent gifts of learning."

In excuse, however, of "the six best given gentlemen," it should be stated, that the learning of languages is emphatically a female talent, bearing a much larger ratio to general ability in woman than in man. Yet who can but admire the indefatigable intellect of the renowned queen, harassed in youth with peril and persecution, and

burdened in early maturity with public cares, which could yet attain a proficiency in polite learning, such as few professional scholars have excelled. The bare titles of the works which she translated evince the variety of her philological attainments, and justify the praises of her eulogists.\* When no more than eleven years of age she translated out of French verse into English prose, "The Mirror, or Glass, of the Sinful Soul," dedicated to Queen Catherine Parr, 1544. At twelve, she rendered out of English into Latin, French, and Italian, "Prayers or Meditations, by which the soul may be encouraged to bear with patience all the Miseries of Life, to despise the vain happiness of this world, and assiduously provide for eternal felicity, collected out of prime writers by the most noble and religious Queen Catherine Par, dedicated by the Princess Elizabeth to King Henry VIII.," dated at Hatfield, in Hertfordshire, December 30. Much about the same time she translated a treatise originally written by Marguerite of Navarre, in the French language, and entitled the "Godly Meditation of the Inward Love of the Soul toward Christ the Lord," printed in the "Monument of Matrons, containing seven several Lamps of Virginitie." These were the works of the "tender and maidenly years" of her childhood. At a riper age she turned from Greek into Latin, portions of Xenophon, Isocrates, and Euripides; from Greek to English, Boethius, Sallust's Jugurthine war, and part of Horace's Art of Poetry. From Italian she translated certain sermons of Bernardine Ochine, an Italian protestant divine. It is hard to say what assistance she may have had in these labors, nor can we speak of their merits from personal inspection; but if she produced any considerable part of them, they must evince extreme activity, and a laudable love of literary employment. What teacher would not be proud of such a scholar? But we must return to her preceptor.

In 1550, while on a visit to his friends in Yorkshire, he was recalled to court by a letter, informing him that he had been appointed to accompany Sir Richard Morysine† on his embassy to the court of the

---

\* The praises of Elizabeth were not confined to her own subjects. Scaliger declared that she knew more than all the great men of her time. Serranus honored her with the dedication of his Plato, in terms flattering enough, but only a learned Queen could be so flattered. Dedicators and panegyrists dabble much in prophecy; but it is not often that they prophecy truly. Serranus, however, was right for one, when he foretold the future fame of "good Queen Bese," and "Eliza's Golden-days." "*Quemadmodum Salomonis vel Augusti felix imperium, notabile fuit ad designandum civilem felicitatem; ita et tuum, regina, illustre, sit futurum, tuaque insula non amplius Albion sed Olbia et vere fortunata sit porro nuncupanda. Quidenim? In regno tuo vera illa regnant philosophia cujus vix ac ne vix quidem umbram vidit Plato.*"

† SIR RICHARD MORYSINE, [or Morison,]—son of Thomas Morysine, of Essex, was educated at Eaton and Cambridge,—traveled in Italy, and studied in Padua,—made prebendary in Salis-

Emperor Charles V. It was on his way to London on this occasion, that he had his well-known interview with Lady Jane Grey, at her father's seat at Brodegate, in Leicestershire, where he found her, a young lady of fifteen, reading the "Phædon" of Plato in the original Greek, while the members of her family were hunting in the park. Ascham's beautiful relation of the scene is given in his "Schoolmaster."

"Before I went in Germany I came to Brodegate, in Leicestershire, to take my leave of that noble lady, Jane Grey, to whom I was exceedingly much beholding. Her parents, the Duke and Duchess, with all the house, old gentlemen and gentlewomen, were hunting in the park. I found her in the chamber alone, reading Phædo Platonis in Greek, and that with as much delight as some gentlemen would read a merry tale of Boecace. After salutation, and duty done, with some other talk, I asked her why she should lose such pastime in the park? Smiling, she answered me, "I wist all their sport in the park is but a shadow of that pleasure I find in Plato. Alas, good folk, they never felt what true pleasure meant." "And how came you, madam," quoth I, "to this knowledge of pleasure? And what did chiefly allure you unto it, seeing not many women, and but very few men, have attained thereunto?" "I will tell you," quoth she, "and tell you a truth which perchance ye may marvel at. One of the greater benefits God ever gave me, is, that he sent me so sharp and severe parents, and so gentle a schoolmaster.\* For when I am in presence either of father or mother, whether I speak, keep silence, sit, stand, or go, eat, drink, be merry or sad, be sewing, playing, dancing, or doing anything else, I must do it as it were in such weight, number, and measure, even so perfectly, as God made the world, or else I am so sharply taunted, so cruelly threatened, yea, presently, sometimes with pinches, nips, and bobs, and other ways, (which I will not name for the honor I bear them,) so without measure misordered that I think myself in hell, till time come that I must go to Mr. Elmer,† who teacheth me so gently, so pleasantly, with such fair allurements to learning, that I think all the time nothing while I am with him. And when I am called from him I fall on weeping, because whatsoever I do else beside learning, is full of grief, trouble, fear, and whole misliking unto me. And thus my book hath been so much my pleasure, and bringeth daily more pleasure and more; that in respect of it, all other pleasures, in very deed, be but trifles and troubles unto

---

bury Cathedral, and sent Ambassador to Emperor Charles V., by Henry VIII.,—was knighted by Edward VI.,—and died in 1556.

\* Mr. Elmer, or Ælmer, or Aylmer, as the name is variously written, was born as 1521, studied both at Oxford and Cambridge at the cost of Henry Grey, Marquis of Dorset by whom he was made tutor to his own daughters, of whom the Lady Jane Grey was the eldest,—was made Arch deacon of Stowe, in 1553,—and Bishop of London, in 1576, and died in 1594.



me." I remember this talk gladly, both because it is worthy of memory and because also it was the last talk I had, and the last time that I ever saw that noble and worthy lady."

The interview, simple in incident as it was, has assumed the dignity of a piece of history, and its illustration has been a favorite subject both for the author\* and the artist.

Before leave-taking, Ascham obtained a promise of the Lady Jane to write to him in Greek, on condition that she should first write to her, as soon as he arrived in the Emperor's court.† His epistle is extant in choice Latin. Alluding to the circumstances of their last interview, he declares her happier in her love of good books, than in her descent from kings and queens. No doubt he spoke sincerely; but he knew not *then* how truly. Her studious quietude of spirit was her indefeasible blessing, while her royal pedigree‡ was like an hereditary curse, afflicting her humility with unwilling greatness, and her innocence with unmerited distress.

Ascham embarked for Germany in the following September. He accompanied Morysine as a kind of secretary, though some of his duties resembled those of a tutor, comprising, as they did, the reading of "all Herodotus, five tragedies of Sophocles, most of Euripides, the orations of Isocrates, and twenty-one orations of Demosthenes," during the ambassador's stay at Augsburg, as we are informed by Ascham himself, in a letter to a college friend at home. But besides these literary labors, he took a share in the diplomatic correspondence, and is said to have been consulted on all affairs of importance by his principal. He also occupied himself in preparing a "Report on the affairs of Germany," which was printed.

His urbanity, readiness, and general information, recommended him

\* We append to this article, an "Imaginary Conversation" between Roger Ascham and Lady Jane Grey, by Walter Savage Landor.

† These particulars we learn from a letter of Roger's to Sturminus, dated 14th December, 1550, in which he promises to show Jane's epistle to the German scholar, when it should arrive. It appears, too, that the Lady was requested to correspond with Sturmius in Greek.

‡ Lady Jane Grey was the daughter of Frances Brandon, the daughter of Mary Queen Dowager of France, and sister of Henry VIII., by Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk. Her father was Henry Grey, Marquis of Dorset, descended from Elizabeth, Queen to Edward IV., by her former marriage, through her son, Thomas Grey, who married the King's niece. The father of Lady Jane was created Duke of Suffolk, on the failure of the male line of the Brandon.

Lady Jane Grey, or to speak more correctly, Lady Guilford Dudley, (for she perished in her honeymoon,) wrote her last letter to her sister Catharine in the blank pages of her Greek Testament; and when she saw her bridegroom led to execution under her prison window, she wrote three several sentences in her tablets in as many languages. The first in Greek, to this effect:—If his slain body shall give testimony against me before men, his blessed soul shall render an eternal proof of my innocence before God. The second in Latin:—The justice of men took away his body, but the divine mercy has preserved his spirit. The third in English:—If my fault deserved punishment, my youth and my imprudence were worthy of excuse: God and posterity will show me favor.

No. 8.—[VOL. III, No. 1.]—3.



not less to Princes and Ministers, than his Greek, Latin, logic, and divinity, to John Sturmius and Jerome Wolfius. The courtiers thought it a pity he was not always attached to an embassy, and the learned regretted that he should ever leave the schools. Whatever he was doing seemed his *forte*, and so rife were his praises in every mouth, that he was in peril of the woe denounced against those whom "all men speak well of."

During his absence abroad, his friends in England procured not only the restoration of his pension, which had ceased at the death of Henry VIII., but the place of Latin secretary to Edward VI. For these favors he was indebted, as appears by a letter of Ascham preserved in the Lansdowne MSS., to the interference of Sir William Cecil, the Ambassador Morysine, and Sir John Cheke.

The death of King Edward in 1553, led to the immediate recall of the ambassador, with whom Ascham returned to England. By this event he lost both his recent preferments, and the accession of the Catholic Queen Mary held out such dismal prospects for the future, that Ascham retired to his college almost in despair. Matters however took an unexpected turn. Sir William Paget, whose recommendation of the "Toxophilus" to King Henry had procured his pension from that king, now exerted his influence in his favor with Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, who, notwithstanding Ascham's staunch protestantism was often represented to him, proved his steady patron. The "Toxophilus" was produced by the bishop at the council, and was considered so useful a work, that the objections to the author's advancement were removed. Ascham's pension was not only restored, but doubled, and he was appointed Latin secretary to king Philip and the queen. He was so diligent in his office, that at its commencement he is recorded to have written in three days no less than forty-seven letters to princes and great personages, the lowest in rank being a cardinal. These of course were all written with his own hand, one of his principal qualifications, in addition to his learning, being the excellence of his penmanship, for which he had been celebrated from his college days. By the influence of Gardiner he was also enabled to retain his fellowship and his post of public orator at the university—when by strict statute he might have been deprived of them, till they were vacated by his marriage. The object of his choice was Mistress Margaret Howe, a lady of some fortune and good family, to whom he was united on the 1st of June, 1554. A letter from the "German Cicero," Sturmius, who corresponded with our author with all the warmth and frequency of school friendship, dated the 24th of the same month, jocosely reproaches him with omitting to communi-

cate such an important piece of business. "But what is it I hear? Would you keep your engagement close, for fear I should send you a High-Dutch epithalamium? I am informed that your intended is niece to the wife of Mr. Walop, that was governor of Guisnes when I was at Calais. Ah! but she was an honest madam, a fair and comely dame! If it be so, that you are going to make her your spouse, or if you have any other in your eye, do let me know, and tell me when the day is to be, that if I can not myself be present at the espousals, I may send Thalassius\* to make my compliments to your love in my stead." Ascham replied,—“As for my wife, she is the picture of her aunt Walop, and all that John Sturmius could wish the wife of Roger Ascham to be.”

The singular good fortune of Ascham in not only escaping persecution, but receiving favor, throughout the troubles of Mary's reign, while his contemporaries at college were either led to the stake, or compelled to recant, is a problem which it would now be difficult to solve. Johnson is willing to attribute it to chance; other biographers imagine that his services were of sufficient importance to protect his life; while all allow that his immunity was at any rate not purchased by any sacrifice of his principles.

On the death of Queen Mary, in 1558, Ascham was soon distinguished by the notice of her successor. He had long before taken pains to erase from Elizabeth's mind any unfavorable impression that might have been produced by his abrupt departure from her service, and his excuses had been favorably received. He was now appointed Latin secretary and tutor in Greek to her Majesty, and during the rest of his life was a constant resident at court. He spent some hours every day in reading Greek and Latin authors with the queen, and often enjoyed the more envied honor of being her partner or opponent in games of chance. He obtained from her several pieces of preferment, the principal of which was the prebend of Wetwang in the cathedral of York, which he received in 1559.

He had the opportunity of frequent interviews with her Majesty, and had the favor to talk Greek and Latin, and play chess with her,—openings which a more artful and ambitious man might easily have improved. But the pride or modesty of Roger would not suffer him to ask any thing for himself or others. Indeed he used to boast of his backwardness in this particular, often averring in conversation, that during all the happy hours that he had enjoyed his Lady Sovereign's presence, he never opened his mouth to enrich himself or any that belonged to him; that to serve his mistress well was his best reward;

---

\* Thalassius was the Roman nuptial god, as Hymen was the Greek. A song was sung at weddings, in which "Io Thalassie" was perpetually repeated like a burden.

that he had rather freely win her good opinion than be dressed out in her munificence. The Lord Treasurer, who was his friend and well-wisher, often admonished him to take less pains, and urge more requests. But Ascham was slow even to receive what was offered, and thoroughly content with his condition, which, though moderate, was never, as Anthony à Wood states broadly, and a hundred others have copied from him, miserably poor. He had always sufficient for the day, and was not one of those that lay up store for the morrow. He was extremely indignant when any one offered him presents to purchase his interest with the Queen, saying, that God had not given him the use of his tongue that it might be venal and subservient to his profit.

His income was narrow, he was neither importunate to get, nor provident to save—his purse and house were always open to the distressed scholar, and whatever was his, was his friends' also. He delighted much in an epigram of Martial—

*Extra fortunam est quicquid donatur amicis;  
Quas solas dederis, semper habebis opes.*

*The friendly boon from fate itself secures,  
And what you give, shall be for ever yours.*

This is not the way to grow rich. Roger Ascham was generous, and it may be imprudent; but there is no just cause for supposing him viciously extravagant.

There is little more to relate of the last ten years of his life. Finding his health injured by night-studies, he for a time discontinued them, and became an early riser; but toward the close of 1568 he sat up several nights successively in order to finish a poem addressed to the Queen on the new year. That new year he was never to see. Long subject to fever, and latterly to a lingering hectic, his over-exertion brought on a violent attack which his weakened constitution was unable to withstand. Sleep, which he had too long rejected, could not be persuaded to visit him again, though he was rocked in a cradle; all opiates failed, and in less than a week, exhausted nature gave way to the slumber, from which there is no waking on this side of the grave. He took to his bed on the 28th of December, and expired on the 30th of the same month, 1568, aged fifty-three. He was attended to the last by Dr. Alexander Nowel, Dean of St. Paul's, who, on the ensuing fourth of January, preached his funeral sermon, in which he declares that "he never knew man live more honestly nor die more christianly." As he had many friends, and no enemies, his death was a common sorrow, and Queen Elizabeth is reported to have said, that "she would rather have thrown ten thousand pounds into the sea, than have lost her Ascham."

Notwithstanding his preferments, Ascham died poor. He left a

widow, to whom he had been married in 1554, and several children, one of whom, Giles, was in after-life fellow of St. John's, (or Trinity, according to other authorities,) and celebrated, like his father, for the elegance of his Latin epistles. Ascham's greatest work, "The Schole-master," was not published until after his death. The occasion of its composition is told in the beginning of the book. After a conversation among a number of eminent men, Sir William Cecil at their head, on the merits of severity and its opposite in school discipline, in which Ascham warmly attacked the former, Sir Richard Sackville took him aside, and avowing that his own education had been marred by the severity of his tutor, proposed that Ascham should draw up a plan of instruction, and recommend a person under whom it could be put in practice, having for his scholars Sir Richard's grandson, and Ascham's eldest boy, Giles. Ascham set about his task with delight; but the death of Sir Richard in 1566, before it was completed, put an end to the proposed scheme, and caused the author to finish his work with a sorrow and heaviness in sad contrast to the high hopes with which he entered upon it. He left the book completed for the press, when he died, and it was published by his widow, with a dedication to Sir William Cecil, and with a view, not altogether disappointed, of attracting his attention in behalf of her son Giles to whom it was thus, after all, of some benefit, although in a far different manner from what the author could have anticipated. The principal object of the work besides the reprehension of severity on the part of teachers and parents, is the introduction of a new system of teaching the Latin language, a system which has been partially revived of late years. Ascham proposes, after teaching the rudiments of grammar, to commence a course of double translation, first from Latin into English, and shortly after from English into Latin, correcting the mistakes of the student, and leading to the formation of a classic style, by pointing out the differences between the re-translation and the original, and explaining their reasons. His whole system is built upon this principle of dispensing as much as possible with the details of grammar, and he supports his theory by a triumphant reference to its practical effects, especially as displayed in the case of Queen Elizabeth, whose well-known proficiency in Latin he declares to have been attained without any grammatical rules after the very simplest had been mastered.

The excellence of Ascham's epistolary style has been referred to. He was in correspondence with most of the learned men of his time, both in England and on the continent, especially with Sturmius, whose name he gave to one of his three sons. After his death, a collection,

of his Latin letters was published by his friend Edward Grant, master of Westminster School, together with a few poems, for the benefit of Giles Ascham, who was then under Grant's tuition. To this collection was prefixed a panegyric on Ascham, which is the principal source for his life, though his letters, and numerous allusions scattered through his works, contribute to a knowledge of his personal history.

A writer in the *Retrospective Review*, (Vol. iv. p. 76,) in an interesting notice of Toxophilus remarks: "Ascham is a great name in our national literature. He was one of the founders of a true English style in prose composition, and one of the most respectable and useful of our scholars. He was amongst the first to reject the use of foreign words and idioms, a fashion, which in the reign of Henry the VIII., began to be so prevalent, that the authors of that day, by "using straunge wordes, as Latine, Frenche, and Italian, did make all thinges darke and harde." It required some virtue moreover in Ascham, attached as he was to the study of the learned languages, to abstain from mingling them with his English compositions, especially when the public taste countenanced such innovations. But Ascham's mind was too patriotic to permit him to think, that his native tongue could be improved by this admixture of foreign phrases, an opinion which he illustrates by this comparison;—"but if you put malvesye and sacke, redde wyne and white, ale and beere, and all in one pot, you shall make a drinke not easye to be known nor yet holsome for the bodye." In obedience to the precept of Aristotle,—to think like the wise, but to speak like the common people; Ascham set a successful example of a simple and pure taste in writing, and we question whether we do not owe more to him on this account, than even for the zeal which he displayed in the cultivation of the Greek, language, during its infancy amongst us."

Ascham's character is well summed up in a passage of his life by Mr. Hartley Coleridge: "There was a primitive honesty, a kindly innocence, about this good old scholar, which gave a personal interest to the homeliest details of his life. He had the rare felicity of passing through the worst of times without persecution and without dishonor. He lived with princes and princesses, prelates and diplomats, without offence and without ambition. Though he enjoyed the smiles of royalty, his heart was none the worse, and his fortunes little the better."

## ROGER ASCHAM AND THE LADY JANE GREY.

[From Walter Savage Landor's "Imaginary Conversations of Literary Men and Statesmen." Volume II., p. 79-84.]

---

ASCHAM.—Thou art going, my dear young lady, into a most awful state; thou art passing into matrimony and great wealth. God hath willed it so: submit in thankfulness.

Thy affections are rightly placed and well distributed. Love is a secondary passion in those who love most, a primary in those who love least. He who is inspired by it in a great degree, is inspired by honor in a greater: it never reaches its plentitude of growth and perfection, but in the most exalted minds. . . . Alas! alas!

JANE.—What aileth my virtuous Ascham? what is amiss? why do I tremble?

ASCHAM.—I remember a sort of prophecy, made three years ago: it is a prophecy of thy condition and of my feelings on it. Recollectest thou who wrote, sitting upon the seabeach, the evening after an excursion to the Isle of Wight, these verses?

Invisibly bright water! so like air,  
On looking down I feared thou couldst not bear  
My little bark, of all light barks most light,  
And looked again . . . and drew me from the sight,  
And, hanging back, breathed each fresh gale aghast,  
And held the bench, not to go on so fast.

JANE.—I was very childish when I composed them; and, if I had thought any more about the matter, I should have hoped you had been too generous to keep them in your memory, as witnesses against me.

ASCHAM.—Nay, they are not much amiss for so young a girl, and there being so few of them, I did not reprove thee. Half an hour, I then thought, might have been spent more unprofitably; and I now shall believe it firmly, and if thou wilt but be led by them to meditate a little, on the similarity of situation in which thou then wert to what thou art now in.

JANE.—I will do it, and whatever else you command me; for I am too weak by nature and very timorous, unless where a strong sense of duty holdeth me and supporteth me: there God acteth, and not his creature.

Those were with me at sea who would have been attentive to me, if I had seemed to be afraid, even the worshipful men and women were in the company; so that something more powerful threw my fear overboard: but I never will go again upon the water.

ASCHAM.—Exercise that beauteous couple, that mind and body, much and variously, but at home, at home, Jane! indoors, and about things indoors; for God is there too. We have rocks and quicksands on the banks of our Thames, O lady, such as ocean never heard of; and many, (who knows how soon!) may be engulfed in the smooth current under their garden walls.

JANE.—Thoroughly do I now understand you. Yes indeed, I have read evil things of courts; but I think nobody can go out bad thence who entereth good, if timely and true warning shall have been kindly and freely given.

ASCHAM.—I see perils on perils which thou dost not see, although thou art wiser than thy poor old master. And it is not because love hath blinded thee,

for that surpasseth his supposed omnipotence; but it is because thy tender heart, having always lent affectionately upon good, hath felt and known nothing of evil.

I once persuaded thee to reflect much: let me now persuade thee to avoid the habitude of reflection, to lay aside books, and to gaze carefully and stedfastly on what is under and before thee.

JANE.—I have well bethought me of all my duties: O how extensive they are! what a goodly and fair inheritance! But tell me, wouldst thou command me never more to read Cicero and Epictetus and Polybius? the others I do resign unto thee: they are good for the arbor and for the gravel walk: but leave unto me, I beseech thee, my friend and father, leave unto me, for my fireside and for my pillow, truth, eloquence, courage and constancy.

ASCHAM.—Read them on thy marriagebed, on thy childbed, on thy deathbed! Thou spotless undrooping lily, they have fenced thee right well! These are the men for men: these are to fashion the bright and blessed creatures, O Jane, whom God one day shall smile upon in thy chaste bosom . . . Mind thou thy husband.

JANE.—I sincerely love the youth who hath espoused me; I love him with the fondest, the most solicitous affection. I pray to the Almighty for his goodness and happiness, and do forget at times, unworthy suppliant! the prayers I should have offered for myself. O never fear that I will disparage my kind religious teacher, by disobedience to my husband, in the most trying duties.

ASCHAM.—Gentle is he, gentle and virtuous: but time will harden him: time must harden even thee, sweet Jane! Do thou, complacently and indirectly, lead him from ambition.

JANE.—He is contented with me and with home.

ASCHAM.—Ah Jane, Jane! men of high estate grow tired of contentedness.

JANE.—He told me he never liked books unless I read them to him. I will read them to him every evening: I will open new worlds to him, richer than those discovered by the Spaniard; I will conduct him to treasures . . . O what treasures! . . . on which he may sleep in innocence and peace.

ASCHAM.—Rather do thou walk with him, ride with him, play with him, be his faery, his page, his everything that love and poetry have invented: but watch him well, sport with his fancies; turn them about like the ringlets round his cheeks; and if ever he meditate on power, go, toss up thy baby to his brow, and bring back his thoughts into his heart by the music of thy discourse.

Teach him to live unto God and unto thee: and he will discover that women, like the plants in woods, derive their softness and tenderness from the shade.



## IV. TOXOPHILUS; THE SCHOLE OF SHOOTING.\*

BY ROGER ASCHAM, WRITTEN IN 1554.

---

BEFORE introducing to our readers "the Schole Master" of Queen Elizabeth, or "the plaine and perfitte way" in which Roger Ascham led his royal pupil up the sublime heights of ancient learning, we will devote a few pages to a brief notice and a few specimens of his *Toxophilus*.

TOXOPHILUS was written in 1554, during Ascham's residence at the University of Cambridge, and seems, in addition to other ends, to have been intended as an apology for the zeal with which he studied and practiced the ancient, but now forgotten art of archery as a means of recreation. His great attachment to the exercise, and the time spent upon it were considered unbecoming the character of a grave scholar and teacher.

From this imputation, he endeavors in the character of *Toxophilus*, (a lover of archery,) to free himself, by showing in a dialogue with *Philologus*, (a student,) the honor and dignity of the art, in all nations and in all times. He asserts truly that much of the success of English arms at Cressy, Poitiers, Agincourt, and Flodden, was due to their strength of arm and accuracy of eye, with which the bold yeomen of England "drew their arrows to the head," and discharged the "iron sleet" against their discomfited enemies. To realize the part which the practice of archery played in the pastimes of peace, we have only to recall its frequent introduction into the rural poetry of England, and the traditionary stories of the Strongbows and Robin Hoods of ancient days. It was the national practice of shooting for pleasure or prizes, by which every man was inured to archery from his infancy, that gave the English yeomen an insuperable advantage in the use of the bow over all foreign troops, and made them formidable even to foes armed with the clumsy muskets of the times of Queen Elizabeth. We do not propose to set forth Ascham's encomiums on the utility of archery in matters of war, or the minute practical details which he gives for choosing and using the bow, even to the species of goose, from the wing of which the best feathers are to be plucked for the shaft, but to present his views of the fitness and utility of manly sports, and recreating amusements for those who lead a sedentary life. A writer in the *Retrospective Review*, (Vol. IV., p. 79,) in commenting on this work of Ascham justly observes :

---

\* The following is the title in Bennett's Edition of Roger Ascham's Works :

TOXOPHILUS: The Schole, or Partitions of Shooting. Contayned in II Bookes. Written by ROGER ASCHAM, 1554. And now newly perused. Pleasant for all Gentlemen and Yomen of Englande. For theyr pastime to reade, and profitable for theyr use to followe in warre and peace. Anno, 1571. Imprinted at London, in Fletestreate, near to Saint Dunstons Church by Thomas Marshe.



"A scholar seldom takes much delight in active amusements. The body is always postponed to the mind; and provided the latter has exercise enough, he is too apt to be negligent of the health and comfort of the former. On this account the amusements of literary men have frequently a degree of mental labor combined with them, which generally defeats the ends they ought to attain; or, as Fuller says, 'they cozen their mind in setting it to do a double task under pretense of giving it a play day, as in the labyrinth of chess, and other tedious and studious games.' It is difficult to cheat the brain into idleness. Kirk White could not help repeating Greek verses as he took his daily walk. Mere exercise is rather painful than pleasant to studious men, and accordingly we find they often hasten over it like a disagreeable task. Swift used to run up and down hill some half a dozen times by way of compressing as much exercise as possible into a given space of time,—a mode of recreation for which we have the authority of Galen, whose catalogue of amusements for the studious, we give in our author's words, strongly recommending them to the attention of our modern literati.

"To run up and down hill, to climb up a long pole or a rope, and there hang awhile, to hold a man by his arms, and wave with his heels, much like the pastime the boys used in the church when their master was away, to swing and totter in a bell-rope, to make a fist and stretch out both his arms, and so stand like a rood. To go on a man's tip-toes stretching out the one of his arms forward, the other backward, which if he bleared out his tongue also, might be thought to dance antic very properly. To tumble over and over, to top over tail, to set back to back and see who can heave another's heels highest, with other much like."

If we might rely on the word of Sir Phillip Sidney, the exercise of riding on horseback is a very fitting relaxation. He gives a very fascinating account of the zeal with which he and his friend, 'the right virtuous E. W.,' when at the Emperor's court studied this science. This too was an amusement which met with the approbation of Bishop Stillingfleet. Moreover, Erasmus seems to have been attached to it, who, as Ascham tells us, 'when he was here in Cambridge, and when he had been sore at his book, (as Garret our book-binder has often told me,) for lack of better exercise would take his horse, and ride about the market hill and come again.' Field sports seldom take the fancy of literary men, and, notwithstanding the praise of honest Piscator, Isaac Walton, we are rather inclined to think with another old writer, that 'fishing with an angle is rather a torture than a pleasure, to stand an hour as mute as the fish they mean to take.' After all, the soberest and the fittest exercise, is a quiet and refreshing walk in the field, where the eye enjoys a pleasant change of scene, just sufficient to attract the attention of the mind without fatiguing it. But in this opinion we run completely counter to our author, who speaks of this mode of exercise in a very contemptuous manner.—'Walking alone in the field hath no token of courage in it, a pastime like a single man that is neither flesh nor fish.'"

The following is the opening of the discourse between Toxophilus and Philologus, in which the former endeavors to prove that some relaxation

and pastime are to be mingled with study and the serious business of life.

*Philologus.*—You study too sore, Toxophilus.

*Toxophilus.*—I will not hurt myself overmuch, I warrant you.

*Phil.*—Take heed you do not, for we physicians say that it is neither good for the eyes in so clear a sun, nor yet wholesome for the body, so soon after meat to look upon a man's book.

*Tox.*—In eating and studying I will never follow any physician, for if I did I am sure I should have small pleasure in the one, and less courage in the other. But what news drove you hither, I pray you?

*Phil.*—Small news, truly, but that as I came on walking, I fortun'd to come with three, or four that went to shoot at the pricks; [*mark.*] and when I saw not you among them, but at last espied you looking on your book here so sadly, [*seriously.*] I thought to come and hold you with some communication, lest your book should run away with you. For methought, by your wavering pace and earnest looking, your book led you, not you it.

*Tox.*—Indeed, as it chanced, my mind went faster than my feet, for I happened here to read in Phedro Platonis, a place that treats wonderfully of the nature of souls; which place, whether it were for the passing eloquence of Plato and the Greek tongue, or for the high and goodlye description of the matter, kept my mind so occupied, that it had no leisure to look to my feet. For I was reading how some souls being well feathered, flew always about heaven and heavenly matters: other some having their feathers mouted away and dropping, sank down into earthly things.

*Phil.*—I remember the place very well, and it is wonderfully said of Plato: and now I see it was no marvel though your feet failed you, seeing your mind flew so fast.

*Tox.*—I am glad now that you letted [*interrupted*] me, for my head aches with looking on it, and because you tell me so, I am very sorry that I was not with those good fellows you spake upon, for it is a very fair day for a man to shoot in.

*Phil.*—And methinks you, were a great deal better occupied, and in better company, for it is a very fair day for a man to go to his book in.

*Tox.*—All days and weathers will serve for that purpose, and surely this occasion was ill lost.

*Phil.*—Yes, but clear weather makes clear minds, and it is best, as I suppose, to spend the best time upon the best things, and methought you shot very well, and at that mark at which every good scholar should most busily shoot at. And I suppose it be a great deal more pleasure to see a soul fly in Plato, than a shaft fly at the pricks. I grant you shooting is not the worst thing in the world, yet if we shoot, and time shoot, we are not apt to be great winners at the length. And you know also, that we scholars have more earnest and weighty matters in hand, nor we be not born to pastime and play, as you know well enough who sayeth.

*Tox.*—Yet the same man, [*Cicero de officiis,*] in the same place, Philologe, by your leave, doth admit, wholesome, honest, and manly pastimes, to be as necessary to be mingled with sad matters of the mind, as eating and sleeping is for the health of the body, and yet we be born for neither of both. And Aristotle himself, [*Ethics, Book 10, chap. 6,*] sayeth although it were a fond and a childish thing to be too earnest in pastime and play, yet doth he affirm, by the authority of the old poet, Epicharmus, that a man may use play for earnest matters sake. And in another place, [*Politics, V. 61, 6,*] that, as rest is for labor, and medicines for health, so is pastime, at times, for sad and weighty study.

*Phil.*—How much in this matter is to be given to the authority of Aristotle or Tully, I can not tell, seeing sad [*serious*] men may well enough speak merrily for a mere matter: this I am sure, which thing this fair wheat, (God save it,) maketh me remember, that those husbandmen which rise earliest, and come latest home, and are content to have their dinner and other drinkings brought into the field to them, for fear of losing time, have fatter barns in the harvest, than they which will either sleep at noontime of the day, or else make merry with their neighbors at the ale. And so a good scholar, that purposeth to be a

good husband, and desireth to reap and enjoy much fruit of learning, must till and sow thereafter, [in order to it.] Our best seed time, which be scholars, as it is very timely, and when we be young: so it endureth not over long, and therefore it may not be let slip one hour; our ground is very hard and full of weeds, our horse wherewith we be drawn very wild, as Plato saith. [*Phædro.*] And infinite other mo lets, [*hindrances*] which will make a thrifty scholar take heed how he spendeth his time in sport and play.

*Tox.*—That Aristotle and Tully spake earnestly, and as they thought, the earnest matter which they treat upon, doth plainly prove. And as for your husbandry, it was more [*speciously*] told with apt words, proper to the thing, than thoroughly proved with reasons belonging to our matter. For contrary-wise, I heard myself a good husband at his book once say, that to omit study for sometime of the day, and sometime of the year, made as much for the increase of learning, as to let the land lie sometime fallow, maketh for the better increase of corn.

Thus we see, if the land be ploughed every year, the corn cometh thin up; the ear is short, the grain is small, and when it is brought into the barn and threshed, giveth very evil faule. [*produce.*] So those which never leave pouring on their books, have oftentimes as thin inventions as other poor men have, and as small wit and weight in it as other men's. And thus your husbandry, methink is more like the life of a covetous snudge, that oft very evil proves, than the labor of a good husband, that knoweth well what he doth. And surely the best wits to learning must needs have much recreation, and cease from their books, or else they mar themselves: when base and dumpish wits can never be hurt with continual study; as ye see in luting, that a treble minikin string must always be let down, but at such a time as when a man must needs play; when the base and dull string needeth never to be moved out of his place. The same reason I find true in two bowes that I have, whereof the one is quick of cast, tricke [*neat*] and trim, both for pleasure and profit; the other is a lugge, [*strong and heavy,*] slow of cast, following the string, more sure for to last than pleasant for use. Now, sir, it chanced the other night, one in my chamber would needs bend them to prove their strength, but, (I can not tell how,) they were both left bent till the next day after dinner; and when I came to them, purposing to have gone on shooting. I found my good bow clean cast [*warped*] on the one side, and as weak as water, that surely, if I was a rich man, I would rather have spent a crown; and as for my lugge it was not one whit the worse, but shot by and by as well and as far as it ever did. And even so, I am sure that good wits except they be let down like a treble string and unbent like a good casting bow, they will never last and be able to continue in study. And I know where I speak this, Philologus, for I would not not say thus much afore young men, for they will take soon occasion to study little enough. But I say it therefore, because I know, as little study getteth little learning, or none at all, so the most study getteth not the most learning of all. For a man's wit fore-occupied in earnest study, must be as well recreated with some honest pastime, as the body, fore-laboured must be refreshed with sleep and quietness, or else it can not endure very long, as the noble poet [*Ovid*] saith:—

“What thing wants quiet and merry rest, endures but a small while.”

Philologus was not disposed to yield up readily his objections to shooting, and so challenges Toxophilus to a discussion of the subject, upon which the latter enters right heartily. He traces its origin, according to various authorities among the poets and historians to Jupiter, and Apollo, and cites its use among the Medes and Persians, Greeks and Romans, by wise lawgivers, and eminent princes, by poets and physicians. He cites the authority of Lycurgus to show that “the Lacedemonians never ordained anything for the bringing up of youths which was not joined with labor; and that labor which is in shooting of all other is best, both because it increaseth strength, and preserveth health most, being not vehement, but moderate, not overlaying any one part with weariness, but softly exercising every part with equalness; as the arms and breast

with drawing, the other parts with giving, being also pleasant for the pastime, which exercise by the judgment of the best physicians is most allowable."

"By shooting also is the mind honestly exercised, where a man always desireth to be best, and that by the same way, that virtue itself doth, coveting to come nighest a most perfect end, or mean standing betwixt two extremes, eschewing sport, or gone [too far] on either side, for which causes *Aristotle* himself saith, that shooting and virtue be very like. Moreover that shooting of all others, is the most honest pastime, and that least occasion to naughtiness is joined with it, two things do very plainly prove, which be, as a man would say, the tutors and overseers to shooting; daylight and open place where every man doth come, the maintainers and keepers of shooting from all dishonest doing."

*Philologus* urges, that if scholars must have pastime and recreation for their minds, "let them use music and playing on instruments, as more seemly for scholars, and most regarded always of Apollo and the Muses." Toxophilus adds, even as I can not deny but some music is for learning, so I trust you can not choose but grant that shooting is fit also, as Callemarchas does signify in this verse.

*"Both merry song and good shootiny delighteth Apollo."*

He then proceeds to criticise the effect of music on the those who devote much time to it, as being much more suitable to women than men. *Philologus*, however, dwells on the humanizing influence on the manners which would follow, if the whole people were taught to sing and enjoy good music, and also on the uses which lawyers and preachers would find in a proper culture of the voice. He therefore concludes that as singing is an aid to good speaking, and to making men better, "as daily experience doth teach, the example of wise men doth allow, authority of learned men doth approve," it should be part of the education and pastime of every youth. But as for shooting, he can not think that "a man can be in earnest in it, and earnest at his book to."

In defending his favorite pastime, Toxophilus grants that shooting should be "a waiter upon learning, not a mistress over it." "A pastime must be wholesome, and equal for every part of the body, pleasant, and full of courage for the mind, not vile and dishonest to give ill example to other men, not kept in gardens and corners, not lurking into the night and in holes, but evermore in the face of men."

In the above views expressed by Toxophilus, Ascham is sustained by the Rev. Dr. Thomas Fuller, who in his *Holy State* expresses himself in this quaint way. "Recreation is a second creation, when weariness hath almost annihilated one's spirits. It is the breathing of the soul, which otherwise would be stifled with continual business.

"Take heed of boisterous and over-violent exercises. Ringing has oftentimes made good music on the bells, and put men's bodies out of tune, so that by over-heating themselves, they have rung their own passing bells.

"Refresh that part of thyself which is most wearied. If thy life be sedentary, exercise thy body; if stirring and active, recreate thy mind. But take heed of cozening thy mind, in setting it to a double task, under pretense of giving it a play-day, as in the labyrinth of chess and other tedious and studious games.

"Yet recreations distasteful to some dispositions, relish best to others. Fishing with an angle is to some rather a torture than a pleasure, to stand an hour as mute as a fish they mean to take. Yet herewithal Dr. Whitaker was much delighted. When some noblemen had gotten William Cecil, Lord Burleigh and

the Treasurer of England, to ride with them a hunting, and the sport began to be cold, 'what call you this?' said the Treasurer. 'O, now,' said they, 'the dogs are at fault.' 'Yea,' quoth the Treasurer, 'take me again in such a fault, and I'll give you leave to punish me.' Thus as soon may the same meat please all palates, as the same sports suit all dispositions.

"Running, leaping, and dancing, the descants on the plain song of walking, are all excellent exercises. And yet those are best recreations, which beside refreshing, enable, at least dispose men to some other good ends. Bowling teaches men's hands and eyes mathematics, and the rules of proportion; swimming hath saved many a man's life, when himself hath been both the waves and the ship; tilting and fencing is war without anger; and manly sports are the grammar of military performance.

"But above all, shooting is a noble recreation, and a half liberal art. A rich man told a poor man that he walked to get a stomach for his meat. 'And I,' said the poor man, 'walk to get meat for my stomach.' Now shooting would have fitted both their turns; it provides food when men are hungry, and helps digestion when they are full.

"Recreation, rightly taken, shall both strengthen labor, and sweeten rest, and we may expect God's blessing and protection on us in following them, as well as in doing our work; for he that saith grace for his meat, in it also prays God to bless the sauce unto him. As for those that will not take lawful pleasure, I am afraid they will take unlawful pleasure, and by lacing themselves too hard, grow awry on one side."

We have confined our notice of Toxophilus to the description of archery as a recreation. The book is full of maxims of profound practical wisdom, of exquisitely touched pictures of manners, and of delightful tributes to learning. The discourse concludes in this manner:

*Tox.*—This communication handled of me, Philologue, as I know well not perfectly, yet as I suppose truly, you must take in good worth, wherein, if divers things do not altogether please you, thank yourself, which would rather have me faulted in mere folly, to take that thing in hand, which I was not able to perform, than by any honest shamefacedness with-saye your request and mind, which I know well I have not satisfied. But yet I will think this labor of mine better bestowed, if to-morrow, or some other day when you have leisure, you will spend as much time with me here in this same place, in entreating the question, *de origine animæ*, and the joining of it with the body that I may know how far Plato, Aristotle, and the Stoicans, have waded in it.

*Phil.*—How you have handled this matter, Toxophile, I may not tell you myself now, but for your gentleness and good will toward learning and shooting, I will be content to show you any pleasure whensoever you will; now the sun is down, therefore if it please you, we will go home and drink in my chamber, and then I will tell you plainly what I think of this communication, and also what day we will appoint, at your request, for the other matter to meet here again.

## V. EDUCATION.—THE CULTIVATION OF THE EXPRESSIVE FACULTIES.

Lectures addressed to Young Teachers.

BY WILLIAM RUSSELL, OF LANCASTER, MASS.

Ed. American Journal of Education, (Boston,) 1826—29.

---

INTRODUCTORY OBSERVATIONS.—The classification of the mental faculties under the designations of “perceptive,” “expressive,” and “reflective,” was adopted in the preceding lecture of this series, as a convenient one for a survey of the human mind, with reference to the purposes of education. This classification, it was mentioned, could not be regarded as founded on lines of distinction which could be assumed as rigorously or literally exact; since its terms are properly but so many names for various states, acts, or operations of the mind,—itself one and the same in all.

Imperfect as such a classification must necessarily be, however, it enables us, by its distinctions, to trace more clearly and definitely the forms of mental action, and the power which the mind possesses of exerting itself in different modes; and it affords to the educator, when contemplating the intellectual capabilities of man with reference to the processes and effects of culture, the advantages of analysis and systematic examination, as aids to the prosecution of his inquiries.

Following the order of nature and of fact, when we trace the succession of action in the exercise of man’s intellectual powers, as these are designated in the classification which we have adopted, we observe that, in the mature and deliberate use of the mental faculties, the habitual and normal succession is, (1.) *Observation*, (2.) *Reflection*, (3.) *Expression*. In the immature and susceptible condition of childhood and youth, however, the spontaneous activity and development of the communicative tendencies of the mind cause the action of the expressive faculties to precede that of the reflective; and to this law the order of education will properly correspond.

The perfect action and discipline of the power of expression, require, no doubt, all the aid derived from the maturity of reason and reflection, and, consequently, an advanced stage of intellectual culture. But, in the history of man’s mental progress, under the guidance of natural laws, the educator perceives and recognizes in the young mind, an early necessity of utterance, or of expression in some form, as one of the divinely implanted instincts by which it is actuated, and



which therefore becomes an indication to be obeyed in the plan and progress of culture.

The phenomena of the external world irresistibly impel the child to utter the emotions which they excite; and the judicious educator will always encourage the young observer to record them, long before the era of experience in which they become subjects of reflective thought or profound cogitation. To give consistency and effect, however, to the forms of expression,—whether for purposes of record or of discipline,—a certain degree of progress must have been attained in the exercise and development not only of the perceptive, but also of the reflective faculties;—a result inseparable, indeed,—as was mentioned in the preceding lecture,—from the right direction of the perceptive powers themselves. In this and in every other attempt to trace the order of mental development, we are always brought back to the grand primal truth that the mind is properly *one*, in all its action; we are reminded that this great fact is the basis of all true culture, and that the different intellectual *faculties*, as we term them, are but the varied phases or modes of action of the same subtle power.

As an introduction, accordingly, to the discussion of the principles which regulate the cultivation of the expressive faculties, as a department of intellectual education, our last lecture followed, to some extent, the necessary connection existing between the discipline of the perceptive faculties and the primary action of the reflective. With this preliminary preparation, we will now proceed, on the plan indicated in the first lecture of this series, to the study of the various forms of mental action which, in the figurative language unavoidable in all intellectual analysis and classification, may be termed the *expressive* faculties.

The plan proposed embraced, it will be recollected, the following prominent features:—(1.) an *enumeration* of each group of faculties, by its *modes*, or forms, of *action*; (2.) the *actuating principle*, or impelling force, of each group; (3.) the *tendency*, or habit, of action in each; (4.) the *result*, or issue, of such action; (5.) the *educational processes*, forms of exercise, or modes of culture, suggested by the four preceding considerations.

Following the order here mentioned, we commence with the

#### (I.) ENUMERATION OF THE EXPRESSIVE FACULTIES.

These may be grouped under the following designations:—Emotion, Imagination, Fancy, Imitation, Personation, Representation, Language, Taste.

*Explanatory Remark.*—To ascertain, with precision, what powers

or attributes of the human being should be regarded as properly comprehended under the above denomination, the educator would do well, here as elsewhere, to advert to the primitive signification of the term which is employed to designate the class of faculties to which it is applied. At every step of his progress in the study of man as a being capable of systematic development, the teacher finds a guiding light perpetually emanating from the primary sense of the terms which constitute the nomenclature of intellectual philosophy, in its analysis of the human faculties. These terms are often highly figurative, and hence peculiarly suggestive with reference whether to distinctness of classification, or to purposes of culture and development. In no case does this remark apply more forcibly than in the present. The term "expression," (*pressing out*,) implies, in the first instance, the existence of something *within*, which, under the action of a force, working whether from within or from without, is *pressed out*, and thus rendered external, palpable, or perceptible.

Referring this term to the phenomena of human experience, we derive, from its primary and figurative sense, the inference, or implication, that man is endued with the power of giving an external manifestation to his internal conditions of thought or feeling. The form of this manifestation may be that of attitudes and actions of the body, changes in the aspect of the countenance, effects on the tones of the voice, or efforts in the organs of articulation, and modifications of the accents of speech; it may appear in imitative acts, in suggestive graphic delineations, or in intelligible written characters. But in all cases, it is the *representative expression* (*pressing out*,) of what has been *impressed*, or is *present, within*.—The inward working may be that of a feeling, an affection, an emotion, or a passion: it may be that of an impressive idea, or of a thought, an opinion, or a sentiment. But the result is invariably an outward effect, audible or visible.

Whatever power or faculty, therefore, has an agency in the process of thus giving an external manifestation to an internal mental condition, will be appropriately comprehended under the designation "expressive;" and the classification will be exhaustive and complete, if it include all those mental states, acts, or operations which give *form* to thought or feeling. The preceding enumeration of the expressive faculties, however, is intended to present only those which are prominently active in the ordinary conditions of humanity, and which are the principal subjects of disciplinary training, in the processes of education.

1. EMOTION: *its Offices in Expression*.—Emotion is the natural language of that *sensibility* which tends to render man conscious of  
No. 8.—[Vol. III. No. 1.]—4.



himself, which serves to unite him, by a law of sympathy, with other beings as well as with those of his own race, and which, as a stimulus to his power of will, impels him to the various forms of salutary and pleasurable, or injurious and destructive action. Without this power, ("emotion,"—*moving outward*,) man might, indeed, possess the profoundest capacity of feeling, the utmost depth of thought, the grandest or the most beautiful forms of imagination. His whole inner world might be consciously a scene of ideal glory. But, to his fellow man, he would be mute and unintelligible. Self-contained and solitary, the individual would be as destitute of sympathy as of expression, and live unappreciated and uninterpreted, because incommunicative and unintelligible.

Emotion, therefore, we find is not left wholly at the discretion or the control of man, as a purely voluntary power. Its first and all its strongest manifestations are spontaneous and involuntary. It is the natural and irrepressible language of that wondrous capacity of pleasure and pain with which the human being is invested, in consequence of the susceptible sensibility with which his Creator has seen fit to enliven and to protect his nature.

Emotion, as the natural expression of sympathy, renders feeling legible and audible, and thus enables man instinctively to utter or to interpret the language of the heart; as an intimation of the will, it enables him to read the disposition and intentions, friendly or hostile, of his fellow beings. It is an early instrument of power to the helplessness or the sufferings of infancy, while it proclaims the presence of pain, and brings to the little patient the ready sympathy and remedial aid of the mother. It expresses and attracts the sympathetic affections of childhood and youth. It gives eloquence to the speech of man, warmth to the cordial welcome of friendship, or fire to the hostility of hatred. It melts in pity and compassion for suffering; it glows with indignation at oppression and wrong; it bends in humility and adoration before Infinite majesty, and in reverence to human worth; or it looks haughtily down on the lowly, spurns the petitioner for mercy, and tramples on the weak and the unresisting. Its power for good or evil is unspeakable in all that involves the moral or the intellectual character of human utterance.

*The Forms of Emotion.*—These are as various as the mental relations of man. It is Love, in the instincts of *affection*; Wonder, in those of the *intellect*; Awe, in those of the *spirit*; Admiration, in those of *sentiment*; Joy and Grief, to the *heart*; Hatred and Revenge, in the *malignant* passions; Ardor and Enthusiasm, in the aspirations of the *soul*; Courage and Exultation, in *conflict*; Fear and

Terror, in *danger* ; Embarrassment, Confusion, and Shame, in *failure* or *defeat* ; Anguish, in *pain* ; Contrition or Remorse, in conscious *guilt* ; Agony and Despair, in utter *ruin* ; Serenity, Tranquillity, and Peace, in conscious *rectitude* ; Calmness and Composure, in *self-control* ; Sorrow and Gladness, in *sympathy* ; Laughter, in *mirth* ; Caricature, in *humor* ; Gloom, in *melancholy*.

*Effects of Emotion.*—Its aspects and its traits are as numerous as the ever-changing moods of the “many-sided mind ;” and its power of expression ranges through all degrees of force, from the gentle half-whisper of confiding love, or the accents of a mother’s tenderness, to the scream of madness and the burst of rage. It moves to deeds of gentleness and mercy, as consciously pleasing acts dictated by the principle of duty ; and it prompts to the perpetration of crimes at the thought of which humanity shudders. In all circumstances it becomes an expressive language of indescribable power,—a power for the exercise of which man is laid under responsibility the most appalling. Its genial effects carry man beyond the limits of his nature, and enable him to approximate to the benignity of an angel ; and its malignant workings invest him with the character of a fiend.

*Emotion, the Inspiration of Language.*—Emotion, as the natural, involuntary, or irrepressible manifestation of feeling, is, in itself, the primary form as well as cause of expression. The writhings and the outcries of pain, the tears and the wailings of sorrow, the smiles and the sweet tones of pleasure, the leaping and the laughter of exuberant joy, the exultant attitudes and shouts of triumph, the frown, the harsh tone, and the blow of anger, are all a universally intelligible language. But emotion is also the power which gives life, and force, and effect to *voluntary* and *deliberate* utterance, not only in the tones of spoken language but in the burning words which the glowing heart prompts to the pen of the eloquent writer, and which, when read from the mouldering parchment or the crumbling tablet, ages after they were written, have still the power to stir men’s blood, “as with the sound of a trumpet.” It inspires the modern youth with the eloquence of Demosthenes, in the words with which he “fulminated over Greece ;” it kindles the heart of the student in his “still removed place,” with the fire and the shout and the fierceness of the battle scenes of Homer ; it appalls him with the spectacle of the victims of inexorable fate, in the defiant appeals of the suffering Prometheus, as he writhes on his rock of torture,—in the superhuman agonies of the doomed Orestes,—in the wailings of the guiltless Œdipus, when he is awakened to the complicated horrors which he has unwittingly drawn down upon himself and upon the very authors of his being.

It is the same expressive power, in its more genial forms, which lulls the youthful reader into the dreamy repose of the pastoral scenes of the eclogue, where

"Every shepherd tells his tale  
Under the hawthorn in the dale."

It is the same power, in its ecstatic moods, which lights up the soul with the brilliant fire of the lyric ode, whose burning words have immortalized equally the bard and the hero of the antique world of gods and godlike men; and it is still the same magic power over sympathy which holds us entranced over "what, though rare, of later age," we feel to possess the same sway over the heart as that which was written of old for all time.

2. IMAGINATION: *its Office in Expression*.—Emotion endows man with the *power* of expression: his ability to give force and effect to expression, is as his capability of emotion; and the vividness of emotion is dependent on his susceptibility of feeling. But the utmost intensity of feeling might exist in internal consciousness merely; the most vehement excitement of emotion might find no definite or intelligible manifestation; it might be but the idiot's "sound and fury, signifying nothing;" the noblest sentiments of the human soul might find no adequate expression; were it not for the action of another faculty,—that whose office it is to give *form* to the vague effects of feeling, to embody the evanescent phenomena of emotion, and to give to the abstractions of thought and the generalizations of sentiment a definite shape and the durability of a permanent record.

Consciousness and introversion might enable the individual man to hold communion with his own inner conditions of thought and feeling; and memory might enable him to recall them. But, as it is not given to man, by any act of mere direct introspection, to read the heart or mind of his fellow man, sympathetic and intelligent human intercommunication requires, as a condition, the aid of some power or faculty by which feeling may be distinctly manifested, not merely in its stronger and involuntary excitements, but also in its quietest moods, in its gentlest movements and most delicate effects. The communication of pure thought, apart entirely from excited emotion, is also a necessity of man's mental character and relations. Intellect, not less than feeling, has its claims on utterance, that the individual may become consciously a progressive being, and that mutual intelligence and benefit may be ensured to society. Some means, in a word, are needed to represent what is present to the mind, to suggest the idea or the thought which, by a law of his nature impelling him, man desires to communicate to his fellow being.

*Analogy, the Medium of Expression.*—Taught by a wisdom above his own, man finds, in the analogies of the outward universe, correspondences to his own inward states of thought and feeling. These analogous forms he refers to as interpreters, in his acts of expression; he transfers them, by a heaven-taught instinct, from their original places in the visible outward sphere to his own inner and invisible world of thought and feeling. These borrowed forms, addressing themselves to a common nature in common circumstances, become the suggestive language of emotion and intelligence between man and man; and, as intellectual skill and expertness are developed, these forms are at length multiplied and complicated so as to assume all the varied shapes of the current coin of speech, even in its most arbitrary modes;—just as, in the history of human intercourse, traffic, which commenced with the interchange and barter of commodities, gradually becomes a process of purchase and sale, by the adoption of convenient forms representing value and price.

*Significance of the term "Imagination."*—The power by which man recognizes the analogies of form presented in the external world, the power by which he represents these, the power by which he transfers these to his own internal world, and thus *images*, by analogy, his invisible, impalpable, feelings and conceptions; the power which thus embodies sentiment, and gives shape to language and all other modes of expression, is suggestively named "Imagination,"—the *imaging* faculty.

*The Sphere of Imagination.*—The office of this faculty, as an expressive power, is one of vast extent and of immense value; and its domain, like that of emotion, is indefinite. Intellect, in its widest excursions and its highest aims, is definite and limited. Its outward sphere is that of sense, as comprehended by the understanding, and measured by the rule of judgment; its inner sphere is that of reason acting on data of definite thought, even in its purest abstractions and widest generalizations. Intellect, in its judicial and critical capacity, may justly assume the authority of deciding on the symmetry and proportion of expression as the form of thought. But it has no creative, no inventive power by which to call up form; it may interpret or explain feeling; but it can not, without the aid of imagination, embody it. Imagination extends its dominion alike over feeling and intellect: it possesses, exclusively, the power of investing them with form. As a sovereign in the vast world of analogy, it reaches, in one direction, to the farthest limits of the outward universe, wherever form exists, in conditions known or unknown; in another direction, it penetrates the deepest secrets of human feeling, and brings them up from their

darkest regions of half-unconscious being to the world of form and light, endues them with conscious life and speech, and sends them abroad as ministering angels of good or evil ; in still another direction, it explores the ethereal world of thought, and, by its creative energy, gives imagery, and form, and recognized character to impalpable ideas, clothes the naked conceptions of intellect with the garb of symmetrical expression, forges the golden links of language for the continuous processes of reason, invests sentiment with the living majesty and power of utterance, and crowns the inspired productions of the artist and the poet with the consummate beauty of form and the music of immortal verse.

3. *FANCY : its Effects on Expression.*—This faculty, although it possesses a character so peculiarly marked by external tendencies, and proneness to a lower sphere of action than that of imagination, can hardly claim, with justice, the dignity of a separate and independent existence. The term “Fancy,” (*fantasy*,) is, strictly speaking, but another name for *imagination*, when that faculty, as an expressive power, assumes, occasionally, a lower than its wonted office, and, not content with the creation of *form*, descends to the addition of minute detail, in the shape, or figure, or color of its embodiments. Fancy, considered as a separate faculty, may be regarded as the servant and laborer of imagination, employed to take charge of all the merely outward effects of expressive art, but whose ambition sometimes leads it to aim at higher offices than it is, in itself, competent to fill. Attempting the creation of visible beauty, it assumes the office of a presiding deity over the fleeting, fluctuating phenomena of fashion and other manifestations of arbitrary taste. Uniting itself with humor and burlesque, it displays the whole world of fantastic oddity, drollery, and grotesque effects, of every species. It handles, with peculiar skill, the pencil of the caricaturist, and delights, sometimes, in the most hideous exaggerations. It contrives, occasionally, to lay mischievous hands on Taste, and with perverting influence to make her play all manner of antics, quite unconscious, all the while, how infinitely absurd and ridiculous she is making herself appear. Hence the whole world of absurd form and combinations in modes of dress and decoration, in incongruous architecture, deformed sculpture, distorted drawing, tawdry coloring, paltry novel-writing, fugitive (and vagabond) verses, agonistic orations, and nondescript lectures.

Fancy, however, has also her own becoming and proper part to play, when, in strictest unison with true Taste, and in filial obedience to her parent, Imagination, she gives symmetry to our dwellings and to our garments, genuine grace to manners, true beauty to our gardens,

happy touches to the details of artistic execution, chaste style to writing, and manly plainness to speech.

4. *IMITATION: its Tendencies.*—The faculty of Imitation and the tendency to its exercise, which,—in the earlier stages of life, more particularly,—man possesses in common with many other of the animal tribes, form, in whatever regards expression, a peculiar source of power. It ensures, when judiciously developed, as a salutary instinct, all the advantages arising from native facility, as contrasted with the comparatively slow acquirements and laborious endeavors of mere artificial or mechanical training. The long non-age required for the comparatively slow development and maturing of the human being, implies a large dependence on the fostering care of parental guardianship and example; and the innate propensity to imitation, on the part of the child, coincides, in the effect of rendering more ample the opportunity of a long course of model training and practical lessons in the appropriate accomplishments of humanity. Among these, Speech, as the consummation of the expressive faculties, thus becomes the inheritance which one generation transmits to another,—a possession unconsciously acquired, although actually the result of long-continued training, and sometimes, of painful efforts in detail.

*Drawing, as an Imitative Art.*—The imitative tendency of the young, leading, as it does, to the perfecting of utterance, as an exercise in which practice begets skill, extends its influence, by the law of analogy, far and wide, over every branch of art which involves expression as a result. Nor is there one of all these branches which does not, by the habitual practice of it, under the same law, serve to discipline and perfect the power of expression in every other.

The feelings, the imagination, the conceptive power, the taste, and even the critical judgment of the young mind, are all called into as active exercise, in every earnest attempt to draw in outline, to shade, or to color the form of any external object, as in any endeavor to describe it by tongue or pen. Indeed, the extreme fixedness of attention demanded for exact and faithful delineation by the pencil, ensures a yet higher degree of mental activity, than does any other form of descriptive execution, and contributes more effectually to the development of graphic power of expression in language, than can any direct exercise in speech or writing; because the same powers are exerted in the one case as in the other, but with much more care and closeness of application.

*Music, as an Imitative Art.*—Another of the poetic and purely beneficent forms of the divinely implanted faculty of imitation, by which man attains the development of his powers of expression and

communication, is that of Music, in the form of *song*. The young ear drinks in, instinctively and intuitively, the beauty of sound, as the eye takes in that of form and color. The laws of melodic variation of tone seem to be inscribed on the human ear, with few exceptions, as the laws of graceful form and expansion are stamped on the plant. But the musical sense is not a merely dry perception or recognition, or a mechanical obedience to law. It is one of the most delightful forms in which man becomes conscious of the pleasure of feeling or the power of emotion; and, as his culture extends, he recognizes it as the intelligent utterance of sentiment, in the noblest expressions of social sympathy, or even of devotional aspiration.

The imitative practice of music, accordingly, in all its forms, from the humblest lullaby of the nursery to the most exalted strains of the perfect vocalist, becomes a powerful discipline of the ear, because of the heart, the intellect, and the imagination. It prepares them to receive more fully the impressions of the melody of speech, and, in due season, to give forth their effects in appropriate expression. The child imbibes from the mother's song the theme of its own imitative efforts, and from the simple beauty of the natural model, catches, at the same time, unconsciously, the emotion of which it is the utterance, and thus early learns to unite expression with feeling. At a later stage of his musical culture and development, he acquires more consciously and more distinctly, a perception of the inspiration which marks the tones of the impassioned eloquence of the orator and the poet, and learns to appreciate the delicious melody of the "numerous verse" which "clothes the poet's thought in fitting sound."

The great masters in musical science and art, abundantly prove, by the transcendent delight which their efforts yield to universal man, the power and value of music as an expressive art, independently of its relation to the cultivation of the power of language. But the intensity of pleasure derived from the perfection of musical composition and execution combined, suggests instructively to the educator the power which even the elementary practice of this imitative art exerts on the character of expression, when embodied in the forms of language,—the ability which it gives to touch the heart, or to kindle emotion, and to throw the whole soul of the speaker and the writer into the mould of utterance.

5. **PERSONATION:** *its Tendency and Effects, as a Mode of Expression.*—The faculty of *imitation* with which man is endowed, as a form of expressive power, leading him to the acquisition of language, is early manifested in the passion of childhood for Personation; the living, actual representation of what he sees going on in the human



world around him. The lively feelings of the child are not satisfied with the mere verbal presentation of thought and feeling in the arbitrary and conventional forms of language. He has an instinctive desire to impersonate the being of others in himself, and thus to enter more fully into their feelings, and acquire a truer power of expressing them. To his fresh sympathies and ever active imagination, life around him is a drama: "all the world's a stage, and all the men and women are but players," each performing his part.

The child, the primitive man, the poet, all tend to dramatize human life, and to present it in living impersonation. The boy struts the mimic soldier, to his own mimic music; he drags his little wagon as an imaginary fire-engine, or mounts a chair and plays the orator to his little mates. In his puerile sports, he enacts a character or an incident, in dumb show, and requires that his juvenile companions shall express it in words. He personates a hero in history, or makes one in a group in a tableau, in which, as an Indian brave, he is about to dash out the brains of Captain Smith with his war-club, when his sister, as the compassionate princess Pocahontas, rushes in, and rescues the hero. At the academy exhibition, he personifies Mark Antony weeping over the murdered Cæsar, and with words of fire rousing the Romans to mutiny, "crying havoc! and letting slip the dogs of war;" or he resorts, in preference, to the pen, and dramatizes a scene from his country's history, which he and his class-mates enact to the life, according to their power. In the maturity of his intellect, and amid the grave duties of professional life, he pauses, perhaps, to recreate himself, and delight the world with the production of a *Comus* or a *Hamlet*, in which, besides furnishing the composition, he still takes an active part in the business of representation, and, true to the dramatic instinct of his nature, sustains a character himself. It is thus that he completes the educational training by which he attains to the height of eloquence and expressive power in word and action; and this dramatic faculty of personation, while it gives vividness and intensity to his utterance, proclaims the meaning and intention of the self-discipline to which he was early impelled, by unconscious instinct.

6. REPRESENTATION : *The Language of Signs*.—In addition to the more imaginative and, sometimes, physical or corporeal manifestations of expressive power, which the human being exhibits in imitative acts, he possesses, as his special attribute, in virtue of his intellectual endowments, working in unison with the instinctive elements of his nature, that peculiar faculty of Representation, by which he is enabled to suggest his thoughts or feelings to the mind of his fellow man, by substituting for graphic or mimetic, or other forms of delineation, con-



ventional *signs*, audible or visible, devised by his imaginative faculties of invention and combination. These signs are recognized and defined by his conceptive intellect; they are interpreted by the understanding, acting on a law of arbitrary association, established by mutual agreement or common consent, and ultimately sanctioned by prevalent usage. Furnished with this primitive telegraphic apparatus of audible and visible signs, man is enabled to put himself in communication with his sympathetic, intelligent, and rational fellow-beings,—to reveal to them the workings of his mind, and disclose the inmost secrets of his heart.

*Speech and Writing.*—Disciplined and perfected by art and skill, and aided by ingenious and assiduous educational cultivation, man's primitive power of utterance and expression, ultimately manifests itself in the consummated forms of *spoken* and *written language*, regulated by the laws of thought, as dictated by the sciences of *logic* and *grammar*, and adorned by the graces of *rhetoric*.

*Language, a measure of Power.*—The feeble but persevering endeavors of childhood to conquer the difficulties of articulation, and to compass the power of oral expression, indicate, by the successive years which the task demands, how arduous is its accomplishment, and how thoroughly it puts to proof the ability which the young human being possesses to direct and develop his own powers of execution. Yet more striking is the magnitude of the task and the triumph, in the progress achieved by the student of written language, from the date of his first attempt, in boyhood, to pen a letter or compose a theme, to the time when, in the maturity of his intellectual manhood, he rises to address assembled multitudes of his fellow men, and to sway them by the potency of triumphant eloquence; or when he issues from his poetic privacy a work which shall live for ages, as an object of wonder and admiration.

*Pictured and Written Characters.*—Somewhat similar, indeed, have been the difficulty and the progress in the attainment of a mastery over the merely external part of written language; as we perceive when tracing the process from its primal rude attempts in the form of graphic delineations, through its advancement to symbolic representation, and, ultimately, to phonetic characters and alphabetic letters. Of the width of this vast field of human labor, and of the toil which its cultivation has cost, we have no adequate conception, till we look at the graphic delineations which form the historical records of Nineveh, or at the symbolic hieroglyphics and the clumsy phonetic characters inscribed on the temples of Egypt, and then contrast with these the simple and symmetrical letters of the Greek or

Roman alphabet, known and read alike throughout the ancient and modern world of civilization.

*The Value of Language.*—Man's expressive power seems to have consummated itself in the representative phenomena of language. In this form his whole nature, animal, intellectual, and moral, finds effectual utterance; and by this instrumentality, does he become pre-eminently a progressive being. Language is the channel in which the ceaseless stream of mental action flows onward to its great results. Without this outlet, his soul, imprisoned within itself, would stagnate, and all its wondrous powers perish from inaction. As the medium of communication between mind and mind, language renders education practicable, and brings to the aid of the individual the accumulated thoughts of all times and of all men. Language is the peculiar and chosen province of education. Every process of human culture is conducted through its agency; every result attained in human progress is recorded in its terms; and in every civilized and cultivated community language is justly taken as the measure of individual and social attainment.

7. **TASTE:** *The Signification of the Term.*—The word "Taste," employed to designate one of the expressive faculties, might seem, from its primary signification, (*relish*,) to be one appropriately applied rather to a passive and receptive condition of mind, than to one so active or energetic as are all those which are properly termed "expressive." But, in the affairs of the mental world, not less than in those of the political, *influence* is often more efficient than *power*. So it is with Taste.—The office of this faculty in relation to expression, is to retain, in the selection and use of language, the *relish* for appropriateness, symmetry, and grace, which the soul has imbibed from the primitive beauty of the forms and the effects—in other words, the language—of nature,—that other name for life and truth.

*Character of True Taste.*—As true taste secures genuine beauty of effect, it is not a merely passive power. It rejects every false savor; for it relishes only the true. It refuses to inhale the flavor of the artificial perfume; because it prefers the aroma of nature. It detests the ugly, and shuns the ungraceful; but it loves the truly beautiful, and builds the fabric of noble thought "after the pattern shown it on the mount," as a chaste harmonious whole, conceived in pure ideal perfection, and executed with faultless skill, like that structure which

"Rose like an exhalation, with the sound  
Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet;  
Built like a temple, where pilasters round  
Were set, and Doric pillars overlaid  
With golden architrave; nor did there want  
Cornice or frieze with bossy sculpture graven;  
The roof was fretted gold."

Taste is not a quality merely negative in its influence : it is, in language, a positive power. It suggests and prescribes beauty ; and, in all expression, beauty is power. Taste virtually decides and ordains the forms of language. It is therefore justly classed as an expressive faculty. It blends its effects, undoubtedly, with those of imagination and fancy, and with those of sentiment and emotion ; controlling and directing and modifying these by its intuitive recognition of the eternal laws of beauty and proportion, and instinctively rejecting every blemish. If it is sometimes lost, to appearance, in the effects produced by the more obvious working of other expressive forces ; its actual presence and power are not less deeply felt in the pervading harmony which, in such circumstances, it has established, and the genuine beauty which it has diffused. Its influence extends over every form of expressive art ; and its results are equally legible in all. It guides the pencil of the painter, the chisel of the sculptor, the tool of the artizan, the hand of the musician, the pen of the poet, the voice and action of the speaker. It reigns over every form of language ; and it moulds alike habit, character, and manners ; for all of these are but varied modes of expression.

*Taste, under the Influence of Culture.*—Of all the faculties with which man is endued, none, perhaps, is more susceptible of cultivation than taste ; and none yields larger results to the process. Trained under the fresh aspects of nature, and the strict discipline of truth, it becomes one of the most healthful influences that a liberal culture infuses into the human soul. It leads to the true, the pure, and the beautiful, in every relation of thought and feeling. Next to the hallowing influence of religious principle, it elevates and refines the whole being, and confers pure and lasting enjoyment on its possessor. It forms one of the most attractive graces of character, and breathes a genuine charm over the aspect of social life. But neglected, corrupted, or perverted, deprived of the healthful air of nature, abandoned to coarse and low association, vitiated by the influence of false custom, distorted by conventional regulations, or tainted by the impure atmosphere of vice, taste becomes depraved, and morbidly craves deformity instead of beauty, and prefers falsehood to truth.

## (II.) THE ACTUATING PRINCIPLE, OR IMPELLING FORCE, OF THE EXPRESSIVE FACULTIES.

*FEELING : its Office in Expression.*—The Sensibility with which the constitution of man, as a sentient animal and as a self-conscious moral being, is invested, and by which he is stimulated to action and to utterance, may, for our present purpose, be defined as that element in his nature, which,—whether manifesting itself in temporary *sympathy*, in permanent *affections*,—in vivid *emotion*, or intense *passion*,

beauty may be strong enough and deep enough to demand some more palpable and durable shape in which to express itself. The intense delight in beauty impels the Artist to devote himself to days and nights of toil over the image which alone can satisfy the longing of his soul, for the visible presence of the loveliness which his fancy has conceived in his inner world of life and form.

*On the Actions of the Child and of the Adult.*—It is the untaught, unconscious working of the emotion of love which makes the child find expression for his sympathy in the act of imitating the gait and actions, and the characteristic expressions of those whom he admires. Nor does adult man always escape the effects of this tendency, when maturity of mind and habits of grave research seem sometimes to render the result ridiculous.

*On the Actor and his Audience.*—The natural delight in sympathy and communication, is the incitement which impels the actor on the stage to assume and exhibit, in his plastic frame and features, the agonies of dramatic passion, in all their terrific extremes, while he personates the ravings of Lear, the frenzy of Othello, or the remorse of Macbeth ; and it is the same cause which attracts, night after night, to the crowded theatre, the audience who thus acknowledge the force of the great element of sympathy in human nature, and the power which vivid expression exercises over the heart, when it has even the well sustained semblance of coming from the heart.

*On the Eloquence of the Orator.*—It is from sympathy with the very passions which he delights to excite, that the orator devotes his days of seclusion and nights of application to the study of every art by which expression may be heightened and emotion aroused, when the decisive moment is come, and the interests of the state are at hazard, and men are to feel that their welfare or their safety is to depend on adopting the views of an eloquent and competent leader.

*On the soul of the Poet.*—It is sympathy with the highest sentiments and emotions of his race, and the conscious delight in giving these a noble utterance, that inspires the poet with the assurance of immortality, while he meditates his great theme, and touches and re-touches his artistic work, till it stands forth complete in the majestic beauty and perfection after which his soul has, for years, aspired.

*Universality of Feeling, as the Actuating Principle of Expression.*—In all the above and similar instances, the sympathetic feeling which thirsts for expression, and impels to the utterance or the recording of sentiment, is one and the same. It may assume the definiteness and the depth of a personal affection, or the intensity and the comparative excess of a passion, to whatever extent the instigation of feeling may

excite the sentient agent. But it is still the same element of sensibility, only working in deeper channels, and with a stronger tide, and therefore doing its work more effectually and impressively. In whatever form, it is still but an act of obedience to the law of his constitution, by which man, as a sympathetic being, is impelled to expression, that he may attain to the power and the habit of communication; and thus fulfill the conditions of his social and moral nature.

*Influence of Feeling on Moral Character, as a Form of Expression.*—

The extent to which the element of feeling exerts its power over expression, and the degree to which its development in this relation may be carried, under the influence of educational culture, can be appropriately measured only when we trace it to its effects on the tendencies, the character, and the will of human beings individually, or in their aggregations in society. In either case, we see it in the gentle, the peaceful, and affectionate spirit of the genuine disciple of Him whom we reverence as the “meek and the lowly,” and in the genial intercourse of communities governed by the influence of His law of universal love; or we read it in the arrogance, the violence, and the hatred, of which perverted humanity is so fatally capable. As “out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh,” the prevalent emotions and expression, the manners, and the habitual language of man, in these opposite conditions of individual and social life, will depict themselves on character and action.

*Influence of Feeling on the Character of Art.*—In the visible language of graphic art, we read the same lesson of the power of feeling as an element of expression. We see it in the appalling force with which the sculptor has presented the agony of pain and struggle, in the writhing frame and contorted features of Laocoon, or the perfect placidity and repose with which he has invested the face and form of Antinous. Nor is the lesson less impressive when we turn from the superhuman fierceness of expression in attitude and features, which characterizes the delineations of passion and penal torture, in some of the figures depicted by the hand of Angelo, to the serenity, the sanctity, and the unutterable loveliness, beaming from the half-divine forms in which innocence or holiness is pictured by the pencil of Raphael.

*Its power in Music.*—The ear drinks in the same lesson of the power of impassioned expression, while it listens to the great masters of musical art, and feels the majesty of its utterance, as conceived in the soul of Handel, and worthily executed by the skillful hand of the accomplished performer. From such effects of sublimity and force and solemn grandeur, down to the breathings of tenderness in a plaintive strain of pastoral melody, the thrill, responding to the stirring air of

the soldier's march, or the wild gayety of the peasant's dance, we have but the varied forms in which emotion evinces its sway over this most expressive of arts, by the inspiration which it breathes into its numberless moods.

*Its Effect on Language.*—To the emotive force of feeling, Language owes all its sublimest and most beautiful forms of cultivated utterance, whether in expressing the depth of affection or the intensity of passion; and the remark is equally true of the literature of the elder world and that of modern times. In no record of humanity is the fact more strikingly exhibited than in the pages of the Sacred volume, where the heart of man is laid open in all its workings, in the primitive language of poetic imagination and Divine truth combined, and where the human soul pours itself forth in every mood; now wondering at the vastness of the creation, or adoring the infinite majesty of the Creator; now humbled to the dust, under the sense of man's insignificance, or, in the tones of contrition and penitence, imploring the boon of pardon; uttering thanks for boundless goodness and mercy; rejoicing in the conscious favor of God; sympathizing in the gladness and beauty of nature; touched by the paternal tenderness and compassion of Jehovah, or joining in the denunciations of "indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish," threatened to his enemies.

In all the uninspired delineations of thought which have come down to us from ancient times, it is the same pervading element of feeling which has given them their lasting life and their sway over the mind. To some prominent passages of this character we have already alluded; and, for the present, the allusion must suffice. Nor have we time now to dwell on corresponding examples drawn from modern literature, the peculiar charm of which, in one word, is the power with which it calls forth the natural emotions of the heart. In every form which literature assumes, as a power or an influence over the soul, exerted through the medium of expressive language, the main spring of effect, the grand motive power, is feeling. The life of expression, in all its cultivated forms of language or of art, is emotion.

*Feeling, under the Guidance of Education.*—Recognizing the fact last mentioned, the intelligent superintendent of education will direct his endeavors to the due cherishing, strengthening, and developing, as well as to the moulding, guiding, and governing of this great element of intellectual and moral power. With his eye fixed on this momentous issue, he will watch the natural tendency and direction of the instinct whose action he is to guide, so as intelligently to co-operate with its spontaneous working, and aid in the accomplishments of its peculiar office.

petitor in the race for college honors, convinced that he will be outstripped by his rival, unless he can fasten upon that rival some weight of suspicion or odium, and therefore seeks to disparage his character instead of surpassing his scholarship; or, when any mere tattling is done for any mean or low purpose whatever;—in all such cases, every one must acknowledge that the conduct is reprehensible and the motive dishonoring. No student can gain any advantage with any honorable teacher by such a course. Here, as in all other cases, we stand upon the axiomatic truth, that the moral quality of an action is determined by the motive that prompts it.

But suppose, on the other hand, that the opportunities of the diligent for study are destroyed by the disorderly, or that public or private property is wantonly sacrificed or destroyed by the maliciously mischievous; suppose that indignities and insults are heaped upon officers, upon fellow-students, or upon neighboring citizens; suppose the laws of the land or the higher law of God is broken;—in these cases, and in cases kindred to these, may a diligent and exemplary student, after finding that he cannot arrest the delinquent by his own friendly counsel or remonstrance, go to the Faculty, give them information respecting the case, and cause the offender to be brought to an account; or, if called before the Faculty as a witness, may he testify fully and frankly to all he knows? Or, in other words, when a young man, sent to college for the highest of all earthly purposes,—that of preparing himself for usefulness and honor,—is wasting time, health and character, in wanton mischief, in dissipation or in profligacy, is it dishonorable in a fellow-student to give information to the proper authorities, and thus set a new instrumentality in motion, with a fair chance of redeeming the offender from ruin? This is the question. Let us examine it.

A college is a community. Like other communities, it has its objects, which are among the noblest; it has its laws indispensable for accomplishing those objects, and these laws, as usually framed, are salutary and impartial. The laws are for the benefit of the community, to be governed by them; and without the laws and without a general observance of them, this community, like any other, would accomplish its ends imperfectly—perhaps come to ruin.

Now, in any civil community, what class is it which arrays itself in opposition to wise and salutary laws? Of course, it never is the honest, the virtuous, the exemplary. They regard good laws as friends and protectors. But horse-thieves, counterfeiters, defrauders of the custom-house or post-office,—these, in their several departments, league together, and form conspiracies to commit crimes beforehand and to protect each other from punishment afterward. But honest



farmers, faithful mechanics, upright merchants, the high-toned professional man,—these have no occasion for plots and perjuries; for they have no offenses to hide and no punishments to fear. The first aspect of the case, then, seems to show the paternity of this false sentiment among students. It was borrowed from rogues and knaves and speculators and scoundrels generally, and not from men of honor, rectitude and purity.

When incendiaries, or burglars, or the meaner gangs of pickpockets are abroad, is not he by whose vigilance and skill the perpetrators can be arrested and their depredations stopped, considered a public benefactor? And if we had been the victim of arson, housebreaking, or pocket-picking, what should we think of a witness who, on being summoned into court, should refuse to give the testimony that would convict the offender? Could we think anything better of such a dumb witness than that he was an accomplice and sympathized with the villany? To meet such cases, all our courts are invested with power to deal with such contumacious witnesses in a summary manner. Refusing to testify, they are adjudged guilty of one of the grossest offenses a man can commit, and they are forthwith imprisoned, even without trial by jury. And no community could subsist for a month if everybody, at his own pleasure, could refuse to give evidence in court. It is equally certain that no college could subsist, as a place for the growth of morality, and not for its extirpation, if its students should act, or were allowed to act, on the principle of giving or withholding testimony at their own option. The same principle, therefore, which justifies courts in cutting off recusant witnesses from society, would seem to justify a College Faculty in cutting off recusant students from a college.

Courts, also, are armed with power to punish perjury, and the law justly regards this offense as one of the greatest that can be committed. Following close after the offense of perjury in the courts, is the offense of prevarication or falsehood in shielding a fellow-student or accomplice from the consequences of his misconduct. For, as the moral growth keeps pace with the natural, there is infinite danger that the youth who tells falsehoods will grow into the man who commits perjuries.

So a student who means to conceal the offense of a fellow-student or to divert investigation from the right track, though he may not tell an absolute lie, yet is *in a lying state of mind*, than which many a sudden, unpremeditated lie, struck out by the force of a vehement temptation, is far less injurious to character. A lying state of mind in youth has its natural termination in the falsehoods and perjuries of manhood.

When students enter college, they not only continue their civil relations as men, to the officers of the college, but they come under



new and special obligations to them. Teachers take on much of the parental relation toward students, and students much of the filial relation toward teachers. A student, then, is bound to assist and defend a teacher as a parent, and a teacher is bound to assist and defend a student as a child.

Now, suppose a student should see an incendiary, with torch in hand, ready to set fire to the dwelling in which I and my family are lying in unconscious slumber, ought he not, as a man, to say nothing of his duty as a student, to give an alarm that we may arouse and escape? I think I might put this question to anybody but the incendiary himself, and expect an affirmative answer. But if vices and crimes should become the regular programme, the practical order of exercises in a college, as they would to a great extent do, if the vicious and profligate could secure impunity, through the falsehoods or the voluntary dumbness of fellow-students; then, surely, all that is most valuable and precious in a college would be destroyed in the most deplorable way; and, for one, I would a hundred times rather have an incendiary set fire to my house, while I was asleep, than to bear the shame of the downfall of an institution under my charge, through the misconduct of its attendants. And in the eyes of all right-minded men, it is a far lighter offense to destroy a mere physical dwelling of wood or stone than to destroy that moral fabric, which is implied by the very name of an Educational Institution.

The student who would inform me, if he saw a cut-purse purloining the money from my pocket, is bound by reasons still more cogent, to inform me, if he sees any culprit or felon destroying that capital, that stock in trade, which consists in the fair name or reputation of the College over which I preside.

And what is the true relation which the protecting student holds to the protected offender. Is it that of a real friend, or that of the worst enemy? An offender, tempted onward by the hope of impunity, is almost certain to repeat his offense. If repeated, it becomes habitual, and will be repeated not only with aggravation in character, but with rapidity of iteration; unless, indeed, it be abandoned for other offenses of a higher type. A college life filled with the meanness of clandestine arts; first spotted, and then made black all over with omissions and commissions, spent in shameful escapes from duty, and in enterprises of positive wrong not less shameful, is not likely to culminate in a replenished, dignified, and honorable manhood. Look for such wayward students, after twenty years, and you would not go to the high places of society to find them, but to the gaming house or prison, or some place of infamous resort; or, if reformation has intervened, and an honorable life falsifies the auguries of a dishonor-

able youth, no where will you hear the voice of repentance and sorrow, more sad, or more sincere, than from the lips of the moral wanderer himself. Now let me ask, what kind of a friend is he to another, who, when he sees him just entering on the high road to destruction, instead of summoning natural or official guardians to save him, refuses to give the alarm, and thus clears away all the obstacles, and supplies all the facilities for his speedy passage to ruin?

If one student sees another just stepping into deceitful waters, where he will probably be drowned; or, proceeding along a pathway, which has a pit-fall in its track, or a precipice at its end, is it not the impulse of friendship to shout his danger in his ear? Or, if I am nearer than he, or can for any reason more probably rescue the imperilled from his danger, ought he not to shout to me? But a student entering the outer verge of the whirlpool of temptation, whose narrowing circle and accelerating current will soon engulf him in the vortex of sin, is in direr peril than any danger of drowning, of pit-fall, or of precipice; because the spiritual life is more precious than the bodily. It is a small thing to die, but a great one to be depraved. If a student will allow me to coöperate with him to save a fellow student from death; why not from calamities which are worse than death? He who saves one's character is a greater benefactor than he who saves his life. Who then is the true friend, he who supplies the immunity which a bad student *desires*, or the saving warning, or coercion which he *needs*?

But young men are afraid of being ridiculed, if they espouse the side of progress, and good order as one of the essentials to progress. But which is the greater evil, the ridicule of the wicked, or the condemnation of the wise?

"Ask you why Wharton broke thro' every rule?

"Twas all for fear that knaves would call him fool."

But the student says, suppose I had been the wrong doer, and my character and fortunes were in the hands of a fellow student, I should not like to have him make report, or give evidence against me, and I must do as I would be done by. How short-sighted and one-sided is this view! Suppose you had been made, or were about to be made the innocent victim of wrong-doing, would you not then wish to have the past injustice redressed, or the future injustice averted? Toward whom, then, should your golden rule be practised,—toward the offender, or toward the party offended? Where a wrong is done, every body is injured,—the immediate object of the wrong, directly; every body else, indirectly,—for every wrong invades the rights and the sense of safety which every individual, community, or body politic, has a right to enjoy. Therefore, doing as we would be done by,

to the offender, in such a case, is doing as we would not be done by to every body else. Nay, if we look beyond the present deed, and the present hour, the kindest office we can perform for the offender, himself, is to expose, and thereby arrest him. With such arrest, there is great chance that he will be saved; without it there is little.

Does any one still insist upon certain supposed evils incident to the practice of students giving information of each others' misconduct? I reply, that the practice itself would save nine-tenths of the occasions for informing, and thus, the evils alledged to belong to the practice would be almost wholly suppressed by it.

But again; look at the parties that constitute a College. A Faculty is selected from the community at large, for their supposed competency for teaching and training youth. Youth are committed to their care, to be taught and trained. The two parties are now together, face to face:—the one ready and anxious to impart and to mould; the other in a receptive and growing condition. A case of offense, a case of moral delinquency,—no matter what,—occurs. It is the very point, the very juncture, where the wisdom, the experience, the parental regard of the one, should be brought, with all its healing influences, to bear upon the indiscretion, the rashness, or the wantonness of the other. The parties were brought into proximity for this identical purpose. Here is the *casus fœderis*. Why does not one of them supply the affectionate counsel, the preventive admonition, the heart-emanating and heart-penetrating reproof; perhaps even the salutary fear, which the other so much needs;—needs now, needs to-day, needs at this very moment;—needs as much as the fainting man needs a cordial, or a suffocating man air, or a drowning man a life-preserver. Why is not the anodyne, or the restorative, or the support given? Skillful physician and desperate patient are close together. Why, then, at this most critical juncture, does not the living rescue the dying? Because a "*friend*," a pretended "**FRIEND**," holds it as a point of honor, that when *his* friend is sick, sick with a soul-disease, now curable, but in danger of soon becoming incurable, he ought to cover up his malady, and keep the ethical healer blind and far away!

Such is the whole philosophy of that miserable and wicked doctrine, that it is a *Point of Honor* not to "report,"—though from the most humane and Christian motives,—the misconduct of a fellow-student, to the Faculty that has legitimate jurisdiction over the case, and is bound by every obligation, of affection, of honor, and of religion, to exercise that jurisdiction, with a single eye to the good of the offender and of the community over which they preside.

## VII. LETTERS TO A YOUNG TEACHER.

BY GIDEON F. THAYER,

Late Principal of Chauncy-Hall School, Boston.

---

WHILE I was deliberating as to what should be the main topic of this letter, I received the annexed circular, which settled the question at once :

“ TOLEDO, O., *Oct. 15th*, 1856.

“ DEAR SIR: The undersigned having been appointed a Committee, by the Ohio State Teachers' Association, to report, at its meeting in December next, upon the best method of giving moral instruction in schools, would respectfully ask your opinions upon the following questions, with the liberty of making them public :

“ What is the comparative importance of Moral Instruction in a system of Education ?

“ Should special instruction be given in Morals in our Free Schools ?

“ What is the best method of giving Moral Instruction in School ?

“ You will do us a great favor by answering the above inquiries at your earliest convenience.

“ Please direct to John Eaton, Jr., Toledo, O.

“ Very respectfully, yours, &c.,

JOHN EATON, Jun.,  
M. F. COWDERY,  
JOHN HANCOCK,  
JOHN ROBINSON.”

It is gratifying to those who believe that the great want in our community is a higher degree of practical morality, to find associations formed for the inculcation and dissemination of moral truth, established in our large towns and cities; public lay lecturers laboring in the same cause; school-masters insisting more perseveringly upon it; and, especially, to find it engaging the attention of an organized body of teachers in a large, intelligent, and powerful State, and adopting measures, like men in earnest, for the securing of the best results.

Most cordially will every true man lend his coöperation to the cause, in a well-founded confidence that, whatever he may be able to do, little or much, he becomes, on easy terms to himself, to such extent, a benefactor to society.

With no desire to claim, even in the humblest manner, any such distinction, but for my own gratification, I shall attempt to answer the interrogatories contained in the circular, to which I but very briefly replied at the time of receiving it. Too late though it be to subserve the special object of the committee who issued the circular, it may not be wholly useless in other directions.

1. "What is the comparative importance of Moral Instruction in a system of Education?"

To this question, it seems to me, there can be but one reply; and that is: *Moral Education is paramount to all other.* The physical and intellectual nature should by no means be neglected; but if *they* are developed, exercised and trained, and the moral nature overlooked, or left to take care of itself, the hopes of humanity may sink in despair.

In the garden left uncultivated, the weeds soon overgrow, and choke the flowers and useful herbs. So with the human soul; if the flowers of virtue that spring spontaneously, — and I admit that such there are, — be not attended to and cherished, the tares of evil may soon overpower and crush them.

I do not intend to assert that man's nature is wholly depraved. As a question of theology, it may not be proper here either to affirm or deny it. I will only say that, in the masses of society, the common tendency seems rather to be more towards evil than towards good. Hence the indispensable necessity of exerting every practicable means of counteracting this tendency.

If the capacities of the mind and body receive the whole attention of the educator, the pupil's power for mischief will be all the more increased, and he may, and probably will, become so much the more accomplished a knave.

\* \* \* \* \* "Talents, angel-bright,  
If wanting worth, are shining instruments  
In false ambition's hand, to finish faults  
Illustrious, and give infamy renown."

That talents may be "of worth" (or worthy) in the world, they must have this right direction given them; and this should be done in the school period of life. To delay it is unsafe, if not criminal and ruinous.

I will venture the assertion that those ugly excrescences which darken the page of history in the lives of Nero, Caligula, Richard III., Napoleon I., Aaron Burr, and Benedict Arnold, did not enjoy that early moral training, instruction, and example, which

are needful to secure a career of purity, virtue, honor, and patriotism ; while, in the examples of Alfred the Great, Constantine, Fenelon, Sir Thomas More, Howard, and Washington, we feel that an influence, potent and holy, was breathed into them, that helped to make them what they were.

All these individuals have their counterparts in all countries, and in almost every school-room, at the present day, — not as to place, power, and distinction, but as to disposition. They, hence, are growing up to crime, cruelty, profligacy, or perfidy ; or to honor, usefulness, benevolence, or virtue ; — advancing to positions in society, whence their evil deeds will consign to the grave their broken-hearted friends, and their own names to infamy ; or from which a halo of light will surround their names, during their lives, for their good deeds, and grateful memory bless them after their departure.

Finally, national probity, honor, and virtue, constitute a State ; the State is composed of men ; the men of the next generation are now school-boys. What it is desirable to have them become as *men*, they must be taught to be as *boys*. Nor is it safe to leave this work to be done by the pulpit or the fireside. Every proper means that can be brought to bear upon the young, should be put in requisition ; and none is more appropriate than, and scarcely any so effective as, the well-applied, faithful, and persevering lessons of the school-room.

From what I have said in answer to the first interrogatory, my reply to the second will readily be anticipated.

2. "Should special instruction be given in Morals in our Free Schools ?"

I reply, unhesitatingly, in the affirmative. That it may be found more difficult than instruction in literature and science, I am well aware ; for, although there are persons of the nicest degree of moral perception and moral refinement among our fraternity, there are others who, perhaps, might be considered obtuse in the department of morals. There are many thousand teachers in the public schools of our land, who take the situations as temporary expedients, with no intention of becoming permanent in the profession, and who are engaged, only for the lack of better, for a period of a few months. Their qualifications often fall short of the moral department ; from such, of course, it would be useless to expect much on this point, whatever the school committee might require.

But even this should not exonerate them from doing what they can. No person should be placed in charge of the young, who has not mastered the great principles of morality in theory, nor whose

life does not evince a practical acquaintance with them. The services of better and better candidates should be secured, until those fully qualified can be found. Let committees or school supervisors insist on the moral qualification as the prominent, leading, and indispensable one, and the requisition will increase the supply, until, in time, the schools will, in most cases, be well provided.

The Legislature of Massachusetts, long ago, made it a matter of legal requisition that certain things should be taught in her public schools. The act on Public Instruction, Section 7, reads thus: "It shall be the duty of the president, professors, and tutors, of the university at Cambridge, and of the several colleges, and of all preceptors and teachers of academies, and all other instructors of youth, to exert their best endeavors to impress on the minds of children and youth committed to their care and instruction, the principles of piety, justice, and a sacred regard to truth, love to their country, humanity, and universal benevolence, sobriety, industry and frugality, chastity, moderation and temperance, and those other virtues which are the ornament of human society, and the basis upon which a republican constitution is founded; and it shall be the duty of such instructors to endeavor to lead their pupils, as their ages and capacities will admit, into a clear understanding of the tendency of the above-mentioned virtues to preserve and perfect a republican constitution, and secure the blessings of liberty, as well as to promote their future happiness, and also to point out to them the evil tendency of the opposite vices."

Thus it will be perceived that, as far as Massachusetts is concerned, no public teacher, of any grade, has it at his option to teach morality or not; but, as a loyal citizen, he must do it. Well would it be for every State in the confederacy to adopt a similar law.

Teachers are required "to exert their best endeavors" in this work. Consequently, it should be kept constantly in view, and not be left to chance for its exercise. A time should be set apart for it as regularly as for any of the studied lessons of the school; and at that time it should be invariably brought up.

3. "What is the best method of giving Moral Instruction in School?"

This question it is not so easy to answer, for the reason that teachers of experience, with any degree of originality, must differ in modes, even, of arriving at like results. William B. Fowle, a veteran teacher, of great success in his vocation, alluding to his means of teaching, in the outline of his school plans, says that he teaches

**“Moral Philosophy chiefly by Reading the Scriptures, Conversation, and Example.”** This method, in the hands of a discreet and competent teacher, must doubtless succeed well. Other teachers attempt the same thing by rules, by requisitions, and by the study of books prepared especially for the purpose, like Wayland’s Moral Science.

No one plan should be invariably pursued. Children tire of routine and monotony. Variety is necessary, even to the adult mind, to secure attention and perpetual interest; and, with children, this is still more requisite. Schools, again, differ in their elements. Some are composed wholly of young pupils; others, entirely of those in the closing years of school life,—as in the high schools of large towns and cities; others, still, are mixed,—ranging from, it may be, four to eighteen years of age. Hence, a course of instruction must be varied to meet the circumstances of the taught.

In schools of advanced age, didactic instruction may be resorted to with good effect; and if the pupils are required, a few at a time, to bring dissertations, written by themselves, on subjects previously assigned, and these be read to the school, and commented on by the teacher, and, when time permits, by the other pupils, a spirit of emulation will be roused, fresh interest excited, and the school generally be called to reflection. It is to such that the treatises on morals, under various titles, are best adapted. The lessons learned may very properly become the subject of a paper or debate, in addition to the recitation to the teacher.

With all grades of schools it is highly beneficial to notice every incident that occurs among the pupils, or that is notorious in the town or neighborhood, from which a useful lesson may be derived, virtue be rendered more attractive, and vice more repulsive.

Incidents of this nature are suitable to all ages; and, though they be simplified to the degree required by the humblest capacity, will not fail, if skilfully related, to secure, to some extent, the interest of all.

Nor is this peculiar to children. In some Eastern nations, as is well known, itinerants earn their subsistence by the narration of stories, and, if well trained, hold large audiences, wherever they find them, in delighted wonder by their stories, whether fictitious or the statement of facts.

The pulpit, at the present day, is rendered more or less efficacious for securing the attention of an audience, moving the feelings, and converting the mind, in proportion as it illustrates its positions or enforces its logic by the use of narratives. Nay, the Saviour himself evinced how well he knew what was in man, and by what avenues



he could reach the recesses of his soul, and convince the understanding, while he touched the heart, by the frequent use he made of parables in his preaching. The train of reasoning may be lost, but the story that enforces it abides forever in the memory, as a salient fountain of encouragement or conviction.

The teacher should take a hint from these facts. There is, as it strikes me, no way by which he can do more for the moral nature of his pupil, than exactly to adopt the method above mentioned. Of course, his own life and character should show forth the worthy doctrines he inculcates.

Subjoined are specimens of anecdotes, original and selected, of the nature I would recommend for school use. The teacher, by a little thought, might collect any number of the kind, and, doubtless, many more suitable and of higher merit.

Let the lesson, for example, be Truth, or the Telling of Truth. If the audience be very juvenile, he may relate the well-known story of Washington and the Cherry-tree, or something that may occur to him of like tendency. If more advanced, or mixed, the account of Petrarch and the Cardinal may be presented. And this, I may, perhaps, be excused for inserting here, as, although familiar to many, it has not been so often presented to our American youth as the former has.

It is this: "Petrarch, a celebrated Italian poet, who flourished in the fourteenth century, endeared himself to Cardinal Colonna, in whose family he resided, by his strict regard to truth. A violent quarrel had arisen in the household of this nobleman; and the Cardinal, that he might ascertain the facts in the case, called all his people together, and required each one to take an oath on the Gospels that he would state the simple truth. The brother of the Cardinal himself was not excused from it; but, when Petrarch appeared to take the oath, the Cardinal closed the book, and said, 'As for you, Petrarch, your *word* is sufficient!'"

I shall never forget the feeling of proud satisfaction for the hero of the anecdote, with which I was filled, in first reading, as a boy, this charming incident. The Washington story, at a still earlier period, had a similar effect upon me. Hence, I infer that boys at the present time would be affected in like manner.

If I wished to inculcate a spirit of justice and manliness, I would relate something like the following: A boy of six years old, at play in one of the streets of Boston, accidentally broke a pane of glass in a window of a dwelling-house. Without hesitation, he rang the door-bell and said to the person who came to the door, "My name is

A. L. T—— ; I have broken your window, and my father will send a man to mend it.” Receiving a kind word from the person at the door, he bowed and ran to his home to relate the case.

Here is an instance of true courage : A teacher, having received satisfactory evidence of the guilt of one of his pupils in a case of serious mischief, was about to inflict a penalty due to the offence, when another boy, of twelve years of age, called out, “ O, sir, don’t punish William ! *He* did n’t do it ! ’T was *I*, sir ! ”

As an example of civility and obedience, I would say, A gentleman calling at C. H. S——, on business, one day, requested a lad at the door to hold his horse while he went in. On his return, he offered the lad a piece of money, which was courteously declined. The gentleman insisted, but the lad was immovable, saying, “ Mr. T—— would not like it, if I took pay for holding a gentleman’s horse for a few minutes.”

I say an example of *obedience*. There was no specific school-law for such a case. It was deduced from the law of universal kindness, which was the summing up of the school-code, and which the boy so appropriately applied.

Here follows a beautiful example of youthful kindness :

THE DISINTERESTED BOY. — The sun had set, and the night was spreading its mantle over hill-top, and valley, and lonely wood, and busy village. While the winds were beginning to sweep through the trees, lights were here and there peeping through the windows, to tell that, though the wind was cold and blustering without, there might be peace and comfort within.

At this hour, Mr. Bradley passed through a little village among these hills, and, urging his horse forward as the night became darker, took his way through the main road toward the next town, where he wished to pass the night. As he passed the last house in the village, he thought he heard some one call ; but, supposing it might be some boy shouting to another boy, he thought little of it. He heard the call again and again ; at last, it occurred to him that some one might wish to speak to him, and he stopped the pace of his horse, and looked behind the chaise to see if he could discover who was calling.

“ Stop, sir, stop ! ” said a little boy, who was running with all his might to overtake him.

Mr. Bradley stopped his horse, and a little boy of eight or ten years came up, panting at every breath.

“ Well, my little fellow, what do you wish for ? ” said Mr. Bradley.

“ You are losing your trunk, sir,” answered the boy, as soon as he could speak.

“ And so you have run all this way to tell me of it, have you, my good boy ? ”

“ Yes, sir.”

Mr. Bradley jumped out of his chaise, and saw that his trunk, which was strapped underneath his carriage, was unfastened at one end, so that a sudden

jolt might have loosened it altogether, and he have lost it without knowing where it had gone.

“ You are very kind, my little lad,” said the gentleman, “ to take all this trouble ; you have saved me from losing my trunk, and I feel much obliged to you. And now, are you tall enough to hold my horse while I fasten the trunk as it should be ? ” said Mr. Bradley.

“ O, yes, sir,” said the boy, stepping up, and taking hold of the bridle. He held the horse till Mr. Bradley was ready to start, and then said, “ Good-night, sir,” and stepped away.

“ Stop a moment,” said Mr. Bradley, taking a shilling from his pocket ; “ here is a piece of money to pay you for your trouble, and I feel very grateful besides.”

“ No, sir, thank you,” said the boy, casting his eye full in the gentleman’s face ; “ do you think I would take money for such a thing as *that* ? ”

“ Ah ! ” said Mr. Bradley, as he afterward related the story, “ I saw by his noble look that he had run from one half to three quarters of a mile, for the sake of doing a kindness to a stranger, and not for the hope of pay ; and I could not find it in my heart to urge him to take the money ; for I knew that the thought of doing good was a greater reward to him than money could have been. So I bade him ‘ good-night,’ and he ran toward home ; while I gave whip to the horse, and again rode briskly on ; but I often think of that journey, and the noble-hearted boy who lived among the hills.”

The following might be used to show the

ADVANTAGES OF POLITENESS. — An elderly lady, passing down a busy street in New Haven, was overtaken by a sudden shower. She was some distance from any acquaintance, and had no umbrella. She was deliberating what to do, when a pleasant voice beside her said, “ Will you take my umbrella, madam ? ” The speaker was a boy, perhaps ten years old.

“ Thank you,” said the lady ; “ I am afraid you will get wet.”

“ Never mind me, ma’am ; I am but a boy, and you are a lady.”

“ But perhaps you will accompany me to a friend’s, and then I shall not find it necessary to rob you.”

The boy did so, and received the thanks of the lady, and departed.

Two years rolled away. The lady often related the circumstance, and often wondered what had become of her friend, but little thinking ever to see him again. In the dull season of the year this boy was thrown out of employment, and, the circumstances coming to the knowledge of this lady, she gave him a good home till March, when she introduced him to a good situation. Verily, kindness seldom goes unrequited, even in this world.

Here is exhibited an instance of gratitude for favors received :

A PASSING INCIDENT. — As a man, of generous heart, from the country, was guiding, a few days since, his load of hay to the market, we saw, following him, and gathering the wisps of hay which dropped from the load, a poor woman and two lads, — the latter of perhaps the ages of seven and nine years. Our

attention was specially drawn to them, by observing that the man frequently took pains to throw whole handfuls of the hay down the side of the load, in order, as was quite apparent, to convey, in as quiet a manner as possible, sentiments of comfort to the hearts of these suffering poor. As our walk lay in the direction of the market, we determined to witness the conclusion of this exhibition of sympathy and generosity. By-and-by the gleaning became so abundant, that the poor woman could refrain from her expressions of gratitude no longer ; and, bursting into tears, she beckoned to the man to stop, and then, in a manner which indicated both intelligence and a delicate sense of her wretched condition, besought him to permit her a single word of thankfulness for his kindness.

“Madam,” said the man, “I, too, have been in the vale of poverty, and seen the time when a lock of hay would have been considered a treasure. A friend, by an act of kindness, of less value in itself than the one I have done to you, saved me from despair, and made me hopeful for better days. Years have passed now, and a kind Providence has blessed me with a good farm and a happy home. For years, as I have waked each morning, I have seemed to hear a sweet voice whispering, ‘This day *remember the poor.*’ ”

As he said this, he raised the fork, and threw in the woman’s arms as great a quantity as she and the lads could carry, and then drove onward, with a countenance expressive of the truth, “It is better to give than to receive.”

We turned from the scene to read again, and with greater profit than ever, the story of Ruth, gleaning in the fields of the generous Boaz, and of the kindness of the reapers to the destitute and successful gleaner.

The following presents a specimen of lofty magnanimity :

**A NOBLE REVENGE.** — The coffin was a plain one, — a poor, miserable, pine coffin. No flowers on its top ; no lining of rose-white satin for the pale brow ; no smooth ribbons about the coarse shroud. The brown hair was laid decently back, but there was no crimped oap, with its neat tie beneath the chin. The sufferer from cruel poverty smiled in her sleep ; she had found bread, rest, and health.

“I want to see my mother,” sobbed a poor child, as the city undertaker screwed down the top.

“You can’t, — get out of the way, boy ! Why don’t somebody take the brat ? ”

“Only let me see her one minute,” cried the hapless, hopeless orphan, clutching the side of the charity-box ; and, as he gazed into that rough face, anguished tears streamed rapidly down the cheek on which no childish bloom ever lingered. O, it was pitiful to hear him cry, “Only once, let me see my mother ; only once ! ”

Quickly and brutally the hard-hearted monster struck the boy away, so that he reeled with the blow. For a moment the boy stood panting with grief and rage ; his blue eye distended, his lips sprang apart, a fire glittered through his tears, as he raised his puny arm, and, with a most unchildish accent, screamed, “When I ’m a man, I ’ll *kill* you for that ! ”

“There was a coffin and a heap of earth” between the mother and the poor, forsaken child, and a monument stronger than granite built in his boy-heart to the memory of a heartless deed.

The court-house was crowded to suffocation.

“Does any one appear as this man’s counsel?” asked the judge.

There was a silence when he finished, until, with lips tightly pressed together, a look of strange intelligence, blended with haughty reserve, upon his handsome features, a young man stepped forward, with a firm tread and kindling eye, to plead for the erring and the friendless. He was a stranger, but from his first sentence there was silence. The splendor of his genius entranced, convinced. The man who could not find a friend was acquitted.

“May God bless you, sir, — I cannot.”

“I want no thanks,” replied the stranger, with icy coldness.

“I — I believe you are unknown to me.”

“Man! I will refresh your memory. Twenty years ago you struck a broken-hearted boy away from his mother’s poor coffin. I was that poor, miserable boy.”

The man turned livid.

“Have you rescued me, then, to take my life?”

“No; I have a sweeter revenge. I have saved the life of the man whose brutal deed has rankled in my breast for twenty years. Go! and remember the tears of a friendless child.”

The man bowed his head in shame, and went out from the presence of a magnanimity as grand to him as incomprehensible; and the noble young lawyer felt God’s smile in his soul forever after.

The style of some of these stories may need alteration, but the lessons taught in them will commend their adoption to every one.

In conclusion, I am satisfied that well-selected or original illustrations of the beauty of the several virtues to be inculcated, with well-adapted remarks in addition, by the teacher, will be found most effectual in teaching morals in schools, and have, at the same time, this advantage: that, if the subjects are judiciously chosen, with due regard to diversity, they seldom, if ever, weary the pupil, while they furnish his mind with exhibitions of lofty principles of action, which will be a valuable moral capital to him to the end of life.

**POSTSCRIPT.**—After the above letter was in type, I received from a friend a copy of Cowdery’s “Moral Lessons;” a book prepared to carry out the main branch of the plan for moral instruction, which I have endeavored to unfold and recommend; and I should do injustice to myself, to the author of the work, and to the cause of moral improvement, were I to omit the acknowledgment of my obligation to him for his successful and appropriate labors. It is to be hoped that he will continue the work so well begun, and furnish, as his opportunities permit, an extension of these Lessons,—presenting a greater variety of illustrations, and touching an increased diversity of principles,—to the end that the work may at length become—as it is already, as far as it goes—a full store-house of material for the direction of the young in the formation of habits and principles indispensable to a successful encounter with the temptations to which they will be exposed.

The teacher himself, too, would render an important benefit to his school and his successors, by transcribing, in a book kept for the purpose, every incident or anecdote bearing upon the same point, for future use,—that those of this book may not become inefficient, by too frequent repetition, but, recurring after longer intervals, will retain their freshness and interest, from generation to generation.

## VIII. EDUCATION—A STATE DUTY;

OR,

MAY THE STATE INSIST ON THE EDUCATION OF HER YOUTH? AND TO WHAT EXTENT CAN SHE GO IN THIS DIRECTION?\*

BY D. BETHUNE DUFFIELD.

Detroit, Michigan.

---

A FEW remarks, growing out of this inquiry, may not be deemed unworthy of consideration by this society.

Thus far our educational essayists have been more particularly interested in discussions as to the various forms and systems of education, how far moral and intellectual cultivation may be safely introduced into our public schools, and topics of a kindred character.

There is, however, beyond all these questions, yet another, which ere long must obtrude itself upon the judgment of the American people; and it is proper that this association should be among the first to consider and shape opinion in reference to it. That question is the one we have adopted as the subject of this essay.

To a large extent primary educational facilities have been supplied to the youth of this country, in a manner as yet unprecedented by other nations; so that wisdom has reared her store-houses on almost every corner of our Eastern cities, and along the sectional roads of the West as fast as they are opened into our forest wilderness. Her temples, "*templa quam dilecta!*" have gone up in beautiful proportions, and, through her ministers, the invitation has long since gone forth, and been carried down into the highways and hedges, for every child to come up and worship at the pure altars therein enshrined. Yet with each recurring year we find this invitation still unheeded by a large number of those for whom the feast has been especially prepared; nor are all those who inhabit the by-ways and the hedges even disposed to come in and receive the free bounty thus offered to them. They prefer the gutters and purlieus of ignorance and vice, rather than come forth from their pollutions and accept the State's beneficence.

So rapidly have the ranks of uneducated youth been increasing

---

\* A paper read before the American Association for the Advancement of Education, on the 12th of August, 1856, at Detroit, Michigan.

among us of late years, that they have already been estimated to this body, as *two millions*, or more than one half of our entire population; while those in attendance on the various public schools in the United States number one million eight hundred thousand scholars or less. This fact once legitimately and incontestably brought before the friends of popular education, the search after a remedy must sooner or later be commenced. *What shall that remedy be, and whence emanate?*

At the very outset we find ourselves obliged to investigate the power and duty of *the State* as the remedial agent; for individual effort, however lavish in endowment, or eloquent in persuasive words, has no positive *right* to enforce or compel to good works.

Were the one million eight hundred thousand scholars of the nation this day to desert the public schools, so munificently endowed and sustained, no authority beyond the parental could fill again their vacant halls, unless it were lodged in the supreme power of the State.

Has the State such authority, in case the parental influence should oppose itself to our system of public education, and unite thus to withhold the children from her schools?

If she possesses it in reference to such a supposed exigency as this, does she not possess it in reference to that important majority of youth, who never enter the school-room, and whose only education is that which ripens them into vagrants and criminals?

If she is clothed with this power, should she not exercise it? These are the inquiries we humbly present for investigation; and, in doing so, we venture to offer a few thoughts in support of an affirmative reply to these latter questions.

History reveals to us the fact, that those nations who have enjoyed the most brilliant career, and extended a victorious standard over the largest area of territory, have each, in the time of their prosperity, ordained and enforced, according to their own notions of the subject, a system of education for their youth. And this system, when examined, will be found, so far as they could make it, decidedly promotive of those objects in which they supposed their national excellence to consist. Or, in other words, they appreciated and prized the merits of their government, and sought to preserve and prolong the safety of the State through the education of their youth.

These systems comported with the spirit and genius of the people, and were invariably adapted to the production and advancement of that particular end or object, which such nation had set up as its chief glory.



The first instance of this form of education we find in the history of the children of Israel, after they had escaped from their house of bondage, and the Theocracy had been established over them with all its solemnities of fire and smoke. He who made a covenant with them in Horeb, here taught them that there was but one God, that it was He who had brought them out of the land of Egypt, and that they should love, with all their heart, and with all their soul, and with all their might, Him who was the great first cause and the only proper object of human worship. He had consented to become their great Head and Lawgiver, and, descending into "the Holy of Holies," revealed himself through the brilliant Shekinah to the ambassador of the people. Nor was He satisfied with this one command of *direction*, by which He sought to lift the heart of the nation toward himself, in holy love and worship; for He issued another of *prohibition*, saying, "Thou shalt not make thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in the heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the waters under the earth; thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them; for I, the Lord thy God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generations of them that hate me, and shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments."

The great end aimed at in her government was the worship of the true God, and these stern prohibitions of idolatry were enforced because *that* aimed directly at the overthrow of the theocracy, and undermined those great moral foundations on which it was based. The end of this government, therefore, was to be preserved by *laws*, and they were to be enforced both by promises and threatenings, by blessings on those who loved, and curses on those who hated the great Head and Ruler of this people, who had made the Lord both their God and their King. It was with the same view, that the various heads of their tribes and families were enjoined by those solemn words, which furnished in brief a prescribed course of education for their youth: these words which I "command thee this day shall be in thine heart, and thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them, when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up; and thou shalt bind them for a sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine eyes; and thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house and on thy gates."

Yet with all these newly-born laws and precepts, with the presence and voice of the Lord to enforce them, how soon after this system

of education thus prescribed was forgotten and overlooked, did the evils, against which these laws were enacted, pour in upon this people as a flood!

How soon were these barriers of freedom, and a pure religion, broken down, their own high privileges taken away, and even their "holy and beautiful house where [their] fathers praised [the Lord], burned up with fire, and all their pleasant things laid waste"!

But to drop further down in the tide of the world's life, let us look for a moment at Greece, that mother of all beauty, and hive of those ever busy ideas which still perplex the disputatious students of her philosophy. She first trained her youths to those three great staple studies of our own time embraced under the general name of *Grammata*, but which *we* style, "*Reading, Writing and Arithmetic.*"

Next, they afforded them that accomplishment in their simple music, which, though not of the learned kind of later centuries, still found its way in tender measures to the heart. Then followed a 'two years' drill in gymnastics, closing with wrestling in the Palastra, while among them all was mingled appropriate attention to the family sacrifices and religious festivals. After this, a service of the State, in some military capacity, was required; then travel abroad, which in that period afforded the best opportunity of learning the wisdom of other nations, as observed in their life, laws and customs; and, finally, the fully developed Greek was introduced into the Senate or Assembly, to command by his opinions, delivered in a manly and elegant style, the attention of senators, and the admiration of the people.

What Greece sought above all else was that glory which springs from the realization of the beautiful, whether in thought or deed. She endeavored, therefore, so harmoniously to educate her sons in every faculty, both of mind and body, that a strong ambition, arousing and directing their cultivated powers, would early send them forth to achieve this glory, whether they won it by the sword of battle, the *ῥαψῶς* [graphis] of the painter, the sculptor's chisel, or the philosopher's style.

Youth so educated, and incited to great deeds by all the inspiring influences that filled this lovely land, made haste to enter those fields of imaginative beauty, which then, like an unexplored continent, stretched themselves afar on every side.

Like the hopeful Columbus of a later era, in his pursuit of the Indies, laden as he believed with golden spoil, they went forth confidently, braving all privation and danger, and labored on, until the

Gods blessed their efforts and permitted them to return and cast some proud triumph of art or genius into the free lap of their mother land.

Sparta, also, kept in view this principle of perpetuating the strength of the State by the education of her youth.

This duty was deemed of such great importance as to be committed only to those who were in the enjoyment of the highest dignities of the republic. The system they pursued, for severity of discipline and protracted development, has never been surpassed. Not even after they had acquired the ordinary branches of education (which were more numerous than those of Greece), were they left to be masters of their own actions. Then it was they were subjected to the most vigorous restraints, the object of it being to inure both the spirit and body to the severest privations and perils. Lycurgus, having established his mixed government of monarchy, aristocracy, and democracy, sought to consolidate the Spartan citizens into one warlike brotherhood; and this he endeavored to accomplish by banishing all social distinctions, except such as were the fruits of personal bravery, and training every youth into a soldier, obedient, enduring, adroit, and courageous unto death.

The public tables, at which all ate in common, were converted into schools of wisdom, where the old recited their exploits, and boasted of their powers to the young. Military discipline was daily and hourly enforced on different bodies or companies of youth; severe exercises and privations were seldom or never relaxed; and the city was continually made to resemble the armed camp of war, rather than the peaceful home of contented labor. Capacity for war and military renown constituted the great good aimed at by this rigorous nation, and they diligently, laboriously, and cruelly disciplined and educated their youth toward the attainment of that end.

Rome looked back to Greece, her charming model and mistress, and, copying from her in many respects, originated in the West her own peculiar institutions of government and education, and infused into them all the fire of her fervid genius.

She modelled after both Athens and Sparta, seeking to incorporate into herself all advantages derivable from either. She was fascinated by the wisdom and polish of Athens, but she craved the soldier-like traits of Sparta. By combining the peculiar possessions of each with that native strength, of which she was already conscious, she aspired to a government that should yet dazzle and conquer the world. She early received the Grecian schoolmasters, who wandered forth the first pedagogues of the world; and for some she built her schools, while to others she threw open several temples on her hill-side,

and, unmindful of their ancient deities, dedicated them afresh to the charms of poetry and philosophy. Her children were early taught to look upon that ancient bronzed statue of their foster-mother, still standing in the Roman capitol, as typical of the spirit that lived in Roman blood, and thence to the culture of the Forum, whence their honor was to proceed. Cicero tell us that the very boys learned the laws of the twelve tables by heart, and indulged in the discussions of the Moot Court even to a greater and more minute extent than is practised by the law students of our day. At the age of seventeen, the Roman lad put on the manly gown, and was introduced, with solemn ceremony, into the Forum. At once he commenced the study of pleading, with its round of varied lore, no matter whether he was destined for the law or the camp. Almost every Roman captain was a good speaker, and almost every orator had seen some service in the field. But he who was particularly designed for the practice of eloquence, after having been furnished with a knowledge of all the liberal arts, was then placed under the most celebrated orator and rhetorician of the day, whose high duty it became to impart the last polishing hand in the formation of the Roman citizen. Say what we will of them, there is a moral grandeur almost approaching sublimity in these old Roman institutions, which, like their venerable and massive walls, yet live to show the might and power of the people who created them.

In the "*corpus juris civilis*" Rome still lives, and is daily realizing that eternal existence which her poets and orators once so proudly claimed for her, notwithstanding silence reigns to-day in her Forum, and a few shattered columns still tremblingly stand as the only surviving monuments of its ancient glory. With her all the delights of scholarship and the graces of oratory were sought after; but it was to adorn the patriot and representative of Roman greatness, whether he contended in the forum, or struggled in the field.

Believing as they did that their institutions were the best that man had yet secured for himself, they made the service of their country the first and great end of life, as we learn from all those thrilling incidents of Roman story which still enchain both the beardless student and the gray-haired antiquarian.

Could the refining and conservating influence of the Christian religion, with all its pure precepts, have only descended upon, and been accepted by, her people, when the foundations of Roman greatness were laid, so that her dross might have been purged away by lifting up the great Roman heart from an earth-born and corrupting mythology to the worship of the true God, who can deny but that the massive institutions of this "Niobe of nations," after regenerating

Europe, would still have stood, like her frowning Pantheon, the glory and wonder of the world?

The early Persians, before the days when luxury had made its destructive inroads upon them, although then of soft and effeminate manners, had some wholesome regulations of their youth. As they regarded valor and truthfulness of the first importance to a nation, they required their children to be educated into the same views.

The principal course of instruction pursued in reference to them, was an acquaintance with their own literature as well as that of other nations, riding on horseback, shooting the bow, and *learning to speak the truth*. Lying they considered the most disgraceful action in the world; next to that, they abhorred *getting into debt*; as they held (legitimately enough) that all debtors, sooner or later, must necessarily become liars; — precepts which it were well modern civilization enforced with the same severity.

Tyranny, both ancient and modern, long since learned that the sources and springs of her power lay in the rising youth; and she accordingly adopted her own schemes of education with reference to its preservation.

She educates, not in advance toward light and truth, but backwards into darkness and superstition. This is the mental condition she aims at for the masses of her people, knowing that such condition permits, with much less resistance than any other, the riveting of their chains, and the easier obscuring of freedom's lamp. Civilized society now contains more than one instance of this mode of education, cruel and degrading as it is in its crushing effects upon the masses. Modern Europe enlarges her armies and multiplies her batteries, but she expends comparatively none of her treasure in popular education. Her casernes stand on every street, but the free school, as we understand it, has yet to be founded in her cities and villages. Even the rustic of England is to-day the same rough, unlettered, ale-drinking, tap-room hero, that he was in the days of Shakspeare. With them the cannon is still the all-potent argument; and though this principle of action is worthy only the scornful condemnation of every enlightened mind, it still bears along with it a lesson of wisdom for the race. But, looking back from our stand-point at these nations to whom we have referred, we find a world-wide difference between them and ourselves.

Sparta was, after all, an elaborate communism, destructive of individual rights, degrading even the marriage and parental relations, and, excepting the glorious example of "the three hundred" at Thermopylae, she has bestowed very little of real value upon the race.

Plato, with all his reach of intellectual might, is in his model republic likewise led into communism ; and both in Greece and Rome man could rise no higher than to a citizenship in the State. As a political being he had here reached the acmé of his existence, and here he rested ; while in those more modern nations, over which tyranny sways her iron sceptre, the man has no rights except such as he snatches from the throne with a bloody hand, and is willing to maintain at any and every cost. If the throne is perilled by an effort to reconquer these rights from him, he may possibly be permitted to retain them. But if the government is strong-handed, they are very apt to be forced away from his grasp before they have even yielded him their first fruits.

Citizenship in this republic of ours differs widely from that of the republic of old, and principally in this, that so far from its being *the end of privilege*, it is but the means to attain an end yet higher and nobler. The enthronement of certain blood, or the establishment of a party in power, is not, nor should it ever be, the *end* of government, no matter how loudly kings and partisans may so declare. We of this age ought no longer to contemplate man in the dim light of those ancient philosophies which limit his career to earth and a high place in her government, but as something above and beyond all place. Though his life's seed may be planted here, it is nevertheless appointed to an endless bloom hereafter, far beyond the utmost verge of this small world which has so long bounded the view of the race and her wisest philosophers.

Instead of those political ethics dreamed out by the speculative mind of Greece, and which were, in fact, but unaided Reason's first tottering steps towards truth, we of this republic have happily adopted those which were handed down to man from the skies, and which are endowed with power to regenerate the world, if it would only consent to put them into peaceful and universal operation.

The germ of this regenerating political influence lies in the simple teachings of the New Testament, and free governments are but slow and successive advances towards that brilliant goal which it steadily holds out to the human race. Our government is one of *institutions* ; that is, of rights wrested from despotism by the strong arm of freedom, and constitutionally consecrated to her children ; and its end is not only the secure establishment of self-government in the world, but the ever-progressive development of the individual. The struggle after such an end differs totally from the aims and purposes of those effete governments now left to us only in the pages of history.

We, as a nation, have gleaned from the long centuries past, those

noble trophies which were gathered in the successive and bloody harvests of Freedom, and have laid them among our foundation-stones, or installed them as sustaining columns in our national edifice. That which we have is far from being all our own achieving. It was battled for, in some form or other, far back in the ages of the world, and beyond our seas, and when as yet freedom, like the giant of old, lay bound with a hundred chains beneath the smoking mountain of despotic power.

But those chains have been breaking, one after another, and the earth has often been made, and will yet again and again be made, to tremble with the struggles of this giant rising up to victory.

The early Greeks and Romans, the more modern nations of the Teutonic race, and especially the soldiers of Protestant freedom in continental Europe, have one and all contributed to our rich possessions. Each has its representative gift,—some right or privilege, wrested, often at the expense of life and treasure, from the iron hand of power.

They had not these treasure-houses of instituted rights,—these *spolia opima*, gathered by our fathers from the far-reaching common law of our common humanity, as it has struggled out, century after century, from that ancient darkness into the new and golden dawn of a Christian civilization. They fell far, very far short of the point we now occupy, though they took steps thitherward; and in tender and holy sympathy with those who were yet to follow, reared the monuments of their slow advance along the highway of nations.

But we have no right to accept these precious gifts, purchased at such incalculable cost by freedom's ancestry, merely that we may sit down idly for their enjoyment, no more than the father, who, having taught his son to feed and warm himself, has the right here to limit his education. A grand but solemn experiment has been transmitted down through these apostles of liberty, and committed into our hands; the naked experiment of man in the full possession of freedom to *govern himself!*

The solution of this problem, and the testing of his capacity for the still higher development of his being, in its relations with Christian freedom, is now going forward. It is here, where we stand to-day; these are the heights to which we have been lifted by those who have gone before us. We have reared our temple in this new world, far from the influences of those grim and hoary agencies which yet enslave the mind in the old, and we have appointed Intelligence and Virtue as its two chief corner-stones. Around its columns we have carved the past history of freedom, as the story of one of its



enemies is emblazoned on that graceful column in the *Plâce Vendôme*. Our aim is to make still greater advances as a nation in developing the power and majesty of that Christian freedom in which we live, and in firmly securing its foundations on the earth against both the shocks of despotism from abroad, and those which spring from the stormy passions of the people at home. The American citizen who appreciates his high privileges, and is willing to prove himself worthy of them, should assume the garb of those who essayed to rebuild the shattered temple of Jerusalem, armed both for labor and defensive war. He should go forth hopefully, prepared with his brethren to give the cause he professes to serve such an onward impulse as the united strength of this century's noblest purposes can command. He should press forward fearlessly, animated with a strong faith that the day may yet come when all nations shall bathe in the renovating fountain of freedom; and the harmonious chimings of free and Christian institutions shall constitute the one glad anthem of a globe rescued by her spirit and consecrated to her praise.

This being the acknowledged end of our government, it follows that it is the right and duty of *this* State also, not only to secure our present acquisitions, but also to promote and attain that end by all means that do not absolutely encroach upon the constitutional liberty of the citizen.

Former nations, as we have seen, invariably claimed this right for themselves, and labored for what they conceived to be the *State's* best interest and her highest glory; and the inquiry with us is, Has "the State," under its constitution, absolutely conceded away this right to the citizen, or is it still inherent in herself? Has she not simply delegated to him the exercise of it in such manner, that when he neglects or fails to discharge his obligations in this respect, she may at once reinvest herself with the right, and assume its duties for and on his behalf?

The right of property implies not only the right of possession and enjoyment, but of protection and transmission; nor can there be a denial or divorce of these latter rights from the former, without doing violence to that conscious sense of justice which is lodged in every breast.

The shepherd on the mountain-side, and the cottager in the vale, the noble on his broad domain, and the tradesman in the mart, all enjoy this undisputed right of protecting and transmitting their possessions to those who come after them. Nor is this an ordinary *privilege* merely; it is recognized as one of those absolute rights which enters into the very foundation of every free state, and which

cannot be taken away without a struggle and a protest from modern liberty.

A right so confidently claimed, then, by the individual, should in justice be conceded to the State; for it were contrary to the very first principles of justice to hold, that a State which, after much tribulation, had achieved her liberty, and proved herself a worthy member of the family of nations, should be denied that right of self-preservation and perpetuity, which is freely accorded to the humblest of her citizens.

"*Salus populi, suprema lex,*" was the form in which this right of the State was first announced, and this has been conceded sound law, in more than one instance, since it was first propounded. It has been the battle-cry through many bloody revolutions, nor will it be denied in our day.

Seneca, also, expressed the same idea in a somewhat different form, when he said, "*Servare cives, major est virtus patriæ patri;*" but Webster, the great expositor of our institutions, looking higher, and far beyond the mere life of the citizen, told us this great truth in words of classic strength and clearness, when he said, "*The first object of a free people is the preservation of their liberty!*"

This is a pregnant sentence, and has all the force of a precept, were it necessary so to interpret it. It means not only to assert the right of the State as we have expressed it, but also to declare it as her highest and holiest duty to preserve and transmit her liberty to future generations.

It is mandatory, and sounds like one of those strong precepts from the ancient prophets, which still startle the consciences of men.

It will not do (for the reason that *it is not safe*, if for no other) for those who live under a popular form of government, to say, "Let us care only for the things of to-day, the morrow will take care of itself."

Despotism, tiger-like, yet crouches in the mouth of his gloomy cavern, ready at any moment to spring forth and crush out every new development of freedom, especially if it is observed to be exposed and without adequate defence. For Americans thus to live, were to retrograde, to betray, rather than promote, the well being of the State. The march of the true disciple towards the sun-crowned heights of human freedom is, like that of the Christian, a constant strife,—a battle, a contention with principalities and powers, a forgetting of those things which are behind, and a looking and pressing forward to those that are before. On one side of his banner he should write that stirring

monition, "*Nulla vestigia retrorsum*;" and on the other in letters worthy of that word of higher resolve, "*Excelsior*."

There is in the affairs of every State a mighty rushing tide *onward*, like the inevitable stream of death, and onward that State must go. If prepared and ready to avail herself of the currents and the breeze, and the right genius sits at the helm, her advance is one of prosperity; but if the contrary is her condition, then she is soon drawn into the eddy, and whirled about by wind and tempest, until ere long she plunges into the jaws of a certain destruction. Who and where, then, is the citizen so dull and so indifferent to the welfare of his native land and race, as to feel that these splendid States of instituted and free government are not worth preserving? We, as a people, free and secure as we feel ourselves to be, have no talismanic charm that protects us from being overthrown; for we know that the freer the government the greater and more numerous are its perils.

Yet, if we pursue the proper course, and are influenced by the right motives, we can make these institutions of ours strong as the rocky barriers of ocean, and capable of rolling harmlessly back the wildest waves of popular commotion.

But, disregarding these motives, we can so loosen and weaken, if we will, the cohesive strength of this great structure, that those same waves shall ere long wash down our altars, and bury all trace of our once holy worship beneath their sandy mantle.

How, then, is this liberty of ours, which we see every day exposed more and more to peril, even from hands that should carry its weapons of defence,—how is it to be preserved and perpetuated? We have an abiding confidence in God, that, if we show ourselves worthy of it, he will preserve it both to us and our children's children.

If He has, indeed, appointed this continent as the scene of man's political regeneration and escape from the oppression of the old world, He will take it into his keeping, and by his good providence preserve it for the ages to come. But this 'providential care implies effort on our part, and a readiness to execute his will, as He manifests it from time to time.

Foremost among those agencies which He prizes above all else, and which his providence clearly indicates as both desirable and necessary for the race, are the cultivation of virtue and the diffusion of knowledge. Nor will any one deny that the most essential safeguard of a free State is the liberal education of her youth. Not that education which merely implies intelligence,—for Prussia is educated, yet her sons have yet to taste the purest and best delights of a free State,—but I mean that broad and thorough culture which takes into its

scope of instruction the whole faculties of the man, develops and directs them in such manner as enamors him of liberty, constitutes him her devoted disciple, attaches him and all his powers to her service, and makes him even more eager for the perpetuity of the State, than were his ancestors before him.

This sort of culture, and this alone, will secure this result. It implies, not only an intellectual, but a moral culture, such as makes the man acquainted, not only with his duties towards his fellow-man, but informs him also of his relations to that God, from whom the principles of his government have been derived, as well as the rules which subject him to its sway.

A superficial education is the very bane and curse of a self-governed State, and modern developments seem to indicate that this has already become an impending calamity with us. Our universities, as compared with those of Europe, or with what the universities of a free republic should be, are but grammar schools, and fields of preparation for what should come thereafter.

In most of our colleges the close of the senior year completes the education of the man, and he is then turned out as a teacher and man of opinion among those with whom he dwells. With a few unsettled ideas on morals and religion (the most important of all subjects), gleaned for the most part from the barren fields of natural theology; a smattering of the sciences, which in his hands exposes them to a shameful perversion and prostitution of the truth, instead of rendering them great coadjutors in its advancement; and, with a mere school-boy acquaintance with the classics, he arrogates to himself the wisdom and infallibility of the philosopher. Yet his education is, in fact, only the acquisition of that "little knowledge," which the poet wisely classifies among the most "*dangerous*" of possessions.

Hence *superficiality* in all scholarly attainments is becoming, if it has not already become, one of the striking characteristics of this country. The first fruits of our more modern, steam-driving, ten-hour systems of education are beginning to appear in an avowed and widespread scepticism, both in reference to religion and political liberty; in those spiritual humbug manifestations, which await only the electric spark of true science to vanish into thin air; in the recent mode of making learning easy by inducting a pupil into a score of different languages and sciences, in as many different lessons; in the degrading and barbarous rites and practices of Mormonism, which already stain our territory; in a misguided and unheroic crusade after what is styled "*Woman's Rights*," but what, if truthfully designated, should be named, "*Woman's Wrongs*;" in the hundred, and

thousand advocates of wild agrarianism, with its contempt of both law and religion, and its utter disregard of those sacred bonds which in the married and parental relation afford to society its greatest security; and in that rampant spirit of selfish gratification which seems to be unloosening the very bonds that hold us together as a community. I can trace these fearful evils to no cause so readily as the one I have named; yet, if this state of superficial cultivation is to exist anywhere, it should not be found in the United States; for nowhere else has there been such ample provision for popular education as with us.

There seems to have been early lodged in the genius of American institutions a decided tendency toward educational establishments. The early pilgrims founded first the church, then the grammar-school, and after that the colleges, most of which still stand as memorial evidences of their convictions of what the country most needed.

The United States Congress has in several instances granted, in its broad acres to the new-born States, noble endowments for public schools and universities; and both State and individual enterprise have been lavish in rearing these nurseries of learning throughout the land. As yet, however, they are only the seed sown; we shall look for the fruit hereafter.

Yet, with all these educational facilities, we know that the country is not being educated in that thorough and high degree requisite to its future well being.

With all our free schools in every northern city, how many parents are there, in each district, who do not send their children thither! How many agencies of a hostile character are busy for their overthrow, or the curtailment of their beneficent influence! How many are there who prefer that the youth of the day should throng the gutters and secret places of crime, rather than receive the free gift of knowledge as it is offered on every corner!

How many, too, from whom we should expect better things, are willing that this cloud of mental darkness should obscure a whole generation, rather than they should be exposed to a fancied violation of their constitutional rights, by the possible reception of some Biblical precept, or moral sentiment, supposed to be lodged in the reader or arithmetic! Unless their children can receive a one-sided education, either strictly sectarian or entirely exclusive of moral training, they prefer they should remain students of ignorance until they graduate adepts in crime. Rather than confer a corps of scholars on the nation, they would impose on it a regiment of criminals; rather than bless, they prefer to curse the Republic under whose maternal protec-

tion both they and their children so happily and so securely dwelt. But if we are correct in asserting that the State has the right of self-protection, then we have already demonstrated that no such negative right as that claimed can exist.

If the State enjoys the right and is in duty bound to educate her sons for her own preservation, it follows as a matter of course that she also has the right to remove all that interferes or opposes itself to the exercise of that right. If the State is injured by the rearing of immoral and lawless citizens, she has a right to protect herself against the evil; not alone by prison bars and the hangman's cord, but by striking at the root of the evil, and adopting preventive measures. The only effective way to stop the streams of pollution is to close and seal up the fountains whence they flow. The only way to protect children from barbarism and vice is to furnish them the blessings of religious instruction and the elements of knowledge; and this, says Webster, "*our country stands pledged, by the faith which it has plighted to all its citizens to do.*"

But these opponents of free education object to any compulsory proceedings on the part of the State, alleging that a law of this character, if passed, would be in violation of the liberty of the citizen, who has the right to do as he pleases, to educate his children or not, as he pleases, to worship God or not, as he pleases, and to live free from restraint of any kind, whether civil or moral.

The idea of liberty which this class of men seem to have adopted is not liberty, but *license*; for liberty and its enjoyment must, like all else in this world, be subjected to law.

Remove the strong protective power of law from around us, either in nature or in the social state, and destruction is at once unbridled. Our most cherished possessions turn to ashes in our very grasp, and anarchy and bloodshed sit like lurking demons at our doors. He who in this popular government of ours does not recognize his liberty as moderated and subjugated by law, sets loose the stormy passions of men, and opens wide the national council chambers to the first adroit despot who can successfully effect an entrance.

But again; objections are made in this form: You shall not teach our children in the public schools, because, 1st. The course of instruction there pursued influences their religious views, and so violates their constitutional rights; while others, of the same class of objectors, allege, 2d. That the schools are infidel, and unfit for youth. We might, by pointing out the direct antagonism of these objections, rightfully conclude that they destroyed one another, and so leave them, seeking elsewhere than in the objections themselves for the motives

that prompt this opposition to the free school. Most of our State constitutions, like that of the United States, allow every one to worship God according to the dictates of his own conscience, and prohibit any law respecting an establishment of religion, or restricting the free exercise thereof. Some objectors argue, from these provisions, that, as the State cannot compel a man to worship God in any particular way, he may be a Christian or an idolater, as he chooses, and that therefore the entire subject of religion is purposely excluded from the constitutions of the country.

But this view is altogether erroneous. Instead of the Christian religion being ignored by the constitutions of the United States and the several States, it is expressly recognized by them, and by the early organizing state papers of the nation.

It has been repeatedly held by our courts of law to be a part of the common law of the land, announced by Washington in his farewell address as "one of the indispensable supports to political prosperity;" enjoined by Chief Justice Story, in his Commentaries on the Constitution, "as the especial duty of government to foster and encourage it as a divine revelation among all the citizens and subjects," and by the celebrated ordinance of 1787 commended, in the following language: "Religion, morality, and knowledge, being necessary to good government, and the happiness of mankind, schools, and the means of education, shall forever be encouraged."

While the constitution impliedly, and other acts of our government openly, recognize the Christian religion as a part of the law of the land, it says nothing about a prohibition of any form of religious or sectarian opinions, but guaranties this right to all. What it preserves is the right of private judgment, and the free choice and exercise of religious opinion.

What it prohibits is simply a church establishment or state religion, which is a very different thing from religion itself—the one being a sectarian form of religious opinion, the other the great cardinal principles of Christianity, as embraced by all sects and denominations who are permitted properly to call themselves religious. It is this prohibition of *sectarianism* and a *state religion* which has secured to our country its greatest glory, and it is this recognition of Christianity which by its thousand pure and holy influences has wrought out for the nation its unparalleled prosperity.

To those who urge the second objection, that the schools are godless, we say, that an assent to the demands with which you accompany your first objection necessarily produces this very result; and such result would be in fact a concession, or grant, of just what the



constitution forbids; viz., a sectarian establishment, consisting of schools, in which the tenets and dogmas of sect are taught; for Infidels and Deists are as much *a sect* as Presbyterians, Catholics, or Quakers.

You would then, by urging your objection, practically insist on having the mighty machinery of this government—which recognizes and has ever recognized Christianity—employed, not for the enforcement indirectly of its simple doctrines, but in building up an establishment directly at war with all its heavenly precepts.

You would trample under foot the constitutional rights of the great majority of the people, and establish over their heads a small minority sect of infidels and deists, who would either lead us into anarchy, or, combining their forces with spiritual despotism, turn us back into the darkness and bondage of the mediæval age.

You would surrender us into the guardianship of some form of tyranny, which, like all its predecessors, exists by a negative rather than a positive system of education, which seals up the book of instruction, bars the doors of popular schools, and opens the halls of education only to those who are willing to be made subservient instruments and agents in support of the ruling power. It is no such educational system we wish. We desire neither the barrenness of infidelity, nor the dwarfing of sectarianism, but that sound and harmonious culture, which secures the full development of the youthful mind, both intellectual and moral; which informs the pupil of his own and his country's dependence and connection with the laws and will of his God; which familiarizes him with the teachings of those great commandments, born of the thunders and the trumpet-blasts of Sinai, which contain the elemental seeds of all modern systems of jurisprudence, and which make up the warp and woof of that calm discourse upon the mount, by Him who is the teacher of us all.

This cannot interfere with any form of religious sectarianism or denominational opinion, rightfully so called; for all who are Christians profess to adopt these great cardinal principles and precepts as the rule of their lives, no matter by what name they are known.

In the month of September last, as I sat in front of the miniature railroad depot in the little Swiss village of Weinfelden, in the canton of Thorgaud, waiting for the locomotive to emerge from among the great mountains that engirt the place, I espied not far off a large building, which I at once supposed to be a public school-house. On wandering over to it, my conjectures were found to be correct. The building was nearly one hundred feet long and three stories high, and

on the front of it was enstamped, in large gilt German characters, the following inscription :

“ Liebe Gott und den Nächsten wie dich Selbst.”

“ Der Erziehung unsrer jugend Gewidmet.”

“ Love God, and thy neighbor as thyself.”

“ School for instruction of youth.”

I entered, and found within four hundred scholars, one hundred of whom were Catholics, and the remainder Protestants. They were instructed in the Primary, Industrial, and Classical departments ; and, after school hours, religious instruction was separately imparted to the different scholars of different denominations by teachers of both Protestant and Catholic faith. There was no murinuring or strife among them, notwithstanding that noble declaration of Christian precept was thus publicly emblazoned on the outer wall. As I hurriedly left the quiet spot in which the building stood, I could not but think that our Swiss brethren, perched away up among those silent mountains, had, after all, taken the right view of the relations of the public schools with Christianity, and hoped that ere long a younger republic, far beyond the seas, might learn wisdom of her, and manifest like fearlessness in the declaration of those principles on which *their* system of popular education is based.

When, then, a free civilization, beckoned forward by Christianity, has advanced so far in the perilous way towards self-government as to rear an edifice like to that polished temple within whose walls this people worships, is it not right, is it not obligatory on each successive generation of worshippers to inform those who follow them on what foundations that temple rests ? If it be the spirit and genius of these institutions of ours to advance still higher in the scale of free government, and never to fall back, is it not essential that these foundation-stones should ever remain secure and firm ? — that the store-houses of this temple be continually replenished with its needful requisites, and blessed with a multiplication of present and yet new and nobler privileges ? If these questions can only be answered in the affirmative, why should the State hesitate in the discharge of that duty, which already ought to be conceded as imperative ? The State should not only maintain the laws she now has, providing free and open school-doors to all her youth, but strengthen those laws by steadily elevating the standard of her education, and by positively requiring daily attendance upon the precepts of the teacher.

These laws should be prudently enforced by mild but effective penalties. Already, to a certain extent, we have laws compelling educa-

tion. Every master in almost all our States is bound, under certain penalties, to afford his apprentice due instruction, both secular and moral, while he claims the service of his early years.

This is a just provision, and can be similarly applied to the parent who claims the services of his minor son. What the lad renders to him in the work of his hands, the father should be compelled to restore in the form of education; for parental authority should not be permitted to rob the son in his youth of that which in later life can never be fully imparted to him. If the parents are so poor, or decrepit, that they cannot dispense with the labor of their children, then the State, by appropriations made for their relief, might properly assume the purchase, or value of their youth, that they may render unto them the elementary instruction of the schools, if no more. This course, though apparently onerous at the outset, would prove cheapest in the end; much cheaper than what it would be compelled to pay were these candidates for citizenship permitted to grow up as outlaws and vagabonds in society.

Nor can any adverse argument be drawn from the effect of such enactments upon the scholars; for surely no evil can result from the operation of such laws as arm the man against tyranny, by informing him of freedom, and putting her weapons into his hands; by leading him out of the prison-house of darkness, and revealing to him the world and his relations to it; by emptying his heart of curses, and filling it with blessings, and a hope that seizes on still higher and holier possessions than those which belong to earth.

Another mode might be resorted to in the way of *disabling statutes*, — denying an active participation, or share, in the official privileges of government to all such as neglected to qualify themselves for the discharge of its high and sacred responsibilities.

No man should complain that he or *his* son is prohibited from sharing in the executive functions of the government, when he voluntarily disqualifies himself or his child for the service to which he aspires.

It is enough that the government throws over him its golden shield, and protects him in the enjoyment of all those rights which her constitution guaranties to her people. He is not justly entitled, and should not lay claim to more. These laws, then, should be prudently formed, carefully avoiding encroachment on that which is generally recognized as a strictly parental right or privilege, and advancing not one inch beyond the limits of self-preservation on the part of the State. They should be frank, simple, and direct, yet firm, and firmly enforced. Their object should be to direct and enforce the application of such agencies as will pour wisdom and light into those minds which

superstition and ignorance wickedly or negligently curtain up against the truth ; to furnish each mortal with those spiritual weapons that will enable him to protect and ennoble his immortality ; to plant within the soil of his mind those principles of both intellectual and moral strength that will send him forth into the stormy world around him, his heart armed against all distracting temptations, and his feet shod with a preparation for glorious achievement.

The State, thus blessing her sons, shall again be blessed by their noble deeds ; and her name be gratefully taken up into the lips of successive generations, until the era of a perfect government and a happy people shall dawn upon the race.

---

O FOR the coming of that glorious time  
 When, prizing knowledge as her noblest wealth,  
 And best protection, this imperial realm,  
 While she exacts allegiance, shall admit  
 An obligation on her part to *teach*  
 Them who are born to serve her and obey ;  
 Binding herself by statute to secure,  
 For all the children whom her soil maintains,  
 The rudiments of letters, and to inform  
 The mind with moral and religious truth,  
 Both understood and practised—so that none,  
 However destitute, be left to droop,  
 By timely culture unsustained, or run  
 Into a wild disorder ; or be forced  
 To drudge through weary life without the aid  
 Of intellectual implements and tools ;  
 A savage horde among the civilized,  
 A servile band among the lordly free !

This right—as sacred, almost, as the right  
 To exist and be supplied with sustenance  
 And means of life—the lisping babe proclaims  
 To be inherent in him, by Heaven's will,  
 For the protection of his innocence ;  
 And the rude boy, who knits his angry brow,  
 And lifts his wilful hand, on mischief bent,  
 Or turns the sacred faculty of speech  
 To impious use, by process indirect  
 Declares his due, while he makes known his need.

This sacred right is fruitlessly announced,  
 This universal plea in vain addressed,  
 To eyes and ears of parents, who themselves  
 Did, in the time of their necessity,  
 Urge it in vain ; and, therefore, like a prayer  
 That from the humblest floor ascends to heaven,  
 It mounts to reach the State's parental ear ;  
 Who, if indeed she own a mother's heart,  
 And be not most unfeelingly devoid  
 Of gratitude to Providence, will grant  
 The unquestionable good.

WORDSWORTH.

## IX. PHILOLOGICAL CONTRIBUTIONS.

### ENGLISH CONJUGATION.

---

**THE** conjugation of a verb includes all the changes which it undergoes to express form,\* voice, mood, time, person, and number.

The leading parts of the English verb are the present indicative, the past indicative, and the past participle. With these alone we are concerned in our present investigation.

There are two principal modes of conjugating English verbs; the one by the change of the radical vowel, as *swim, swam, swum*, called the *strong* inflection; and the other by a change of the termination, as *kill, killed, killed*, called the *weak* inflection.

The strong inflection is the more ancient, and confined to primitive or radical verbs of Teutonic origin, and their compounds.

The weak inflection is of more modern date, and embraces a few primitive, and all the derivative verbs of Teutonic origin, as well as all other verbs, not Teutonic, whether primitive or derivative.

#### I. ENGLISH STRONGLY INFLECTED VERBS.

The strongly inflected verbs are sacred relics which have come down to us from ancient times. But most grammarians have regarded them as irregularities which disfigure the language, and have made it a merit to free the language of them.

In these verbs the past tense is the root, and not the present tense, as in the weakly inflected verbs.

There are twelve classes or conjugations of strongly inflected verbs, in the kindred Teutonic dialects, distinguished by the internal inflection or change of vowel in the leading parts of the verb. Of these conjugations, eight are perceptible in English.

#### CONJUGATION I.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, *i*, or its modification *e*, before a single consonant in the present tense, *a* in the past tense, and *u*, or its modification *o*, in the participle.

The English verbs belonging to this conjugation are 1. bear, 2. break, 3. come, 4. shear, 5. speak, 6. steal, 7. stick, 8. tear, 9. wear, 10. weave.

---

\* The *form* of a verb is that change whereby it expresses a predication in full, or is merely a participial, i. e. an infinitive or participle.

For the verification of this statement, we must go back to the older Teutonic dialects.

In these investigations, Anglo-Saxon is to be regarded as an older form of English, and Gothic as an older form of Anglo-Saxon.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
1. Baira,	bar, <i>plur.</i> berun,	baurans.
2. Brika,	brak, <i>plur.</i> brekun,	brukans.
3. Qima,	qam, <i>plur.</i> qemun,	qumans.
6. Stila,	stal, <i>plur.</i> stelun,	stulans.
7. Stika,	stak, <i>plur.</i> stekun,	stukans.
8. Taira,	tar, <i>plur.</i> terun,	taurans.

Observe here, that *a* in the present indicative is merely the termination of the first person singular, that *un* in the past indicative is the termination of the third person plural, and that *s* in the past participle is merely the sign of the nominative case; which terminations are all dropped in English.

This type or model of the first conjugation in Gothic is nearly perfect. In *baira* and *taira*, the *i* of the present tense becomes *ai* by the phonetic figure called *guna*, and in *baurans* and *taurans* the *u* of the past participle becomes *au* by the same figure.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

1. Bere, byrth,	bær,	boren.
2. Brece, bricst,	bræc,	brocen.
3. Cume, cymth,	com,	cumen.
4. Scere, scyrth,	scaer,	scoren.
5. Sprece, sprycth,	spræc,	gesprecen.
6. Stele, stylth,	stæl,	stolen.
8. Tere, tyrth,	tær,	toren.
9. Were,	—	—
10. Wefe,	—	gewefen.

In *cume*, *com*, *cumen*, the distinguishing vowels have fallen out, and the existing vowels have been evolved from the Gothic *q*, which seems to have implied an *u* after it.

The other forms are very regular. The gunation, which had commenced in *baira* and *taira* in Gothic, is extended to the other verbs. In the present tenses we have *e* for *ai*, and in the past participles (except *gesprecen*, *gewefen*,) *o* for *au*.

The vowel *a* of the past tense is uniformly *æ*.

The form of the third person, (sometimes of the second person,) is given in the present tense, as exhibiting the original vowel.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

1. Bear,	bare, <i>obs.</i>	borne.
2. Break,	brake, <i>obs.</i>	broken.
3. Come,	came,	come.
4. Shear,	shore, <i>obs.</i>	shorn.
5. Speak,	spake, <i>obs.</i>	spoken.
6. Steal,	stole,	stolen.
7. Stick,	stuck,	stuck.
8. Tear,	tare, <i>obs.</i>	torn.
9. Wear,	ware, <i>obs.</i>	worn.
10. Weave,	wove,	woven.

The Old English forms are given, because better adapted to our purpose.

*Come, came, come*, is irregular.

A general analogy is observable even in English.

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

1. <i>Gebäre, imper. bier,</i>	<i>gebar,</i>	<i>geboren.</i>
2. <i>Breche, imper. brich,</i>	<i>brach,</i>	<i>gebrochen.</i>
3. <i>Komme, imper. komm,</i>	<i>kam,</i>	<i>gekommen.</i>
4. <i>Schere, imper. schier,</i>	<i>schor,</i>	<i>geschoren.</i>
5. <i>Spreche, imper. sprich,</i>	<i>sprach,</i>	<i>gesprochen.</i>
6. <i>Stehle, imper. stiehl,</i>	<i>stahl,</i>	<i>gestohlen.</i>
7. <i>Steche, imper. stich,</i>	<i>stach,</i>	<i>gestochen.</i>
10. <i>Webe, imper. webe,</i>	<i>wob,</i>	<i>gewoben.</i>

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

2. <i>Breek,</i>	<i>brak,</i>	<i>gebroken.</i>
3. <i>Kom,</i>	<i>kwam,</i>	<i>gekomen.</i>
4. <i>Scheer,</i>	<i>schoor,</i>	<i>geschoren.</i>
5. <i>Spreek,</i>	<i>sprak,</i>	<i>gesproken.</i>
6. <i>Steel,</i>	<i>stal,</i>	<i>gestolen.</i>
7. <i>Steek,</i>	<i>stak,</i>	<i>gestoken.</i>

These German and Dutch verbs are evidently more regular than the corresponding English.

## CONJUGATION II.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, *i*, or its modification *e*, before two consonants in the present tense, *a* in the past tense, and *u*, or its modification *o*, in the past participle.

The English verbs belonging to this conjugation are, 1. bind, 2. climb, 3. cling, 4. delve, 5. dig, 6. drink, 7. fight, 8. find, 9. sling, 10. gin, (in begin,) 11. grind, 12. help, 13. melt, 14. ring, 15. run, 16. shrink, 17. sing, 18. sink, 19. sling, 20. slink, 21. spin, 22. spring, 23. sting, 24. stink, 25. string, 26. swell, 27. swim, 28. swing, 29. win, 30. wind, 31. wring.



For the verification of this statement, we must go back again to the older Teutonic dialects.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
1. Binda,	band, <i>pl.</i> bundun,	bundans.
6. Drigka,	dragk, <i>pl.</i> drugkun,	drugkans.
8. Fintha,	fanth, <i>pl.</i> funthun,	funthans.
10. Ginna,	gann, <i>pl.</i> gunnun,	gunnans.
12. Hilpa,	halp, <i>pl.</i> hulpun,	hulpans.
15. Rinna,	rann, <i>pl.</i> runnun,	runnans.
17. Siggva,	saggv, <i>pl.</i> suggvun,	suggvans.
18. Siggqa,	saggq, <i>pl.</i> suggqun,	suggqans.
21. Spiana,	spann, <i>pl.</i> spunnun,	spunnans.
23. Stigqa,	stagq, <i>pl.</i> stugqun,	stugqans.
27. Svimma,	svamm, <i>pl.</i> svummun,	svummans.
30. Vinda,	vand, <i>pl.</i> vundun,	vundans.

The plural of the past tense is given, as distinguishing this conjugation from the first.

This type or model of the second conjugation in Gothic is perfect regular.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

1. Binde,	band, <i>pl.</i> bundon,	bunden.
2. Climbe,	clamb, <i>pl.</i> clumbon,	clumben.
3. Clinge,	—	—
<i>b</i> 4. Delfe,	dealf, <i>pl.</i> dulfon,	dolfen.
6. Drince,	dranc, <i>pl.</i> druncon,	druncen.
<i>b</i> 7. Feohte,	feaht, <i>pl.</i> fuhton,	fohten.
8. Finde,	fand, <i>pl.</i> fundon,	funden.
10. Beginne,	began, <i>pl.</i> begunnon,	begunnen.
11. Grinde,	grand, <i>pl.</i> grundon,	grunden.
<i>b</i> 12. Helpe,	healp, <i>pl.</i> hulpon,	holpen.
<i>b</i> 13. Melte,	mealt, <i>pl.</i> multon,	molten.
14. Hringe,	—	—
15. Yrne,	arn, <i>pl.</i> urnon,	urnen.
16. Scrince,	scranc, <i>pl.</i> scruncon,	scruncen.
17. Singe,	sang, <i>pl.</i> sungon,	sungen.
18. Since,	sanc, <i>pl.</i> suncon,	suncen.
19. Slinge,	—	—
20. Slince,	—	—
21. Spinne,	span, <i>pl.</i> spunnon,	spunnen.
22. Springe,	sprang, <i>pl.</i> sprungon,	sprungen.
23. Stinge,	stang, <i>pl.</i> stungon,	stungen.
24. Stince,	stanc, <i>pl.</i> stuncon,	stuncoen.

<i>b</i> 26. Swelle,	sweoll, <i>pl.</i> swullon,	swollen.
27. Swimme,	swamm, <i>pl.</i> swummon,	—
28. Swinge,	swang, <i>pl.</i> swungon,	swungen.
29. Winne,	wan, <i>pl.</i> wunnon,	wunnen.
30. Winde,	wand, <i>pl.</i> wundon,	wunden.
31. Wringe,	wrang, <i>pl.</i> wrungon,	wrungen.

Most of these verbs are entirely regular; those marked *b* have an analogy peculiar to themselves.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

<i>c</i> 1. Bind,	bound,	bounden, <i>obs.</i>
2. Climb,	clomb, <i>obs.</i>	clomb, <i>obs.</i>
3. Cling,	clung,	clung.
<i>b</i> 4. Delve,	dolve, <i>obs.</i>	dolven, <i>obs.</i>
5. Dig,	dug,	dug.
6. Drink,	drank,	drunken, <i>obs.</i>
<i>b</i> 7. Fight,	fought,	foughten, <i>obs.</i>
<i>c</i> 8. Find,	found,	found.
9. Fling,	flang, <i>obs.</i>	flung.
10. Begin,	began,	begun.
<i>c</i> 11. Grind,	ground,	ground.
<i>b</i> 12. Help,	holp, <i>obs.</i>	holpen, <i>obs.</i>
<i>b</i> 13. Melt,	molt, <i>obs.</i>	molten, <i>obs.</i>
14. Ring,	rang,	rung.
15. Run,	ran,	run.
16. Shrink,	shrank,	shrunk.
17. Sing,	sang,	sung.
18. Sink,	sank,	sunken, <i>obs.</i>
19. Sling,	slang, <i>obs.</i>	slung.
20. Slink,	slank, <i>obs.</i>	slunk.
21. Spin,	span, <i>obs.</i>	spun.
22. Spring,	sprang,	sprung.
23. Sting,	stang, <i>obs.</i>	stung.
24. Stink,	stank,	stunk.
25. String,	strung,	strung.
<i>b</i> 26. Swell,	swoll, <i>obs.</i>	swollen.
27. Swim,	swam,	swum.
28. Swing,	swang, <i>obs.</i>	swung.
29. Win,	wan, <i>obs.</i>	won.
<i>c</i> 30. Wind,	wound,	wound.
31. Wring,	wrung,	wrung.

The vacillation between the vowels *a* and *u* in the past indicative is undoubtedly owing to the vacillation between those vowels in the singular and plural in the Gothic and Anglo-Saxon.

A general analogy is observable even in English.

The verbs marked *b* have the same analogy as in the Anglo-Sax

The verbs marked *c* have an analogy peculiar to the English, which arises from employing long *i*, (that is, the diphthong *ai*,) for short *i* and *ou*, (that is, the diphthong *au*,) for *u*, by the phonetic figure called *vriiddhi*.

CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

<i>a</i>	1. Binde,	band,	gebunden.
	2. Klimme,	—	—
<i>a</i>	3. Klinge,	klang,	geklungen.
<i>a</i>	6. Trinke,	trank,	getrunken.
<i>d</i>	7. Fechte,	focht,	gefochten.
<i>a</i>	8. Finde,	fand,	gefunden.
<i>b</i>	10. Beginne,	begann,	begonnen.
<i>c</i>	12. Helfe,	half,	geholfen.
<i>d</i>	13. Schmelze,	schmolz,	geschmolzen.
<i>a</i>	14. Ringe,	rang,	gerungen.
<i>b</i>	15. Rinne,	rann,	geronnen.
<i>a</i>	17. Singe,	sang,	gesungen.
<i>a</i>	18. Sinke,	sank,	gesunken.
<i>a</i>	19. Schlinge,	schlang,	geschlungen.
<i>b</i>	21. Spinne,	spann,	gesponnen.
<i>a</i>	22. Springe,	sprang,	gesprungen.
<i>a</i>	24. Stinke,	stank,	gestunken.
<i>b</i>	27. Schwimme,	schwamm,	geschwommen.
<i>a</i>	28. Schwinge,	schwang,	geschwungen.
<i>b</i>	29. Winne,	wann,	gewonnen.
<i>a</i>	30. Winde,	wand,	gewunden.

Heyse makes here three subdivisions, which we have marked, *a*, *b*, and *c*. We have marked a fourth subdivision *d*.

CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

1. Bind,	bond,	gebonden.
2. Klim,	klom,	geklommen.
3. Klink,	klonk,	geklonken.
4. Delf,	dolf,	gedolven.
6. Drink,	dronk,	gedronken.
7. Vecht,	vocht,	gevochten.
8. Vind,	vond,	gevonden.
10. Begin,	begon,	begonnen.
12. Help,	hielp,	geholpen.
13. Smelt,	smolt,	gesmolten.
17. Zing,	zong,	gezongen.
18. Zink,	zonk,	gezonken.

21. Spin,	spon,	gesponnen.
22. Spring,	sprong,	gesprongen.
24. Stink,	stonk,	gestonken.
26. Zwel,	zwol,	gezwollen.
27. Zwem,	zwom,	geszwommen.
29. Win,	won,	gewonnen.
30. Wind,	wond,	gewonden.
31. Wring,	wrong,	gewrongen.

These German and Dutch verbs are evidently more regular than the corresponding English.

## CONJUGATION III.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, *i*, or its modification *e*, in the present tense, *a* in the past tense, and *i*, or its modification *e*, in the participle.

The English verbs belonging to this conjugation are 1. bid, (to ask,) 2. eat, 3. get, 4. give, 5. knead, 6. lie, (to recline,) 7. queath, (in bequeath,) 8. see, 9. sit, 10. spit, 11. tread.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
1. Bida,	bad, <i>pl.</i> bedun,	bidans.
2. Ita,	at, <i>pl.</i> etun,	itans.
3. Gita,	gat, <i>pl.</i> getun,	gitans.
4. Giba,	gaf, <i>pl.</i> gebun,	gibans.
6. Liga,	lag, <i>pl.</i> legun,	ligans.
7. Qitha,	qath, <i>pl.</i> qethun,	qithans.
8. Saiwa,	saw, <i>pl.</i> sewun,	saiwans.
9. Sita,	sat, <i>pl.</i> setun,	sitans.
11. Truda,	—	—

The type or model of this conjugation in Gothic is nearly perfect. *Saiwa* is lengthened by *guna* in the present indicative and in the past participle. The vowel of *truda* is irregular.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

<i>b</i> 1. Bidde,	bæd, bædon,	beden.
<i>a</i> 2. Ete,	æt, æton,	eten.
<i>a</i> 3. Ongite,	ongeāt, ongeaton,	ongiten. •
<i>a</i> 4. Gife,	geaf, geafon,	gifen.
<i>a</i> 5. Cnede,	cnæd, cnædon,	cneden.
<i>b</i> 6. Liege,	læg, lægon,	legen.
<i>a</i> 7. Cwethe,	cwæth, cwædon,	cweden.
<i>a</i> 8. Seo,	seah, sawon,	gesewen.
<i>b</i> 9. Sitte,	sæt, sæton,	seten.
<i>b</i> 10. Spæte,	—	—
<i>a</i> 11. Trede,	træd, trædon,	treden.

These verbs in Anglo-Saxon follow a general analogy.

Those marked *a* have a single consonant, those marked *b* a double consonant for their characteristic.

ENGLISH VERBS.		
<i>b</i> 1. Bid,	bade,	bidden.
<i>a</i> 2. Eat,	ate,	eaten.
<i>a</i> 3. Get,	gat,	gotten.
<i>a</i> 4. Give,	gave,	given.
<i>a</i> 5. Knead,	—	—
<i>b</i> 6. Lie,	lay,	lain.
<i>a</i> 7. Queath,	quoth,	—
<i>a</i> 8. See,	saw,	seen.
<i>b</i> 9. Sit,	sat,	sitten.
<i>b</i> 10. Spit,	spat,	spitten.
<i>a</i> 11. Tread,	trode,	trodden.

The verbs marked *a* and *b* are distinguished as in Anglo-Saxon.

CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.		
<i>b</i> 1. Bitte, bitt,	bat,	gebeten.
<i>b</i> 2. Esse, isst,	ass,	gegessen.
<i>b</i> 3. Geesse, gisst,	gass,	vergessen.
<i>a</i> 4. Gebe, giebt,	gab,	gegeben.
<i>a</i> 5. Knete,	—	gekneten.
<i>b</i> 6. Liege, liegt,	lag,	gelegen.
<i>a</i> 7. Köre,	—	—
<i>a</i> 8. Sehe, sieht,	sah,	gesehen.
<i>b</i> 9. Sitze, sitzt,	sass,	gesessen.
<i>b</i> 10. Spütze, <i>obs.</i>	—	—
<i>a</i> 11. Trete, tritt,	trat,	getreten.

The classes *a* and *b* do not correspond to the classes *a* and *b* in Anglo-Saxon and English.

The form of the third person is given in the present tense, as exhibiting the original vowel.

CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.		
<i>b</i> 1. Bid,	bad,	gebeden.
<i>a</i> 2. Eet,	at,	gegeten.
<i>a</i> 3. Geet,	gat,	vergeten.
<i>a</i> 4. Geef,	gaf,	gegeven.
<i>a</i> 5. Kneed,	—	—
<i>b</i> 6. Lig,	lag,	gelegen.
<i>a</i> 7. Kout,	—	—
<i>irr.</i> 8. Zie,	zag,	gezien.
<i>b</i> 9. Zit,	zat,	gezeten.

*a* 11. Treed, trad, getreden.

The verbs marked *a* and *b* are nearly uniform.

The verb *zie* is irregular.

## CONJUGATION IV.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, *a* in the present tense, *u* (= *aa*) in the past tense, and *a* in the participle.

The English verbs belonging to this conjugation are 1. bake, 2. cleave, (to adhere,) 3. draw, 4. freight, 5. heave, 6. sake, (in forsake,) 7. shake, 8. shape, 9. shave, 10. slay, 11. stand, 12. stave, 13. swear, 14. take, 15. wake, 16. wash, 17. wave, 18. wax.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
<i>a</i> 3. Draga,	drog, <i>plur.</i> drogun,	dragans.
<i>b</i> 5. Hafja,	hof, <i>plur.</i> hofun,	hafans.
<i>a</i> 6. Saka,	sok, <i>plur.</i> sokun,	sakans.
<i>b</i> 8. Skapja,	skop, <i>plur.</i> skopun,	skapans.
<i>a</i> 9. Skaba,	skof, <i>plur.</i> skobun,	skabans.
<i>a</i> 10. Slaha,	sloh, <i>plur.</i> slohun,	slahans.
<i>irr.</i> 11. Standa,	stoth, <i>plur.</i> stothun,	stothans.
<i>a</i> 13. Svara,	svor, <i>plur.</i> svorun,	svarans.
<i>a</i> 15. Vaka,	vok, <i>plur.</i> vokun,	vakans.
<i>b</i> 18. Vahsja,	vohs, <i>plur.</i> vohsun,	vahsans.

The verbs marked *a* follow an uniform analogy. The vowel *o* has taken the place of *u* in the past tense.

The verbs marked *b* have adopted the weak inflection in the present tense and in the moods therewith connected.

The verb *standa* is somewhat irregular. It has an epenthetic *n* in the infinitive, imperative, and present indicative.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

<i>a</i> 1. Bace,	boc, bocon,	bacen.
2. Clifige,	—	—
<i>a</i> 3. Drage,	droh, drogon,	dragen.
<i>b</i> 5. Hebbe,	hof, hofon,	hafen.
<i>a</i> 6. Sace,	soc, socon,	sacen.
<i>a</i> 7. Scace,	scoc, scocon,	scacen.
<i>b</i> 8. Scyppe,	scop, scopon,	sceapen.
<i>a</i> 9. Scafe,	scof, scofon,	scafen.
<i>a</i> 10. Slea,	sloh, slogon,	geslagen.
<i>irr.</i> 11. Stande,	stod, stodon,	gestanden.
<i>b</i> 13. Swerige,	swor, sworon,	gesworen.
<i>a</i> 15. Wace,	woc, wocon,	wacen.

<i>a</i> 16. Wacse,	wocs, wocson,	gewæscen.
17. Wafge,	—	—
<i>a</i> 18. Weaxe,	weox, weoxon,	weaxen.

The verbs marked *a* follow an uniform analogy, as in the Goth

The verbs marked *b* have adopted the weak inflection in the present tense and the moods therewith connected.

The verb *stande* is somewhat irregular. The rest follow the weak inflection throughout.

	ENGLISH VERBS.	
<i>a</i> 1. Bake,	—	baken.
<i>b</i> 2. Cleave,	clave,	—
<i>a</i> 3. Draw,	drew,	drawn.
<i>irr.</i> 4. Freight,	fraught, <i>obs.</i>	fraught.
<i>b</i> 5. Heave,	hove,	hoven.
<i>a</i> 6. Forsake,	forsook,	forsaken.
<i>a</i> 7. Shake,	shook,	shaken.
<i>a</i> 8. Shape,	—	shapen.
<i>a</i> 9. Shave,	—	shaven.
<i>a</i> 10. Slay,	slew,	slain.
<i>irr.</i> 11. Stand,	stood,	stood.
<i>b</i> 12. Stave,	stove,	stove.
<i>b</i> 13. Swear,	swore,	sworn.
<i>a</i> 14. Take,	took,	taken.
<i>b</i> 15. Wake,	woke,	waken.
<i>a</i> 16. Wash,	—	washen.
17. Wave,	—	—
<i>a</i> 18. Wax,	—	waxen.

The verbs marked *a* come nearest to the original model.

The verbs marked *b* have *o* instead of *oo* in the past tense.

*Freight* and *stand* are irregular.

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

<i>a</i> 1. Backe,	buk,	gebacken.
2. Klebe,	—	—
<i>a</i> 3. Trage,	trug,	getragen.
4. Frachte,	—	—
<i>b</i> 5. Hebe,	hob,	gehoben.
<i>a</i> 8. Schaffe,	schuf,	geschafen.
9. Schabe,	—	—
<i>a</i> 10. Schlage,	schlug,	geschlagen.
<i>irr.</i> 11. Stehe,	stund,	gestanden.
<i>b</i> 13. Schwöre,	schwur.	geschworen.
15. Wache,	—	—



<i>a</i> 16. Wasche,	wusch,	gewaschen.
<i>a</i> 18. Wachse,	wuchs,	gewachsen.

The verbs marked *a* follow an uniform analogy.

The verbs marked *b*, by adopting *o* in the past tense and participle, incline to conjugation VI.

The verb *stehe* is irregular. The rest follow the weak inflection.

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

<i>b</i> 1. Bak,	biek,	gebakken.
2. Kleeve,	—	—
<i>a</i> 3. Draag,	droeg,	gedragen.
4. Vracht,	—	—
<i>b</i> 5. Hef,	hief,	geheven,
<i>b</i> 8. Schep,	schiep,	geschapen.
9. Schave,	—	—
<i>a</i> 10. Sla,	sloeg,	geslagen.
<i>irr.</i> 11. Sta,	stond,	gestaan.
<i>a</i> 13. Zweer,	zwoer,	gezworen.
<i>b</i> 16. Wasch,	wiesch,	gewasschen.

The verbs marked *a* remain faithful to their origin.

The verbs marked *b* have passed over to another conjugation.

The verb *sta* is irregular. The rest follow the weak conjugation.

## CONJUGATION V.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, *ei* in the present, *ie* or *i* in the past tense, and *i* in the participle.

The English verbs belonging to this conjugation are 1. bide, (in abide,) 2. drive, 3. rise, 4. shine, 5. wit.

Also 6. bite, 7. chide, 8. hide, 9. ride, 10. shite, 11. slide, 12. smite, 13. stride, 14. strike, 15. strive, 16. thrive, 17. write, 18. writhe.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
1. Beida,	baid, bidun,	bidans.
2. Dreiba,	draif, dribun,	dribans.
3. Reisa,	rais, risun,	risans.
4. Skeina,	skain, skinun,	skinans.
6. Beita,	bait, bitun,	bitans.
12. Smeita,	smait, smitun,	smitans.
14. —	—	— whence striks.

This Gothic conjugation is perfectly regular.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

1. Bide,	bad, bidon,	biden.
3. Rise,	ras, rison,	risen.
4. Scine,	scan, scinon,	scinen.

6. Bite,	bat, biton,	biten.
7. Cide,	cad,	ciden.
8. Hyde,	—	—
9. Ride,	rad, ridon,	riden.
10. Scite,	—	—
11. Slide,	slad, slidon,	sliden.
12. Smite,	smat, smiton,	smiten.
13. —	<i>whence deriv. stræde.</i>	
14. —	<i>whence deriv. strica.</i>	
17. Write,	wrat, writon,	writen.

This Anglo-Saxon conjugation is also very regular.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

<i>a</i> 1. Abide,	abode,	abode.
<i>a</i> 2. Drive,	drove,	driven.
<i>a</i> 3. Rise,	rose,	risen.
<i>a</i> 4. Shine,	shone,	shone.
<i>a</i> 5. Wit,	wot,	—
<i>b</i> 6. Bite,	bit,	bitten.
<i>b</i> 7. Chide,	chid,	chidden.
<i>b</i> 8. Hide,	hid,	hidden.
<i>a</i> 9. Ride,	rode,	ridden.
<i>b</i> 10. Shite,	—	—
<i>b</i> 11. Slide,	slid,	slidden.
<i>a</i> 12. Smite,	smote,	smitten.
<i>a</i> 13. Stride,	strode,	stridden.
<i>a</i> 14. Strike,	struck,	stricken.
<i>a</i> 15. Strive,	strove,	striven.
<i>a</i> 16. Thrive,	throve,	thriven.
<i>a</i> 17. Write,	wrote,	written.
18. Writhe,	<i>whence wreath.</i>	

The verbs marked *a* are nearly uniform.

In the verbs marked *b*, the past tense inclines to the weak inflection.

The verb *writhe* has adopted the weak inflection.

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

<i>a</i> 2. Treibe,	trieb,	getrieben.
<i>a</i> 4. Scheine,	schien,	geschienen.
5. Weiss,	—	—
<i>b</i> 6. Beisse,	biss,	gebissen.
<i>b</i> 9. Reite,	ritt,	geritten.
<i>b</i> 10. Scheisse,	—	—
<i>b</i> 12. Schmeisse,	schmiss,	geschmissen.

<i>b</i> 13. Streite,	stritt,	gestritten.
<i>b</i> 14. Streiche,	strich,	gestrichen.
15. Strebe,	—	—

Compare *a* and *b* with *a* and *b* in the English forms.

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

2. Drijf,	dreef,	gedreven.
3. Rijs,	rees,	gereezen.
4. Schijn,	scheen,	geschenen.
5. Weet,	—	geweten.
6. Bijt,	beet,	gebeten.
9. Rijd,	reed,	gereden.
10. Schijt,	—	—
12. Smijt,	smeet,	gesmeten.
13. Strijd,	streed,	gestreden.
14. Strijk,	streek,	gestreken.

This conjugation in Dutch is perfectly regular,

## CONJUGATION VI.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, *iu* in the present tense, *au* in the past tense, and *u* in the past participle.

The English verbs belonging to this conjugation are 1. bid, (to command,) 2. bow, 3. choose, 4. cleave, (to divide,) 5. flee, 6. flow, 7. fly, 8. freeze, 9. grow, 10. lie, (to tell a falsehood,) 11. seethe, 12. show, 13. strow, 14. sup or sop, 15. tug.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
1. Biuda,	baud, budun,	budans.
2. Biuga,	baug, bugun,	bugans.
3. Kiusa,	kaus, kusun,	kusans.
5. Thliuha,	thlah, thluhun,	thluhans.
10. Liuga,	laug, lugun,	lugans.
15. Tiuha,	tauh, tuhun,	tauhans.

This conjugation in Gothic is perfectly regular.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

1. Beode,	bead,	boden.
2. Buge,	beah, bugon,	bogen.
3. Ceose,	ceas, curon,	coren.
4. Clufe,	cleaf, clufon,	clofen.
5. Fleohe,	fleah,	flogen.
6. Flowe,	fleow,	—
7. Fleoge,	fleah, flugon,	flogen.
8. Fryse,	freas, fruron,	froren.

9. Growe,	greow, greowon,	growen.
10. Leoge,	leah, lugon,	logen.
11. Seothe,	seath, sudon,	soden.
12. Sceawige,	—	—
13. Streowige,	—	—
14. Supe,	seap, supon,	sopen.
15. Teo,	teah, tugon,	togen.

This Anglo-Saxon conjugation is nearly regular.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

1. Bid,	bade,	bidden.
2. Bow,	—	—
3. Choose,	chose,	chosen.
4. Cleave,	clove,	cloven.
5. Flee,	—	—
6. Flow,	—	flown.
7. Fly,	flew,	flown.
8. Freeze,	froze,	frozen.
9. Grow,	grew,	grown, comp. Lat. <i>creasco</i> .
10. Lie,	—	—
11. Show,	—	shown.
12. Strow,	—	strown, comp. Lat. <i>struo</i> .
13. Seethe,	sod,	sodden.
14. Sup or sop,	<i>whence deriv.</i> sop, soup <i>and</i> supper.	
15. Tug,	—	— comp. Lat. <i>duco</i> .

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

1. Biete,	bot,	geboten.
2. Biege,	bog,	gebogen.
3. Kiese,	kor,	gekoren.
4. Kliebe,	klob,	gekloben.
5. Fliehe,	floh,	geflohen.
6. Fliesse,	floss,	geflossen.
7. Fliege,	flog,	geflogen.
8. Friere,	fror,	gefroren.
10. Lüge,	log,	gelogen.
11. Siede,	sott,	gesotten.
12. Schae,	—	—
13. Strewe,	—	—
14. Saufe,	soff,	gesoffen.
15. Ziehe,	zog,	gezogen.

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

1. Bied,	bood,	geboden.
2. Buig,	boog,	gebogen.
3. Kies,	koos,	gekozen.
4. Klief,	kloof,	gekloven.
5. Vlie,	—	—
7. Vlieg,	vloog,	gevlogen.
6. Vliet,	vloot,	gevloten.
8. Vries,	vroor,	gevroren.
10. Lieg,	loog,	gelogen.
11. Zied,	zood,	gezoden.
12. Schouw,	—	—
13. Stroj,	—	—
14. Zuip,	zoop,	gezopen.
15. —	tog,	getogen.

## CONJUGATION VII.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, a reduplication in the past tense, and whose root terminates with a vowel.

The English verbs belonging to this conjugation are 1. blow, 2. crow, 3. know, 4. mow, 5. snow, 6. sow, 7. throw, 8. —

For the verification of this statement, we must go back to the older Teutonic dialects.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
5. —	<i>whence deriv.</i> snaivs.	
6. Saia,	saiso,	saians.
8. Vaia,	vaivo,	vaians, <i>whence deriv.</i> vinds.

This type or model of the seventh conjugation in Gothic is perfectly regular. The reduplication of the past tense is in full vigor, and the root ends with the vowel *i*.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

1. Blawe,	bleow,	blawen.
2. Craue,	creow,	crawen.
3. Cnawe,	cneow,	cnawen.
4. Mawe,	meow,	mawen.
5. Snawe,	—	(besnieved,) <i>whence deriv.</i> snaw.
6. Sawe,	seow,	sawen, <i>whence deriv.</i> sæd.
7. Thrawe,	threow,	thrawen.
8. —	<i>whence deriv.</i> wind.	

These verbs are entirely regular. The root ends with *w*, and the reduplication has disappeared.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

- |           |                        |                                      |
|-----------|------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. Blow,  | blew,                  | blown.                               |
| 2. Crow,  | crew, <i>obs.</i>      | (crowed.)                            |
| 3. Know,  | knew,                  | known.                               |
| 4. Mow,   | mew, in north of Eng.  | mown.                                |
| 5. Snow,  | snew, in north of Eng. | (snowed,) <i>whence deriv.</i> snow. |
| 6. Sow,   | sew, in north of Eng.  | sown, <i>whence deriv.</i> seed.     |
| 7. Throw, | threw,                 | thrown.                              |
| 8. ———    | ————                   | ———— <i>whence deriv.</i> wind.      |

Some obsolete and provincial forms are here given, because they aid our purpose.

A beautiful analogy is here seen in English. The Anglo-Saxon *aw* passes into *ow*; and Anglo-Saxon *ew* into *ew*.

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

1. Blähe, 2. Krähe, 4. mähe, 5. schneie, *whence deriv.* schnee, 6. säe, *whence deriv.* saat, 7. drehe, 8. wehe.

The roots for the most part in German end in *h*, instead of *i* or *w*; but the strong inflection is entirely lost.

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

1. Bloey, (to blossom,) 2. kraay, 4. maay, 5. sneeuw, *whence deriv.* sneeuw, 6. zaay, *whence deriv.* zaad, 7. draay, 8. waay, *whence deriv.* wind, all with weak inflection.

## CORRESPONDING LATIN VERBS.

1. Flo, flare, flavi.
2. Crocio, comp. Gr. κρώζω.
3. Nosco, noscere, novi; comp. Gr. γινώσκω, γνῶσθαι.
4. Meto, comp. Gr. ἀμᾶν.
5. Nivo, *whence deriv.* nix, nivis; comp. Gr. νίφω.
6. Sero, serere, sevi, *whence deriv.* semen.
7. Veho, vehere, vexi; *whence deriv.* ventus.

The analogy of these verbs with the Teutonic is quite remarkable.

## CONJUGATION VIII.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, a reduplication in the past tense, and whose root terminates in *a* before two consonants.

The English verbs belonging to this conjugation are 1. fall, 2. ——— 3. fold, 4. hang, 5. hold.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
b 2. Faha,	faifah,	fahans.
a 3. Faltha,	faifalth,	falthans.
b 4. Haha,	haihah,	hahans.
a 5. Halda,	haihald,	haldans.

The verbs marked *a* are perfectly regular. Those marked *b* have lost the double consonant in the present tense. The reduplication of the past tense is complete in all the verbs.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

<i>a</i> 1. Fealle,	feoll,	gefeallen.
<i>b</i> 2. Fo,	feng,	fangen.
<i>a</i> 3. Fealde,	feold,	gefealden.
<i>b</i> 4. Ho,	heng,	hangen.
<i>a</i> 5. Healde,	heold,	healden.

The reduplication has disappeared. The verbs marked *a* are regular, and those marked *b* are slightly irregular, as in the Gothic.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

1. Fall,	fell,	fallen.
2. — — <i>whence deriv.</i>	fang and finger.	
3. Fold,	(folded,)	(folded.)
4. Hang,	hung,	hung.
5. Hold,	held,	holden.

The English verbs follow no uniform analogy. The verb *hold* appears to be the regular form.

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

1. Falle,	fiel,	gefallen.
2. Fange,	fieng,	gefangen.
3. Falte,	fielt,	gefalten.
4. Hange,	hieng,	gehangen.
5. Halte,	hielt,	gehalten.

The reduplication of the past tense has disappeared; but in other respects this model is much more complete than even the Gothic.

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

1. Val,	viel,	gevallen.
2. Vang,	ving,	gevangen.
4. Hang,	hing,	gehangen.
5. Houd,	hield,	gehouden.

These verbs are less regular than the German.

## CONJUGATION IX.

This conjugation exhibits in Gothic a reduplication in the past tense, and in German a long *a* before a single consonant in the present.



The English verbs with which we are here concerned are 1. dread, 2. let, 3. sleep.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
2. Leta,	lailot,	letans.
3. Slepā,	slaislep,	slepan.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

1. Dræde,	dred,	dræden
2. Læte,	let,	læten.
3. Slape,	slep,	slapen.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

1. Dread,	(dreaded,)	(dreaded.)
2. Let,	(let,)	(let.)
3. Sleep,	(slept,)	(slept.)

This conjugation has entirely disappeared in English.

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

2. Lasse,	liess,	gelassen.
3. Schläfe	schlief,	geschlafen.

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

2. Laat,	liet,	gelaten.
3. Slaap,	sleiep,	geslapen.

## CORRESPONDING OLD FRIESIC VERBS.

3. Slepā,	(slept,)	slepen.
-----------	----------	---------

## CONJUGATION X.

This conjugation exhibits in Gothic a reduplication in the past tense, and in German  $\hat{u}=aa$ , ( $a$  strengthened by guna,) in the present and participle.

The English verbs with which we are here concerned are, 1. greet, 2. — 3. — 4. touch.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
1. Greta,	gaigrot,	gretans.
2. Fleka,	faiflok,	fiekans.
3. Hropja,	(hropida,)	(hropiths.)
4. Teka,	taivot,	tekans.

This Gothic conjugation is regular, except that *hropja* has adopted the weak inflection.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

1. Grete,	(grette,)	gretten.
3. Hrepe,	hreop,	hrepēn.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

1. Greet,	(greeted,)	(greeted.)
2. —	—	—
3. —	—	—
4. Touch,	(touched,)	(touched,)

This conjugation has entirely disappeared in English.

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

1. Grüsse,	—	—
3. Rufe,	rief,	gerufen.

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

1. Groet,	—	—
3. Roep,	riep,	geroepen.

Compare in Latin 2. *plango*, 4. *tango*, perf. *tetigi*, with reduplication.

## CONJUGATION XI.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, *ai* (*i* strengthened by *guna*,) in all the forms, and a reduplication also in the past tense.

The only verbs in English with which we are here concerned are 1. *hight*, (in *behight*,) 2. *laugh*, 3. —

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
1. <i>Haita</i> ,	<i>haihait</i> ,	<i>haitans</i> .
2. <i>Laika</i> ,	<i>lailaik</i> ,	<i>laikans</i> .
3. <i>Skaida</i> ,	<i>skaiskaid</i> ,	<i>skaidans</i> .

The type or model of this conjugation in Gothic is perfect; and the reduplication appears in full vigor.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

1. <i>Hate</i> ,	<i>het, heton</i> ,	<i>haten</i> .
2. <i>Lace</i> ,	<i>lec, lecon</i> ,	<i>lacen</i> .
3. <i>Sceade</i> ,	<i>sceod, sceodon</i> ,	<i>sceaden</i> .

This conjugation is nearly regular in Anglo-Saxon, but the reduplication has disappeared.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

1. <i>Behight</i> , obs.	<i>behot</i> , obs.	<i>hoten</i> , obs.
2. <i>Laugh</i> ,	( <i>laughed</i> ,)	( <i>laughed</i> ,)
3. —	<i>whence deriv. sheathe and shide</i> .	

Nothing remains of this conjugation in English but the obsolete forms *behot* and *behoten*.

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

1. <i>Heisse</i> ,	—	—
2. <i>Lache</i> ,	—	—
3. <i>Scheide</i> ,	<i>schied</i> ,	<i>geschieden</i> , <i>whence deriv. scheide</i> .

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

2. Lagch,	—	gelagchen.
3. Schcid,	—	—

## CORRESPONDING OLD FRIESIC VERBS.

3. Sketha,	skete,	skat.
------------	--------	-------

Compare in Latin, 1. *cito*, 3. *scindo*, perf. *scicidi*, with reduplication.

## CONJUGATION XII.

This conjugation includes verbs which have, or rather originally had, *au* (*u* strengthened by *guna*,) in all the forms, and a reduplication also in the past tense.

The English verbs which are here to be considered, are, 1. eke, 2. hew, 3. leap, 4. toss.

## CORRESPONDING GOTHIC VERBS.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
1. Auka,	aiauk,	aukans.
3. Hlaupa,	hlaihlauþ,	hlaupans.
4. Stauta,	staistaut,	stautans.

The type or model of this conjugation in Gothic is perfect, and the reduplication appears in full vigor.

## CORRESPONDING ANGLO-SAXON VERBS.

1. Ece,	(ecte,)	(geeced.)
a 2. Heawe,	heow,	heawen.
a 3. Hleape,	hleop,	hleapen.

The reduplication has disappeared as in the other Teutonic dialects, and the verbs marked *a* have imitated Conjugation VIII.

## ENGLISH VERBS.

1. Eke,	(eked,)	(eked.)
2. Hew,	(hewed,)	hewn, <i>whence deriv.</i> hoe.
3. Leap,	lope, <i>obs.</i>	(lept,) <i>whence deriv.</i> lope.
4. Toss,	(tost,)	(tost.)

Nothing remains of this conjugation in English, but the participle *hewn*, and the obsolete past tense *lope*.

## CORRESPONDING GERMAN VERBS.

2. Haue,	hieb,	gehieben.
3. Laufe,	lief,	gelaufen.
4. Stosse,	stiess,	gestossen.

The peculiarities of this conjugation are entirely lost in German.

## CORRESPONDING DUTCH VERBS.

2. Houw,	hieuw,	gehouwen.
3. Loop,	liep,	gelopen.
4. Stoot,	stiet,	gestooten.

## CORRESPONDING OLD FRIESIC VERBS.

1. Aka,	—	aken.
3. Hlapa,	hleþ,	hlepen.
4. Steta,	—	stoten.

Compare in Latin, 1. *augeo*, 4. *tundo*, perf. *tutudi*, with reduplication.

## II. ENGLISH WEAKLY INFLECTED VERBS.

In weakly inflected verbs, the past indicative and the past participle are formed alike.

In these verbs the present tense is the root, and not the past tense as in the strongly inflected verbs.

There are two processes for weakly inflected verbs, which differ again as to their age; the one more ancient, according to which the past tense and the past participle end in *d* or *t*; and the other more modern, which forms the past tense and the past participle by adding *ed* to the root.

The first of these processes forms two conjugations, and the latter process one conjugation of weakly inflected verbs.

## CONJUGATION I.

This conjugation includes verbs which form the past tense and the past participle by adding *d* or *t*; as,

1. *Lay, laid*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *lecgan, lede, geled*. So *pay, paid*, from Fr. *payer*, and *stay, staid*, from Fr. *étayer*; which, although of foreign origin, have followed suit to *lay, laid*.

2. *Say, said*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *secgan, sæde, gesæd*. The suggestion of Dr. Webster, that *said* is a contraction of *sayed*, has no historical support.

3. *Have, had*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *habban, hæfde, hæfed*. So *flee, fled*; *shoe, shod*. Also *clothe*, past participle *clad*; *do*, past tense *did*.

4. *Make, made*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *macian, macode, macod*. The Anglo-Saxon form leads us to expect *maked*.

5. *Hear, heard*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *hyran, hyrde, hyred*.

6. *Deal, dealt*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *dælan, dælde, gedæled*. So *feel, felt*; *kneel, knelt*.

7. *Spill, spilt*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *spillan, spilde, spilled*. So *dwell, dwelt*; *spell, spelt*.

8. *Mean, meant*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *mænan, mænde*.

9. *Creep, crept*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *creopan, creap, copen*. So *sleep, slept*; *sweep, swept*; *weep, wept*. These verbs in Anglo-Saxon retain the ancient strong inflection.

10. *Keep, kept*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *cepan, cepte*.

11. *Lose, lost*; comp. Anglo-Sax. *losian, losode, losod*. The An-

glo-Saxon form leads us to expect *losed*. So *pass*, past participle *past*, from Fr. *passer* ; *toss*, *tost*, from Fr. *tasser*.

12. *Cleave*, *cleft* ; comp. Anglo-Sax. *clifian*, *clifode*. So *bereave*, *bereft*. The Anglo-Saxon form leads us to expect *cleaved* and *bereaved*, which are also in use.

13. *Leave*, *left* ; comp. Anglo-Sax. *læfan*, *læfde*, *læfed*. So the past participle *adrift*.

Rem. 1. The termination *d*, which is the appropriate exponent of the past tense and past participle, is retained after a vowel, or after the semi-vowel *r*. See Nos. 1 to 5. The termination *d* becomes *t* after consonants only. See Nos. 6 to 13.

Rem. 2. The long vowel, if any, of the original verb, is often shortened ; as *said*, *had*, *fled*, *shod*, *clad*, *did*, *heard*, *dealt*, *felt*, *meant*, *crept*, *slept*, *swept*, *wept*, *kept*, *lost*, *cleft*, *bereft*, *left*, *adrift*.

Rem. 3. A subtonic mute is sometimes changed into the corresponding atonic ; as *lose*, *lost* ; *cleave*, *cleft* ; *bereave*, *bereft* ; *leave*, *left*. The atonic, however, is rather the original form.

#### CONJUGATION II.

This conjugation includes verbs ending in *d* or *t*, which require no addition of *d* or *t* to form the past tense and past participle ; as *bid*, *rid*, *bestead*, *shed*, *shred*, *spread* ; *bleed*, *breed*, *feed*, *lead*, *read*, *speed* ; *burst*, *cast*, *cost*, *cut*, *hit*, *hurt*, *knit*, *let*, *put*, *quit*, *set*, *shut*, *slit*, *split*, *spit*, *thrust*, *swat* ; *wet*, *whet* ; *eat*, *meet*, *shoot*, *light* ; *bend*, *build*, *gild*, *lend*, *rend*, *send*, *spend*, *wend*, whence *went*.

Rem. 1. The termination *d*, the appropriate exponent, is retained, as before, after a vowel ; but changed into *t*, when it comes after a consonant ; as *bend*, *bent* ; *build*, *built* ; *gird*, *girt* ; *lend*, *lent* ; *rend*, *rent* ; *send*, *sent* ; *spend*, *spent* ; *wend*, whence *went*.

Rem. 2. The long vowel, if any, is shortened, as before ; as *bled*, *bred*, *fed*, *led*, *read*, (pronounced *red*,) *sped* ; *eat*, (pronounced *et*,) *met*, *shot*, *lit* from *light*.

Rem. 3. Nearly all of these verbs are of Teutonic origin, some of them retaining the strong inflection in Anglo-Saxon ; as *bid*, *burst*, *let*, *slit*, *eat*, *shoot*. Some few are of Latin or French origin ; as *cost*, from Lat. *constare* ; *cut* ; *hurt*, from Fr. *heurter*.

#### CONJUGATION III.

This conjugation includes verbs which, according to the more modern and now existing process, form the past tense and the past participle by adding *ed* ; as,

1. *End*, *ended*. So *fend*, *mend*, *tend*, of Latin origin.
2. *Plant*, *planted*. So *chant*, *grant*, *pant*, of Latin origin.
3. *Wade*, *waded*. So *trade*, *cede*, of Latin origin.

4. *Hate, hated.* So *rate, sate*, of Latin origin.
5. *Mad, madded.* So *add*, of Latin origin.
6. *Fit, fitted.* So *admit, remit*, of Latin origin.
7. *Dry, dried.* So *cry, justify*, of Latin origin.
8. *Sway, swayed.* So *decay, pray*, of Latin origin.
9. *Kill, killed.* So *repel, dispel*, of Latin origin.
10. *Love, loved.* So *move*, of Latin origin.

Rem. 1. These examples fall phonetically under the same rule. For the mute *e*, in Nos. 3, 4, 10, is merely an orthographical expedient; the interchange of *y* and *i*, in No. 7, is merely orthographic; and the doubling of the final letter in Nos. 5, 6, is merely to preserve the vowel-sound short.

Rem. 2. Of these examples, those preceded by *d* or *t*, retain the *e* with most firmness; as *ended, planted, waded, hated*. They had commenced even in Anglo-Saxon to require a vowel sound before the *d*; as *endode, plantode, hatode, eardode, weardode*.

Rem. 3. In poetry the *e* is often omitted, (except in the cases noticed under Rem. 2.) and an apostrophe takes its place. It is the prerogative of poetry to use old forms.

Rem. 4. The spoken dialect has a strong tendency to omit the *e*, (except in the cases noticed under Rem. 2.) and also to change *d* into *t*, after sharp or atonic mutes; as *filld, slamd, fund, slurd, cryd, strayd, chewd*; also *stept* compared with *stabd*; *quaft* with *mouv*; *latcht* with *judgd*; *lookt* with *bragd*; *tost* with *whizd*; *pluckt, pusht*, etc. In prosaic declamation, and in solemn reading, the *e* is retained.

Rem. 5. In adjectives and adverbs, formed from participles, the *e* is not omitted; as, a *learned* man; *confessedly*.

### III. ENGLISH VERBS OF THE MIXED CONJUGATION.

Besides the strongly inflected verbs and the weakly inflected verbs, there is another, a small class, which combine the two modes of inflection. That is, some verbs, in the past tense and the past participle, not only change the radical vowel after the ancient mode of inflection, but also adopt the termination appropriate to the modern one.

The following is a list of this class of verbs.

<i>Pres. indic.</i>	<i>past indic.</i>	<i>past partic.</i>
1. Beseech,	besought,	besought.
2. Bring,	brought,	brought.
3. Buy,	bought,	bought.
4. Catch,	caught,	caught.
5. Fetch	faught, <i>obs.</i>	faught, <i>obs.</i>
6. May,	might, <i>also</i> , mought, <i>or</i> mote, <i>obs.</i>	

7. Pitch,	pight, <i>obs.</i>	pight, <i>obs.</i>
8. Reach,	raught, <i>obs.</i>	raught, <i>obs.</i>
9. Seek,	sought,	sought.
10. Teach,	taught,	taught.
11. Think,	thought,	thought.
12. Work,	wrought,	wrought.

This mixed mode of conjugating these verbs existed in the Angl Saxon language, from which the English language is derived ; as,

2. Bring,	brohte,	gebroht.
3. Byge,	bohte,	geboht.
5. Fecce,	—	—
6. Mæg,	mihte,	—
8. Ræce,	rahte,	geræht.
9. Sece,	sohte,	gesoht.
10. Tæce,	tæhte,	tæht.
11. Thence,	thohte,	gethoht.
12. Wyrce,	worhte,	geworht.

Also in Gothic, the most ancient form of the Teutonic language

as,

2. Brigga,	brahta,	briggans.
3. Bugja,	bauhta.	
6. Mag,	mahta.	
10. Teiha,	—	
11. Thagkja,	thahta.	
12. Vaurkja,	vaurhta.	

This mixed conjugation exists also in modern German ; as,

2. Bring,	brachte,	gebracht.
6. Mag,	mochte,	gemocht.
8. Reiche.	—	
9. Suche.	—	
10. Zeihe,	—	—
11. Denke,	dachte,	gedacht.
12. Wirke.	—	

Also in Dutch ; as,

2. Breng,	bragt,	gebragt.
6. Mag,	mogt,	gemogt.
8. Reik.		
9. Zoek,	zocht,	gezocht.
11. Denk,	dacht,	gedacht.
12. Werk,	wrocht,	gewrocht.

J. W. G.



## I. MENTAL SCIENCE AS A BRANCH OF EDUCATION.\*

BY REV. JOSEPH HAVEN, A. M.,

PROFESSOR IN AMHERST COLLEGE.

---

I DEEM it a privilege to address to-day a convocation of Teachers and of the friends of education, convened from all portions of the country in this our noble old Bay State;—a State distinguished from the first for its regard for religion, for liberty, and for education. May the time never come when its attachment to any one of these great principles shall be less.

The vocation of the teacher is one which, viewed in all its relations, is hardly second to any other in honor, and importance. Much is entrusted to him, much required of him. To meet these demands, he must be a man of large and liberal culture, knowing the things which he is to teach, and knowing much besides. Every year enlarges the sphere and carries farther and farther out the boundary line of his dominion, brings new sciences into his field of labor, and elevates the standard of his necessary qualifications. He must teach more things, and he must teach them better. Time was when a few simple elements constituted the amount of his stock in trade. To mention arithmetic, geography, reading, writing and spelling, was to give a complete catalogue of the branches taught in our schools. It is not so now. It will never be so again. In these matters our country never moves backward. The people have discovered that there are many things which it is useful for man on the earth to know, and that they have the *right* to know them;—the child of the poor man as well as of the rich; in the free school as well as in the academy, and the college; and they mean that he *shall* know them. At the doors of our public schools, of every higher grade, stand knocking already, an array of sciences that would have astonished the savans of the last generation. Natural Philosophy, History, Physiology, Botany, Chemistry, Astronomy, Physical Geography, and I know not how many other sciences,—all clamoring for admission; and for one I predict they will get in. The people will know these things, and will insist that their own children shall know them, nor is there any reason why they should not know them.

The teacher must keep up with this demand. The tide of public opinion, of public intelligence and information, in a great and free

---

\* An Address delivered before the American Institute of Instruction at its Annual Meeting in Springfield.

nation like our own never sets backward. It moves on and our schools and committees, and teachers advance with it, or are before it.

With this demand for a higher education, a larger and more liberal culture, on the part of those who are to conduct the education of the young, the teachers of the present day are, to a great extent, nestly and cordially complying. It would be difficult to find, in our country, a body of men devoted to education, possessing a larger share of general information, a higher mental culture and training, men of larger views, and higher aims, than the teachers of the public schools of New England, and especially of Massachusetts. I say this without reserve or qualification; I say it with pleasure and pride; I say it after a careful observation of the school systems of our own and of other countries.

Among the various branches of useful science, all demanding the attention of the well informed, and well educated man, of the present day, there is one whose claims to general attention have I fear been somewhat overlooked in our country. Allow me then the privilege of directing your attention on this occasion to the importance of the science of the human mind, as a distinct branch of knowledge, entitled to a high place in the course of study which every true scholar and every well informed man marks out for himself, and especially worthy the attention of those who are to guide the education of others.

I am aware that in presenting such a subject, I may seem to some to have forgotten the character and objects of the present association. What has the science of the human mind to do with schools and school-teaching, they may ask. This question I will endeavor to answer before I sit down. Unless, however, I do very much mistake the character of my audience, I see before me to-day men who are determined to omit no effort to attain that discipline of all the mental powers, that range of thought, that wide and large culture, that shall best qualify them for their noble work. To such men my theme is appropriate, and to such I address myself.

Many causes it must be confessed, have hitherto contributed to the comparative neglect of mental science in our own country.

The nature of the science is such that its benefits are not immediately apparent. Men, the dullest, and most uneducated, can see some use in Chemistry, or Botany. They teach how to analyze soils, and how to raise better crops. Natural Philosophy may be of service to the mechanic. Physiology well understood, may tend to lengthen life, and shorten the physician's bill. But what can possibly come of

mental science, they do not so readily perceive. It has no patent, obvious, practical results to show. Its region of thought lies removed somewhat from the actual observation of men. It has no splendid cabinets or museums to throw open to the gaze of the astonished multitude. It can not point you to its magnificent collections, embracing specimens of all the known varieties of thought and feeling; nor can it illustrate by curious instruments, in brass, and wood, and glass, and iron, and by nice experiments unfold the secret working of the laws of association, or memory, or imagination—all the wonderful alchemy of thought, and of our curious inner life. Its simple pages present not even one poor diagram to catch the eye of the curious.

And then it has no great discoveries to make and to announce, no brilliant rewards to bestow on its votaries. Any man of moderate patience and skill, and a glass of medium power, stands a reasonable chance of discovering a half dozen new asteroids between Mars and Jupiter, the first clear night, and then goes his name *ad astra*, and then comes, by return mail, a diploma from the royal society, and a gold snuff-box from the crown of Russia, or the crown prince of Seringapatam. Not so in mental science—not even in the present disturbed state of affairs, not in the wildest and most excited political gathering, could one hope to discover several new passions in exercise, or a brace of new intellectual faculties in full play. Or even if you were so fortunate as that, it may be doubted whether the world would even take the trouble to inquire your name, or the Czar think it incumbent on him to provide you with snuff-boxes. But more than all, and as I suppose, the chief obstacle to the more general cultivation of mental science, is to be found in the exclusively practical and active tendencies of the age. We are by nature a stirring, busy, enterprising people, given more to action than to thought. An age of action is seldom also an age of reflection. External life demands the energies of a new people, and a new state. The elements are to be subdued, cities to be built, mountains to be leveled, graded, tunnelled, roads constructed, and a thousand other useful and practical works to be wrought, before the period comes of golden affluence, and leisure, and genial task, and refined culture, which can at once appreciate and reward the higher efforts of scientific investigation. That age will come; but it is not yet. Meanwhile he who devotes himself to a pursuit so little accordant with the more directly practical tendencies of the age, must be content to pursue his way with little encouragement from without, little reward save that of his own highest culture, and the sweet delight of his own conscious advance in that true wisdom, and those

loftier attainments, which like divine truth come not with observation of men.

The causes at which we have now glanced may account in part for the comparative neglect of the science of the mind in our own country. What then are the reasons, if any there may be, why the science of which we speak should be regarded as at least of equal importance with others, in a course of liberal study.

The importance of this branch of education will be apparent, if we consider *its relative position with regard to other sciences*. As we go forth into the great field of truth, and among the works of God, and begin to explore and observe the things that lie around us, we find indeed nothing unworthy our regard, but not all things equally worthy. The ground on which we tread, and the solid rock, demand and repay our careful investigation; but when we pass from these to the contemplation of vegetable life,—when we turn our eye from the soil to the little flower that grows and blooms upon it, we are conscious of advance, of reaching a higher stage of art, a higher department of creation. Passing on still to the forms of animal existence, we are conscious still of the ascending series. The shell minutely beautifully wrought, that lies by the shore of the deep-sounding sea, and listens ever to its roar, the insect rejoicing in the sun-beam, the thousand forms of life that flutter in the air, and creep the earth, and leap up in the waters, and bound in all the consciousness of freedom, and strength, and vigorous life along the mountains and over the plains, these afford us a higher field of study than mere inanimate existence, however curious and delicate may be its organization. When from these we pass on to observe and study man himself, the lord of this entire creation, when we make his nature, his physical structure, his habits, his languages, his cities, his laws, his arts, his wonderful creations, the objects of our careful study, how much higher have we ascended in the scale of being and in the sphere of our explorations.

But when, turning from all these, we make the *mind* of man himself our study, we find ourselves at once in a region from which we overlook the whole wide field of previous investigation, and toward which all these other sciences conduct, as different paths along the mountain side, starting from different points, and running in different directions, but all converging toward, and coming out at last upon a common terminus at the summit. That summit and common terminus of sciences is the science of mind. As the mineral, the vegetable, the insect, the animal, in their varied and wonderful organizations, are all and necessarily inferior to man, so is the science of them, however important and useful, of necessity inferior to the science of

man himself; and as the human body, wonderful in its structure, curious in its mechanism and its laws, is nevertheless inferior in dignity and worth to the spirit that dwells within, and is the true lord of this fair castle and domain, so is the science of the body, its mechanism, chemistry, anatomy, laws, inferior to the science of the mind, the divinity within.

Many of the sciences which are justly regarded as among the most noble are themselves the creations of the mind. In some sense all science may be so regarded. The materials furnished by nature are put together and framed into a science by the intelligent mind. In some cases, however, the very materials seem to be the creations of the mind—instruments which it devises to aid it in its progress, and with which it works upon still higher creations, as a mighty army, in its resistless march, builds the roads, bridges the streams, levels the mountains, to make itself a way. Of this sort seems to me the science of number and quantity; when duly appreciated, in all its extent, and range, and precision and power, truly one of the most remarkable products of human ingenuity and skill—for such unquestionably it is—a pure creation of the mind. Observe now this man of number and of quantity; how starting with a few self-evident and simple truths, manufacturing out of his own brain and fancy, such simple instruments to aid him, as a point, a line, and a circle, not one of which is ever to be found in the actual, real world, not one of which has any existence save in his own imagination, he goes on to combine and construct with these until he builds up a tower whose top reaches the skies, and from that lofty and impregnable tower, his castle, his fortress, which nothing can shake, from which nothing can drive him, this man, this presumptuous builder, calmly measures off the courses of the stars, and calls their names, and spans their dimensions, and weighs their bulk, and measures their speed, and announces their coming, yet afar off, and with his magic tube follows them in their distant flight through the wilderness of space. Is anything I ask more strange, more admirable than this? Yes, I reply, there is *one* thing more wonderful even than this, and that is the *mind* that devised, constructed, and executed this science, and now works with it as its mighty and magic instrument; and he that would observe the most curious and wonderful thing of all, must leave the figures, and the diagrams, the lines and circles, the tubes, and the tables, with which this man works, and study the *man himself*, the workman.

So also are the creations of art, beautiful, wonderful, as seen in the canvass which warms, and glows, and moves into life and passion as

you gaze, or in the chiselled marble that with serene, calm feature stands and looks upon you, all motionless, all passionless, yet as if cognizant of your inmost being,—an ideal presence drawing you to itself as by a species of enchantment, till a mysterious sympathy springs up between you and it,—this too is wonderful,—this, and the art that can do this. And yet one thing is more so,—the mind that can contrive and execute this work of art.

So is it also, with human language. Take that grandest and most majestic of them all, the Hebrew ; take that richest and most finished of them all, the Greek. You have that which may well receive, as it well deserves your closest study, and your warmest admiration. But after all, is it not chiefly interesting as one of the productions of the human mind, illustrating the laws, and developing the hidden structure of that mind ? The richness, the affluence, the elegance, the exactness, the beauty, of what are these the qualities ? Where did they dwell ? In the Greek language, or in the Greek mind ? Which is, of the two, the more wonderful and worthy of study, the statue, obelisk, cathedral, with its solemn aisle, and overhanging dome, or the mind that devised and wrought out these things, that saw them when as yet they were not, saw them in all their perfectness as they were to be ?—which of the two, the instrument, or the instrument-maker ?—which of the two, the Greek language, or the Greek mind, that called into being and use such an instrument of speech ? And of which is the science most noble and most worthy of regard ?

I admire the genius of a Kepler, a Copernicus, a Newton. I sympathize with their enthusiasm as they develop the laws, and study the movements of the heavenly bodies. I look through the telescope, not without a feeling of awe, as it seems to lift me up, and bear me away into the infinite, and bring me near those stately orbs that beyond the ken of human vision dwell in the silence and unbroken stillness of their own eternity. But there is one thing which fills my whole being with yet a deeper awe and reverence than even those majestic orbs ;—that is, the mind that from this, its lowly dwelling on the earth, in all the weakness and the ignorance of its earthly condition, looking out afar into those clear deep spaces, can by patient observation, discover the hidden laws, and spell out the complicated movements of that vast and busy orrery of worlds.

An importance attaches to the science of mind, if we consider, in the second place, its connection with the past, its historic associations. Many of the sciences justly regarded as important, are of comparatively recent date. This is true indeed of most of the natural sciences. Geology, Physical Geography, Zoölogy, Botany, Physiology, Chemistry, are of no remote origin. It is scarcely half a century since some of them

began to assume a strictly scientific form. Go back a few hundred years, and you find the stateliest and most assuming of them either wholly lost in uncertainty of origin, or running out into fanciful and absurd speculations. Astronomy, a mathematical and not a physical science, may be regarded as an exception to this rule. Yet what was even Astronomy, before Copernicus, and the telescope, and the sixteenth, or even the seventeenth century? Many important facts had indeed been observed and registered before, but the science in anything like its present exactness, and completeness, can scarcely go back to the middle ages. The science of number, and quantity, being, as I have already said, more purely a creation of the mind, was of much earlier origin, and was already fixed in its general principles, and settled on a firm basis, almost at the outset of ancient civilization. But no inquiries were of earlier origin among men, than those pertaining to subjects purely metaphysical. Go back as far as you will toward the Orient, toward the first dawn of a rude and imperfect civilization, you still find men busying themselves with the great problems that to this day remain unsettled. The earliest speculations of the human mind, its first attempts to get beyond the little sphere of activity that immediately surrounded it, and the narrow domain, of sense, seem to have assumed this direction Chaldean and Egyptian shepherds, watching their flocks by night, observed the starry heavens, and recorded the movements of the changing constellations. But long ere that, had the question arisen, and been intently pondered by many a reflecting and observing mind, whence came those nightly luminaries, and whence this fair earth, and what its origin, and what the soul of it, and whence and what am I, and my race. These questions, and such as these,—what are they, but the very rudiments and ground work of philosophy.

It has been said by an ingenious writer, that the man who first discovered that dry wood could be set on fire, deserves to be regarded as the first philosopher. We would by no means detract from the merits of that truly brilliant discovery. The man who made it, certainly deserves a medal, and a monument. And yet we are by no means sure that the palm of original discovery does not rather belong to that other man, who first discovered that there is such a thing as wood, and that it is distinct and different from himself—in other words, that there is matter, and also mind; each subject to its own proper laws, and manner of being. And this I presume must have been a somewhat early discovery in the history of the race.

Indeed, we can hardly imagine a state of human society and civilization so primitive and rude, as to lie back of all inquiry and thought as to the causes and philosophy of things. Far enough from the



truth may have been those primitive hypotheses and speculations, wide of the mark, not unlikely, those primitive inquiries, and laborious patient investigations; but they were the foundations and first beginnings of a science that probably goes further back into antiquity, and has engaged the attention of a greater number of thoughtful, earnest minds since the creation of the world, than any other that can be named. And from the day when such inquiries first presented themselves to the first reflecting and inquiring mind, from that age to this, what earnest reaching forth and striving to grasp the true, the unknown, the infinite, to learn a little of the hidden causes of things, to lift up a little in some way the impenetrable veil that shuts down about us here, and obtain a glimpse of the fair realms that lie beyond.

The student of astronomy, as he watches the heavenly bodies, is carried back to the past, and filled with peculiar emotion, as he remembers that on these same constellations which he now beholds, other eyes fixed their earnest gaze, in those years when the earth was young; beheld them then, as he beholds them now,—Orion, there, and Pleiades, and Taurus, and the varied host; and so in like manner is the student of philosophy linked with remotest ages, and associated with the greatest and richest historic names and periods, when he meditates upon those themes which have tasked the human mind from the beginning, on which the mighty Stagyrte discoursed, walking to and fro, with his disciples, and the noble-souled Plato, and Plato's great master, and the still earlier Greeks of the Asiatic colonies, whose works are mostly lost in the confusion of the ages, and the wreck of time, but who meditated, and doubted, and believed, and taught, upon the very same problems which engage the attention of the student at the present day. He that would hold converse with the noblest spirits of the past, must frequent the paths and explore the fields which were their favorite resort.

The importance of mental science is evident further, from its intimate connection with our own interests, and personal destinies—some sciences interest us as abstractions, merely speculative systems of truth; some as realities, and facts, but of such a nature, so remote from humanity, and the common wants of the race, as to make little appeal to the heart and soul of a man. We are interested in mathematical truth, as in a finely cut and beautiful crystal, every part finished and perfect, just as it existed from of old, before man was upon the earth, or there was any intelligence save that of the Creator to contemplate its beauty. What connection have those eternal and unchangable truths with man and his affairs. They would have been equally true had he never existed. We observe the movements of

the heavenly bodies, but feel as we so do that those orbs are far beyond us, having no relation to us, ignorant of us, keeping their stately progress even as they moved ages ago, and as they will ages hence. What have we to do with them, or they with us? We watch them as they hold their course through the deep firmament, as children standing on the shore watch the distant moving sail that glides silently along the horizon—so far, so beautiful, so still. Even thus sail those swift ships of the firmament on the wide sea above us, and only He who built them, and who guides their course, knows their history.

But when we come to the study of ourselves, the laws of our own intelligence and consciousness, the problems of our own being and destiny, our investigations assume a practical importance and interest which pertain to no other departments of truth. It is no longer the distant star in the heavens, shining where God placed it ages ago, no longer the sail dimly visible on the far horizon, but our own conscious being, that is the object of our thought. The question is no longer, whence comes that swift ship, whither goes it, what bears it; but what am *I*, and whither going, and what freight bear I, myself a swift sailing ship on this ever flowing sea of time,—what is my destination, and what my history? This mysterious soul which animates me, and is the presiding divinity over all my actions, what is it, with all its faculties—reason, imagination, memory, sense—these varied powers and laws of my being? What is that wonderful change that passes over me, when, no longer in communion with the external world, I am still conscious of existence, and the busy thoughts are active still—that state which men call sleep? And what is that still more dread and mysterious change that must soon pass upon me—that which men call death? How is it that objects, and events, remote in time and space, come back to the mind with all the freshness and reality of the passing moment? What is that principle of my nature that presumes to place itself in opposition to all my inclinations and passions, and lifting its reproving finger, say to me thou shalt, and thou shalt not; and which, when I disobey this command, pursues my steps like a vindictive angel, tracks me over the wide world, fills my whole soul with misery, my whole future being with remorse? What mean I by that little word,—*duty*,—what by that little word,—*ought*,—that connects itself so often, and so closely with my pursuits, and my happiness? Ought what, and *why* ought, and to whom ought? Am I *free*, or am I under the chain of stern inevitable fate? Are all my actions *predetermined*, and by whom; if not, then where is Diety, and that superintending Providence that

men say governs all things; if they are, then what can I do other than what is already determined, and so being no longer free, how is it that I am responsible? What power and control have I, in a word, over these restless powers and passions of my own moral being?

These are grave questions. Who shall solve me these problems? Who shall tell me what I am, and what I am to be? Who shall read me this strange inexplicable riddle of human life? Whether it can solve them, or not, these are the questions and the problems, that mental philosophy discusses, and we perceive at a glance their direct and practical bearing on the great interests and personal wants of man as an individual.

The importance of a thorough acquaintance with mental science appears furthermore from its intimate connection with many of the practical pursuits and sciences. It may be said to underlie many of the most important of these pursuits and professions. Even theology, the noblest and highest of all sciences, because conversant with the noblest and highest themes, while at the same time most practical, is itself in a peculiar sense based upon the science of mind. Our philosophy always and of necessity underlies our theology, and shapes in some measure its character, as the solid strata that lie unseen beneath the surface give direction, and figure, and altitude to the mountain range. The facts, the individual truths, the general data, are indeed given, revealed in nature, and in the divine word;—but not the system, not the science; these are to be constructed out of the materials given, by the thinking, reflecting mind, for itself. The stars are in the heavens, and the flowers are in the fields, but, it is for man to arrange and classify them, and not till he has done this for himself, has he a science of astronomy, and of botany. It is precisely so with the science of divine truth. Now it is in part, at least, the office of philosophy to gather, arrange and classify the great truths which God has scattered abroad in nature and in revelation. It falls properly within her sphere. She has, to say the least, a voice in the arrangement, and is entitled to be heard. Not to speak of the very *idea* which we form of the divine being, borrowed as it is, and must necessarily be, from our previous idea of the human mind, and of our own spiritual existence,—not to speak of the several modes of argument by which we seek to establish, in natural theology, the primary doctrine of the existence of God,—what questions I may ask go deeper into the groundwork of any and every theological system, than those pertaining to the freedom of the will,—the government of the affections, inclinations, and passions of the human soul,—man's power over himself, to make himself other and better than he is, to do what he has no dis-

position to do, his power in a word to obey all the divine commands. These, however, are questions strictly and purely psychological. You can not stir a step in the application of theology to practice, till you have in some way settled these questions in your own mind, and that will be for the time your science, and your philosophy.

Nor is it theology alone, that must fall back upon philosophy. The physician finds when he comes into the practice of his profession, if he never knew it before, that the laws of the human mind are to constitute a most important part of his study and observation. If he desires to succeed in his profession, he must understand the operation of the laws of memory, of association, of imagination; how to avoid and how to touch the hidden springs of thought and feeling; the effect on the bodily organization of the due and of the undue exertion of each of the mental faculties; in fine the whole relation of mind, and its operations, to body, and its functions, with the reciprocal influence of each upon the other. Unless he knows these things he knows not often the real nature of the disease which he blindly undertakes to cure. Its springs and causes lie often back among the laws of the mind. To one who rightly understands the matter, a word fitly spoken, a suggestion, a mere tone of the voice, is often the most potent medicine. For want of this, it not unfrequently happens that the disease, treated according to the most approved rules of the profession, is scientifically cured, while the patient is awkwardly left to die in the process. It is not too much to say, that the field of inquiry and research now pointed out, is one very imperfectly understood, if it be not in part quite generally overlooked by the medical profession.

I need hardly say that to the *public speaker*, whether at the bar, in the halls of legislation, in the pulpit, or in the public assembly of whatever kind, and on whatever occasion, a knowledge of the human mind, and an ability to make practical use of that knowledge, is absolutely indispensable. Success in oratory, depends, I admit, on other things, not a little;—the voice, the manner, the theme, the occasion, the personal appearance and bearing of the speaker, the combination and mood of the audience;—but he who best understands the laws and movements of the human mind,—how to touch the feelings how to awaken the passions, how to excite the fears and the hopes, how to rouse the resentment of his hearers,—how again to soothe the excited feeling, how to allay prejudice, and call into exercise the calm reason and sober judgment of men, he will best be able to effect his purpose, by turning to his own account all the circumstances of the occasion, and like a skillful organist, touching with ease, yet with precision, and effect, what key of the many-voiced instrument he will. No man

can do this who does not understand well the *instrument* on which he plays.

Not to the theologian, the physician, the orator alone, is the science of mind an important auxiliary, if not an indispensable requisite to success. To the *teacher* it is especially of use, and that in many ways.

It is of use in enlarging his sphere of thought and information. It is necessary for him to know more things than he teaches, or expects to teach. No man is fit to teach spelling and arithmetic, who knows nothing but to spell and to cipher. He may not have occasion to teach Greek or Conic Sections in the village school; but he will have a larger and richer mind for having learned these things, and will be able to teach the most common and simple English branches all the better in consequence. And so of mental science. He may not have a class in metaphysics, but if he have a clear, strong, well disciplined mind himself, in consequence of that intellectual training which such studies afford, he will be a better teacher of whatever he has occasion to teach. His advantage will appear, his gain and position, increase of power, and skill will be manifest in whatever simplest thing he is set to do. He will teach the English alphabet in a wiser and better manner, for it. He may not have a class in Homer's Iliad, but to read the Iliad will help him to explain the construction of many a sentence in Pope, or Milton, to the juveniles who are laboriously toiling through the darkness and intricacy of English Grammar. He may not have occasion to teach Chemistry, or Geology, or Zoölogy; but the physical sciences will replenish his mind with ideas, and furnish him useful illustrations with which to enliven the monotony or dullness of the class-book recitation. There is hardly a department, I suppose, of useful learning, which may not be of direct use to the teacher in the manner now indicated. If, as Cicero affirms, it is necessary for the orator to know all subjects in order to speak well upon one, it is at least equally true of the teacher. But there is, perhaps, no one science that tends more directly to enlarge the sphere of mental activity, and at the same time to strengthen and develop the native power of the mind, than the science of the mind itself.

But more especially will this science be of use to the teacher, in the knowledge which it will give him of the mind of his pupil, and the skill in dealing with that mind. The mind of the pupil is the instrument, on which he is set to play—a curious instrument of many and strange keys and stops—and to handle it well and skillfully is no ordinary acquirement. What shall we think of the man who knows nothing whatever of the *instrument*, not one key from another, but only and simply the *music* which he is to perform;—nothing of the

mind which is to be instructed, but only the knowledge to be communicated to it. If the mind of the pupil were like an empty cask, to be filled by tunnel and bucket in the quickest way, being of given capacity, and warranted not to leak, this method of operation might answer every purpose. But as it is, the mind being not at all the sort of thing now supposed, but altogether a different matter, is it not the very first thing in successful teaching to know well the nature and the laws of the mind that is to be taught; how to stimulate, how to encourage, how to restrain, how to control and direct its every movement and impulse.

Do you say this is to be learned not from books, but from intercourse with living men? I admit it, in part, and only in part. The *materials* of the desired knowledge are to be found everywhere in society, where man is found. And so the materials of botanical science are in the fields. But as I would not send a man into the fields to study botany, without first giving him the principles of the science as taught in the books, so neither would I send him to the streets and the markets to learn the nature and laws of the human mind, without any previous knowledge of the science as unfolded in the treatises of those who have devoted their lives to its study and elucidation.

I have spoken thus far of mental science as useful to the teacher in quickening and enlarging his own mind, and giving him power over the mind of the pupil, rather than as a matter which he is likely ever to be required to teach. But I go further than this, I am not content with this, I urge its claims to a place among the actual studies of the school—at least the school of higher grade. Why should the pupil be ignorant of what it so much concerns every man to know? Why should he learn everything except the one thing, which, of all, it would seem he ought to know, that is, *himself*? Shall he learn Geography, that he may know the country and the state in which he lives; arithmetic, that he may cast an account correctly; astronomy, that he may tell the stars; natural philosophy that he may know the laws of the material universe; and shall he *not* know the laws and faculties of *his own mind*? Of these, shall he be left in profound ignorance? Is it of more use to him to know how Kamskatka is bounded, or what is the largest river in New Zealand, than to know the nature and mutual relations of his own five senses;—to know that a bell will not ring in an exhausted receiver, and why not, than to know why he forgets proper names, and why he remembers one thing better than another, or how it is that he remembers anything at all?

It may be supposed by some that the study of the mind is too abstract and difficult a matter for the comprehension of the pupil at the

age in which we find him at the common school. Doubtless there are many treatises on the science which he would not comprehend, many subjects connected with it which he is not sufficiently mature to master; but to suppose that the simple elements and outlines of the science are beyond his reach, is a great mistake. As to the names and terms employed, they are for the most part already familiar, and do not for a moment compare in difficulty with the new and difficult words constantly in use in any and every physical science, as botany or physiology, or natural philosophy; while as to the truths contained in the science, they are, to say the least, not less important, not less interesting to the learner, certainly not less simple and easy of acquisition, than those of any other science. Any child that can be taught the complicated processes of multiplication and division of fractions, can be taught the most important truths of mental science, in less time, and with less trouble, both to himself and to the teacher. Let the teacher, in the absence of any suitable elementary treatise, be himself the book. Let him in some moment of leisure from the ordinary occupations of the school-room, such moments as every wise teacher will take care to secure, and to turn to good account, gather a little circle of his pupils around him, and propose to them, for instance, this question or problem,—how many really different sorts of things the mind can do. Their answers at first may be vague, and wide of the mark, but it will not be long ere they assume a definite shape, and presently reach the conclusion, that all the possible forms of mental activity may be reduced to the three distinct departments, of *thinking*, *feeling*, and *willing*. A great step has been taken when even this simple point is reached. Let him again, at another time, direct their attention to the manner in which one thought leads to, or suggests another; how it happens that the sight of Henry's book, or seat, reminds them at once of Henry; and they will soon find out for themselves what are the great laws of *association*. In like manner the philosophy of memory, of imagination, of attention, of abstraction, and classification, and other faculties, may be explained. If by the time such an exercise has been twice or thrice attempted, the teacher does not find his pupils becoming somewhat deeply interested in the new science, I will consent that he drop the subject.

My limits forbid me to pursue the subject further. Enough to have thrown out a few suggestions. Enough, if what I have said shall awaken the attention of even one thoughtful earnest mind, desirous of the best attainments for itself, and the highest skill in the noble profession of educating and training other minds, and shall lead it to a more careful study of that science which may be said to lie, in a sense, at the foundation of all others.

...g a  
...e taught  
...d the Hopkins





11. 11. 11

## XI. WILLIAM RUSSELL.

EDITOR OF THE FIRST SERIES OF THE AMERICAN JOURNAL OF EDUCATION,

BOSTON, 1826 to 1829.

---

THE following are a few particulars of the professional life of Mr. William Russell,—the editor of the first periodical published in the English language, devoted exclusively to the advancement of Education, and for nearly forty years an active teacher and laborer in the educational field.

Mr. Russell was born in Glasgow, Scotland, and was educated at the Latin school, and the university of that city. During his course of study in the latter of these institutions, the “First Philosophy Class,”—embracing the subjects of intellectual philosophy, logic and rhetoric,—was, fortunately for Mr. Russell, in his subsequent life as a teacher, under the care of Professor George Jardine, author of the “Outlines of Philosophical Education.” That eminent and revered instructor, by his zeal and eloquence on his favorite theme, the philosophy of human culture, awakened a lively sympathy with his views, in the minds of his students. After fifty years noble service, he still retained a warm feeling for whatever concerned the subject of education; as he manifested in his cordial expressions of pleasure on the establishment of the American Journal of Education, in the city of Boston, in the year 1826.

An incipient pulmonary affection made it advisable for Mr. Russell, immediately on completing his college course, to leave his native land, for a residence in a warmer climate. He came, accordingly, to the State of Georgia, in the year 1817; and, deeming it unadvisable, at so early a stage of life, to accept the offered situation of “rector” of an academy, commenced the business of instruction, as a private tutor, in the family of a distinguished Georgian statesman.

In this occupation, he passed, advantageously to his health, a few of the earlier years of his life as a teacher. He subsequently revisited Scotland; but, at the solicitation of his southern friends, returned in the year following to the State of Georgia, and for two years, took charge of the Chatham Academy, in the city of Savannah. His marriage connection with a lady from the state of Connecticut, creating a preference for a family residence in the city of New Haven, he taught there for some years, the New Township Academy, and the Hopkins

Grammar School,—the preparatory classical seminary connected with Yale College.

The peculiar form of illness, to which Mr. Russell is liable in cold latitudes, having returned, a less sedentary mode of teaching became desirable for him; and with a view to the benefit of such a change, he commenced the instruction of classes in elocution, in connection with the Theological Seminary at Andover, the University at Cambridge, the Public Latin School, and Chauncy Hall School, in the city of Boston. Soon after this change of occupation, he was invited to take the editorial charge of the *American Journal of Education*, published in Boston, first by Mr. Thomas B. Wait, in 1826, next by Mr. S. G. Goodrich, and subsequently by Messrs. Carter & Hendee. Mr. Russell continued to conduct this periodical for nearly three years from the date of its publication.

The early direction given to Mr. Russell's studies and pursuits by the influence of Professor Jardine, led him to take a deep interest in the general subject of modes of education, in their adaptation to the development of mind and character. This circumstance subsequently proved a useful preparation for the business of conducting an educational journal at a time when, as yet, no publication of that description existed in our own country or in England; although the light shed on the whole subject of education by the labors of Pestalozzi, had excited, throughout Europe and America, a fresh interest on all the great questions involved in the various departments of physical, intellectual, and moral culture.

The only Journals then devoted to the subject of education, were those of Germany, France, and, perhaps, one or two other countries on the continent of Europe. The necessity of important changes in the plan and character of education, was beginning to be deeply felt in England. But this feeling had hitherto been expressed only in detached suggestions from the minds of individuals, in occasional pamphlets, or similar forms of publication. In the United States, the condition of matters was much the same as in England; although, in some instances, the degree of attention excited on the subject, was both stronger and more definite.

Warren Colburn's invaluable contribution to the improvement of education, in the publication of his *Intellectual Arithmetic*, had virtually introduced the spirit of Pestalozzi's methods of instruction into the schools of New England; and much had been effected by the diffusion of liberal views on the whole subject of education, by Mr. James G. Carter, through his numerous and able editorial articles in the *United States Literary Gazette*.

Much also had been done toward the same results by the successful exertions of Professor Walter R. Johnson, in connection with the establishment of the Franklin Institute, in Philadelphia, and with the introduction of the school system of Pennsylvania. Valuable aid had been rendered, likewise, to the interests of education, by the exertions of the Rev. Mr. Gallaudet, of Hartford, for the introduction of modes of instruction adapted to seminaries for the deaf and dumb, but incidentally shedding a truer light on all forms of mental development. The arduous labors of Mr. Russell, in the unassisted editorial care of the *Journal of Education*, although of no pecuniary benefit to him personally, were amply rewarded by the many invaluable results to which they led. Prominent among these were the instruction of physical education, in various forms, into American seminaries; more liberal views on the subject of female education; more genial methods of conducting the business of early culture in primary schools; the establishment of lyceums and other popular institutions connected with the diffusion of useful knowledge; the formation of Teachers' Associations, and the establishment of seminaries for teachers.

The *Journal* met with warm encouragement throughout the Union, and was extensively used as a vehicle of communication, both for developing the views of the friends of education in several of the States which were then occupied with the establishment of systems of public instruction, and for the diffusion of improved methods of teaching, which were then claiming general attention in New England and other parts of our country, where the subject of education had attained to a more mature stage of advancement. Eminent educators and philanthropists abroad, both in England and on the continent, gave their cordial sympathy and commendation to the design and character of the *American Journal*, and contributed effectual aid to its purposes, by liberal exchanges, and copious supplies of material, in the shape of important public documents.

The editorial care of the *Journal*, though an exceedingly laborious form of occupation, was one which was peculiarly agreeable to Mr. Russell, from his personal tastes and habits; and he would gladly have continued it, could he have done so with safety. But the employment of conducting an educational periodical being necessarily, for the most part, a gratuitous service, it could only be performed by laboring at night after the days' occupation in teaching. Three years of this double toil occasioned a reduction of strength which called for a temporary cessation of exertion; and at the request of an eminent friend of education, residing in Germantown, Pennsylvania, Mr. Russell taught, for several years, a limited class of young ladies, in that

village, and, subsequently, a school of a similar description, together with private classes, in the city of Philadelphia.

On his return to Boston, he resumed his former line of teaching there and at Andover; attending, at intervals, as lecturer and instructor, at the spring and autumn sessions of Teachers' Institutes in the State of Rhode Island, under the direction of the Hon. Henry Barnard, then State Commissioner of Schools. Mr. Russell was employed, also, for some years, in conducting the exercises of similar associations in the State of New Hampshire; occupying himself, during the winter season, for the benefit of a milder climate, in teaching classes at Princeton College, and in the cities of New York and Brooklyn. In fulfilling these numerous engagements, he was frequently assisted by his son,—now Rev. Francis T. Russell, of New Britain, Connecticut, who, from his interest in the cause of education, still affords such aid to the Teachers' Institutes of that State.

In 1849, at the invitation of friends of education in New Hampshire, Mr. Russell established there a seminary for teachers, which he continued to conduct or direct, for several years. But his health incapacitating him for the active duties of teaching, during the severe winters of that region, he was induced, in the spring of 1853, to move his Seminary to Lancaster, Massachusetts, where he now resides.

Mr. Russell commenced his seminary in Lancaster, with liberal aid from the local friends of education there, and with the assistance of a numerous and superior corps of instructors; among whom were Professor Hermann Krüsi of Switzerland, previously instructor in mathematics and modern languages, in the Home and Colonial Normal Seminary of London, and now Instructor in the Massachusetts Teachers' Institutes,—Professor William J. Whittaker of London, subsequently Principal of the Boston School of Design, and now similarly occupied in the city of Philadelphia,—Mr. Dana P. Colburn, now Principal of the Rhode Island Normal School, Providence, and Sanborn Tenney, A. M., of Amherst College, now Instructor in the Massachusetts Teachers' Institutes.

But the highly liberal course now adopted by the State of Massachusetts, in establishing State scholarships in her colleges, for the benefit of young men intending to devote themselves to the business of teaching in the public high schools of the State, and in the generous encouragement given to students of both sexes in the State Normal Schools to extend their course of professional study, has, to a great extent, superseded the necessity of any private establishment for the higher professional training of teachers. Mr. Russell, therefore, devotes, at present, but a limited portion of the year to instruction in Lancaster. During the spring and autumn months, he continues to

attend the circuit of the Teachers' Institutes of the State, held under the direction of the Secretary of the Board of Education. Mr. Russell's department in the institutes is that of lecturer and instructor in reading and elocution. Part of the year he devotes, as formerly, to the instruction of classes in elocution, at several of our New England colleges and professional seminaries.

The principal services which Mr. Russell has rendered by his personal exertions in the field of education, have been those of editorial labor, the direction of seminaries for teachers, and the instruction of classes at Teachers' Institutes. As a practical teacher, however, he has been extensively engaged, as a lecturer and teacher in elocution, in seminaries of various grades. A number of his earlier years were spent in the usual forms of academic supervision and instruction. His modes of teaching, when so situated, he has developed in his course of grammatical exercises adapted to his edition of Adams' Latin Grammar,—in his Grammar of Composition, and in his Exercises on Words. His methods in elocution, adapted to the successive stages of instruction, are embodied in his series of reading manuals and other text-books,\* which have been extensively used in our schools and colleges and professional seminaries, and have effectually contributed to the advancement of a branch of education previously much neglected.

A subject to which Mr. Russell has devoted much attention and which he has frequently brought forward at the meetings of teachers, is one of common interest to all who devote themselves to teaching as a business for life,—the importance of placing the occupation on the footing of a recognized profession. After his address on this subject, before the New Hampshire State Association of Teachers, a committee was appointed to report upon it; and a resolution was subsequently passed by that body, that admission to membership in the Association should thenceforth take place by professional examination and certificate. We hope that Mr. Russell, before withdrawing from the field of active labor in education, will enjoy the satisfaction of seeing his wishes regarding the distinct recognition of teaching as a profession, amply fulfilled throughout our country, and the profession crowded with practitioners, trained and qualified to the highest pitch of his expectations.

---

\* A list of these and his other publications we have annexed to this sketch of his professional life. It is but justice, however, to Mr. R. to state, with reference to their large apparent number, that his works were not published for pecuniary purposes, but were mostly prepared at the solicitation of his numerous classes of teachers, for their immediate use. A few of them unexpectedly obtained a wide circulation; but most of them have been serviceable rather as pioneers than otherwise.

**TEXT-BOOKS; AND WORKS RELATING TO EDUCATION.** By William Russell.

*Suggestions on Education*: relating particularly to the Method of Instruction commonly adopted in Geography, History, Grammar, Logic, and the Classics. New Haven: A. H. Maltby & Co. 1823.

*A Grammar of Composition*: including a practical review of the principles of Rhetoric, a series of exercises in Rhetorical Analysis, and six introductory courses of Composition. New Haven: A. H. Maltby & Co. 1823.

*Adam's Latin Grammar*, abridged and arranged in a course of Practical Lessons, adapted to the capacity of Young Learners. To which are added Rules of Pronunciation in reading Latin. New Haven: A. H. Maltby & Co. 1824.

*Am. Journal of Education*. Vols. I. II. III. Boston: 1826, -7, -8.

*A Manual of Mutual Instruction*: consisting of Mr. Fowle's Directions for introducing in common schools the improved system adopted in the Monitorial School, Boston. With an Appendix, containing some considerations in favor of the Monitorial Method, and a sketch of its progress, embracing a view of its adaptation to instruction in academies, preparatory seminaries, and colleges. Boston: Wait, Green & Co. 1826.

*The Library of Education*. Vol. I. "Some Thoughts concerning Education," by John Locke; and a "Treatise of Education," by John Milton; with an Appendix, containing Locke's Memoranda on Study. Boston: Gray & Bowen. 1830.

*Journal of Instruction*. [Semi-monthly periodical.] Phila.: 1831.

*Lessons in Enunciation*: comprising a course of Elementary Exercises, and a statement of Common Errors in Articulation, with the rules of correct usage in Pronouncing. To which is added an Appendix, containing Rules and Exercises on the mode of Enunciation required for Public Reading and Speaking. Boston: Melvin Lord. 1830.

*Rudiments of Gesture*, comprising illustrations of common Faults in Attitude and Action. To which is added an Appendix, designed for practical exercises in Declamation, consisting of a Debate on the Character of Julius Cæsar, by James Sheridan Knowles. Boston: G. W. Palmer & Co. 1838.

*Exercises in Elocution*, exemplifying the rules and principles of the art of Reading. Boston: Jenks & Palmer. 1841.

*The American Elocutionist*: comprising "Lessons in Enunciation," "Exercises in Elocution," and "Rudiments of Gesture." With a selection of New Pieces for practice in Reading and Declamation; and engraved Illustrations in Attitude and Action. Designed for Colleges, Professional Institutions, Academies, and Common Schools. Boston: Jenks, Palmer & Co. 1844.

*Primer*, or First Steps in Spelling and Reading. Designed as introductory to the Spelling Book, and forming Part I. of a series of Books for Elementary Schools. Boston: Tappan & Denuet. 1844.

*Spelling-Book*: or, Second Course of Lessons in Spelling and

**Reading.** Designed as a sequel to the author's Primer, and an introduction to the other parts of his Elementary and Common School Series. Boston : Tappan & Dennet. 1844.

*Primary Reader* : a selection of easy Reading Lessons, with introductory exercises in Articulation, for Young Classes. Designed to follow the Spelling-book, and forming Part IV. of Russell's Elementary Series. Boston : Tappan & Whittemore. 1844.

*Sequel to the Primary Reader* of Russell's Elementary Series. Designed to precede Russell's and Goldsbury's Common-School Series. Boston : Tappan & Whittemore. 1844.

*Introduction to the Primary Reader* of Russell's Elementary Series. Designed to accompany the Spelling-book. Boston : Tappan, Whittemore & Mason. 1845.

*Introduction to the American Common School Reader and Speaker* ; comprising Selections in Prose and Verse : with Elementary Rules and Exercises in Pronunciation. By William Russell and John Goldsbury, authors of the above-mentioned Reader. Boston : Chas. Tappan. 1845.

*The American Common School Reader and Speaker* : a Selection of Pieces in prose and verse, with Rules for Reading and Speaking. By John Goldsbury and William Russell. Boston : Tappan & Whittemore. 1845.

*Introduction to the Young Ladies' Elocutionary Reader* : containing a Selection of Reading Lessons, together with the Rudiments of Elocution, adapted to Female Readers. By William and Anna U. Russell, authors of the above-mentioned Reader. Boston : James Munroe & Co. 1845.

*The Young Ladies' Elocutionary Reader* : containing a Selection of Reading Lessons, by Anna U. Russell, with introductory Rules and Exercises in Elocution, adapted to Female Readers, by William Russell. Boston : James Munroe & Co. 1845.

*Elements of Musical Articulation*, by William Russell. With Illustrations in Vocal Music, by Lowell Mason, Prof. Boston Academy of Music. Boston : Wilkins, Carter & Co. 1845.

*Lessons at Home in Spelling and Reading.* Parts I. and II. Boston : Wm. D. Ticknor & Co. 1846.

*Orthophony* ; or the Cultivation of the Voice in Elocution : A Manual of Elementary Exercises, adapted to Dr. Rush's "Philosophy of the Human Voice," and the system of vocal culture introduced by Mr. James E. Murdock. Designed as an introduction to Russell's "American Elocutionist." Compiled by William Russell. With a Supplement on Purity of Tone, by G. J. Webb, Prof. Boston Academy of Music. Boston : Ticknor, Reed & Fields. 1845.

*Harper's New-York Class-Book.* Comprising Outlines of the Geography and History of New-York ; Biographical Notices of Eminent Individuals ; Sketches of Scenery and Natural History ; and Accounts of Public Institutions. Arranged as a Reading Book for Schools. By William Russell. New York : Harper & Bros. 1847.

No. 8.—[Vol. III, No. 1.]—10.



*New Spelling Book* ; or, Second Course of Lessons in Spelling and Reading. Designed as a Sequel to the Author's Primer, and an Introduction to the other parts of his Elementary and Common School Series. Enlarged edition. Boston : Tappan & Whittemore. 1852.

*Pulpit Elocution* : Comprising Remarks on the Effect of Manner in Public Discourse ; the Elements of Elocution, applied to the Reading of the Scriptures, Hymns, and Sermons ; with Observations on the Principles of Gesture, and a Selection of Exercises in Reading and Speaking. By William Russell. With an Introduction by Edwards A. Park, D. D., Prof. in Andover Theol. Sem'y ; and Rev. Edward N. Kirk, Pastor of Mt. Vernon Church, Boston. Andover : W. F. Draper & Brother. 1852.

*The University Speaker* : A Collection of Pieces designed for College Exercises in Declamation and Recitation. With Suggestions on the appropriate Elocution of particular passages. Boston and Cambridge : James Munroe & Co. 1852.

*Suggestions on Teachers' Institutes*. Manchester, N. H. : William H. Fisk. 1852.

*A Manual of Instruction in Reading*. Prepared for the use of Teachers' Institutes. Andover, Mass. : Warren F. Draper. 1852.

*An Address on the Infant-School System of Education*, and the extent to which it may be advantageously applied to all Primary Schools. Delivered in the Representatives' Hall, Boston, Aug. 21, 1830, before the Convention which formed the Am. Ins. of Instruction.

*An Address on Associations of Teachers*. Delivered at a Meeting held in Dorchester, on Wednesday, 8th Sept., 1830, for the purpose of forming an Association of Teachers, for Norfolk County, Mass.

*A Lecture on Reading and Declamation*. Delivered before the American Institute of Instruction, at Worcester, Mass., Aug., 1837.

*A Lecture on Elocution*, introductory to a course of Readings and Recitations. Delivered at the Temple, Boston, 1838.

*A Lecture on the Education of Females*. Delivered at the close of the Autumn Term of Abbot Female Academy, Andover, Mass., Nov. 21, 1843.

*A Lecture on Female Education*. Delivered before the Am. Institute of Instruction, at Portland, Me., 2d Sept., 1844.

*Hints to Teachers on Instruction in Reading*. Educational Tract No. 5, in the series issued by Hon. Henry Barnard, State Commissioner of Schools, R. I., 1846.

*Duties of Teachers*. An Address before the Associate Alumni of Merrimack Normal Inst., at their First Annual Meeting, Sept. 4, 1850.

*Address at the Dedication and Opening of the New England Normal Institute*, Lancaster, Mass., Wednesday, May 11, 1853.

*Encouragements to Teachers*. An Address before the Associate Alumni of Merrimack Normal Institute, at the Fourth Anniversary of the Association, Wednesday, 31st Aug., 1853.

*Exercises on Words*. Designed as a Course of Practice on the Rudiments of Grammar and Rhetoric. Boston : Whittemore, Niles, & Hall. 1856.

## XII. AMERICAN ASSOCIATION FOR THE ADVANCEMENT OF SCIENCE.

---

THE brilliant meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science recently held at Albany, having increased the general interest felt throughout the country in the progress of American science, we propose to offer a few remarks on the history, objects, and advantages of this institution.

The first of these annual scientific conventions was held at Dresden, in Germany, in 1822; and they were afterwards repeated at Berlin, Heidleberg, and Frankfort. Those meetings gathered the leading men of science, not only from every part of Germany, but also from all parts of Europe, to the number of four hundred and upwards; bringing into a gratifying personal acquaintance many of the most celebrated philosophers of the day, who had before known each other only through the medium of their writings, or by the celebrity of their names. The meeting at Berlin, for example, in 1828, assembled under the express patronage of the king of Prussia, consisted of four hundred and sixty-seven distinguished savans, from the various states of Europe, including England, France, Holland, and Russia. The meeting was opened by a discourse from the illustrious Humboldt, President, in which he stated the object of the convocation, and pointed out the advantages of such a union of the friends of science, from different parts of the world, and its influence on the propagation and discovery of useful truths.

It was natural that the spirit caught at this meeting by the foreign delegates, should, on their return home, be widely diffused over their respective countries. Accordingly, in 1832, the *British Association for the Advancement of Science* was formed, which has been continued to the present time, and has become a central point, where the scattered rays of new-discovered truths in the arts and sciences are brought to a focus, whence they radiate to all parts of the earth.

The germ of the American Association was first developed in the *Association of American Geologists*, formed in Philadelphia, in 1840, a title which, in 1842, was changed to that of the *Association of American Geologists and Naturalists*; and, in order to be still more comprehensive, this title was again changed in 1845 to the *American Association for the Advancement of Science*.

The American Association was formed at the right time. It could hardly have been formed at all at an earlier period, from the great scarcity in our country of original investigators. When, in 1818, the American Journal of Science was commenced, the editor, we have heard, proposed to publish, in his prospectus, a list of the names of of American savans on whom he could rely for contributions; but the list when formed, appeared so meagre, and embraced so large a proportion of names wholly unknown to fame, that it was deemed the most prudent course not to call the roll of our *corps scientifique* before the world. It is but just to say, that the American Journal itself did more than all other agents to create a body of American investigators. Previous to the publication of that Journal, our men of science had no medium of communication with the scientific world. There was, indeed, a paper sent forth, at long intervals, from the American Philosophical Society at Philadelphia, or from the American Academy at Boston, or from the Connecticut Academy at New Haven, or from the Albany Institute; and the Mineralogical Journal of Dr. Bruce, published in New York, (which expired at the close of one small volume,) opened a transient medium to the small number of devotees to that special branch of science. But all these papers had only a very limited circulation at home, and hardly any abroad. When, therefore, the Edinburgh Review, in their notice of Seybert's Statistical Annals of the United States, in 1820, taunted us with the questions—"What new substances have their chemists discovered, or what old ones have they analyzed? What new constellations have been discovered by the telescopes of Americans? What have they done in the mathematics?"—we felt, indeed, the contempt and ridicule expressed for our scientific claims to be unjust; and yet, when we looked about us for examples of scientific discoveries or inventions with which to confront our accusers, we could make but a feeble defence. In addition to a few names well known to the scientific world, we felt conscious of possessing, even then, many more which would one day add lustre to the reputation of our country in the eyes of foreigners; yet we could not but see that we could present but few names,—*rari nantes in gurgite vasto*,—that would be accredited abroad for any discoveries which had actually distinguished them, and we had still less to offer in the ornamental arts.\* But the

---

\* As a gratifying proof of the progress of our science and literature, during the thirty-seven years that have elapsed since the article in the Edinburgh Review was published, it may be well to keep in remembrance the following passage from that article.

"During the thirty or forty years of their independence, they [the Americans] have done absolutely nothing for the sciences, for the arts, or even for the statesman-like studies of politics, or political economy. Confining ourselves to our own country, and to the period that has elapsed since *they* had an independent existence, we would ask, where are their Foxes,

American Journal of Science, by furnishing a suitable medium, by which scientific observations and discoveries could be communicated to the scientific world at large, prompted and multiplied greatly those researches themselves. This work was received and read with more interest abroad than at home, for the reason that the taste for new discoveries in science, in art, or in nature, was more cultivated among the learned of Europe than in the United States; and men of science in the old world, expressed their surprise and astonishment at the activity of mind prevailing in a country, where they had been accustomed to look for nothing but inertness and sterility. The unexplored condition of our natural history, and especially of our mineralogy and geology, opened new treasures to the students of nature, and the rapid disclosures successively made in the Journal of Science, of our stupendous geological systems, particularly those embosoming animal and vegetable remains—of our exhaustless stores of granite, free-stone, and marble, and all the materials required for the noblest architecture; of our vast depositories of coal; of our boundless mines of iron and lead, of copper and gold; disclosures so unexpected, unfolding with every new number of the American Journal of Science that crossed the Atlantic, amazed the naturalists of Europe. Along with the story of American explorations and discoveries, the Journal carried to Europe the names of American scholars, and acquired for them immediate respect and consideration for their attainments in science, and for their genius and originality, in place of the contempt previously entertained for both. If it surprised the men of science of the old world by sudden revelations of the riches of our natural history, it no less astonished them at the wonders of our firmament, at the number and importance of our inventions, and at the rapid progress of our arts both the useful and the ornamental. In short, in place of the sneers and reproaches, which it had been their uniform practice to cast upon the intellect of free-born America, the learned of Europe become suddenly almost extravagant in their encomiums upon the activity of the American mind. We think, then, that to the American Journal of Science, is due the honor of having

---

their Burkes, their Sheridans, their Windhams, their Horners, their Wilberforces? Where are their Arkwrights, their Watts, their Davys—their Robertsons, Blairs, Smiths, Stewarts, Freys, and Matthews—their Porsons, Parrs, Burneys, or Bloomfields—their Scotts, Campbells, Byrons, Moores, or Crabbes—their Siddonses, Kemballs, Keans, or O'Neils—their Wilkies, Lawrences, or Chantreys? In the four quarters of the globe, who reads an American book? or goes to an American play? or looks at an American statue or picture? What does the world yet owe to American physicians or surgeons? What new substances have their chemists discovered, or what old ones have they analyzed? What new constellations have been discovered by the telescopes of Americans? What have they done in the mathematics? Who drinks out of American glasses, or eats from American plates, or wears American coats or gowns, or sleeps in American blankets?"

first redeemed our country from the humiliating attitude in which she stood in the eyes of men of science abroad, at the time when the article which we have copied from the Edinburgh Review was penned ; and also of having raised up and prepared the men who, in 1840, laid the foundation of the American Association for the Advancement of Science.

The *object* of this institution, is strictly the *advancement* of science. She receives with little favor, and hardly tolerates communications, however meritorious in themselves, which have no tendency to enrich the cabinet of science with new truths, although she allows her specimens to be gathered from any and all of the kingdoms of nature, or from the world of art, or even from the profoundest depths of abstraction. Her only condition is, that the contribution must enlarge the sphere of known truths,—be something new among the *productions* of nature, or in the *laws* of nature, or in the *phenomena* of nature ; some explanation of what was before not understood ; some solution of a problem, that had either divided the opinions of the learned, or baffled their skill. With this simple object in view, the members of the association are bringing to its annual meetings their varied offerings,—some from the animal, the vegetable, or the mineral kingdom ; some from the depths of the earth, the ocean, or the air ; and some from the starry heavens. One develops a new law of nature, and another reveals its hidden cause. Some bring their telescopes of wondrous power and finish, and some their microscopes that rival the best specimens of European art. Some gauge the ocean, and some measure the mountain heights. Mathematics, astronomy, meteorology, chemistry, physiology, natural history, geology and geography, mechanics and physics, the practical and the ornamental arts ; these are each and all represented by able and ardent devotees. Although, happily, each thinks his own peculiar department, either in nature or art, the most important and interesting of all, like the patriot, “ whose own best country ever is at home,” yet, all at length become animated with the love of truth, which gradually diffuses its leaven over the entire mass ; so that all communications made with a certain degree of zeal, and apparent earnestness for the truth, and of marked ability, are listened to with interest by the whole fraternity ; and so contagious is this spirit, that it pervades not only the entire body of savans, but even the crowded ranks of “ outsiders,” of both sexes, that frequently enliven these meetings with their presence.

The *progress* of the association since it was first organized, in 1845, has been in the highest degree encouraging. In 1855, it numbered nearly a thousand numbers, and numerous additions were made to it

at the late meeting at Albany. Its annual meeting is to American science what the meeting of the American Board of Foreign Missions is to the church ; a great yearly gathering, to which all our men of science look forward with earnest expectation ; and a large proportion of them have more or less regard to it in their studies and researches during the whole preceding year. Thus, like a self-feeding machine, the institution supplies its own aliment, prompting, as it does, those very researches which constitute its true sustenance.

The *advantages* conferred by the American Association, are by no means few or small upon the cause of science at large. Indeed, after examining the published transactions of the similar institutions of Europe, and comparing them with those of our Association, we feel some share of national pride in the consciousness, that the comparison is well sustained on our part, both in point of originality and of intrinsic value. To the promotion of science in our own country, its advantages are inestimable. We think ourselves fully justified in the assertion, that there never before existed on the earth a nation which made such rapid progress in the arts and sciences, as the people of the United States have done within the last fifty years. At the close of the last century, the idea extensively prevailed, both here and elsewhere, that the field of knowledge was exhausted, and that there was nothing left for the scholars of our day, but to glean a few scattered straws, which the great reapers of the two preceding centuries had left. Newton and Laplace, Euler and Lagrange, had completed the structure of the universe ; Scheele, Priestley and Lavoisier, had revealed all the secrets of chemistry ; while Linnæus, Buffon and their followers, had made known the entire history of terrestrial nature. But we need only name the new sciences, or the new applications of science, that have sprung up since, in order to convince every reflecting man, that this supposed exhausted field has made more ample returns during the present century, than for the same period at any other age of the world. For let us call to mind the great discoveries in optics, magnetism, and electro-magnetism ; in geology, chemistry, and astronomy ; let us reflect on the applications of science to the purposes of man in the steamboat, in the railroad, in the electric-telegraph, in gas-illumination ; in telescopes and microscopes ; in the power-press ; in the arts of daguerreotyping, photographic engraving, and electrotpe plating and gilding ; in the elegance and variety of our manufactures as displayed at the Crystal Palace, or as exhibited at our annual fairs. None but those advanced in years, who can look at the state of the arts and sciences as they existed in our country at the beginning of the century, and can compare them

with what they are now, can have any adequate ideas of the progress of our country during this interval. The aged men of some periods of the world, have looked back upon mighty revolutions and bloody wars, that had marked their times, and rendered them famous in history: to the aged of the present period it is given, not only to recal among the great events of their opening spring, the most important convulsions in society that ever marked the annals of time, but also, in their serene autumn, to witness changes in the progress of society, produced by the applications of science to the arts of peace, more numerous and wonderful than those of all preceding ages. In fact, our existing race of aged men, have probably witnessed changes in society, especially those produced by the steamboat, the rail-car, and the telegraph, greater than can ever happen, in a single life, to the aged of future times, since there remain, *unemployed*, no such powers of nature as steam, electricity, magnetism, and light, which have, for the most part, been first brought into the service of man, as mechanical agents, during this eventful period. An American scholar of seventy, might write the "History of his own Times," and exhibit in his peculiar sphere of life, a period as fruitful in great events, as was that of Burnet in the political sphere in which he moved.

Until recently, however, it was rather in the useful arts than in the field of science, that the originality of our countrymen developed itself. The American Association is designed to promote the advancement of both, but more especially to cultivate the domain of truth itself,—to unfold new truths in abstract science, new geometrical laws, and new results in the higher mathematics, chiefly, however, in their relations to the most recondite phenomena of nature; to bring to light new productions, new combinations of elements, and new laws in Astronomy, Chemistry, and Physiology; and, finally, in every possible way, to hasten on the period when man shall have first learned, and then appropriated to his use, all the productions, and subdued to his dominion all the powers of nature.

In another important respect, the American Association will exert a most auspicious influence upon the country. It is in the personal acquaintance, and friendly intercourse, formed between men of science from all parts of the Union. The studies of nature, as well as those of pure geometry, inspire a love of truth; and the contests which sometimes arise among men of science, are seldom acrimonious or protracted; differing in this respect from political and ecclesiastical quarrels. Theirs is a sphere of competition where no local jealousies or sectional interests, or political rivalry, can array them against each other, or embitter their feelings. Such a harmonious fellowship, often



ripening into durable friendship, between men of high standing and prevailing influence, in every section of our country, cannot but have a happy effect upon the peace and stability of the American Union itself.

The younger members of the Association have immense advantages over the older, and that not merely because they have a longer time to enjoy its privileges; they start from a higher level; they have far more incentives for cultivating the spirit of research; and they have before them higher models of excellence, than their elder brethren had at the same period of life. Their seniors regard them with no feelings of jealousy, but having in many instances, been their teachers, they rather exult in the prospects of eminence which their pupils promise to attain, as what will constitute no small part of their own reward and future honor, in having contributed to develop the intellectual powers, and having given the earliest impulse and direction to the genius of those who have grown "wiser than their teachers are." It may now reasonably be expected that our youthful aspirants after scientific reputation, will cultivate their powers of invention and research, and become adepts in science, in a higher degree than their fathers and teachers have done; and though the models before them among the older members, may still be comparatively few, yet there are not wanting in the ranks of the American Association, some who may for the present worthily satisfy their ambition, although their motto may be, and ought to be, *EXCELSIOR*.

We have seen that the object of the American Association is a very simple one,—the *advancement* of science. No one, therefore, ought to trespass on its time, during its sessions, with either historical details, or the rehearsal of things long known. Indeed, we think, the closer the Association adheres to its own simple object, the better; that no vote ought to be taken either of censure or praise upon any paper read; and least of all, that a spirit of laudation of one member toward another should be indulged in, neither self-glorification, nor the glorification of each other, being compatible with the avowed object of the institution.

With these exalted views of what the American Association for the Advancement of Science, has done, and is doing for the cause of science, and for the promotion of our scientific standing among the nations of the earth, we think there are a few temptations growing out of it, against which such of its members as have charge of the education of the youth of our country, ought sedulously to guard. Such an institution has some tendency to sink the relative standing of the *educator* in comparison with the *investigator*, attaching as it does so



much more importance to the discovery and promulgation of new truths, than to the dissemination of what is old; whereas the truths which an instructor of youth is bound to teach, are mostly such as have long been known, to which those recently discovered commonly bear but a small proportion, either in number or importance. Moreover, the teacher who gives himself to researches after what is new, is in danger of losing his interest in his appropriate duties,—the exciting nature of discovery itself, and the love of fame usually associated with it, creating a distaste for the “beggerly elements,” and a fastidiousness in reiterating from year to year the same beaten path. The reputation which, in such a body, attaches to the discovery of new truths, has some tendency no doubt, to throw the most eminent instructors of youth into the shade, and to place higher on the rolls of fame the naturalist, who has added a new plant or insect to the catalogue, than the teacher who has trained for his country’s service, a thousand of her youth. No friend, however, of science or of his country, would desire the zeal and progress of the American Association to be less than it is. If it were necessary to provide a safe-guard against the danger of sinking the relative standing of the educator, in comparison with the investigator, we trust it is already found in the *American Association for the Advancement of Education*, an institution more recent in its origin than the other, but destined, we hope, to exert a like happy influence on the public mind and public virtue. If the zeal for investigating new truths, and the love of imparting knowledge, seldom meet in the same individual, yet we do not consider these attributes as incongruous in their nature. The case only implies a happy union of originality with benevolence. The one inspires the teacher with the love of knowledge, and a longing to search out more of what he so highly values; the other, an ardent desire that his pupils should share with him a boon which he himself so dearly prizes.

### XIII. THE POPULAR SCHOOL AND THE TEACHER.

IN ENGLISH LITERATURE.

---

THE character of the school and the teacher at any given period, is to some extent reflected in the popular writings of the day, and is to a still greater extent perpetuated by such representation. As part of the History of Popular Education, we shall republish from time to time in this Journal, not only the elaborate dissertations by the best writers and thinkers of different countries and ages, on the principles and methods of education, but we propose to reproduce the portraitures which have been drawn in prose and verse of the school, the schoolmaster and the schoolmistress, by writers of established reputation—especially in the English language. We shall add a few notes and annotations for the benefit of readers who may not be familiar with the authors quoted, or the names and customs referred to.

THOMAS FULLER, D. D. 1608—1661.

DR. THOMAS FULLER was the son of a clergyman in Aldwinkle in Northamptonshire, where he was born in 1608,—was educated at Queen's College, Cambridge,—preached in London,—published his *History of the Holy War* in 1640, his *Holy State* in 1642, his *Good Thoughts in Bad Times* in 1645, and his *Church History* in 1656,—and died in 1661. His *Worthies of England*, the labor of many years and a fund of biographical information, was not printed till after his death. His writings are full of learning, composed in a quaint and witty style, and abound in admirable maxims characterized by sagacity and good sense, and expressed in language always pithy, and frequently irresistibly humorous. His *Holy and Profane States* contain beautifully drawn characters, of which the following is an admirable specimen.

#### THE GOOD SCHOOLMASTER.

THERE is scarce any profession in the commonwealth more necessary, which is so slightly performed. The reasons whereof, I conceive to be these: first, young scholars make this calling their refuge, yea, perchance before they have taken any degree in the University, commence schoolmasters in the country, as if nothing else were required to set up this profession but only a rod and a ferula. Secondly, others, who are able, use it only as a passage to better preferment, to patch the rents in their present fortune, till they can provide a new one, and betake themselves to some more gainful calling. Thirdly, they are disheartened from doing their best with the miserable reward which in some places they receive, being masters to the children, and slaves to their parents. Fourthly, being grown rich, they grow negligent, and scorn to touch the school, but by the proxy of an usher. But see how well our schoolmaster behaves himself.

His genius inclines him with delight to his profession. Some men had as lief be schoolboys as schoolmasters, to be tied to the school, as Cooper's dictionary and Scapula's lexicon are chained\* to the desk therein; and though great scholars, and skillful in other arts, are bunglers in this: but God of his goodness hath fitted several men for several callings, that the necessity of church and state in all conditions may be provided for. So that he who beholds the fabric thereof may say, "God hewed out this stone, and appointed it to lie in this very place, for it would fit none other so well, and here it doth most excellent." And thus God mouldeth some for a schoolmaster's life, undertaking it with desire and delight, and discharging it with dexterity and happy success.

He studieth his scholars' natures as carefully as they their books; and ranks their dispositions into several forms. And though it may seem difficult for him in a great school to descend to all particulars, yet experienced schoolmasters may quickly make a grammar of boys' natures, and reduce them all, saving some few exceptions, to these general rules.

1. Those that are ingenious and industrious. The conjunction of two such planets in a youth presage much good unto him. To such a lad a frown may be a whipping, and a whipping a death; yea, where their master whips them once, shame whips them all the week after. Such natures he useth with all gentleness.

2. Those that are ingenious and idle. These think, with the hare in the fable, that running with snails (so they count the rest of their schoolfellows) they shall come soon enough to the post, though sleeping a good while before their starting. Oh, a good rod would finely take them napping.

3. Those that are dull and diligent. Wines, the stronger they be, the more lees they have when they are new. Many boys are muddy-headed till they be clarified with age, and such afterward prove the best. Bristol diamonds† are both bright and square and pointed by nature, and yet are soft and worthless; whereas, Orient ones in India are rough and rugged naturally. Hard, rugged and dull natures of youth acquit themselves afterward the jewels of the country, and therefore their dullness at first is to be borne with, if they be diligent. That schoolmaster deserves to be beaten himself, who beats nature in a boy for a fault. And I question whether all the whipping in the world can make their parts, which are naturally sluggish, rise one minute before the hour nature hath appointed.

4. Those that are invincibly dull and negligent also. Correction may reform the latter, not amend the former. All the whetting in the world can never set a razor's edge on that which hath no steel in it. Such boys he consigneth over to other professions. Shipwrights and boatmakers will choose those crooked pieces of timber, which other carpenters refuse. Those may make excellent merchants and mechanics which will not serve for scholars.

He is able, diligent, and methodical in his teaching; not leading them rather in a circle than forward. He minces his precepts for children to swallow, hanging clogs on the nimbleness of his own soul, that his scholars may go along with him.

He is, and will be known to be an absolute monarch in his school. If cockering mothers proffer him money to purchase their sons an exemption from his rod, (to live as it were in a peculiar, out of their master's jurisdiction,) with disdain he refuseth it, and scorns the late custom in some places of commuting whipping into money, and ransoming boys from the rod at a set price. If he hath a stubborn youth, correction-proof, he debaseth not his authority by contesting with him, but fairly, if he can, puts him away before his obstinacy hath infected others.

He is moderate in inflicting deserved correction. Many a schoolmaster better answereth the name *παιδορπίβης*‡ than *παιδαγωγός*,§ rather tearing his scholars' flesh with whipping, than giving them good education. No wonder

\* The practice of chaining the Dictionary to the master's desk, to be there consulted, existed in the early Grammar Schools of this country. See *Parker's History of the Free School of Roxbury*.

† BRISTOL DIAMONDS are small and brilliant crystals of quartz found in the vicinity of Bristol, England, and occasionally used for ornamental purposes. *Brande*.

‡ *παιδορπίβης*—a teacher of wrestling or gymnastics. *παιδαγωγός*—strictly the slave who went with a boy from home to school and the gymnasium—but used to designate one who teaches and trains boys.

if his scholars hate the muses, being presented unto them in the shape of fiends and furies. Junius\* complains "de insolenti carnificina" of his schoolmaster, by whom "conscindebatur flagris septies aut octies in dies singulos." Yea, hear the lamentable verses of poor Tusser in his own life:

"From Paul's I went, to Eton sent,  
To learn straightways the Latin phrase,  
Where fifty-three stripes given to me  
At once I had.

For fault but small, or none at all,  
It came to pass thus beat I was;  
See, Udal,† see the mercy of thee  
To me poor lad."

Such an Orbilius‡ mars more scholars than he makes: their tyranny hath caused many tongues to stammer, which spake plain by nature, and whose stuttering at first was nothing else but fears quavering on their speech at their master's presence; and whose mauling them about their heads hath dulled those who in quickness exceeded their master.

He makes his school free to him, who sues to him "in forma pauperis." And surely learning is the greatest alms that can be given. But he is a beast, who, because the poor scholar can not pay him his wages, pays the scholar in his whipping. Rather are diligent lads to be encouraged with all excitements to learning. This minds me of what I have heard concerning Mr. Bust, that worthy late schoolmaster of Eton, who would never suffer any wandering begging scholar (such as justly the statute hath ranked in the forefront of rogues) to come into his school, but would thrust him out with earnestness, (however privately charitable unto him,) lest his schoolboys should be disheartened from their books, by seeing some scholars, after their studying in the University, preferred to beggary.

He spoils not a good school to make thereof a bad college, therein to teach his scholars logic. For besides that logic may have an action of trespass against grammar for encroaching on her liberties, syllogisms are solecisms taught in the school, and oftentimes they are forced afterward in the University to unlearn the fumbling skill they had before.

Out of his school he is no whit pedantical in carriage or discourse; contenting himself to be rich in Latin, though he doth not jingle with it in every company wherein he comes.

To conclude, let this amongst other motives make schoolmasters careful in their place, that the eminencies of their scholars have commended the memories of their schoolmasters to posterity, who otherwise in obscurity had altogether been forgotten. Who had ever heard of R. Bond, in Lancashire, but for the breeding of learned Ascham, his scholar? or of Hartgrave, in Brundly school,

\* FRANCIS JUNIUS, who died in 1602, professor of divinity at Leyden, whose autobiography contains brief notices of his school and schoolmasters—is probably referred to. He was the author of *Commentaries*, *Hebrew Lexicon*, *Translations of the Scriptures*, etc.

† NICHOLAS UDAL, Head Master of Eton College, from 1530 to 1555, and of Westminster from 1555 to 1564, through the Schoolmaster of Roger Ascham, and Thomas Tusser's Account of his own life, seems destined to an unenviable immortality for his flogging propensities. He was born in Hampshire in 1506, educated at Oxford, and died in 1564. He was the author of a "Moral play" entitled *Ralph Royster Doyster*.

‡ ORBILIUS PUPILLUS, was a native of Beneventum, where having received a good education, served as a soldier in Macedonia, taught for some time in his native place, until in the consulship of Cicero, B. C. 63, he removed to Rome and opened a school, which was attended by Horace, who seems to have carried away with him a stinging remembrance of his flogging propensities, and for which he has made him infamous to all time. In his Epistle to Augustus, [Ep. 11. 1, 70.] he calls him *plagosum*—fond of flogging. Suetonius in his *Liber de Illustribus Grammaticis* describes Orbilius in these words: *Fuit autem natura acerba non modo in anti sophistas, quos omni sermone laceravit, sed etiam in discipulos, ut Horatius significat, plagosum eum appellans, et Domitius Marsus scribens:*

*Si quos Orbilius ferula scuticaque cecidet.*

The *ferula*, the general instrument of punishment in school, was the stalk of a reed or cane of that name, in which Prometheus conveyed the spark of fire from heaven. Many teachers act as though they thought some of the divine fire had impregnated the stalk for future use. *Scutica* was a lash, and a more flexible and severe instrument of punishment, like the *raw-hide*, made of untanned leather twisted.

Orbilius lived to be nearly one hundred years old, and must have had a more cheerful temper than Horace gave him credit for. His native city erected a statue to his memory. He is said to have written a book on school-keeping.

in the same county, but because he was the first did teach worthy Doctor Whitaker? nor do I honor the memory of Mulcaster\* for anything so much, as for his scholar, that gulf of learning, Bishop Andrews. This made the Athenians, the day before the great feast of Theseus, their founder, to sacrifice a ram to the memory of Conidas, his schoolmaster that first instructed him.

OLIVER GOLDSMITH. 1728—1774.

We shall have occasion to notice some of the peculiarities in Goldsmith's own education, and of his experience as a teacher in the republication in a future number of his admirable *Essay on Education*, in which he claims to have anticipated some of the suggestions of Rousseau in his *Emilius*. The portraiture in the *Deserted Village*, whether drawn from Irish or English life, are among the classic characters of our language.

THE VILLAGE SCHOOLMASTER.

Beside yon straggling fence that skirts the way  
With blossom furze unprofitably gay,  
There, in his noisy mansion skill'd to rule,  
The village master taught his little school  
A man severe he was, and stern to view;  
I knew him well, and every truant knew.  
Well had the boding tremblers learned to trace  
The day's disasters in his morning face;  
Full well they laugh'd, with counterfeited glee,  
At all his jokes, for many a joke had he;  
Full well the busy whisper circling round,  
Convey'd the dismal tidings when he frown'd.  
Yet he was kind; or, if severe in aught,  
The love he bore to learning was in fault.  
The village all declared how much he knew:  
'Twas certain he could write and cipher too;  
Lands he could measure, terms and tides presage;  
And e'en the story ran that he could gauge.  
In arguing too the parson own'd his skill,  
For e'en tho' vanquished, he could argue still;  
While words of learned length, and thund'ring sound  
Amaz'd the gazing rustics rang'd around;  
And still they gaz'd; and still the wonder grew,  
That one small head could carry all he knew  
But past is all his fame; the very spot  
Where many a time he triumph'd, is forgot.

JAMES DELILLE, 1738—1813.

JAMES DELILLE, was born in Auvignon, in 1733, educated in Paris, and made Professor at Amiens, in 1760, and afterward in Paris,—

---

\* RICHARD MULCASTER was born at Carlisle, educated at Eton under Udal, and at King's College, Cambridge, and Christ Church, Oxford,—commenced teaching in 1559, and appointed first master of Merchant Tailors' School in 1561, where he served till 1596, when he was made upper master of St. Paul's school,—died in 1611. He was a severe disciplinarian, but received many marks of grateful respect from his pupils, when they came of age and reflected on his fidelity and care. He was a good Latin, Greek, and Oriental scholar. His Latin verses spoken on the occasion of one of Queen Elizabeth's visits to Kenilworth Castle, are considered favorable specimens of his Latinity. He made a contribution to the literature of his profession, under the title of—"*Positions, wherein those primitive Circumstances be considered which are necessary for the training up of children, either for Skill in their books, or Health in their Bodies.*" London, 1581."

translated Virgil's *Georgics* into French verse, and afterward composed an original work of the same character, entitled *Jardins*. Driven from France by the revolutionary outbreak, he afterward resided in Switzerland and Germany. In 1792, he published the *Country Gentlemen*, (*Homme des Champs*), a poem in five cantos, in which he depicts country life in various characters and aspects—and among others, that of the school and the schoolmaster. We copy the last in an English translation by John Maunde. Some of the finest strokes are borrowed from Goldsmith's picture—unless both are copied from the same original. He died in 1813.

## THE VILLAGE SCHOOLMASTER.

Descend, my muse, nor yet debate thy strain,  
And paint the pedant of the village train.  
Nor that suffice, but let thy prudent lay  
Attach due honor to his useful sway.  
He comes at length in consequential state,  
And self-importance marks his solemn gait.  
Read, write, and count, 'tis certain he can do ;  
Instruct at school, and sing at chapel too ;  
Foresee the changing moon and tempest dread,  
And e'en in Latin once some progress made :  
In learned disputes still firm and valiant found,  
Though vanquished, still he scorns to quit the ground ;  
Whilst, wisely used to gather time and strength,  
His crabbed words prolong their laggard length.  
The rustic gaze around, and scarce suppose  
That one poor brain could carry all he knows.  
But in his school, to each neglect severe,  
So much to him is learning's progress dear,  
Comes he ? Upon his smooth, or ruffled brow,  
His infant tribe their destiny may know.  
He nods, they part ; again, and they assemble :  
Smiles, if he laughs ; and if he frowns, they tremble.  
He soothes, or menaces, as best befits,  
And now chastises, or he now acquits.  
E'en when away, his wary subjects fear,  
Lest the unseen bird should whisper in his ear  
Who laughs, or talks, or slumbers o'er his book,  
Or from what hand the ball his visage struck.

Nor distant far the birch is seen to rise—  
The birch, that heeds not their imploring cries.  
If chance the breeze its boughs should lightly shake  
With pale affright the puny urchins quake.  
Thus, gentle Chanonat, beside thy bed,  
I've touched that tree, my childhood's friend and dread ;—  
That willow-tree, whose tributary spray  
Amid my stern pedant with his sceptered sway.  
Such is the master of the village-school :  
Be it thy care to dignify his rule.  
The wise man learns each rank to appreciate ;  
But fools alone despise the humbler state.

In spite of pride, in office, great or low,  
 Be modest one, and one importance know,  
 Be by himself his post an honor deemed ;  
 He must esteem himself to be esteemed.

ROBERT LLOYD, 1733—1764.

ROBERT LLOYD was born in London in 1733. His father under-master at Westminster School, and after completing his education at Cambridge, became usher under his father, without bringing to the work that moral fitness and love for teaching, without which becomes intolerable drudgery. He soon left the occupation in disgust and tried to earn a subsistence by his pen. He died poor in 1764.

A SCHOOL USHER.

Were I at once empowered to show  
 My utmost vengeance on my foe,  
 To punish with extremest vigor,  
 I should inflict no penance bigger,  
 Than, using him as learnings' tool,  
 To make him usher in a school.  
 For, not to dwell upon the toil  
 Of working on a barren soil,  
 And laboring with incessant pains  
 To cultivate a blockhead's brains,  
 The duties there but ill-befit,  
 The love of letters arts or wit.

For one, it hurts me to the soul,  
 To brook confinement or control ;  
 Still to be pinioned down to teach  
 The syntax and the parts of speech ;  
 Or perhaps what is drudgery worse,  
 The links and points, and rules of verse :  
 To deal out authors by retail,  
 Like penny pots of Oxford ale ;  
 Oh'tis a service irksome more,  
 Then tugging at a slavish oar !  
 Yet such his task a dismal truth,  
 Who watches o'er the bent of youth,  
 And while a paltry stipend earning,  
 He sows the richest seeds of learning,  
 And tills their minds with proper care,  
 And sees them then due produce bear ;  
 No joys, alas ! his toil beguiles,  
 His own is fallow all the while.  
 " Yet still he's on the road, you say,  
 Of learning." Why, perhaps he may ;  
 But turns like horses in a mill,  
 Nor getting on nor standing still ;  
 For little way his learning reaches,  
 Who reads no more than what he teaches.

## XIV. REQUIREMENTS IN A LEXICOGRAPHER OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE.\*

BY ISAIAH DOLE, M. A.,

Instructor in Languages in the Maine Female Seminary.

---

To examine a quarto dictionary with thoroughness sufficient to gauge its merits is an undertaking of no inconsiderable magnitude and daring. It involves far more than that knowledge of excellence and defects, which is gained by a cursory turning of leaves, or by casual reference. It is achieved in no such excitement of mind as that which sets periods ablaze, and electrifies audiences. Rather, all such frenzy precludes any just judgment; is utterly inconsistent with that careful comparison and close discrimination which only can avail here. Neither does eminence in any single department, or even in several distinct fields of knowledge, entitle a man to stand as a judge in lexicography without question of his claims. Has one man in a hundred thousand compared the definitions of twenty important words with the usage of standard authors in the successive periods of our literature? Does one man in a hundred thousand seek to gain an orderly knowledge of the entire usage of words that have been variously applied? How many ever think of the relations of different significations? How many have any distinct notion of the principles that are to determine the reception or the rejection of words? Certainly not all of the dictionary-makers themselves. How can men judge of a dictionary when they have no conception of its true domain? As is a barbarian's estimate of the comforts of life, so is most men's conception of what a dictionary should be. As you civilize the barbarian, what he knew not of yesterday he finds indispensable to-day; as the reader and the student attain more discrimination, the helps that resolve their doubts to-day will fail them to-morrow, when they shall have nicer points to settle, and their interest shall be aroused to attain to fuller and more perfect knowledge.

The absolute value of a dictionary is in proportion to the accuracy and fulness with which it exhibits the forms and uses of words for the entire period of their constituting an integral part of the language.

---

\* An American Dictionary of the English Language. By Noah Webster, LL.D. Revised and Enlarged by Chauncey A. Goodrich, Professor in Yale College.



But, for ordinary purposes, the value of a dictionary of a living tongue is measured by the truthfulness with which it represents, in the garb that usage approves, all that is now vital, together with such dead words and cast-off forms as are embalmed in what the present generation agree to call *Standard Literature*. In regard to the forms of words or orthography, our dictionaries have already approximated very nearly to perfection. Many innovations have found almost universal favor; and recent editions of those very books in which others were proposed, have receded in great part; so that the remaining difference is comparatively insignificant; each, with few exceptions, accurately representing present usage, as well in cases of diversity as of uniformity. This matter has been agitated so long, and sifted so thoroughly, that it is not worth while now to state more than the result. And there will be little cause for change hereafter. The orthography of the language is, in the main, established for all coming time. In regard to the origin, and, more especially, the use of words, much has been done; but how much remains to be done! The most efficient laborer in the sphere of definition has been Johnson; and, since him, Webster has added the most abundant contributions; and Richardson has gathered a mass of citations of inestimable value to the lexicographer who shall know how to use them.

The qualifications which he must possess who shall prepare a dictionary to satisfy the coming age, such a work as even now would be appreciated to a considerable extent, and cause existing dictionaries to be stowed away as worthless rubbish, can be expressed in a single sentence. The *English Lexicographer* must have grown up into the language, have become identified with it, must be discriminatingly cognizant of his intellections, and able to present them accurately and fully in their natural order. His heart must beat sympathetically, whenever he meets idiomatic ease and simple grace, and modest adornment, and purity of diction. He must sensitively recoil, as if violence were done to himself, when he meets uncouth and barbarous terms, or words misapplied, or false rhetoric, or perverse logic. His instant feeling must recognize what belongs to the vital organization of the language, and what it regards as incapable of assimilation, and what in its growth it has cast off, henceforth inert and dead. He must be acquainted with the origin and history of words so far as to be able to trace ordinarily the usages of each to their common base. This implies the knowledge of the etymon, which must be analyzed and traced as far back as more radical significations will shed light even darkly upon it. The usages of words must be arranged orderly, defined distinctly, and illustrated appropriately. *Orderly arrangement*

demands that the most radical signification should be placed first; that, if there are corresponding tropical and metonymical usages, these should follow in order; that, if there are secondary literal usages, with their subordinate tropes, these should be again grouped in like manner. A plan of notation and a style of printing may be adopted, such that the relations of each definition shall be as obvious as is the local relation of one of the states in a colored map of New England. *Distinct definition* requires, that, instead of the loose practice of heaping together synonymes, sometimes, too, so remote as to represent a widely different idea, the embodied conception shall be set forth with the utmost exactness of outline, in nothing exceeding, and by nothing falling short. It avails not to say that such nicety of distinction will be neither appreciated nor understood. There are already those who demand nothing less; those who look for the perfection of what they seek, although they may disregard all definitions but the one that interests them for the moment; and those who might find the definition not wholly intelligible, would, in most cases, still approximate nearer the truth than if they had consulted a more imperfect definition. *Appropriate illustration* is but examples of use drawn from good authors.

That identification of the language that I have spoken of will be further manifested in marking with its true character every word and usage. The living and the dead, the common and the technical, the elegant and the vulgar, that which is of natural growth and the monstrosities that were coined aptly for the occasion or have been wantonly introduced by whatever names of note, will all be shown in their true character. This may now be derided as an impracticable fancy or an idle dream. It may not be realized this half century, but preparation for an advance is making. The conditions which shall insure a high degree of success will at length be met: the patience to sit down to a life-long work; the iron diligence; the nice perception, the power to represent accurately and clearly its results; familiarity with English literature from the beginning; the tact to glance over wide and diverse fields of labor, and seize upon whatever can be turned to account; a hearty recognition of the merits of every co-laborer, but the acknowledgment of no man as master; no vain assumption of dictatorship in language, a modest offer only to serve as interpreter.

Dr. Webster's great merits as a lexicographer are cheerfully conceded. Indeed, the American who is not proud of him must be wanting in patriotism. What he accomplished, in spite of difficulties and discouragements, and without philological culture adequate to his task, will ever remain a wonder. But to maintain that he left noth-

ing to be done is quite absurd. A review of his dictionary would abundantly show this. An exhibition of its defects and a summary of its errors would startle many a one who consults it with the comfortable persuasion of its infallibility. It would appear, that, whilst on his etymological plan he has reflected a flood of light back upon the dark domain of primary significations, yet his principles were not thoroughly scientific; that he unduly trusted to literal correspondences, and so far neglected historic investigations that in many cases his conclusions are false; and that in many other cases undue space is occupied with crude speculations. It would be seen, that in a multitude of cases he does not commence with the radical meaning; that in a vastly greater number of cases he neglects any imaginable order of definitions, whether it were to be deduced from the genetical relation of ideas, or the period of their development. Not that herein he is an offender above all other men, for in some of our dictionaries utter confusion reigns; but, in orderly arrangement, Freund's Latin Lexicon is incomparably superior. A thorough examination would show, too, that whilst Webster has corrected many of Johnson's blunders, those remaining are not few; that he, as well as Johnson, is exceedingly prone to attempt a distinction where a difference does not exist, attaching to the word defined an element not belonging thereto, but rather expressed by connected words; that less frequently he overlooks a distinction; that he sadly fails in drawing accurate distinctions, throwing back the inquirer upon his own reflections, or, at best, but furnishing aid, in an accumulation of definitions, towards reaching the desired result; and that many usages are quite neglected.\* But, whilst there was a full exhibition of imperfections, nothing would be detracted from his painfully-earned meed of praise. To the character of a review the present essay lays no claim; but it is not without an equal object, as I hope will appear in the issue. I simply propose to criticize a few pages of the dictionary, only pro-

---

\* I have said nothing above of the deficiency or the redundancy of the vocabulary. It was no part of Webster's plan to afford sufficient help to the reader of old books. It seems to me desirable that a first-class dictionary should have in its leading vocabulary those words that in all or in part of their usages belong to the present life of the language, and those only; that obsolete and dialectic words and variations of form should constitute a second vocabulary; and words solely technical, a third. Mere Latinisms and barbarisms that never came into established use, and scientific terms, whilst still candidates for adoption, should be rigidly excluded except in those instances where their interpretation is essential to the understanding of some passage in a standard author. Of modern words, Webster was industrious in the collection; and, in discrimination in their admission, compares favorably with other word-gatherers. Some well-authorized words remain to be gleaned, as an occasional fruitless search testifies; but the aggregate cannot be large. The failure of all (?) the modern dictionaries to introduce *diffuseness*, which has supplanted the older *diffusiveness* in its rhetorical sense, is quite as noticable as the omission of *ocean* in the first edition of Johnson's dictionary.

ceeding far enough to satisfy the reader that I have not been speaking at random, and to present one or more instances of such faults as I have observed. I know not that it makes any difference what portion I select. By accident I take the commencement of the letter D. I shall notice whatever seems to require amendment.

The first word is *Dab*, and its first definition, which is credited to Bailey, is, "to strike gently with the hand." It is admitted that the word suggests the use of the hand, and so does *to whip*, as that also expresses an action hardly possible without hands; but, nevertheless, the specific means is not an element in the signification of the word; for, if so,—as one may dab another with the shovel or the poker (the illustrations but accord with the word), or as one may be dabbed like St. Paul "in the necke" with the "aungell of Sathan, the pricke of the fleshe," as Sir T. More has it, or, as another was, "in the mouth with a broken sword,"—there would be required as many different definitions as there are different means, an inconvenient number, truly. The definitions, "to slap, to box," intended to be synonymous, are nearer the mark. — Webster's second definition, borrowed from Johnson, is "to strike gently with some soft or moist substance." Here again the means is added to the signification of the word. *Dab* has really but one meaning, which is, to *strike suddenly*; but, as it is applied to any degree of violence down to a mere touch, there should be added the qualification, "either violently or softly," or perhaps a second definition might be given, "to tap gently."

The noun *Dab* is defined, first, "a gentle blow with the hand." Again the means is added, which does not belong to the word. Neither is it necessarily a *gentle* blow. It should be "a quick or sudden blow."—The second definition is "a small lump of anything, soft or moist." Then, if a dab of dough becomes dry and hard, of course it is no longer a dab. The definition would be better, "a small lump: properly, one formed by dipping or moistening."—The third definition, "something moist or slimy thrown on one," is superfluous. It was no less a dab before it was thrown.

I need not repeat the same criticisms on "*Dabbed*, struck with something moist," and "*Dabbing*, striking gently with something moist," but will only say it is hard to see why the qualification "gently" is introduced in the one case, and not in the other.

Webster's etymology of *Dabble* is "Heb. *tabal*, or from the root of *dip*, Gothic *daupyan*, Belgic *dabben* or *dabbelen*. See *DIP*." There is not absolute error here, but the precise fact is that *dabble* is a diminutive of *dab*, corresponding with the Dutch *dabbelen*. The *Maeso-Gothic daupjan*, in the Gothic languages the oldest known

form of this whole class, should have been given not with *dabble* but with *dab*, and it is properly repeated with *dip*. It does not, however, illustrate the original use of the etymon, for its preserved application is the restricted meaning "to baptize;" precisely the same departure from the primitive sense that some modern forms exhibit.

It must be carefully observed that Dr. Webster makes a distinction between affinity and the possession of a common origin. The exact character of this distinction will be evident by an illustration. Suppose that, in the lapse of ages, a common climate and a common diet had produced a likeness of physical characteristics between two species of animals, and that there were instances of individuals conforming outwardly more with the other race than with their own, and all this without any mingling of blood; they would be *akin*, or an *affinity* would exist between them, notwithstanding their origin was entirely distinct. *Affinity* is, with Dr. Webster, mere physical resemblance or literal coincidence. The only possible interpretation of many of his remarks shows this. The words I have begun to criticize will furnish an example. Says Dr. Webster, Introduction, p. lxxiii. :

"The governing principles of etymology are, *first*, the identity of radical letters, or a coincidence of cognates, in different languages; no affinity being admissible except among words whose primary consonants are articulations of the same organ.

"*Second*. Words in different languages are not to be considered as proceeding from the same radix, unless they have the same signification, or one closely allied to, or naturally deducible from, it."

These principles have the aspect of being purely restrictive. To the first thus considered, there can be offered no objection. But in its application Dr. Webster shows that he means to include the complementary propositions, that all words having the same radical letters in different languages, and much more in the same language, are, therefore, *akin* to each other; and that there are words thus *akin*, which do not have a common origin.

To Webster's second principle it is possible, with sufficient ingenuity, to attach a true meaning. Could we be thoroughly acquainted with a whole train of antecedents and consequents, and fully comprehend all their relations, we should see that the peculiar character of the last of the series is "naturally deducible from its radix." Could we be admitted into all the arcana of nature, we should no longer feel surprise at the peculiar characteristics of any of her productions; and yet we do constantly observe diverse appearances in the same individual object; so that, if our judgments of the existence or non-existence of identity or affinity were to be determined solely by similarity or

dissimilarity of physical constitution, they would not rarely prove incorrect. Webster, indeed, appends these remarks, hardly tending to the same effect. He says: "And on this point much knowledge of the primary sense of words, and of the manner in which collateral senses have sprung from one radical idea, is necessary to secure the inquirer from mistakes. A competent knowledge of this branch of etymology cannot be obtained from any one, or from two or three languages. It is almost literally true, that, in examining more than twenty languages, I have found *each* language to throw some light on *every other*." Webster looks not beyond a comparison of vocabularies. He is obliged to rely upon imperfect, and often erroneous definitions. No acquaintance with the literature of most of the affiliated languages clears up the darkness amid which he is forced to grope. The obvious sense of Webster's second principle, and its intended sense as shown in the etymologies, is, "A word, bearing a signification so remote from its supposed radix as not to be easily deducible from it, is not to be regarded as proceeding from it." Taken as a principle in cases of doubt, it is of great value. It enables us to form an opinion probably true where there is no other ground for judgment; but this is all. The successive changes of the radical idea may be so great that the derived sense is by no means obviously deducible from the radical meaning; and, again, there may be an identity of elements and a sufficient resemblance of meaning to make an identity of origin very plausible, whilst there is no affinity, employing the term in its proper sense to denote sameness of origin. I repeat, that identity of existing elements—and in a mere comparison of vocabularies, existing elements cannot be distinguished from *radical* elements—identity of existing elements in two words, and closely allied meanings combined, do not constitute a safe proof of affinity, whilst, in the absence of opposing testimony, they do amount to a high degree of probability. Dr. Webster's error is in assuming this probability as proof; and his weakness is in his scanty knowledge of the historical connection of different forms. The only sure ground to rest upon is a thorough investigation of the history of words, and the deduction of the specific laws of change in the several varieties of condition. The general laws of change Webster was acquainted with; and he was undoubtedly correct in the vast majority of inferences that he drew from a comparison of vocabularies.

To return from a consideration of principles to their application, as examples shall serve us. As the etymon of *dab*, Webster gives Fr. *dauber*, adding "or from the same root. It has the elements of *dip*, *dub*, and *tap*, Gr. *τύπτω*, and of *daub*." This last statement will in

itself admit of two interpretations; *first*, these several words are but different fashionings or mouldings of the same identical elements,—elements separately inorganic, lifeless, worthless matter, having a living existence, a vital power only in union, together constituting a unit; and that all these fashionings are one and the same entity; *secondly*, each element is an independent existence, with a power of its own, uniting in various modes with other elements; and that each mode or act of combination constitutes a distinct word,—distinct, not only in being henceforth an entity by itself, but distinct in not owing its genesis to any other word. The first interpretation is not the sense intended by Dr. Webster; for, after declaring identity of elements, he intimates doubt of a common origin, or membership, in the same family; for, to go no further for proof, identity of elements between *dip* and *tap* is here asserted; but, in giving the etymology of *dip*, the Gr. *τύπτω*, Eng. *tap*, is only doubtfully claimed “to be of the same family,” and apparently for the sole reason that its signification is, in Dr. Webster’s view, not quite near enough to demonstrate identity of origin. And, if Dr. Webster is in doubt of the identity of *dip* and *tap*, whilst he does claim for them identity of elements, he cannot be thought to maintain that *dab* and *dip* are identical, when he simply asserts identity of elements. Let it be distinctly noticed that the French *dauber* is the only word that he claims to be from the same root; and we see the reason in his second rule, for he found in his French dictionaries *dauber* defined “to strike with the hand,” or in equivalent phrase; and this alone of the words compared seemed sufficiently allied in signification with *dab* “to be considered as proceeding from the same radix.” We are, therefore, forced to accept the second interpretation, an interpretation which supposes a theory of language unphilosophical and baseless,—unphilosophical and baseless, because inconsistent with the history of man and the functions of his intellect. Certain theorizers do not seem to comprehend that words are but the bodies of ideas and their relations; and the sum of the independent powers of the elementary sounds of a word is no more the word itself, than the aggregate of the properties of its various elementary particles is the living human body; that a word, in its functions, is as distinct from mere sound, as is an animate body from mere matter; and that the life which they each have, is not of themselves, but is given unto them. It is not denied that certain sounds have a superior fitness for the expression of certain classes of ideas; but it is an analogous truth that the vital power selects only definite kinds of matter for the constituent elements of the diverse parts of the human organization. With such theorizers Dr. Webster’s account of the origin of



language, in his Introduction, does not seem to harmonize; and yet this doctrine of the identity of elements is in agreement with their views, in which case it is to be rejected. If any one deny that such is the doctrine, if he have logic enough left, he may see that this denial takes from the doctrine what little of significance it might have had before. In either case, the insertion of words identical in elements, but of different families, is of no advantage, and but uselessly swells the size of the book.

Had Dr. Webster boldly asserted the identity of *dab*, *dub*, *dib*, *dip*, *dape*, *dive*, &c., his position could not be successfully attacked. In the several ideas, as in the words, nothing is discernible but the same substance differently moulded; mere variations of mode, not distinct existences. One evidence of the identity of *dab* with *dip* is found in the several appellations of a water-fowl; "the diving *dob-chick*," *dab-chick*, *dip-chick*, *didapper*, and *dive-dapper*. Another is found in the uses of its diminutive *dabble*, which Webster regards as of a common origin with *dip*. That it is a diminutive in reality as well as in form becomes evident in considering its use, whether the child in years is spoken of as *dabbling* in water, or the child in wisdom as *dabbling* in metaphysics.

*Dabble*, *v. i.*, has for its second definition, "to do anything in a slight or superficial manner; to tamper; to touch here and there." Two distinct uses are here given as one,—a mistake of Johnson. "To do anything in a slight or superficial manner," or perhaps better, *to make slight essays at something*, as Walpole affirmed that a certain painter "*dabbled* in poetry too," is one thing; and, "to tamper," or *make impertinent charges*, as when Atterbury charged Pope with *dabbling* with the text of Shakspeare, is quite another. Webster quotes from Atterbury to illustrate this usage, overlooking the fact that the first member of the definition is not synonymous with the others. He adds, as a third definition, "to meddle; to dip into a concern;" showing at once the lack of precision, clearness and purity of expression. The expression is different from the first member of the preceding definition, but the distinct idea to be defined is not apparent.

Webster gives the participle *dabbling*, but not *dabbled*. To give either participle with a repetition of definitions is alike useless, or if with only a small portion of the definitions, as is sometimes done, is worse than useless. Webster's is not the only dictionary that might thus be pruned of thousands of articles with gain. When a true adjective arises out of a participle, as *noted* (*e. g.*, a *noted* character), it should be given as an adjective, with an enumeration of its senses as such.



Dr. Webster proposes as the derivative of *Dabster*, "Qu. from *adapt*, with *ster*, Sax. *steoran*, to steer." Is it conceivable that a term of common life exclusively, should have arisen from a root belonging to a learned language, and scarcely used except by persons of some reading, with the addition of a very rare suffix from another dead tongue? To say nothing of the improbable modification of the Latin element, where can a well-authenticated instance of hybridism parallel with this be found? Conjectures are not to be excluded from etymology. Indeed, in this domain, without conjecture a large amount of what is probably true cannot be reached. But the etymologist must first establish his principles by historic investigation; and cases that he can neither refer to a principle, nor adduce evidence for their supposed anomalous changes, he must leave, however reluctantly. And he will sometimes be wrong, when his conjectures accord with established principles. In this department, principles—the principles I now mean of literal changes and equivalents—in many cases only show that a relation may exist, whilst in particular instances the history of a term proves the possible relation does not exist, so that some of the best conclusions of to-day, resting on mere probabilities, may be overthrown by some discovery to-morrow. But this conjecture of Dr. Webster has the support of no principle; is a bare forced derivation, and far from being an evidence of a happy gift of divination. He would have done better, as in the case of *tapster* and *punster*, to have said nothing. The plausibility or the probability of the following conjecture is left to any that are disposed to consider it. The *st* may be of merely accidental insertion,—such insertion of insignificant letters dialectically, or for euphony, or by a false analogy, being no unusual thing,—and the whole suffix *ster*, then, simply denotes the agent; and as a *tapster* is one who taps or draws, and a *punster* one who puns, so a *dabster* is one who, by continuing to dab at a thing (*dab* is an intransitive as well as a transitive verb), is able to hit the mark. In these words (and perhaps *teamster* is like them), *ster* is distinct from the suffix in *songster* and *spinster*. *Youngster* is a case different from either.

*Dactylet*, after the example of Todd, is defined simply "a dactyle." Here, and elsewhere, usually, I think, except when it is employed in its primary, physical sense, as in *gosling* and *stripling*, there is an omission to note the peculiar term of expression given by the diminutive form. It seems to me that the peculiar shade imparted to each word, in the case of our few diminutive forms, should be pointed out, whether it is the idea of tenderness, of derision, or of sportiveness, which latter modification is essentially the one here:

“Whoever saw a colt, wanton and wild,  
Yoked with a slow-foot ox on a fallow field,  
Can right areed how handsomely befits  
Dull spondees with the English *dactylets*.”—*Bishop Hall*.

*Dactylist*, quoting Todd again, is defined “one who writes flowing verse.” Instead of being employed in this general sense, *dactylist* denotes a proficient in dactylic versification, and is applied especially to those who compose in Latin and Greek.

“Dr. Johnson prefers the Latin poetry of May and Cowley to that of Milton, and thinks May to be the first of the three. May is certainly a sonorous *dactyl-ist*.”—*Warton*.

In the etymology of *Dactylomancy*, there is an error of no great importance, the giving of Gr. *μαρτιχή* instead of *μαρτία*.

No derivation of *Dade* and *Daddle* is given, though one quite satisfactory can be proposed; nor is their affinity with *tote*, *toddle*, suggested, nor is either of its two intransitive significations noticed, namely:

*First*, the literal sense, to walk as a child just beginning to go alone.

“No sooner taught to *dade* than from their mother trip.”—*Drayton*.

*Secondly*, the figurative sense, to go or move slowly.

“But easily from her source as Isis gently *dades*.”—*Drayton*.

But these omissions are of little importance, as *dade* never obtained more than a local use; and Drayton is the only author adduced by Richardson as employing it.

Of *Daddock* no intimation is given that it is a local word.

The etymology of *Dado* is simply traced to the Italian. Webster did not perceive that the French *dé*, the Provençal *dat*, the Portuguese, Spanish and Italian *dado*, come from the Latin participle *datus*, in its secondary sense of *cast*, *thrown*; and that from the cubical form of the *die* of gaming, the architectural application was drawn. Apparently, he considered the word of Celtic origin. See his etymology of *Die*.

Of *Dædal*, Johnson declares that “skilful is not the true sense, nor should be imitated.” Todd contradicts him, asserting that it “has not only as good authority as can be produced in the language, but is supported also in the same meaning by Tasso.” Webster follows Todd, defining it,

“1. Various; variegated.—*Spenser*.

“2. Skilful.”

There are here two mistakes to be corrected. *First*, if the defi-

nitions are correct, their arrangement is wrong. *Dædal* is derived from the name of the famous architect *Dædalus*, and therefore *skilful* is the primary meaning. *Secondly*, in direct opposition to Johnson, *skilful* is the only true meaning of the word. This is its sense in the very passage that he quotes from Spenser to illustrate the meaning, "various; variegated."

"Then doth the *dædal* earth throw forth to thee  
Out of her fruitful lap abundant flowers."—*Spenser*.

The earth may, indeed, be considered as variegated with flowers, but how much discrimination and taste is requisite to discern that that is not the meaning of the poet; that there is a personification; that the earth is viewed as an artist of wondrous skill, as displayed in her flowery productions? *Dædal* is employed in passages of great beauty from Spenser to Bulwer; and not one is yet found where it bears the sense of "various; variegated." It always means *ingenious, skilful*; but is sometimes applied to the architect in an active sense, and at others to his productions in a passive sense.

For the etymology of *Daff*, *n.*, Webster gives "Icelandic *dauf*, allied to *deaf*." This is so far correct, but Webster probably mistakes in some of the affinities of *deaf*, and certainly in its radical signification, which is not "thick." The words most directly akin are German *taub* and *daub*, senseless; Dutch *daff*, dull; and Swedish *doef*, stupid; all of which, with little doubt, are derived from a verb signifying to *push* or *strike*; so that *daff* radically denotes one who has received a stunning blow, and then, devoid of sense.

*Daff*, to daunt, without any sufficient authority, Webster treats as a distinct word from *daff*, to toss aside. The Scottish *daff* in the different senses,—to be foolish; to make sport; to toy,—is in truth also etymologically identical.

The etymological relation of *Daft* is not given. It is a participial adjective, from the same source as the noun and the verb *daff*. Compare its local English sense, *stupid, silly*, with the signification before assigned to the radix.

If there is a sufficient object in giving with *Daffodil* the corresponding French, Italian, &c., which are mere foreign dialectic variations, it is unpardonable to omit the old English forms consecrated by Milton and Spenser.

"Strew me the ground with *daffadowndillies*,  
And cowslips, and kingcups, and loved lilies."—*Spenser*.

"Bid amaranthus all his beauty shed,  
And *daffodillies* fill their cups with tears,  
To strew the laureat hearse where Lycid lies."—*Milton*.

Webster gives the word *Dag* as if it belonged to three distinct families, and yet its separate senses, and others beside, attached to forms in cognate languages, are all deducible from the one idea, to *penetrate*. The first meaning given is "a dagger," and bearing the same sense, there are D. *dagge* ; Sw. *daggert* ; Fr. *dague* ; Sp. and It. *daga* ; and also Ger. *degen*, with the kindred meaning, a sword. Also the Eng. *dagger* is probably a mere dialectic variation of the same, the *er* being, as sometimes in other branches of the Gothic stock, an insignificant suffix. The next meaning, "a hand-gun ; a pistol," is not separated by Webster from the preceding, so that no remark upon it is required. It is but another modification of the idea of a penetrating power thus to conceive of *dew*, in Swedish *dagg* ; kindred with which is the Danish *taage*, mist. The other meanings, "a loose end" (better, *a shred*), and "a leather latchet," are passive senses, expressing the result of an action, of the kind produced by instruments whose names are from the same root. As intermediate in sense, the A. S. *dag*, anything loose, may be adduced.

Webster, properly enough, says nothing of the etymology of the verb *Dag*, as its identical stem sufficiently indicates its connection with the preceding noun ; but, inconsistently with the treatment of the noun, the significations, "to cut into slips" and "to dabble," are not given in distinct articles. Both the meanings given by Webster, and its local English usage as an intransitive, to *drizzle*, and the significations of corresponding verbs in the languages, are deducible from the radical sense assigned to the stem.

Of *Daggle*, the diminutive of *dag*, Webster says, "probably from *dag*, dew, or its root ;"—one of those instances of doubtful expression so strangely contrasting with his unqualified assertions in respect to things wholly wrapped in the blackness of darkness.

Of *Dais* the etymology is not given, and yet through diverse changes, with various significations, it can be clearly traced back as far as the G. r. *δίζειν*, to throw. (See Diez, *Etymologisches Woerterbuch*.) Dr. Webster, trusting to a comparison of vocabularies, failed to see this origin ; for, had he perceived it, he would have either given it as in the case of *dish* and *desk*, or made a reference as in the case of *disk*, the other words of the same parentage.—*Dais* has had applications varying from those given by Webster.

Of *Dalliance*, and the corresponding intransitive verb *Dally*, Johnson placed the literal signification *delay* last in order. Webster has made the correction in the verb, but in the noun he has carelessly left the signification *delay* in the last place, notwithstanding his explicit statement that it is the literal meaning.

*Dally*, *v. t.*, is defined, “to delay; to defer; to put off; to amuse till a proper opportunity; as, to *dally* off the time. [*Not much used.*] *Knolles*.” But it is altogether probable that *dally* never occurs as a transitive verb; and further, notwithstanding Johnson’s interpretation and Webster’s adoption of it, that the compound verb, to *dally off*, does not mean “to delay,” &c. This definition, as explained by its last member, requires a personal object. Is the sense not rather “to wear away, as with trifles or mere pretexts”?

*Dam*, *n.* is defined,

“A mole, bank, or mound of earth, or any wall, or a frame of wood, raised to obstruct a current of water, and to raise it for the purpose of driving mill-wheels, and for other purposes. Any work that stops or confines water in a pond or basin, or causes it to rise.”

This definition is very wordy, besides not being quite accurate. A dam may be simply for obstructing water without raising it. It is enough to tell what the dam is and does. The final end is not a legitimate part of the definition. If otherwise, it is very carelessly left. The definition, freed from verbiage, might stand, “A mole, bank, or other artificial work, to obstruct or to raise water.”

Of *Dam*, *v. t.*, the first definition is,

“To make a dam, or to stop a stream of water by a bank of earth, or by any other work; to confine or to shut in water. It is common to use, after the verb, *in*, *up*, or *out*; as, to *dam in*, or to *dam up*, the water; and to *dam out* is to prevent water from entering.”

The definition is wanting in directness; and the statement relative to the compound expressions does not tell the exact truth and the whole truth. It should be somewhat in this manner:

To obstruct or to raise water by some artificial work. To *dam up*, is to obstruct a flow; to *dam in*, to confine within certain limits; and to *dam out*, to exclude from certain limits.

The given etymology of *Damage*, *n.*, suggests several remarks of general application; *first*, clearness should be secured; *secondly*, only what is pertinent should be admitted; *thirdly*, the highest utility should be studied. Obviously, then, it is requisite that the relations and the leading use of each word given in tracing the etymology, and the several grades of the descent, both in form and signification, should be indicated. Therefore, words etymologically identical should be given first, and in the order in which their dialects stand to that of the word elucidated. This relation of etymological identity may be conveniently indicated by prefixing the sign of equality. It would

be understood that the leading sense of each word, not specially defined, was the same. Peculiar uses, tending to the end of etymological inquiry, should be specified. The close of the series of etymological equivalents might be indicated by a colon and a dash. The immediate parent of these words should then follow, and then its parent, and so on through as many degrees as are given, each degree being separated by the same sign. No worthy end will ordinarily be served by giving corruptions of parent words. Probable affinities of the remote parent, and doubtful speculations, should be given last; the latter, very sparingly. In regard to *damage*, the Armoric equivalent should be placed first, as that dialect, though not its form of this particular word, is most nearly related to one of the original bases of our tongue. The Romance dialects would follow in this order: Norman French, French; to which might be added Provençal, Spanish, and Italian. The A.S. *dem*; Sp. *daño*; Port. *dano*; It. *danno*, are neither etymological equivalents of *damage*, nor are they its parent; therefore, they should not be given. Thus far no light is thrown on the primary signification; and beyond L. *damnum*, nothing satisfactory can be said; but Webster's suggestion may be allowed to stand. In accordance with the method proposed, the etymology would be given [= Arm. *doumaich*; Nor. Fr. *domage*; Fr. *dommage*; Prov. *damnatge*; Sp. *domage*; It. *damnagio*:—L. *damnum*. This word seems, &c.]

There may occur no better occasion to remark that there is demanded a new treatment of prefixes and suffixes, exhaustive of the forms they undergo, and of their uses. The list of these elements receiving separate treatment should be enlarged. Whether the termination *-age*, which suggests the remark, should be of the number, need not now be discussed. Its full power, something pertaining to the primitive, is seen in *savage*, radically a man of the woods; but *damage* is nearly equivalent in meaning to its primitive.—What is desirable, in respect to change of form, may be illustrated by *Ab*, where it is of more importance to show the modifications of the prefix in our language than its orthography in Dutch, German, and other languages; and, therefore, the following statement should be made. *Ab* becomes *a* before *m* and *v*, and *abs* before *c* and *t*: thus, *ab-solve*, but *a-move*, *a-vert*, and *abs-cond*, *abs-tain*.—I adduce *De* to show that Dr. Webster's exhibition of uses is imperfect. His article is as follows:

“*DE*, a Latin prefix, denotes a moving from, separation, as in *debark*, *decline*, *decease*, *deduct*, *decamp*. Hence it often expresses a negative, as in *derange*. Sometimes it augments the sense, as in *deprave* [this example is not appropriate], *despoil*. It coincides nearly in sense with the Fr. *des*, and L. *dis*.”

The following analysis of its uses is somewhat more exact and full:

**DE.** A Latin preposition employed as a prefix. It denotes,

1. Removal in a downward direction ; down from ; as in *dejected*.
2. Mere removal ; as in *deduct*.
3. Change to an opposite state, condition, or character [in which case it may be denominated *negative*] ; as in *deplete*, *deoxygenize*, *demented*, *deformed*.
4. Extension of an action to the conclusion, or till exhaustion ensues (when it may be called *intensive*) ; as in *decrepitate*.
5. Conversion of an adjective or of a noun into a verb (when it may be termed *causative*) ; as in *debase*, *deprave*, *degrade*.

**NOTE.** In the third use, *de* is nearly equivalent to *dis* ; and these prefixes sometimes appear to be corrupted into each other.

The first definition of *damage* is,

“ Any hurt, injury, or harm to one’s estate ; any loss of property sustained ; any hindrance to the increase of property ; or any obstruction to the success of an enterprise. A man suffers *damage* by the destruction of his corn, by the burning of his house, by the detention of a ship which defeats a profitable [?] voyage, or by the failure of a profitable [?] undertaking. *Damage*, then, is any actual loss, or the prevention of profit. It is usually and properly applied to property, but sometimes to reputation and other things, which are valuable. But, in the latter case, *injury* is more correctly used.”

Now this is rather notes, or an essay towards a definition, than a definition itself. There should be distinguished two usages ; *first*, prejudice to the value or the condition of an object ; as, *damage* done to trees by a hail-storm ; *secondly*, prejudice to some interest of an intelligent agent.

Of *Dame* there is a failure to mark the chronology of its uses with sufficient directness and distinctness ; and much more is implied of the commonness of its employment than is correct. In its more elevated use it is obsolete or poetical ; and in its lower use it is infrequent, and even then chiefly confined to humorous style.

For the same reason that three tropical senses are assigned to the verb *Damp*, there might be three times three, for nearly every different object will admit the substitution of a different verb. And here it may be remarked, that it is an almost universal fault of dictionaries to consider as a sufficient definition the synonyme that in a given case can be substituted, no matter how distinct may be the trope involved in each, no matter if the substituted word is not applicable in half the instances where the word to be defined has one invariable sense. It is this but partial applicability of the terms employed in defining *damp*, namely :

“ 2. To chill ; to deaden ; to depress or deject ; to abate ; as, to *damp* the spirits ; to *damp* the ardor of passion.—*Swift*.

3. To weaken ; to make dull ; as, to *damp* sound.—*Bacon*.

4. To check or restrain, as action or vigor ; to make languid ; to discourage ; as, to *damp* industry.—*Bacon*.”



It is this partial applicability that has increased the number of senses from one to three. The one sense is that most analogous to the applying water to something ardent or burning. In other words, the object is conceived as burning, and water is represented as thrown upon it. In defining, the metaphor is necessarily dropped or changed, but care must be taken to denote the same extent of signification. In this very particular Webster is far more exact than other English lexicographers. Richardson is no exception; for though there are definitions more or less exact in his dictionary, it is not a defining dictionary. Had Webster here followed his own practice in many similar cases, he would have defined somewhat in this way: "To check or abate the ardor, liveliness, or briskness of any emotion, passion, action, or movement." This mode of defining is objected to, but it is more accurate than any other that has been suggested for such cases.

Neither the etymology nor the definition of *Damsel* is "a model of condensation," twenty-seven lines being employed where a dozen would be amply sufficient. There is also a carelessness in applying "now" to the literature of the several preceding centuries in opposition to the usage of "the present day," as well as to the earliest English usage.

The etymon of *Danger* Webster could not discover by a comparison of elements, whilst Diez traces it historically to the Latin *damnum*.

*Dark, a.*, has thirteen definitions, and as no preceding word has had more than five, it will be of interest to observe particularly the distinctions and the arrangement. Def. 1, "destitute of light; obscure," is clearly separate from the others; but the remark appended, "A dark atmosphere is one which prevents vision," if correct, belongs rather to def. 12, "opaque."—Def. 2, "wholly or partially black; having the color opposite to white," is, by itself, sufficiently intelligible, but wherein it is distinct from def. 7, "not vivid; partially black," is not very clear. Webster's example, "If the plague be somewhat dark," &c., Lev. 13: 19, is cited by Johnson under the other definition.—"Opaque" is given as def. 12, and the remark is added, "But dark, and opaque are not synonymous. Chalk is opaque, but not dark." If dark is not used for opaque, it would be a gratification to know what it does mean different from "partially black," a definition we have already had twice. Johnson says, "opaque; not transparent; as, lead is a dark body;" but he adduces no authority for such a usage.—If "mysterious," which stands as def. 5, can be allowed as a synonyme of dark, it is in a sense so little removed from



def. 4, "obscure ; not easily understood or explained," that it cannot be deemed to require a separate place.—Each of the seven remaining definitions is recognized as clear and distinct. But def. 8, "blind," is rather poetic than obsolete.—There is an omission of one tropical use, *infernal*, *atrocious*, which is as worthy of mention as some that are given.

In Johnson's arrangement, the physical or material senses are placed first ; therefore he has *a principle* of arrangement, right or wrong. Webster does not follow the same arrangement, for def. 12 is physical. Neither has he grouped the tropical uses with the physical sense to which they belong ; but, on the contrary, senses derived from def. 1, are scattered from defs. 4 to 13 ; and the tropical senses corresponding with def. 2, occur as defs. 3, 9, and 11. That the sequence of chronological order is followed cannot be proved ; and the attempt to disprove it need not be made, for when we find distinct branches, each putting forth separate shoots, it is the immediate connection of each shoot with its parent branch that we need first to know, in order to understand eventually the entire relations of all the parts. The following is an attempt at the orderly logical arrangement of definitions, but with greater amplitude of definition and copiousness of illustration than would be expedient in a dictionary :

**DARK. 1. (*Literal.*) Wanting light.**

" A boundless continent,  
*Dark*, waste, and wild, under the frown of night."—*Milton*.

(*Tropical.*) *a.* Wanting clearness ; obscure ; mysterious ; not easily understood.

" What may seem *dark* at the first, will afterwards appear more plain."—*Hooker*.

" Long they had read the eternal book,  
And studied *dark* decrees in vain,  
The cross and Calvary makes them plain."—*Watts*.

" I will utter *dark* sayings of old."—*Ps.* 88 : 2.

*b.* Concealed ; secret ;—as if situated where there is no light.

" Now, if you could wear a mind  
*Dark* as your fortune is."—*Shak*.

" Meantime we shall express our *darker* purpose."—*Shak*.

*c.* Affording concealment or secrecy ;—as if excluding from light.

" Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell."—*Milton*.

" The *dark*, unrelenting Tiberius."—*Gibbon*.

(*Transferred.*) Unable to perceive the light ; blind. [*Poetic.*]

" Thou wretched daughter of a *dark* old man."—*Dryden*.

" These *dark* orbs no more shall treat with light."—*Milton*.

" To sensual bliss that charms us so,  
Be *dark*, my eyes, and deaf, my ears."—*Watts*.

(*Trop.*) Wanting in discernment ; unenlightened.

"I 'll clear their senses *dark*."—*Milton*.

2 (*Lit.*) Not vivid or bright ; having the quality opposite to white ; in color approximating to black ; as, a *dark* cloud.

"And now the thickened sky  
Like a dark ceiling stood ; down rushed the rain."—*Milton*.

(*Trop.*) a. Gloomy, cheerless.

(*Active.*) "When I consider how my light is spent,  
Ere half my days in this *dark* world, and wide."—*Milton*.

"There is in every woman's heart a spark of heavenly fire, which beams and blazes in the dark hour of adversity."—*Irving*.

(*Passive.*) "And in her looks, which from that time infused  
Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before ;  
And into all things from her air inspired  
The spirit of love and amorous delight.  
She disappeared and left me *dark* ; I waked  
To find her, or forever to deplore  
Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure."—*Milton*.

b. Unclean ; foul ; impure.

"Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch  
Ezekiel saw, when, by the vision led,  
His eye surveyed the *dark* idolatries  
Of alienated Judah."—*Milton*.

c. Black ; infernal ; atrocious.

"Wilt thou conceal this *dark* conspiracy ?"—*Shak*.

"Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom  
To enter, and his *dark* suggestions hide."—*Milton*.

Of *Darken*, the primary physical sense, "to make dark ; to deprive of light," is given first in order ; but the sense corresponding with def. 2 of the adjective, occurs as defs. 3 and 8.

Def. 2. "To obscure ; to cloud."

"His confidence *darkened* his foresight."—*Bacon* ;

is out of place on every imaginable principle of arrangement. It departs from Johnson's principle observed in the adjective, for it is a tropical sense inserted between literal senses. And it is not in the place demanded by its immediate genetical connection, or the date of its origin ; for, in the order of ideas, it follows def. 4, "to make dim ; to deprive of vision ;" and, in the order of time, most unmistakably others also that are placed after it.

Def. 3. "To make black."

"The locusts *darkened* the land."—*Ex.* 10: 15 ;

is but an intensification of def. 8, "to render less white or clear ;" and therefore should not have a separate place. Both definitions

point out the change in appearance or color. The sense is one. "To render less white or clear" is not strong enough, and "to make black" is too strong. "To tan" is restricted to a particular application, and is, therefore, no definition. A true definition would give the one sense, which includes the diverse applications, with their various degrees of intensity.

Def. 6. "To deprive of intellectual vision ; to render ignorant or stupid."

"Their foolish heart was *darkened*."—*Rom.* 1: 21 ;

"Having the understanding *darkened*."—*Eph.* 4: 18 ;

is not distinct from def. 2. — Def. 5, "To render gloomy ; as, All joy is *darkened*."—*Is.* 24: 11," in its genetical relation, should follow def. 8, "to render less white or clear ;" and not def. 4, "to deprive of vision."

Def. 7. "To obscure ; to perplex ; to render less clear or intelligible."

"Who is this that *darkeneth* counsel by words without knowledge ?"—*Job* 38: 2 ;

is the tropical sense of def. 1, which it should therefore follow.

The logical arrangement of definitions would be nearly as follows :

**DARKEN.** 1. (*Lit.*) To deprive of light.

"I will *darken* the earth in the clear day."—*Amos* 8: 9.

(*Trop.*) To obscure ; to render unintelligible.

"Who is this that *darkeneth* counsel by words without knowledge ?"—*Job* 38: 2.

(*Trans.*) To make dim ; to impair or to destroy vision, or the power of perceiving light.

"His right eye shall be utterly *darkened*."—*Zach.* 11: 17.

(*Trop.*) To obscure mental vision ; to blunt or impair the power of discernment.

"His confidence did seldom *darken* his foresight."—*Bacon*.

"Having the understanding *darkened*."—*Eph.* 4: 18.

2. (*Lit.*) To make dark ; to cause to take on an appearance contrasting with brightness, whiteness, or fairness.

"While the sun or the stars be not *darkened*."—*Eccl.* 12: 2.

"A burning sun *darkens* the complexion."

(*Trop.*) *a.* To cause to lose radiance ; to convert to gloom.

"All joy is *darkened* ; the mirth of the land is gone."—*Is.* 24: 11.

"Their son's misconduct *darkened* their declining years."—*Anon.*

*b.* To foul ; to sully.

"Evils [vices] enough to *darken* all his goodness."—*Shak.*

**DARK-HOUSE.** "An old word for a mad-house," copied from Todd, is in the form of a statement. Reduced to a definition, it would be,

**DARK-HOUSE.** A mad-house. — *Shak.* [Obsolete.]

Of *Darkness*, the third definition, "a state of being intellectually clouded; ignorance," ought not to be interposed between the second and the fourth. Moreover, there is the omission of a tropical sense; *dulness of mental vision; stupidity*; belonging in the same group with def. 3.—Of def. 4, "a private place; secrecy; privacy," the first member is metonymical, and does not belong to the others.—Def. 5 is "infernal gloom; hell; as, utter [outer] *darkness*."—*Matt.* 22: 13. The principle here seems to be that, in parables and fables, the separate words are to be defined by what they represent. By analogy, *fowl* might be defined *a devil*, and, *Matt.* 13: 4, "The *fowls* of the air came and devoured it up," be adduced in illustration. Further, when *darkness* is used metonymically, it means rather "any dark place or region;" and the connection alone determines a more limited application.—Def. 6, "great trouble and distress; calamities; perplexities," is not borne out by the citation, "A day of clouds and thick *darkness*."—*Joel* 2: 2. The expression, as a whole, constitutes the figure; whilst *darkness* alone is a mere qualification of *day*, and is to be interpreted as if there were no figure.—To def. 7, "empire of Satan;"

"Who hath delivered us from the power of *darkness*.—*Col.* 1: 13;"

a similar criticism applies. Neither the idea of empire, nor even of anything akin thereto, is conveyed by *darkness*. Def. 8, "opaqueness;"

"Land of darkness; the grave.—*Job* 10: 21, 22;"

betrays great inconsiderateness; for either *opaqueness* is used in its ordinary sense, which is too ridiculous to suppose, or it is synonymous with def. 1, and is hence superfluous. The special interpretation of the phrase cited, "the grave," is no definition of *darkness*.—The use corresponding with def. 2, of the adjective, a common literal use too, as when we speak of *darkness* of complexion, the *darkness* of a color, the *darkness* of clouds, is entirely omitted.

Of *Dash*, *v. t.*, it is at least questionable whether there is any usage calling for the second definition, "to strike and bruise or break; to break by collision; but usually with the words *in pieces*;" in distinction from def. 1, "to strike suddenly or violently, whether throwing or falling." If the object is fragile, fracture will of course be implied. Nor does it bear a different meaning when followed by *in pieces*; for the phrase simply expresses the result of the action, and in some degree its measure.—Def. 3, "to throw water suddenly in separate portions," is not distinct from def. 1. The action is but that of throwing a thing violently.—Def. 4, "to bespatter; to besprinkle," should be rather, to drench by dashing. Shakspeare has "This tempest *dashing* the garment."—Def. 5, "to strike and break or disperse," should not

be separated from the first.—Def. 7, “to form or sketch out in haste, carelessly,” belongs to the compound verb, *to dash out* or *off*. Pope has *dash out* in the example cited by Johnson.—A similar criticism applies to def. 8, “to erase at a stroke;” but Pope, as quoted by Johnson, has “to *dash over* with a line, where the verb is not transitive.”—The logical relation of def. 9, “to destroy; to frustrate,” would place it by the side of def. 1.

*Dash*, *v. i.*, is defined,

“1. To strike, break, scatter, and fly off; as, agitate water, and it will *dash* over the sides of a vessel; the waves *dashed* over the sides of the ship.

2. To rush, strike and break, or scatter; as, the waters *dash* down the precipice.

3. To rush with violence, and break through; as, he *dashed* into the enemy’s ranks, or, he *dashed* through thick and thin.”

These three definitions contain but one meaning, *to move with rapidity or violence; to rush*. There is, however, a second use, which is not given, namely, *to draw lines rapidly*, and hence, *to sketch rapidly*.

“With just bold strokes, he *dashes* here and there,  
Showing bold master, with little care.”—*Rochester*.

Of *Dash*, *n.*, the third definition, “admixture; as, red with a *dash* of purple,” does not contain a usage distinct from that in def. 2, “infusion; admixture; something thrown into another substance; as, the wine has a *dash* of water; ‘innocence with a *dash* of folly.’—*Addison*;” but in this definition, “infusion,” as bearing a too limited meaning, should be omitted.—Def. 4, “a rushing or onset with violence; as, to make a *dash* upon the enemy,” should not be separated from def. 1, “collision; a violent striking of two bodies; as, the *dash* of clouds.” The verbal usage is one, whether there is a voluntary or an involuntary agent, and whether there is one object only, or more than one in motion.—There is the omission of a usage exemplified by Jeremy Taylor, namely, *that which comes with sudden violence*; as, “a *dash* of rain.”

This criticism has already been extended as far as the reader can be expected to follow me patiently; far enough, probably, to gain every end that could be reached by a continuance of it in the same method. I will, therefore, close with presenting one other point, and one other variety of mistake in etymology, still leaving unnoticed some things which it would require extensive reading, or a knowledge of oriental languages, to elucidate.

The citations are sometimes so abridged as to misrepresent the usage. For example, under *Deductive*, appears the citation, “All knowledge is *deductive*.—*Glenville*.” Glenville wrote, “All knowledge of causes

is deductive." (I have seen more marked instances of this offence, but I have preserved no memoranda, and this happens to be readily furnished by memory.) The definition, "deducible; that is or may be deduced from premises," is by two thirds incorrect. *Deductive* denotes *coming by deduction*; and Glenville affirmed, not *possibility* of attaining knowledge in a certain way, but *mode* of attaining knowledge in a certain department. See how clearly distinct is the use of *deducible* by the following example: "The conclusion is not *deducible* from the premises."

The elements of *Disport*, as given by Webster, are *dis* and *port*. The given etymon of *sport* is D. *boerten*. But *sport* is doubtless abbreviated from *disport*, as is *spite* from *despite*; and the elements of *disport* are L. *di* or *dis*, and *porto* to bear aside, after the analogy of *divert*, from L. *di* and *verto*, to turn aside. As evidence of this assertion, the Romance languages furnish corresponding words, which are indisputably from *di* and *porto*. See *Dictionnaire de la Langue des Troubadours*: par M. Raynouard; *Glossaire de la Langue Romane*: par J. B. Roquefort; &c.—The abuse of the doctrine of literal equivalents is also illustrated from another source by the derivation of *sport* from the German *spott*, mockery, where the etymologist seems to have reasoned that  $r=s$ , and  $s=t$ ; and as things equal to the same thing are equal to each other, ergo  $r=t$ , ergo *sport* is from Ger. *spott*.

Some readers may judge that, in particular instances, it is the critic who is at fault; but of this he will not greatly complain, if his accuracy and justice in general shall be acknowledged; for then it must still follow, that if he had continued his examination over forty pages instead of stopping with the fourth, in the multitude of cases that would have been considered, his affirmations would have been abundantly sustained.—There have been found more faults in connection with comparatively unimportant words than I had anticipated; and, unfortunately, the number of articles reached, containing more than five definitions, has been only five, namely, *Dark*; *Darken*, *Darkness*, and *Dash*, verb and noun. But this is a necessary result of the course I have taken;—a course adopted because it seemed fairer, as well as involving less labor, to subject a consecutive portion to minute criticism, than to gather the most notable blemishes from a thousand pages;—adopted, also, because it was the only way to exhibit the quality and measure of the defects alleged. But whilst a very small portion only of the dictionary has passed in review, the entire work has been in a manner criticized, and remarks of general application have been introduced; and, therefore, it may be a seasonable caution, that

no one, from the amount of criticism on a brief extent of text, carelessly exaggerate the measure of imperfection charged. Moreover, it may have happened, and in my judgment it has happened, that the faults on the pages taken by accident, for criticism, are numerically above the average. Finally, let it be noted that the *superior* value of Webster's Dictionary is not disputed; that, whilst it is viewed as imperfect, it is still gladly recognized as possessing a richness, such that no one can dispense with it without impoverishing himself; such that the future lexicographer who shall ignore it, will pass by the most essential aid to the completeness of his undertaking; and that the highest deference will necessarily still be paid it, wherever we cannot understand its errors, till there shall appear another work, as the result of profounder scholarship, nicer discrimination, and more extensive knowledge. But when I read such extravagant laudations as that of Dr. Dick, who declares that "AGES WILL ELAPSE before any other dictionary of the English language will be required;" or of Chancellor Kent, who claims for it the distinction of *embodying* the language, and hence predicts a duration outlasting the pyramids, and coëxtensive with *the great globe itself*; I cannot but imagine that if they were to return a century or two hence, and set forth the same view, they would be regarded as stranger dreamers than Rip Van Winkle, or those other sleepers of an ancient legend. And the thousand other voices of lesser fame, that in grand chorus shout its perfection, simply indicate what the dictionary is to their multitude; and no accumulation of such testimonials will avail anything with the judicious. Something better is needed, and will speedily be demanded. To call attention to this want, to hasten this demand in some humble measure, and so arouse the scholarship that shall delight in the labor to meet it, is the object of this article. A perfect dictionary would omit no point upon which it could legitimately be consulted. It would not stop short at approximate notions; it would present exact and accurate ideas. It would be not merely a useful counsellor, but the thoroughly informed and discreet umpire, to whose judgment any point in dispute might be safely left without revision.

NOTE. Since this article was written, I have had the pleasure of learning that the enterprising publishers of Webster's Dictionary have had for some years in preparation a new edition, on which more philological attainment will be employed than on any previous edition, and as much further investigation expended. This liberal and far-seeing measure is rich in promise, both to the publishers and the public. May the work continue to reappear, ever in improved guise, till it shall merit all that has been said in its praise; till it shall attain unto the ideal standard of the most exacting, even perfection.

## XV. PUBLIC HIGH SCHOOL

---

[THE following considerations respecting the character and advantages of a school of the highest grade in a system of public instruction in cities and large villages, were first presented to the public in 1838, when there was not a single institution of the kind out of Massachusetts. They are still widely applicable in every State.]

By a Public or Common High School, is intended a public or common school for the older and more advanced scholars of the community in which the same is located, in a course of instruction adapted to their age, and intellectual and moral wants, and, to some extent, to their future pursuits in life. It is common or public in the same sense in which the district school, or any lower grade of school established and supported under a general law and for the public benefit, is common or public. It is open to all the children of the community to which the school belongs, under such regulations as to age, attainments, &c., as the good of the institution may require, or the community may adopt. A Public High School is not necessarily a free school. It may be supported by a fund, a public tax, or an assessment or rate of tuition per scholar, or by a combination of all, or any two of these modes. Much less is it a public or common school in the sense of being cheap, inferior, ordinary. To be truly a public school, a High School must embrace in its course of instruction studies which can be more profitably pursued there than in public schools of a lower grade, or which gather their pupils from a more circumscribed territory, and as profitably as in any private school of the same pretensions. It must make a good education common in the highest and best sense of the word common—common because it is good enough for the best, and cheap enough for the poorest family in the community. It would be a mockery of the idea of such a school, to call it a Public High School, if the course of instruction pursued in it is not higher and better than can be got in public schools of a lower grade, or if it does not meet the wants of the wealthiest and best educated families, or, if the course of instruction is liberal and thorough, and at the same time the worthy and talented child of a poor family is shut out from its privileges by a high rate of tuition. The school, to be common practically, must be both cheap and good. To be cheap, its support must be provided for wholly or mainly out of a fund, or by public tax. And to justify the imposition of a public tax, the advantages of such a school must accrue to the whole community. It must be shown to be a common benefit, a common interest, which cannot be secured so well, or at



all, except through the medium of taxation. What, then, are the advantages which may reasonably be anticipated from the establishment of a Public High School, properly organized, instructed, and supervised?

*First.* Every thing which is now done in the several district schools, and schools of lower grade, can be better done, and in a shorter time, because the teachers will be relieved from the necessity of devoting the time and attention now required by few of the older and more advanced pupils, and can bestow all their time and attention upon the preparatory studies and younger children. These studies will be taught in methods suited to the age and attainments of the pupils. A right beginning can thus be made in the lower schools, in giving a thorough practical knowledge of elementary principles, and in the formation of correct mental and moral habits; which are indispensable to all sound education. All this will be done under the additional stimulus of being early and thoroughly fitted for the High School.

*Second.* A High School will give completeness to the system of public instruction which may be in operation. It will make suitable provision for the older and more advanced pupils of both sexes, and will admit of the methods of instruction and discipline which cannot be profitably introduced into the schools below. The lower grade of schools—those which are established for young children,—require a large use of oral and simultaneous methods, and a frequent change of place and position on the part of the pupils. The higher branches, especially all mathematical subjects, require patient application and habits of abstraction on the part of the older pupils, which can with difficulty, if at all, be attained by many pupils amid a multiplicity of distracting exercises, movements, and sounds. The recitations of this class of pupils, to be profitable and satisfactory, must be conducted in a manner which requires time, discussion, and explanation, and the undivided attention both of pupils and teacher. The course of instruction provided in the High School will be equal in extent and value to that which may be given in any private school, academy, or female seminary in the place, and which is now virtually denied to the great mass of the children by the burdensome charge of tuition.

As has been already implied, the advantages of a High School should not be confined to the male sex. The great influence of the female sex, as daughters, sisters, wives, mothers, companions, and teachers, in determining the manners, morals, and intelligence of the whole community, leaves no room to question the necessity of providing for the girls the best means of intellectual and moral culture. The course of instruction should embrace the first principles of natural and mechanical philosophy, by which inventive genius and practical skill in the useful arts can be fostered; such studies as navigation, book-keeping, surveying, botany, chemistry, and kindred studies, which are directly connected with success in the varied departments of domestic and inland trade, with foreign commerce, with gardening, agriculture, the manufacturing and domestic arts;

such studies as astronomy, physiology, the history of our own state and nation, the principles of our state and national constitutions, political economy, and moral science; in fine, such a course of study as is now given in more than fifty towns and cities in New England, and which shall prepare every young man, whose parents may desire it, for business, or for college, and give to every young woman a well disciplined mind, high moral aims, refined tastes, gentle and graceful manners, practical views of her own duties, and those resources of health, thought, conversation, and occupation, which bless alike the highest and lowest station in life. When such a course is provided and carried out, the true idea of the High School will be realized.

*Third.* It will equalize the opportunities of a good education, and exert a happy, social influence throughout the whole community from which it gathers its scholars. From the want of a public school of this character, the children of such families as rely exclusively on the district school are isolated, and are condemned to an inferior education, both in quality and quantity; they are cut off from the stimulus and sympathy which the mingling of children of the same age from different parts of the same community would impart. The benefits, direct and indirect, which will result to the country districts, or poor families who live in the outskirts of the city, from the establishment of a school of this class, cannot easily be overestimated. The number of young men and young women who will receive a thorough education, qualifying them for business, and to be teachers, will increase from year to year; and the number who will press up to the front ranks of scholarship in the school, bearing away the palm of excellence by the vigor of sound minds in sound bodies, of minds and bodies made vigorous by long walks and muscular labor in the open air, will be greater in proportion to their number than from the city districts. It will do both classes good, the children of the city, and the children of the country districts, to measure themselves intellectually in the same fields of study, and to subject the peculiarities of their respective manners, the roughness and awkwardness sometimes characteristic of the one, and the artificiality and flippancy of the other, to the harmonizing influence of reciprocal action and reaction. The isolation and estrangement which now divide and subdivide the community into country and city clans, which, if not hostile, are strangers to each other, will give place to the frequent intercourse and esteem of individual and family friendship, commenced in the school-room, and on the play-ground of the school. The school will thus become a bond of union, a channel of sympathy, a spring-head of healthy influence, and stimulus to the whole community.

*Fourth.* The privileges of a good school will be brought within the reach of all classes of the community, and will actually be enjoyed by children of the same age from families of the most diverse circumstances as to wealth, education, and occupation. Side by side in the same recitations, heart and hand in the same sports, pressing up together to the same high attainments in knowledge and character, will be found the children of the rich and poor, the more and the

less favored in outward circumstances, without knowing or caring to know how far their families are separated by the arbitrary distinctions which divide and distract society. With nearly equal opportunities of education in childhood and youth, the prizes of life, its best fields of usefulness, and sources of happiness will be open to all, whatever may have been their accidents of birth and fortune. From many obscure and humble homes in the city and in the country, will be called forth and trained inventive talent, productive skill, intellectual taste, and God-like benevolence, which will add to the general wealth, multiply workshops, increase the value of farms, and carry forward every moral and religious enterprise which aims to bless, purify, and elevate society.

*Fifth.* The influence of the annual or semi-annual examination of candidates for admission into the High School, will operate as a powerful and abiding stimulus to exertion throughout all the lower schools. The privileges of the High School will be held forth as the reward of exertion in the lower grade of schools; and promotion to it, based on the result of an impartial examination, will form an unobjectional standard by which the relative standing of the different schools can be ascertained, and will also indicate the studies and departments of education to which the teachers in particular schools should devote special attention. This influence upon the lower schools, upon scholars and teachers, upon those who reach, and those who do not reach the High School, will be worth more than all it costs, independent of the advantages received by its pupils.

*Sixth.* While the expenses of public or common schools will necessarily be increased by the establishment of a school of this class, in addition to those already supported, the aggregate expenditures for education, including public and private schools, will be diminished. Private schools of the same relative standing will be discontinued for want of patronage, while those of a higher grade, if really called for by the educational wants of the community, will be improved. A healthy competition will necessarily exist between the public and private schools of the highest grade, and the school or schools which do not come up to the highest mark, must go down in public estimation. Other things being equal, viz., school-houses, teachers, classification, and the means and appliances of instruction, the public school is always better than the private. From the uniform experience of those places where a High School has been established, it may be safely stated, that there will be an annual saving in the expenses of education to any community, equal to one half the amount paid for tuition in private schools, and, with this saving of expense, there will be a better state of education.

*Seventh.* The successful establishment of a High School, by improving the whole system of common schools, and interesting a larger number of families in the prosperity of the schools, will create a better public sentiment on the subject than has heretofore existed, and the schools will be regarded as the common property, the common glory, the common security of the whole community. The wealthy will feel that the small additional tax required to establish

and sustain this school, if not saved to them in the diminished tuition for the education of their own children in private schools, at home and abroad, is returned to them a hundred fold in the enterprise which it will quicken, in the increased value given to property, and in the number of families which will resort to the place where it is located, as a desirable residence, because of the facilities enjoyed for a good education. The poor will feel that, whatever may befall them, their children are born to an inheritance more valuable than lands or shops, in the free access to institutions where as good an education can be had as money can buy at home or abroad. The stranger will be invited to visit not only the institutions which public or individual benevolence has provided for the poor, the orphan, the deaf mute, and the criminal, but schools where the children and youth of the community are trained to inventive and creative habits of mind, to a practical knowledge of the fundamental principles of business, to sound moral habits, refined tastes, and respectful manners. And in what balance, it has well been asked in reference to the cost of good public schools, as compared with these advantages, shall we weigh the value of cultivated, intelligent, energetic, polished, and virtuous citizens? How much would a community be justified in paying for a physician who should discover or practice some mode of treatment through which many lives should be preserved? How much for a judge, who, in the able administration of the laws, should secure many fortunes, or rights more precious than fortunes, that might else be lost? How much for a minister of religion who should be the instrument of saving hundreds from vice and crime, and persuading them to the exertion of their best powers for the common good? How much for the ingenious inventor, who, proceeding from the first principles of science onward, should produce some improvement that should enlarge all the comforts of society, not to say a steam-engine or a magnetic telegraph? How much for the patriotic statesman, who, in difficult times, becomes the savior of his country? How much for the well-instructed and enterprising merchant who should suggest and commence the branches of business that should bring in a vast accession of wealth and strength? One such person as any of these might repay what a High School would cost for centuries. Whether, in the course of centuries, every High School would produce one such person, it would be useless to prophesy. But it is certain that it would produce many intelligent citizens, intelligent men of business, intelligent servants of the state, intelligent teachers, intelligent wives and daughters, who, in their several spheres, would repay to any community much more than they and all their associates had received. The very taxes of a town, in twenty years, will be lessened by the existence of a school which will continually have sent forth those who were so educated as to become not burdens but benefactors.

These results have been realized wherever a Public High School has been opened under circumstances favorable to the success of a private school of the same grade,—wherever a good school-house, good regulations, (for admission, attendance, studies, and books,) good teachers, and good supervision have been provided.



FREE ACADEMY NORWICH, CONN

## XVI FREE ACADEMY AT NORWICH, CONN.

---

WE continue in this number, the account of the inauguration of the Free Academy at Norwich, because the liberality of the founders, and the suggestions made by the speakers on the occasion, are worthy of the attention, of all interested in the establishment and organization of schools of this class.

THE NORWICH FREE ACADEMY occupies a central and eligible site.

The Grounds comprise an area of about six acres, perfectly level in front, and terminating in the rear in a beautiful and elevated woodland.

The Academy building is a brick structure 87 feet in length by 77 in width, three stories high, with a projection in front of 24 by 12 feet, surmounted by a tower or observatory. The basement is dry and will finish 12 feet in the clear.

In the BASEMENT, beside the rooms for furnaces and coal, there will be two play-rooms for wet weather, each 40 by 51 feet, with a Chemical Laboratory 30 feet by 19, connected by stairs with the Philosophical Lecture room on the first floor.

On the FIRST FLOOR there are, as will be seen from the Engraving, three entrances. Two of these are appropriated to the scholars, one to each sex. They open into spacious dressing rooms 19 by 15 feet, and are supplied with wash-bowls set in marble, looking-glasses, and such other conveniences as are essential to cleanliness and comfort. The front entrance opens into a hall 12 feet in width, and extending through the entire building. On either side of this spacious hall are the Philosophical Lecture-room and the Library—each 51 feet by 34.

The Library has been fitted up in chaste and elegant style, and endowed with a fund of \$5,000 by Mrs. Harriet Peck Williams, which, in honor of her father, the late Capt. Bela Peck, she denominates the PECK LIBRARY.

The Philosophical room is well furnished and a good foundation has been laid in a choice selection of apparatus, manufactured by E. S. RITCHIE, of Boston.

On the SECOND FLOOR there is a school-room, 81 feet by 51, capable of liberally accommodating 200 pupils; two recitation rooms each 19 feet by 15, and the Principal's room 28 feet by 18.

On the THIRD FLOOR the arrangement of rooms is the same as on the second. It is used at present as a hall for the public exercises of the Academy.

The building is warmed by furnaces and ample provision is made for ventilation.

The building is supplied with water by an aqueduct from a spring on the elevated ground in the rear, and is lighted by gas.

The cost of the building, furniture, and apparatus, exclusive of the lot was about \$37,000.

The architect was EVAN BURDICK, Esq., of Norwich.

The furniture was manufactured by JOSEPH L. ROSS, of Boston.

Fig. 2.—BASEMENT.

- A.—Furnace Room.  
 B.—Laboratory.  
 C.—Coal Room.  
 D.—Boys' Play Room.  
 E.—Girls' Play Room.  
 a. a.—Stairs.  
 b.—Area Windows.  
 c.—Furnaces.  
 d. d.—Basement Stairs.  
 e.—Stairs to Laboratory.  
 f.—Fire Place.  
 g.—Iron Columns.

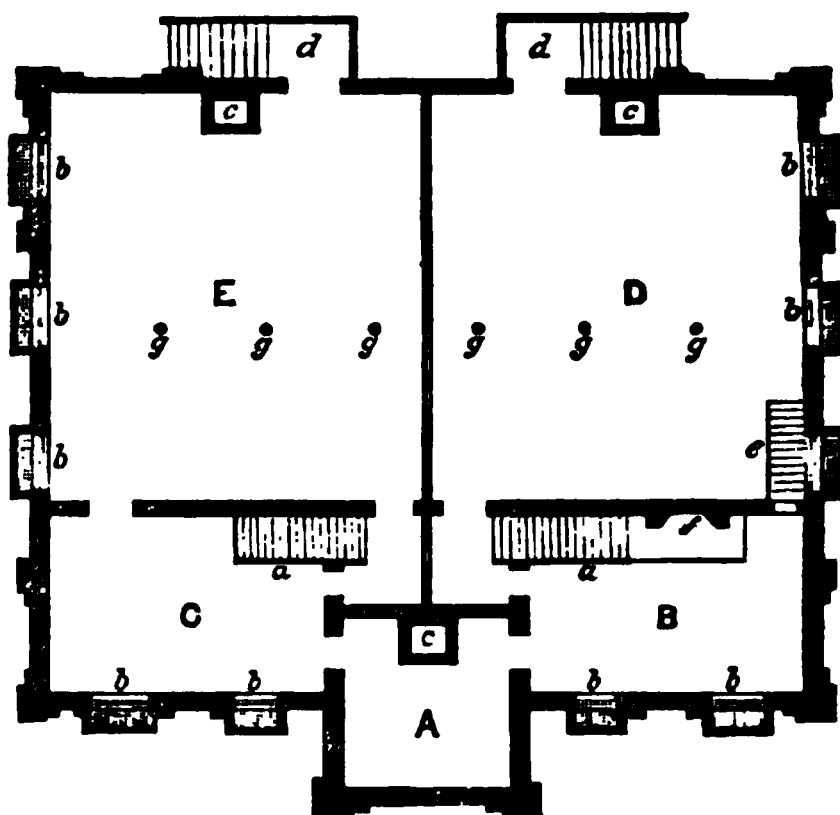


Fig. 3.—FIRST FLOOR.

- A.—Teachers' Entrance  
 B.—Boys' Hall.  
 C.—Girls' Hall.  
 D.—Boys' Clothes-room.  
 E.—Girls' " "  
 F.—Lecture Room.  
 G.—Library.  
 H.—Hall.  
 I.—Platform.  
 a. a.—Stairs.  
 b. b.—Wash-stands.  
 c. c. c.—Porches.  
 d. d.—Teachers' Closets.  
 e.—Laboratory Stairs.  
 f.—Ventiducts.  
 g. g.—Seats.  
 h.—Iron Columns.  
 i.—Apparatus.  
 k.—Book Case.

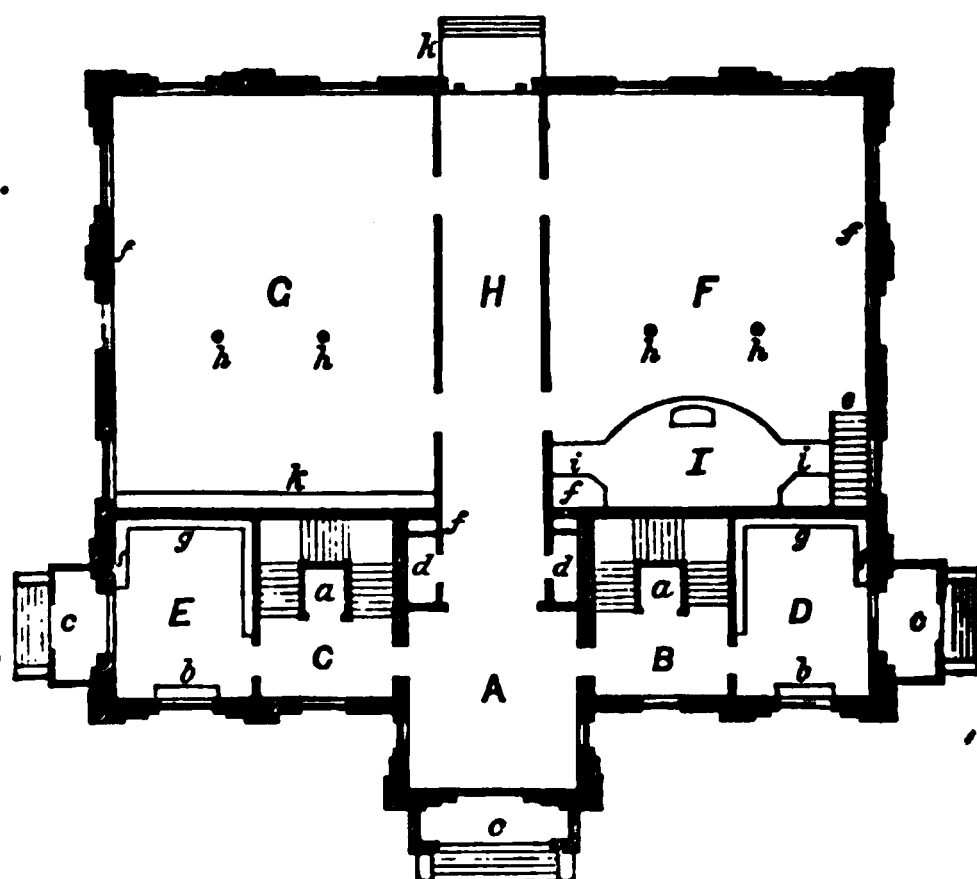
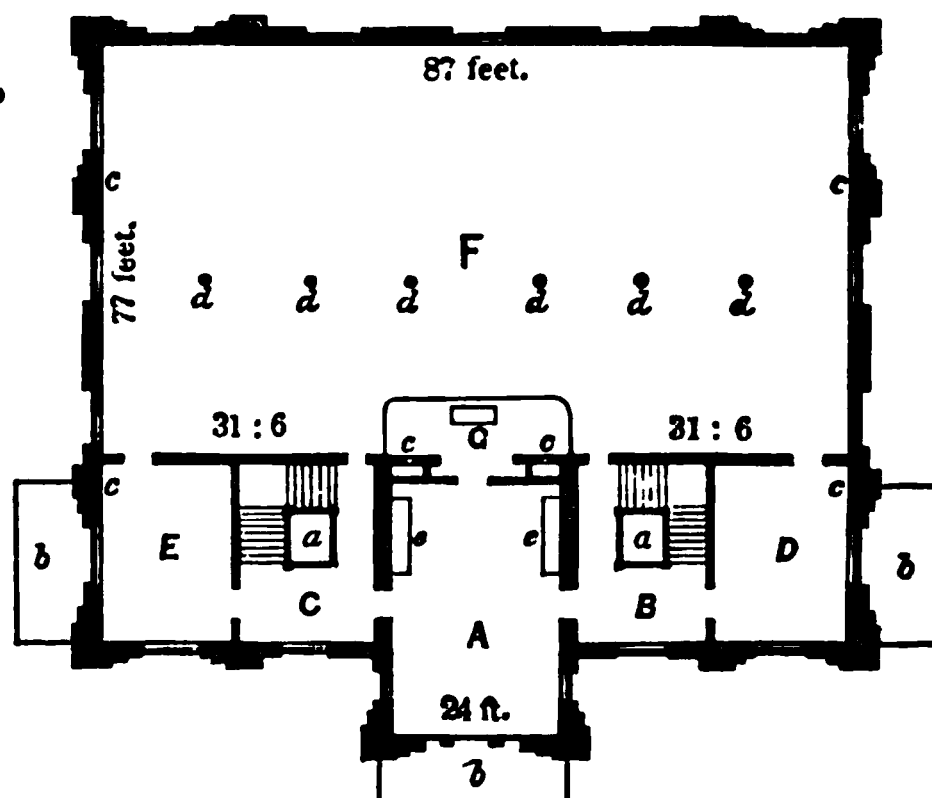


Fig. 4.—SECOND AND THIRD FLOORS.

- A.—Teachers' Room.  
 B.—Boys' Hall.  
 C.—Girls' Hall.  
 D.—Recitation Room.  
 E.—Recitation Room.  
 F.—School Room.  
 G.—Platform.  
 a. a.—Stairs.  
 b. b. b.—Roofs.  
 c.—Ventiducts.  
 d.—Iron Columns.  
 e.—Book Cases.





## REMARKS AT THE INAUGURATION OF THE NORWICH FREE ACADEMY.

REV. DR. WAYLAND, late President of Brown University, remarked in substance as follows:

I have been impressed during the delivery of the address to which we have listened, with the truth and beauty of those words of Christ, "It is more blessed to give than to receive." Who of these donors does not to-day feel amply repaid for all that he has given to this Institution? Who would cancel the gift, if he could? We hear much of investments. In the language of the stanzas which have been read,

"There's many kinds of stock, they say,  
That tempt the speculators;"

Some of these stocks are permanent investments, sinking the capital far out of sight. Sometimes we doubt the character of this sort of property. Sometimes we have high confidence. But who doubts the character of this stock? Would any of the gentlemen who have contributed to these funds, with the scenes of this day around them, with this noble monument of their liberality before them, and in the enjoyment of the rich satisfaction they are now experiencing, exchange the investment made here for the best stock in the market? Have you not proved it to be more blessed to give than to receive?

I regard this enterprise as important in a moral point of view. It is a great example. Young men are here to-day who are learning from it the true use of wealth. And so long as the Institution stands, it will continue to teach the same lesson. It is a magnificent instance of liberality, and while it challenges admiration, will compel imitation.

In respect to the literary and educational relations of the enterprise it is hardly possible to be extravagant. The Institution is of great importance both in its connections with the schools below it, and the institutions above it, and in the influence it will exert both in this town and elsewhere. All the friends of educational progress must rejoice in its establishment.

I regard with special interest the announcement that young men are to be fitted here for the practical employments of life. Perhaps I entertain peculiar views on this subject of practical education. I look upon the practical arts as a great triumph of the human intellect. We hear much of the genius exhibited in poetry. Our admiration for this sort of talent is legitimate. We do well to revere the genius of Milton and Dante and Goethe. But there is talent in a cotton-mill as well as in an epic. And I have often been deeply impressed as I have stood in the midst of its clattering machinery, with the thought,—How great an expenditure of mind has been required to produce those spindles and looms and engines!

Besides we shall do well to remember that the agencies which have revolutionized society and advanced civilization, have been inventions in the mechanical arts. I rejoice therefore that the studies in this



school are to be, in part at least, of a practical cast. It will do a great and noble work if it shall foster and develop practical genius to be engaged upon practical things.

You are to have a library also. I rejoice in this. I regard it a very important feature in the enterprise. With the endowment you have secured you will be able to make a choice collection of books. The influence of such a library as you will establish here, will be most happy, not only upon the students in the Institution but upon the community at large.

Upon a review of the whole enterprise, in all its parts, my confidence in it is confirmed, and my hopes of its future usefulness are strengthened; and I close as I commenced, sure of your hearty response to the sentiment—"It is more blessed to give than to receive."

PRESIDENT WOOLSEY, of Yale College, New Haven.

Mr. Chairman:—I spent my time this morning, in wandering over your beautiful city, and found that it is hard to get to the jail, but easy to get to the schools. This I believe, is, and will be symbolical of the character of Norwich. It will be hard for any of its inhabitants to get to jail and easy to go to school. To such a people I do feel it to be inappropriate for me to offer my advice. I think rather, that I am called here as a person concerned in one of the highest institutions of learning in the state, to express the feeling of concord and sympathy, which subsists on our part, towards the schools. It has sometimes been thought that the colleges are essentially aristocratic in their spirit; their studies, which are preparatory to the learned professions rather than to the walks of life in general, and the fact that the higher, more advanced, branches of science give a certain sort of superiority to those who pursue them, furnish a plausible ground for this opinion. But, Mr. Chairman, we disclaim such a feeling, we regard ourselves as parts of one system with the academy and the school; we can not prosper without them. We are links of one chain; no link can arrogate to itself independence or superiority to the rest. Nor do we want to have those who make up our colleges exclusively, the children of the rich. A college so constituted would soon perish, and above all in our country would not fulfill the end for which it is founded, which is to mould alike, to fuse together, to re-fuse together all classes of society so that there may be a whole society, or persons out of the whole, under the same elevating influences, and the children of the poor may have the chance, which good morals, industry and energy hold out, of gaining any place for which they are qualified. In religion and letters it is alike true that "the rich and the poor meet together, the Lord is the maker of them all" As it is inconsistent with the genius of Christianity, which invites us all to approach a common Father through a common Savior; to have one church for the rich, and another although reared by the charities of religious persons, for the poor; as the gospel calls on us all to meet together before God, and feel that we are bretheren, so I think it holds with institutions of learning; they ought to be for all, to include all classes and conditions. With this feeling I rejoice that this school is free; indeed I love every thing free but

freebooters. I rejoice that no one is shut out from this building ; that it is open to all from the lower schools, who have deserved to enter it through their proficiency, that none need be or will be excluded from it.

But, Mr. Chairman, I can see another reason why I am here. I can now go home, and tell my towns-people what Norwich has done for the advancement of education within its borders. I live in a city considerably larger than this, containing over 30,000 inhabitants. But you on the east side of the river are ahead of us ; you have set an example of generosity and self-sacrifice, which will serve as a model for the towns of Connecticut. And I have been struck, as I learned that private munificence has reared this school and endowed it so handsomely, with the value of the act as a moral training for the community of Norwich itself. Mr. Chairman, when a deed of shame is committed by an individual or a party, and that deed is justified or even perhaps applauded, thenceforth the community become its partizans ; their sense of right and of honor sinks ; they are demoralized, it may be for generations. So, too, when deeds of self sacrifice and of public spirit are done, they educate the community, they make every one who approves of them more noble, and more likely to do good in the same way ; they not only feed town pride but town virtue. If this building were to sink into the ground and disappear, sad as the disappointment of hopes, great as the loss would be, all would not be mere loss ; the noble example remains to vivify the community, to inspire it and make it capable to do likewise through future ages.

PRESIDENT GOODWIN, of Trinity College, Hartford.

Mr. Chairman :—We are here assembled on a most happy and interesting occasion, with fitting observance to inaugurate a noble institution, which has taken its rise from a yet nobler origin. It is rare in the course of our lives that an event occurs on which our minds can rest with such unalloyed satisfaction ; when we can so rejoice with the full consent of our whole heart and soul, when our *best* feelings are the most joyous and jubilant. For, as has been well said, this enterprise “ makes us think better of humanity.” Mr. Chairman, it makes us feel happier to be men.

To inaugurate this Free Academy, placed in the midst of grounds so ample and beautiful, with an edifice so commodious and even magnificent, itself so liberally endowed and furnished and organized, so admirably adapted in all respects to be a permanent blessing to this community ; to inaugurate such an Institution, by whatever means it might have been established, were indeed a joyful occasion. But it is not so much the fact as its cause, not so much the intrinsic value of the thing, as the noble character of the motives and self-sacrificing efforts in which it originated, that give to the present occasion its peculiar interest and importance.

In the admirable address to which we have listened, setting forth the origin, objects, and plan of this School, we were told that you did not come here to day, Mr. Chairman, nor invite your friends here, for mutual congratulations on the great work you have achieved, but rather, with a thankful recognition of God's good Providence in what

has been done, humbly to give him the glory; and, with a deep sense of responsibility, to consider how much more remains yet to be accomplished. For those, Sir, who have been personally engaged in the undertaking, such a spirit, such a tone of feeling, is right, proper and fitting. It is the best augury of ultimate success. But for those of us who have come up here to enjoy with you the festivities of this occasion, it is equally right, proper and fitting, that we should give expression to our congratulations. Our hearts are swelling with them. It is natural, it is necessary that we should utter them.

Mr. Chairman, I congratulate you on the dedication of this Free Academy. I congratulate all those whose hearts have been stirred up to contribute, according to their ability, to its endowment. I congratulate the citizens of Norwich, who are to have this Free Academy as one of the chief ornaments and proudest monuments of a town already so surpassingly beautiful and attractive. I congratulate the children, male and female, rich and poor, who are so freely and alike to enjoy its privileges, and its advantages so large and liberal. I congratulate the parents, who can now hope for their children, what they have never had for themselves. I congratulate the State which sees this institution thus nobly rising in its bosom. I congratulate our common country, whose free institutions depend upon free schools, free thought, and free men; upon the universal dissemination of knowledge and truth, of virtue and religion. I congratulate the friends of education every-where. I congratulate the whole world. I congratulate all future ages.

Let it not be thought, Mr. Chairman, that I am unduly excited in feeling or extravagant in expression. I do not overestimate the importance of this educational monument. The "Norwich Free Academy" may be in itself an humble, unpretending Institution. It may produce no general sensation in the great world. But how often the grandest movements and revolutions in history have proceeded from slight and unobserved causes, or from an origin afterwards shrouded in obscurity. How often the germs of the greatest events have been unheeded at first, the more likely, perhaps, to grow and strike deep root, from being themselves buried under the surface. This movement contains, I believe, the prolific seeds of great and far-reaching consequences. It needs no vision of prophecy to foresee its great results. It is an example which must provoke to emulation many other cities and towns, in this state and in other states; and thus it will give both a new impulse and a higher character to the cause of popular education, here and elsewhere, now and henceforth. But its influence in this direction, an influence to which allusion has been already so happily made, is not all. It has an application, and will produce effects, wider, deeper and vastly more important. It will promote not only the cause of education, but the cause of humanity. Here is not only the founding of a Free School, but the performance of a generous deed. Such deeds can not die, they bear fruit forever. No good act, no benevolent effort, is ever lost, or will ever lose its reward.

Mr. Chairman, as I have sat here in the midst of this scene, I have been tempted to envy those men who have so generously contributed

to the endowment of this institution, which to-day they see thus launched forth on its mission of blessing to their neighbors and to the world, to the children of the present and of all future generations. As I think of their mingled emotions of satisfaction and hope, of devout thankfulness and humble self-approbation, I feel that they are sharing in the purest happiness that belongs to our earthly experience. When the rich man provides by his will that a portion of his wealth, after he has done with it all, shall be appropriated to some benevolent institution, or to some work of public utility; it is a good act, to be accepted with all thankfulness. But surely it is a better deed when a man denies himself instead of his heirs, when he gives from what is still his own to use and enjoy; aye, and a *happier* deed it is too, for he can see with his own eyes the blessed fruits of his liberality. There is indeed a luxury in thus doing good.

And are there not here present, at this moment, young persons, boys and girls, whose youthful bosoms are swelling with admiration and sympathy as they think of their kind benefactors? Boys who will look forward to the opportunity of imitating them, as one of the highest blessings, and most cherished objects of their lives; girls, who, when they come to be mothers, will hold up this example before their children, and impress upon their infant hearts both the duty and the happiness of doing good. Thus the lesson which this enterprise teaches has already been learned by one class of pupils. Its effect has already been felt. This present scene may fade from the memory, but that impression will never be erased from the character. That lesson will be handed down. That effect will be propagated. That impression will be transferred. The circle will grow wider and wider; and who shall say when and where it shall cease to expand, and spread its beneficent influence?

It may therefore be said, in the most general and catholic sense, Mr. Chairman, that we all have a common interest with you on the present occasion.

But especially may it be said that those of us who are connected with Colleges and with the Public Schools have such an interest. This Free Academy will furnish a new link of connection between the Common School and the College. It will furnish an incentive and a *norma* for the lower grades of schools, especially for the next lower grade, stimulating and guiding both teachers and pupils to higher attainments. It will secure a thorough preparation for those who are to enter the College, and thus will open the way, in a manner which is very much needed, for a better type of scholarship in our highest institutions. Its invigorating and elevating influence will be felt throughout the whole series of schools. It will act as a *heart*, a sort of central organ, to the whole educational system.

That colleges have an interest in the Academies and preparatory Classical Schools, and, through them and with them, in all the lower grades of schools down to the very first, is not difficult to understand, and indeed is patent to all; for the Colleges depend upon these schools both for the quantity and quality of the materials which are to be

furnished them to elaborate. But it is not so generally understood and acknowledged that the Academies and the whole system of Common Schools have an interest also in the Colleges, have a great stake in the preservation, the character, and the prosperity of these higher institutions. If the higher grades of schools need the preparatory work of the lower, the lower need the stimulus and direction of the higher. The primary school would lose more than half its efficiency, if its pupils were not looking up to the secondary and following grades; and the secondary school, if the Grammar School were not there above it; and the Grammar School, if the High School and Academy did not wait to receive the best and most faithful of its pupils; and the High School and Academy, in their turn, if the College did not stand beckoning on the most generous and studious minds to higher attainments in knowledge and more marked distinction in life. And not only do Colleges thus furnish a necessary and most effective stimulus, operating directly or remotely upon the *pupils* in all the lower grades of schools; but they produce also a most important and salutary effect in raising the character of the *teachers*. We need for instructors in all our schools, certainly in our higher schools, not mere schoolmasters, not mere routine teachers, but men, fully developed men, men of large mental grasp, of scientific culture, of refined taste. There is no calculating the indirect effect of such a class of teachers upon the whole mass of the community. Boys trained by such men may learn just the same things that are taught by instructors of another kind, but they will come out from under their hands, a very different sort of boys; they will make a very different sort of men. I stand here, then, to-day, Mr. Chairman, to tell you that not only do Colleges have an interest in you, but you have an interest in Colleges. Take away the Colleges from the Common Schools, and you cut off the head from the body, which is left a lumbering and a lifeless trunk.

Allow me to express, Mr. Chairman, my cordial approval of the course and methods of instruction proposed for this Free Academy, so far as I have comprehended them. And permit me to add that what pleases me particularly, next to your distinct recognition of the Bible, in its fundamental and vital connection with the system of instruction, in a way which secures a christian, without adopting a sectarian influence, is your most emphatic acknowledgement of the importance of Classical Studies. I would not say one word in disparagement of what are called practical studies, a knowledge of the mechanical and useful arts. I would not detract one iota from the weight of what my Reverend and Learned Friend, who has preceded me, has taken occasion to say in enforcement of their positive dignity and value. Each one has his preferences. My Friend has spoken of what, in your plan, strikes him most favorably. I would speak of what strikes me most favorably. It is well that your scheme should suit a diversity of tastes. It shows that you have mounted no hobby. I honor the physical sciences and the industrial arts. I recognise their utility and noble character as heartily as any man. I am glad that you have made so generous a provision for their cultivation. But when they are extolled

to the express disparagement of Classical studies and of whatever is included in the domain of the Muses, I demur. It is true the popular tendency is thus to extol them; and, for that very reason, I feel, that, instead of encouraging this tendency already too strong, it is the proper office of educated men, of those who should lead instead of following the popular mind, who should form instead of flattering public opinion, and especially of those who have an immediate agency in controlling and directing our system of education; to defend Classical culture and maintain the claims of Classical Studies.

The simple truth is, Mr. Chairman, our whole civilization, with all its manifold arts and sciences, its large intellectual culture, its social development, its refinement of taste, its clearness of thought, its grasp of comprehension, its practical and plastic spirit,—I say, our whole modern civilization, such as it is, and whatever it is, owes more to the influence of classical learning, classical history, classical models, classical culture, than to any other one thing, christianity alone excepted. It has been the divinely chosen vehicle through which christianity itself has been communicated to us, and it may well be doubted whether our blessed religion could, without such a vehicle, have been communicated to the human mind in so great a degree of integrity and completeness, or could have produced its full and proper effect in the world, at least in its bearings upon the temporal welfare, the intellectual enlightenment and elevation of mankind. We may well recognize the providence, and admire the wisdom of God in preparing the way for the advent of our Saviour, as well in the history of Greece and Rome, as in that of the Jews. God's hand is to be found not only in sacred but in profane history. Christ came in the fullness of time; when the world was ripe for him; when not only was the Jewish state ready for dissolution, but Grecian and Roman culture was ready to receive his religion and propagate it to the ends of the earth and to the consummation of the ages. We scarcely know how our religion would appear if entirely dissevered from classical culture, from the shaping, formulating, adapting influence of Grecian and Roman thought. At all events divine wisdom has seen fit, as a matter of fact, to place the two in historical connection. Certainly we do not know what our *civilization* would become, if thus dissevered. It would necessarily be somewhat quite different from what it is. It might be some Hindoo, Japanese, or Chinese, it would no longer be European, civilization. It might be some nondescript, yet unheard of sort of thing. It would not be what we now have. Can anybody be sure it would be better than what we now have? Is it wise to try the bold experiment? Steam and machinery may be wonderful in their mighty action and ingenious construction. They may cross oceans, and make cotton cloth—both highly important and valuable achievements; but they can never perform the processes of mental culture; they can never be applied to shorten the road to learning, or to refine the sensibilities and the taste; they can never develop man's proper humanity, his intellectual and moral powers; they can never be the proper agents and factors of civilization



Although they may greatly facilitate and expedite the operation and influence of those agents, they can not serve as their substitutes.

Classical culture has spread a subtle, but mighty influence throughout the entire mass of modern European and American society; an influence which may not be everywhere visibly seen or consciously felt, but which, nevertheless, is there, giving a peculiar tone and character to the whole mental condition, to all the habits of thought and feeling. It is not necessary that all should be classical scholars, but it is extremely important that some should be. There must be some to keep the original fountains constantly pure and open. The influence of a learned class in the community is most happy and desirable. It is their mission, and their effect, to raise the tone of thought, to exert a refining and humanizing influence, to cherish the spirit of civilization, and to preserve society from the threatening absorption of a materialistic barbarism. Far distant be the day when our American society shall lose such a safeguard and such a leaven. Far distant be the day when classical studies shall be proscribed in our colleges, or academies, or free schools. Far distant be the day when classical learning shall be put up at auction with steam-engines, threshing machines and magnetic telegraphs. We do not inquire what is its market value. We do not ask what the world will pay for, but what it needs.

But I am detaining you too long. I must advert again, however, before sitting down, to the great interest of this occasion, and to the immense importance, in itself and especially in relation to this community, of the Institution here and now inaugurated. We are at this moment in the midst of intense political excitement. The great issues supposed to be staked upon the election of this or that candidate for the Presidency, make almost every heart to throb with anxiety. The banner-cries of "Buchanan and Breckinridge," or "Fremont and Freedom," are seen inscribed upon hundreds of flags streaming in every breeze, and over every great thoroughfare. They are reiterated, in broad capitals, at the head of thousands and thousands of newspapers. They are shouted with huzzas from tens of thousands of earnest and almost frantic voices. But, Mr Chairman, when the banner-cries of "Buchanan and Breckinridge," of "Fremont and Dayton," shall together have been buried in that oblivion to which their predecessors have already been consigned, or are rapidly hastening, this Free Academy will still remain, the pride, the glory, and the blessing of Norwich; silently yet steadily dispensing its benign influences, and causing the hearts of many parents and children to rise up and call its founders blessed. And though this beautiful edifice, constructed as it is of perishable materials may crumble in decay, it will be only to be replaced by another still more commodious, still more beautiful. Such institutions as this will not perish until our freedom of thought and speech is abolished, and our christian civilization shrouded in the night of returning barbarism.

PROFESSOR NOAH PORTER, of Yale College.

One fact the orator of the day has omitted to mention from a commendable modesty. Though it was noticed by the speaker who preceded me, I will venture to refer to it, and if possible, to give it the

prominence which it merits. It is that the endowment of the Norwich Free Academy is unique and singular and unlike any other. I believe that when all its peculiarities are taken into view, it will be proud to stand by itself in the history of endowments for education. If the amount contributed, the number of persons who have been concerned in the enterprise, and the object to which it is devoted are all taken into consideration, it will be found to be unmatched by any similar enterprise. Were I called on to defend my country abroad, I should refer to an act like this, as a noble product of American Institutions. Were I desirous to explain to a circle of intelligent ladies and gentlemen on the continent of Europe what are some of the beneficent results of institutions as free as ours, I should refer to an example like this and say of it, it is one of the things of which our country has no need to be ashamed. It is true many schools of a higher order have been munificently furnished in this country. Wealthy merchants and bankers have given large sums to found public schools in their native towns, and have in this displayed a wise liberality. But here we have a large endowment, furnished in large sums, by a large number of intelligent citizens for the good of the entire community in which they live. They have made the gift free to all, and yet have guarded against its being so common as to seem to be the property of all, and so be neglected or lightly esteemed. The wisdom and the enlarged and elevated views of education with which they have conveyed this trust to the community and to other generations, as well as the beneficent tendency of the gift so wisely guarded while it is freely bestowed, have excited my admiration.

Allow me to enlarge upon one or two of these features. The Institution is to stand midway between the college and the public schools of the town. It will act upon both, as it were upward and downward, and with advantage to each. We who are connected with colleges feel most satisfied and appreciate most earnestly the importance of the best kind of preparatory schools. There is probably no point at which the educational systems of this country labor more and are lamentably weak, than in what may be called the secondary schools; the schools of preparation for the college. We who remain at home know whence our best scholars come. We know indeed and cheerfully testify that there are a few preparatory schools of the highest order, and we know also that the majority of our students are not fitted as they ought to be to pursue our system of study to the best advantage. This deficiency we are forced to supply. This is not our appropriate work. It is not the object for which the colleges were designed. Let this deficiency be supplied, as it may be, and the complaint would be less frequently made than it is that the colleges do not accomplish more. The deficiency, the fault is not with them so often as is said and thought.

The influence of this Free Academy on the public schools of the town can not but be most efficient and happy. It is pledged to give a higher and better education, to require a higher course of study than the highest public school; in other words to take the best pupil of the first class in the high school and carry him still farther onward. Every



child who at this moment stands at the threshold of the primary schools of Norwich, has the Free Academy before him, to inspire him to effort—to excite his emulation that he may be allowed to enter it, and be fitted to pursue its course with advantage and success. Its influences will be like that of free or endowed scholarship in the English or Scotch universities. Many a poor boy has been aroused and stimulated to extraordinary zeal and labor by the hope of earning free tuition for a course of years in these universities. Such a stimulus lies before every pupil in the public schools of this town. Every such pupil can hope to earn, by his diligence, free tuition of a high order in various studies, for three continuous years, at the most important period of his youth, nay of his life.

I rejoice that in the course of study prescribed by the founders of this academy, so great prominence is given to the classics. Of the importance of classical study, the views of many persons are vague and unsettled. Most men are taught to esteem them valuable though they can not see how. They submit themselves passively to the necessity which forces them or others to go through the study of Greek or Latin, because these are made a part of a liberal education, but farther than this, they neither judge nor are they convinced. To such it may be suggested that the study of a language must be a study of thought, inasmuch as every language is a product of thought, and in it are recorded the processes and operations of human thinking, even the most subtle and refined. To follow and trace these by the study of any language is an invaluable discipline. To do it in such languages as the Greek and Latin, which are so peculiarly and especially adapted to call out and enforce this discriminating and close analysis, is a discipline which can not be too highly esteemed. Indeed I would boldly advance the position while I stand ready to defend it, anywhere and under any circumstances, that one great secret of the English common sense—of the preëminent wisdom and directness of the English mind, is to be found in the circumstances that so many of their leading men are trained as they are in the great schools and universities. The simplicity, the distinctness, the disposition to come to the heart of a subject, and to make short speeches, for which the English statesmen and public men are distinguished, are acquired, in no small degree, by the long and exclusive familiarity with the classics, through their school and university life. So important and obvious is the fact, that Dr. Arnold, with his well known zeal for practical uses and results—who declared he would not teach the classics except as he made them to illustrate the history and thinking of modern times, also affirmed that he would scarcely send his son to Oxford, if he could not there study Aristotle, that from Aristotle he might learn practical wisdom and common sense.

I as truly rejoice that provision is to be made for various and liberal courses of study in special departments, which have a direct relation to the practical business and employments of life. Too much must not be expected from such courses of study. It ought not to be thought, that a person can acquire by any special apprenticeship at school, that facility

and skill which can only be gained in actually pursuing the business. It ought not to be expected that a man can go from any school into the counting-house, or upon the quarter-deck, or into a manufacturing or commercial agency, as completely trained as he will and must be by actually learning in the school of practice and of life. But much may be done in the school, and we all know that in such a town as this there are at all times great numbers of youth who have time enough on their hands to study one or two modern languages, drawing, engineering, &c., &c., all of which will be invaluable to them in the practical employments for which they are destined. Let these learn as much as possible of such branches and they will find a higher interest in their calling, and will be qualified to pursue it with greater success; and having acquired all this special preparation that this academy can give him, he will be the better prepared to add the knowledge and skill which can only be learned in actually performing the business on which they enter. Many a business man—many a practical and active citizen will owe all his success to the knowledge and the stimulus which he shall gain within these walls, and will bless as long as he lives the founders of the Norwich Free Academy, as the founders of his.

When the traveler visits Stratford-on-Avon, the birth-place of Shakespeare, he is reminded of the endowed Grammar School which the poet once attended. But he does not so often reflect that he may have owed much to that Grammar School and to those who endowed it. For though Shakespeare may have had "small Latin and less Greek" (more, however, than is usually believed) his wondrous intellect must have been quickened and furnished from his youthful studies. Whether the Norwich Free Academy shall ever send forth so wondrous a pupil, may be questioned, but we can not doubt that many shall live to bless the day and the men who have endowed this noble and truly popular institution.

WORTHINGTON HOOKER, M. D., Professor of the Theory and Practice of Medicine in Yale College.

Fellow Citizens of Norwich:—This is no unmeaning form of speech that I use. Though I have for the past four years been a member of another community, the familiar faces that I see before me, many of which were familiar to me during all the twenty-three years of my residence here, make me feel at home among you, and prompt me to address you as my fellow citizens. May I never cease to bear those feelings which shall make it proper for me thus to address you. The interest which I felt in the welfare of this community when a resident among you, abides still, and may it ever abide.

Among the interests which were especially dear to me, when I resided here was the one which has called us together to-day. And as several years ago I stood side by side with some here in a struggle to advance this interest—a struggle which, though manfully maintained, ended in defeat—it gives me great joy to be present to-day, and witness the consummation of a perfect victory in the inauguration of this institution. I love to boast of Norwich, and when I do so there is no one thing that I speak of so often as this enterprise. The noble spirit of its

citizens has been often seen in other efforts, but there seems to be in this, a concentration of all that is liberal and noble and good in the spirit that animates this community. This enterprise has been justly spoken of as peculiar. I know of nothing like it. In some places, it is true, individuals of large wealth have endowed institutions somewhat similar to this; but I know of no other place where citizens have united together to present to the community in which they live, so rich a benefaction.

The philanthropist often pictures to himself the ideal of a perfect community. I mean not the philanthropist that confines his efforts and ideas to some one channel, but the philanthropist that looks at all the interests of a community, political, social, intellectual and moral. In the ideal to which he ever aspires, he sees every agency working out its ends in such a manner as to effect the highest good of every individual in every station. And he sometimes has a foretaste of this ideal state of society. It is such a foretaste that we are enjoying to-day in regard to the educational interests of this community. But joyful as this occasion is, you are, as has been truly said, not at the consummation, but at the outset of this enterprise. Much remains to be done. Improvements are to be made. Education is far from being perfect any where. There are errors in our system of education which must be removed. It is no time now to dilate upon these errors, but there is one that was mentioned in the address, to which I can not forbear briefly to allude. I refer to the prevalent custom of burdening the mind with a great amount of knowledge, while the power of acquiring knowledge is very little cultivated. This error prevails in the whole range of education from the primary school up to the College. I have occasion to lament its prevalence every day in my own experience; for I have the daily task of pouring knowledge for an hour into minds that have been crowded full by four lecturers that have preceded me. Education is to be purged of this and other errors. It will be a slow work, for it is not easy to get rid of long established customs.

And now, in conclusion, let me ask you, fellow-citizens, will you take care of this trust which this company of benefactors now present to you? May we not anticipate that liberality towards this enterprise will not end with what they have done, but that others among you will enter into their labors, and contribute of their substance to supply the wants of this institution as they shall arise, and that this whole community will take such an interest in its prosperity that it shall be attended with a complete and permanent success?

PRESIDENT SMITH, of Wesleyan University.

President Smith responded briefly to the call of the Chairman, by saying, that he came here at some inconvenience to himself, to manifest by his presence, his interest as an officer of a higher school of learning, in the opening of this new institution. He heartily joined in all that had been so well said as to the design and probable influence of this Free Academy, and believed that as an example of enlightened liberality, it would lead to the establishment and endowment of similar schools in other parts of the State.

HON. HENRY BARNARD, of Hartford.

Mr. President: Hopes long cherished, and efforts strenuously put forth, by many persons, for many successive years, have their fulfillment and reward in this occasion. This house, with its spacious grounds, and attractive groves and hillside,—with its halls and classrooms so admirably lighted, warmed, ventilated and furnished,—with all the facilities of illustration, experiment and reference, which its cabinets, laboratory and library afford, leaves nothing to be desired by teachers or pupils, in the way of material outfit and appliance, and at the same time guarantees that the future necessities of the school, in a larger number of well trained teachers, will be promptly and cheerfully provided, on the suggestion of the accomplished principal, under whose auspices it is the good fortune of this academy to open.

The plan of its establishment and support takes this school out of the disturbing influences, to which schools of higher learning are exposed, when under popular control, and efforts of popular enlightenment do not exist, or are not timely applied. On the other hand, it has dangers no less imminent; but so long as the spirit which has prompted this large endowment, for such large ends, and which has found fit utterance in the address to which we have all been delighted listeners, continues to animate the administration of its affairs, and rises to the demands of a progressive age, so long the institution will not be found “lagging behind the times,” which so often marks the history of educational charities. No class of corporations require, and should covet publicity, more than endowed schools; and nothing but a vigilant public press, and a lively sense of benefits received by the community, in an ever-ripening harvest of refined manners, developed intellect, and enlightened conscience, under the cultivation of accomplished teachers, can save this Free Academy from the perversion and decay, which has visited, in the third and fourth generation, and sometimes sooner, so many of the Free Grammar Schools of England, and the partially endowed academies of this country.

The course of instruction, resting on the solid basis of thorough systematic teaching in the schools below, which its plan of admission by open examination in certain specified requirements will help to secure, and the want of which in any of the lower schools will be sure to be exposed, in the failure of its candidates to gain admission here,—and rising and spreading out into all of those studies which in one direction take hold of all the occupations of society, the farm, the workshop, the counting-room, the deck, the home, and on the other, discipline and inform the mind, and fit it for the acquisition and retention of all sound learning, and for the perception and assimilation of truth and beauty in all the works of God, as unfolded in our colleges and still higher seminaries—such a course of study seems to me eminently judicious. It meets the demands of our age for an education in science which shall make the wind and the stream, and the still more subtle agents of nature, minister to our material wants, and stimulates in all directions, the inventive faculties of man, by which mere muscular toil can be

abridged, and made more effective. At the same time it does not ignore those apparently less practical studies, especially the mathematics and classics, which the gathered experience of successive generations of teachers, and the profoundest study of the requirements of the mind of youth, and the disciplinary and informing capabilities of different kinds of knowledge, have settled to be the best, if not the only basis of a truly liberal scheme of general or professional education. I do not believe that any amount of applied science, and the largest amount practicable should be given in this and other institutions of higher learning, or that any attention which may be bestowed on the English language only,—and whatever else is taught or omitted, the English language and literature should ever hold a prominent, the prominent place in the actual aims and results of your scheme of study,—can ever train the three great faculties of reason, memory, and imagination, to their full natural and harmonious development. But while I hold this not hastily formed opinion, I see no reason why the instruction of our schools, from the oral or primary, up to the university, should not deal with common things, with the principles, the phenomena and duties of every-day life;—why sewing, and a practical knowledge of domestic economy should not find a place somewhere in the training of every girl; and a “round about common sense,” the power of applying the mind and the hands readily to all sorts of work in helping himself and other people, about the house, the shop, or the farm, be the result of the house and school training of every boy. This was, and still is to some extent, the glory of our best New England school and domestic education. And to all this should now be added the modern developments of science in their applications to the arts.

One of the great advantages of the Free Academy to this community, in connection with the reorganization and improved teaching of the schools below, is the opportunity it affords of the highest advantages of public education,—the free struggle of children and youth of the same age, of both sexes, and of every condition, for the mastery of the same knowledge, and the acquisition of the same mental habits, in the same class-rooms, under accomplished teachers,—with the protection of parental vigilance at home, and that education of the heart and the hand which comes from the constant exercise of mutual help and courtesy, from innocent sports and rambles, and the practice of household and rural industry. These advantages of home and school education, are in the plans of this institution, extended to the female sex. My hopes for the regeneration of society, and especially for the infusion of a more refined culture in manners and morals, into the family and the school, rest on the influence of pious and educated women as mothers and teachers; and in the appropriate training of such women, this school will become an important instrumentality.

In conclusion, Mr. Chaitman, I shall not, I trust, cast a shadow over this joyous occasion, if I add a few words by the way of suggesting duties yet to be done, and dangers which may arise and can be avoided. You and your associates need not be told, that great as your individual giving is, munificent as the sum total sounds, and is, compared with

anything here, or elsewhere in the State, that the annual income of your fund is quite inadequate to supply all the accomplished teachers which the full development of your course of study will call for, or all the means of demonstration which the successful teaching of the applications of science to the arts, absolutely require. From some source, or sources, —from further subscriptions by this, and future generations of liberal minded men,—from the avails of scholarships and exhibitions established for the benefit of towns in which a public or endowed high school does not and will not exist,—from occasional grants by the town, to meet extraordinary demands, (and I should think your institution had failed in its noble mission of enlightenment and benevolence, if the town or city or district should not be ready at any time to meet any such wants of the school, by prompt appropriations,)—from a moderate tuition, payable each term in advance, by the parent or guardian of every pupil, (unless your plan of supporting the school, or of even meeting its incidental expenses, excludes the application of a principle, which need be oppressive to none, and which universal experience shows to be operative in inspiring attention and securing vigilance and co-operation in all whom it reaches,)—from some, or all of these sources, the trustees of this academy must have a large and certain income to employ good teachers, and enough of them, to make repairs, and to replenish the cabinet, apparatus and library.

You need not be told, that an institution of learning, whether endowed or not, can not flourish in this country, if lifted above the sympathy and co-operation of the people, whose educational wants it is designed to supply; and although the mode of support and management which you have adopted, exempts the Free Academy from the storms of popular ignorance and prejudice, it does not protect it from the slow but sure decay of neglect, or the perversion of a narrow and exclusive policy. Here as well as elsewhere—in respect to this as to every other grade and kind of school—the public mind must be kept informed as to the necessity and reasonableness of your requirements,—the public heart must be warmed so as to embrace cordially your plans,—and the fullest publicity should be given to all your proceedings. Let each anniversary of the opening of your academy be marked by its own “commencement exercises”—let the best scholars in the land be invited to discourse to parents, teachers and pupils, on the delights of learning, the motives to study, the triumphs of science, and on examples of heroic and martyr devotion. Let your annual catalogue, beside the names of officers, teachers, and students, record promotions for good behavior, as well as scholarship, contain one or more successful themes, or compositions in Latin and Greek, as well as in some of the modern languages, and be accompanied with appeals from trustees and teachers to parents, on such points as may most need their attention and co-operation from year to year. Such exercises and publications will keep the school prominently before the community to whose sympathy and cheerful co-operation the trustees must look for the realization of the admirable plan which they have adopted, and which has been so clearly set forth here to-day. And with that sympathy and co-operation which I am sure will not be withheld, this Free Academy will stand a monu-



ment of wise liberality, and large public spirit,—a trophy of the victory of knowledge over ignorance, and of goodness, order and progress over grovelling views, dissociated effort, and a blind adherence to the past,—a temple where young and ingenuous minds shall inquire after truth, and be inspired with the love, not merely of excelling, but of excellence,—a shrine, at whose altar-fire many hearts will be kindled with that cheerful piety which shall light up your beautiful homes with unfading smiles,—a fountain of living waters, but poorly symbolized in the stream which the “Man of Ross” bade to flow,

“— clear and artless, pouring through the plain,  
Health to the sick, and solace to the swain,”

—those healing waters seen in the vision of the prophet, which springing from beneath the threshold of the temple, flowed out into the wilderness, widening and deepening into a majestic stream, and nourishing all along its banks, trees, whose leaves are for the healing of the nations.

MR. ELBRIDGE SMITH,\* Principal of the Free Academy.

Mr. President:—My official relation to the institution which we this day inaugurate, may seem to justify and perhaps even require me to give some brief expression of thought and feeling in reference to it on this occasion. But in attempting this I labor under a great embarrassment—not that I have *nothing* to say, but that I have *so much* to say—not from any feeling of indifference in respect to the occasion which has called us together, but from a conviction that to do any thing like justice to it, far transcends my humble ability.

The circumstances under which we are convened, are of far more than ordinary interest. Whatever may be the ultimate fate of this institution, whether it be destined to a career of prosperity and success, or whether it be destined to adversity and early decay, in either case, sir, we must concede this day to be one of signal importance. The success of the “Norwich Free Academy” will, I believe, most favorably affect the interests of education in this state, and indeed in the adjoining states. Its failure will be no less operative in its influence. You will pardon me, sir, for speaking of its *failure*. I speak of this not as an event probable but as an event possible—not as a result to be permitted, and yet as one which must be duly contemplated, that it may be the more effectually avoided. We place ourselves to-day, sir, in a kind of moral Thermopylæ. We take a position which we *may* and which we *can* hold with immortal honor, but from which we can not retire without something more than the mortification of defeat. In inviting our friends and the friends of education from distant cities and from other states, to be with us on this occasion of joyful and yet of solemn consecration, we make them witnesses of the sacred covenant which we this day make for the higher and better education of the youth in this community. In invoking the higher sanctions of religion by the lips of her ministers, we not only make our solemn appeal to Heaven for that aid without which we can never prosper, but we express our deliberate vows that we will be true

---

\* The following suggestions were not delivered, on account of the lateness of the hour, but have been written out at the request of the Editor.

to the holy cause to which this temple has been reared. The act of dedication which we this day perform, is not a mere formality. We have not been summoned here to an unmeaning and heartless ceremony.

The establishment of an endowed school upon a liberal foundation is one of the most significant events that can occur in the history of the community in which the school is situated. I say of an endowed school; but I do not know that I ought to make this limitation. The establishment of any school which answers the great ends for which schools exist, is one of the most interesting events that can occur in the progress of society. We enter to-day, sir, upon no untried and doubtful experiment. In our own country, and more especially in that from which we are proud to derive our origin, the establishment of endowed schools has worked important eras, not only in intellectual, but in social and even in political history. And I can not resist the temptation which this day presents to the mind, as we stand at the source of a stream which is to flow on through succeeding generations, and affect them in their highest relations and dearest interests, to trace some of the more prominent features of its future course. We should not forget that the "Norwich Free Academy" already has a history. It has a local history; and more than this it has a genealogical history. Not more truly do we trace our lineage to our Anglo-Saxon progenitors, than does this Academy derive its origin from the same hardy and exalted source. From the character of its ancestors let us endeavor to conjecture something of what its own will be. Let me go back for a moment to a period one hundred and twenty-five years prior to the discovery of this continent, and find in William of Wykeham, who founded the oldest of the Grammar Schools of England, a worthy representative of yourself, sir, and those who are associated with you in this enterprise of expensive and disinterested benevolence. The Grammar School of Winchester was founded in 1373, and its imposing architecture at the present day stands as a monument of the liberality and artistic skill of its founder. And this is the school which has given to England and to the civilized world in the present century, one of the noblest men which the century has produced. In the succeeding century, the example of William of Wykeham was imitated by Henry VI., in the establishment of Eton school, and these two foundations in subsequent reigns, gave rise to those numerous charitable foundations, both collegiate and academic, in which the stern Anglo-Saxon character was nurtured and developed, and which became the foster parents of the great Puritan leaders, the Miltons, the Cromwells, the Pymms, and the Iretons. And is it rash, sir, to cherish the belief that from this foundation may go forth an influence not unlike that which has gone forth from Winchester and Eton—that these ample halls may resound with the voices of those who will give new direction to human thought, and higher energy to human action? Could William of Wykeham have foreseen the career of glory which his charity would run—the heroes, the statesmen, the scholars—and the divines who have been reared upon his foundation, would he not have felt more than compensated for his toil and his sacrifice? Or could Henry the VI. have seen in a kind of prophetic vision, the illustri-



ous names that throng in the catalogue of Eton, the Boyles, the Voles, the Chathams, the Grays, the Porsons, the Grenvilles, the Cnings, and the Windhams, would he not have felt a far higher satisfaction than in any, or all of his royal successors? Yes, might he have exclaimed, in the language of that great poet who was educated upon his foundation,

" Visions of glory spare my aching sight,  
Ye unborn ages crowd not on my soul,  
No more our long lost Arthur we bewail,  
All hail! ye genuine kings, Britannia's issue hail!"

And may not you, sir, on this day which marks the successful completion of the first period of the history of this institution, in the erection which you have engaged with all the wisdom of mature age, and all the devotion and ardor of early manhood, with these promising recipients of your bounty before you, who begin this very week to drink of the streams which your benevolence and labors, and those associated with you, have caused to flow, may not you venture to look down the vista of coming years, and see springing from the foundation which here been laid, with profound wisdom and princely liberality, a long line of virtuous men arising to bless your memories, and to honor your bounty—may not you, sir, in the light of the history of similar institutions, behold with cheerful confidence, your native hills and streams thronging with those who will "unfold new properties of matter, forces of the elements, new applications of the mechanical power which may change the condition of things;" yes, and with those who will rule in the realms of abstract thought, who will push on and metaphysical investigation beyond the limits to which it has been carried by Wayland, will take up Greek culture where our own Wayland shall leave it, and strike hands with the successors of our Silliman, our Danas, our Websters and our Barnards, in new and still more brilliant achievements in their respective fields of inquiry?

But, sir, it is time for me to dissolve these bright visions of the future, so glad as I should be to dwell still longer upon so inviting a theme. I will point out with some distinctness the points of resemblance and contrast between our own institution and its great English prototypes—to place, as it were, side by side, the cloistered halls and the scholastic studies of the *trivium* and the *quadrivium* of the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, and the far more genial and simple structures with their whole encyclopædias of study which characterize this nineteenth century; to compare Winchester and Eton, or Rugby and Harrow, as they stand to-day (modified it is true in some features by Time, that greatest of reformers,) with the hoary vestments of four or five centuries upon them,

" Rich as they are in names that can not die,  
And youthful hearts already beating high,  
To emulate the glories won of yore;  
That days to come may still the past outvie,  
And their bright rolls be lengthened more and more,  
Of statesmen, bard and sage, well versed in noblest lore,"

and show what greater elements of power have been gathered by advancing civilization for the work which we have this day commenced.

It would not be too much to say that our starting point is far in advance of that which they have now reached—that with the best elements of their culture, we combine others of perhaps equal power, and with a freedom in our charter to profit by all the improvements and discoveries that may be made in the great science of education. But these are thoughts and reveries in which you, sir, may properly indulge—you may give yourself up to these visions, and feel that they are rightfully yours. For me there is a view less fanciful. With you, sir, this is a day of triumph. You can look back to the day when with some anxiety, yet without grudging, you launched this enterprise, with the generous subscription of \$7,500, and feel that your part of the work is in a measure completed. You can review the seasons of perplexity and embarrassment and delay through which you and your coadjutors have passed, and feel to-day, by the blessing of Heaven, that you have achieved a triumphant success. It is at this point that my labor begins. These massive walls, these spacious apartments, these ample and delightful acres, this noble library, this beautiful and efficient apparatus, you commit to my care as the means for performing the great work to which you have called me. As I gird on my professional panoply, to enter this new field of action, permit me to assure you, in all sincerity, how deeply I feel the greatness of the trust which I have presumed to accept at your hands. Should I be able, in some humble degree, to realize the hopes which the founders of this school have cherished, and organize and instruct a school which shall be in some measure in harmony with these princely accommodations, I shall feel that something has been done towards advancing the interests of education beyond the limits of this immediate community. The magnitude of the work is, I confess, at times almost appalling. And yet there is something inviting in the very greatness of the work which I see before me. To attempt the solution of the problem which you have committed to my hands—to determine whether it is feasible to educate human beings in perfect harmony with their varied and exalted powers—to present to the young and plastic mind, the nutriment that it craves—to surround it with the influences which will elevate and refine, and yet not enervate nor bewilder it—to cherish every noble aspiration, and restrain the first motions of unhallowed ambition—to stimulate inquiry, and yet not encourage a restless and vague curiosity—to develop the mind and not neglect the health of the body—to strengthen the intellect, and still purify the heart—to regard constantly the interests of this present fleeting life, and not overlook for one moment the future and eternal life—to guard, in short, with the strictest care, all the interests of the rational mind and immortal soul, and endeavor in God's strength to repair the ruins of our fallen nature, and produce an intelligent, vigorous and virtuous manhood, reflecting, in some degree, at least, the glory of the great Original—to attempt all this, and as far as possible ascertain the conditions of its successful accomplishment, combines elements not of solicitude only, but of hope and attraction as well.

This occasion must not pass without a brief notice, at least, of those who are to reap the benefits of this beautiful building, and its ample

endowment. It is to me, sir, a matter of the deepest interest, that this day brings together the founders of this academy and those who are to share immediately in its advantages. I see before me the representatives of two generations—one that has acted the greater part of its share in the great drama of life, the other, as it were, but just rehearsing, preparatory to entering upon the great stage of action—the one thoughtful and grave, with lines of care impressed upon brows which have buffeted the storms of two and threescore years; the other elastic and joyous, and as yet inexperienced in the real warfare of life. It is a rare felicity, my young friends, which you this day enjoy, of meeting your benefactors face to face, and of receiving directly from their hands the sacred trust which you are to transmit as well as enjoy. Your position is one of responsibility, as well as of privilege. The trust which you this day receive, will hardly pass from your hands to your successors, in the same condition as you receive it. As you convey these blessings down through every rising race, see to it that they suffer no diminution in your hands. Let me exhort you to rise to a full apprehension of the nature of the position which you now occupy. Look upon these ample halls that are thrown open to you to-day; behold this lovely landscape, arrayed as it were, in all its festal drapery; these groves that have put on their autumnal robes of gold and scarlet; the heavens above you smiling as if in approbation and sympathy with this scene; behold the benefactors who bid you more than welcome; remember the parents who have brought you hither, with all those anxieties, yearnings and aspirations, too vast for words, too deep for tears, which parents alone can know; look down the vale of coming years and see the shadowy forms of future generations, who are waiting to occupy your places, rising and with clasped hands imploring you to be true to your duty; survey this whole field of noble incentive, and as you take your places as scholars in these rooms, let your fidelity testify that you are the worthy recipients of these signal advantages.

Mr. President, permit me in conclusion to congratulate you upon the consummation which you are permitted to realize this day—that you are permitted to behold the completion of a work which has occupied so large a portion of your time and attention, for the last three years. You enjoy a happiness this day which seldom falls to the lot, because it so seldom coincides with the desires of any man. In the serene evening of a virtuous, an earnest and a useful life, with your eye undimmed, and your natural force unabated, regardless of the clamor of political strife, you are permitted to lay the foundations of an intellectual empire which we hope will live and flourish when all the rage of party and faction shall have ceased.

“ The good begun by you shall onward flow,  
In many a branching stream, and wider grow;  
The seeds that in these few and fleeting hours,  
Your hands unsparing and unwearied sow,  
Shall deck your grave with amaranthine flowers,  
And yield you fruits divine in heaven’s immortal bowers.”

## XVII. AN AMERICAN UNIVERSITY,

BY AN ALABAMIAN.

---

Much has been said, within a year or two past, in regard to "*An American University*." Elaborate and able addresses have been delivered at college and society anniversaries, calling attention to the subject, and presenting such views as were calculated to awaken in its behalf a profound and general interest. Yet, for reasons which it will not be difficult to point out, these views have failed to reach the ear of the American people. Indeed, they seem scarcely to have gone beyond the circles to which they were immediately addressed. Two or three of the most palpable causes of this result, it may be worth while to mention.

Sectional politics have weaned men, in a great measure, from the charm of the American political ideal. The watchword *Union* no longer rallies them. If you convince an assembly of men, in the North, or in the South, of the importance of any move, to the true interests of the American Republic, they do not take up the conviction, as once they would have done, and carry it through city, town and country. It drops into their hearts like a sadly remembered tune, in which they have neither courage nor voice to join. They have lost confidence in the perpetuity of the Republic as a unit, and they feel that whatever is expended upon it, as such, is so much wasted.

Another cause may be found in the fact, that the American people can not easily be made to feel the need of an American University. You may convince the scholars of it, but to convince the money-holders and the voters is quite another conquest, not so speedily achieved. Upon them, the true University idea has scarcely ever dawned. The college in which they, or their sons, or their neighbors' sons, were educated, is, in their estimation, the repository of all knowledge. It is barely possible to convince them that such institutions as the Virginia University, Yale College, and Harvard University with its excellent Lawrence School, though unsurpassed in their kind, are limited in their scope, and fall far short of filling up the measure of the country's demands. Our patriotic democrats are slow to believe that England, and France, and Germany, and Italy, and Russia, furnish better facilities than America can boast, for the thorough instruction of men in Science and the Arts. Point them to the hundreds of young men that annually cross the Atlantic in search of purer springs and larger streams of knowledge, and they will tell you

that "Tis distance lends enchantment." They will quote to you the opinion of some "great man" in their neighborhood, which he delivered on a fourth of July occasion, or in an electioneering harangue, to the effect that "no country could boast of an educated people so truly as the United States." An American University seems to them, therefore, wholly uncalled for.

A third cause, and which is almost a part of the second, is that the means employed, as yet, are totally inadequate to the end proposed. That end is the enlistment of the United States of America in the enterprise of founding a great National University. This can only be accomplished through the million. A people is to be enlightened in regard to a thing which they can not comprehend, but which, by possibility, they may be made to apprehend sufficiently to lead to action. What grander labor ever awaited performance? It is to be done, if at all, through the instrumentality of American scholars. They are fully alive to its importance, but they contemplate, with aching hearts, the difficulty of the task.

In alluding to the insufficiency of the means already employed, no disparagement of those efforts is intended. It was well to assemble scholars from different sections of the country and imbue their minds with the spirit of the great movement. But why stop here? If this much was worth doing, it was certainly important to follow it up with still more expansive measures. Do we deprecate too great haste? Let us remember that persistent, unremitting and multifarious effort, so far from vindicating thoughtless haste, is the exponent of the wisest patience.

Here then, we may rehearse, in brief, the three chief reasons why the idea of *An American University*, so timely and beneficent in its conception, and so respectably enunciated to the world, seems to have fallen immediately into oblivion.

1. A want of confidence in the permanency of the Federal Union.
2. A lack of ability on the part of the people to discern the need of such an institution.

3. The inadequacy of the means hitherto employed in its promotion.

A few words more upon each of these points may not be amiss.

The want of faith in the stability of our Republic is not universal. There are many who think they see, in the successive triumphs of conservatism over blind zeal, the evidence of growing strength in the foundations of the government. But a fact still more encouraging is, that there is nowhere a complete destitution of confidence. The gloomiest croakers, North or South, are not without misgivings as to the fulfillment of their sad prophecies. Extremists on both sides feel that possibly the country may outride the storms that conflicting interests and conflicting opinions have brought upon it. But, that the

general confidence has been shaken, there is no question. This fact, though it may operate against the establishment of a National University, is really a very good reason in its favor. To regulate our action with reference to dissolution, would certainly be very unwise, unless we desire to precipitate the event. On the other hand, it would greatly augment the cohesive power of the Union, to engage in a vast and weighty enterprise, in which all the States should equally interest themselves, and the success of which should depend upon the permanency of the confederation.

It has been a common remark among statesmen, in these troublous times, that "a war with a foreign power would greatly tend to strengthen the Union." So it would; but no one thinks of incurring the disgrace of courting a difficulty for this purpose. The double price of injustice and the inevitable calamities of war, is too great to be paid for any good. But a peaceful project, looking impartially to the general welfare, and enlisting the sympathy of all sections, would, without the concomitant evil, bring the same inestimable good. It is no part of our purpose at this time to show that the establishment of an American University would be an enterprise of sufficient magnitude and merit to avert the political disasters which threaten us; but there can not be a reasonable doubt that it would prove an immense conservative power.

In regard to the *second* difficulty—the inability of the people to discern the need of such an institution—it is only necessary to our purpose to make the single remark, that the masses of the people are often convinced of the beneficence of measures, which they can not, by any means, comprehend. This brings the proposition under discussion, within the range of possibilities, where it meets with the *third* difficulty mentioned—the inadequacy of the means thus far brought under tribute.

Learned Professors are not in the habit of addressing *the million*, in advocacy of the projects which they set on foot. Generally they have to deal with subjects that only concern their profession—such as the internal policy of schools—the excellencies or defects of different systems of discipline or of instruction—the merits or demerits of books—and various other topics equally removed from the field of popular interest. It is their habit, accordingly, to confine themselves, in the advancement of their opinions, to Educational Conventions, Meetings of Associations, Anniversaries of Literary Institutions, and the like. If they write, it is for Journals that are read by hardly any one but scholars. In popular assemblies they are seldom seen; and, when seen, generally silent. With the newspaper—the great lever of civilization—they have little to do, and often but little sym-

pathy. It is manifest, then, that if they are to institute, and conduct to successful issues, a vast enterprise, involving the persuasion of the whole American people, under circumstances peculiarly unfavorable, they must consent to transcend the scholarly limits. They must bring into requisition the most diffusive and popular instrumentalities—must speak through broad channels that lead to the nation's heart.

The more effectually to accomplish this, suppose a convention of scholars were to be called, for the definite purpose of considering this one subject—the call numerously signed by distinguished gentlemen of every State. And, still further; suppose that this convention, upon assembling, were to appoint an efficient committee in each State, whose business should be to communicate with the leading men in regard to the University enterprise, and to talk with the people through their own press. Is it not evident that, in this way, a power would be engaged, prodigious and direct, which, in so noble a cause, would be almost irresistible?

We are in pressing need of an American University: we can have one, if we will: let us use the requisite means. We have excellent colleges—let them be sustained. We have excellent State Universities, (so called)—let the States rally to their support. But the more these are multiplied and patronized, the louder and more urgent is the demand for a *National University*.

In order to be National it should be located upon common ground. Under existing circumstances it would be wholly impracticable in New York, or Alabama, or anywhere, outside the District of Columbia. The Smithsonian Institute, and the National Observatory, form a worthy nucleus: If each State would appropriate two hundred thousand dollars toward an endowment, a fund would thus be created, of more than six millions, upon the strength of which a very respectable beginning could be made. Its permanent nationality would seem to require, that each State be equally represented, both in the fund and in the management.

These last remarks are designed merely as hints to our Northern brethren—"straws, to show them which way the wind blows." And it may not be amiss to add, that a *Great Southern University* is already spoken of; the establishment of which would defeat forever the project herein considered. It would doubtless be followed (if not preceded) by a *Great Northern University*—and then a *Great Western University*. These would be three grand centres of attraction and influence, tending rather to destroy than cement the Union. To avert such a consequence, let the plan of an American University be matured without unnecessary delay. Sectional enterprises can not long be held in abeyance. Shall we hear a response from the North?



## XVIII. TRANSYLVANIA UNIVERSITY AND STATE NORMAL SCHOOL,

AT LEXINGTON, KENTUCKY.

---

[In answer to inquiries respecting the organization of the State Normal School, for the training of teachers for the Common Schools of Kentucky, as one of the Schools or Departments of the Transylvania University, we have received from Rev. Lewis W. Green, D. D., an address delivered by him on the occasion of his inauguration as President of the University and Normal School, on the 18th of November, 1856. From this address, and the statement appended, we give the following exposition of the nature and organization of the Normal School, and its relation to the University.—EDITOR.]

By an Act of the General Assembly of Kentucky, in 1855–56, the sum of \$12,000 was appropriated annually to establish “a school for teachers” in connection with the University at Lexington, and for this purpose an Act was passed to reorganize the Transylvania University.

“MORRISON COLLEGE” was, formerly, the name of the *Literary Department* of an institution, to which were attached two professional schools—Law and Medical—all included under the general charter and title of Transylvania University.

The buildings, grounds, endowments, and other properties of Morrison College, have been transferred to a Board of Trustees, appointed by the Legislature, and consisting of the Governor and other principal officers of State, together with the members of the former Board, in conformity with an act entitled “An act to reorganize Transylvania University, and establish a School for Teachers.” The design of this act, as distinctly given in the preamble to the bill, is to secure “the successful execution of a plan combining every advantage of a Normal School with those which can be derived from general University instruction.” In accordance with the purpose and the requirements of this act, the Institution has been reorganized, so as to include five distinct schools, embracing,—

1st. The School of Moral Science, including all the branches usually embraced in that department,—intellectual, moral, and social.

2d. The School of Physical Science, with a like extent of meaning, including chemistry, natural philosophy, astronomy, and other cognate sciences.

3d. The School of Mathematics, which sufficiently defines itself.

4th. The School of Ancient Languages, including the Greek and Latin languages, and literature.

5th. The School for Teachers, including the theory and practice, the science, and the art of teaching.

The relation of the School to the University is precisely the same, in

all respects, as that of any other department of the General Institution ; being not merely attached to it, but incorporated with it, as one of its component and essential parts, yet retaining its own distinctive character, and having, like other departments, its own distinct Professors, as "*a Normal School.*"

The instruction in the primary, and most essential branches of this department, together with the classification of the pupils, and all the minuter details of interior organization, are confided to two Professors, with the advice and assistance of the President, while the general government and administration of discipline rest ultimately with the Faculty of the University and the Board.

In addition to the two Professors exclusively devoted to this department, the President, as Professor of Moral Science, in the University, and the Professor of Physical Science, give special instruction to the Normal students, adapted to their wants, and prepared for their exclusive benefit. Thus the State pupils are not merged in the general mass of the College classes, yet enjoy all the advantages which may be derived from the acquirements and the experience of the Professors in the University, the superior apparatus, &c.

It is the fixed purpose of the Faculty and the Board that the funds of the State shall not be perverted from their primary and specific object, which is to train up teachers for the country. Therefore, the Normal School being carefully organized, with special reference to that object, each State pupil is considered, by the very fact of his accepting the appointment, a member of that school, and pledged to master the studies in that department ; nor can any be allowed to neglect, much less wholly to omit these primary studies, for any personal advantage, real or imaginary, to be derived from the higher studies of the college proper. Yet, should any pupil possess, (as many do,) such intimate acquaintance with the studies of the Normal School, or such aptness, and industry, that in the judgment of the Faculty, he may profitably devote a portion of his time to the higher studies, then, the whole University is open for his benefit, and every facility is afforded for his wider improvement ; it being our distinct purpose to insure accuracy in the lower branches, yet afford every opportunity and stimulus for progress in the higher.

This opportunity for higher culture, so eagerly siezed, and so well improved already by a portion of our pupils, makes not only an abler man, but a superior teacher ; and in all the more gifted minds, will assuredly stimulate to larger acquirements in after life ; thus multiplying the number of thoroughly educated men, and accomplishing collaterally another of the great purposes of the Legislature, to raise up men for the State, as well as instructors for our schools.

Should any wish to return and complete their studies here, all the advantages of the University are gratuitously offered.

These advantages to the Normal School, derived from its connection with the University, are attended by correspondent advantages to other departments of the general institution, which are well worthy of serious

consideration, and render the University a place peculiarly adapted to the education of youth.

*First.* The infusion of so large an element favorable to study, morality, and good order. So many full grown men, sober, discreet, studious, decorous in all their demeanor. This influence is powerfully felt in every department, and combined with other causes, has given a most healthful impulse to our enterprise in its very commencement.

*Second.* The greatest defect in all our institutions is the want of accurate and thorough scholarship, and mental discipline. This arises, not so much from any defect, either of ability or fidelity on the part of the professors, as from a difficulty which lies at the very foundation of our system, and is absolutely insuperable by human ingenuity or patience, viz.: The total want of accurate instruction and thorough discipline in the early stages of education. This is an absolutely unmanageable evil. It meets, and thwarts, and baffles, and disheartens, at every point and in every department, the most enthusiastic, energetic, and conscientious instructor. It is fast reducing us to be a nation of superficial sciolists and empty drivellers. It is a crack in the foundation which runs through the whole superstructure, mounts to the dome and endangers all. We may plaster it over ingeniously and skillfully, but the weakness remains. Worse still, and worst of all, the very attempt to hide the defect, recoils upon our moral nature, strikes in upon the inner man, and *showy pretense becomes inevitable moral turpitude*. Now the only remedy is a reform in the lower departments of instruction. This can be effected by the Normal School only; by the stricter methods, and the more accurate acquirements which it is enabled to enforce; thence it may be extended to the common school and the academy; and returning to the University in the person of pupils formerly trained in the Normal School, may constitute, in every class, a nucleus of trained, and disciplined minds around which others may gather, as examples of thorough and successful culture. The great design of education is not merely to communicate knowledge, but to discipline the faculties; to render the mind, not passively recipient, but reproductive. For this purpose, the method adopted in every well directed Normal School, is not merely the best, but the only possible, or conceivable method. *Require the instant reproduction; never allow the pupil to consider a subject mastered, until all the facts, principles, trains of reasoning, the whole process of investigation, can be distinctly stated in language satisfactory to himself, and intelligible to others.* This habit formed in the Normal School, and transferred to every department of the University, would, of itself, suffice to revolutionize our system of education, *and raise up a new race of thinkers, and men.*

[There can be no doubt as to the influence for good, which the incorporation of a Professional School for Teachers into Universities, will exert on the cause of popular education in Kentucky, through the higher order of common schools, and when combined with Teachers' Institutes, a State Teachers' Association, active county superintendents, and a Normal School for Female Teachers, on the ordinary common schools.—Ed.]



FIG. 1.—STATE NORMAL SCHOOL.—NEW JERSEY.

## **XIX. EDUCATIONAL MISCELLANY AND INTELLIGENCE.**

### **STATE NORMAL SCHOOL, OF NEW JERSEY.**

---

**THE STATE NORMAL SCHOOL OF NEW JERSEY**, at Trenton, was established in 1855, by an Act of the Legislature appropriating the sum of (\$10,000.) ten thousand dollars annually for its current expenses, leaving it to the town, where the school should be located, to provide suitable building and outfit, in consideration of the advantages of having such a school in its midst. These were promptly offered by several towns, and were finally provided by an association of the citizens of Trenton at a cost of \$25,000.

The Normal School was opened in October, 1855, under the auspices of Prof. William F. Phelps, who brought to his duties, large and successful experience as a teacher, especially in connection with the State Normal School at Albany, and a profound study of the special requirements of such an institution. We shall defer further notice of this school to a subsequent number, in which we propose to give an account of all the State and City Normal Schools and other agencies for the professional training of teachers, in the United States and British Provinces. And in the mean time we present to our readers the following plans of the building erected for its accommodation, as combining in a highly successful manner all the essential requirements of an institution designed for a Normal School, composed of pupil-teachers of both sexes, and for Schools of Practice and Illustration, made up of boys and girls distributed into several classes, or schools, according to age and attainments. It will afford useful hints for the construction and arrangement of houses for graded schools. The marginal references and notes render any extended description unnecessary. The following is a brief summary of the excellencies of this structure.

"1. Symmetry of form, location, arrangement, and dimensions. On the first floor, every room has its counterpart in all these respects; and the same principle was carried out in each of the three stories, so far as the nature of the case would admit. It was necessary to provide for each sex separately, except when under the direct supervision of an officer of the school. This object, it will be seen, has been fully attained, without departing in any case, from the fundamental ideas of simplicity and unity.

"2. Every apartment is in its proper place. Its location, form, and dimensions were determined by the particular uses to which it was to be applied. For example: the four clothes and wash rooms are on the first floor, immediately adjoining the respective entrances of the four classes of pupils to be accommodated thereby. The rooms for the Model School are also on the first floor, to avoid the disorder and inconvenience attendant upon the ascent and descent of flights of stairs by large numbers of children. The class or recitation rooms of the Normal School are systematically arranged and apportioned among the three several stories of the building, in order to avoid crowds, and the inconvenience of frequently concentrating a large number of persons in the same story. The assembly room is on the second or middle floor; and thus no class is required to ascend or descend more than one flight of stairs. The reception room and library are on the same floor, near at hand, and easy of access, while the recitation rooms of the Principal and Vice Principal are immediately adjacent to,

and separated from the assembly room, by a glass partition. The lecture room, corresponding in form and size to the assembly room, is in the third story, directly over the latter, because less used, and when used, it requires to be well ventilated, and well removed from the annoyances of the street.

"3. The various class, lecture, and other rooms, are large, airy, well-lighted, and in every respect commodious, and well provided with the most approved black-boards or slates.

"4. The means of ingress and egress are ample; there being four entrances for the pupils, besides one for visitors, and four flights of stairs corresponding thereto, each separate from and independent of the others, leading to every story of the building. There are also four doors from the two principal rooms, connecting directly with these stairways. By means of this arrangement, the largest audience which these rooms could contain, may, if needful, be safely discharged in from three to four minutes; also the general movements of the school, such as the passage to and from recitations and lectures, the assemblage and dismissal of the pupils, &c., can be effected with ease, promptitude, order, and precision.

"5. The apartments are well heated and well ventilated. The furnaces, four in number, and of the first class, are located at the ends and sides of the main building, thus securing an equable distribution of heat to every part. In general, the ventiducts pass upward from each apartment, opposite the hot-air flues, and all of them terminate in an air-chamber in the attic. This air-chamber is, when necessary, to be supplied with heat from a small furnace for that purpose in the basement, by a single flue. The contained air is thus rarefied, passing upward and outward through the ventilator in the roof. A partial vacuum is thus formed in the air-chamber, and a current is at once established from each apartment through the ventiducts to it, insuring an effective ventilation, and a full supply of pure and healthy atmosphere for respiration.

"6. Each story is supplied with an abundance of water in both front and rear, either for purposes of cleanliness, or for the extinguishment of fires, should any occur. The halls and stairways, the library and trustees' or reception room, the laboratory and lecture rooms, are all furnished with gas, which renders them eligible for evening use, should such be required.

"7. For the uses to which it is to be applied, the building is of unsurpassed strength and durability. In short, it is believed that in all its appointments, this building leaves little to be desired in respect to simplicity, convenience, and adaptation to the purposes for which it was designed."

#### FARNUM PREPARATORY SCHOOL.

Among the liberal offers made by individuals and associations, to induce the Trustees of the State Normal School to locate the Institution in their respective towns, was one by Mr. Paul Farnum of Beverly. He offered to place at the disposal of the Board, for the use of the School, for a period of five years, a brick edifice of ample dimensions, to be built and furnished upon the most approved plan, and also an elegant and commodious dwelling house, free of rent, for the use of the Principal. The cost of the two buildings was to be about \$20,000. This offer was declined on account of the superior claims of Trenton, as the capital of the State, where the operations of the Normal School, with its improved methods of instruction and discipline, would be under the constant notice of the Legislature,—but it has been accepted for a State Preparatory Normal School, of which we will give an account in an early number.

**Fig 2.—FIRST FLOOR.**

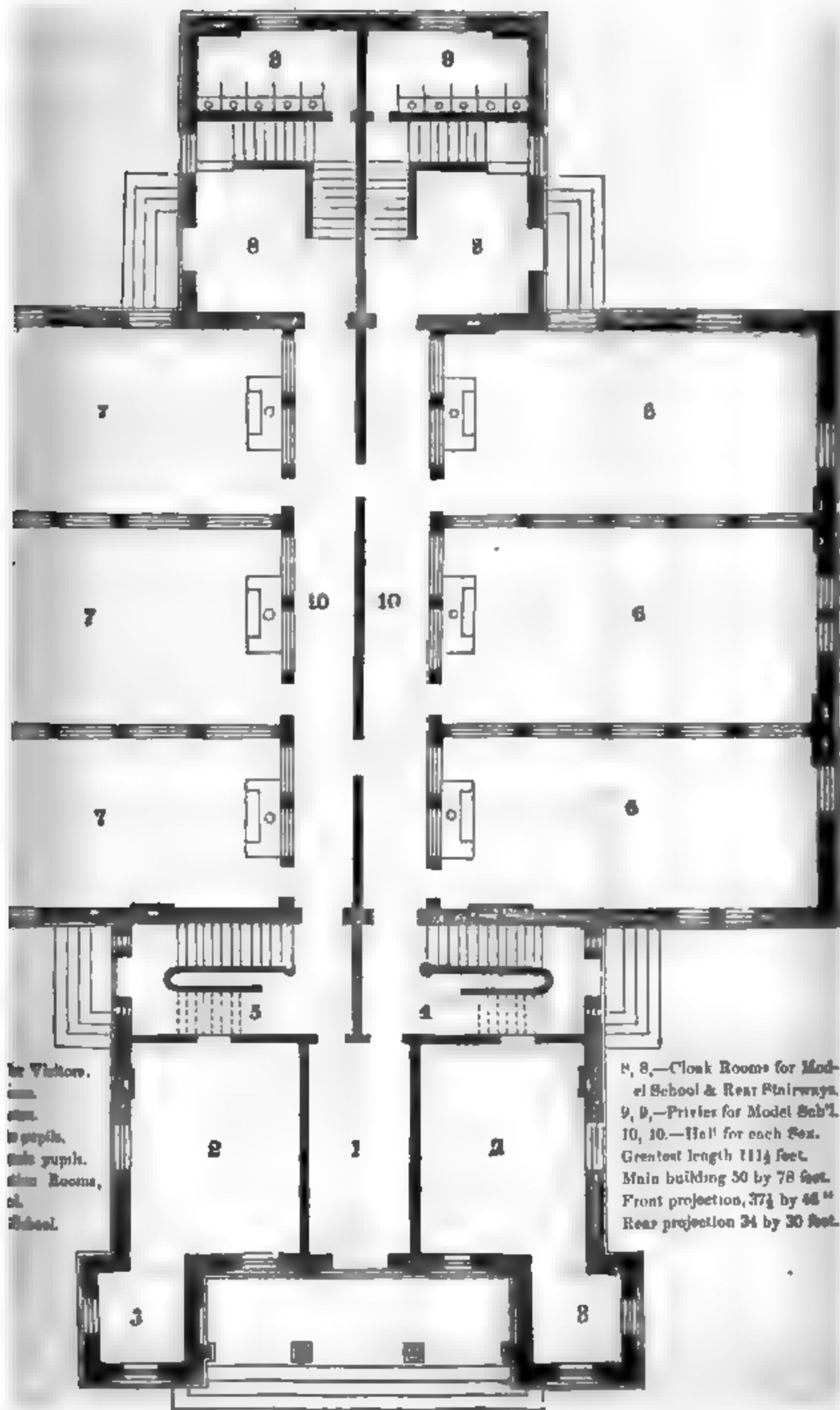




Fig. 3.—SECOND FLOOR.

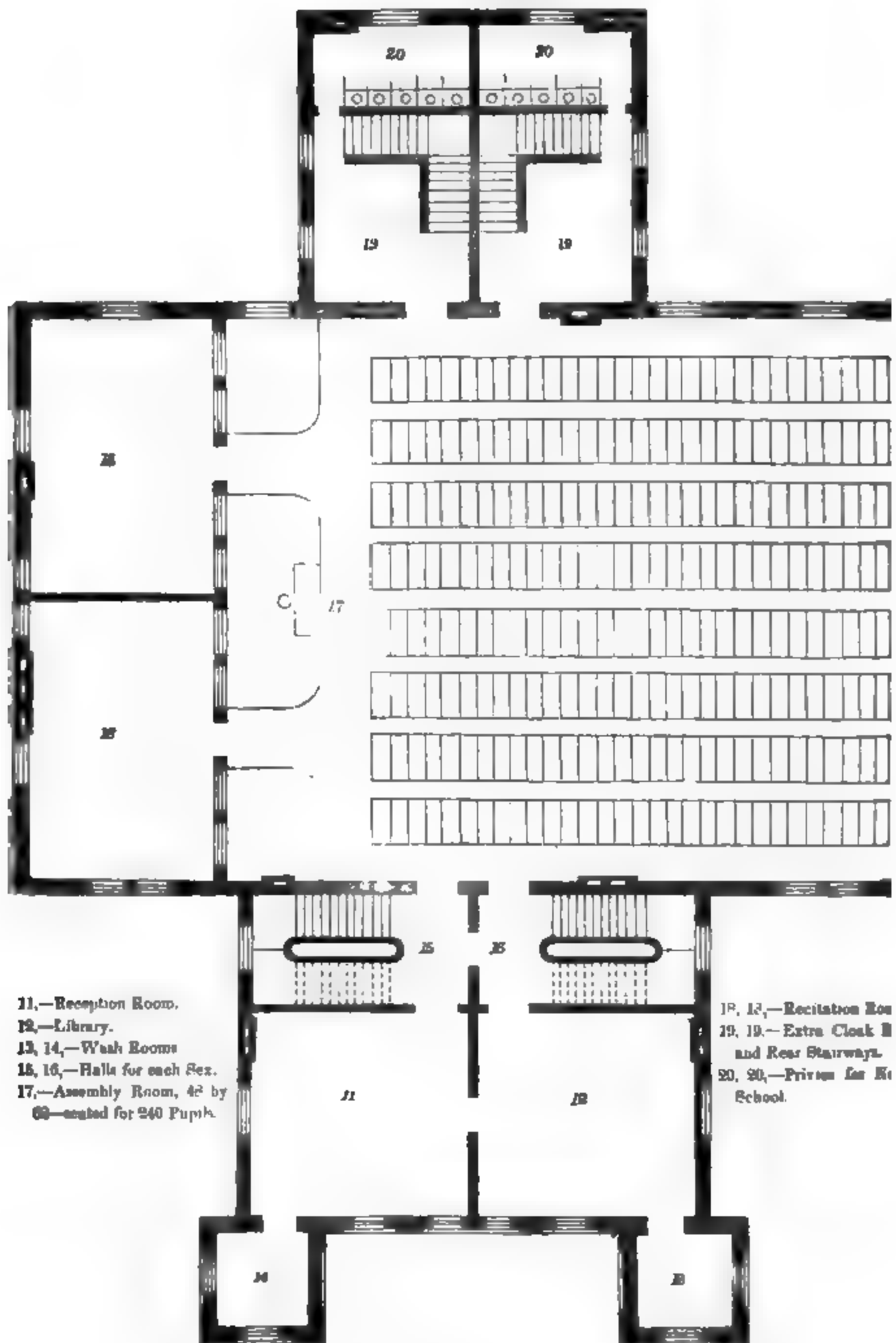
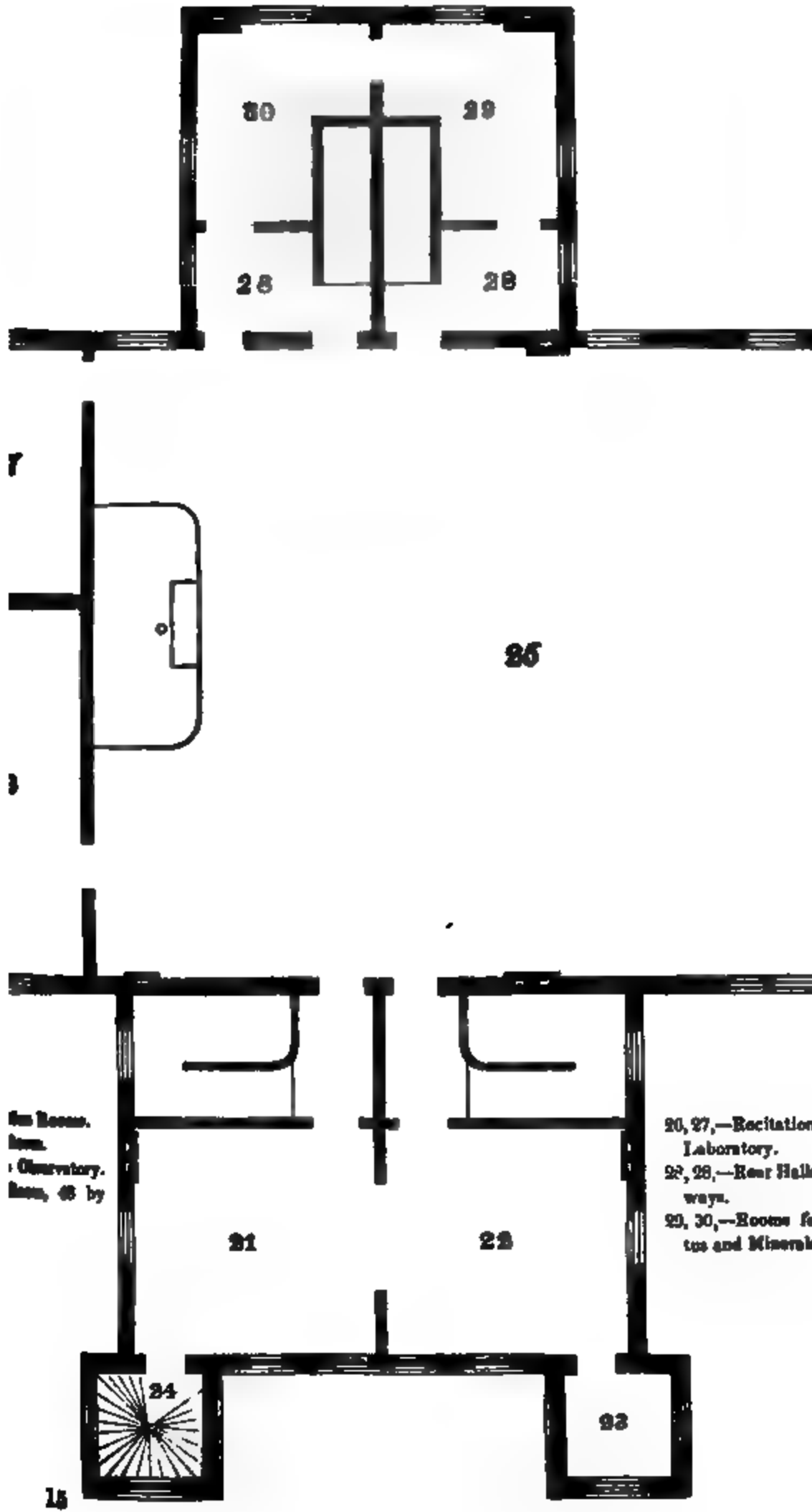


Fig. 4.—THIRD FLOOR.



## BALTIMORE PUBLIC LIBRARY, LECTURES, AND GALLERY OF FINE ARTS.

WE copy the following article from the National Intelligencer. The letter of Mr. Peabody needs no further introduction, or this act of munificent liberality any words of commendation.

## MUNIFICENT DONATION BY GEORGE PEABODY.

By the subjoined letter our readers will be apprised of an act no less munificent in its design than graceful in the simple and unostentatious manner of its execution. Mr. PEABODY, already illustrious for the elegant hospitality with which he delights to honor his countrymen when abroad, seems to have returned to our midst only to give new and more enduring expression to the promptings of that liberal heart which, in the language of the Holy Book, deviseth liberal things. Such a benefaction as that we are now called to record, sheds a lustre not only on the name of the donor, but also on that common humanity which it adorns. Reviving as it does the best recollections which have given to the name of Lorenzo de Medici its truest and most imperishable fame, this noble beneficence, we can not doubt, will remain, like his, a blessing to untold generations, and deserve to be cited as one of those acts which always mark and illustrate the age in which they appear.

BALTIMORE, FEBRUARY 12, 1857.

GENTLEMEN: In pursuance of a purpose long entertained by me, and which I communicated to some of you more than two years ago, I have determined, without further delay, to establish and endow an Institute in this city, which I hope may become useful toward the improvement of the moral and intellectual culture of the inhabitants of Baltimore, and collaterally to those of the State, and also toward the enlargement and diffusion of a taste for the fine arts.

My wishes in regard to the scope and character of this Institute are known to some of you through a personal communication of my purpose. In the sequel of that letter I shall further advert to this subject.

In presenting to you the object I propose, I wish you to understand that the details proper to its organization and government and its future control and conduct, I submit to your judgment and discretion; and the perpetuity of that control I confide to you and your successors, to be appointed in the manner prescribed in this letter.

I request you to accept this trust as my friends, amongst whom I hope there will ever be found the utmost harmony and concert of action in all that relates to the achievement of the good which it is my aim to secure to the city.

You and your successors will constitute forever a board of trustees, twenty-five in number, to be maintained in perpetual succession, for the accomplishment, preservation, and supervision of the purposes for which the institute is to be established. To you and your successors, therefore, I hereby give full and exclusive power to do whatsoever you may deem most advisable for the foundation, organization, and management of the proposed Institute, and to that end I give to you, and will place at your disposal, to be paid to you as you may require, for the present, three hundred thousand dollars, to be expended by you in such manner as you may determine to be most conducive to the effective and early establishment and future maintenance and support of such an Institute as you may deem best adapted to fulfill my intentions as expressed in this letter.

In the general scheme and organization of the Institute I wish to provide—

*First.* For an extensive library, to be well furnished in every department of knowledge and of the most approved literature, which is to be maintained for the free use of all persons who may desire to consult it, and be supplied with every proper convenience for daily reference and study, within appointed hours of the week days of every year. It should consist of the best works on every subject embraced within the scope of its plan, and as completely adapted as the means at your command may allow to satisfy the researches of students who may be engaged in the pursuit of knowledge not ordinarily attainable in the

private libraries of the country. It should be guarded and preserved from abuse, and rendered efficient for the purposes I contemplate in its establishment, by such regulations as the judgment and experience of the trustees may adopt or approve. I recommend, in reference to such regulations, that it shall not be constructed upon the plan of a circulating library; and that the books shall not be allowed to be taken out of the building, except in very special cases, and in accordance with rules adapted to them as exceptional privileges.

*Second.* I desire that ample provision and accommodation be made for the regular periodical delivery, at the proper season in each year, of lectures by the most capable and accomplished scholars and men of science within the power of the trustees to procure. These lectures should be directed to instruction in science, art, and literature. They should be established with such regulations as, in the judgment of the trustees, shall be most effectual to secure the benefits expected from them; and should, under proper and necessary restrictions adapted to preserve good order and guard against abuse, be open to the resort of the respectable inhabitants of both sexes of the city and State: such prices of admission being required as may serve to defray a portion of the necessary expense of maintaining the lectures without impairing their usefulness to the community.

In connection with this provision, I desire that the trustees, in order to encourage and reward merit, should adopt a regulation by which a number of the graduates of the public high schools of the city, not exceeding fifty of each sex, in each year, who shall have obtained by their proficiency in their studies and good behavior, certificates of merit from the commissioners or superintending authorities of the schools to which they may be attached, may, by virtue of such certificates, be entitled, as an honorary mark of distinction, to free admission to the lectures for one term or season after obtaining the certificates.

I also desire that, for the same purpose of encouraging merit, the trustees shall make suitable provisions for an annual grant of twelve hundred dollars, of which five hundred shall be distributed every year in money prizes, graduated according to merit, of sums not less than fifty dollars nor more than one hundred for each prize, to be given to such graduates of the public male high schools now existing, or which may hereafter be established, as shall in each year, upon examination and certificate of the school commissioners, or other persons having the chief superintendence of the same, be adjudged most worthy, from their fidelity to their studies, their attainments, their moral deportment, and their personal habits of cleanliness and propriety of manners; the sum of two hundred dollars to be appropriated to the purchase in every year of gold medals of two degrees, of which ten shall be of the value of ten dollars each, and twenty of the value of five dollars each, to be annually distributed to the most meritorious of the graduating classes of the public female high schools; these prizes to be adjudged for the same merit and under the like regulations as the prizes to be given to the graduates of the male high schools. The remaining five hundred dollars to be in like manner distributed in money prizes, as provided above for the graduates of the male high schools, in the same amounts respectively, to the yearly graduates in the school of design attached to the Mechanics' Institute of this city. To render this annual distribution of prizes effective to the end I have in view, I desire that the trustees shall digest, propose, and adopt all such rules and provisions, and procure the corresponding regulations on the part of the public institutions referred to, as they may deem necessary to accomplish the object.

*Third.* I wish, also, that the Institute shall embrace within its plan an academy of music, adapted, in the most effective manner, to diffuse and cultivate a taste for that, the most refining of all the arts. By providing a capacious and suitably furnished saloon, the facilities necessary to the best exhibitions of the art, the means of studying its principles and practising its compositions, and periodical concerts, aided by the best talent and most eminent skill within their means to procure, the trustees may promote the purpose to which I propose to devote this department of the Institute. They will make all such regulations as, in their judgment, are most likely to render the academy of music the instrument of permanent good to the society of the city. As it will necessarily incur considerable expense for its support, I desire that it may be, in part, sustained by such charges of admission to its privileges as the trustees may consider proper, and at the same time compatible with my design to render it useful to the com-

munity. And I suggest for their consideration the propriety of regulating the conditions of an annual membership of the academy, as well as the terms of occasional admission to the saloon, if they should consider it expedient at any time to extend the privilege of admission beyond the number of those who may be enrolled as members.

*Fourth.* I contemplate with great satisfaction as an auxiliary to the improvement of the taste, and through it the moral elevation of the character of the society of Baltimore, the establishment of a gallery of art in the department of painting and statuary. It is therefore my wish that such a gallery should be included in the plan of the institute, and that spacious and appropriate provision be made for it. It should be supplied to such an extent as may be practicable with the works of the best masters, and be placed under such regulations as shall secure free access to it, during stated periods of every year, by all orderly and respectable persons who may take an interest in works of this kind; and particularly that, under wholesome restraints to preserve good order and decorous deportment, it may be rendered instructive to artists in the pursuit of their peculiar studies and in affording them opportunity to make drawings and copies from the works it may contain.

As annual or periodical exhibitions of paintings and statuary are calculated, in my opinion, to afford equal gratification and instruction to the community, and may serve to supply a valuable fund for the enrichment of the gallery, I suggest to the trustees the establishment of such exhibitions, so far as they may find it practicable, from the resources within their reach.

*Lastly.* I desire that ample and convenient accommodation may be made in the building of the Institute for the use of the Maryland Historical Society, of which I am and have long been a member. It is my wish that that society should permanently occupy its appropriate rooms as soon as they are provided, and should, at the proper time when this can be done, be appointed by the trustees to be the guardian and protector of the property of the Institute; and that, if it accept this duty, and, in conformity to my wish, shall move into and take possession of the apartments designed for its use, it shall also be requested and empowered to assume the management and administration of the operations of the several departments, as the same shall be established and organized by the trustees; that it shall, at a proper time in every year, appoint from its own members appropriate and efficient committees, to be charged respectively with the arrangement and direction of the operations and conduct of each department in the functions assigned to each, by the trustees; that, in the performance of these duties, it shall keep in view the purposes which it is my aim to promote, give due attention to the details necessary to accomplish them, and adopt suitable measures to execute the plan of organization made by the trustees, and carry into full and useful effect my intentions as disclosed in this letter.

The trustees, after the Historical Society shall have accepted these duties, shall, nevertheless, possess a full and complete visitorial power over the proceedings of the society touching the subjects I have confided to the board. To guard against misapprehension which might lead to a conflict between these bodies, I beg it to be understood that in this arrangement I intend the power of the board to be adapted to the organization and general direction of the departments, and that of the society to their operations and conduct, in conformity with such organization and general direction. I hope that the board of trustees and the society, will always act in the discharge of the functions which I have assigned to them respectively with a liberal spirit of concert and coöperation, and with a harmonious and united determination to render the Institute an agency of enduring benefit to the community in which it is placed.

If there be any legal incapacity in the Maryland Historical Society to assume and perform the duties which it is my wish it should undertake, the trustees will be careful to wait until that impediment is removed by the grant of proper power to that end by the Legislature, before they commit these duties to that body. And if, at any time hereafter, that society shall become extinct, it will be the duty of the trustees then existing, to assume to themselves the ministration and management of the several departments of the Institute in the details I have here assigned to the care of the society.

The trustees will make such provisions out of the moneys I have now placed

at their disposal, and out of such as I may hereafter give them, as may be necessary for the purchase of the ground and the erection of the building for the Institute, and will also, in due time, make all suitable provisions for the investment of the several sums required for the repair, preservation, and insurance of the building and other property connected with it; for its fuel, lighting, and furniture; for the service of the library and apartments belonging to it; for the yearly purchase of books; for the service, management, and expense of the lecture department; for the charge and support of the academy of music; for the support, maintenance, and gradual increase of the gallery of arts; for the supply of the yearly prizes to the graduates of the high schools and the school of design; and for all proper contingent or incidental expenses of the Institute, in whatever branch the same may be needed. In the performance of this duty I wish them to make a specific designation of the fund appropriated to each department as well as of that for the general service of all, and that these several appropriations be made in such proportions as the necessity of each department may require, and the means at the disposal of the trustees may allow. And it is also my wish, in connection with this subject of the funds I have directed to be supplied, that they, as well as what I may hereafter supply, shall always be held under the control and guardianship of the trustees, in conformity with such regulations as they may adopt for their preservation, appropriation, and investment, from time to time, in the administration of the trust; and that when the Maryland Historical Society shall assume the management of the departments as I have mentioned above, the trustees shall put at its disposal, in each year, the amount they shall have appropriated for each service, as herein before required, to be disbursed by the society according to its appointed destination.

These, gentlemen, are the general instructions I have to impart to you for your guidance in the laborious duties I have committed to your care. You will perceive that my design is to establish an Institute which shall in some degree administer to the benefit of every portion of the community of Baltimore; which shall supply the means of pursuing the acquirement of knowledge and the study of art to every emulous student of either sex who may be impelled by the laudable desire of improvement to seek it; which shall furnish incentives to the ambition of meritorious youth in the public schools, and in that useful school of design under the charge of the Mechanics' Institute, by providing for those who excel a reward, which I hope will be found to be not only a token of honorary distinction, but also a timely contribution toward the means of the worthy candidate who shall win it, for the commencement of a successful career in life; which shall afford opportunity to those whom fortune has blessed with leisure to cultivate those kindly liberalizing arts that embellish the character by improving the perception of the beautiful and the true, and which, by habituating the mind to the contemplation of the best works of genius, render it more friendly and generous toward the success of deserving artists in their early endeavor after fame.

For the fulfilling and preserving the trust I have confided to you, my wish is that you, gentlemen, or as many of you as may accept this appointment, will meet together at as early a day as may be convenient for you, and take such measures for your own organization and government as you may find necessary, making a record of your acceptance and of all the proceedings you may adopt; that if your full number of twenty-five should be rendered incompetent by the refusal of any of you to accept the appointment, you will, as soon as practicable, fill the same by the selection of the necessary number from a list of two hundred names from the ranks of your most worthy fellow-citizens, which I herewith furnish you, and which list I desire you to enter upon your record for future use.

I also desire and request, that if at any time hereafter, during the life of the present generation, vacancies should occur in your number of twenty-five, by death, resignation, incapacity to serve, or removal from the State, you and your successors will fill such vacancies, by judicious selections from the list above mentioned, of such person or persons therein named as may then be living and may be qualified, by capacity and good standing in the community, to perform the duties required; and when, in after times, this generation shall have passed away, I desire that your successors may be preserved by the appointment to

vacant places in your board of such of your sons, or the sons of those on the list I have given you, as may then be accessible to the choice of your successors, and may be worthy, from their personal qualifications and good repute in Baltimore, to assume the charge of the Institute. And, finally, when these sources shall fail, I desire that the succession in the board of trustees shall be ever maintained by the careful selection, from time to time, of such eminent and capable citizens of Baltimore as may be willing to administer to the service of this community by the devotion of a portion of their time to a work which I earnestly hope may be found to be, both in the influence of its example, and in the direct administration of its purpose, a long, fruitful, and prosperous benefaction to the good people of Baltimore.

I must not omit to impress upon you a suggestion for the government of the Institute, which I deem to be of the highest moment, and which I desire shall be ever present to the view of the board of trustees. My earnest wish to promote, at all times, a spirit of harmony and good-will in society, my aversion to intolerance, bigotry, and party rancor, and my enduring respect and love for the happy institutions of our prosperous Republic, impel me to express the wish that the Institute I have proposed to you shall always be strictly guarded against the possibility of being made a theatre for the dissemination or discussion of sectarian theology or party politics; that it shall never minister, in any manner whatever, to political dissension, to infidelity, to visionary theories of a pretended philosophy, which may be aimed at the subversion of the approved morals of society; that it shall never lend its aid or influence to the propagation of opinions tending to create or encourage sectional jealousies in our happy country, or which may lead to the alienation of the people of one State or section of the Union from those of another; but that it shall be so conducted, throughout its whole career, as to teach political and religious charity, toleration, and beneficence, and prove itself to be, in all contingencies and conditions, the true friend of our inestimable Union, of the salutary institutions of free Government, and of liberty regulated by law. I enjoin these precepts upon the board of trustees and their successors forever, for their invariable observance and enforcement in the administration of the duties I have confided to them.

And now, in conclusion, I have only to express my wish that, in the construction of the building you are to erect, you will allow space for future additions in case they may be found necessary; and that, in its plan, style of architecture, and adaptation to its various uses, it may be worthy of the purposes to which it is dedicated, and may serve to embellish a city whose prosperity, I trust, will ever be distinguished by an equal growth in knowledge and virtue.

I am, with great respect, your friend,

GEORGE PEABODY.

Wm. F. Mayhew,  
John P. Kennedy,  
Chas. J. M. Eaton,  
Thomas Swann,  
George Brown,  
John B. Morris,  
S. Owings Hoffman,  
G. W. Burnap,  
Wm. H. D. C. Wright,  
Josias Pennington,  
Wm. McKim,  
David S. Wilson,  
John M. Gordon,

Sam. W. Smith,  
Chauncey Brooks,  
Wm. F. Murdoch,  
Enoch Pratt,  
J. Mason Campbell,  
Geo. W. Brown,  
Galloway Cheston,  
Geo. P. Tiffany,  
Wm. Prescott Smith,  
Chas. Bradenbaugh,  
Edw. M. Greenway, Jr.,  
Wm. C. Shaw.

While engaged in devising this munificent gift for Baltimore, Mr. Peabody did not forget his native town—but as a birth-day present, sent a check for the sum of *ten thousand dollars* to establish a Branch Institute in that part of the town of old Danvers which now constitutes a town by itself.



## BELGIUM.

## INTERNATIONAL PHILANTHROPIC CONGRESS AT BRUSSELS.

We abridge the following notice of the International Philanthropic Congress from "*The Laborer's Friend*," of Nov. 29, 1856 :

The sittings of the Congress commenced on Monday, the 15th, and closed on Saturday, the 20th of Sept., 1856, in the Public Hall of the Académie Royale des Sciences et des Beaux-Arts, and during several of the sittings many ladies occupied the side seats, particularly on the occasion when His Majesty and the Duke of Brabant honored the Congress with their presence.

The number of members amounted to upwards of 200, more than 180 of whom were non-residents, including representatives from most parts of Europe. On the first day after the reading of the list of adherents by M. Dupetiaux, the Secretary, an eloquent opening address was delivered by the President, M. Charles Rogier, formerly Minister of the Interior ; and various members stated the progress of philanthropic efforts in the different countries which they represented.

The Congress was then divided into three Sections, and the morning sittings were devoted to the separate consideration of the subjects in Committees and Sub-committees, or Commissions ; the afternoon being appropriated to the united reception and discussion of the various Reports of the several Sections, as presented to the general body.

The first Section treated of Alimentary Substances in their relation to Agriculture.

The second Section treated of Alimentary Substances in their relation to Political and Charitable Economy.

Under this head was classed the question of the abuse of strong drinks, regarded in the double light of the loss of nutritive substances employed in their manufacture, and their influence on the health and morality of the Working Classes.

The encouragement and the creation of a spirit of forethought and saving amongst workmen, and the institutions intended to favor and to create such a spirit.

The means of preventing the inordinate increase of population, and especially the regular and permanent organization of emigration.

The third Section treated of Alimentary Substances viewed in their relationship to Scientific and Industrial Operations, Processes, and Inventions, adapted to facilitate and to bring to perfection Manual Labor ; to render healthy certain industrial pursuits ; and to prevent accidents : the improvement of the Dwellings, of the Furniture and Clothes, of the Working Classes.

The Programme prepared by the Committee of Organization contained, under each of the preceding Sections or Divisions, a very detailed and carefully-prepared analysis, subdivided into about fifty heads, indicating the leading features of the subjects to be considered.

Over the several Sections Presidents were appointed.

In the first Section—COUNT ARRIVABENE (Belgium) and the VISCOUNT DE CAUMONT (France).

In the second Section—MONSIEUR LIEDTS, Minister of State.

*Vice-Presidents* — PROFESSOR SCHUBERT (Prussia), M. WOLOWEKI (France).

In the third Section—The RIGHT HONORABLE WILLIAM COWPER, M. P., assisted by M. VISSCHERS (Belgium).

We give an abridgment of the addresses which appear most likely to interest our readers, and to convey a general idea of the proceedings at the Congress.

The President, M. CHARLES ROGIER, in his opening address, said—

Gentlemen, the Statistical Congress of 1853, taking up an idea presented to the “*Congrès Pénitentiaire*” of 1847, unanimously enunciated the idea of seeing, at some early period, united in a general Congress, the men who, in different countries, occupy themselves with questions relating to the physical, the moral, and the intellectual improvement of the Working Classes and of the Poor. This, then, is the order of the day transmitted to their successors by the members of the Statistical Society.

It was left to us to consider the order in which it would be most suitable to take up these questions, and we have not hesitated in giving the priority to those which relate to the material life of the people—Food, Dwellings, Clothing, Manual Labor.

The most difficult and the most lofty part of the task will present itself at the time when the investigations shall have especial and deep reference to intellectual, moral, and social improvements.

The Congress certainly does not pretend to such a paradox as that of seeing living facts, ameliorations full-blown, arise at once from its discussions. Our task is limited to the exchange of ideas, to elaborating in common, and to propagating the theories to which science and experience assign a practical value, and which are, to say the truth, ideas, germs, thrown into the world under the eye of God. All are not destined to ripen. Many will be dispersed by the winds, fall and perish upon a rebellious soil. In the most positive sciences, how much lost labor, how many researches vanish away; how numerous the risks of the most valuable discoveries, of the most obvious truths making their way and being usefully applied! Sow, Gentlemen, propagate healthy ideas, and, without impatience, without discouragement, wait the harvest. The common efforts of so many choice spirits, the contact of so many devoted hearts, will give birth, be ye sure, at the proper time, to something good and useful.

We hasten, Gentlemen, to give place to the honorable Reporters, the Delegates from different countries here present. We hasten to assist at this Exposition, this review of nations, in which Belgium will ask to occupy its place. What can be more instructive, more fruitful, than these inquiries, this exchange of information, these mutual lessons of nation to nation, and these eloquent facts, gathered from the lips even of men the most distinguished, the most competent, the most truthful? Is not this the commencement of a profound reform, and of a new progress in the relations of government and people?

Yes, Gentlemen, that will one day be a touching and a sublime spectacle, when these great assizes of benevolence are held, when each nation shall appear, by its most illustrious representatives, who shall come at recurrent periods to render an account and to testify of what has been done, and even of what has been omitted to be done, for their own improvement, and for the happiness of the largest numbers. Ah! these struggles will be valuable, fruitful; these rivalries of nations will be useful; and how beautiful will be the crowns of the conquerors! You, Gentlemen, have passed over different countries of Europe to render this first testimony: you are all united on the free and peaceable soil of Belgium, to prepare the harvest

of the future pacific workmen. Devoted hearts, veterans, and recruits in the holy cause, be welcome amongst us. To the work, and now blessed be your work !. (Triple rounds of applause.)

This address was followed by remarks from delegates from France, Sardinia, England, Norway, and Switzerland.

*Permanent institution of the Congress.*—It was decided to convert the Congress into a permanent international institution for the discussion of questions of philanthropy, with corresponding members in every country.

*International Correspondence.*—The Congress decided on proclaiming the necessity for the creation of a system of international correspondence, by the aid of which mutual communications may be made of all the facts, publications, reports, and other documents relating to philanthropic efforts, to improvements, or to reforms, which have reference to the working and to the indigent classes in each country. A variety of means for effecting this very important object were pointed out, and the representatives of each country were invited, before leaving Brussels, to communicate to M. Dupetiaux, the Secretary, the names and addresses of persons with whom the Central Committee in Brussels might correspond on the subject.

Reports were made of the discussion in the several sections, which are to be printed. We give a summary of the conclusions on one or two points.

*Manufacture of Bread.*—The industry which has for its object the manufacture of bread requires a reform almost complete. It is, under ordinary circumstances, still in its infancy, regulated by old rules, by old customs, adopting bad habits with superannuated engines and implements. It is therefore of importance earnestly to engage all who can contribute to this work, to neglect nothing which may bring about its accomplishment ; for although it ought to be very easy to obtain excellent bread, every one is obliged to acknowledge it is rare to find that which is good.

The Report proceeds to point out various reasons which have brought about an evil so prejudicial to the laboring classes, and suggests several practical remedies, some of which are of general, and others of more limited application.

*Preparation of Food.*—Those who have entered the dwellings of the working classes require little to convince them, that everywhere, in the preparation of articles of food, there is much to be desired. It may be affirmed, that, generally, his housekeeper does not know how food ought to be prepared so as to preserve in it the nutritive qualities which it possesses, and to give it the most suitable form, so as not to cause satiety and the distaste which is produced in man by the too-frequently-repeated use of the same alimentary substances.

The Commission of Organization desires to accomplish a reform in this state of things, and the Third Section approving fully of the object, points out the teaching of cookery in girls' schools as the most effectual means of accomplishing it. This kind of instruction has been already adopted. The General Council in the Brussels Hospitals employs it in its school of young orphans : it distributes even prizes to those of its pupils who distinguish themselves most in this kind of knowledge.

*Preservation of Food.*—The preservation of articles of food, and particularly of vegetables, after the process which combines the steam-kitchen, desiccation, and compression, has made, particularly of late years, such progress, that it ought to be encouraged. The improved process, to which recourse is had for this object in Europe, ought to be propagated and studied as much as possible. Improved means for the preservation of meat would enable us to profit by the immense stores of beasts in America and in other countries.

In this respect it is to be regretted that the salt meats imported from the United States do not always unite those conditions which are necessary to fit them for the habitual consumption of Europe.

*Dwellings of the Working Classes.*—M. EMILE MULLER (France) said—Gentlemen, amongst the questions pointed out in the Programme of the Philanthropic Congress, and chosen with so much tact and intelligence, that which relates to the dwellings of the working classes has an importance and an interest well understood at the present time by the men of benevolence and of heart, who have responded to the call of the Committee.

When the *Congrès d'Hygiène* was held in Brussels in 1852, the works for the Improvement of the Dwellings of the Laboring Classes were not at that time of great importance, and existed only in England, in France, and in some other countries: the mind was only beginning then to be occupied with this subject. The idea was at that time only in the period of incubation; some fore-thoughtful minds alone were struck with its importance; its practical utility had not then made an impression on the minds of the many. It was at the meeting of the *Congrès d'Hygiène* in 1852 that the great question of the Improvement of the Dwellings of the Working Classes must have happily passed through this first epoch, and have entered into its period of advent.

It is, then, with pleasure, with gratitude to our predecessors of 1852, that we have seen the representatives of so many different nations present themselves before this assembly of humanity, with a large and imposing array of facts accomplished, or about to be accomplished. •

The first Model Houses for the Working Classes were<sup>o</sup> constructed in England in 1844; in 1852 the report of your Committee only presented to you the buildings constructed in Great Britain; and we may be permitted to foresee, almost to affirm, that your next Session will have to record works completed in every country.

It is with regret, we must say, that up to the present time, excepting in Great Britain—at least so we believe—all the efforts have been made exclusively in favor of the dwellings in towns; whilst in the country there is found a degree of wretchedness quite as much deserving our interest.

We now proceed to the Programme of Conditions.

1. Choice of Situation. 2. Arrangement of the Houses. 3. Width of Streets. 4. Yards and Gardens. 5. Choice of Materials. 6. Floors. 7. Ventilation.

*Under each of the above heads the Report contains many practical remarks, which may be regarded as an addenda or supplement to the Schedule of General Rules for the Construction of Workmen's Dwellings, adopted, after mature deliberation, by the Congrès d'Hygiène† in 1852, and published in the Report of the said Congress, as*

\* An Association having this object in view was formed in Edinburgh upwards of thirty years since, and subsequently another in the northwest part of London: both failed in the accomplishment of their object, owing to the difficulty of obtaining suitable building sites, and the funds contributed were returned to the Subscribers. These facts disprove a statement recently made, which would assign a much later date to the *first idea* of building dwellings for the working classes.

† At this Congress, Mr. Roberts represented the Society for Improving the Condition of the Laboring Classes, as their Honorary Architect, and assisted in the settlement of the Gen-

will as subsequently (in 1855) by the Belgium Government, in a separate Pamphlet of 60 pages, entitled "*Amélioration des Habitations d'Ouvrières.*" We omit all the remarks under these several heads, excepting those on

*The arrangement or disposition of the Houses.*—Whether the question relate to detached houses, or to dwellings in stories, to small or to large houses, the first condition is to give the chief thought to ventilation and to light: the blind alleys, which obstruct a free circulation of air, should be carefully avoided.

Unquestionably, the system which ought to be chosen is that which would provide for each family a *house*, whether isolated, or whether in groups with others, under a common roof, and with a garden added to it: but it is impossible to adopt this plan in all localities, in the great centres of population, especially where land is of too great value. When financial considerations do not allow the adoption of arrangements which are so advantageous for the workmen, it remains to choose between large roomy buildings, or workmen's barracks, and the appropriation or reconstruction of existing houses. It is from the adoption of this last measure that, according to our opinion, the most fruitful and happy results may be expected. It does not crush the feeling of "*amour-propre*," so active under the blouse of the workman, and which gives him an antipathy to all institutions which appear calculated to separate him in a distinct locality, or isolated quarter. Improve, then, the houses already constructed; carefully renew such as are abandoned by those who remove to new quarters of the town; and if new buildings are indispensable, let them be erected in all parts of the town, in conformity with the known laws of health, avoiding, as much as possible, all internal communication between the different apartments.

The mixture of classes, the contact of men of all grades of education and of different ranks, has a considerable influence on moral improvement.

When, in fine, special considerations lead to a choice of the caserne, or barrack system, notwithstanding the success of some large piles of buildings for workmen's families, arranged with internal staircases and corridors, as may be seen in England as well as in France, my honorable colleague thinks, in accordance with your Commission, that there is but one means of arranging them in a suitable manner, but one plan to be followed, that which, in principle, is embodied in the house built for fifty-four families, in *Streatham-street*, London. We speak of the system of external galleries and corridors. One part of the inconvenience disappears in reality in the adoption of this arrangement: the staircase is placed externally, the corridors are open and over each other, each apartment opens by a small lobby on to these galleries. The air circulates freely everywhere, and, leaving his abode, the tenant meets his neighbor as he meets him in the street.

In reference to the *Width of Streets*.—The authorities ought everywhere to fix the width of the streets. Very serious reasons exist for leading us to hope that decisive steps will be taken on this subject. Two cases suffice to

---

and Rules here referred to. The larger portion of the Plans annexed to the Report of the said Congress are those which have been published by the Society.

show the importance of this measure. When cholera prevailed in Paris, the narrow streets there were 33 deaths in 1000 inhabitants, whilst in the wide streets there were only 19 in 1000. At Genoa, during the last invasion of cholera, it made such dreadful ravages, that the municipality was put to the expense of 2,500,000 francs, chiefly for the relief of those inhabitants who occupy the part of the city consisting of narrow alleys.

We have now to refer to the works which have been executed. Those of Great Britain are too well known and recorded in several publications need being mentioned. We only observe that the capital employed in the construction of these establishments yields at least 4 per cent. after the deduction of all expenses. Of our efforts in France,\* and of their results you have already heard at a former meeting of the Congress. But it is a duty to say, that, with some slight exceptions, the generous intentions of the Government have been but badly seconded: the credit of ten millions open for the dwellings of the laboring classes is far from being exhausted.

But in no country have there been efforts made similar to those of the *Commission permanente de secours mutuels* in Belgium; that is to say, that Ducpetiaux has been one of the first occupied in this question, and who has entered on the path in which we tread; every thing has been weighed and studied. So many praiseworthy efforts deserve success, and, ere long, we shall come to Brussels,† to find united in the dwellings about to be constructed every known improvement. The pledge of this is given in the memorandums, plans, designs, &c., collected together by M. Ducpetiaux and M. Dumont, the architect, in the Model House we have all visited with the interest excited by the remarkable exhibition of domestic economy, a happy result of the thought which has brought us together.

We have to observe, further, the Model House built by M. Pauwels (a large manufacturer of railway carriages) for his unmarried workmen, and his project for family dwelling-houses, to be immediately built. Finally the dwellings and establishments of every description, calculated to promote the well-being of the work-people, which have been raised by the Vieille Montagne Company; and also by a great number of the principal industrial establishments in Belgium.

In Germany, the undertakings known to us are—

A *Société Anonyme* in Berlin, which has built twelve houses, each containing eight to twelve tenements, let at low rents.

A Society at Bremen which has built sixty cottages, let at such prices as are calculated to oppose and to compete with the large casernes. The Shareholders receive 4 per cent., and the undertaking succeeds well.

\* Plans and much valuable information with reference to the *cités ouvrières* constructed in France will be found in M. Emile Muller's work, entitled "*Habitations Ouvrières*," published by Dalmont, Quai des Augustins, 49. Paris, 1855 and 1856.

† The establishment of a Society in Brussels for the erection of Workmen's Houses in that city was announced the last day of the Congress. The capital to be 250,000 francs in shares of 1000 francs each, with power of increase to 1,000,000 francs. Interest to be paid 4 per cent., with a sinking fund for liquidating the capital. The rents are not to exceed a charge of 6 per cent., on the outlay, and to be so adjusted as to allow of the tenants becoming owners of the houses on the system of annuities.

At *Brandenburg* there are six houses of eight tenements each : the Shareholders receive 4 per cent., and there is a Sinking Fund.

There is also a distinct establishment at *Königsberg*, and another to which the *Czar* contributed.

In *Holland*, at Amsterdam, there are three Societies, in each of which the capital varies in amount from 200,000 to 800,000 francs. These Societies have built ordinary houses of three stories, large houses like barracks, and have improved or repaired existing buildings purchased for that purpose. The Societies recently established are founded on the calculation of 4 per cent. interest. Each dwelling is supplied with water and gas. At the Hague, and at Rotterdam, there are special buildings, and municipal laws have been enacted, which forbid the occupation of unhealthy houses.

In *Switzerland*, at St. Croix, in the Canton de Vaud, at Locle, at Chaux-du-Fond, in the Canton de Neuchatel, and at Geneva, we find works already constructed. In the last-named city there is a *Société Anonyme*, called *Association Immobilière* : it dates from July 1855, and has for its object the facilitating the acquirement of houses by the working classes, and stimulates thriftiness by offering a solid investment for small savings : the deposits received are as low as 50 cents. or 5d. per week.

In *Sweden*, at Stockholm, thirteen houses, built in different quarters of the city, provide dwellings for about 1200 persons : the amount of rent is fixed by the general Council of the town, according to the situation and extent of the tenancy.

At *Göteborg* more than 100 families have taken up their abode in the new buildings, and this work progresses, thanks to the generosity of an individual, whose name we regret not to know.

In *Denmark*, the Government, with the concurrence of the Chamber, has promulgated a law in reference to buildings : this law contains well-devised regulations, which deserve imitation. It fixes the minimum number and dimensions of the rooms to be occupied, either by single workmen, or by families : it fixes the relative size of the court, in regard to the house and its superface : it also fixes the date after which a house newly built may be occupied.

At Gronigen, amongst other places, there exists, already, houses constructed especially for the laboring classes.

At Turin, at Rome, at Genoa, there are likewise schemes, the accomplishment of which, we may hope, are at hand.

In Australia, and in the United States of America, the same question is the order of the day. At New York and Boston there have lately been built more dwellings for the poor which combine all the substantial comforts of air, light, water, heat, seclusion, and accessibility.

The Society at Florence (which has constructed houses for one hundred families\*) has set a good example, the imitation of which may be recom-

---

\* A full description of these buildings, with statistical details, will be found in the *Laborer's Friend* for March, 1854.



mended. The document which has been presented to your Commission is a triumphant answer to the objection too often renewed, that houses built for the working classes are not occupied by workmen.

Mr. HENRY ROBERTS (England)—said : The first day of the Congress I placed on your table a pamphlet\* which gives the results of our efforts in England for the improvement of the dwellings of the laboring classes, and there this important and striking fact is shown, that, in the Model Houses of the two Societies in London, the highest average of the annual mortality has not exceeded 13.6 per 1000, whilst the average general mortality in the districts in which the greater part of the Model Houses are situated is 27.5 per 1000. The occupants of these houses have not been the victims of cholera ; or, if any have been attacked, the cases are so rare that they can scarcely be spoken of, whilst neighboring houses have been ravaged by the disease.

But, gentlemen, in England we have found the necessity of instructing the laboring classes in regard to their health, and the keeping their houses in good order, and much advantage has been derived from these lessons. At the *Congrès d'Hygiène*, in 1852, I had the honor of submitting a proposition to this effect : " I propose to the Congress to declare the utility of establishing in each country, and also in the principal centres of the population, a collection as complete as possible, a kind of museum, where shall be gathered together models, plans, specimens of materials, &c., relating to hygienique amelioration and progress." This proposition, which was adopted unanimously, has produced good results. To-day I take the liberty of submitting a resolution, which is thus expressed :

"The Congress declares that it is of public utility that the working classes be enlightened by all possible means in regard to the improvement and the keeping of their houses in good order."

It declares that the instruction of the young, in the laboring classes ought to comprise all which relates to the cleanliness of their persons and of their dwellings, to the benefits resulting from good ventilation, and the evils arising from humidity.

"It thinks, *enfin*, that the study of the science of preserving health is one which ought to be rendered accessible to all."

As a specimen of what has been done in England with this view, I present to the Congress a pamphlet† which has been translated into French and circulated in Switzerland and in the north of Italy.

Gentlemen, we scatter the seed on the earth : some fruits from the labors of the last Congress have been already gathered, and permit me to add, that *it is with the blessing of God* we may hope for a rich harvest in the future.

\* A French translation (2d edition) of "The Physical Condition of the Laboring Classes &c.," published at 21 Exeter Hall. Upwards of 150 copies of this pamphlet were distributed to members of the Congress.

† "Home Reform, or Advice to the Laboring Classes on the Improvement of their Dwellings and the keeping them in good condition," published at 24 Exeter Hall. Extracts from this pamphlet have been published in works circulating extensively in France, Switzerland, Sweden, &c.

## SCOTLAND.

THE Press and the Lecture are both made available by the friends of educational progress in urging on the people of Scotland the necessity of incorporating improvements on their system of parochial and university education.

**EARL OF ELGIN BEFORE THE EDINBURGH PHILOSOPHICAL INSTITUTION.**—In the introductory lecture, the Earl of Elgin suggests as the cure of superficial knowledge among the professedly educated, is “to raise the standard of general knowledge and cultivation so high that smatterers will be little likely to mistake their own shallowness for profundity.” Our inference from this address is, that he recommends for Scotland a system of public schools, open to all, good enough for all, rich and poor, and objectionable to no one religious denomination. The following references show his estimate of the American school system.

*General Education in the United States.*—The passengers by the Mayflower were, in birth, education, fortune, and zeal, coequal ; and on this dead level of social equality, it was soon discovered that no institutions, except such as conferred equal rights and privileges on all, could be made to stand. There was absolutely nothing for it, therefore, except to endeavor, by extending to the utmost the benefit of intellectual culture, to limit as much as possible the number of those who, if left to themselves, would be likely, through adverse circumstances or lack of opportunity, to swell the list of dupes. The earnest and patriotic men to whom the rising fortunes of these young communities were intrusted, desried this truth from afar, and hailing it with joy, set diligently and from the first to work to secure, against all risks and casualties, those interests of popular education which, in their peculiar circumstances, they had justly brought themselves to consider the palladium of the State. (Cheers.)

An intelligent traveller, writing a short time ago from New York, observes that the willingness of the people to tax themselves for educational purposes seems almost to run to excess in that country ; and, he adds, the wealthier classes on whom this burden falls, in proportion to their fortunes, bear it without grudging, because experience has taught them that, with the extension of education, the value of property rises. (Cheers.) “Wherever,” says another, “the sons and daughters of the pilgrims find their way, there are established homes, schools, and churches, shops, and legislative assemblies, the free press, hotels for strangers, and asylums for the unfortunate and the orphan.” Mr. Whitworth, commissioner from Great Britain to the New York Exhibition in 1853, writes :—“In every State in the Union, and particularly in the North, education is, by means of common schools, placed within the reach of each individual, and all classes avail themselves of the opportunities afforded. The desire of knowledge so early imparted is greatly increased, while the facilities for diffusing it are amply provided through the instrumentality of a free press. The benefits which result to the public can hardly be over-estimated in a national point

of view, but it is to the co-operation of both that they must undoubtedly be ascribed." And Mr. Whitworth's colleague, Mr. Wallis, reporting on the state of manufactures, says:—"Here (in the Northern States) where sound and systematic education has been longest, and in all probability most perfectly carried out, the greatest manufacturing development are to be found. Bringing a mind prepared by thorough school discipline, and educated up to a far higher standard than those of a much superior social grade in society in the Old World, the American working boy develops rapidly into the skilled artisan; and having once mastered one part of his business, he is never content until he has mastered all." In another part of his report, talking of the precious metals, Mr. Wallis says that having their minds prepared by education, the artisans seize on very difficult points of manufacturing construction as it were by mere instinct and speaking of Schools of Design, he says, "The rapid progress made by the students at these schools is another evidence of the influence of the primary education which it is the good fortune of the children, male and female, of the United States to receive."

*Educational Experience of Canada.*—Although partially veiled by the decorous trappings of Monarchy, the social and political institutions of the British North American colonies have their root in equality of condition, no less than those of the adjoining States of the American Union. There, too accordingly, we soon made the discovery that there were dangers ahead if political power should fall into the hands of masses of men unfitted by education and training to resist the seductions of quacks and smatterers; and we turned to the same quarter for protection against it. The Canadian educational system is distinguished from that of the northern States of the Union chiefly by the more strenuous endeavor which has been made under the latter to associate religion with the common-school teaching. Not that we undertake to relieve parents or pastors from responsibility for the religious training of the child. On the contrary, it is our desire that they should feel the full weight of that responsibility, and acknowledge that the utmost that can be expected of the day-school is, that it should better fit the child for the direct religious instruction which it is to receive at church at the Sabbath-school, and at home. (Cheers.) But we have adopted precautions beyond those which our neighbors have seen fit to take, in order to insure, in so far as human means can do so, that in its practical working the system shall be constantly pervaded by a Christian spirit. With this view, influential clergymen have been placed on the Board which superintends the whole, and in the several school sections, the local clergy of all denominations are *ex officio* visitors of the schools. After all, it is a great thing to encourage whatever tends to promote Christian charity and brotherly love in a community.

## ENGLAND.

## LYCEUMS, MECHANIC INSTITUTIONS, AND LIBRARIES.

We have received from an attentive correspondent reports of addresses before lyceums and mechanic institutions by men of high parliamentary standing, which show the interest felt in this class of educational agencies, as well as embody many practical suggestions applicable to the improvement of similar institutions with us.

**INAUGURATION OF THE LYCEUM AT OLDHAM.**—We make the following extracts from LORD STANLEY'S speech at the opening of the new Lyceum building at Oldham—a manufacturing town with a population of over 70,000.

*Large amount of leisure not requisite to the acquisition of knowledge.*—It is true that most, perhaps all of those whom your Lyceum will instruct, are not men of leisure ; but it is not true that a large amount of leisure is requisite in order to obtain a considerable proportion of learning. The brain, like the body, can only bear a certain amount of active exertion—nay, of all bodily organs it is the most delicate, the most easily put out of repair, the most difficult to set right when once disorganized. Now, it is liable to suffer in two ways—from too little work in those whose labor is mechanical only, or who do no work at all ; from too much work in those whose labor employs chiefly or exclusively the intellectual faculties. It is idle, therefore, to suppose that the majority of men, though free from any pressure of business, though independent of a profession or trade, can, whatever the amount of their leisure, or however much they may desire it, occupy any thing like the whole, or even the greater part of their time in study. If no external circumstances interpose to limit their exertions, Nature will and does. The mind only retains its freshness for a limited time ; if that time be exceeded, exhaustion ensues, little is learnt, and the seeds of future mischief are sown in the constitution. What I contend for then, is this—that no man willing to study need despond because he can only command a portion, it may be, of his evenings, while others are masters of the whole day. It is bad arithmetic in such matters to compute that four times as much can be learnt in four hours as in one. Just as reasonably might one argue that, because one good dinner daily gives health and strength, therefore four such dinners every day would make a man four times as strong. and four times as healthy. Just as reasonably might one affirm, what all who have looked into the elements of finance know to be untrue, that if you double the rate of a tax you will double the amount it produces. The fact is, nature intends that we should develop all our faculties, that we should work our whole organization in turn, and not a part of it only. The man who exerts his brain only, and the man who exerts his muscles only, is equally violating her laws, and those laws are never violated with impunity. I don't want to overstate my case. I am not denying that the hours of labor are many, nor that the cares of life press heavily on the working man who is also a student. But I affirm that the obstacles which labor places in the way of intellectual advance, though real, are less formidable than they look, while by their nature they save the student from

other dangers quite as real which beset the man whose time is entirely his own—the danger, on the one hand, of an idle and relaxed habit; the danger, on the other, of mental wear and tear induced by not knowing when to leave off. Even four hours in the week, or rather more than 20 in the year, regularly and earnestly devoted to one branch of thought, will carry an intelligent man very far in any study whatever.

*Recreation a necessity.*—Recollect what modern society is. Recollect what modern labor is. We bring together men in masses; we employ them in mechanical pursuits. The very perfection of the work done,—the cause of that perfection, division of labor, carried to the highest point,—tends to render occupation more and more monotonous; so that the intellect, craving stimulus, asking for variety, is starved. For, to an active brain, intellectual inaction—the want of subjects for thought—is quite as painful as to the habitually inert temperament is the unaccustomed toil of thought. What, then, I ask, becomes of the vast masses of intelligent men and women whom we congregate in these towns? What are our national amusements? None—or next to none. Even the simplest of all pleasures—the enjoyment of natural beauty, is rarely possible. The leisure hours here fall mostly at night, when outdoor pleasures are inappropriate, even if the neighborhood of our towns afforded more facilities for such pleasures than they do. We want, then, besides teaching for those who will be instructed, rational amusements for those who only desire to be interested. I am not ashamed of putting that prominently forward as an object which we ought to keep in view. Health is weakened, disease generated, life shortened, by the depression of spirits which follows upon an unstimulated existence. Men die for want of cheerfulness, as plants die for want of light. That is a fact to which you may get medical testimony in plenty; and it is to this very difficulty of finding pleasures—a difficulty arising in part out of the accidents of our social state, in part out of the grave, earnest, energetic, reflective, but rather sombre cast of mind which for many centuries has distinguished the people of this nation—that I ascribe that habit of excessive social indulgence which is still the principal reproach upon our national morals and manners. I affirm, then, that in every point of view—intellectual, moral, even sanitary institutions such as this is intended to be—partly social, partly literary, useful to the few who study in earnest, attractive to the many whose chief aim is amusement—have in both those capacities a real and substantial value. Your lectures, your reading-room, your evening classes, your lending library—for that essential element of popular usefulness I hope it is not proposed to omit—will each draw to you subscribers, each probably subscribers of a different class. The establishment of an athenæum, a lyceum, an institute, call it which you will, in every large town of England is no longer a mere luxury which may be enjoyed or dispensed with at pleasure, but has become an essential and integral part of our social organization.

*Lyceums the universities of the people.*—In my belief, their sphere of action admits of vast enlargement. I hold that they are destined to perform, in regards the more numerous class of society, the same functions as the

which the Universities discharge towards the wealthier. They combine two advantages of which it is scarcely possible to over-estimate the value—first, that members of every religious denomination meet here upon equal terms; next, that they start unencumbered with traditions, and taking as their point of departure the educational ideas, not of any former, but of the present age. Here, gentlemen, let me express a hope that you will not rest content with what has been or is being done—not even with the success and progress of this institution,—but that you will couple with it, either as part of the same establishment or separately under the act of Parliament, a free, or nearly free, library for the use of the 100,000 persons who inhabit this town and its neighborhood. Manchester, Salford, Liverpool, Bolton, even Warrington, have set you the example. Out of eighteen places where it has been proposed to put the act in force it has been carried in thirteen; and having watched the movement during four years, I can bear witness that, though difficulties are often made about the setting up of a free library, no instance has occurred within my knowledge where, one having been established, it has failed to command popular support, or to answer the purpose of its establishment. If, as has been the case in some places, a rate be objected to, the thing may be done by private means. A capital of 2,000*l.* will give, at the lowest estimate, a collection of 10,000 volumes to begin with, and 1,000 subscribers of only 4*s.* yearly will supply an income amply sufficient to defray all necessary expenses. But a rate-supported library, is preferable, first, because in that case alone can it be absolutely free; secondly, because that mode of support gives to it a more public and popular character.

*Subjects of instruction in Lyceums.*—First, I think it is desirable that intellectual competition should be stimulated in every possible manner; and I heard, therefore, with peculiar pleasure some words which fell from the President of the institution this morning, as to the propriety of establishing examinations and rewarding efficiency with prizes. What is read with some definite and tangible end in view is apt to be more carefully studied and longer remembered than what is read in a vague and general idea of improvement. Next, I hold that a wide latitude should be given to individual taste. What a man wishes to learn he will learn better, more quickly, and with more profit to himself than what he undertakes to study merely upon the recommendation of others, even though the latter may be more generally useful. Subject to this qualification I will mention those topics which seem most likely to be of service. I see in a prospectus which has been issued mention of French classes and others for the teaching of languages. I am far from depreciating such studies; their interest is great, their use is great even for those who stay at home,—much more for those who travel; but where time and opportunity are limited, and where no special inducement exists, I doubt whether the acquiring of languages is the most necessary or profitable branch of knowledge. Words, after all, are only vehicles of thought; the stores of thought accumulated in our own tongue are already immense; and if much of life be passed in that which is rather preparation for study than study itself, little time may re-

main to complete the building for which such wide and ample foundations have been laid. It seems to me—but remember that I give my opinion on these subjects with the utmost deference—that the foundation of complete and rational education lies in the knowledge of natural laws deduced from recorded facts ; a knowledge, first, of those laws by which the inorganic world is governed—as those which regulate astronomical, geological, and chemical phenomena ; next, of those laws which govern organized existences—a branch which includes physiology in all its departments ; lastly, a knowledge of that which, for want of a more recent term, I must call sociology, embracing the investigation of social principles and enabling us to trace the paths along which human action has moved in all countries and ages. I cannot go far into these topics here, but I think I could show that the order which I have named, from the simplest structure—inorganic matter—up to that of the highest and most complex—the human mind—is no arbitrary progress, but one which Nature herself dictates and directs. I may be asked what man, unaided and professedly a philosopher, can find leisure for such inquiries. I reply, it is not necessary to be an astronomer, a geologist, a chemist, a physiologist, in order to learn what have been the principal results of scientific thought in those departments, or what is their inter-connection with one another. The slow progress of discovery affords no measure of the labour required to appreciate the results of discovery. It takes ages to make the long road which when made may be travelled over in a few years. If I am asked as to the use of such investigations, I would point out that the great questions which an intelligent mind on beginning to reflect naturally puts are these, “What am I?” and “What is this universe of which I am a part?” To give an answer, however partial and incomplete, to these questions has been the effort of the human intellect during more than 3,000 years, and may be for 3,000 more. No man is so dull that they do not interest him ; none ever has been or ever can be so acute that they do not puzzle and baffle him. In comparison with such reflections to talk of the practical applications of science is indeed descending low ; yet the practical applications—never the first object, often not in any degree the object of the philosopher—have doubled the wealth and power of England, and calculably lessened the pressure of human suffering from material wants. In concluding on this head, I would observe that in England we study man's works less, and nature more ; and even where we apply ourselves to investigate the vast course of human action, we are in the habit of ascribing too much importance to an almost mechanical recollection of facts, and too little to the establishment of those generalizations which give past facts almost their sole importance for us. I do not wish to speak in the language of accusation, or of complaint ; yet it does seem to me that a man may leave either of the great universities, after a school and college training which together have extended over ten years, an accomplished classic, an able mathematician, yet wholly unacquainted with his internal nature, ignorant of the principle upon which a common steam engine is constructed, ignorant even of the mechanism which he carries about



him in his own body, and utterly unversed in the first principles of that law of the land under which he lives. To sum up in a word, I mean this—that the end of all human teaching is human action ; that that teaching is most valuable which tends to direct and economize action ; that such teaching must concern itself mainly with two things—the laws which govern inanimate nature and the laws which govern man ; and that whatever does not add to our knowledge on one or other of these subjects is, comparatively speaking, of little value. And herein, as I think, one great merit of institutions like these consists, that, being tied down by no statutes, no founders' wills, no traditions of immemorial antiquity, they not only supply instruction to the people, but they supply that kind of instruction for which a popular demand exists. They follow the national taste ; they do not in attempting to direct that taste pervert it. Long may this state of things endure ; and in education, as in other matters, may the transition from past to present habits of thought take place, as in England such transitions mostly do, by no demolition of that which exists, by no sudden disruption of ancient ties, but by the greatest and almost imperceptible accommodation of all intelligent minds to that which all perceive to be inevitable in the course of events !

SIR JAMES P. KAY SHUTTLEWORTH, who was knighted by the Queen for his devotion to the cause of popular education, and who is the author of the system now administered by the Committee of Council on Education, followed Lord Stanley in an address from which we make the following extracts :

*Educational Progress of the Country.*—I remember the time—it is not distant—when a large part of these valleys were almost deserted portions of remote parishes, without schools, and almost without chapels—forlorn, destitute almost of religious instruction ; but now we see, on every hand, the spires of religious edifices rising throughout the whole country, and to most of them are attached schools, themselves often buildings of great beauty, and the whole organization for the instruction of the youth of our population is gradually approaching to perfection. ' Forty normal schools, educating 2,000 students, and sending out 1,000 teachers annually, have been founded ; 8,000 pupil-teachers are now aiding in the instruction of schools, and undergoing the apprenticeship which is to issue in their passing two years in the normal school, and afterwards becoming certificated teachers. Besides these arrangements, the Government has expended, on various other objects, moneys which amount in the whole to nearly 500,000*l.* per annum. Then, the means of support are of a like general character, consistent with the institutions of the country. A very large part of the support has been of a purely voluntary character. About 1*l.* 3*d.* has been derived from local subscriptions, and about 6*s.* 9*d.* has been derived from the contributions of the school-pence of the children—making altogether, 18*s.* per head per scholar in each school. Now, the Government, besides this, has contributed at the rate of about 12*s.* per head for the augmentation of the salary of the teacher, and for the payment of the stipends of the pupil-teachers ; and, recently, it has likewise contribut-

ed a capitation grant, amounting to 4s. or 5s. per scholar, so that we thus arrive at the total resources of the school ; and in this way sufficient funds may be obtained to secure the efficiency of the school, and that without resorting to any means inconsistent with self-government.

*How can children be retained longer under instruction.*—It appears from the late census that 20,000 poor children have left school before they were ten years of age ; 35,000 more poor children before they were eleven years of age ; 28,000 more poor children before they were twelve years of age ; and after the age of twelve scarcely any were left at school. Even in the towns, and in the more commercial districts, the inspectors report that few children are at school at a greater age than from ten to eleven. Now the causes effecting these results are also disclosed by the census. It appears that of the children who were not at school between the ages of three and fifteen, 978,179 boys, or 40 per cent., were not at work ; and 1,218,055 girls, or 58 per cent., also were not at work. On the other hand, the number not at school, but at work, was comparatively small ; 318,776 boys, or 16 per cent., were at work between the ages of three and fifteen ; and 218,055, or per cent., of girls. It appears that 57 per cent. of the children of the population of Great Britain, between the ages of three and fifteen, remain without education, chiefly because of the indifference of their parents. Now, this is a sad state of things ; but there are also some other features which have been remarked by the inspectors greatly affecting the success of the school. Mr. Watkins, inspector of the West Riding of Yorkshire, complains greatly of the fluctuation of the attendance of children, owing to various causes affecting the manufacturing interests of that county ; and he says that, in the majority of the schools of that district, 88 per cent. of the children leave the school annually ; only 12 per cent. of them remain. Now, you have had great experience in this district of the operation of the half-time act. I believe that, with whatever feelings the half-time act was at first received in this district, there is now a general satisfaction with its operation. I believe that, both on the part of the parents and on the part of employers, the gradual growth of the children in civilization, the improvement of their manners, and increase of their intelligence, and the greater value of their labor, are acknowledged ; and that these results have been obtained without any considerable disturbance of the manufacturing operations, or without any interruption of commercial operations. Now, the extension of the half-time act to the whole of England would send 2,000,000 of children to school whose life is at present spent in idleness ; and it would double the number of those who are now employed in remunerative labor. One of the inspectors, Mr. Cooke, says with great emphasis, that no measure could be adopted which would have so large an effect in raising the condition of the working classes throughout the rural districts of this country. At eleven years of age, the inspectors report that the children who have been taught in efficient schools know as much as any of the children who are taught in the schools that have been created on the continent of Europe, notwithstanding that their organization has been completed for a great number of years. But, in the free communities

of Switzerland, where each canton manages its own affairs and the most democratic system of voting exists, every canton has a law, that no child shall be taken away from school before he is fourteen years of age. Now, in England, the difference is amazingly great, for between the ages of twelve and thirteen only 6.44 per cent. are at school ; between the ages of thirteen and fourteen only 3.64 per cent. ; and between the ages of fourteen and fifteen only 2.34 per cent. The proportion in Scotland is even not higher than  $1\frac{1}{2}$  or 2 per cent. more than England. That is a fact which tends to show that, even in a country which since the Reformation has had the advantage of a parochial system of schools, dependence cannot be placed on the parents who support themselves by manual labor to send their children to school till the age of fourteen. Improvements in the schools have also, as has been universally reported by the inspectors, had no appreciable effect in extending the school age. There have also been various benevolent schemes recently adopted, particularly in the mining districts, to attract the children to school. Prizes have been offered for classes, which have been competed for by the children of large districts. Those prizes have been given with great publicity, and have been accompanied by certificates which have been intended to be of great use in the market of labor in those districts. Those schools have been supported by the principal firms in the mining districts, and some results as respects those districts have been attained ; but generally speaking the evil has not been reached. I cannot help saying that my own opinion is that this great difficulty, as respects the rural districts and the mining districts of England, cannot be overcome without the adoption of the Half-time Act, with such modifications as may be necessary to meet the period of harvest and peculiar employments of different trades, in order that the children of those districts may enjoy the same amount of advantage that has been obtained in these.

*Instruction to children after leaving school.*—What provision is there yet made in this country that the child who then becomes a youth and goes to work for the whole of the day, either in some rural employment or in some manufactory, and spends his leisure time in listless idleness, and learns nothing but what can be taught in the streets,—what provision is there made, what institution is there to carry on the instruction of the school from the period of 13 to the period of 17 ? The mechanics' institutions, the lyceums, have sprung up in all the great towns of the country ; but even they do not exist in the rural districts ; and there is no institution as yet which peculiarly meets the want of the youth between the age of 13 and 17.

It would seem to me possible, for example, that, taking such a town as Oldham, surrounded by manufacturing villages at a moderate distance, that connected possibly with this lyceum, or if not connected with this lyceum, then with some central school, there might be formed a group of subsidiary institutions—evenings schools—in the neighboring villages ; and that for such a group of schools there might be an itinerating master, who might, for instance, teach classes in some central school on two evenings of the week, and might go out and teach

at the other schools on the remaining four evenings of the week, either one each evening, or giving two evenings at each school; and by combinations of this kind we might greatly diminish the expense of the individual schools, while very greatly increased efficiency might be given to them. I would also remind you that the Department of Science and Art has recently been training masters for the instruction of drawing classes and the application of art to all industrious and mechanical employments; and it would be quite possible, in connection with this lyceum, to have a drawing master who might teach on certain evenings of the week in this institution, and who might teach on other evenings in some of those evening schools.

*Courses of Lectures have ceased to attract and interest.*—The old institutions—those of the Andersonian University of Glasgow, the London Mechanics' Institution, the Manchester and the Liverpool Mechanics' Institution—set out with the intention of having complete courses of lectures, and they expected, in those great cities, to attract the more intelligent members of the working-classes to those courses of lectures, which were to extend to from 60 to 90 lectures; and those lectures were to be accompanied by examinations, and were to assume almost all the forms of instruction in universities. In some of these institutions the lectures had great success. I believe they had great success, originally, under Dr. Birkbeck, in Glasgow; they had great success in the institution which Sir Benjamin Heywood was chiefly instrumental in founding at Manchester, and also in Liverpool, and, I believe, in London; but the history of mechanics' institutions has shown that these complete courses of lectures, even in the great towns, have gradually been abandoned. The lectures have also become less and less scientific, and more and more literary and general; and the number, of course, has greatly increased, while the number of lectures in each course has greatly diminished. Thus, in the union of Yorkshire institutions, it is reported that out of a thousand lectures given in certain institutions there, 594 courses consisted of only two lectures each. Now, I relate these facts chiefly for the purpose of drawing the attention of the members of this institution to the exceeding importance of class-instruction.

*Class-instruction.*—The instruction given in these institutions must, necessarily, at first be elementary. The classes will be devoted to a very great extent to such subjects as reading, writing, arithmetic, grammar, geography, and similar matters. The students attending these classes need to be brought immediately in contact with the mind of the master, and they need to be assisted at every stage; they need that the whole course of instruction should be thoroughly logical, that it should be accompanied by constant examinations, and that it should be tested from time to time. When you approach the higher subjects, it seems to me that this form of class-instruction is also greatly preferable to general instruction by lectures untested by examination, or even to the very extensive courses of lectures I have adverted to, when they were tested by examination.

*Competitive Examination and Prizes.*—But in order to increase the degree of interest which is felt by young men of the working classes in these courses

of instruction, the Society of Arts has of late put forth a scheme of prizes. It has offered prizes to the whole of the mechanics' institutions of the country that have entered into union with it. In the first year, 1855, owing perhaps to some defects in the mode in which this scheme was worked, very few candidates offered themselves for examination. But, in this year, 52 candidates have appeared in London, and a very interesting report has been published of the examinations which there occurred. I am very glad, also, to be informed by the Secretary of the Society of Arts that it is intended to hold an examination in the north of England, probably at Manchester, and that the mechanics' institutions and Lyceums of this country will be invited to send students to compete for the prizes at that examination. I believe, likewise, that the Bishop of Manchester has made a recommendation to the Lancashire Union of Mechanics' Institutions, that a local examination, I believe of a somewhat lower order as respects the subjects and quality of the examination, should be instituted in that union ; and I believe that steps will be taken to communicate from the Secretary of the Lancashire Union of Institutions, with the respective local institutions, concerning that examination. There is also another proposal which seems to me to have considerable merit, and that is, that not merely should a prize be given, but that the prize should be accompanied with a certificate, and that the certificate should set forth in it the period during which the holder of it has attended the mechanics' institution, the several studies through which he has passed, the degree of attention which he has paid to those studies, and should define the proficiency which he has acquired. Provided the heads of manufacturing firms would agree to give these certificates a commercial value, I think great importance might be attached to them, and they would have a great effect in stimulating young men to go to the mechanics' institutions, there to acquire, by persevering attention to their studies, a certificate which the masters would value as a proof of merit.

*Instruction in Science in its Applications.*—I cannot conceive a district, which owes almost all its commercial prosperity to the steam-engine, where it would be proper in a great town like that of Oldham, to be without diagrams and models illustrating the theory of heat, and also the mechanical combinations and the history of the steam-engine. I am quite certain that thoroughly practical lectures upon the subject of the theory of heat and of the mechanism of the steam-engine would be attractive among the working classes. Now, we are not dependent upon any country for the inventions dependent upon machinery. The Americans are active rivals with us ; we find that in almost every department of trade they make some improvements in the machines which have been introduced in this country. Even in agriculture we receive machines from America ; but there is no great desire in this country to ascertain what is being done in other countries in machinery. It is far otherwise with every thing that relates to art. We have agencies established in every part of the world, to give us at the first moment the French designs as soon as they appear in the market ; and we are to a very great extent dependent in our print,

shawl, and muslin trade upon the French. I think this ought not to be. I think it does not arise from any want of native talent; I think it arises simply from the fact that we have not had institutions in this country for the cultivation of the native talent that exists, and that the drawing class which it is one of the objects of the Department of Science and Art to found ought to be connected with every one of these mechanics' institutions.

Hon. W. J. Fox, who has signalized his connection with the House of Commons, by an earnest and efficient advocacy of a system of National Education—took part in these exercises.

*The Lyceum is not a Charity.*—I heartily congratulate the president, and managers, and members of the Oldham Lyceum, and, I may add, the inhabitants in general, who I hope will, to a large extent, be partakers of its benefits. And I will say of the institution, that although a noble liberality and a wise generosity have aided in the erection of the beautiful building which we saw this morning, although rank and station have lent their countenance, and not only lent their countenance, but given most admirable counsel in connection with laying the foundation-stone, and with this celebration of the opening on the present occasion; yet that, notwithstanding this, and duly and gratefully appreciating this, I would say I do not regard—I hope none of you will regard—that institution as a charity. It is not a charity, it is an assistance to the people of this country to pursue the enjoyment of their birthright, of the full development of their faculties, of their training up to all that may become a man, and their reaching all the enjoyments which Providence has placed within the grasp of man. I say in the words of the ring which I wear on my finger, and with which the women of Oldham married me to the cause of education—that “education is the birthright of all.” Providence, which brings a living soul into a civilized community, gives that soul, at the hands of the community, a claim for such instruction as may develop its diversified powers, and secure to it a fair prospect of success in the chase of goodness and of happiness. The Lyceum merely gives to the young persons who will avail themselves of its advantages facilities for that purpose. It says,—“You know, you estimate, you claim your birthright. Come here, then, and work it out. Gain the knowledge which you desire, gain the training of your faculties for which you are anxious; if you do so, you must pay the price.” I don't mean any money price,—you may have something to do in that way, to a reasonable amount, but I say you must pay the price of toil, and industry, and resolute perseverance, of diligently availing yourselves of all the means within your reach; you must go on, if the time you have be but very limited; you must go on making the most of that time—you must add atom to atom of knowledge, until you pile up a spacious building, and you must thus work your way and show that you are thoroughly aware of the dignity of your own nature, of the capacity of your powers, and of the grandeur of your destiny.

May it stand as a trophy of the victory of knowledge over ignorance, and of goodness, order, and progress over crime and sensuality! May it

stand as a temple, where young and ingenious minds shall inquire after truth, where they shall be animated, not with the love of excelling merely, but with the love of excellence; where they shall be all anxious to go on, still accumulating their stores of knowledge, and still calling their faculties of mind and heart into active exercise! May it be as a fountain from which rich streams of knowledge shall flow over the land, and which, taking various directions from that as from a centre, shall carry manifold fertility with them, and rich harvests of thought, which may be gathered in by the rising and by future generations till they shall rejoice in the fulness of time, bringing their sheaves with them! May it be a shrine where, from time to time, one and another shall arise to much more than local eminence—shall win a name that nations shall pronounce with reverence, and take his place among the laurelled; and may it be a monument of progress—of that bright law of progress which has been so repeatedly and so well adverted to this evening—that law of progress which is the great blessing of God upon humanity!

The meeting concluded with addresses from various other speakers.

The building, whose inauguration was thus marked, contains a news-room, lecture-hall, class-rooms, library, &c., and was erected at a cost of £5000. To institute the Prize scheme, suggested by one of the speakers, the President, Mr. Platt, said "he should have great pleasure in contributing a silver medal annually, and a sum of five guineas to the best mathematician."

THE SALFORD FREE MUSEUM AND LIBRARY, established in 1850, and maintained by a property tax on the Borough of Salford, has an aggregate of 18,555 volumes, of which 12,603 are in the reference department, and 5,952 in the lending department, both of which are free to all residents of the Borough. About 400 readers frequent the reading-room daily, and about 2000 people visit the museum, which is filled with objects of art. The Executive Committee, in their report for 1856, remark: "The issue of books in the year amounts to 142,484 volumes—and each book in the library has in effect been taken out or referred to seven or eight times,—58,634 volumes have been taken to the dwellings of the readers—three-fifths of whom are under 39 years of age, one-fifth are females, and nine-tenths are working people—and that the demand for works of science, and history, and biography has been constantly on the increase." An additional wing to the building is to be erected at a cost of £2500.

THE MECHANICS' INSTITUTE AT MANCHESTER was the first institution of its kind which erected a building for the accommodation of its classes, and has recently inaugurated a new edifice, erected at an expense of £10,000, by an Art and Industrial Exhibition—the fifth of the kind held by this body—the first having been held twenty years ago, and was the first of the kind held in England.



**THE LEWES MECHANICS' INSTITUTION.**—The opening lecture was given by Rev. Dr. Booth, of Wandsworth, and is published in the Journal of the Society of Arts, for Sept. 26. We give his strong practical common sense on two important points.

*Progress in Learning does not depend on Teachers, Books, or Apparatus.*—I wish to place before you a great truth, which somehow seems to have been overlooked in our educational discussions. It is this, that learning must come from within, not from without—that listening to a lecture is not learning—that looking at a man making experiments does not teach you to manipulate in science. Only think of a man learning to make shoes, or to sing, or to play on a musical instrument, by attending lectures on shoemaking or music. Believe me, as there is no royal road to literature, there is no railroad to the temple of science; “coaching” may take a man part of the way, but it invariably leaves him worse prepared to encounter the difficulties of the rest of the ascent. He who wishes to mount must gird up the loins of his mind. Lecturers and teachers are all very well to keep idle boys to their work and to stimulate the indolent. They are also useful, like finger-posts, to point out the road you should follow, but they will take you very little of it. A man can no more learn by the sweat of another man's brains than he can take exercise by getting another man to walk for him. All mental improvement resolves itself ultimately into self-improvement. The food of the mind is like the food of the body—it must be assimilated before it can benefit the system. I do not say that it is within the compass of every man's understanding to become a profound mathematician; men's minds are not constituted all alike; their understandings are as various as their faces; but such a one may become an accomplished linguist, or an expert chemist, or a keen observer of the manifold operations of nature. The Almighty has supplied us with subjects of thought as diverse as the phases of the understanding. But, you will say, though books are cheap, and may easily be procured, we have no apparatus, and apparatus are scarce and dear, beyond the means of the poor man to obtain. Now, here is another error. There is a great deal too much talk about apparatus for teaching science, and the necessity there is that the State should manufacture it and supply it at a cheap rate to schools and to Institutions like this. A man who is eager to learn—who is determined to know his subject—may, if he be at all handy, or with the assistance of the village carpenter or blacksmith, extemporize his apparatus. Polished mahogany, and expensive brass-work and complicated adjustments, are not at all essential. It is told of the celebrated philosopher, Dr. Wollaston, the inventor of the method of rendering platinum malleable, that when a continental chemist of some celebrity called on him, and expressed a wish to be shown over the laboratories in which science had been enriched by so many important discoveries, the Doctor took him into a little study, and, pointing to an old tea-tray on the table, with a few watch glasses, test papers, a small balance, and a blow-pipe on it, said, “There is all the laboratory that I have.” Believe me, whatever science you take up to learn, costly apparatus are not necessary—they are only the charlatanism of

science. Now, do not mistake me ; I am speaking about learning the elements of science, not of making discoveries in it. To make discoveries in astronomy, a telescope like that of Lord Rosse would be required. To carry on investigations in botany and other departments of natural history, very complicated, highly finished and very costly microscopes are a necessity, while a microscope amply sufficient for educational purposes may be bought for ten shillings. Again, the poor hard-working young man may say, "How can I compete successfully with a man of ample means and plenty of leisure time at his disposal, who has so many favorable opportunities for improving himself--so many aids and appliances in the shape of expensive books and costly apparatus, and experienced tutors provided him?" Now, this is an error. The ways of Providence are not so unequal, after all. The young oak that is nurtured in the hot-house will never become the monarch of the woods on the exposed hill-side. They are parasitical plants that stunt and choke the tree they seemed to shelter. The minds of men so brought up are too often without spring ; they are deficient in elasticity of intellect, and they often want that one moral quality of mind which breathes life and vigor into all the intellectual faculties, the absence of which no others can compensate, even by their presence in excess, I mean that unflinching determination not to be borne down by difficulties--that enduring perseverance not to be over-mastered by defeat. He among you who can put forth into action such energy of will does not much require external aid. He need not care whether the schoolmaster be abroad or not, for he has got him at home. This is no mere theoretical reasoning. The views I place before you are amply confirmed by experience. Columbus was not the last by many who showed how the impossible may be reduced to the practical. It was the indomitable resolution of Columbus, his unyielding energy, that enabled him to verify his conceptions, and to realize his theory. Look at the perseverance of Kepler, who for years and years groped his way through dry, perplexed, and endless arithmetical calculations till he saw that first faint ray of light, which burst out as the sun in the mind of Newton, and revealed those laws concealed since the creation, by which the Almighty constituted the mechanism of the universe. Turn where you will, you find indomitable perseverance the indispensable condition of success. Who is there so cold as to read without emotion the heroic struggles of that brave old Huguenot, Bernard Palissy, the potter, who, despite of failure after failure, the ridicule of enemies, the sneers of friends, the remonstrances of his family, still held on, till a success unlooked for at last crowned his efforts. Or, if we wish to take a more fortunate example in our own country, we may name Sir Richard Arkwright, the great inventor of the cotton-spinning machine, who, till he was thirty years of age, continued to practise as a barber in his native town. The characteristic quality of his mind was not deep thinking, but unyielding tenacity of purpose. If any one who hears me is disheartened by his daily toil, or discouraged by the want of books, let him read the autobiography of the late William Gifford, for many years the learned and talented editor of the *Quarterly Review*. Of his early life he thus writes, "I possessed

at this time but one book in the world, it was a treatise on algebra, given to me by a young woman who found it in a lodging-house. I considered it as a treasure. I sat up for the greatest part of several nights successively ; this carried me some way into the science ; I had not a farthing on earth, nor a friend to give me one. Pen, ink, and paper were, therefore, for the most part, as completely out of my reach as a crown and sceptre. There was, indeed, a resource. I beat out pieces of leather as smooth as possible, and wrought my problems on them with an old blunted awl." Now, here was a man, almost without instruction or apparatus of any kind, who contrived to master the elements of a sound education, which eventually led him to power, eminence, and wealth. Chance has very little to do with the extension of knowledge. 'Thousands had seen apples fall to the ground before the time of Newton. But it was to his mind only that the simple fact was suggestive. It fell upon a mind prepared for its reception. Everybody knew that oxygen is a supporter of combustion, that it is largely present in the atmosphere, but it was only the other day that the simple obvious facts were applied to compel the air we breathe to supply fuel to our iron furnaces, a process which bids fair to revolutionize the whole iron manufacture. Great discoveries are everywhere cropping out beneath our feet, if we would only look before us. See what vast discoveries in chemistry and natural science were due to Sir Humphry Davy, and I mention him the more willingly, as he is another and a signal example of a man who, born in a humble station, by the brilliancy of his talents, his unrelaxing perseverance and intensity of will, raised himself to high social position, and took his place as the very first of European philosophers. When a surgeon's errand-boy in Penzance, he attempted to make experiments on the properties of air ; and what, you will be curious to know, was his laboratory ? Why, the vials and bottles of his master's shop. His biographer, with great justice, observes, had Sir Humphry Davy been furnished, in the commencement of his career, with all those appliances he enjoyed at a more recent period, it is very probable that he might never have acquired that wonderful tact of manipulation, that ability of suggesting experiments, and of contriving apparatus so as to meet and surmount the difficulties which must constantly arise during the progress of the philosopher through the unbeaten tracks and unexplored regions of science. The self-taught mechanic and astronomer, Ferguson, when watching his master's sheep by night, used to lie on his back, and note the relative distances of the stars by means of beads strung upon a string. The profound mathematician, Pascal, drew his geometrical diagrams with a bit of coal. Surely, if it be true that Nature, or rather Nature's God, never acts in vain, it must have been designed that the rare gifts with which Providence has endowed some individual men, taken here and there out of the great mass of mankind, without any reference whatever to rank or station—the peasant boy is as richly endowed as the peer's son—surely, I say, it must have been intended that those priceless, because unpurchasable, gifts should be cultivated, and developed for the general benefit of all. Hence it is that, by a figure of speech, the word which in a certain connection is familiar to all of you, sign

fed money placed out in trust to be augmented and improved, has actually come specially to stand for mental endowments, and the word "talents" no longer signifies pieces of ancient coins, but that mental treasure which God has committed to the charge of some of us for the general advancement of mankind. Consider the many advantages which even the poorest of you have, as compared with those that fell to the lot of these illustrious men, some of whose names I have placed before you. If they could accomplish so much in the face of poverty, the neglect or contempt of their fellows, in solitude, without sympathy, without books, without apparatus, how much more ought to be expected from you who live in happier times, when all those things of which they felt the want, are in a great measure supplied to you.

*The Competitive Examination and Prize System of the Society of Arts.*—The Society of Arts of London, whose Royal President, aided by its Council, not only matured the crude notions of an international display of works of industry and art into a grand conception, but realized it as a fact in the Palace of Industry of all Nations, erected in Hyde-park, in the first year of the present half century, the same Society are now prepared to carry into intellectual matters that principle of competition which was then sanctioned and confirmed in material things. We propose to hold public examinations conducted by men, some of them of the very highest eminence in literature and science. We commenced the system last June, at our house in the Adelphi, and the results were, indeed, most flattering and unexpected. For the information of those here present, who may not be fully acquainted with what the Society of Arts is now doing, I will give you a brief account of our proceedings. In the first place, you are all, no doubt, aware that the principal Mechanics' Institutions of the country, nearly 400 in number, are in union with the Society of Arts. To ascertain how far our proposal might obtain the sanction of the friends of education, and of the great employers of labor, whether intellectual or bodily, throughout the country, we issued for signature a declaration of confidence in our fitness to undertake such a task, and of opinion affirming its importance. Although our scheme was not matured until the February of last year, or put forth to the world, as one that would be actually worked out, until the beginning of April, yet we had no less than 56 candidates at our examinations in the Society's House in the Adelphi, which extended over four days, the 10th, 11th, 12th, and 13th of June, for nine hours each day. Now you will be curious to learn the results of that examination. Our best mathematician was a young man from Leeds, a bookseller's shop-boy. He passed so good an examination that the managers of the Kew Observatory, much to their credit, have appointed him Assistant-Observers, a situation which, to one of his predecessors, opened the way to rank and fortune. Within the last few weeks the Council of the Society of Arts have come to the determination to establish a public Registry of their certificated candidates, which they propose to throw open, free of charge, to all those persons who may desire to make merit and intelligence the qualifications of those whom they employ. Our examinations will be conducted with the most rigid impartiality, and

with the greatest strictness. Indeed, the examiners know nothing what ever about the candidates, as they recognize them only by the number on their cards of admission. The Society of Arts, through its Board of Examiners, pledges its credit and character that the certificates which it issues whatever the grade, shall state with the most precise accuracy attainable and without the least tincture of exaggeration, the clear, uncolored truth. It is this truthfulness that will constitute the entire value of our certificates. But now some among you may object to this plan of general examinations and say, examinations do not communicate knowledge. This is quite true; our Society does not profess to teach. It leaves education, and the instruction which is the chief instrument of education, in the hands of the various educational institutions throughout the country, whether they be schools or colleges, Trade Schools or Mechanics' Institutions. But it does profess to test and set its seal to the attainments of those whom it examines, in the shape of the certificates it awards and the prizes it bestows. It is too much taken for granted by educators in general, that when you have built a school-house, divided it out into class-rooms, hung the walls with maps and diagrams, and appointed a teacher with a committee of management, education must go on as it were by machinery. Though you catch your boy and impound them in your school-rooms, you cannot force them to learn. But once hold out to your pupils the inducement that every hour they give to hard labor, to real hard work, will tell on their future mental position and prospects of life, mark what a face of reality it will put upon all they are doing, how their attention will be awakened. I have had many instances of this brought under my notice during the last few months.

Now look at this matter from another point of view. The son of the nobleman or the country squire, when at one of the public schools, has all the rewards the University can bestow full in his view: its honors, its prizes, its scholars, its fellowships, its professorships are all within his reach. The very highest honors a subject can attain to, loom in the distance. What stimulants are these to unflagging exertion. Do not motives such as these invigorate and confirm the "constant will" to persevere to the end. What inducements equivalent to these—I do not say equal, but even like in kind—do we hold out to the youth of the middle and lower classes. Why should the son of the tailor or the shoemaker or greengrocer pore in solitude over books, and filch from idle sports and boyish amusements the few hours he can abstract from daily toil? He may become a profound mathematician. Who knows, or cares any thing about it, or thinks he is other than a mere pretender? he may become a great chemist; who believes him? or a good botanist; who puts faith in his pretensions? The pure gold passes for base metal, because there is no legitimate authority to stamp it with the impress which would make it current. But for the Society of Arts, who would have ever heard any thing about those young men who obtained our certificates, or known any thing of their attainments? Chambers would have remained in obscurity, selling books in a little shop, or working problems in solitude, had not the Society of Arts dragged him forth out of darkness into light. Few of you, I dare say,

knew that you had a very promising young chemist among you until the Board of Examiners had awarded a certificate in chemistry to your townsman Charles Wells. Let us briefly examine the probable working of such a scheme in actual operation. If every boy who goes to a commercial school, or every young man who attends classes at a Mechanics' Institution, were convinced of this, that the Society of Arts' certificate, under seal, was a sure passport to recognition and employment, can you not see what a great encouragement you give, what a strong motive you hold out to increased and intensified exertions? Again, consider how the Society of Arts' Examination would serve as a sort of educational test of the relative merits of different colleges, and schools and classes. Success at the Society's Examinations would test the kind of instruction given, precisely in the same way as the Universities indirectly control, guide, and test the instruction of our great public schools. There are other advantages too in this plan. It imposes no necessity of building new colleges or schools, or establishing professorships; it takes the materials and tools provided to our hands and operates upon and by them. We do not propose to establish rival schools or antagonistic colleges to those already in existence, but endeavoring to deal with those we have, we shall not interfere with any vested rights, whether real or supposed. Co-operating with all, opposed to nothing but pretence and sham, we shall neither provoke hostility nor alarm suspicion, and as we respect the rights of conscience and the religious feelings of every class, our proceedings will have no tendency to excite sectarian animosity; there will thus be no ground for the separation of religious education from secular instruction. Both being left in the hands of the people themselves, their union will be secured with the utmost safety. And is not this view actually confirmed by the fact, that men whose names were never found in juxtaposition before in matters of education, or indeed in any thing else, have signed our declaration. Our declaration is headed by the Archbishop of Canterbury, followed by the Bishop of Bath and Wells, the Bishop of Oxford, the Bishop of Winchester; then come the names of Mr. Edward Baines, of Leeds, the educational chief of the Dissenters of the North of England, of Mr. Apsley Pellatt, their political representative in the House of Commons, and Mr. Fox, the Member for Oldham, the advocate of separate secular education. Neither have we any political aspect. Amongst our host of signatures will be found those of Lord Ashburton, that zealous advocate of popular education, Lord Stanley, Sir James Graham, Robert Stephenson, and many others of every religious sect and political party. And now, before I conclude, let me ask you, the public, and through you the friends of education and progress all over the length and breadth of this great country, to co-operate with the Society of Arts in the noble work it has undertaken. How are we to co-operate, you will say: is it by subscribing money to the funds of your Society? Nothing of the sort. We do not want your money. The Society of Arts has an income of nearly £5000 a-year, which, being economically and judiciously managed, is amply sufficient for the development of its public objects. But you can most effectually promote this movement and benefit yourselves at the same time,

No. 8.—[VOL. III. No. 1.]—17.



by taking into your counting-houses, warehouses, shops, manufactories, mills, and factories of every kind, those young men who, by obtaining our certificates, shall have proved themselves to be intelligent, laborious, studious, and diligent. Several merchants and manufacturers of the highest eminence in the country, have promised us their co-operation in this way. That enlightened friend of education, Mr. John Wood, the Chairman of the Board of Excise, has placed appointments at our disposal. In this way we propose to stimulate the intellectual activity of our candidates. Their moral characters you must scrutinize for yourselves; we profess to give no guarantee on that head; we undertake to answer only for diligence and acquirements. Yet I believe it will be found that in ninety-nine cases out of every hundred, "a young man who must necessarily have devoted to study a large portion of the time at his disposal, often very scant, can scarcely have had much leisure for idle pursuits or vicious indulgences."

COLONEL SYKES in his Inaugural Address before the Society of Arts, has the following remarks as to

*Agricultural Laborers.*—There is a large portion of the lower classes of the population which has not the advantages, such as they may be, of the operatives in towns; removed, like the former class, from school in childhood, from their dispersion over a considerable area, they have scarcely the means of association or combination for the erection of common halls, common libraries, and the insuring instruction from lectures—I mean the agricultural laborers: unlike the mechanic—from him the further means of mental instruction in manhood are nearly cut off. It may, indeed, be said by the poet, that—

"The field's his study: nature is his book;"

but I fear in the main his mental faculties are rarely sufficiently developed to enable him to reap much profit from the study of the fields or of nature. Beyond his wife and children, and the few of his own mental standard, the animals he tends are his associates, and he lives and dies almost debarred from intellectual development. The agricultural laborer, therefore, is peculiarly an object for the thought and consideration of the promoters of instruction amongst the poor. For him I see little help, except through village lending-libraries, if established by the country gentlemen, like those of the Hants and Wilts Adult Educational Society; but chiefly his help must come from the itinerant book hawkers, designated by the French "colporteurs," I presume from carrying their packs upon their necks or shoulders. The books so hawked must necessarily be very cheap to be within the reach of the agricultural laborer; and of what vital importance it is that the information they are capable of imparting should not only be useful, but harmless, while it is to be feared the present supplies by the hawker stand in opposition to the latter category. Is it not an object, therefore, worthy of the Society of Arts, and in keeping with its other labors, to organize a system of supply to hawkers, of selected and cheaper books for the agricultural classes, for self-study and improvement, with the possible result of the Society finding itself applied to for examination to grant certificates of intellectual competency to members of a class who have hitherto rarely aspired to any other distinction than that of being good farm-servants?



SIR EDWARD BULWER LYTTON AT THE EXAMINATION AND FESTIVAL OF BISHOP'S STORTFORD HIGH SCHOOL, July, 1856, addressed the company as follows :

LADIES AND GENTLEMEN,—I am sure I give utterance to the sentiment of all present, when I express the interest we have left in the ceremony we have witnessed, and our gratification at the honors justly distributed amongst the boys who reflect so much credit upon a Hertfordshire school. There is something in the promise of excellence, when displayed by the rising generation, which awakens the most pleasing reflections in us of maturer years. Strangers though we be to them, yet we feel a pride in their success as if they were our own relations—and relations, indeed, they are, because our country is the beloved mother of us all; and boys are the younger sons of that mother, who will grow up to defend, and serve, and cherish her, when we of the elder race are no more. Well, young gentlemen, did you commence your proceedings with the National Hymn of "Rule Britannia." For how did Britannia acquire her rule? How is it, that she has extended her sway from the island you scarcely detect on your map of the globe, to an empire covering lands unconquered by Alexander, and regions not even conjectured by Columbus? How has she achieved an empire still more durable and glorious in the human mind, by her arts and sciences—by her writers, her warriors, her statesmen, her philosophers, and divines? How has this been done, except by the energy and intellect of the men, who were once boys like you I see before me—boys, who at school learned the value of generous emulation and the desire of praise—boys, who at school learned to prize sentiments and gallant actions—boys, who left school as you will leave this, reared and disciplined to support and advance the English name and character, in whatever condition of life Providence might place their lots. Everything which makes a nation great, and its institutions lasting, depends upon the character given by education to its boys. And the value of good schools does not depend only upon the degree of book learning they bestow, but upon the habits of mind which they may form. Now, nothing in this day's exhibition, and the reports of the Examiners, has struck me more than the general equality of merit; but where merits are so equal and general, they must rest, not on the rare phenomenon of genius, but upon habits of mind capable of comprehensive results. You know Virgil tells us that "labor conquers everything;" and believe me, my young friends, that no one knows what he can do, till he has tried might and main to do it. Yes, you have learned betimes the two English virtues—Application and Perseverance. Every one can not be a genius, but every one can resolve not to be a dunce. You remember the story of the young Spartan who complained that his sword was too short, and the answer he received: "Too short! why, then, add a step to it." So it is with your talent. If your talent is not long enough to get at your object, add a step to it—that is, eke out your talent by good heart and determination, and go in and win. These virtues of perseverance and application, once made habits, will last you all your lives, though you may never again look to the school books in which you first devoted perseverance and application to the Latin Syntax or the Rule of Three. When you leave school, most of you will go into some business or profession. If you have learned to have perseverance and application, your success is sure; every difficulty gives way before them. By those habits the poor become rich—the humble-born acquire rank—and even those who are naturally dull and slow of intellect, obtain the advantages and rewards of talent. These qualities are to a man upon land what a life-belt is to him at sea. Let him buckle round his breast perseverance

and application, and throw him where you will into the ocean of life, he will rise to the surface.

I see, sir, (turning to Mr. Goodman,) that you and the other masters of school have carefully instilled those qualities which it becomes, therefore, almost superfluous in me to enforce—I speak the sense of all present in expressing admiration of the skill and ability of the masters; but the masters in turn bear me out when I say, that at a good school, it is not only the masters who teach. Boys teach each other; and that not in the school-room alone—not all in the help which the quick give to the slow, the more advanced to the more backward—but in the play-ground as well as the school-room. Let me suppose what happens in some schools, but which is apparently a bold supposition, applied, young gentlemen, to you—that some of you are occasionally lazy and careless over your books—more the shame certainly—but then in the play-ground are you not learning some of these lessons which help to form the great English character? Do you not there learn—boys did in my school, and I am sure you will tell me yours do—do you not learn to prize honor and courage—learn to despise both the coward and the bully; learn how hateful is malice, and how contemptible is every species of falsehood, shabbiness and meanness? And when boys learn only those matters, they go forth into life, as I hope you will go, with the ground work already formed of that manly English character which makes kind, brave, and honorable men. Boys, from this day I shall feel an interest in the career of all of you. Years hence I shall hear of some distinction obtained or some praiseworthy action done, by one or more of those whom I now address. I shall be told, “Why that was one of the boys you addressed at Bishop’s Stortford in 1856.” Would you make this school the pride of the county? Well, then, let your reputation hereafter make yourselves the pride of the school. You who have this day received prizes justly due to you, continue to cultivate the qualities which will equally insure prizes in the world. You who have tried for prizes, and this time failed, be consoled when I tell you from my experience that a failure in the first instance often ensures the greater triumph in the end, because it tests one’s pluck, stirs up one’s metal, and makes it a point of honor to succeed at last. And if—which I can scarcely suppose—there be some of you who would not even try for prizes, well, let those boys look well into their own breasts, and if they see there no sullen jealousy, no mean envy of those who have received distinction, but, on the contrary, pleasure and pride in the credit reflected on the school that they belong to; why, then, they are brave and generous fellows, and, some day or other, bravery and generosity of themselves will obtain a prize in the world. Still, there is a wide difference between envy and emulation. And though you do not grudge others the honors they have won, still, seeing now how those honors are regarded—turn it well in your own mind if you will not, when school re-opens, try yourselves for honors, which no one will then grudge to you. Do not think, that when we give a prize to a boy who has distinguished himself, it is only his cleverness in some special branch of study that we reward. Perhaps he was not, in that branch of study, so peculiarly clever; perhaps many other boys might have beaten him if they had tried hard. No! how many noble qualities may have spurred on that boy to try for the prize! Perhaps he had parents whom he loved—some indulgent father and some anxious mother—and he knew that the prize would make them so proud. Perhaps he had already conceived the manly wish for independence; he looked on to the future, saw that he had his own way to make in life, that it must

made by merit, and that every credit he won at school would be a help to him in the world. Or, perhaps, he was only animated by that desire of distinction which is, after all, one of the most elevated sentiments in the human breast; it is that sentiment which inspires the poet and nerves the hero; it was that sentiment which made Nelson see not death but immortality in the terrors of the battle, and cry—"Victory or Westminster Abbey!" it was that sentiment which led the rank and file of the English soldiers up the heights of Alma. They did not hear the roar of the cannon, to whose very jaws they marched on with unflinching tread; they only heard the whisper at their hearts, "And if we do our duty this day, what will they say of us in England?" Ay, and when a boy sits down resolutely to his desk—puts aside all idle pleasures, faces every tedious obstacle—firmly bent upon honorable distinction, it is the same elevating sentiment which whispers to him—"If I succeed, what will they say of me at school?" or a dearer motive still—"What will they say of me at home?" Boys, when I look at your young faces, I could fancy myself a boy once more! I go back to the day when I, too, tried for prizes, sometimes succeeding, sometimes failing. I was once as fond of play as any of you, and, in this summer weather, I fear my head might have been more full of cricket than of Terence or even Homer; but still I can remember that, whether at work or play, I had always a deep, though a quiet determination, that, sooner or later, I would be a somebody or do something. That determination continues with me to this day; it keeps one hope of my boyhood fresh, when other hopes have long since faded away. And now that we separate, let it be with that hope upon both sides—on my side, upon yours,—that, before we die, we will do something to serve our country, may they make us prouder of each other—and, if we fail there, that at least we will never wilfully and consciously do anything to make us ashamed of each other. But even in this we must not rely on ourselves alone; we must look for aid to Him who reads every heart and strengthens us in every trial.

In the proceedings of this day nothing so touched and moved me—nothing made me so confident of your future—as the circumstance connected with the gift of the Holy Scriptures, which you so feelingly desired me to receive at the hands of your instructor, and the reverence with which the gift was accepted. It would be presumptuous in me to add to what your master has said, with the authority of his sacred calling and the eloquence of his earnest affection. Only one word would I say upon the habit of private, unwitnessed prayer. All of you have been taught to address your Creator in private as well as in public. Continue that habit throughout life—listen to no excuses to lay it aside—you can not yet conceive its uses in the sharp trials of manhood. All of us must meet temptations, none of us can escape errors; but he who prays in private never loses the redeeming link between human infirmity and divine mercy. To borrow an image from one of the great authorities of our English church, prayer is like the ladder which the patriarch saw in his dream, the foot of it set upon the earth, but the top of it reaching heaven, and angels ascending and descending; ascending to bear on high our sorrows, our confessions, our thanksgivings; descending to bear back to us consolation, pardon, and the daily blessings that call forth new thanksgivings. And now nothing remains for me but to thank you for the credit you reflect on this country, and to wish you happy homes and merry holidays.

**UNITED ASSOCIATION OF SCHOOLMASTERS.**—This Association originated in a meeting of persons professionally engaged in education, held in London, on the 31st of December, 1853. The plan of the Association was to be more comprehensive than any existing society of the same kind. Its object is to increase the efficiency of elementary education, and advance the interest of the profession of teaching generally. The means resorted to, are general meetings for discussion, and lectures, and the publication of these proceedings, together with the formation of an educational cabinet of books, maps, diagrams, and apparatus for the inspection and examination of members.

#### LIST OF LECTURES.

1. On School Registers, for recording the results of different methods of Instruction. By Mr. T. Tate, F.R.A.S., President.
2. The Bible the basis of true Education. By Mr. E. C. Daintree, of Highbury Training College, Vice-President.
3. The Schoolmaster's Mission. By the Rev. C. H. Bromby, M. A., Vice-President.
4. The Teaching of Geography. By Mr. R. Dunning, of the Home and Colonial School Society, Vice-President.
5. On Teaching Botany in Schools. By Mr. A. Irvine, Member of the Botanical Society of London.
6. On Teaching Reading. By Mr. W. McLeod, F.R.G.S., of the Royal Military Asylum, Chelsea, Vice-President.
7. The Teaching of Common Things. By Mr. T. Crampton, Master of the Brentford Public School.
8. The method of Teaching Grammar. By Mr. J. Tilleard, F.R.G.S., Corresponding Secretary.
9. The Tonic Sol-Fa Method of Teaching Singing. By Mr. Sarll, for the Rev. J. Curwen, Plaistow.
10. On the Cultivation of Common Sense. By Mr. T. Tate.
11. On the Harmony between Science and Religion. By Mr. J. A. Shepherd, Master of the Scottish Central School, Swallow Street.
12. The Past and Future of English Education. By Mr. W. Knighton, M.A., Lecturer on Education in the Whitelands Training Institution.
13. On Teaching Reading. By Mr. W. McLeod.
14. On Teaching Social Economy in Schools. By Mr. W. A. Shields, Master of the Peckham Birkbeck Schools.
15. On Rational Gymnastics, as a branch of Education. By Mr. M. Roth, M. D.
16. On the Method of Teaching History. By Mr. E. C. Daintree.
17. On Teaching Geography. By Mr. W. Hughes, F.R.G.S., Lecturer at Highbury Training College.
18. On the Infant Garden System. By Mr. H. Hoffman.
19. On the Schoolmaster's Relations with the Government. By Mr. E. Simpson.
20. On Music and Musical Instruction in Schools. By Mr. T. Murby, Teacher of singing in the Borough Road Normal Institution.
21. On the Character of the Teaching of Our Lord. By the Rev. C. R. Alford, M. A., Principal of Highbury Training College.
22. On the Government of Pupil Teachers. By Mr. F. R. Crampton, Master of the St. John's National school, St. John's Wood.
23. On a System of Graduated Simultaneous Religious Instruction. By Mr. R. Mimpriess.
24. On Gymnastics as a branch of Education. By Mr. G. Reinicke.
25. Competitive Examination as an educational stimulus. By Rev. J. Booth, LL.D., Treasurer of the Society of Arts.
26. The Influence of the Teacher in promoting civilization. By Rev. G. R. Greig, Inspector General of Military Schools.
27. Teaching Physiology in Schools. By William McLeod, F.R.G.S., Principal of Royal Military Asylum, Chelsea.

The last annual meeting was held on the 28th and 29th of December, 1856, at which lectures, (numbered above, 25, 26 and 27,) were read, and the subjects of the same were discussed. We abridge from a report in *The Literarium*, a discussion which appears to have occupied the afternoon session—to show that “constitution making and mending” is one of standing orders of the day among the school-masters of England, as well as of this country, and that “the religious question” is a bone of contention out of as well as in parliament.

**MR. TURNER**, in introducing a resolution, rescinding a rule of the Association by which membership was restricted to teachers "who acknowledge the essential doctrines of Christianity," and ordaining "that all who are professionally engaged in education shall be eligible to become members"—remarked.

The object of the society was stated to be to systematize the profession of teaching, and thereby to improve and extend elementary education; the aim of the Association was also said to be nothing less than the advancement of national education. In the second rule the Association was said to embrace "all teachers both of public and private schools," but then came the limitation "who acknowledge the essential doctrines of Christianity, and hold the Bible to be the rule of faith and practice, and the only sure basis of true education," a limitation not at all in harmony with the general objects. Every limitation to a general principle should be just, well-defined, and practical. First, it should be just. If persons associated together, calling themselves by a given name, there ought to be nothing, in the rules established for their guidance which would shut out any one who fairly came under that name, unless he was in some way morally incapable of being received. The only qualification in a society of schoolmasters ought to be the circumstance of being a schoolmaster; and if a schoolmaster was not a member of such an association, that ought to argue either that he was an indifferent or an unworthy member of his profession. Then the limit should be well-defined; the line should be easily drawn, and there should be no hesitation or doubt as to whether persons could legitimately offer themselves as candidates for membership. If these two qualifications were adopted, any exclusive rule would be impracticable, and it was idle to say that any particular thing excluded a man when such ground of exclusion was never practically brought forward. If there were a ground of exclusion, it ought to be one that was acted upon, otherwise it was needless and mischievous. Comparing the second rule of the society with the principles he had mentioned, he felt bound to say that it was manifestly and flagrantly unjust, most ambiguous, and perfectly impracticable. The injustice was too obvious to need many words. The members of the society coöperated to do a certain work—the work, as stated in the prospectus, of national education; any one, therefore, who was worthily engaged in that work should be allowed to become a member of the Association; and if he were excluded on any other ground than that of professional incapacity—anything which unfitted him to fulfill worthily the duties of his profession—a great injustice was inflicted upon him. If the society professed to be limited to any particular class of teachers, then there would be no injustice; the doors might be opened as widely or as narrowly as the members might choose; but when a national object was professed, without limitation, an injustice was done to any worthy member who was stopped at the very threshold by a restrictive rule. The rule, as he had said, was ambiguous. It might be divided into two parts, the first stating what should give admission, and the second what should cause exclusion. The excluding clause was tolerably clear. It was evident that a certain class of men were positively excluded; but he could not tell, for the life of him, who was included. Jews and Catholics were clearly excluded by the rule as it stood, and those only were included who believed in "the essential doctrines of Christianity." But what considerable number of men ever had determined what were the essential doctrines of Christianity? Such a decision was utterly impracticable.

**MR. BITHELL.** The rule as it stood, was either inoperative, or, if operative, unjust. He, himself, had very decided views upon religious subjects, and for that reason he thought that persons who also had decided views, though opposed to his own, should be treated with liberality.

**MR. DAINTREE.** He would not remain a member of the Association an hour if such a rule were to be established.

**MR. SHIELDS.** He happened to know a schoolmaster whose character was such, that ordinarily decent persons would not associate with him: would the Committee admit such a man, though he professed to believe the essential doctrines of Christianity?

There was a great deal of hopeful education going on, not immediately connected with the great Church or Dissenting bodies. He did not know any set

of men, who, considering how much they were obliged to depend upon themselves, were doing more to improve their schools than the Jews of the metropolis. The largest free school in London was the Jewish free school in Fryingpan-alley, having at its head a scholar and a gentleman, and one who was treated as such by the Committee with which he was connected. Any member of the Association would gladly spend an evening with such a man, in the discussion of educational subjects; and was there anything so offensive in Christianity that he must be excluded from an Association of Schoolmasters, whose object was to advance education and further the interest of the profession? He extremely regretted that Mr. Daintree should have threatened to leave the Association, if such a resolution as Mr. Turner's were adopted. Mr. Turner presumed that in an Association of that kind there must be a power of excluding those whose moral character would cast obloquy upon it, or impede the progress of its business. He desired that power to be continued, but not that any one teacher should be able to say, to another, "You shall not come into the Schoolmasters' Association with which I am connected, unless you hold what I take to be the essential doctrines of Christianity." Their object ought to be to incorporate together the most able and worthy schoolmasters, for the promotion of their common objects, without regard to religious differences.

MR. COGHLAN said that if a Schoolmaster's duty consisted merely in teaching reading, writing, and arithmetic, and kindred subjects, there would be no need of such a rule of limitation as at present existed. One part of the Schoolmaster's duty was to teach religion, and whatever formed part of the Schoolmaster's duty should be the subject of discussion in the Schoolmasters' Association. How then could there be anything like a united feeling in such a discussion between men who were not agreed as to the essential doctrines of Christianity.

The Rev. Mr. UNWIN said it was hard to remain silent under groundless charges of bigotry and intolerance. Surely no man was compelled to join an Association whatever the terms of union might be. (Hear, hear.) The law in dispute was intended to express a great truth, that education necessarily involved a religious element, and it was a law upon which every man's conscience must decide. An individual who did not make the word of God the basis of his school-teaching, would hardly be admitted under the rule proposed by Mr. Turner himself.

MR. CRAMPTON. He thought the morality of the Bible was far more essential, and he was prepared to hold out the right hand of fellowship to any man who led an upright life, whatever his religious tenets. Their object as an Association was to improve themselves professionally in the methods of education, and, as such, they had nothing to do with differences of opinion on doctrinal points. We did not hesitate to buy sugar of a grocer simply because he was a Unitarian, and if we wanted money we were not backward in applying to the Jews; why should not the same unsectarian feeling be exhibited in an Association formed for a general object?

MR. BUCKMASTER. For himself, he would entirely abolish the rule and substitute nothing in its place. As the teachers in the Association were under committees, he thought there was every requisite guarantee for their general character. The Association was engaged in a certain work, and he regarded it entirely in a professional point of view. No religious test, therefore, should be required. The days of tests had long since gone by. The rule was entirely behind the times, and the spirit in which it was framed, and which would desire its continuance, was the same spirit that formerly prevented dissenters and others from attaining their political and religious rights.—("No, no.")

MR. SIMPSON. He opposed the second rule as it was originally framed, and succeeded in getting it modified so that at present it excluded none but the Jew.

MR. MARSHALL. He joined the Association because of the rule in dispute, and his conscience would not allow him to continue a member if it were withdrawn. He could not associate professionally with Jews and other persons who taught principles so essentially different from his own, and thus opposed him in his daily work.

MR. TURNER. He had shown his resolution to the Dean of Bristol, who entirely approved of its terms, and was amazed to think that an Association of



Schoolmasters, united for a professional object, should impose a religious test upon its members. They might judge in some measure how the present rule had operated by the want of success that had attended the society's operations during the past year. The society was regarded, not as a general but as a sectional one; and while it retained this limited aspect it could never expect to accomplish any very great and important results.

The original motion was lost.

We extract a few passages from Dr. Booth's lecture as published in *The Literary* for Jan. 7, 1857.

*Discoveries in Art and Science are for the Advancement of the Masses.*—

Books, that were once in the hands of nobles and prelates only, sometimes worth even a king's ransom, are now, thanks to the art of printing, within the reach of the poorest of the community. Libraries existed before the days of Caxton, the newspaper and the reading-room are of a subsequent date. Again, consider how much human labor has been relieved by the application of gunpowder in great engineering and mining operations. Who shall compute the amount of human toil which a knowledge of the power of this agent would have saved in the piling up of the Pyramids of Egypt, in excavating the Temples of Ellora, or in cutting out the sculptured shrines of Elephanta? How much suffering of the masses would a little of this chemical science have averted in the building of the Roman aqueducts, which a scientific appreciation of the simplest law of the equilibrium of fluids, now known to every school-boy, would have shown to be superfluous. Need I do more than allude to steam, or the steam-engine—that great modern Cyclops—or to the improvement and cheapening of iron, that most valuable of all the metals, or to the innumerable inventions of machinery, bearing on the cheap manufacture of textile fabrics, or to the application of mechanics and chemistry to agriculture? Only consider the facilities afforded to the poor man of conveying his labor—his only capital—to the uttermost parts of the earth by steam navigation and railway locomotion. The great in every age could travel luxuriously if not expeditiously, but now the artisan can travel with as much personal comfort as the gentleman could thirty years ago. Suetonius, speaking of Augustus, says, "He was borne along by slaves, and the gentle motion allowed him to read, write, and employ himself as in his cabinet. Though Tivoli is only sixteen miles from the city, he was always two nights on the road."—Well, then to bear out my argument, there is gaslight more brilliant than waxlight, and cheaper than the tallow dip. Electroplating and photography bring the finest models and the most truthful landscapes within the reach, if not of the laborer, at least of the artisan. While, on the other hand, but little advancement is to be found in those things which belong exclusively to the rich. Marble must still, as two thousand years ago, be the material which, so to speak, encrusts the breathing statue. Oil and canvas still supply the material elements of our finest paintings. Pearls have not diminished in value or improved in lustre since Cleopatra dissolved them in the wine-cups of her guests to show the extravagance of her magnificence. Science has revealed to us the analysis of the diamond, but art has not yet discovered the synthesis of this precious bauble. So that the ruby and the diamond, the sapphire and the emerald, still continue as untractable and as unchanged, as brilliant and as costly, as when they constituted, in the vision of St. John, the foundations of that new and holy city which had no need of sun or moon, and neither light nor temple were there. This is, indeed, a very remarkable and striking characteristic of nearly all our great modern discoveries, that they tend



to create or to cheapen, if already in existence, those things which improve condition or tend to promote the welfare of the masses of mankind.

*Exclusiveness Rebuked.*—In direct antagonism to this pervading principle of modern discovery—the benefit of the masses, to which I have just now directed your attention—is a custom which has grown up quite recently, which would not have become a custom had the practice not been abetted by wealthy amateurs and selfish collectors. It is the most signal instance of modern Vandalism on record, and deserving of your deepest reprobation. I am referring to the barbarous practice of plate destroying to enhance the value of impressions already taken. The wealthy collector is not satisfied with his impression before letters, unless he is assured that his poorer neighbor shall not enjoy even a ten thousandth impression of it. No humble Englishman is permitted to point out to his eager children how here an uncle fell on the point of Balaclava, or how there a brother died for England on the heights of Inkerman, lest forsooth some retired pawnbroker should be shocked with the intelligence that some mechanic or other low person in the village had an engraving pinned up against the wall, just the very ditto of the one in the gilt frame hanging up in the drawing-room. Now, what should we say if a few wealthy book-collectors had proposed to enter into an agreement with our great historian that no second edition of his great work should be published, and only a limited number of the first, so that Macaulay's "History of England" might be shown to the curious behind a screen or in a glass case? Such a proposal would excite an universal indignation, yet how does it differ in principle from the case of Vandalism I have brought under your notice? Of the genuine aristocracy of this country, I will say they exhibit but little of that contemptible feeling. Their galleries are thrown open or accessible to the public, they freely lend their most valuable pictures for exhibitions, as just now in Manchester; they allow them willingly to be copied. How often do we see a like churlish feeling exemplified, when some old castle or baronial mansion, approached through its branching oaks, those grand old trees, through shady dells and living wall of verdure, passes into the hands of some retired stock-broker or other millionaire. The crumbling fence or ragged hedge, which beyond man's memory let the poor wayfarer, or the tired traveler, or the sketching tourist, contemplate God's beauties in the calm and quiet scene spread out before him, soon gives place to the snug brick wall, bristling with broken glass, and threatening notices to all would-be trespassers.

*Efficacy as a Motive Power of Competitive Examination.*—It is a significant test of the reality and rapidity of our progress, and the remark is due to Dugald Stewart, that "the discoveries which in one age were confined to the studios and enlightened few, become in the next the creed of the learned, and in the third form part of the elementary principles of education. Among those who enjoy the advantages of early instruction, some of the most remote and wonderful conclusions of human reason are, even in infancy as completely familiarized to the mind as the most obvious phenomena which the material world exhibits to their senses." It is, therefore, your duty to cultivate by every means in your power that love of knowledge, which is inherent in the human breast, though but too often chilled by the allurements of pleasure and indolence; you must, therefore, rouse that spirit of perseverance, energy and self-reliance, to come to your aid. To encourage the development of these moral qualities I know no means so effectual as competitive examination, now become so general,

and now being carried into effect by the Society of Arts, for the benefit of the large number of mechanics' institutions and schools in union with it. I need not here enter into the details of this plan, which must be familiar to most of you, and is accessible to all. It was only this morning I read a review in *The Times* of Mr. Meadows's work on China. That gentleman, whom the Reviewer admits to be qualified above all his predecessors to pronounce a just opinion on China, asserts it as his conviction that this stability, peace, and prosperity of that immense region, with its 300 millions of inhabitants, is due to the system of competitive examinations. Mr. Meadows maintains that "in every case the institution of public service examinations, which have long been strictly competitive, is the cause of the continued duration of the Chinese nation; it is that which preserves the other causes and gives efficacy to their operation. By it all parents throughout the country who can compass the means are induced to impart to their sons an intimate knowledge of the literature which contains the three doctrines above cited, together with many others conducive to a high mental cultivation. By it all the ability of the country is enlisted on the side of that government which takes care to preserve its purity. By it, with its impartiality, the poorest man in the country is constrained to say that if his lot in life is a low one, it is so in virtue of the "will of heaven," and that no unjust barriers created by his fellow men prevent him from elevating himself. In consequence of its neglect or corruption, if prolonged, the able men of the country are spurred by their natural and honorable ambition to the overthrow of the,—in their eyes, and in the eyes of the nation—guilty rulers. A new dynasty is then established, which consolidates its power by restoring the institution in integrity and purity; and all the legislative and executive powers are again placed in the hands of the Heen-nang, the wise and able, who—the ablest men being, always the best—rule the country, not only with great soundness of judgment, but with much of that "righteousness and benevolence" which is dictated as well by their own moral nature as by the old and venerated rules of national polity. Then follows one of those long periods which are marked in Chinese history by the reign of justice, peace, content, cheerful industry, and general prosperity, and a glorious succession of which has made the Chinese people not only the oldest, but so vastly the largest, of all the nations.

*Meaning of Cram as Applied to University Examinations.*—Whatever force may be in the objection against cram, as derived from the practices of universities, it can not affect the examinations of the Society of Arts. What is the accepted meaning of the word cram? Why cram means this. When a limited number of examiners, whose habits are indolent, and whose knowledge is stationary, continue for years off and on, to examine in the same subjects, a sort of family likeness is found to grow up in their questions, it is discovered that the examiners have favorite text-books, that they have a fancy for certain points of view, that they are great sticklers for certain forms of notation, which very few care about but themselves, that they have pet questions as posers, that some dislike finery in dress, or *vice versa*. Now, acute men, taking advantage of these peculiarities and idiosyncracies, make themselves acquainted with the grooves in which the examiners run; they map out the field of subjects intersected by these educational railroads, and they sell the information thus laboriously acquired to those who will pay them for it. I have heard of one gentleman in this much maligned occupation who applied the doctrine of chances and the theory of probabilities with much show of mathematical reasoning and man-

ipulation of x's and y's to prove that, if Mr. A. examined, the odds were fifty to one he would ask a particular question about the binomial theorem, and thirty to one that, if Mr. B. examined, he would ask a pet question of his in logarithms. But who would take the trouble to trace the bias of an examiner of the Society of Arts, or who is there to pay for such a detective-like proceeding? But it has been said, men who are well up in subjects often pass a poor examination in them, and are outstripped by others whose knowledge in the same subjects is of a very meagre kind. But is not one of the principal objects of the examination scheme to bring out, not merely the acquisitions made—to test not alone the intellectual capacity—but presence of mind, coolness, sagacity, and quickness in seizing the point of the questions put by the examiner.

*How may Education be Promoted?*—On this question we shall find as many varieties of opinion as there are different shades of the same color. One man is for the *laissez faire*, the let alone principle; another says, let the State take the whole matter into its own hands, let it catch the truants, shut them up between stone walls, and pour learning like physic down their throats. One man says, let us have a national tax for education. Oh no, says a second, I am for a local rate. I am opposed to both your plans, cried a third; I am all for voluntary contributions. Away with centralization, exclaims one man, it is Prussian and despotic. Down with local management, cries his adversary, it is corrupt and fattens nests of jobbers. One man shouts for secular instruction, another will have nothing but purely religious teaching, while a third would attempt to combine them both. One man admits Dissenters openly to church schools, another would let them in by the back door, while a third would exclude them altogether. So on I might continue to raise a saddened smile or provoke indignant laughter. Now, then, as there are so many opinions on this well ventilated, certainly not winnowed question, for it contains plenty of chaff, I can not much be blamed if I, too, like Diogenes, proceed to roll my tub. Well, then, my view is this. We shall never radically improve education until we create a demand for it. I am convinced that the relation of supply to demand holds as strictly in this case as in that of iron or coal. This is the great principle to establish. Once let it be widely known and clearly understood that a new order of things had arisen—that, however it may have been heretofore, men will be promoted for their industry and talent, instead of by personal favor, or through family influence—do this and immediately two distinct consequences will follow. You will have employments more economically, because better filled than formerly; but far more than this will be the result. Education will receive an impetus which could be given it in no other way. I have no doubt whatever on my mind that within the last two years the government has done far more to promote and improve the education of the middle classes of this country, and to stimulate their energies by throwing open the appointments in the civil service of the East India Company to unrestricted competition, by establishing examinations for official situations, than if they had founded fifty colleges in different parts of the country, and endowed 500 professorships in them. The means of knowledge and facilities for learning are not difficult to obtain in this country. Everybody you meet is willing to give the struggling student a helping hand. What we lack is the strong propelling motive to indefatigable effort. Make education a necessary of life, and not merely a luxury, and depend upon it men will procure it, come by it how they may. Create the demand and the supply is sure to follow. Whether England shall elevate th

tone of its education, or raise the standard of its instruction, is not a question for a government to decide; it does not depend on the Lords, it does not rest with the Commons; it is a question entirely within the control of the people themselves. Let the employers of labor promote only the educated and the industrious, and an ample supply of the educated and industrious will be forthcoming. Let them do this, and then urge the government to follow their example. What can be more hypocritical or contemptible than for a man to make a speech, a flaming speech perhaps, on the platform of some education meeting, abuse the government, censure the Committee of Council, hold up the finger of warning to the church, and then go home and bestow any bit of patronage or office in his gift on the idle or worthless, on the mere ground of interest or acquaintance?

*Social Standing of the Teacher.*—The value of the article in which the teacher deals, and the estimation in which he is held, will in a great measure determine his social standing. Where education is but lightly valued, its professors are but little esteemed. Where, as in the universities, instruction in certain branches of knowledge may lead to honor or to social position, the teacher there may take a higher grade. Accordingly, we find that divinity, law, and medicine are called specially the learned professions, because the subjects about which they are occupied are some of the highest and most important which concern man either in his future or his present state. Accordingly, wherever education is highly valued, the office of the educator stands high. In ignorant and barbarous communities he is either not found at all, or he is placed very near the bottom of the social scale. In ancient Greece, where philosophy was the highest and noblest subject of human thought, statesmen and generals were its lecturers. In ancient Rome where philosophy was despised, its teachers were slaves. The conclusion I come to, therefore, is this, that the social standing of the teacher can only be advanced by enhancing the value of the article he trades in. When pupils shall flock in crowds after the teacher of knowledge, praying for admission to his lectures, he will take a very different position from that he now fills. At present Mr. Squeers is only too often the type of the schoolmaster in remote districts, and this brings me back again by another train of thought to the principle I set out with—that it is only by some such testing of results as I advocate, that the honorable profession of teacher can be purged of such men. The State can not interfere with them—they could refuse admission to government or any other inspectors. Parents or pupils are no judges of a schoolmaster's qualifications. It is only through some such testing tribunal as I advocate that the incompetency of such men could be detected and exposed through the proved ignorance of their pupils. The social position, then, of the schoolmaster can only be raised by elevating the educational platform on which he stands.

*Value of Mental Labor.*—Speaking of mental labor, Mr. Bagley of Manchester, in his lecture on the "Labor of Life," says: "With the progress and increase of society, the number whose labor consists of mental rather than of physical exertion becomes more conspicuous. The pursuits of men being governed by the law of supply and demand, professions, as well as trade and commerce, are called into existence to suit the exigencies of the age. Professional men, consisting of medical practitioners, lawyers, clergymen, engineers, architects, and men of science, and of those upon whom the governing power of a country devolves, are as requisite for the good of the common weal as those

who perform bodily and visible labor. Indeed, the labor of the mind exceeds in national importance and usefulness, the mere drudgery of muscle and physical force. To the mental services of professors of every class, the inhabitants of the earth owe an extent of gratitude which can never be sufficiently acknowledged. From the ancients and their successors, modern civilization derived the fruits of both accumulated labor and wisdom. Nor is the apparent leisure of many of the most intellectual occupations to be despised. Unfortunately, the ignorant do not appreciate mental labor, and though the midn student, wasting in power, like the flickering light of his lamp, may be developing the hidden treasures of nature, art or science, and preparing for the beneficial and active exercise of some new industry, his toils are often unrewarded, and, with Butler, the eulogy of the monumental stone, becomes his portion instead of the bread which he needed." But the educator labors under other advantages. He finds great difficulty in augmenting the stock of his intellectual acquisitions. Now this to some persons may appear very strange, but it is not so. There is no man, no matter what his occupation, business or profession, who has any leisure at all, who is not in a more favorable position to make intellectual progress than the schoolmaster. The reason is plain. A man of business who is engaged all day in his warehouse, or superintending his workmen, transacting commercial affairs, when he returns home in the evening finds a positive relief to take up a book or a subject of study, because in so doing he brings into play a set of faculties which were dormant during the day. This is the reason why so many merchants and other men of business have been distinguished for their attainments in literature and science. But when the schoolmaster has finished his day's work, if he takes up a book, he calls into action only faculties already jaded by the labors of the day. The wonder should be therefore, that they have done so much, rather than that they have done so little. But, however this may be, you perform a work without which society could not hold well together—you expend your energies in improving others rather than in accomplishing yourselves—you have the priceless satisfaction of your own consciences that you do the work which is given you to do, and this is a reward which finally is the greatest we can obtain. Yours is a great work if you will only so regard it:—

"All the means of action—  
The shapeless masses, the materials—  
Lie everywhere around us. What we need  
Is the celestial fire, to change the flint  
Into transparent crystal, bright and clear."

**NEW EDUCATIONAL MUSEUM.**—The Privy Council, Education Department, have arranged to open the new Educational Museum, at the New Buildings, South Kensington, in the Spring. The museum will exhibit, under a proper classification, all important books, diagrams, illustrations, and apparatus connected with education already in use, or which may be published from time to time, either at home or abroad. The producers of apparatus, books, diagrams, maps, &c., used in teaching, will have the privilege, subject to certain regulations, of placing their publications and productions in the museum, thus making them known to the public; and we understand that a unanimous desire to assist has been expressed by all the great educational societies and publishers. A catalogue will be prepared which will contain the price lists which exhibitors may furnish for insertion. The books and objects will be grouped under the following divisions:—1. School buildings and fittings, forms, desks, slates, plans, models, &c. 2. General education, including reading, writing, grammar, arithmetic, mathematics, foreign languages, histories. 3. Drawing and the Fine Arts. 4. Music. 5. Household Economy. 6. Geography and Astronomy. 7. Natural History. 8. Chemistry. 9. Physics. 10. Mechanics. 11. Apparatus for teaching the blind and the deaf and

**ECONOMIC LIBRARY.**—The following announcement is copied from the Journal of the Society of Arts, for January 22d, 1857.

It is desired to form, in the Library of the Society of Arts, a special collection of English and Foreign publications, relating to the condition of the working classes, and the means of improving it.

This collection will particularly include the programme and annual reports of the various Provident and Benevolent Institutions in the metropolis and the provinces, and other minor publications, which are frequently required for reference by persons practically engaged in promoting the improvement of the physical and social condition of the people; but which, from their inconspicuous appearance, are not generally classed among the available contents of a public library.

As the plan can only be carried out to full advantage by extensive coöperation, persons who can supply or obtain through their friends publications or documents of the nature pointed out in the following summary, are invited to forward them to the Secretary.

N. B. The following indications are not to be considered as exclusive. Other subjects will suggest themselves by analogy.

I. Programmes, Regulations, Annual Reports, &c., showing the organization of, and the results obtained by the various Institutions established for the benefit of the industrious classes, such as model dwellings, dormitories, sailors' and servants' homes, baths and wash-houses, soup kitchens, working men's coffee rooms, *Fourneaux Economiques*, dispensaries, hospitals, asylums, eleemosynary institutions, reformatories, schools for the blind, deaf and dumb, *crèches*, or public nurseries and infant schools, ragged schools, industrial schools, evening classes, mechanics' institutions of every kind, village libraries, clothing and provision societies, friendly societies and benefit clubs, savings' banks, and pawn houses, (*Monts de Piete.*) trades' associations, land and building societies, allotment societies, societies for the protection and guidance of emigrants, societies for the patronage of apprentices.

As it is the evident interest of the foregoing institutions to become more extensively known, it is hoped that their Secretaries will be disposed to favor the Society of Arts with their respective papers.

II. Publications and documents relating to the domestic economy of the working classes, including building designs and materials, fittings, furniture and household utensils, clothing, food, its production, commercial supply, preparation, adulteration, &c.; fuel and other domestic requisites.

III. Publications and documents relating to various departments of sanitary economy, such as drainage, sewerage, water supply, ventilation, removal of nuisances, prevention of casualties by inundations, shipwreck, fire, &c.; protection against the effects of hot, cold, dry, damp or changeable climates; prevention or relief of the accidents, injuries, and diseases which attach to many handicraft occupations; organization of medical assistance.

IV. Essays and other publications relating to the social condition of the industrious classes; the relations of employer and employed; the organization of labor, &c.

V. Acts of Parliament, official reports, statistical returns &c., bearing on the before-mentioned subjects.

VI. Manuals and hand books for special classes or trades.



VII. Publications describing or illustrating the condition of the working classes in the colonies or in foreign countries.

VIII. Periodicals intended for the use of the working population or their friends.

Further indications will be found in a printed list of papers already presented to the Society of Arts, of which copies may be had on application to the Secretary.

In absence of the publications themselves, particulars of them, and of the address where they may be obtained will be thankfully received.

It is contemplated to form a classified list of all that has appeared in print within these last five or six years, of a nature to interest the friends of the working classes, and to continue this catalogue from year to year.

It was agreed at the International Congress lately held at Brussels, that each country should forward such a list once or twice a year to a central committee at that place, in order that the whole might be published as an International Bulletin.

[Individuals or Societies in the United States, can avail themselves of the facilities offered by the Smithsonian Institution, to forward Reports without charge to themselves or to the recipients.—ED.]

## IRELAND.

NATIONAL EDUCATION.—The Commissioners of National Education for 1855, state :—

“ That at the close of the year 1854, they had in operation 5,178 schools, attended by 556,551 children ; and at the end of 1855, they had only 5,124 schools, with 538,246 pupils, showing a decrease of 54 schools, and of 18,305 scholars. The decrease in workhouse schools, amounting to 10,450 scholars, is included, of course, in the grand total mentioned. The number of schools struck off the list, during the year 1855, is reported at 209, to which must be added 23 in the ‘suspended list,’ making a total of 232 suspended and abolished schools. In a subsequent passage the commissioners report the addition of 154 schools to their list, during 1855, and among the patrons of these new schools there are 34 Protestants, lay and clerical, and 96 Roman Catholics, ditto. The amount of salaries, gratuities, &c., paid to teachers, monitors, assistants, &c., was 105,043*l.* 3*s.* 11*d.*, being an increase of 10,952*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.* over the expenditure of 1854, in this department ; the total sum paid to 452 monitors, of whom two-thirds are males and the remainder females, being 1,896*l.* 15*s.* The amount expended in premiums for cleanliness and good order during the year 1855, was 938*l.*, being 13 graduated premiums of 22*l.* 10*s.* in each of the educational districts into which the country has been divided. During the year 288 national teachers—viz., 201 men and 87 women—have been trained at the model institution in Dublin, besides 39 teachers not connected with national schools. Of the 288 teachers above mentioned, there were 18 belonging to the established church, 41 Presbyterians, 2 connected with another dissenting denomination, and 227 Roman Catholics. At the close of 1855, there were 139 workhouse schools in connection with the National Board, leaving in all Ireland only 24 workhouse schools not connected with the national system.

In the Agricultural Department, the number of model schools, either in operation or in course of erection, at the end of 1855, was 37, while of ‘ordinary agricultural schools there were, 46 ; of workhouse agricultural schools, 79 ; of school gardens, 3 ; —making a total of 165, and showing an increase on the year upon all these classes of 10.’ The entire outlay, ‘exclusive of the cost of buildings,’ amounts to 7,000*l.*, for the agricultural instruction of ‘3,500 pupils and teachers.’ ”



## GERMANY.

*Correspondence of Dr. Hermann Wimmer.*

We are happy to announce that our friend, Dr. Hermann Wimmer, of Borna, near Leipsic, will hereafter be a regular correspondent and contributor to our Journal,—and particularly in all that relates to the current educational literature and movements of Germany. Dr. Wimmer is personally known to many of our readers, as an accomplished classical teacher, and by his work on "*Education and Religion in the United States*," published in Leipsic in 1853. He was educated in the gymnasium and university of Leipsic; trained for a classical teacher in the philological seminary of Hermann and Klotz,—was for several years professor in Blochmann College at Dresden,—has fitted young men for the university of Berlin and of Oxford, as private tutor, and taught with great success for a short period in one of our New England colleges. As an observer he has visited schools of every grade in the United States, England, and France, as well as in different parts of Germany, and he keeps himself familiar with the pedagogical literature of the day. We regard the voluntary proffer of his services as correspondent, as a most valuable addition to our list of contributors.

LETTER FROM DR. WIMMER.

BORNA, SAXONY, Dec. 21, 1856.

First of all, let me congratulate you on the assurance which the numbers already issued, of your American Journal of Education, give of the valuable contributions which will be made to the educational literature of not only your own language, but of the world. I know too well your practical energy in administration, and your knowledge of every department of this great field, to anticipate any sudden exhaustion of materials, or narrow discussion of the great and varied subjects which are presented in the past history and present condition of education in its broadest acceptance in different countries. And you will see that all these facts, gathered from so many sources, and the speculations of so many minds, go to secure the progress already made in your own land, and lead your legislators and teachers to gain still nobler heights.

As an evidence that the schoolmaster is thought of some importance here, I will mention that a late number of our *Illustrated News* contained a portrait of Dr. Charles Vogel, the principal of the Real School, and the Burgher School of Leipsic, with a sketch of his merits as a pedagogical writer. It was really refreshing to meet with the intellectual face of an able schoolmaster, after all the pompous representations of princes, bishops, and chamberlains. The honor was well deserved by Dr. Vogel, who has also just received from the Emperor of Austria the gold medal for science and art, for his geographical text-books, and a diamond ring from the king of Saxony, for his oil maps. The merits of his school have been made known to the American public, by the reports of Mr. Mann, and of Prof. Bache, but your teachers may not know that he has applied his strong intellect to make school-books, which are at once scientific and minutely accurate, and yet clear and interesting to children. His School Atlas of Geography is illustrated by marginal designs, in which the characteristics of the population, as well as of the vegetable and animal peculiarities of every country—in other words, the history of man and nature—are given in sharp outlines, so as to make geography the centre to which many rays of knowledge converge. This Atlas is accompanied, for the use of pupils not

No. 8—[Vol. III, No. 1.]—18.

acquainted with natural history, by "Naturbilder," (Pictures of Nature,) of which Humboldt wrote to the author: "You have solved a difficult problem; you have written a book entertaining, and with all its great variety of matter entirely correct." To facilitate the drawing of maps, Dr. Vogel has published "Netzatlas," (nets for drawing maps,) on oil paper, printed with oil colors, so that maps drawn with chalk, or green color, in case of failure, are easily wiped off with a sponge. This was lately followed by his "*Wand-atlas*," (for the wall,) of the same kind, to be used for class instruction. Both of these aids to teachers and pupils would prove useful in your schools, where map-drawing is much resorted to.

Geography has received much attention in American schools—many of which, even in country districts, I found far advanced beyond schools of the same grade in Europe. But is it not taught too much as a matter of memory? Except Woodbridge's Geography, not one of those commonly used in schools which I examined in 1851, seemed to recognize the theoretical progress and the scientific development of this branch of knowledge which was begun by Ritter, and continued by Humboldt, Raumer, and Vogel. There was far too much political speculation and statistical dust, and not enough of the physical substratum or condition of the country and the population.

Having recently returned from England, I am happy to say, that, in spite of the rejection, or withdrawal by himself, of Lord John Russell's conciliatory resolutions on National Education, there is a steady progress of public opinion in favor of a better system and more efficient agencies of public education. The parliamentary grant of £451,231, (over \$2,000,000,) is an evidence of this.

Dr. Adolphus Diesterweg of Berlin, that great pedagogue of old reputation, the editor of the *Rheinische Blätter*, for twenty-five years, formerly principal of a Normal School, and whom you saw in a green old age in Berlin in 1854, has just published his "Pedagogical Almanac" for 1857. He must have many friends in America on account of his liberal views, and his partiality for the institutions of your country.

Charles Justus Blochman, the well-known principal of the College in Dresden, which you visited, the disciple of Pestalozzi, and teacher in his school at Yverden from 1809 to 1817, died and was buried near Geneva last year.

The Pestalozzian Foundation in Dresden for the orphan children of teachers, established by the disciples and admirers of Pestalozzi, on the centenary anniversary of his birth-day, supports 21 boys and 120 girls, and has an annual income of 3796 thalers.

Prince Schoenberg has established a Normal School for female teachers in Saxony—who have not been heretofore admitted to these seminaries. In truth females are not employed in village or country schools, either as principals or assistants, to any considerable extent. The establishment of female Normal Schools in Belgium, as part of the system of public instruction, is an important step in the right direction in European education.

Be pleased to receive this communication with an account of the progress of Real Schools, and the latest educational statistics of Austria, as evidence of my interest in your editorial labors, and I will by next post send you the titles of several of our best Pedagogical Journals, Year Books, and Manuals, which may be of use to some of your readers, together with the latest educational statistics of Prussia, Saxony, &c.

Most respectfully, your ob't servant and friend,

HERMANN WIDMER.

## AUSTRIA.

You will not be surprised this time to hear of the first German power, i. e., of Austria. Though she ranks not at all first among the states in regard to education, yet she has made, since 1849, so great strides in the right direction, that all friends of educational improvement are at present even more interested in that country, than in those of older educational fame, where some watchmen fancy they find a slight tendency to reaction. The progress now already made in Austria, is especially visible in the erection of "Real Schools," a class of schools that has sprung into life within the last seventy years.

It is true the first school of the same name was kept by Hecker, at Berlin, more than a hundred years ago, but it was so defective in its organization, because of its containing too much of the too practical "Real" stamp, as manufacturing, agricultural, mining, commercial, and other classes, that the present "Real Schools" can not well be compared with it. They are, however, the offspring of that old reaction, or if you choose, revolution, since wrought out by Bacon and Comenius, against the exclusive classical or Latin schools; that is to say, against all schools in their former organization. No wonder then that Hecker, whilst he avoided Scylla, fell into Charybdis, by making his school a workshop. In one of his annual reports it was stated with satisfaction, that the pupils had been instructed in nursing mulberry trees and silk worms, and that in the manufacturing class, dealing in leather "was begun," for which purpose the boys had been shown ninety samples of leather, each of them as great as an octavo leaf. Yet the spirit which had called it to life was not to be quenched, and a pedagogical strife commenced, of which our Herder prophesied eighty years ago, that it would last forever; for the "Real Schools" would not teach Latin enough for an Ernesti, nor the Latin schools "realia enough for all the world." Time was the best reformer, and in the last seventy years, more than three hundred "Real Schools" have been founded, or incorporated as parallel classes, on the gymnasium, on a sound principle of education, which left the gymnasia untouched on the one hand, and added technical schools of a higher and lower order on the other hand. Thus the Real Schools resembling your High Schools in every respect, are burgher schools of a higher grade, resorted to by all such as prepare for a trade or a higher technical instruction, and want a better education than the one given till the fourteenth year of age in our common or burgher schools: whilst professional students must prepare for the University in the gymnasia; and the merely technical wants of apprentices and others, in drawing, mensuration, &c., are provided by Industrial schools.

It would be difficult to make a satisfactory distinction between real, and industrial, and trade schools, and commercial schools, because they have no distinct and settled organization. The two latter are founded and kept by industrial or commercial associations, and are adapted to the peculiar wants of that class of the community, and are partly prior in date to the municipal or state real schools, (higher burgher schools,) and have evening and Sunday classes for apprentices. As to the different character of instruction, I may mention in general, that the Real Schools, as they are now an essential part of our public school system, try to give in their way a *general education*, by training and developing the mental and moral faculties, without particular regard to the various wants of their pupils, and are therefore sometimes called "real gymnasia." Thus, the modern languages, especially the French, are so taught as to apply

the classical instruction in the gymnasia, not to make the pupil to learn phrases and to talk soon, but to show, so far as possible, the genius of the language and literature. Hence, the Real Schools combines in general the mathematical and linguistic elements of education, whilst the former predominates, (with natural sciences and drawing,) in the industrial, the latter in the commercial schools.

The graduates of the Saxon real schools, either pass into the shop or go into the Polytechnical Institution, or Military College at Dresden, the Mining Academy in Freiberg, the Agricultural Academy in Tharand, near Dresden, or make their examination as clerks in the post office.

It is with regard to those high schools, that Austria is deservedly praised for great progress. Hahn says (*Hand-buch der Statistik des Oestrichischen Kaiserstaats*, Wien, 1853, II, p. 614,) "though there were already two real schools in Bohemia before 1850, yet neither these, nor other technical schools joined with industrial associations had a definite plan of instruction, such as the progress of industry urgently required now, the existing real schools are reformed, as others erected on a common system, having a complete organization. The extraordinary and annually increasing attendance of pupils, proves how much they are wanted. Municipal governments and associations in all the provinces have the greatest zeal in assisting the organization of each school by their contributions. This was owing to an imperial decree, dated Sept. 1848, but since then, the work has been advanced by the present minister of Public Instruction, Count Thun, who presented an excellent memorial to the Emperor, which was approved March 8, 1851, and also by the Counselor, Dr. Marian Koller, since 1846 superintendent of that branch of education." There were in 1854, fifteen upper or *complete* real schools with six classes, viz.: two in Vienna, (554–658 pupils,) two in Prague, (German, 327,—Bohemian, 465,) one in Presburg, (427,) Linz, (178,) Brunn, (819,) Graz, (159,) Lemberg, Krakau, Milano, (934,) Venice, Ruchinberg, Rakonitz, and Elbogen. Besides there were 120 Lower Real Schools, with but three classes, and 10,759 pupils, viz.: 16 in the archduchy of Austria, (6 in Vienna,) 30 in Bohemia, 13 in Moravia, 10 in Tyrol, 11 in Galicia, 15 in Italy, 5 in Hungary. Technical Academies or Polytechnical schools, exist in Vienna, (1,732 students,) Brunn (343,) Graz, (171,) Lemberg, (223,) Krakau, (428,) Prag, (805,) Pesth, (251,) and Trieste, (221,) having in all 1,637 German students, 908 Bohemians, 570 Poles; 349 Magyars; 191 Italians, and 138 Slavonians.

Seven upper real schools. (complete,) were about to be erected. Ten separate and nine "associate" lower real schools, (joined to a burgher school.)

These Austrian real schools differ from those of northern Germany by their more realistic or technical character, drawing, mathematics, and natural sciences forming the chief branches of instruction, whilst in our northern high schools, the modern languages assume, some say, a too important position. In the realistic department of Leipzig, for instance, there are two professors of modern languages; one of French, the other of English; whereas in Austria, instruction in the same is not "obligatory," nor committed to regular teachers, nor is it surprising since these were intended to be preparatory to Polytechnical Academies. and similarly organized to those real schools connected before 1849 with those academies in Vienna and Prague. And just that industrial character favored their increase with the government, which at all times was eager to raise its industrial and scientific schools, to, or above the level of the same schools in the rest of Germany. I may mention here that whilst the Austrian

Universities are in other respects not to be compared to ours, still the Medical Faculties of the same in Vienna and Prague, are superior to any in Europe.

Now to call these schools by American names, I think our Polytechnic schools may be compared with your Scientific schools. I refer particularly to the Lawrence Scientific School in Cambridge, though I am not aware that a school for Architecture is connected with it, as is the case with our highest scientific schools. Our Real schools resemble nearly the English departments of your high school, or the English High School in Boston; though in many Real schools, (especially in Prussia,) Latin is still taught to some extent. In others, however, it is entirely superseded by French and English. I now come to a weak point, it seems to me in your English high schools; I mean the want of good instruction in modern languages. You may point to the English; but as the mother tongue of the pupils, it wants that which is so instructive in Latin and any other foreign language; and then beautiful as it is, it is too simple in structure, to be a sufficient ground-work of grammatical discipline. No wonder that English grammar or parsing is generally no favorite with your scholars. Now here, I dare say, a sound instruction in German or French is more wanted than with you. To say nothing of the practical use to be made of a modern language in after life, but merely in a pedagogical sense, I don't mean that you want natives of France or Germany, perhaps of doubtful education, to make the pupils talk as soon as possible in the foreign idioms, but well bred American scholars, who would not teach phrases from Ollendorf's grammar, but would know how to teach their pupils the structure of the language, and to make them acquainted with its literature.

Good text-books would soon follow. I will not dwell longer on this desideratum, especially as the means of employing such teachers are as often wanted as the right man; and in many cases both are wanting. Yet I consider that the committee having charge of your high schools, to make them truly schools of the highest order, should pay more attention to sound and thorough instruction in at least one modern language. There is a similar want in the Austrian Real schools, though by no means so great as in yours: and in Austria those are middle schools in a chiefly technical system of education, and your high schools, like our real schools, are intended to give a high-toned general education of the best sort without the classics.

I wish you had one other thing like the Austrian schools, the "annual program." You know that all of our schools of a higher grade as real schools, gymnasia, academies, universities, etc., have their annual reports always preceded by a literary or scientific treatise written by one of the professors. The advantages of this custom are too clear to be dwelt upon. Now the Austrian real schools make themselves very remarkable in their young career, by having, instead of one, three and four such treatises of two or three professors, besides the report of the Principal. This may be a task, and a great expense, yet one treatise written by one of the professors after a series of years, is a beneficial stimulus to private studies and is productive of scientific or pedagogical suggestions or results, which never would be published except in this form.

I should mention that teachers in the lower Real Schools of Austria are trained in the upper Real Schools in special training courses formed under the direction of the Principal.

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS OF THE AUSTRIAN EMPIRE, IN 1856.

	Number.	Teachers.	Students
Universities, . . . . .	10 . . . . .	510 . . . . .	9,371
Theological Schools, . . . . .	142 . . . . .	657 . . . . .	4,250
Law Schools, . . . . .	6 . . . . .	33 . . . . .	286
Surgical Schools, . . . . .	8 . . . . .	77 . . . . .	667
Obstetric, &c., . . . . .	20 . . . . .	57 . . . . .	1,475
Polytechnic, . . . . .	8 . . . . .	178 . . . . .	5,130
Agricultural, . . . . .	19 . . . . .	72 . . . . .	912
Mining, . . . . .	3 . . . . .		
Music, . . . . .	8 . . . . .	234 . . . . .	4,417
Gymnasia or Latin, . . . . .	270 . . . . .	3,096 . . . . .	48,791
Real Schools—Upper, . . . . .	14 } . . . . .	336 . . . . .	7,317
Real Schools—Lower, . . . . .	11 }		
Military Orphan Asylums, . . . . .	63 . . . . .	481 . . . . .	5,520
Common Schools, . . . . .	30,132 . . . . .	55,431 . . . . .	2,570,362
Repetition, (Eve. & Sun.) . . . . .	11,728 . . . . .		2,532,016
Infant Schools, . . . . .	122 . . . . .	512 . . . . .	11,571

Beside the above schools, which belong to the Ministry of Worship and Instruction, there are special schools for the Army.

The expense of the common schools, chargeable to the government was 531,662 florins, (a florin is about two thirds of a thaler, or about 47 cents.) the expense of the Infant Schools—literally gardens for infants during the day, when mothers are obliged to go out to work, is 90,000 florins.

MECKLENBERG.

In turning from this topic, I am sorry to give a statement published in official paper with regard to the present state of education in Mecklenberg, viz: that of 940 recruits conscribed last autumn, there were

- 226 who could not read writing, (i. e., print they could read.)
- 180 " " write at all.
- 160 " but write single letters.
- 380 who understood no arithmetic, and but six had a higher education.

Such things, adds the Saxon School Gazette, are read with horror! How it to be accounted for? Beside the State schools, there are in Mecklenberg: great many " ritterscherfslicke," village schools, i. e., which are supported entirely by the lords of manor. The only law affecting them is of the year 1821. According to it, the school is to be open in winter, of course, daily, but in summer, twice a week for two hours, four in all,—actually they are open for 8, 12, even 18 hours, but badly attended. The schoolmaster is appointed by the gentleman, and under his inspection, (with that of the clergyman,) hence a complaint brought before the patron, is at the same time a complaint against the patron. The teacher is taken wheresoever he may be got, provided he can pass the examination before the provincial school board. But that examination is of a very low character, nor is much to be required from a man at a salary of about one hundred dollars a year.



## XX. OBITUARY.

---

THOMAS ROBBINS, D. D., died at Colebrook, Conn., on the 13th of September, 1856, aged 79.

In the death of this venerable Christian pastor, and representative of the habits and costume of the primitive days of New England, the common schools of Connecticut have lost an old teacher, a faithful officer, and one of the earliest laborers in the "Educational revival" which began about the year 1826, and which we hope has not yet reached its full development.

THOMAS ROBBINS, D. D., was born at Norfolk, Conn., on the 11th of August, 1777, the son of Rev. Ammi R. Robbins,\* the first minister of that town, and for fifty-two years, in the pastoral charge of the same people. He fitted for college with the scholars which his father was in the habit of instructing in his own house, and joined the Freshman class in Yale in 1792, under the presidency of Dr. Stiles, with whom he studied Hebrew in addition to the regular course. At the close of the Junior year, he left Yale in good standing and joined the Senior class in Williams College, where he graduated with honor in August, 1796, and in September following, took the same degree of bachelor of arts with his former class at Yale College. For several years following he taught school, at Sheffield, Mass., and Torrington, Conn., while pursuing his theological studies, was licensed to preach in September, 1798, and officiated and supplied vacant pulpits in the States of Vermont, Massachusetts, Connecticut, and New York, until the autumn of 1803.

While officiating in this way in Fairfield county, he taught an academy in Danbury, from Dec. 1799, to Dec. 1802. While there he delivered on the 11th January, 1800, at the request of the town authorities, an oration on the Death of George Washington, and preached on the 1st of January, 1801, a *Centenary Sermon* on the first settlement of the town, both of which were published. In November, 1803, he was ordained a missionary of the Connecticut Home Missionary Society to New Connecticut—having declined urgent invitations to settle as pastor in Becket, Haddam, Winchester, and several other churches. From November, 1803, till May, 1806, he labored principally in the county of Trumbull, Ohio, until his impaired health obliged him to return. In May, 1809, he was installed pastor of the first Congregational church in East Windsor, where he continued till 1827, when he was dismissed at his own request. In 1830 he was installed pastor of the First Church in Stratford, and in September, 1831, removed to Mettapoissett, a parish in the town of Rochester, Mass., where he remained pastor of the church till August, 1844, when he removed to Hartford, Conn., to act as Librarian of the Connecticut Historical Society. For several years before his death he was obliged to give up the active duties of his office,

---

\* Rev. Ammi Ruhamah Robbins was born at Branford, Conn., on the 25th of August, (O. S.) 1740, a son of Philemon Robbins, pastor of the church in that place. Graduated at Yale College in 1760; studied theology under Rev. Dr. Bellamy, of Bethlem, and ordained pastor of the church and society of Norfolk, in October, 1761, and died in the fifty-second year of his ministerial labors, on the 31st of October, 1813, aged 73 years, leaving a widow and eight children; three of whom were in the ministry. He was a brother of Rev. Chandler Robbins, D. D., of Plymouth, Mass.



and in 1855 he withdrew to the country, and with his relatives in Norfolk, and Colebrook, passed the last months of his life. He died at Colebrook, on the 13th of September, 1856, aged seventy-nine years, one month and two days.

Dr. Robbins was a member of the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester, and received the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity from the Corporation of Harvard College in 1838, and of Williams College in 1842.

His remains are interred in the North Burying Ground of Hartford, in the immediate vicinity of the grave of the Rev. Dr. Strong, with whom in life, he was always on intimate personal and ministerial relations.

The following notice of his funeral, and the proceedings of the Connecticut Historical Society, are taken from the Connecticut Courant.

**FUNERAL OF REV. THOMAS ROBBINS, D. D.**—The funeral of the Rev. Dr. Robbins took place Tuesday, Sept. 16th, at 5 o'clock, P. M., at the Centre Church. The services were conducted by Rev. Dr. Hawes, who made a brief but touching address on the Christian and pastoral character of the deceased, and on his own happy personal relations with him, from the outset of his own ministry in Connecticut. He spoke of his uniformly courteous, faithful, exemplary Christian life, and as almost the last representative of the manners of the early generation of Puritan ministers. There was a deep solemnity in his allusion to the closing hour of the day which was beginning to fill the church with the shadows of the coming night, and the blissful morning which would break on the spirit of the faithful Christian who departs this life like the deceased in the faith of the Lord Jesus. After the reading of appropriate selections from the Scriptures, and a prayer, solemn, impressive, and edifying, and appropriate anthems by the choir, the body was borne out of the church by four of the pastors of Hartford, and followed by the relations and friends, and the members of the Connecticut Historical Society, to the North Burying Ground, where it was consigned to the tomb just as the sun was setting behind the western hills.

A special meeting of the Connecticut Historical Society was held at the Library at half-past four o'clock, which the President, Henry Barnard, opened with the following remarks:—

**GENTLEMEN:**—We have assembled on this occasion, by special summons, to join in an appropriate expression of our grateful remembrance of the Rev. Thomas Robbins, D. D.,—one of the earliest and best friends of the Society, whose decease and funeral have been almost simultaneously announced to us. The departure of this venerable Christian Pastor, whose ministrations for a half century have been familiar to the pulpits of this city and state, and whose life, presence and teachings have seemed a connecting link between the present generation and the Puritan period of New England History—would at any time have arrested the sorrowing attention of all who seek in the past the roots of our present prosperity; but in this venerable Christian Pastor, we brethren, recognize a pioneer in historical and antiquarian research in this state—one of the founders of this Society—one named in the act of its incorporation—one of its earliest office-bearers, and one whose valuable collection of books, pamphlets, and historical memorials constitute the treasure and attraction of our library and museum.

And to add to his claims, to our grateful remembrance, Dr. Robbins has, by his Will, made the Connecticut Historical Society the Trustee of his property, a no inconsiderable sum,\* by which his valuable collection of biblical, ecclesiastical, and antiquarian literature will be preserved, and gradually augmented—an ever enduring monument of his piety, patriotism, and zeal for learning, and

---

\* About \$4,000.

a source of ever widening instruction and pleasure to generation after generation. A brief notice of the Library, and of his, and its connection with the Connecticut Historical Society, can not be considered an inappropriate introduction to the Resolutions which will be submitted to your consideration.

The books which fill these numerous alcoves and shelves, and these interesting memorials of the piety, bravery, and domestic life of the fathers of Connecticut and New England, were the gatherings of nearly fifty years' explorations of the garrets, chests, and libraries of the old families of Connecticut and the "old colony," as well as purchases of antiquarian book-sellers and collectors. Many of these pamphlets are very rare and valuable, and are often consulted by scholars interested in the literary, ecclesiastical, and civil history of New England.

The books were not purchased at once, out of the abundance of a largely inherited fortune, or from year to year out of the surplus of a large salary. Nor were they collected for the owner's sole or temporary gratification. Dr. Robbins has always been a Home Missionary, or the pastor of a country parish. He commenced his collection while in college, by preserving his text-books; and in 1809 made a formal beginning of a permanent library, by making a catalogue of his entire stock, consisting of one hundred and thirty volumes, with a determination that he would add at least one hundred volumes a year as long as he should live. He consecrated his design by invoking the blessing of God upon it, and declared in writing on the first leaf of his catalogue, the following to be his objects:—

"*First*, To assist the divinity student in the investigation of the Holy Scriptures, in the study of the history of the Church of Christ, and in such general services as may enable him to become an able and faithful minister of the gospel of salvation.

"*Secondly*, To assist the lover of history in his researches to discover the character of the Most High, and of man in the various events of Divine Providence. The design is now committed to God. I pray for his holy approbation and blessing."

From this small and pious beginning in 1809, by denying himself all superfluities, out of a modest income, Dr. Robbins persevered, adding year after year at least one hundred volumes to his collection, till, instead of a few shelves in a single case, we now see this spacious hall filled with many thousands of choice and valuable books.

How much purer and higher has been his satisfaction from year to year, in adding to the glorious company of the great and good—coming to him across oceans of space and time—his instructors in the noble themes which have occupied his meditation, his pen, and his voice, for nearly half a century—his resort in hours of solitude—his recreation after severe labor—and his solace in periods of trial and affliction—than if he had expended his earnings and savings on things that perish with the using.

It was his intention from the start, that his collection should be kept entire after his death, and pass, with such conditions as should appear best calculated to secure its preservation and gradual increase, into the safe keeping of some chartered Institution; and by arrangement entered into twelve years ago, his long cherished purpose was consummated by this Society's becoming at first the Trustee, and afterward the owner of his valuable collections. By this arrangement he had the satisfaction in his own life-time to see his entire library

displayed, as it had never been before, in one of the noblest rooms of the most substantially built edifice in the State—safe from the hazards of fire, and from the vicissitudes which attach to the property of individuals, and committed forever to the custody of a Society, which, under the laws of the Commonwealth, and in the patriotism of its citizens, is destined, we trust, to a permanent existence, and ever-widening usefulness. And more than this, he was able to retire from his chosen field of labor, when he could no longer serve his Master as a Christian pastor from his failing strength, and without any apprehension that the evening of his life would be clouded by want or neglect, and here, in our midst, where he was universally respected, with those facilities and helps which his zeal and self-denial had collected, give himself up to those historical and antiquarian studies and pursuits which he loved so well, and which he had commenced so early in his career.

Dr. Robbins was for a long time almost the only collector in the State, of pamphlets and memorials of the past, and as far back as in 1811, in the Connecticut Evangelical Magazine, commenced a series of papers on the divines and statesmen of our early history, which were afterward collected and published in a volume entitled, "First Planters of New England." In every place where he ministered, he devoted himself to the elucidation of its local and ecclesiastical history.

In 1822, in an address delivered in this city on the 4th of July, before a number of military companies, he urged the formation of an "Historical Society and a depository of ancient books, pamphlets, manuscripts, and temporary publications," and that it should be done here, "in this, the oldest town in the State." Whether growing out of this suggestion, or not, I can not say, but three years later he had the satisfaction of seeing his name among the incorporators of the Connecticut Historical Society, and of being associated with the venerable Joel Trumbull, and Hon. Thomas Day, among the officers of the institution. Called a few years later out of the State, he was not permitted to labor here in behalf of its objects, but he carried his antiquarian taste and labors, which were recognized by his being elected a member of the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester.

In 1844, it was my good fortune to consummate, on my own responsibility,\* an arrangement by which Dr. Robbins became the librarian of our Society, and

---

\* At the May session of the Legislature of Rhode Island, in 1844, a Memorial was presented, setting forth "that the valuable library of Rev. Thomas Robbins, D. D., of Mettapoissett, Mass., could be procured for a public institution," and asking that it might be purchased by the State, as the foundation of a State Library. The Memorial was referred to the Committee on Education. Mr. Barnard, at that time Commissioner of Public Schools, on being consulted by the Committee, advised that the library be purchased for this purpose, and drew up a Report and Resolution for the Chairman of the Committee, favorable to such action, remarking to the Chairman, "that if the Legislature did not act promptly and definitely at this session, it would be too late." The Committee did not adopt the Report, and the Legislature adjourned without any action on the subject. On the same day Mr. Barnard drove over to Mettapoissett, and after an interview of an hour, finding that Dr. Robbins' health required a cessation of pastoral duties, gave his personal obligation for a salary for five years, equal to that which he was then receiving as pastor, if he would remove to Hartford with his library, and become Librarian of the Connecticut Historical Society. In the course of the week following, he visited Hartford, raised among the members of the Society, and the personal friends of Dr. Robbins, the sum required, and presented the matter to the sanction of the Society, which was promptly and cordially given. The annual payment for five years was subsequently converted into an annuity, in consideration of which, Dr. Robbins of his own accord transferred his Library to the Society.

moved to these rooms, as has been before stated, his valuable library, and gave to us his entire collection of pamphlets, to the number of over five thousand. And here, for ten years, with gradually failing strength, he might be seen at our monthly meetings, and day by day welcoming, with courteous attentions, the citizen and stranger to these rooms, and explaining, with almost the personal interest of an eye-witness to the reality, these memorials of a past age—himself an object of no less interest to the visitor. But by degrees the failing memory—the hesitating step—the dim eye—satisfied himself, as well as his best friends, that his work on earth was finished, and he retired to the country—to the neighborhood where he was born, and there his spirit gradually passed away, like the twilight of a long summer's day, into that solemn darkness which mortal eye can not pierce, but which to him, we doubt not, is lit up by the radiance of a never-ending noon.

It would be unjust even in these brief remarks not to notice his life long interest in the prosperity of our New England colleges, and his constant care of the common school, in every place where he ministered as pastor. He was seldom absent from the commencement exercises of Yale and Williams, and never failed to visit once, and generally twice every district school in his parish, during each season of schooling. He was a member of the first Society formed in this country to improve common schools, and on the nomination of Governor Everett, was appointed a member of the Massachusetts State Board of Education, on its establishment in 1837.

Dr. Robbins took an active part in all the religious and benevolent movements of the day, and in the foundation of most of the institutions of charity, which adorn and bless our city. He was particularly active in commending the cause of the insane to individual and legislative aid, and was invited by Dr. Todd and the Trustees, to pronounce a Discourse on the dedication of the Retreat for that class.

Before we go out hence to pay our last tribute of respect to our deceased brother and venerable friend, by joining in the funeral services, and following his body to the tomb, let us unite in placing on our records our high appreciation of his pure, useful, and Christian life, and our grateful remembrance of his many services to the cause of sound learning and intelligent piety—and especially in opening to the student of History and the Bible this valuable, and, we trust, ever-increasing Library.

The following Resolutions were then adopted:—

WHEREAS it has pleased Almighty God to call from his earthly labors, our late Librarian, the Reverend Thomas Robbins, Doctor in Divinity—

*Resolved*, That in his death the Connecticut Historical Society has lost one of its original projectors, founders, and office-bearers, whose antiquarian zeal did much to enlist others on the promotion of its objects, and whose reverence for God's Word and ways, has led to the acquisition of a valuable library, and of large historical material, into the possession of which this Society has entered, with the means bequeathed by him to make the same still more valuable “to the student of the Holy Scriptures, and the lover of history in his researches to discover the character of the Most High, and of man in the various events of Divine Providence.”

*Resolved*, That as a Christian Pastor we honor his memory as at once devoted and exemplary—firm in his own convictions, and candid and liberal toward those who differed with him in opinion, and in all his transactions with others, eminent for his Christian courtesy and kindness.

*Resolved*, That, as a Society, we will proceed hence to the Centre Church, to assist in the funeral solemnities, and to follow his body to its last resting-place.

THOMAS DOWSE died at his residence in Cambridgeport, Mass., on the 4th of November, 1856, in the 84th year of his age. We abridge the following notice from an article in "The Historical Magazine," for January, 1857.

THOMAS DOWSE was a native of Charlestown, Mass., and was born Dec. 28th, 1772. He was the son of Eleazer Dowse, and a descendant of Lawrence Dowse, an early settler at Charlestown. After the burning of that place by the British, in 1775, his parents removed to Sherborn, where they continued to reside till their death. When about six years of age, he met with an accident by which he was rendered a cripple. This accident, by preventing his engaging in the active sports of boyhood, no doubt had some influence in developing his studious habits. At an early age he became an apprentice to Mr. Samuel Waitt, a leather-dresser of Roxbury; and was afterward his partner in business. In 1801, he removed to Cambridgeport, where, in connection with different individuals, he carried on his business until about ten years since.

He began early to collect a library, which by degrees grew to be a very valuable one. In 1831 it was brought to the notice of the public by Hon. Edward Everett, in a lecture delivered at Boston.

"I scarce know if I may venture to adduce an instance nearer home, of the most praiseworthy and successful cultivation of useful knowledge on the part of an individual without education, busily employed in mechanical industry. I have the pleasure to be acquainted, in one of the neighboring towns, with a person who was brought up to the trade of a leather-dresser, and has all his life worked, and still works at this business.\* He has devoted his leisure hours, and a portion of his honorable earnings, to the cultivation of useful and elegant learning. Under the same roof which covers his workshop, he has the most excellent library of English books, for its size, with which I am acquainted. The books have been selected with a good judgment, which would do credit to the most accomplished scholar, and have been imported from England by himself. What is more important than having the books, their proprietor is well acquainted with their contents. Among them are several volumes of the most costly and magnificent engravings. Connected with his library is an exceedingly interesting series of paintings, in water colors,—copies of the principal works of the ancient masters in England,—which a fortunate accident placed in his possession, and several valuable pictures, purchased by himself. The whole forms a treasure of taste and knowledge, not surpassed, if equaled, by anything of its kind in the country."

This library, which he had spent a lifetime in collecting, Mr. Dowse felt unwilling to have dispersed at his death; and, as early as July last, being admonished by failing health, he proposed to the Massachusetts Historical Society to receive his treasures into their keeping.

Through the immediate agency of Mr. George Livermore, the immediate neighbor and confidential friend of Mr. Dowse, and the President of the Society, Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, this design was consummated. At a special meeting of the Society on the 5th of August, this noble deed was formally announced by the President, and resolutions adopted, by which the Society obligates itself to keep the collection of books thus presented, "in a room by themselves, to be used only in said room,"

*Resolved*, That the collection of books thus presented and accepted shall be known always as the Dowse Library of the Massachusetts Historical Society, and that an ap-

---

\* Mr. Thomas Dowse, of Cambridgeport.

appropriate book plate be procured, with this or a similar inscription, to be placed in each volume of the collection.

*Resolved*, That this society entertain the deepest sense of the liberality and munificence of Mr. Dowse in making such a disposition of the library, which he has collected with such care and at such cost during a long lifetime, as shall secure it for the benefit of posterity, and for the honor of his native State, and that they offer to Mr. Dowse in return their most grateful and heartfelt acknowledgements for so noble a manifestation of his confidence in the society, and of his regard for the cause of literature and learning.

*Resolved*, That the Massachusetts Historical Society respectfully and earnestly ask the favor of Mr. Dowse, that he will allow his portrait to be taken for the society, to be hung forever in the room which shall be appropriated to his library, so that the person or the liberal donor may always be associated with the collection which he so much loved and cherished, and that the form as well as the name of so wise, and ardent, and munificent a patron of learning and literature, may be always connected with the result of his labors, at once as a just memorial of himself, and an animating example to others.

*Resolved*, That a copy of these resolutions, duly attested by all the officers of the society, be communicated to Mr. Dowse, by the President, with the cordial wishes of every member, that the best blessings of Heaven may rest upon the close of his long, honorable, and useful life.

Appropriate remarks were submitted on the occasion by the President, Mr. George Livermore, Chief Justice Shaw, and Mr. Edward Everett. We subjoined the remarks of the latter.

"Twenty-five years ago, I stated, in a public address, that I considered it for its size the most valuable library of English books with which I was acquainted. A quarter of a century has since past, during the greater part of which, Mr. Dowse has continued to increase the number of his books, and the value of his library, by new acquisitions; and it now amounts, as our President informs us, to about five thousand volumes. Many of these are books of great rarity, such as are usually found only in the collections of the curious. A still greater number, in fact the great proportion, are books of great intrinsic value, which is by no means sure to be the case with bibliographical rarities. In one word, sir, it is a choice library of the standard literature of our language. Most of these books, where there was more than one edition, are of the best edition. They are all in good condition,—that has ever been a rule with Mr. Dowse; and very much the larger part of them are in elegant, some in superb bindings. It is in truth, a collection reflecting equal credit on the judgment, taste, and liberality of its proprietor.

"Sir, we have a guaranty for the value of his library, in the inducement which led Mr. Dowse, very early in life, to commence its formation, and which has never deserted him. His interest in books is not, like that of some amateur collectors, limited to their outsides. He has loved to collect books because he has loved to read them; and I have often said, that I do not believe there is a library in the neighborhood of Boston better *read* by its owner than that of Mr. Dowse.

"Mr. Dowse may well be called a public benefactor, sir, and especially for this, that he has shown, by a striking example, that it is possible to unite a life of diligent manual labor with refined taste, intellectual culture, and those literary pursuits which are commonly thought to acquire wealth, leisure, and academical education. He was born and brought up in narrow circumstances. He had no education but what was to be got from a common town school, seventy years ago. He has worked all his life at a laborious mechanical trade; and never had a dollar to spend but what he had first earned by his own manual labor. Under these circumstances he has not only acquired a handsome property—not an uncommon thing under similar circumstances in this country—



but he has expended an ample portion of it in surrounding himself with a valuable collection of books,—has found leisure to acquaint himself with the contents,—has acquired a fund of useful knowledge,—cultivated a taste for the arts, and thus derived happiness of the purest and highest kind, from those means which too often minister only to sensual gratification and empty dissipation.

"I rejoice, sir, that our friend has adopted an effectual method of preventing the dispersion of a library brought together with such pains and at such so great an expense. Apart from the service he is rendering to our society, which as one of its members I acknowledge with deep gratitude, he is rendering a great service to the community. In this way, he has removed his collection from the reach of those vicissitudes to which the possessions of individuals and families are subject. There is no other method by which this can be attained. I saw the treasures of art and taste collected at Strawberry Hill during a lifetime, by Horace Walpole, at untold expense, scattered in four winds. The second best private library I ever saw, (Lord Spence's best,) was that of the late Mr. Thomas Grenville, the son of George Grenville, of stamp act memory. He intended that it should go to augment the collection of taste and art at Stowe, to whose proprietor, (the Duke of Buckingham) it was related. In a green old age,—a little short of ninety,—he had sorrowing of the crash which impended over that magnificent house; and, by his will, executed but a few years before his death, he gave his magnificent collection to the British Museum. In the course, I think, of a twelvemonth after that time, every thing that could be sold at Stowe was brought to the market."

"Mr. Dowse has determined to secure his library from these sad accidents, by placing it in the possession of a public institution. Here it will be kept together,—appreciated as it deserves,—and conscientiously cared for. While it will add to the importance of our society, and increase our usefulness, it will share that safety and permanence to which the Massachusetts Historical Society under the laws of the commonwealth is warranted in forwarding."

Mr. Dowse lived but a few months after the transfer of his library. He died at his residence in Cambridgeport, Tuesday, November 4th, 1854, in the 84th year of his age. At the next monthly meeting of the Massachusetts Historical Society after his death, held on the 13th of November, Mr. Vinton, the President, thus addressed the Society:

"It is already well known to the members of this society, that the very large and valuable addition to our library, has passed away since our last stated meeting. He died on Tuesday, the 4th of November, at about 1 P. M., at the age of eighty-four years, and was buried on the following day. The interval between the time at which information of his death was received, and the time fixed for his interment, was not sufficient to allow of a formal meeting of the society, and the responsibility was assumed by the President, of notifying the members to attend the funeral without further notice. The result was all that could have been desired. A very large proportion of our number as live within reach of so short a notice, assembled at the mansion of the deceased, at the appointed time, and, after attending the religious services of the occasion, accompanied his relatives and friends to Auburn. Gathered there, between the imposing shaft which Mr. Dowse recently erected at his own expense to the memory of *Franklin*, and the



bler stone which he had prepared to designate his own tomb, the officers and members of our society united in paying the last tribute of respect and gratitude to his remains.

"It has seemed fit that an official announcement of these circumstances should be made at this our earliest meeting since they occurred, in order that it may find its appropriate place upon our records, and that such further measures may be adopted in honor of the memory of our largest benefactor, as may commend themselves to the deliberate sense of the members.

"The event which has indissolubly connected the name of Thomas Dowse with the Massachusetts Historical Society, has occurred too recently to require any detailed recital. The formal presentation of the rich and costly library, which it had been the pleasure and the pride of his whole mature lifetime to collect, was made known to us on the fifth day of August last, and the circumstances of that occasion are still fresh in the remembrance of us all.

"Though he had long been suffering more or less acutely from the disease which has at length brought his remarkable and honorable career to a close, Mr. Dowse was still, at that time, in perfect possession of his faculties, and took the deepest and most intelligent interest in all the details of the transaction. At his own request, I called upon him repeatedly after the gift was consummated, and was a witness to the satisfaction and pleasure which he experienced in having secured what he was pleased to regard as so trustworthy and so distinguished a guardianship for his most cherished treasures. He seemed to feel that the great object of his life had at length been happily provided for, and that he was now ready to be released from the burdens of the flesh. It can not be doubted that the gratification afforded him, both by the act itself, and by the manner in which it was accepted and acknowledged, did much at once to prolong his life beyond his own expectation or that of his friends, and to impart comfort and serenity to his last days.

"He lived long enough after every thing had been arranged, to lend a modest but cordial assent and coöperation to the fulfillment of the proposal which accompanied our acceptance of his munificent donation, and a noble portrait of him is here with us to-day, to adorn the room in which his library shall be ultimately placed. The books themselves, with the single exception of the memorable volume which he delivered into my hands as an earnest of the gift, were left to the last to be the solace of his own closing scene.

"It is for others, who have known him longer and better than myself, to do justice to the many striking qualities of head and heart which characterized this remarkable self-made man, and to give due illustration to a career and an example which must ever be freshly honored, not by this society only, but by all who take an interest in the advancement of Literature, Learning, and the Arts."

Mr. Everett followed in his own happy manner,—closing as follows:—

"And so, Mr. President, his work on earth being accomplished, calmly and without hurry or perturbation, even at the last,—that industrious and thoughtful existence, divided equally between active labor and liberal intellectual culture,—lonely as the world accounts solitude, but passed in the glorious company of the great and wise of all ages and countries, who live an earthly immortality in their writings,—a stranger at all times to the harrassing agitations of public life,—undisturbed by the political earthquake which that day shook the country, our friend and benefactor on the 4th instant passed gently away. As

I saw him two days afterward, lying just within the threshold which I had never passed before but to meet his cordial welcome,—as I gazed upon the lifeless, but placid features,—white as the camellias with which surviving affection had decked his coffin,—as I accompanied him to his last abode on earth,—the ‘new sepulchre’ (if without irreverence I may use the words,) which he had prepared for himself, ‘wherein was never man yet laid;’ as I saw him borne into that quiet dwelling where the weary are at rest, within the shadow of the monument to Franklin to which you have alluded, lately erected at his sole expense and care on the higher ground which overlooks his own tomb, that even in death he might sleep at his great master’s feet; as, in company with you all, gathered bareheaded around his grave at Mount Auburn, at that bright autumnal noon, while the falling leaves and naked branches and sighing winds of November, announced the dying year, I listened to the sublime utterances of the funeral service, breathed over his dust, I felt that such a closing scene of such a life came as near as human frailty permits to fill the measure of a hopeful euthanasy.”

Resolutions expressive of the feelings of the Society were adopted, and Mr. Everett was appointed to prepare a Memoir of Mr. Dowse, for the records of the society.

#### NOTICES.

DEFERRED ARTICLES.—We are obliged reluctantly to postpone to our next issue the entire department of BOOK NOTICES,—METHODS,—QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS,—and BOOKS RECEIVED.

REFORMATORY CONFERENCE AT NEW YORK.—A Convention to be composed of representatives from each House of Refuge and Reform School in the United States, will meet in the Chapel of the New York House of Refuge, on Randall’s Island, on Tuesday, the 12th day of May next, at 10 o’clock, A. M. The Delegates will assemble at the rooms of the Children’s Aid Society in Clinton Hall, Astor Place, at 9 o’clock, A. M., where a committee will be in attendance to accompany the delegates to Randall’s Island.

OLIVER S. STRONG,	} Committee on the Part of the
ISRAEL RUSSELL,	
WILLIAM M. RICHARD,	
	N. Y. House of Refuge.

NEW ENGLAND NORMAL INSTITUTE AT LANCASTER, MASS.—A course of instruction in *Rhetoric and Elocution*, of ten weeks, by Prof. Russell, will commence on the first Monday of June. *Terms*: \$5.00.

AGENT FOR OBTAINING SUBSCRIBERS.—Mr. C. M. Welles, is authorized to receive subscriptions for the American Journal of Education.

POSTAGE ON THIS JOURNAL.—To every subscriber, who, in addition to the subscription price for the year, (\$3.00,) will forward twenty-four cents, the Journal for the year 1857 will be sent free of postage.

# THE American Journal of Education.

No. IX.—JUNE, 1857.

## CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
<b>PORTRAIT OF NICHOLAS BROWN.</b> .....	280
<b>I. MEMOIR OF NICHOLAS BROWN.</b> By Prof. William Gammell.....	291
Note. Providence Athenæum .....	308
Butler Hospital for the Insane .....	309
<b>II. LETTERS TO A YOUNG TEACHER.</b> By Gideon F. Thayer, Boston.....	313
<b>III. CULTIVATION OF THE EXPRESSIVE FACULTIES.</b> By William Russell .....	321
<b>IV. NEW YORK INSTITUTION FOR THE INSTRUCTION OF THE DEAF AND DUMB.</b> ...	346
Illustrations— <i>Figure 1.</i> Perspective of Building .....	346
"        " <i>2.</i> Ground Plan.....	364
<b>V. MEMOIR OF HARVEY PRINDLE PEET, LL. D.,</b> President of New York Institution for the Deaf and Dumb.....	366
Portrait .....	367
<b>VI. C. H. ZELLER AND INSTITUTION AT BEUGGEN, (Duchy of Baden,) for Training</b> Teachers of Schools for Orphan and Vicious Children .....	384
<b>VII. JACOB VEHRLI AND NORMAL SCHOOL AT KRUITZLINGEN, (Switzerland,) for Train-</b> ing Teachers of Schools for the Poor.....	389
<b>VIII. FARNUM STATE PREPARATORY SCHOOL, at Beverly, Massachusetts.</b> .....	397
Portrait of Paul Farnum.....	397
<b>IX. LIFE AND EDUCATIONAL PRINCIPLES OF PESTALOZZI</b> .....	401
<b>X. NORMAL SCHOOLS:—their Relations to Primary and Higher Institutions of Learning,</b> and to the Progress of Society. By Prof. W. F. Phelps.....	417
<b>XI. NATURAL HISTORY AS A BRANCH OF POPULAR EDUCATION.</b> By J. W. Dawson, Principal of McGill University, Montreal .....	428
<b>XII. ABBE DE LA SALLE, AND INSTITUTE OF CHRISTIAN BROTHERS.</b> .....	437
<b>XIII. THE SCHOOL AND THE TEACHER IN LITERATURE.</b> .....	449
William Shenstone.....	449
<i>The Schoolmistress</i> .....	449
Annotations. <i>My First Teacher</i> , by Rev. Warren Burton.....	456
"        "        "        Henry Kirk White.....	459
"        "        "        George Crabbe .....	460
"        The Birch—its Scholastic and other uses.....	460
<b>XIV. ART—ITS IMPORTANCE AS A BRANCH OF EDUCATION.</b> By M. A. Dwight.....	467
<b>XV. VALENTIN HAUY—Founder of Institutions for the Blind.</b> By L. P. Brockett.....	477
Portrait .....	477
<b>XVI. SPECIAL TRAINING OF WOMEN FOR SOCIAL EMPLOYMENTS</b> .....	485
<b>XVII. PASTOR FLIEDNER'S INSTITUTION AT KAISERSWERTH, (Prussia.)</b> .....	487
Florence Nightingale in the Crimea .....	489
Coöperation of Women in Sanitary, and Educat'nal Movements. By Mrs. Jameson	493
<b>XVIII. PUBLIC INSTRUCTION IN SARDINIA.</b> By Prof. Vincenzo Botta.....	513
I. Primary Instruction .....	513
II. Secondary Instruction .....	518
<b>XIX. PUBLIC HIGH SCHOOL OF CHICAGO.</b> By W. H. Wells.....	531
<b>XX. THE GYROSCOPE.</b> By Major J. G. Barnard, U. S. Corps of Engineers.....	537
No. 9. [Vol. III, No. 2]—19.	

## SUPPLEMENT TO NUMBER IX.

	PAGE
<b>XXI. REFORMATORY EDUCATION.....</b>	<b>561</b>
<b>XXII. HISTORY OF PREVENTIVE AND REFORMATORY EDUCATION, INSTITUTIONS AND AGENCIES.....</b>	<b>501</b>
<b>XXIII. ITALY.</b>	
Reformatory Department of San Michele at Rome.....	581
Juvenile Asylum of Tata Giovanni at Rome.....	581
<b>XXIV. SWITZERLAND.</b>	
Labors of Pestalozzi, Fellenberg, Vehrli, and Zeller.....	591
Reformatory School at Bachtalen.....	591
Rural School for Orphans and Foundlings at Cara .....	591
<b>XXV. GERMANY.</b>	
The Rough House, ( <i>Rauhe Haus</i> ), at Horn, near Hamburg .....	601
<b>XXVI. HOLLAND.</b>	
Prison and Reform School for Juvenile Offenders at Rotterdam .....	611
<b>XXVII. BELGIUM.</b>	
Reform School for Boys at Ruysselede.....	621
Reform School for Girls at Beernen,.....	631
<b>XXVIII. FRANCE.</b>	
Patronage Societies—in aid of discharged Juvenile Offenders.....	651
Mettray: from Annual Reports of Directors from 1837—1856 .....	651
“      “      Reports of Visitors from abroad.....	701
Establishment of St. Nicholas at Paris .....	721
Central Prison and Reform School at Gaillon.....	731
Reform School at Petit-Bourg .....	731
Rural Asylum at Cernay.....	741
Reform School at Petit-Quevilly.....	741
<b>XXIX. GREAT BRITAIN.</b>	
Philanthropic Society from 1780—1849 .....	751
Red Hill Farm School .....	751
Parkhurst Prison for Juvenile Criminals.....	751
Conferences of Reformatory Education.....	761
Red Lodge Reformatory at Bristol .....	781
Hardwicke Reformatory .....	781
Reformatory Movement in Scotland.....	801
Reformatory Movement in Ireland .....	801
<b>XXX. UNITED STATES.</b>	
Proceedings of Convention of Managers and Superintendents of Reformatories held in New York, May, 1857.....	811
<b>XXXI. CATALOGUE OF BOOKS AND PAMPHLETS ON REFORMATORY EDUCATION AND SCHOOLS .....</b>	<b>841</b>
<b>XXXII. INDEX TO VOLUME III. OF AMERICAN JOURNAL OF EDUCATION.</b>	





## I. NICHOLAS BROWN.

BY PROFESSOR WILLIAM GAMMELL.

---

**IN the year 1636, a few months after the arrival of Roger Williams and his associates, there arrived in the plantations of Providence, Mr. Chad Brown, a native of England, and an emigrant from Massachusetts. He had been a companion and friend while in the neighboring colony, of many of the exiled band who had already found a home at the head waters of Narragansett Bay, and induced by sympathy with their principles, he now came to share their fortunes. He was possessed of a competent estate, but was especially distinguished for his benignity of character and his exemplary piety. He was afterwards ordained as a clergyman, and became one of the earliest ministers of the only church then planted in the infant settlement. Very few memorials of his life now remain; but his character, as it appeared to his contemporaries, is set forth in a single line, in a letter written by Roger Williams, after his death, in which he is named as "that holy man now with God."**

**In the third generation from Chad Brown we find his grandson, Rev. James Brown, a minister of the same church from 1726 to 1782; and in the third generation from him, this family of Brown is represented in Providence by four brothers who, in the middle and latter part of the last century, stood forth prominently among the citizens of the town, and have ever since been deservedly reckoned among the foremost promoters of her social advancement and her commercial prosperity. Their names were John, Joseph, Nicholas and Moses; and to each one of them may the city of Providence, as she now exists, point back as an efficient promoter of her most permanent interests, or a founder of her most useful institutions. They were all eminent merchants, according to the standard of their age; they were also active friends and promoters of the public good, quite above the standard of their age. John, the eldest of the brothers, was probably the most energetic and enterprising, and left his impress on the mercantile character, and on the entire condition of the community. He developed the industry and extended the trade of the town; he fostered the interests of the church in which his ancestors had been ministers; he contributed to the foundation of the college, laid the corner-**



stone of its original hall, and was the treasurer of its corporation for upwards of twenty years, from 1775 to 1797. Though a merchant, and having large interests at stake in the existing order of things, he was a patriotic leader in the cause of the American Revolution ; and at a later period, when his native state stood aloof from the Union, and refused to adopt the national constitution, he was distinguished as a champion of the constitutional party, and probably did more than any other man towards securing the final adoption of the constitution by the people of Rhode Island.

Of the "four brothers," as they are familiarly designated in Providence history, the younger three were intimately associated with the elder in his most liberal and useful undertakings. Joseph, the second, was a gentleman of superior intellectual culture and acquirements. He was one of the architects of the spacious and beautiful house of worship which was erected by the First Baptist society, in 1774, and within whose venerable walls its ministers for more than three quarters of a century have dispensed the doctrines of the Gospel. He was also for a time Professor of Natural Philosophy in the college, and was associated with Professor Benjamin West in making one of the few astronomical observations that were made on this continent of the transit of the planet Venus in 1769, in preparation for which he is recorded to have spent upwards of a hundred pounds sterling.

Nicholas and Moses, the third and the fourth of the brothers, were also distinguished in their time for their public spirit, their philanthropy and their piety. They were both successful in commerce, and both brought a portion of the fruits of their success, to consecrate them to the public good and the service of religion. They were united with their elder brother in founding the college and securing its establishment in Providence.\* The former was remarkable among his contemporaries for his high mercantile integrity, his domestic worth, and his religious principle. It was said of him by Rev. Dr. Stillman, of Boston, who preached at his funeral, that "he was from sentiment a lover of all mankind, especially of good men. He was not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ, nor of the poorest of his disciples. His manners were plain and sincere. He was a faithful friend and a good companion ; and, combining with his excellent social qualities a general knowledge of the world, of books and of men, his conversation was always pleasing and instructive."

The youngest of the brothers was the late venerable Moses Brown, who died in 1836, at the age of ninety-seven years. He early with-

\* It was first established at Warren.

drew from the mercantile house in which the capital and energy of his brothers were embarked, and, from the retirement of his quiet and beautiful estate in the environs of Providence, he long contributed his judicious counsels and his liberal pecuniary aid to the promotion of intelligence, piety and freedom among men. At the age of thirty-five he became a member of the Society of Friends, and, in the mild spirit and unostentatious manner characteristic of the Society, he took an active part in the diffusion of the principles of peace, the abolition of slavery, and the extension of education. He was also the founder and patron of the excellent institution known as the "Friends' Boarding School," in Providence, — a school which, under the auspices of the Yearly Meeting of the Society, has done much to diffuse the influences of intellectual culture among the members of that estimable Christian denomination.

From an ancestry thus distinguished for their Christian and social virtues, was descended the Hon. Nicholas Brown, the subject of the present sketch. He was the son of Nicholas Brown, the third of the honored brotherhood whose names we have given above, and was born in Providence, April 4th, 1769. In his early life he was trained amid the influences of a pious family circle, and enjoyed such intellectual advantages as were at that time within the reach of the affluent classes of the community. In September, 1782, he entered Rhode Island College, of whose establishment in Providence, as we have seen, his father and uncles had been the most active and zealous promoters, and which was then under the care of its first president, the Rev. Dr. James Manning. Mr. Brown passed with credit through the four years of his collegiate residence, and graduated in 1786, at the early age of eighteen years. His principal instructors were Dr. Manning, his uncle, Joseph Brown, at that time Professor of Natural Philosophy, and the Hon. Asher Robbins, who was then the tutor of languages in the college. For all these guides of his early studies he was accustomed through life to express a very high respect, especially for President Manning, whose character he always venerated, and whose memory he always delighted to honor.

In accordance with the habits and associations of his family, as well probably as with his own inclinations, Mr. Brown, on leaving college, immediately entered upon mercantile business, under the guidance of his father; and on his father's death, in 1791, he was left, at the age of twenty-two years, in possession of an ample patrimonial estate. It was at this period that he formed a partnership in business with Mr. Thomas P. Ives, a gentleman of eminent mercantile ability, and of the highest probity of character, who married his only

sister. Thus was established in Providence the well-known house of Brown and Ives, — one of the oldest and most respected of the mercantile houses now existing in New England, and which, through the changes of politics and the vicissitudes of commerce, for nearly seventy years has maintained a name unsullied by reproach, and a credit unshaken by suspicion. Of this house, Mr. Brown was the senior partner for a period of fifty years, — a period most eventful in our national history, in the course of which he was engaged in transactions embracing the productions of every climate, and extending to every part of the commercial world.

The house of which Mr. Brown was the senior partner commenced its career at an important juncture in the progress of American commerce. The independence of the country had lately been acknowledged, and its energies were rapidly developing under the auspices of freedom and of peace. The Union had been cemented, and the national character developed, by the recent adoption of the constitution, and the country was commencing the career of commercial success which it has ever since been pursuing. In these circumstances the house of Brown and Ives immediately embarked in those pioneer enterprises which first bore the flag of the infant republic to the remotest marts of the world, which prepared the way for the trade with China, and offered the markets of America for the production of India, the ancient home of British monopoly. These enterprises were eminently favorable to the development of the high-minded and aspiring merchant. They required a varied knowledge of the condition of distant countries, they led to the formation of independent judgments, and they of necessity inspired the mind with large and liberal views. They also led to a careful observation of the operation of the laws of trade, and created a confidence in their stability and uniformity, — a confidence which is always an essential element in the character of an accomplished merchant.

The period was also marked by great events in the political world. The French revolution was already involving the nations of Europe in war, and introducing important changes in the commercial policy of every part of the world. Entering upon his active career at a period of vicissitude and peril like this, when failure or success depended, to an unusual extent, on the nicest observations and the shrewdest calculations, the character of Mr. Brown was soon formed in accordance with large views and liberal principles. He early became accustomed to grand undertakings, and enlisted his fullest energies in their accomplishment. Associated with a partner of congenial spirit, whose plans and views as a merchant were formed after

the loftiest ideal, he soon had the gratification of seeing the mercantile house of which he was the founder, possessed of a credit, a character and a name, that commanded unlimited confidence and respect in every mart of commerce throughout the world. Guided by a principle of unswerving honor and integrity, he and his partner pursued their undeviating way alike through disasters and successes, and, in accordance with an unfailing law of human affairs, they reaped an ample harvest of mercantile wealth.

But it was not commerce alone that engaged his attention, and tasked the energies of his mind. He had large interests at stake in the country, and he could not be indifferent to its government or its political progress. He was an intelligent Christian gentleman, descended of an ancestry celebrated for their philanthropy and piety, and the sentiments of his nature, not less than the principles in which he had been trained, prompted him to efforts for the good of his fellow-men. As is always the case with minds of superior mould, he was something more than a mere votary of his calling. To achieve success as a merchant, and to amass wealth, was not with him the greatest result to be accomplished. From the outset of his career, he was accustomed to recognize other interests and other claims upon his attention than those of his profession alone, and he always cherished a comprehensive sympathy with the fortunes of his country and his race.

In politics, he early adopted the principles of the party that formed the Constitution of the United States; and, to the end of his life, was a constant and earnest advocate of the great guarantees of national security which that instrument contains. Prior to the dissolution of the old Federal party, he was often actively engaged in the political controversies of the day, but with no acrimony or personal malice, and as little of the partisan spirit as is perhaps compatible with an active participation in politics. From 1807 to 1821, he was, almost without interruption, a member of one or the other of the houses of the State Legislature; but, after the latter date, he declined any further election, and spent the remainder of his life in retirement from all political office, save that in 1840 he was chosen one of the Electors of president of the United States, when he gave his vote for President Harrison. His views of public affairs, as well as his character and policy as a merchant, all illustrate that largeness of mind which was frequently ascribed to him, as a leading intellectual characteristic. In his political career, he had no selfish ends to promote, no personal objects to attain; he was always guided by the principles which he deemed important to the public weal, and, alike amid the successes and the defeats of his party, he stood undisturbed in his

own integrity, and in calm reliance on the overruling Providence of God.

But it is not with the character and life of Mr. Brown, as a merchant, or as a public man, that we have most to do. However successful and however honorable he may appear in these spheres of life, it is as a benefactor of his fellow-men, and especially as a munificent patron of religion and learning, that he is best known, and that we desire to speak of him in the pages of this journal.

From an early period of life he appears to have been imbued with a deep sense of his religious obligation. And though, in consequence of certain peculiar views which lingered in his mind, he never connected himself with any church, he was yet a devout and daily reader of the Scriptures, and a most regular and reverent attendant on public worship. He was also, in common with his ancestors, strongly attached to the doctrines and practices of the Baptist denomination, and especially to the ancient church which his fathers had aided in planting, and of which two of his immediate ancestry had been ministers. Beneath the instructions of her ministry, and in connection with her services and worship, he had learned to cherish the spirit of a fervent and enlightened piety, which shone forth in his daily life, and shaped and prompted his plans of benevolence. To this church he made many valuable donations, among which was a large and costly organ, and in his last will and testament he bequeathed to it the sum of three thousand dollars. But his interest in the promotion of religion was far enough from being limited to his own particular church, or to the Christian denomination to which it belonged. From other churches in Providence and throughout the state, and from those in distant states, he frequently received applications for aid, and these applications were seldom made in vain. No record of such donations appears to have been kept, but, could the history of this branch of his benevolence be fully written, it would carry us away to many a distant spot in which the institutions of religion were permanently planted by his liberal aid, and point us to many a chapel and church which his contributions helped to build, in regions which he himself had never visited.

Before the organization of the American Tract Society, he had engaged in some degree in promoting the objects for which that and similar societies now exist. He caused editions of several of President Edwards' sermons and other evangelical works to be printed as tracts and books, for gratuitous distribution; and from the formation of the Tract Society to the end of his life he was one of its constant supporters and friends. He united with a few other benevolent

gentlemen in presenting to it the stereotype plates of Doddridge's celebrated work, the *Rise and Progress of Religion in the Soul*, and of that not less venerated book of Christian devotion, Baxter's *Saints' Everlasting Rest*. His philanthropy, in whatever form it was manifested, was a truly Christian philanthropy. It sprang from Christian sentiments, and was hallowed by Christian aims. His desire was to use the wealth with which God had entrusted him, for the permanent good of his fellow-men; and, in accordance with this sentiment, he bestowed his benefactions alike upon public institutions and upon private individuals. Many a young merchant was enabled to establish himself in his chosen calling, and many a needy scholar was enabled to prosecute his studies, through the aid they thus received from a hand that was always open.\*

It is, however, as a promoter of education, and especially as a patron of the University which bears his name, that he stands forth still more conspicuously among the benefactors of his fellow-men. In 1791, on the death of his father, he was elected a member of the corporation of Rhode Island College, and from that period, during the remainder of his life, he continued, either in its board of Trustees or of Fellows, to be intimately associated with its government and its progress. In 1796, he was chosen treasurer on the resignation of his uncle, John Brown, Esq., and in this office he devoted his earnest attention to supplying the wants of the institution. The only college buildings were University Hall, which had survived the occupancy of the American and French soldiers during the war of the Revolution, and a mansion for the president. Its library was small, and its means of instruction, as was commonly the case in American colleges at that day, were exceedingly limited. Mr. Brown's first donation to the college was a law library of considerable extent and value, and a number of works of English literature, which were imported at his own expense. In 1804, he presented to the corporation the sum of five thousand dollars, as a foundation for a professorship of Rhetoric and Oratory; and, in a letter to the corporation accompanying the donation, he expressed the warm interest he felt in the college as a place of education. It was on this occasion, in consideration of this donation and of the others which had been received from him and his kindred, and it may be, of prospective advantages which were anticipated from the act, that the name of the institution was changed, in

\* Of the extent of these benefactions, it is of course impossible to be accurately informed. But the number of young men, whom he aided in paying the expenses of their education, is known to have been large. Most of them were probably unknown to him, and the aid they received was in some cases a gift, and in others a loan without guarantee.

accordance with a provision in its charter, from Rhode Island to Brown University.

From this period, Mr. Brown, in the office of treasurer, and acknowledged patron of the college, exercised a constant care of pecuniary concerns. Its financial credit he sustained, and supply of its wants, as a seat of learning, he made frequent contributions. In 1822, for the more ample accommodation of students he erected, at his own expense, "Hope College," the second public halls; and, on its completion, he presented it to the corporation in the following letter, bearing date Jan. 13, 1823:

**"TO THE CORPORATION OF BROWN UNIVERSITY.**

"It affords me great pleasure, at this adjourned meeting of the corporation, to state that the college edifice erected last season, located on the land purchased by the corporation of Mr. N. Waterman, is completed.

"Being warmly attached to the institution where I received education, among whose founders and benefactors was my father, deceased, and believing that the dissemination of letters and knowledge is the great means of social happiness, I have caused this edifice to be erected wholly at my expense, and now present it to the corporation of Brown University, to be held with the other college property, according to their charter.

"As it is proper to give a name to this new edifice, I take leave to suggest to the corporation that of 'Hope College.'

"I avail myself of this occasion to express a hope that Heaven will bless and make it useful in the promotion of virtue, science and literature, to those of the present and of future generations who resort to this university for education. With respectful and affectionate regards to the individual members of the corporation,

"I am their friend,

"NICHOLAS BROWN

Though no sum is named in the foregoing letter as the cost of the new college edifice, the bills for its erection are ascertained from various sources to have amounted to about twenty thousand dollars. The building was accepted by the corporation with appropriate expressions of gratitude, and, by a special vote, it received the name assigned by the donor, and which had been by him suggested in honor of his only sister, Mrs. Hope Ives.

In 1825, he resigned the office of treasurer; but he did not



degree abate the interest he had so long taken in the prosperity of the University, or the active zeal which had animated him in its behalf. In May, 1826, he conveyed to the corporation a lot of land, situated on George-street and adjoining the college enclosure, to which in the following year he added the next adjacent lot of equal dimensions, which, together with a third, though not contiguous lot, afterwards conveyed to the corporation, were estimated at twenty-five thousand five hundred dollars. In the spring of 1827, President Wayland became the head of the University, having been elected to the office in the preceding autumn; and like his predecessor, President Messer, he found in Mr. Brown a friend of the institution, who was at all times ready to coöperate with him in every plan for the enlargement of its resources and the improvement of its education. In 1829, he united with his brother-in-law and partner, Thomas P. Ives, Esquire, who was also in various ways a liberal benefactor of the University, in presenting to it an ample philosophical apparatus; and, in 1832, when it was decided by the corporation to raise by subscription the sum of twenty-five thousand dollars as a permanent fund for the increase of the library, he placed himself at the head of the enterprise, by subscribing ten thousand dollars for this most important interest of a seat of learning. The fund was at length raised to the amount proposed, and the revenues derived from it have for many years been appropriated to the purchase of books, and have been the means of accumulating a library of great value and interest, and also of securing for it a perpetual growth through future generations. This benefaction, thus commenced by Mr. Brown, and completed by the alumni and friends of the University, undoubtedly deserves to be ranked among the most useful and important which the institution has ever received.

But the library, though its essential and most immediate wants were thus provided for, was still without a separate building for its accommodation, and the books which it contained were crowded into an inconvenient room, and exposed to all the casualties incident to an ordinary college hall. In 1834, in order to supply this obvious want of the University, now beginning to be experienced more than ever before, he erected a third hall, solely at his own expense, and presented it to the corporation, with a request that it might bear the name of Manning Hall. This name was given to it in honor of the memory of his own distinguished instructor and revered friend, President Manning, — the first president, and one of the founders of the University. This building is composed of two spacious apartments, of which one was designed for the library, and the other for

the purposes of a college chapel. To these uses it was dedicated by appropriate literary and religious exercises, on the 4th of February, 1835, at which time a discourse was delivered by President Wayland, on the "Dependence of Science upon Revealed Religion." The cost of Manning Hall is understood to have been eighteen thousand five hundred dollars.

But the wants of an institution of higher learning can never be fully supplied. Its sphere of operation and influence is constantly enlarging, and the work in which it is engaged constantly demands new appliances and aids. Learning is in its very nature progressive, and the modes of acquiring and disseminating it are subjects of ceaseless improvement. It was thus that the furnishing of one or two departments of the University revealed only the more conspicuously the deficiencies which existed in the others; and it soon became necessary, in the absence of permanent endowments, again to appeal to its graduates and friends for the further enlargement of its means of education and of benefit to the public. At the annual meeting of the corporation in September, 1838, it was decided to erect another college hall for the use of the departments of Natural Philosophy and Physical Science, and also a new mansion for the residence of the president of the University. A committee was appointed to devise the means by which this important object should be accomplished; and, in accordance with their recommendation, a subscription was commenced for the purpose of obtaining the sum of twenty thousand dollars. On this occasion Mr. Brown again came forward with his accustomed liberality, and addressed a letter to the treasurer, Moses B. Ives, Esquire, bearing date March 18th, 1839. In this letter he tendered to the corporation, for the purpose of erecting a mansion for the president, and another college edifice for the accommodation of the departments of Natural Philosophy, Chemistry, Mineralogy and Natural History, three valuable lots of land as sites for these buildings, and a subscription of ten thousand dollars,—namely, seven thousand dollars for the president's house, and three thousand towards the erection of the college edifice and the improvement of the adjacent grounds, provided an equal amount should be subscribed by the friends of the institution before the first day of the following May.

The subscription, thus nobly commenced, was promptly completed; and, with the exception of about six hundred dollars, it was raised to an amount somewhat above that originally proposed, by pledges received from citizens of Rhode Island alone. The proceeds of this subscription were appropriated to the objects for which it was raised. A new mansion was immediately built for the president, on one of the

lots which had been given by Mr. Brown, and on the remaining two the new college edifice was erected, which, in recognition of the liberality of the citizens of the state, received the name of Rhode Island Hall. It was opened for public inspection on Commencement day, September 3, 1840; and, on the day following, it was dedicated to the uses for which it was built, by an appropriate address from the late Professor William G. Goddard.\* The first floor is divided into two lecture-rooms, one for the professor of chemistry, the other for the professor of natural philosophy. The second story is thrown into an ample and beautiful hall for the cabinet of mineralogy and geology, and other similar collections of the University. It also has a basement containing a chemical laboratory, and other apartments suitable for conducting chemical analysis, and the various processes of chemistry applied to the arts. From the proceeds of the same subscription also, the grounds within the University enclosure were very greatly improved and adorned with trees, so that their entire aspect was changed to those who had been accustomed to them in their earlier condition.

This act of munificence, in behalf of the seat of learning with which his name is identified, is the latest recorded in the life of Mr. Brown. He had hitherto been distinguished above most men of his years, for the uninterrupted health with which he had been blessed. A life of constant activity, of uniform temperance and simplicity, had been crowned with its usual result—a constitution of singular vigor, and a character of great equanimity and serenity. He had long moved among his contemporaries and juniors, his fellow-citizens in the community, an object of universal respect,—not unmarked, indeed, by peculiarities of manner and of character, but especially distinguished for his kindness and his liberality. In the winter of 1840, his health began to fail, and, after a lingering illness of many months, he died on the 27th of September, 1841, in the seventy-third year of his age.

The death of a citizen so distinguished as a friend of the poor and a munificent benefactor of the community in which he had always lived, and who, during his long and busy life, had established for himself so many titles to the respect and gratitude of his fellow-men, awakened a universal feeling of sorrow, which expressed itself in the public proceedings of numerous societies and institutions of philanthropy with which he had been associated. His deeds of beneficence had far surpassed those recorded of any other citizen of Providence,

\* This address, as has often been regretted, was never published. Could the manuscript memorials and the scattered publications of this amiable and accomplished professor be collected, they would make a volume of great beauty and interest, which would be eagerly welcomed by his numerous friends and pupils.

and his services to the cause of education and religion now became a subject of universal eulogium. At the University, they were publicly commemorated in a discourse delivered by President Wayland, which eloquently sets forth his life and character, and forms an appropriate and enduring tribute to his memory, as a benefactor of learning, and a munificent friend and patron of the college. In addition to the benefactions which he had bestowed, during his life, upon this favorite object of his affection and care, his last will and testament was found to contain provisions for several others, which were to be realized at different periods after his death. He bequeathed the sum of ten thousand dollars, and a number of valuable lots of land lying eastward of the college enclosure, to be conveyed in fee simple to the corporation at the end of ten years from the date of his decease; and, also, the proceeds of certain rented estates in the city of Providence, to be appropriated for the term of ten years to the aid of indigent students in the University. The lots which were thus bequeathed, were estimated, at the period of their becoming the property of the corporation, at forty-two thousand five hundred dollars, which, when added to his previous donations and his other bequests, would make the entire sum of his recorded benefactions to the University amount to nearly one hundred and sixty thousand dollars. The several items making up this large sum were scattered over a period of nearly forty years, during which he had the gratification of seeing the college which bore his name constantly prospering beneath his fostering care, and realizing the hopes he had always cherished for it, in the blessings which it was conferring upon his native state, upon the country, and upon the church of Christ. We here subjoin a list of these separate donations, assigning to the donations of land the valuation which was placed upon them when they became the property of the University, or were appropriated to the specific uses for which they were designed :

Donation for a Professorship, in 1804, . . . . .	\$5.000
Cost of Hope College, in 1828, . . . . .	\$20.000
Three lots of land on George-street, between 1826 and 1839, . . . .	\$25.500
Subscription to Library Fund, in 1832, . . . . .	\$10.000
Cost of Manning Hall, in 1835, . . . . .	\$18.500
Subscription to Rhode Island Hall, in 1839, . . . . .	\$10.000
Lots on Waterman-street, in 1840, . . . . .	\$7.000
* Income of certain estates for ten years, 1841—1851, . . . . .	\$10.848
Bequest payable ten years from decease, 1851, . . . . .	\$10.000
Lots east of college enclosure, to be conveyed in ten years from decease,	\$42.500
	<u>\$158.848</u>

\* These revenues were to be used by the corporation at their discretion, in aid of indigent students while pursuing their studies in the University. After deducting the payments which

This enumeration, however, does not include the cost of his earliest gift to the library, of a collection of valuable law books, or of any part of the philosophical apparatus, the joint gift of himself and his partner, Mr. Ives; or of some other benefactions of which he is known to have been the author, but of which no record appears to have been preserved.

A series of benefactions, so large in amount, bestowed on a single institution of learning, forms a brilliant example of private and unostentatious munificence, which at that time had seldom if ever been paralleled in the history of American colleges. His example shone almost alone in the generation to which he belonged. At a later period, in the altered circumstances of New England society, this sum has in several instances been surpassed in the magnificent foundations which bear the honored names of other benefactors of humanity. But at the time of Mr. Brown's decease, a sum so large had seldom if ever been before contributed in New England, by a single individual, for the endowment of an institution of learning. He therefore deserves a most honorable and conspicuous place among those who have stood forth as leaders and pioneers of their age, in the true appreciation of seminaries of learning, and in liberal benefactions for their foundation and support. These benefactions, like the others which proceeded from his hand, were bestowed by him with singular judgment and care, and their fruits will remain to the end of time, for the culture of the human mind, for the elevation of character, and the improvement and adornment of society.

We have thus narrated the successive benefactions of Mr. Brown to the University at Providence. But, as we have already intimated, it was not this institution alone that awakened his interest and experienced his bounty. To other colleges, in different parts of the country, he extended liberal aid, either at their original founding, or in their times of subsequent need. The Columbian College, in the District of Columbia; the Theological Institution at Newton, Mass., and the College at Waterville, Me., and, it is believed, some others in more distant states, all were recipients of his well-known munificence. One of these, the Theological Institution at Newton, was also named in his will, together with the Northern Baptist Education Society, the American Tract Society, the American and Foreign Bible Society, and some other institutions of Christian philanthropy, to which he had been accustomed to make annual contributions during his life.

vere made for this purpose from year to year, the receipts from this source were placed in permanent investment, and the sum of principal and interest now constitutes, as we understand, a fund of about twelve thousand dollars.

It will be observed, from the preceding sketch, that it was a characteristic of Mr. Brown, that he selected for his amplest benefactions those institutions which were designed to promote the highest and most permanent interests of society. He delighted most especially in the promotion of agencies of perennial good, in opening fountains of beneficence, whose streams should flow through successive generations. Hence it was, that whatever aided in the diffusion of useful knowledge, or in elevating the intellectual and moral standard of the community; whatever alleviated human suffering, or secured the religious improvement of his fellow-men, was sure to awaken his profoundest interest, and enlist his most liberal coöperation. A striking illustration of the estimate which he placed upon institutions and agencies of this description is presented in his contributions for the founding of the Providence Athenæum, and of the Butler Hospital for the Insane.

Early in the year 1836, the association known in Providence as the "Athenæum," received its charter of incorporation. Its design was to establish in that city a Proprietors' Library, that should be suited to the wants of a large and increasing community, and become a means of education to all its people. It was formed by uniting in one, two minor associations, already existing for a similar purpose. A few weeks after its charter had been obtained, its directors received a joint letter from Mr. Brown, and Messrs. M. B. Ives and R. H. Ives, representatives of the estate of their father, Thomas P. Ives, deceased, offering a very eligible lot of land, in a central part of the city, as a site for the library building of the new institution, together with the sums of six thousand dollars towards the erection of the building, and four thousand dollars for the purchase of books. The condition affixed to the proposal was, that the additional sums of ten thousand dollars for the completion of the building, and four thousand dollars for the purchase of books, should be raised by a general subscription. The condition, we need not say, was readily fulfilled, and a commodious and beautiful building was immediately erected on perhaps the most advantageous site that could have been selected for the purpose within the limits of the city. By this act of liberal and well-directed munificence were laid the foundations of an institution whose elevating and ennobling influences, it may be hoped, will be forever felt in the community for whose culture and improvement it was originally designed.

In the founding of the excellent institution now known as the "Butler Hospital for the Insane," the agency of Mr. Brown is best illus-

trated in the following provision contained in a codicil to his will, bearing date March 3d, 1841 :

“ And whereas it has long been deeply impressed on my mind, that an insane or lunatic hospital, or retreat for the insane, should be established upon a firm and permanent basis, under an act of the Legislature, where that unhappy portion of our fellow-citizens who are, by the visitation of Providence, deprived of their reason, may find a safe retreat, and be provided with whatever may be most conducive to their comfort and to their restoration to a sound state of mind ; — therefore, for the purpose of aiding an object so desirable, and in the hope that such an establishment may soon be commenced, I do hereby set apart, and give and bequeathe the sum of thirty thousand dollars, toward the erection or endowment of an Insane or Lunatic Hospital, or Retreat for the Insane, or by whatever other name it may be called, to be located in Providence, or its vicinity. And I do hereby order and direct my said executors to pay the said sum of thirty thousand dollars in the promotion and advancement of an institution for that object, trusting and fully confiding in my executors, that they will carefully examine and be satisfied that the establishment is placed on a firm and legal basis, and that the payment of the above amount will be made at such times, and in such sums, as will best promote the desired object, and be least prejudicial to the settlement of my own estate ; hoping that my sons and other friends will coöperate in the humane and benevolent design that the benefits of the institution may soon be realized.”

This noble bequest of Mr. Brown was in reality the first step ever taken in Rhode Island towards the establishment of a hospital for the insane ; and the language in which the bequest is conveyed indicates the careful reflection which he had bestowed on the nature and offices of such an institution. It obviously contemplated the subsequent donation of additional funds, either by the Legislature or by benevolent individuals, in order to give effect to the philanthropic intentions which it expresses. For the purpose of more speedily securing this end, a corporation was chartered in January, 1844, bearing the name of “The Rhode Island Asylum for the Insane.” In the following March a letter was received, by this corporation, from Cyrus Butler, Esquire, a wealthy citizen of Providence, who had long been impressed with the want of such an institution, offering the sum of forty thousand dollars, to be united with the amount of Mr. Brown’s bequest, in carrying into successful operation the design of the corporation, provided that an equal sum of forty thousand dollars should be obtained from other sources, or pledged by responsible subscriptions, within the space of six months next ensuing. The



required sum was obtained within the specified time, and the as thus established on a permanent basis, received, by special vote corporation, the name of the "Butler Hospital for the Insane" in honor of its most munificent benefactor, who lived to witness several years the beneficent fruits of his noble munificence should not, however, be forgotten that this institution, so fraught with the selectest influences of a humane and comprehensive charity, owes its origin to the benevolent design expressed in the last will and testament of Mr. Brown, and that its foundations are laid in his liberal and well-guarded bequest.

We have already intimated that a considerable portion of Mr. Brown's pecuniary contributions for promoting the interests of his fellow-men were never recorded in any memorandum that can be found; and, from the manner in which they were distributed, it is scarcely possible to trace them to the widely-scattered objects to which they were bestowed. In attempting, therefore, to estimate the full amount of his rare beneficence, we are obliged to omit, not only his private charities, which were always very large, but also his numerous donations to public institutions of which no record has been preserved, and to include only those recorded in the history of the University and the Athenæum, and the several bequests contained in his last will and testament. In addition to the bequests already named as having been made in behalf of the University, and for the founding of a hospital or retreat for the insane, the instrument and its codicils also contained other provisions for various public institutions of philanthropy and religion, to the amount of fifteen thousand and seven hundred dollars. They were distributed as follows among the several agencies of benevolence and piety to which they were bestowed, viz.: The Baptist Board of Missions, five thousand dollars; The American and Foreign Bible Society, five thousand dollars; The Tract Society, two thousand dollars; The Newton Education Society, twenty-five hundred dollars; The Newton Theological Institution, fifteen hundred dollars; The Rhode Island School Union, six hundred dollars; and The First Baptist Church and other churches in Providence several sums, amounting to four thousand and one hundred dollars.

These several bequests added to the other bequests, and the donations which we have already described, make the entire sum of pecuniary benefactions to public institutions and objects, of which any record has been preserved, amount to not less than two hundred and eleven thousand five hundred dollars. The noble purpose for the promotion of which he chose to appropriate this large sum,

trate his character and exemplify the nature of his philanthropy, not less signally than the amount of his benefactions. He distributed it, as we have already seen, with a wise and discriminating charity, among those institutions and agencies that are most intimately connected alike with individual happiness and with the elevation and improvement of society; — for the endowment of a school of liberal learning, for the maintenance of a public library in his native city, for the founding of a hospital for the alleviation of the direst form of human suffering, for the training and support of the Christian ministry, and for the diffusion of the gospel of Christ among the nations of the world, — the worthiest and purest objects which human life can present to awaken the aspirations and enlist the exertions of a human being.

The life of the honored citizen, whose career we have briefly traced in the preceding pages, is one over which the friend of humanity will always delight to linger. It presents an example of rare and distinguished munificence, — not indeed that munificence which bestows in a single princely gift the hoarded wealth which a lifetime had been employed in accumulating, nor that which has sometimes lavished its splendid bounty on some favorite object of public interest, amid the stimulus of competition or the allurements of fame. His was rather a life-long and habitual munificence, beginning with his early manhood and closing only with the end of his earthly career, — repeated again and again in a series of unostentatious and often unrecorded benefactions, and bestowed not alone on the institution of learning which bears his name, but extending in numerous instances to other places of education and to other great interests of humanity. It was stimulated by no pressure of outward circumstances, and suggested by no conspicuous models in the community in which he lived, but it sprang from his own love of doing good to his fellow-men, and from his high sense of accountability for the manner in which he employed the gifts which Heaven had bestowed upon him.

Many years have now elapsed since he descended to the tomb, but the monuments of his wise and pious benefactions are all around us; in the University with which his name is associated; in the Butler Hospital for the Insane, and the Providence Athenæum, to whose founding he so largely contributed, and in the churches and colleges and institutions of philanthropy over the whole land, to which he so often lent his liberal and most timely aid. So long as learning and religion shall have a place in the affections of men, these enduring memorials will proclaim his character, and speak his eulogy. **HI SANCTISSIMI TESTES, HI MAXIMI LAUDATORES.**

## NOTE.

This is deemed a fitting place in which to introduce some notice of the institutions in Providence, which have been most largely indebted to the presence of Mr. Brown, and which now contribute so much to the honor of intelligent and enterprising community in which they are planted. A sketch of the University must be reserved for ampler space in a future number of this volume; a brief outline of the Athenæum and of the Butler Hospital for the Insane will all that can be comprised in the following note.

## PROVIDENCE ATHENÆUM.

Prior to the year 1836, there were in Providence two Proprietors' Libraries belonging to the "Providence Library Company," which was founded in 1753, the other belonging to a company styled the "Providence Athenæum," which was incorporated in 1831, went into operation on the eighteenth of January in that year. It had already been found, however, that neither of these institutions was possessed of resources adequate to the liberal purpose for which they had been established, and the proprietors of each evinced a readiness to unite with other gentlemen in order to found a library on a more enlarged basis, that should be better suited to the wants of a large and growing community. In these circumstances the present Athenæum received its charter of incorporation in January 1836. The first act of the new corporation was to purchase of each of the existing companies their respective collections of books, which together numbered about 4080 volumes exclusive of pamphlets and sets which had been broken up and injured. These volumes were well selected, and comprising as they did a large number of the most reputable works of English and American literature, were well suited to become the basis of the new library.

Soon after the organization of the new corporation the Directors received the following letter to which reference has already been made in the foregoing pages. It bears the date of March 9, 1836.

Gentlemen: We will engage to furnish a lot of land opposite the town hall at the junction of Benefit and College streets, for the site of an edifice to be built of stone or brick for the suitable accommodation of the Athenæum and the Historical and Franklin Societies—the lot and building to be owned by the Athenæum and the other societies to be accommodated therein upon terms agreed on.

Towards the erection of such a building we will pay six thousand dollars; towards the purchase of books for the Athenæum, we will pay four thousand dollars, upon condition that the sum of ten thousand dollars more be made up and applied to the same building, and four thousand dollars more towards the purchase of books, by the subscriptions of responsible persons and exclusive of money received for shares to be sold in the Athenæum, prior to the first day of June.

We are, respectfully your obdt. servants,

NICHOLAS BROWN,

MOSES B. IVES,

ROBERT H. IVES, } for the estate of

THOMAS P. IVES, deceased

The proposed munificent donation was gratefully accepted by the Board of Directors, and the subscription which was immediately commenced under the auspices of Mr. Brown, was speedily made up to the sum of \$15,604.50. Thus in the total munificence of Mr. Brown united with that of the heirs of his late partner and friend were laid the foundations of the Athenæum in Providence. The example called forth a liberal response from all classes of citizens, and in the year 1838, a beautiful granite edifice of Grecian style of architecture had been erected on an eligible site in the vicinity of the University, and was ready for the reception of the library. In order however, to insure its dryness and the convenience of its arrangements, it was not publicly opened till the eleventh of July of that year, on which day it was dedicated to the purposes for which it had been erected, and a discourse in commemoration of the occasion was delivered by Prof. Wayland of Brown University. The building is forty-eight feet in width

seventy-eight in depth; it contains one principal story for the accommodation of the books, engravings, and works of art composing the library, and a lower or basement story which was originally designed to furnish rooms for the Historical and Franklin Societies; it was occupied for a time by the latter of these societies, but for several years past, the entire building, alike in its principal and its secondary apartments, has been appropriated exclusively to the uses of the Athenæum, and its several rooms are arranged in alcoves to contain its treasures of permanent learning, and are furnished with tables to facilitate the reading and consulting of books and for receiving the publications of periodical literature.

The Athenæum has at different periods received several valuable donations of books and works of art which now enrich and adorn its library; and in November 1849, it received from Alexander Duncan, Esq., the munificent gift of ten thousand dollars which was presented in the name of the late Cyrus Butler Esq., then lately deceased, with the request that six thousand should be added to the permanent fund, and be styled the "Butler Donation Fund," and that the remaining four thousand should be applied to the liquidation of a debt which had been incurred, and to carrying forward certain much needed alterations and repairs which were then in progress. This noble act of munificence on the part of a gentleman who in many different ways has evinced the most liberal interest in the public institutions of Providence, gave a new impulse to the progress of the institution and enabled it immediately to multiply the intellectual and social benefits it was already conferring on the community.

At the first annual meeting of the Athenæum held in 1837, the number of shareholders was 293, and the number of volumes in its library 4162. At the present time its shareholders are 572, and its library contains about 21,000 volumes; the greater part of them, works of permanent value fitted for the instruction and entertainment of the successive generations of those who may resort to it. In 1853 an excellent catalogue of the library was published which has largely contributed towards making known the treasures it contains, and rendering them accessible to the public.

In addition to the liberal benefactions to which the Athenæum owes its origin and its endowments, it is also largely indebted for its present character and usefulness to the honorable labors of a small company of liberal minded gentlemen who composed its early Board of Directors. Among these, no name is worthy to be mentioned with higher gratitude and respect than that of the late Professor William G. Goddard. He was its earliest vice-president and carried into its councils a just and liberal conception of what such an institution ought to be. He gave to its service the benefits of his discriminating taste, his varied acquirements and accomplishments as a scholar, and what perhaps is more than all, his noble zeal for the intellectual and social elevation of the community. In its committee for the selection and purchase of books, he shaped the early character of its library, and in several of its Annual Reports, as well as in other less formal modes, he eloquently addressed to his fellow citizens, its claim upon their high appreciation and their liberal coöperation. The spirit which was thus breathed into its early councils has always animated its Directors; and now at the end of twenty years since its foundation, it is unquestionably realizing the fondest hopes of the philanthropic men by whom it was established.

#### BUTLER HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE.

In the foregoing sketch of the munificence of Mr. Brown we have recorded the bequest of thirty thousand dollars which he made in a codicil to his will "towards the endowment of an Insane or Lunatic Hospital, or Retreat for the Insane." A conviction of the want of such an institution in his native state, had long dwelt in his mind, and been with him a subject of frequent remark, but he had been accustomed to speak of it as a work in which he hoped others would take the lead. As he however thought of it the longer, a deeper impression of its importance appears to have been made upon his mind, and within a few months of his death he wrote the codicil which contained the earliest provision for its establishment. The provision itself contemplated the formation of such an institution by those who should survive him, and authorized the payment of thirty thousand dollars only when it should be established on a liberal and permanent basis.

In order to promote the accomplishment of this benevolent design, a corporation was formed, which received its charter in January 1844, with the style of the "Rhode Island Asylum for the Insane." At its first meeting under the charter, a committee was appointed to set forth the design of the corporation, and to address a suitable appeal to the liberality of the public for the pecuniary means by which to establish the proposed institution.\* This committee immediately addressed a communication to Cyrus Butler Esq., a venerable citizen of Providence possessed of large wealth, who was known to entertain a strong interest in the philanthropic object of the corporation. On the 27th of March 1844, Mr. Butler in a very full and judicious reply to the communication, made known to the committee his readiness to give the sum of forty thousand dollars, to be added to the bequest of Mr. Brown, on the conditions, that an additional sum of forty thousand dollars should be secured by the subscriptions of responsible persons within six months, and that over and above all the expenditures for land and for building, a sum of not less than fifty thousand dollars of the aggregate amount should be kept as a reserved fund, the interest of which alone should be used in defraying the expenses of the institution.

A donation thus munificent imparted a grandeur to the enterprise, and the appeal which was now addressed to the public received a ready and liberal response, and within the period named by Mr. Butler the subscriptions which were obtained exceeded the sum of fifty-seven thousand dollars. The conditions of the donation were now fulfilled in a manner most creditable to the citizens of the State, and to those residents in other States by whom they were aided; and at a meeting of the corporation held in November 1844 it was decided by a unanimous vote, that the institution should be hereafter known and styled as the "Butler Hospital for the Insane" in commemoration of the munificence of its greatest benefactor, and in order to transmit to distant generations the example of his noble benefaction.

As a site for the Hospital buildings, the Trustees acting under the authority of the corporation, had already purchased an estate known as the "Grotto Farm" situated in the environs of Providence, on the right bank of the Seekonk river, about two miles from the central part of the city. They now immediately began to make preparations for completing the philanthropic enterprise whose commencement had been thus auspicious, and actuated by the desire which had been so distinctly expressed alike by Mr. Brown and Mr. Butler, of founding the institution on a firm and liberal basis, and of making it equal to the best in the country, they entered into consultation with Dr. Luther V. Bell, at that time the accomplished and experienced head of the McLean Hospital at Somerville, Massachusetts. In order to obtain the most eligible plans of building from which to make their selection and also to secure the wisest suggestions for the organization and management of the institution, they requested him to visit the leading hospitals of Great Britain and the continent of Europe, and report to them the result of his observations. At nearly the same time they also appointed to the post of Superintendent of the Hospital Dr. Isaac Ray then at the head of the State Lunatic Asylum at Augusta, Maine. Dr. Ray entered upon the duties of his office in May, 1846, and the well known efficiency and eminent success with which to the present time, he has continued to administer its affairs afford the most gratifying evidence of the wisdom with which the selection was made.

On the return of Dr. Bell from Europe,† a plan for the building which was recommended by him, was speedily fixed upon, and an edifice which experience has proved to be admirably adapted to the purposes of the institution, was erected on a retired and beautiful spot of the Grotto farm, surrounded with trees and in sight of the pleasant waters of the adjacent river. The following are the several items of its cost as presented in the Treasurer's report, January 24, 1849.

---

\* Mr. Butler was born in Providence, in 1767. He died August 22d, 1849, in the eighty-third year of his age. He was distinguished through life for his firmness of purpose, his sagacity, and his great success in business; and at the time of his death, he was one of the wealthiest men in New England. He was never married, and with him the male line of his family became extinct.

† The Report made by Dr. Bell to the Trustees, was published in the "Journal of Insanity" for July, 1845.

Cost of Grotto farm and improvements, .....	\$10,648.37
Cost of Hospital and improvements, .....	81,300.00
Cost of Furniture, .....	6,800.00
Incidental expenses previous to opening the Hospital, .....	8,354.82

Total outlay, .....\$107,103.19

It was opened for the reception of patients on the first day of December, 1847, and at the annual meeting of the corporation held on the 26th of the following month, the number of patients registered in its books was sixty-one. Thus was completed this new monument to one of the noblest of the charities which adorn our civilization. It was founded and built up in its complete proportions, not by legislative enactment or by public bounty, but by private munificence alone, and though situated in one of the smallest of the States, it was the offspring of a liberality that would do credit to the largest. Of the progress of the institution and the extent to which its beneficent influence has been felt, the best illustration that can be given, is found in the following table, taken from the Annual Report made by its Superintendent, at the late annual meeting in February, 1857. It embraces the statistics of every year since the opening of the Hospital.

Year.	Admitted.	Dis- charged.	Whole No. under care.	Re- covered.	Im- proved.	Unim- proved.	Died.	At the end of the Year.
1848	156	56	156	17	26		13	100
1849	93	86	193	35	24	7	20	107
1850	73	67	180	19	27	5	16	113
1851	68	54	181	26	8	4	16	127
1852	101	86	228	30	36	5	15	142
1853	92	98	235	44	27	5	22	136
1854	80	85	216	40	20	6	19	131
1855	56	50	187	20	15	4	11	137
1856	59	53	196	14	18	5	16	143
	778	635		245	201	41	148	

The noiseless progress of a charity like this, presents but few occurrences that admit of public record. Its annals are made up of little more than the daily agency of care and patience and skill on the part of its conductors, and of constant devotion to its interests and watchfulness of its condition on the part of its Trustees. In all these respects, it has been administered from the beginning in accordance with the highest principles and the most philanthropic spirit, and the institution now maintains, as was the intention of its founders, a position second to that of no other in the country. Its first president was Cyrus Butler, its most munificent benefactor, who held the office till his death in 1849; its second was the late Benjamin Aborn, who died in 1851, at the age of eighty-four years. The office since that date has been most worthily filled by Mr. Alexander Duncan, a gentleman whose pecuniary benefactions and personal services to the Hospital, already entitle him to be forever associated with its most munificent founders.

Since the Butler Hospital has been in operation, its successive annual reports have made frequent mention of donations from its friends, of books, of works of art, and of various means of amusement so essential in an establishment for the healing of mental disease. They also record two or three minor pecuniary gifts and bequests, which have testified the good will of their authors. But the only considerable benefactions which it has received, have been bestowed by several of the philanthropic gentlemen who presided over its early foundation, and in its Board of Trustees, have impressed their wisdom and public spirit upon its entire character and administration. On the completion of the buildings and the grounds adjacent, it was found that their cost with their various improvements and equipments, had considerably exceeded the original estimate, and the Hospital irrespective of its permanent fund, was burdened with a debt of upward of \$17,000, for the liquidation of which it must depend on the liberality of its friends. At the close of the year 1849, the Treasurer received from Mr. Alexander Duncan, then one of its Trustees, the generous donation of



\$20,000, to be applied to the removal of the debt. In the spring of 1852, the same liberal friend of the institution, who had then become its President, suggested to his associates the advantages of a new and more agreeable avenue leading from the road through the grounds to the main edifice, and at the same time, proposed to erect at his own expense, a suitable Lodge at the entrance. A sum was immediately subscribed by other members of the board, sufficient for the remaining expenses incident to the proposed change, and the work was speedily accomplished at a cost of \$3,051.57. Thus was effected an improvement which has added very largely to the attractiveness of the grounds to facilitate the approach to the Hospital buildings. Again in 1856, it was found necessary to replace the entire apparatus for warming and ventilating the building. The change was one which was deemed important to the comfort of the inmates and the completeness of the institution. The estimated expense was \$15,000, and the treasury contained no funds that could be appropriated to the purpose. But so soon as the plan was brought to the notice of the President and Trustees, and the desirableness of the change made manifest, these gentlemen, by an act of liberality, which, as has been well remarked, "has few parallels in the history of charitable institutions," immediately subscribed the sum named in the estimate and before the past winter had begun, the entire work was accomplished.

Such is a brief outline of the manner in which the Butler Hospital for the Insane was founded, and such is the spirit in which its affairs have been administered to the present time. It has dispensed its blessings to every part of the State and has extended its healing influences to many a mind diseased, from other States of the Union. Since its original endowment was completed, the benefactions it has received, have been bestowed with but slight exceptions, by those who have been more immediately connected in its management. With the stimulus, however, of so high and rare an example, the citizens of Rhode Island, we may well believe, will never fail to acknowledge any claim which may be made upon them in behalf of an institution that reflects such distinguished credit on the humanity and the public spirit of the State.



## II. LETTERS TO A YOUNG TEACHER.

BY GIDEON F. THAYER,

Late Principal of Chauncy-Hall School, Boston.

---

IN 1830, — the year of the inauguration of the American Institute of Instruction, — I delivered a lecture before that association, “on the spelling of words, and a rational method of teaching their meaning.” The mode therein recommended had then been in use in my own school for ten years or more, and, during my subsequent school labors as a teacher, I never had occasion to abandon it, but had the satisfaction to know that it was adopted with success in many schools, public and private, in various parts of our country. As the lecture in question is nearly out of print, and no copies of the volume containing it to be had, I shall not hesitate to repeat a portion of the ideas it contained on the teaching of spelling.

There are thousands of persons in society who have never occasion, during their lives, to apply their knowledge of Algebra, Geometry, Mensuration, Surveying, &c., to practical uses, although it may have been acquired at the cost of severe labor, of many a throbbing of the brain, and much intellectual despondency ; \* but not so with this matter of *spelling*. Whoever has learned to write, must inevitably sometimes express his thoughts through the agency of the pen ; must do it by language ; of course, must know how to spell. And whatever the degree of knowledge he thus unfolds, how finished and beautiful soever may be his penmanship, he abates something in his claim on our regard if he spells incorrectly. Bad spelling, especially of one’s native language, is *disreputable*. Every one is bound to spell with accuracy. But what is the true state of the case ? What proportion of those who have enjoyed the average means of education among us, do or can spell their vernacular tongue ? Take the first

\* I would not be understood to derogate in the slightest degree from the value of these studies. All, of our own sex at least, should learn them, as opportunity presents ; they are highly useful as exercises of the mind, for training in exact reasoning, and needful in many departments of business. They should, however, be taken in their proper order, and of course should follow, rather than precede, the *indispensable* studies.

fifty persons you meet, of either sex, at any age, and ask of them an off-hand page of manuscript; — if more than one in the whole number accomplishes it without a single error in orthography, you will be more fortunate than most of our fraternity have found themselves; and, I venture to assert, the result will not be more successful than this proportion. Where, then, lies the fault? Is accuracy in English spelling unattainable? Certainly not. I grant that it is, of all the departments of study attempted in our common schools, the most difficult. Still, it may be mastered. It requires only right methods and persevering practice. It is one of the first things to be taken up where the *book* is used, and is to be continued during the whole of the school life.

I would not wholly condemn the use of the spelling-book. It is valuable in one stage of the child's progress; but should by no means be used exclusively for *oral* practice. In the primary department of our schools but little is attempted, and much time is spent idly on the seats. Let a portion of this unoccupied time be employed in copying on the slate such lessons from the spelling-book as have been assigned to each individual or class. Let this be done, not merely that the learner may become familiar with the order of the letters in the word, but also with their forms, that he may readily distinguish between letters somewhat resembling each other, such as the *b* and the *d*, the *q* and the *p*; and that he may not fail (as I have known even *teachers* to do!) in the formation of the letters A, M, N, U, V, W, X, Y, &c., &c., transposing the shade and the hair-line, and even giving the wrong direction to the curve of the J, — to the central curve of the s, making it from the right to the left, instead of from the left to the right [thus, s]; and sometimes making the figure 3 for the capital letter E!

The training of the eye is an important part in the business of school education; and you will find no auxiliary more valuable to you in your vocation than that of *visible illustration*. The expert draftsman, through the medium of the blackboard, has a great advantage, in the school-room, over those who cannot draw; and I would recommend that every teacher, whether he have little talent or much in this art, cherish and cultivate it, as one important means of success in his calling.

Who, that has had the privilege of listening to lectures from the gifted Agassiz, has failed to be impressed by the vividness and beauty of his descriptions of animal life and structure, aided by his admirable sketches, made with unequalled rapidity and truthfulness, in chalk, on the blackboard?

But to return: the pupil more readily acquires the spelling lessons by studying them through the practice of copying on the slate, than by spelling them over to himself many times orally; and, as soon as he can write or print the words with facility, his *recitations*, so to call them, in this department should be rendered by this method alone. To spell by word of mouth, should be confined exclusively to beginners, who are unable to write or print with sufficient rapidity to make the plan of the more advanced scholars feasible.

When the children have, by this method, become somewhat familiar with the words in the spelling-book, their lessons in orthography should be taken from the *reading* books of their respective classes. If these books are well adapted to the capacities of the several classes, there will be a gradual progression in the language as well as the style of the books; and consequently an appropriate advancement or elevation in the class of words used for the spelling lessons. The lessons should be, in length, adapted to the capacity of the respective classes — say from a fourth to a whole page of the reading-book; not too long, or they will not be faithfully studied, as the only effectual method of study occupies considerable time. Let these lessons be given *every day*: nothing short of this will be sufficient to make good spellers of all who attend during the school-going age; and they who expect otherwise will surely be disappointed. To give an exercise in spelling once a week; to have it an oral one, comprising, it may be, one or two words to each scholar, and this without previous study, is a complete *sham*, evidently performed with no purpose of improvement, but merely for the name of a spelling lesson. It costs but little time, no labor, and is worth — *nothing*! To such a practice, which obtains in many schools, some of them of lofty pretension, and where the “higher branches” are taught, is the wretched deficiency in this humble but indispensable element of learning owing! Surely, a reform in this direction is loudly called for, even at the sacrifice of a share of the “accomplishments”!

If your school is so arranged as to have all your classes in one room, the lessons might be dictated to the whole in the same operation; thus: the teacher reads from — say the book of the *first* class, three words, marking them with his pencil, and then proceeds to the *second* class, and does the same; and so on till the whole series have been served once round. He then returns to the book of the *first* class, repeats the words read before, and adds three more; goes on to the *second* class again, pursuing the same process, and in like manner to the rest, till practice enough has been had, or till all the difficult words in the lesson have been given out. The pupils write these

words on their slates, which are then gathered up, class by class, for examination. Every error is marked by the examiner, and, subsequently, the slates are returned to their owners for correction. They should be shown to the teacher, after having been corrected, and then copied into a book, with the part of speech and the meaning of the words as they occur in the lesson added. Much of this work might be committed to the charge of advanced scholars—good spellers—of careful habits, much to their advantage and to the relief of the teacher.

If the classes occupy separate rooms, there would be a saving of time in giving out the words to be spelled, during the *reading* hour of each class; and then dictating but one word at a time, and not repeating it, unless misunderstood by a member of the class; a signal being given by each one when the word has been written. A large number of words may, in this way, be written in an almost incredibly short time, when by practice a class has become expert in the exercise.—I regret here to give a caution against a fraud that is sometimes attempted in these lessons; although when we know that, in our most respectable colleges, similar acts of unfairness are sometimes practised, our mortification is in some degree abated, though our grief remains the same.

Sitting or standing together, boys sometimes, when in doubt of the proper spelling of a word, steal a look at a neighbor's slate, and thus solve the doubt by taking advantage of another's fidelity in study or superior scholarship. Sometimes, too, they have been known to write beforehand, on a corner of the slate, or on a small bit of paper, to be concealed in the hand, the particularly difficult words that occur in the lesson. These and similar dishonest devices, the judicious teacher should vigilantly guard against, and, if detected, denounce in a tone of stern indignation,—making, of course, all reasonable distinction between a *first* offence and a *young* pupil, and one more than once repeated by an old offender.

I have spoken of a particular mode of study; it is this: most pupils, before learning spelling lessons from a reading-book, would have become familiar with the greater part of the words that occur in a piece of ordinary composition, and would naturally infer that all the small words, at least, they could spell correctly. Consequently, in some modes of study, they would be subject to most unlooked-for errors; for it is far from being true that the difficulties in spelling lie principally with the *long* words; numerous examples to the contrary may be easily adduced. The rule, then, to obviate the evil, is, for the pupil to write on his slate, or a piece of paper, to the dictation of

another, the whole lesson, — difficult and easy portions, — and, after having corrected the errors by the book, or by the aid of some one competent to the work, to study upon the words missed until all are fully mastered. This having been done before the spelling hour arrives, seldom fails to give the pupil the mastery at the time of need.

This long process may be thought too expensive in time; but not, I think, by those who estimate accuracy in written language at its proper value. It should be remembered, too, that the time is not spent in merely learning to *spell*. Great facility in writing with the pencil is acquired; the capacity for writing English composition is increased; and a better acquaintance with the style of standard authors — from whose writings the selections in our school-books are usually made — is secured. Surely, all these advantages ought to plead for the adoption of our rule.

There is a wide difference in the power of the eye, in different individuals. Some do not see an error, although indicated by the examiner's mark, and will complain that "the word is marked, when it is right"! With such, patience and long practice are necessary. Some are naturally good spellers, and need but little study, while others require a long-continued and resolute course, to conquer the innate defect. I have, however, seldom known one to fail often in the daily task, when studied in this way. On the contrary, I have had pupils who, after having tried various other expedients, and failed of success, come to me and say, exultingly, "I never miss now, sir, since I have studied in your way!"

Although the operation of the rule should be general, in regard to the method of study, individual cases will arise, in which a dispensation may be made to advantage, and should be made, in justice to the individual concerned. This practice continued for years, by pupils with good intellectual powers, right organs, and diligent and careful habits, usually gives a success in orthography reaching to almost perfection — notwithstanding the inherent difficulties in a language which owes its origin to so numerous and great a variety of sources. These are they that may be trusted to examine the work of their school-fellows, and thus benefit themselves and others, while they redeem a portion of the teacher's time for other labors.

You will not have failed to observe, even in a short experience, that certain words are always missed by some members of a class. These should, consequently, be given out whenever they occur in a lesson. Among them you will call to mind, separate, tranquillity, Tuesday, certificate, absence, here, *ad.*, hear, *v.*, there, *ad.*, their, *pro.*, preceding, conscious, crystal, crystallize, &c.; and all that class of

words in which *ie* or *ei* occur—such as *receive*, *believe*, *perceive*, &c. Likewise, words belonging to the class which double, or not, the final consonant, on taking an additional syllable beginning with a vowel, as *wrapped*, *benefited*, *omitted*, *tinned*, &c., &c. The persistence of pupils in errors of this kind, goes to prove the necessity of a long-continued course of practice with a large majority, while they remain at school.

The question of a *standard of orthography* naturally comes up here. This may seem to involve the teacher in some embarrassment; but not necessarily. The words are comparatively few as to whose orthography scholars disagree; and, as the books to be used in public schools are decided on by the committee or school-board having the matter in charge, the teacher has no option in the case. He should have an opinion of his own, and express it freely and independently; but he is not responsible for results under the control of his official superiors.

With the teacher of a private school the case is different. He chooses, for his printed authorities, such books as his judgment approves, and is responsible for the consequences. Let him keep himself free from partisan bias, and secure the best aids he can find for his noble work.

Every teacher, who is imbued with the true spirit of his profession, will state his views frankly, in the course of his instructions, and give his reasons for them. This he should do modestly, awarding full justice to the books furnished, and to their authors,—mainly desirous to benefit the children of his charge, and not to evince a hostile sentiment to any one.

It is not to be supposed that every teacher in the common schools of our land will be, or will consider himself, competent to decide independently on the comparative merits of rival books,—each having ardent, powerful, and learned friends,—some, perhaps, influenced by personal interest to become the trumpeters in the cause they have espoused; but it is the duty of every one, who has adopted the business of instructing others, to inform himself, to every practical extent, on questions intimately connected with his daily duties.

It has been said that the teacher should be *above* the text-books used in his classes—should be able to correct any error that may occur in them, rather than blindly follow their lead; this I acknowledge to be an important desideratum, and he who approaches most nearly to qualifications of this grade, will prove most worthy of his responsible station, and make it the medium of the highest good. Still, we must accept of something short of this for a time, or many

schools will be without teachers. All who act as such, influence their pupils, to some extent, and, hence, things in the book which are disapproved by them, will not be fully adopted by the scholars, whatever may be the written rule. "The master says so," has great weight, even at the fireside.

Although the long "War of the Dictionaries" has been carried on principally by booksellers, almost every one, with even but slight literary pretension, has indulged in predilections for one side or the other, — displayed, at times, in debate of no very amiable tone. Well would it be if all could harmonize, and adopt one uniform standard of spelling and pronouncing our language. But this can never be. It savors too much of conservatism for the present state of the world. The parties would never coalesce. Those who are content with what is time-honored, would not accept a change, whose chief recommendation would, perhaps, be its novelty; and opponents, having secured a degree of success, would never yield their vantage-ground, but persevere in the hope of a final triumph.

Much credit is confessedly due to Doctor Webster, who devoted a whole lifetime to letters, and whose aim was the improvement of his native tongue. But from the time of the publication of his first large work, proposing an alteration in the mode of spelling certain classes of words (1793), to this day, that portion of the community most capable of judging in the case, never favored his innovations. They did not admit the authority of an individual to prescribe the way in which they should write their vernacular. Nor are our countrymen — always jealous of an invasion of their personal rights — peculiar in this respect. The people of imperial France have never universally yielded to the prescriptions of the French Academy — the highest literary authority in their country — for an alteration in the orthography of some classes of French words; but former modes are still adhered to by many of their countrymen, notwithstanding the *prestige* of this imposing authority.

Something might have been done by us and in Great Britain, if learned bodies or institutions, already in the public confidence, had taken a stand in the matter; but to follow the dictum of one man, however learned, the people would never consent.

The style of language of a people must and will be decided by the people themselves. The silent influence of the best writers of the time will always modify the fashion of expression and the mode of spelling; but general changes must ever be gradual, and a long time be required to permeate the masses.

The duty of a lexicographer is to unfold the state of a language as



it is used by the great body of educated men, and not according to the fancy of a single mind. His book is to represent what exists, rather than what, in his view, ought to be. And herein, as it seems to me, lies the difference between the two great competitors in the contest referred to. One, a man of notions, has endeavored — unsupported by a great majority of the learned or by current usage — to foist upon the world, in some instances, the results of his own whims, sustained at times by very inconclusive reasonings, not always consistent; — the other, has given us a representation of the language as found in written and in oral use — corroborating his own impressions by writers most worthy of confidence, and by speakers of the purest taste; in pronunciation, accent, and orthography, giving the various authorities in their order, and indicating his personal preference mainly by placing his chosen method first.

If the question were to rest on this view alone, there could hardly be a doubt of the almost universal verdict. But perhaps my statement is partial; possibly, prejudice may mingle its influence and warp my judgment. I, however, give it honestly, with no personal or sinister purpose, but as the conclusion at which I have arrived, after no inconsiderable investigation of the subject for more than a quarter of a century, and all the experience that teaching the language has furnished during that period. But while I would unhesitatingly announce my preference for Worcester's dictionaries over Webster's, because I find in them the evidence of the most careful, elaborate, and thorough study of the language, the most impartial report of its pronunciation as observed in the most reliable public speakers of learning, taste, and experience; I do not hesitate to say that Dr. Webster's are worthy of a place on the desk of every teacher, and in the library of every student. Not because of their etymological statements — these are sometimes capricious; not because of any supposed superiority in their definitions; but because of their general completeness, and the literary *curiosities* which they contain — as well as to indicate my respect for a man who acted as an American pioneer in this field of letters. If I could possess but one dictionary, it should be that of Worcester. But, in conclusion, permit me to say, let a copy of the best edition of the large work of each of these authors be in the hands of every one who has an interest in our noble language, especially in the possession of every teacher, or on the shelves of the school library; let the volumes be frequently referred to, and their contents carefully noted, that the reproach of the general ignorance of our mother tongue may be no longer a disgrace to our people.

## III. EDUCATION.—THE CULTIVATION OF THE EXPRESSIVE FACULTIES.

Lectures addressed to Young Teachers.

BY WILLIAM RUSSELL, OF LANCASTER, MASS.

Ed. American Journal of Education. (Boston,) 1896—99.

---

[Continued from page 64, Vol. III.]

With the aim of moulding, guiding, and governing the development of the expressive faculties, we will proceed to the next step in our present analysis, which is to consider,

### III. THE TENDENCY OR HABIT OF ACTION, IN THE EXPRESSIVE FACULTIES, AS IT IS MANIFESTED IN UTTERANCE.

*Utterance an Instinct.*—When we contemplate man as a being capable of education, he may, for our immediate purpose, be regarded as furnished by his Creator, with what may be termed the *apparatus* of expression, in the gift of the various faculties which we have been hitherto considering. We perceive him further provided with an *adequate motive power*, by which this apparatus is propelled, in the involuntary or voluntary action of feeling. The indication next to be observed by the educator, as the suggestion for his guidance, in his endeavors to coöperate with Nature's tendency to development, is, In what direction does the action of the expressive faculties naturally tend? What, in this instance, is the instinct of spontaneity? What, under the guidance of his own inward promptings, does the child incline to do or to become? What habit or attribute of character does he thus acquire? The answer furnished by observation, in this case, plainly is,—Man, as a sentient, intellectual, and sympathizing being, acting under the primary impulse of instinct, and without any interference of human culture, obviously inclines to Utterance, (throwing himself *out*,) or, in other words, to *self-revelation*, as an ordained function of his nature, verifying and crowning his intelligence, and constituting him a social and moral being, capable of progress and of culture. He craves and finds expression, accordingly, in many and various forms: he makes himself felt and understood, in some way or other, by his fellows. Under the guidance of education, he but learns to do this more definitely and successfully, through language and expressive art. From a sentient and intelligent, he develops thus into a communicative being,—the result, so far, of the combination of unconscious and voluntary education, and, at the same time,

No. 9.—[Vol. III, No. 2.]—21

the condition and the pledge of subsequent intellectual and moral progress.

*Repression a Common Error of Educational Training.*—The attentive observation—not to say the systematic study—of man, to which the educator and teacher should ever feel himself bound, as the only security for the intelligent and successful discharge of his duties, suggests, at this stage of our subject, the fact, that a prominent feature of error, in the too prevalent arbitrary modes of education, has been the *repression* rather than the development of the natural desire of utterance in childhood.

From the very first steps of his mental and moral progress, man is not a merely selfish and receptive being. He longs to impart his feelings, and to communicate his observations: he wishes to give, as well as to receive: he feels impelled to utter himself that he may impart and confer, not less than receive. His impulse, as a sympathetic one, is unselfish, generous, noble. When the child exclaims to his playmate on the beauty of the flower which they see, he does not merely call for sympathy in the delight which he feels: he would, by his instinctive expression of pleasure, suggest and impart that delight.

Utterance, under the benign guardianship of Nature, as its Author's interpreter, is thus, essentially and substantially, a moral process, not less than a merely sympathetic and intellectual one. Nor, in education, should it ever be forgotten that, by the Creator's ordination, every utterance of a feeling or an emotion, gives it additional strength and life; and that, obeying the divinely instituted law of speech and communication, we are aiding in the process of building up, day by day, and hour by hour, the fabric of human character.

Arbitrary education, however, is, in no feature of its meddling mismanagement more conspicuous than in the *restriction*, the *reserve*, and the *silence*, which it is ever so prone to impose, and on which it is so apt to plume itself, with reference even to the very first stages of its repellent sway.

The five years' probationary and preparatory silence which Pythagoras is said to have exacted of his disciples, might be an excellent discipline for mature minds, as an introduction to the "metaphysic bog profound," into which he meant thereafter to plunge them. But one of the first and most urgent wants of childhood is utterance. The innocent little human being is ever thus holding out his petty link in the golden chain which binds heart to heart, mind to mind, and man to God: he is ever ready to join his link to that of his neighbor. But the mechanical educationist, with his "look at your book, and not at me!" frowns the infant volunteer back to his seat,

to his individuality, and his isolation; and the chain by which the little petitioner for sympathy and knowledge, might have been lifted with the conjoined force of the mental world, is of no avail to him: his link of connection with it is yet detached. His turn has not yet come, in the great game of opportunity; and he must bide his time as best he may.

*Appropriate Training.*—Under the unerring and genial guidance of the mother, the child is not perpetually immured within doors, or confined to one spot, or fixed in one posture: he is allowed, occasionally, at least, to behold the outward world, to range the fields, to walk on the road, to observe the objects around him, to feel their attractive force, to admire their beauty, to wonder and to inquire about what is new to him, to utter his exclamations of pleasure, to examine, and to name whatever strikes his attention. He thus enjoys his own nature in the free exercise of his faculties; he is consciously progressive in intelligence and in speech, as in feeling, and, so far, is effectually and successfully preparing to become, in due season, eloquently expressive.

*Disadvantages of City Education.*—The worst, perhaps, of all the many evils attending the supposed necessity of congregating in cities, and adopting artificial modes of life, is one but little thought of. The parent who relinquishes his rural home in the open village street or in the field, flatters himself, perhaps, that he is securing better educational advantages for his children, when he takes up his abode in one of the confined dwellings of the close-crowded city. He may find, by the exchange, a teacher more expert in turning the machinery of instruction, and a more ample supply of the learning to be had from books. But the nobler, the truly liberal part of his childrens' education, he has foregone forever. The free scope, the pure, bracing air, the rich variety of nature,—the healthful influence of these on the growing frame and the expanding mind, on the susceptible heart, on the plastic imagination, on the whole soul and character; these are sacrificed, and with them, the best capabilities of culture.

*Educational Benefits of Rural Life.*—In no respect are the losses just mentioned greater than in regard to the part of education which we are now contemplating. To the child reared in the freedom and the beauty of nature, everything around him becomes a language, expressing the happiness which he unconsciously enjoys. His vocabulary is furnished in the forms, the colors, the life, the sounds and motion, amid which he finds himself. The half-conscious awe which he feels, under the deep shade and the sweeping boughs of the great elm, through which he looks up, with a pleasing dread and wonder

to the over-arching sky, the beautiful wild-flower which waves and nods to him as he passes, the brook which runs bubbling and gurgling through the meadow, the majesty of the flowing river, the roaring of the winter wind through the bare trees, the whirling of the snow-flakes, the glittering garment of the ice-storm, the opening of the spring buds, the fluttering of the summer leaves, and the sailing of the falling leaf in autumn, the enlivening voices of the domestic animals, the entrancing music of the birds;—these, and a thousand other unpaid teachers, have all been training him in a language true, copious, perfect, and inspiring,—compared to which, book-learning is but as the dry husk to the rich nutritious grain.

*Genial Culture.*—To favor and cherish, not to check, utterance—to elicit, not to repress expression,—to multiply, and deepen, and expand, and fill, not to dry up, the sources and reservoirs of language;—these are the true offices of education. The cultivation of the young mind, taking a suggestive hint from the cultivation of the young tree, should allow a liberal scope of nutrition, of growth and expansion, before calling in the aid of the pruning knife. A large part of early education should consist in conversation, in which the pupil should freely partake, as the natural means of acquiring accuracy and expertness, as well as freedom, in expression. The tendency to write and to draw, should have full scope and ample encouragement. Care should be taken to render interesting and attractive every form of exercise by which the student may ultimately attain to the free, forcible, and correct expression of thought. To the various modes of securing such fruits of culture, in detail, we shall have occasion to advert in the sequel.

#### IV. RESULT OF THE ACTION OF THE EXPRESSIVE FACULTIES:— COMMUNICATION.

*The Power of Communication.*—In the previous stages of our present inquiries, we have been occupied with the *classification* of the powers of expression, their *springs of action*, and the *habitual tendency* and direction of their current, under the guidance of unassisted nature and of education. The next step in the progress of investigation preliminary and introductory to the actual work of express culture, is the consideration of the Results at which, whether by the law of natural development or that of educational cultivation, the human being arrives, in consequence of the exercise of his powers of expression.

The immediate result of utterance is Communication,—the impartation and interchange of sympathy or sentiment, by which man inspires his fellow man with the same feeling, affection, emotion, passion,

thought, or sentiment, which actuates himself; and which, as the circle of kindred minds is enlarged by the aggregation of numbers, extends his personal mood or mental condition throughout the sphere of the community of which he is a member.

*Intellectual and Moral Effects of Communication.*—The views, the will, and the power of an individual, acquire, through communication, an ascendancy, it may be, over a nation, or even over the whole civilized race, for successive ages; while, on the other hand, the intellectual acquisitions, the moral and spiritual attainments, the sympathies and the accumulated resources of nations and of ages, may be brought to the aid of the individual, through the magic power of language.

For good or for evil, man's power of communication with his fellows, gives to the aggregated multitudes of a whole people, or even of the race, the unity of purpose, the singleness of aim, the directness, the personal efficiency, the ease and the certainty of action of a single agent; while it equally arms the individual with the intellectual, the physical, and the moral force of millions. The sage, the orator, the poet, the artist, the statesman, the warrior, thus become the recognized representatives of a people or of mankind, to whom communities and nations bow in submission or in homage, and to whose ascendant genius they render the tribute of heart and hand, of treasure, or of life. Thus, too, the youth, in his studious endeavors to advance his intellectual and moral condition, has the aid arising from the experience, the counsels, the guidance, and the sympathies of the intelligent and the virtuous of every age and nation which possesses an accessible record of its progress; and the student whose days have been spent in strictest seclusion and unremitting investigation, enjoys the assurance that the fruits of his solitary research and strenuous application shall be gathered not by himself alone, but by whatever enlightened and sympathizing minds, throughout the world, and in all subsequent time, shall come within his sphere of communication by living voice or written word.

*Value of Communication.*—Communication, as the boon of language, is not to be measured by its immediate results merely, as a telegraphic convenience for the impartation of feeling or the conveyance of thought,—great as its uses, in this relation, are to the whole race. Language is the vehicle of all knowledge. Like the noble ship, costly and valuable in itself, but yet more valuable in the treasure with which it is fraught, it comes laden with the accumulations of countless minds and boundless wealth. To measure its full value, we should have to compute the number and the worth of every

acquisition which the mind has garnered up in the records of every department of science and literature, and thus rendered capable of conveyance from man to man, and from generation to generation, throughout the world.

#### V. EDUCATIONAL PROCESSES FOR THE CULTIVATION OF THE EXPRESSIVE FACULTIES.

These may be classed under the following heads: The Attentive Observation and the Love of Nature; the Study and the Practice of Art; the Study of Language; the Practice of Exercises in Oral and Written Expression.

OMISSIONS AND DEFECTS IN MODES OF CULTURE.—*Language.*—The plan of education generally adopted for the exercise and discipline of the expressive faculties, indicates little philosophical design, logical consistency, generous spirit, or liberal scope, in the course which it prescribes. It is founded on views too narrow and exclusive; and its execution has been too mechanical. The mother's and the teacher's eye has been fastened too exclusively on the facts of *language* alone, as so many detached points to be mastered in detail. Hence the injury sometimes done to the organs of speech, by premature attempts to conquer some of the difficulties of articulation, in the mother's zeal for the precocious development of the faculties of her child; and hence, also, the mechanical and arbitrary processes of alphabetic training, in its customary forms. The eager desire for immediate definite results, has caused the teacher, too generally, to overlook the great facts that language is but one of the forms in which the expressive faculties are exerted, or in which expressive power is to be developed, and that the successful cultivation of language is inseparable from due exercise in all the kindred forms of expression to which the mind naturally tends.

The general plan of education is limited to instruction and practice in the oral and written forms of language, in the school routine of *reading* and *grammar*, and what is termed *composition*. The forms of exercise and the methods of training, also, in these departments of education, have too generally been literal and mechanical; and the poverty and imperfection of the results have betrayed the defects of the plan which prescribed them.

*Methods too exclusively Passive and Receptive.*—The great importance of a full and generous development of the whole mental constitution, as indispensable to the right action of any of its elements, having been overlooked in the plan of education, due allowance has too seldom been made, in the training of the mind, for the adequate exercise and discipline of the active nature and of the expressive



powers of the human being. The general prescription of the processes of instruction, has evidently been directed to the *receptive* action of the *understanding* and the *impleting* of the *memory*. The mind of the pupil has been too uniformly kept in a comparatively *passive* condition. He has not been permitted and invited to use sufficiently even those materials of expression which he has, from the earliest steps of his progress, in the routine of education, been so laboriously employed in accumulating. Expression, neglected in early training, becomes difficult in later stages; and conscious failure incurred in attempting it, renders it distasteful. Effort, under such circumstances, is reluctantly made, frequently intermitted, and ere long discontinued.

*Neglect of our own Language.*—No remark is more common or more true, than that even our highest and best courses of culture do not result in furnishing accomplished men, as regards the actual use, in speech or writing, of our own language. Ample time, comparatively, is usually allowed for the study of the ancient languages, and even for that of some of the modern; but little is expressly assigned for the thorough acquisition of our own, which, to ensure to the student a perfect command of it, should be the groundwork of daily exercises, thoughtfully planned and carefully executed, from the first steps in education onward to the last day of professional preparation for the business of life.

*Faults of Unconscious Teaching.*—Some of the many causes of imperfect teaching, in the department of language, may be found in the fact, that the true nature and actual character of early training are not recognized by those whose office it is to superintend the first steps of childhood in the path of development. The mother and the primary teacher too often overlook the vast influence of *example*, which, to the imitative nature of childhood, always becomes a model. Hence the imperfect articulation, incorrect pronunciation, mechanical monotony, and lifeless tone, which are so generally prevalent in school reading. These faults are, too often, faithful copies of the style which the ear of the young learner has unconsciously caught from his mother, his teacher, or his class-mates, and which habit rivets on his voice, for life.

*Error in Alphabetic Instruction.*—The mechanical manner in which the child's first lessons in reading are sometimes conducted, is another cause of failure, in the department of instruction to which we now refer. In many schools, the young pupil never has his attention called, definitely or consciously, to the fact that the letters of the alphabet are *phonetic* characters, the whole value of which con-

sists in the *sounds* which they represent: in many, he may pass through the whole course of instruction without being once called to practice the constituent elementary sounds of his own language: in very many, there is no attempt made to exercise and develop, modify, or cultivate, in any form, the voice itself. Hence the prevalence of the errors which have been already mentioned as fruits of unconscious imitation, and which careful, early cultivation can alone prevent.

*Neglect of the Meaning of Words.*—An obvious defect in prevalent modes of education, as regards adequate preparation for the free and correct use of our native language, is the yet too common neglect of early and progressive *etymological training* in the analysis of words, and the tracing of the significant value of their component syllables, so as to ascertain and fix in the mind their exact meaning and full power, and to follow their transitions from a primary to a secondary sense, or from one which is figurative and imaginative to one which is purely intellectual or merely practical. It is such intimate knowledge, and such only,—the fruit of daily exercise and careful training,—that can give, at length, to the mature scholar, or the professional speaker, that mastery of words, which now so often, when almost too late, he feels that he needs for the full and perfect expression of his thoughts.

*Defective Forms of Reading Exercises.*—A common and marked failure of education, as regards the course of instruction in reading, is partly attributable to the cause last mentioned,—the unintelligent enunciation of words,—but largely, also, to the mechanical perusal and unmeaning pronunciation of sentences, as merely so many successions of audible sounds. Such exercises deaden rather than enliven the powers of expression, as they blunt rather than sharpen the understanding, for the intelligent conception of meaning. Yet, in not a few schools is it the fact, that even quite young pupils are never asked, in performing a reading exercise, to point out, previous to the pronouncing of a sentence, those words in it which are most significant or expressive, and accordingly require that special force or turn of utterance, which alone can render them *emphatic*, so as to convey their full sense, or bring out the whole sentiment which the sentence was framed to express. A similar neglect is too prevalent as regards the effect of proper *pauses* in reading, which should always suggest to the ear an intelligent analysis of a sentence into its constituent portions of sense, not, as is very frequently the case, a mechanical analysis, servilely following the grammatical punctuation with measured uniformity of utterance, whatever be the depth of thought, or the force of feeling,

implied in the language of the composition. As the syntactical punctuation, although it may often coincide with the expressive and significant rhetorical pausing, does not necessarily do so, but, on the contrary, is sometimes directly at variance with it, the effect of uniformly following the points, must, in such cases, be a positive hindrance rather than a help to intelligible or appropriate reading, as an exercise of voice. The utterance of the common phrases, "Yes, sir," or "No, sir," will furnish sufficient illustration here. The comma preceding the word "sir," is due to the eye, on the score of syntax, but not to the ear or the voice, on that of sense.

It is in the audible reading of *poetry*, however, that the defects of current education are most strikingly exhibited, as regards the discipline of the expressive faculties. Poetry, as the language of imagination and feeling, speaking to the heart, properly requires a mode of reading obviously quite different from that of the usual forms of plain didactic prose, addressed to the understanding merely. The word-pictures of the poet paint their imagery on the imagination; the intellect interprets their forms; the heart beats in response to the graphic delineation; and the voice gives expression to a correspondent melody of tone, while it utters the words of the verse. To read poetry aright, therefore, implies the poet's inspiration, imparted to the soul and voice of the reader,—an exalted state of imagination, a sympathetic vividness of feeling, unconscious quickness and acuteness of intellectual conception, a plastic voice and expressive tone. An appropriate course of preparatory discipline of feeling and imagination, is obviously, then, as indispensable to poetic utterance, as the right understanding of the intellectual sense of a sentence, is to the ordinary reading of prose. For this purpose, every grand or beautiful form of nature or of expressive art to which he can resort, with a view to give susceptibility to feeling and imagination or pleasure to taste, now becomes, in the hands of the intelligent teacher, an instrument of power, to aid him in the processes of culture. Now is the time when he feels how deeply he must ever be indebted to the vivifying influence of music, painting, and sculpture, and every chaste form of decorative art, as the effective means of opening the eye of the soul to the vision of grandeur or of beauty, firing the heart with the ardor of inspiration, touching it with the sense of tenderness and love, and refining the taste by the display of true elegance and grace.

The dry, prosaic, lifeless style in which poetry is too generally read in our schools, is more injurious than beneficial, not merely to the faculties more immediately concerned in the conception or utterance of

poetic composition, but to the action and influence of all those powers, mental and moral, which tend to elevate and refine the soul, and mould the character to the highest forms of excellence. There is something akin to the barrenness of spirit with which the sceptic peruses a page of sacred scripture, in the utterly mechanical manner in which the well-drilled pupil in mathematics or in grammar, is sometimes permitted to read strains of the purest poetry, embodying the sublimest sentiments, and calling for tones of the deepest and most vivid emotion, or even of the most exalted passion.

The general neglect of appropriate means for cherishing sensibility and cultivating taste, in the relation now referred to, is the more to be regretted that it prevails most in that form of education and in that class of schools in which it tells with the deepest effect :—I refer to our common modes of mental cultivation, and to those seminaries in which the mass of our people are trained. The recuperative influences of classical culture, in our higher literary institutions, does something to redeem, in this respect, the omissions and the defects of earlier training. But it is much to be feared that, even in our boasted New England education, as generally conducted, the young who are to receive no such remedial aid for disproportioned and defective cultivation, close their school course without the benefit of a single effort, on the part of instructors, to render their pupils capable of appreciating or expressing the sentiments embodied in the best passages of our own literature and that of the parent land,—a literature which contains confessedly more of the inspiring elements of pure morality and noble character, as well as genuine beauty, than any that has yet appeared on earth; not excepting even the model languages of classic antiquity.

*Instruction in Grammar.*—It is but of late that those who prescribe the forms of education or the modes of instruction, have furnished the working teacher with the means of rational and philosophic training for his pupils, in another department of culture professedly occupied with the discipline of the expressive faculties, but, in past years, so formally conducted, for the most part, as to embarrass and retard rather than aid the progress of development. A great change, unquestionably, has taken place in the character of text-books on Grammar; and in this branch of instruction we have recently been provided with valuable facilities for improvement, in several excellent treatises, well suited to the true uses of a text-book,—not a synthetic synopsis of the science as it lies in the mind of the consummate grammarian, but a gradually progressive and practical presentation of the subject, from its simplest elements upward, in a course, at the same

time, so strictly logical, that every step leads, by a law of thought, to another, and so thoroughly practical, that,—to use the not inapt expression of a German instructor visiting one of our American schools,—the pupil is made, at every step, to “*experience grammar.*”

*Defective Methods.*—Still, too many of our teachers cling to the narrow practice of following, in every grammar lesson, the order of a *synthetic* text-book, in which the subject is admirably arranged for a systematic and philosophic review of the science, but by no means for the successive steps of progress to the young mind commencing the study of it. The method of such text-books is precisely that which must be *inverted* in all true, living, oral instruction, or in any rational attempt to introduce a learner to a knowledge of the subject, and to guide him in his first endeavors to reduce it to practice in illustrative forms of exercise. The logic of instruction requires that the whole science of grammar should be first subjected to a rigorous *analysis* in the teacher's own mind, that its elements may be exhibited individually and successively to that of the pupil, and so become the groundwork of his *inductive* and intelligent progress from the recognition of facts to that of principles and laws. The practical part of the instructor's business, requires, in this, as in all other branches, a strict compliance with the rule of presenting one element only at a time, but in such succession as to develop the whole subject in easy steps of connected progress,—each perfectly understood and thoroughly exemplified; nothing assumed, but everything proved; nothing merely defined without being reduced to practice.

*The Practice of Composition.*—Till very recently, in comparison, no branch of education connected so immediately with the discipline of the expressive faculties, has been more faultily conducted than this. Without waiting for the development and efficient action of the reflective faculties, or the power of abstract conception and general thought, the teacher, when he has conducted his pupils through a very imperfect course of grammar and mechanical “*parsing,*” and, perhaps, a little technical rhetoric, proceeds to prescribe a task in composition, on some *general* theme requiring the thoughts of a mature and capacious mind, besides the command of a skillful pen, for its proper treatment.

*Results of Defective Methods of Teaching.*—Called thus, without means, to perform a task which leads him entirely away from the region in which his mind naturally and habitually works,—the *concrete* world of actual observation and of clear conception or conscious feeling,—the pupil finds himself unable to do what is required of him as a personal effort. In these circumstances, if he does not actually

shirk the task imposed on him, he has no resort but to repeat the commonplace thoughts and sayings of others, in which he feels no interest, and which, to his consciousness, have no truth. The precious moments of youth are thus worse than wasted; the expressive faculties are withered and dried up; and education, thus misdirected, destroys the powers which it was employed to cherish.

*Advantages of Seasonable Training.*—Teachers who take the pains to observe well, know that there is a stage in the life of childhood, when expression is a spontaneous tendency and a delight,—when to construct a sentence on his slate, or pencil a little note on paper, is to the miniature “ambitious student,” a conscious achievement and a triumph of power. Then is the happy moment for beginning the work of practice, which, if neglected at that stage, will never be easily, naturally, or effectively done afterward. The attempt may be made at a later period, under the influence of a sense of duty, or a feeling of shame, or the consciousness of compulsion. But, by this time, the plastic suppleness and pliancy of the mind is gone; and the whole endeavor proves an affair of difficulty and dislike. The teacher’s policy is never to let the moment come when composition, whether in the form of note or letter, or narrative, or description, is felt to be anything else than a pleasure and a privilege. The expression of sentiment, and the argument for an opinion, will then, become as easy, as natural, and as pleasurable employment, as the first steps of conscious progress, in the penning of a juvenile note or letter.

*Rhetoric.*—The great defect in conducting this branch of education,—a defect which is still very prevalent,—consists in the fact that the study of it is so much a matter of theoretic speculation on principles of taste, or is limited to the mere committing of rules to memory. Rhetoric, to become a useful branch of modern education, should embrace a gradually progressive course of exercises, embodying successively the facts of language, in the use of words and the construction of sentences; it should include the practice of daily writing, for successive years; frequent exercises in the logical arranging of thought for the purposes of expression, and the adapting of the forms and character of expression to thought; and it should be accompanied by the close study and critical analysis of the works of distinguished writers, with a view to acquire a perfect mastery over every form of style.

*Elocution: Errors in Modes of Instruction.*—Few branches of education are so little understood or rightly practiced as this. We have, in our current modes of instruction, little choice between the faults of style arising from what the indolent incline to term “a

generous neglect," through fear of "spoiling" what they claim as "nature," and those faults, on the other hand, which are attributable to literal and mechanical modes of cultivation, and consist in the obstruction of arbitrary details and artificial forms. Hence the results which characterize the one, in the gross errors of slovenly and low habit, coarse and disgusting manner, uncouth effect, bawling vehemence, and gesticulating violence, of what is sometimes dignified with the name of "popular oratory;" and hence the opposite traits of finical taste, affected elegance, false refinement, and studied contrivances of effect, which belong to perverted culture.

*Errors in Theory.*—With the advocates of neglect, the true teacher, as a believer in the value of cultivation, can have little sympathy, further than in the condemnation of false and artificial manner. Neglect of culture, he knows well, produces, in regard to all expressive art, the same obvious faults of rawness and inappropriateness, awkwardness and error. It is much to be regretted, however, that the language of some eminent writers, in their anxiety to protest against the errors of mechanical and literal training, gives countenance to the claims of ignorance on this subject, and seems to sanction the utter neglect of cultivation. Prominent among these it is to be regretted that we find an authority otherwise so justly eminent as Dr. Whately, whose own brilliant talents and ready power of expression, while they tend to give him an ascendancy over the minds of students and teachers, are perhaps the very circumstances which disqualify him to form a true judgment on the modes of cultivation best adapted to the great majority of minds which fall under the care of the teacher, in the common routine of education. The error,—if one may be pardoned the term,—by which ingenious minds are, on this subject sometimes entirely misled by superficial observation and hasty conclusions, is that of overlooking the great fact that, in the cultivation of any branch of expressive art, education is properly charged with a double duty,—that of aiding, by every favoring influence, the inward power of conception, and that of watching over the outward form of expression. In the former function, education is spiritual, genial, inspiring, intellectual, in its suggestions: in the latter, its office is formative and exterior; it watches, with the nicety of a musician's ear and a painter's eye, over every point of detail, and assiduously trains every organ of the pupil to exactness, as the law of truth, extending to the minutest effect of vocal utterance and visible action. True culture, in this relation, aims at a perfect result, and descends, therefore, to the moulding of every detail.

*The necessary Union of Theory and Practice in Teaching.*—It is



a great error to suppose that, in doing its practical work, education must do it in a narrow and servile spirit, or in a merely mechanical form. Genuine instruction, in its minutest direction, recognizes and impresses a principle which prompts the preference of one form of expression to another; and it takes care to deepen the impression of the principle by means of the associated art in practice. Faithful teaching must always extend to details. There is no slighting or slovening in its work. The difference between true and false instruction, in all art, is simply this: the former in prescribing a rule, refers to the parent principle from which it is derived, and thus makes instruction *logical*; the latter lays down the rule as a detached and arbitrary fact of mere inculcation, and thus renders instruction *empirical* and *mechanical*. The skillful teacher knows how, in inculcating the closest application to detail, to keep the mind intent on the principle which suggests it. No error in educational training can be greater than that of shrinking from or shunning particulars, under the plea of generalizing. In all matters of expressive art, principle must be developed and applied in practice.

*Necessity of Detail.*—The right expression of a sentiment by voice and action, like every other external act of mind and organ, has necessarily a mode and a form, coëxtensive with the words in which it is embodied; and neither teacher nor student can afford to dispense with one element of the true effect. The attention, therefore, must be directed to the study and observation, “analytically, of the emphasis, tones, pauses, &c.,” unless we are willing to neglect the proper effect of these on speech. If we can not communicate sentiment without a due observance of these, they must evidently be studied, more or less, according to their value and importance; and the very office of instruction is, in all such cases, patiently to descend to the study and practice of detail.

Yet Dr. Whately, in his *Elements of Rhetoric*, asserts that the analytic study of detail, in such matters, “must vitiate every system of instruction founded upon it.” For this conclusion, fortunately, however, he gives no reason but what is contained in the brief phrase, “according to my views,” and adds, further, the saving clause, “if those views be correct.” A true and efficient friend of education, in other respects, thus sides with the opponents of culture, by speaking from the preferences of personal taste and arbitrary opinion, instead of the laws of analogy and universal truth.

In most Anglo-Saxon communities, the teacher of elocution receives his pupils encrusted,—one might say,—with the errors of neglected or corrupted habit, unconsciously contracted from the current

faults of his home, his early school, the street, the local style of his vicinity, or that of some popular public speaker. The eradication of these errors is obviously the first duty of an instructor. But, according to the views of Dr. Whately, the instructor must not put forth his hand to touch such faults; for this could not be done without incurring the evil of entering into "analytic details of emphasis, tones, pauses, &c." The fabric of education, in this as in all other departments, resembles the well constructed edifice, liberally and scientifically planned, symmetrically proportioned, and thoroughly finished in detail. The outside observers of the processes of instruction,—among whom Dr. Whately, for the time, takes his position,—are quite willing that the intellectual structure should be a goodly mansion, on the whole, but insist on the notion that it shall be built without any detail of wood, stone, or brick, in particular.

*"Natural Advantages."*—In the act of utterance, the glance of genius may suffice, at times, for the intuitive recognition of a principle; and the impassioned impulse of artistic temperament, may prompt to instantaneous and perfect expression. The possessor of such attributes may, on exciting occasions, dispense with reflective thought and studious application as securities for success in utterance. But the majority of mankind, whether in youth or maturity, consciously and habitually need all the aids of analysis and study, and are successful in proportion to the closeness of their application and the thoroughness of their practice. The aid, in such circumstances, to be rendered by the intelligent and faithful teacher, is precisely that work of detail to which Dr. Whately objects. The student, through inadvertency, overlooks, for example, the true and appropriate manner of expression in solemn emotion; and, in the utterance of a passage of that character, runs on, through the influence of neglected habit, in a *high, loud, and rapid* voice. Here, the mechanical teacher will, of course, rectify the error, for the moment, by merely exemplifying the proper style, and making the pupil repeat in imitation of the model, but with no explanation, and with no reference of any point to a fixed principle which might be a guide in future practice. The true teacher,—who never can rest satisfied with anything merely mimetic or parrot-like,—when he indicates errors, endeavors to correct them by referring his pupil to the principle from which they deviate. He interrogates him in this case as to the true and natural style of voice in which solemn emotion is uttered, and directs his attention successively to the facts that it is characterized by tones which are comparatively *low, soft, and slow*,—as heard in the natural and appropriate utterance of devotional feeling. Teacher and pupil have thus a defi-

nite aim and an intelligent course before them in the reiterated practice which may be required for the correction of error, and a guiding light to direct them in all similar difficulties which may occur in subsequent exercises. In this department of education, as well as in others, true instruction is nothing else than the exposition of a *principle* along with an *analytical application* of it. Yet this is the very mode of procedure which Dr. Whately condemns, when he objects so decidedly to that method of elocutionary training which calls the attention of the student first to the prominent vocal effects of an emotion, and then descends to the particulars of expression in "emphasis, pauses, &c."

The errors of theory, regarding this department of education, have been dwelt on longer than might have otherwise been necessary, were it not for the proneness of those who superintend and control the forms of instruction, to defer to the authority of distinguished names, and to discourage the well directed efforts of the teacher. The mode in which reading is taught, or elocution practiced, in the successive stages of education, has a greater effect on mental and moral development, than any other branch of instruction: it affects not only the intelligence, but the taste, the habits, and the whole character of the mind. To the young teacher, therefore, it is exceedingly important that his views on the subject be clear and correct.

*The practice of Gesture.*—The visible part of elocution,—expressive action,—is another subject on which the errors of theory and practice are numerous and great. They consist chiefly, however, in intentional or unconscious *neglect*, on the one hand, and *mechanical cultivation*, on the other. The former cause of faulty habit appears in inexpressive, unmeaning, and inappropriate forms of bodily action, in insignificant tricks of personal habit, or in excessive and violent gesticulation, accompanied by awkward and uncouth attitudes: the latter shows itself in unnatural, affected, or fantastic gestures and positions. The expressive actions which naturally and properly belong to public address on subjects which call forth emotion, being larger and more forcible than those which belong to the habitual style of private conversation, it is of great service, in the training of youth, that, in addition to all the healthful aids arising from manly exercises and enlivening sports, there should be a daily course of training on the principal forms of oratorical action, with a view to ensure force, and freedom, and propriety of manner, as regards the natural language of attitude and action. This language has its principles for the guidance of the teacher and the student as well as the artist. The attentive investigation of these principles is the only source of

true and liberal instruction or useful study. From these principles rules for application necessarily flow; and it depends on the teacher and the student whether the latter shall be well and skillfully trained, neglected, or superficially taught.

*Artistic Cultivation of Taste.*—Provision is formally made, in many seminaries, for a more liberal allowance of cultivation for the expressive faculties, than is afforded in the mere learning to read, in the study of grammar and rhetoric, or in the practice of composition and elocution. The demands of Taste are recognized and complied with, so far as regards a certain measure of instruction in *music* and *drawing*. But, in very many seminaries, the little arbitrary and imperfect instruction which is given in these branches, is too frequently much worse than none; unless we are willing to recognize the forming of bad taste in either art as an admissible service of education.

*Lessons in Drawing: Common Mistake.*—Many parents and teachers never bestow a thought on the true character or proper uses of art, as a means of mental culture, or as a practical accomplishment, but labor under the false notion that a little dabbling in it, under a very ordinary instructor, is at least something gained toward refinement of taste and graceful habit. There can not be a greater error committed in education than this. Every attempt to copy an imperfect model, brings down the tone of taste, and does something to hinder the attainment of excellence. Neglect is wholesome, when compared with perversion or with false instruction.

“My daughter,” says an affectionate mother, “wishes to learn drawing; and Mr. Blank is getting up a class; and I think I shall let her join. Mr. Blank’s drawing is no great things, to be sure. But a little notion of drawing can do my daughter no harm, at least; and, perhaps, she may take a liking for it; and then she can find a better teacher, when it will be worth while to have one.” Here are the common errors,—that there is any benefit in a little *poor* or *bad* art, or that any speck of it is not a positive blemish; that the elements of art can be taught by an incompetent teacher; and that, after having taste thus perverted, the pupil can rally, acquire new principles, and form new habits. The actual experience of most pupils thus misdirected, is the painful conviction that, without a perfect command of elements, nothing whatever can be done in art, and that every neglected false line or touch, in rudimental lessons, is sure to injure the habits of eye and hand, in all subsequent execution, besides lowering the standard of excellence, and degrading the taste of the student.

*Music: Singing.*—An error similar to that just mentioned, prevails with regard to instruction and practice in *music*,—more partic-

ularly, in instrumental music. The vocal department, however, is not without its many evils of erroneous conception and faulty instruction. Singing, by the formal manner in which it is sometimes taught, becomes one of the listless tasks which the juvenile pupil is compelled to perform in the routine of school duty, instead of being one of the natural enjoyments and welcome recreations of daily life, in which intellectual activity is accompanied by pleasing emotion and free expression. The young learner, who should be permitted to enter at once on the pleasure of listening to pure and perfect strains of actual music, and then to join in the attempt to execute them, in the natural training of ear and voice, is commonly detained for a long course of drilling on technical terms and arbitrary rules. Music is thus rendered a tasteless, irksome, artificial exercise to the pupil, and fails of accomplishing its main objects of quickening the ear, enlivening the feelings, moulding the voice, and cultivating the taste, by the influence of pure and beautiful examples of vocal sound, in the expression of feeling and sentiment.

*Demoralizing Influence of Low Taste.*—The result is still more injurious when low taste is permitted to obtrude its degrading influences on the sacred sphere of music; when song is treated as merely a form of amusement or of sport, and when the corrupting effects of gross humor and ridiculous caricature, are intentionally introduced in the lessons of an art designed to purify and elevate the soul. When to such influences there is added the express utterance of degrading and demoralizing sentiment, in the words of a piece of music selected for a school exercise, the work of the enemy who sows tares in the field, is fully accomplished; and education lends its hand to the act of helping the young mind not upward but positively downward.

*Deficient and Faulty Instruction.*—When the grosser evils which have been mentioned, are avoided, there are not unfrequently others, quite serious in effect, arising from the influence of imperfect cultivation and false taste in the teacher, or in the community of which the pupil is a member. Inaccurate, slovenly, and heedless execution defeats all the purposes of musical cultivation, and renders the absence of culture preferable to the possession of it. Every repetition of a fault confirms an error of perception, a perversion of feeling, or a corruption of taste, and deepens it into a vice of habit and a defect in mental character.

*Instrumental Music.*—The more laborious forms of culture which are indispensable to success in the performance of *instrumental* music, strike yet deeper into the taste and tendencies of the mind, as regards the character and effects of expression. Faults in this

department of musical instruction, are, it is true, not so widely diffused as those which are so often displayed in the teaching of vocal music. But they are not less prejudicial to the pupil individually. The incessant and arduous application which is required of all who wish to perform successfully on any instrument, exhausts and discourages pupils who have not a true and deep love of music, together with the enduring physical vigor and muscular power which consummate execution demands. The attempt to continue practice, under such disadvantages, is more injurious than beneficial; and when the pupil is dragged through the daily infliction, the whole course ends in that miserable failure over whose multitude of sins the false charity of society is so often called to throw its mantle. In music, as in every other form of expressive art, no culture is greatly to be preferred to that which entails error and imperfection.

*False Models.*—The evils of defective cultivation are not less conspicuous when the pupil possesses both taste and diligence and good ability, but is misled in style, by the influence of a false model in instruction. Of late years, the facility of obtaining instruction of the best order, is greatly increased. But a fatal error is still quite current among parents, that elementary lessons do not require a high standard of perfection in the teacher, and that therefore the rudiments of music may be acquired under any supervision. In this way, vast numbers of pupils are rendered imperfect performers, for life, by wrong habits acquired in the earliest stages of instruction and practice,—habits which no subsequent reformatory training is capable of correcting.

#### MEANS OF CORRECTING PREVALENT ERRORS IN THE CULTIVATION OF THE EXPRESSIVE FACULTIES.

*Remedial Effects of Good Instruction.*—The remedy for existing evils in this as in other departments of education, lies partly, it must be acknowledged, with parents and the official guardians of public instruction; and some of the evils adverted to are confessedly beyond the sphere of the teacher's action. Still, in the actual business of teaching, even under all the impediments arising from false views of education and false plans of established procedure in instruction, much may be effected in the way of beneficial reformation, by intelligent and judicious measures on the part of the teacher, in his mode of conducting the daily lessons and exercises in those branches of instruction which are recognized and demanded by general opinion or by legislative enactment.

*Examples.*—Referring to the utterly deficient provision which the

general plan of current education makes for the cultivation and development of the *perceptive* faculties, an enterprising and vigilant teacher will find no difficulty in inducing his pupils to take a short walk with him, for a few minutes daily, at a suitable season of the year, with a view to a little familiar conversation with them about the form and character of a *plant*,—even though but a weed on the road-side. The conversation can be easily so managed as to lead to the attentive observation and close examination of every part of the plant, as designated, first, by the name in ordinary use, and, afterward, if convenient, by the more exact term of scientific nomenclature. A microscope, such as may be easily obtained for a few dollars, will be an infallible attraction to observation and inspection, in such excursions, and will prove a most efficient assistant teacher. Curiosity, and order, and inquiry, once excited in this way, will cause the young pupil to drink in, with delight, every item of information which falls from the lips of the teacher. Actual knowledge will thus be obtained, its pleasure consciously felt. Feeling and emotion, the main springs of expression, are now brought into play; imagination is awake and, under the guidance of intelligence, will recognize the traces of beauty and skill in the handiwork of Nature. To record, in writing, what the eye has seen, and the ear heard, and the mind conceived during such a lesson, will be no hardship of Egyptian task-work, a pleasure and a privilege. Many a faithful teacher in our English States, has, in this way,—without waiting for an educational millennium, in which *botany*, *composition*, and *natural theology* shall all be introduced into our common schools, by legislative authority “taken the responsibility,” personally, and given an excellent elementary lesson in all three.

*First Lessons in Spelling and Reading.*—The unphilosophical arbitrary manner in which many branches of education are now taught, admits obviously of a remedy at the teacher's will. There is no necessity of blindly following the practice of making the pupil commit to memory the names of all the letters of the alphabet before he is asked to join the sounds of two, so as to read the words *me*. There is abundance of rhyme, but very little reason, in making the child read a whole column of rarely occurring and even of unintelligible words, because they all happen to have the same or similar combination of letters; while his bright eyes would sparkle with intelligence and delight, to see, in the column, a single word whose familiar sound would soon render its face as familiar. To the young learner in the *primer*, the *spelling-book*, or the *school dictionary* the whole volume arranges itself in three classes of words: (1.)



which children of his age *understand and use*; (2,) those which they *understand*, when they hear them from the lips of older children or of adults, but which they do *not use* themselves; (3,) those which they *neither use nor understand*, but which with the aid of teacher and book, they are, in due season, to learn to understand and use aright. To follow the true order of teaching, in such circumstances, will cost the teacher no more trouble than the simple act of dotting with the pencil point, on the column of the given page of the pupil's book, those words which he finds adapted to the class-lesson of the hour, according to the intelligence and advancement of his scholars.

*Phonetic and Empirical Methods.*—Another expedient for the removal of impediments to successful elementary instruction, and one which the teacher can easily adopt, after having made the selection of words, as suggested above, would consist in the subdivision of each of the classes mentioned into analogous and anomalous sub-classes. All the words of the first class, for example,—those which are familiar to the child's ear and mind, by daily personal use,—are either regular or irregular, as to the combination of their letters in name and sound. The former of these sub-classes may be easily learned by the process of spelling them by the *sounds* of the letters which compose the words. Thus, in the word "page," the names of the first three letters very readily suggest their sounds, the combination of which constitutes the reading of the word. But not so with the word "gag," in which not one of all the letters suggests its own sound by the name given to it. By the principle of analogy, therefore, all words in which the name of the letter prompts the sound to the ear, may be advantageously taught by the *phonetic* method of merely articulating the sounds of the letters successively. The simplicity of this method enables children to make rapid progress in syllabication and in reading; and on the principle of allowing children the pleasure of helping themselves forward in an intelligent, conscious progress, this part of early training should never be neglected. But, even in those words which are familiar, in sense and in use, to the ears and minds of young children, there are very many in which there is little or no analogy between the names of the letters and the sounds which they receive in the pronunciation of a word or the enunciation of a syllable. The *orthography* of such words is no reliable guide to their *orthoëpy*. To name their component letters, therefore, can effect nothing further than to satisfy the teacher that the eye of the child has taken in every letter of the word before him. So far well. But, after all, the child's eye actually learns to take in such words by the letters in mass, and depends on an arbitrary effort

of memory, in pronouncing them. The sooner, therefore, that the little learner acquires the habit of reading such words at sight, without puzzling himself with the confusion arising from the discrepancy between the names and the sounds of their component letters, the more easy and the more sure will be his progress.

Each of these methods of teaching, in the elementary processes of spelling and reading, is good for its own purpose;—the phonetic for the analogies of orthoëpy, and the empirical, as it may be called, for its anomalies. But the error in teaching has been the indiscriminate and exclusive use of the one or the other; in consequence of which, the learner's progress has been rendered unnecessarily difficult and tedious. The inherent difficulties of a language so irregular as the English, render the closest attention, on the part of the teacher, to every means of overcoming them, doubly important in early training.

*Orthoëpy.*—In this branch of instruction everything depends on the living teacher,—on the correctness of his own exemplifications and the diligence of his endeavors. Indeed, there is, commonly, no reason, but neglect on the part of the instructor, why every child at school is not daily and thoroughly trained in the exact articulation of all the elementary sounds of the English language, and in the distinct enunciation of their principal radical combinations; nor any other reason why an obsolete, awkward, or inappropriate manner of pronouncing common words should be tolerated in any stage of education.

*"School Reading."*—A similar remark may be made, as regards the unmeaning and inexpressive style of reading, which is so current, not only in schools, but in higher seminaries and professional exercises. This fault, so commonly remarked, would not exist at any stage of education, or in any form of life, private or public, if our primary teachers were only attentive to accustom their pupils, in their very first exercises in the reading of sentences, to repeat them carefully, with a view to *the expression of sense* and not the mere pronouncing of words.

*Academic Elocution.*—This department of instruction is another in which the appropriate cultivation of the expressive faculties is not dependent on any change in the prescribed forms of education, so much as on the personal endeavors of the teacher. Our public speakers would not so generally utter their words in the formal tones of arbitrary pulpit style, were teachers duly attentive to point out to young *academic declaimers* the natural and appropriate vocal expression of feeling and sentiment; nor should we ever see those frenzied extravagances of passion and grotesque gesticulation, which so fre-

quently degrade the style of popular oratory, were teachers careful to cultivate, in academic declamation, purity of taste, and true force of effect, in the utterance of emotion.

*Grammatical Instruction.*—Even in the teaching of *grammar*, where less scope, perhaps, is given to the discretion of the teacher, it still depends on himself whether he shall follow the precise order of topics in an ill-arranged text-book, or use his own judgment, and present the subject to the minds of his pupils in the order which he feels that an intelligent and practical study of the subject, and a rational progress in its application, demand. Nothing lies more properly within the province of the teacher, than the duty of seeing to it that his pupils thoroughly understand every word of their various lessons, and thus reap the benefit of grammar, in the perfect interpretation and right use of the current words of their own communications by speech and writing, and in the perusal of the useful productions of the press. The faithful use of an etymological spelling-book, and of the dictionary, is all the cost of an aid so valuable to the teacher, and of an attainment so valuable to the pupil.

*Practical Rhetoric: School Exercises.*—Training in the appropriate use of the English language, ought not to be limited to the mere grammatical exercise of composing sentences. Even in our common schools, it should extend to that cultivation of taste by which neat as well as correct expression is acquired as a habit. To cultivate, in his pupils, the power of appreciating excellence in language, it is not necessary that the teacher should refer them to a systematic treatise on rhetoric. The school reading book usually furnishes abundance of the best materials for culture, in the presentation of the best modes of composition, as exemplified in the language of the pieces prescribed as reading lessons. The very best training for the acquisition of sound judgment and good taste in expression, may easily be had, if the teacher will but secure the intelligent and voluntary action of his pupils, in frequently *analysing* portions of some of the best of such passages, in occasionally *transcribing* them, and even *committing them to memory*. The exercise of careful transcription, is, perhaps, the best practical expedient that can be found for securing that literal and mechanical correctness in the details of the written forms of language, as to orthography and punctuation, which though, indeed, but minor matters, are yet so important, as indispensable to the decencies and proprieties of style. How ineffectual, for such purposes, the common routine of education proves, none can know but persons whose business brings them into extensive observation of such particulars.

*Rhetorical Exercises in higher Seminaries.*—To remedy the evils arising from the narrow and artificial character of our higher forms of rhetorical culture, we need a wider scope of discipline not only in rhetoric itself, but in logic, and in the principles of taste as embodied in the æsthetics of every form of expressive art. We need, yet more, however, a special course of practical training, for which the rhetorical teacher ought justly to be held responsible,—a course which should consist in the careful and close analysis of distinguished models of successful composition, so as to trace their order and method in the arrangement of thought, the artistic character of their æsthetic light and shade and coloring, the mechanism of their sentential structure, and the aptness of their verbal expression in detail. A long and rigorous course of disciplinary exercise in such forms, would not only furnish the pen of the ready writer for the varied demands of actual life, but the requisite preparatory training for the office of public speaking, in which a ready command of well digested thought and fit expression is so important to successful effort. The student would, by such training, effectually learn the value of clear consecutive thinking, of genuine taste, of manly plainness of diction and simplicity of expression: he would be thoroughly secured from falling into the “bald, disjointed chat,” the pompous harangue, the insane extravagance of emotion, and the fantastic verbiage, which are so often palmed on our popular assemblies, and lauded in our transient vehicles of criticism, as wonderful displays of original genius or oratorical power,

*The Study of Language.*—One very important aid to the generous culture and full development of the expressive faculties, is, as yet, very imperfectly furnished by our higher forms of liberal education. While the study of the ancient languages is formally acknowledged as one of the most efficacious methods of training the mind to a distinct perception of whatever constitutes power or perfection of expression; and while liberal provision of time and means is carefully made, with a view to secure the full benefit to be derived from the contemplation and analytical examination of these faultless models; too little attention is paid to the invaluable advantages which might be gained from a corresponding rigor of study and analysis, directed to the great authors who constitute the classics of modern literature, in foreign languages, and in our own.

The perfunctory perusal and verbal recitation of a few passages from such authors, which usually form a part of academic exercises, in this department of education, can never be seriously proposed as effecting the purposes of critical appreciation and thorough discipline.

In our highest seminaries, little is attempted beyond the processes of grammatical analysis and interpretation, in a course of literal and mechanical routine, even with regard to the ancient classics; a mere modicum of the same species of attention is usually given to the very noblest writers of Germany, France or Italy. The Spanish and the Portuguese languages are given up, for the most part, to those persons who happen to have occasion for the use of them, as a convenience in mercantile operations. The languages of the North of Europe, whose ancestral affinities with the English render them so richly instructive, as regards the full and true understanding and expert use of the most significant and expressive part of our own native language;—these, as yet, are left to an adventurous few, comparatively,—the solitary explorers and pioneers in the study of modern literature.

America, in its peculiar national position, which brings to its open homes men of all countries and of every tongue, possesses unequalled facilities for the extensive acquisition of all the benefits resulting from the study of language in its various forms; and a wide range of advantages, in this relation of culture, should be justly held as the birthright of our children, and as the characteristic distinction of our educated youth and mature scholars. Not that we would have American teachers pursue the course, which is unfortunately yet too common, of giving a superficial attention, for a few months, or a few weeks, perhaps, to one or more of the languages of modern Europe, and then attempting the task of teaching them. But, generally speaking, American teachers who wish to enjoy the advantage of teaching more intelligently and effectually their native language, in consequence of the opportunity of better understanding its character, by their ability to compare it with others,—an advantage beyond price;—most, if not all, of such teachers have easy resort to a living instructor in whatever language they desire to study, and may, in due time, become possessed in this way, of a vast amount of intellectual wealth, the benefit of which is sure to be felt, not only in their own mental action, but in the attainments of their pupils.



Fig. 1.—NEW YORK INSTITUTION FOR THE DEAF AND DUMB.

#### IV. NEW YORK INSTITUTION FOR THE DEAF AND DUMB.

---

THE New York Institution for the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb is the second American Institution of its kind in point of date. The American Asylum at Hartford preceded it about a year; and of perhaps two hundred schools for this class of learners in Europe, not more than about twenty-five now existing can claim an earlier origin.

There were two different attempts made in New York to instruct the unfortunate deaf and dumb, several years before the present Institution was founded. The Rev. John Stanford, a man whose memory is still cherished as a bright example of piety and of zealous labor in behalf of the unfortunate, finding in the alms-house, of which he was chaplain, several children whose ears were closed to the ordinary means of religious teaching, made an effort to impart some instruction to these heathen in a Christian land. He provided them with slates, and taught them to write the names of some familiar objects; but, for any further progress, peculiar processes of instruction were necessary, of which he had no knowledge; and his other duties did not permit such close study and attention as would have been requisite to invent them. He consequently found himself compelled to wait a more favorable period for the realization of his wishes. He was subsequently one of the founders of the Institution, and for several years a member of its Board of Directors.

The success of European teachers of the deaf and dumb was then very little known in America. Even in those countries where the art had been practiced longest, the deaf-mutes who were educated were but rare exceptions to the general lot; and in the popular estimation, the instruction of the deaf and dumb was still unintelligible and mysterious in its processes, and miraculous in its results, which, indeed, were often magnified beyond the limits of probability or truth. Still it was generally known to men of scientific research, that science and benevolence had triumphed over the difficulty held insuperable by the wisest of the ancients—that of enlightening the darkened mind of the deaf-mute; and with the names of De l' Epée and Sicard,—of Braidwood and Watson, there had probably come over the Atlantic some rumors of the different systems adopted by the French and English teachers respectively. "An Essay on Teaching the Deaf or Surd, and consequently Dumb, to Speak," appeared in the Transac-



tions of the American Philosophical Society, as early as 1793 some twenty years before that time, deaf-mute children of wealthy families had been sent from America to Great Britain to be educated. One of these was from New York, the son of a gentleman named Green; who, as early as 1780, placed the boy under the care of Thomas Braidwood, whose school near Edinburgh attracted so much attention in its day; Dr. Samuel Johnson being one of those who have left us favorable notices of it. A letter written by Mr. Green, (who was probably the author of the curious old book on deaf-mute instruction entitled *Vox Oculis Subjecta*,) giving an enthusiastic account of his progress, was preserved in a medical journal, and had long afterwards an influence on the foundation of the New York Institution. At the same time, as for several years before, three deaf-mutes of the name of Bolling, belonging to the Virginia family of that name that claimed descent from Pocahontas, were also under the care of Braidwood, and are said to have been remarkably well educated.

In the beginning of 1812, John Braidwood, a grandson of Thomas Braidwood, came to America, with the design of setting up a school for deaf-mutes on a magnificent scale. Col. William Bolling, brother of the three deaf-mutes just mentioned, having himself been afflicted with the same privation, (no uncommon instance of collateral transmission of deaf-dumbness in families,) invited Thomas Braidwood to his house, and furnished him with funds to set on foot an establishment for the board and instruction of deaf-mutes, proposed to be located in Baltimore. Possessed of talents and skill as a teacher, Braidwood was totally deficient in steadiness and principle. He squandered in dissipation and debauchery the funds entrusted to him; was three times relieved by Col. Bolling; served for a few months as a private teacher in that gentleman's family; was twice enabled by him to set up a private school in Virginia, in each case beginning well, and relapsing into dissipation in a few months; and finally died a victim to the bottle. In the course of these melancholy eccentricities, he found his way to New York, where he collected a few deaf-mutes to form a school in that city, which, however, was soon broken up, like those in Virginia, by his own misconduct. This undertaking in New York attracted the attention, a

Thus it happened that there were in New York, men of science, benevolence, and social influence, who had become interested in the subject of deaf-mute instruction at a time when there was as yet no established school for this afflicted class of our fellow men in America. The soil seems to have been made ready for the seed, and the seed was sown by a letter received in the latter part of the year 1816, from Mr. Gard, a distinguished deaf-mute from Bordeaux,—who, moved, it is presumed, by reports of the flattering reception given to his personal friend and worthy compeer, Laurent Clerc, (then lately arrived in America,) offered himself also, possessed as well as Clerc of many years experience, as pupil and teacher, in one of the best schools for deaf-mutes then existing, to cross the Atlantic for the benefit of the long neglected deaf and dumb of the New World. It is a matter of regret that, from circumstances not now fully known, the services of Mr. Gard were not secured.\* The seed sown by his letter, however, took root. Dr. Samuel L. Mitchell,† a man eminent in his day for learning, philanthropy, and social influence, took up the subject; and in conjunction with the two gentlemen already named, and other benevolent citizens of New York,‡ organized a society, at the head of whose list of officers stood the illustrious name of De Witt Clinton, and obtained from the Legislature an act of incorporation, bearing date April 15, 1817, which, by an interesting coincidence, was the same day that the Asylum at Hartford was opened.

The school was not opened till more than a year after the act of incorporation was obtained; a delay ascribed partly to the want of teachers, and partly to an opinion that had become prevalent, that the Asylum at Hartford, just opened with the great advantage of well qualified and experienced teachers, would suffice for all the deaf and dumb of the United States who were likely to become candidates for the novel benefits of education. This idea, preposterous as it now appears, was then, in the total absence of statistics, very natural, and led to one of the earliest recorded attempts to ascertain the number of deaf-mutes in any considerable population. There were found,

---

\* This distinguished pupil of the Abbé St. Sernin, esteemed by those qualified to judge, as being in solid, if not in shining qualities, superior to Massieu, the renowned pupil of Sicard, was for many years an able teacher in the Deaf and Dumb Institution of Bordeaux. He died about the year 1838.

† Dr. Mitchell, (several years a Member of Congress,) was from 1819 to 1829, the President of the Institution. He died in 1831.

‡ Among these founders and early friends of the Institution, very few of whom now survive, the following merit especial mention: John Slidell, Esq., Gen. Jonas Mapes, Silvanus Miller, Peter Sharpe, and especially James Milnor, D. D., Vice President of the Institution from 1820 to 1829, and President from 1829 to his death in 1845. Of other later benefactors of the Institution, who have gone to their final reward, we owe especial mention to the names of Robert C. Cornell, John R. Willis, William L. Stone, and Robert D. Weeks.

though the census was not complete, sixty-six deaf-mutes actually residing in the city of New York, which then contained about 110,000 inhabitants,—a proportion far surpassing expectation, but not varying greatly from the average of many enumerations since made in Europe and America. Most of these unfortunate deaf-mutes belonged to families in very moderate and even indigent circumstances; and as private charity was the main reliance in prospect for assisting them to obtain an education, legislative provision to that end being then a thing unprecedented, and hardly counted on,—it was manifestly impracticable to send any considerable number of them to a boarding school at a distance. The most obvious means of securing the instruction of the large number of deaf-mute children in the city, was to open a day school, which they could attend at the expense of tuition only, and receive instruction in the same classes with such pupils from a distance as should be able to pay their board, or for paying whose board means could be provided by private or public benevolence. On this plan, of which the only recommendation was economy, while the disadvantages were many, the school was actually kept for the first eleven years.

Application was made to some of those schools in Great Britain, which were then endeavoring to maintain a monopoly of the method and processes of Braidwood, for a teacher already qualified to teach articulation, as well as other branches of knowledge; but failed, as in the case of Mr. Gallaudet, who applied to the same schools in person for instruction in their methods, on account of the onerous terms demanded. Finally, in the spring of 1818, the Rev. Abraham O. Stansbury, who had been during its first year of operation, the "Superintendent," (*i. e.* steward,) of the Asylum at Hartford, and had thus acquired some skill in the colloquial language of the deaf and dumb, was appointed the first teacher of the New York Institution, and the school was opened with a class of four pupils, May 12, 1818. The means for its support were at first subscriptions and donations, with payments from such parents as were able. The city of New York soon assumed the patronage of ten day scholars residing in the city; and when the success of the school became sufficiently decisive, and the number of applicants from the interior of the State painfully numerous, the Legislature of New York made provision for indigent boarding pupils, restricted at first, but increased from time to time. The first grants from the State were donations of money merely; but in 1821, permanent and specific provision was made for thirty-two State pupils, whose term of instruction was, according to the very moderate notions of that day, limited to three years each.

We have the pleasure of adding that this term was, as early as 1825, extended to four years, and in 1830, to five. The subsequent gratifying extensions will be noted in the course of this sketch.

Mr. Stansbury had not been a teacher at Hartford, and his ideas on the method of instruction were rather crude and vague. The founders of the Hartford school, after careful examination of the subject, had followed Sicard's example, in rejecting from their course the attempt to teach articulation, as demanding an expenditure of time and labor much out of proportion with the results. Naturally, however, the teaching of the dumb to speak, and of the deaf to read on the lips, to those to whom the instruction of the deaf and dumb is an entire novelty, is the most attractive, and seems the most valuable of their possible acquirements. The world, on seeing a deaf-mute who has learned to utter certain imitations of words, takes it for granted that he has been fully restored to all the priceless benefits of speech. Experience soon dissipates this delusion, by showing that very few deaf-mutes can be taught to speak intelligibly, or to read fluently on the lips beyond a few familiar and oft-repeated phrases, and that this accomplishment, such as it is, is of very little benefit to their intelligence. At New York, however, experience was as yet wanting, and the first teachers, themselves groping almost in the dark, endeavored, by the aid of Dr. Watson's work on deaf-mute instruction, to teach articulation, at least to such of their pupils as retained a remnant of speech or of hearing. The results attained, as might be expected, were so unsatisfactory that the attempt was soon abandoned. Mr. Horace Loofborrow, who in 1821 succeeded Mr. Stansbury as principal teacher, and held this important office for ten years, endeavored to reduce to practice the directions given in the works of Sicard, with such modifications as his own experience and ingenuity suggested. He was a man of intelligence and energy, and had he been better seconded in the department of instruction, his success, in many instances very creditable, would have been greater and more uniform. But with the exception of one worthy lady teacher, and of a young gentleman who continued but a year or two, his assistants were half educated deaf-mutes; and cases often occurred in which a pupil of fair capacity confined to the task of mechanically repeating words for methodical signs, and these signs again for words, attaching as little meaning to the one as to the other, made no sensible progress in acquiring the use of language during many months.

Methodical signs were also used at Hartford, but in that school they were employed in a manner to carry with them some of the life and significance of colloquial signs. The signs used at New York

were often clumsy and arbitrary as compared with those Mr. Clerc brought from the school of Sicard and Bebian; nor was this the only disadvantage. The large number of pupils who attended irregularly, as day scholars, not only made unsatisfactory progress themselves, but hindered the progress of their classes. Owing to the deficiency of well qualified teachers, there was less moral and religious control exercised over the pupils than was desirable; and for these and other reasons, the school began to suffer in public estimation in comparison with the neighboring ones at Hartford and Philadelphia.

This popular opinion affected even the Legislature of the State; and on the occasion, (in 1827,) of a grant to aid in the erection of permanent buildings, the condition was annexed, that the Institution should be subject to the official inspection of the State Superintendent of Common Schools, and that high officer was directed "to ascertain, by a comparison with other similar institutions, whether any improvements can be made." Mr. Azariah C. Flagg, the then able and efficient Superintendent, discharged the duty thus assigned to him, and the consequences of his examinations and recommendations were that, after a contest of two or three years between the party that supported the old teachers, and the party that desired to place the school on higher ground,—a change of men and measures was resolved on.

Meantime the Institution was removed, in the spring of 1829, to the new building erected on Fiftieth street, then quite out of town, on an eminence, surrounded by open fields and woods. Here, in February, 1831, Mr. Harvey P. Peet, the present incumbent, was installed as the executive head of the Institution, with the title of Principal, thus uniting the hitherto separate offices of Superintendent and principal teacher. This title of Principal was, in 1845, superseded by that of President of the Board of Directors, to which office Dr. Peet was elected as the successor of the Rev. James Milnor, D. D.

Of the special labors of Dr. Peet, to build up the Institution, and improve the condition of deaf-mutes in this country, we shall not in this paper\* say more than that during the twenty-six years past, he has faithfully devoted to the benefit of the Institution, and the cause of the deaf and dumb, his best talents and energies. He has had the support and counsel of an energetic, intelligent, and sagacious Board of Directors, most of whom have devoted much time, during many years, to the service of the Institution, without any

---

\* Mr. Peet was a native of Bethlem, Connecticut, a graduate of Yale College in the class of 1822, and for nine years previous to his appointment as Principal of the New York Institution, was an instructor in the American Asylum at Hartford, of which he was also steward. Mr. Peet received the honorary degree of LL. D., from the Regents of the University of the State of New York, in 1850. In a subsequent article, we shall give a more extended notice of Dr. Peet's career.

Other reward than the consciousness of well doing. He has also had the aid of a faithful and capable corps of teachers. One of his earliest assistants in the department of instruction was Mr. Leon Vaisse, then a young teacher of four years' experience, invited from Paris to impart a practical knowledge of the improvements made in the celebrated school of that city, since the death of Sicard. Mr. Vaisse, after four years of acceptable service at New York, returned to Paris, and is now the first Professor of that ancient school. Among the other teachers early associated with Mr. Peet, we may particularize Messrs. D. E. Bartlett and F. A. P. Barnard, the former of whom has now a Family School for young deaf-mute children at Poughkeepsie, and the latter is now the President of the University of Mississippi; George E. Day, now Professor in Lane Seminary, Ohio, and Josiah A. Carey, who, at the time of his early and lamented death, in 1852, was Superintendent of the Ohio Asylum for the Deaf and Dumb. But with all the aid which such directors and such teachers could give, to Dr. Peet must be assigned the main instrumentality of building up this Institution to its present degree of usefulness.

The limits of a paper like this will not admit of details of the subsequent history of the New York Institution. A few general results can only be given, to show in what degree, under Providence, the Institution has prospered; and how the cause of deaf-mute education has gradually acquired its present degree of public interest and favor.

Up to the removal to Fiftieth street, in 1829, the average number of pupils was little over fifty. The number when Dr. Peet took charge of the Institution, in 1831, was eighty-two, of whom fifty-six were beneficiaries of the State. As the Institution gained slowly but surely in the confidence of the public and of the Legislature, the number of State pupils was enlarged from time to time, till it reached one hundred and ninety-two,—the list, after each successive enlargement, becoming full in a year or two, with applicants left to wait; till finally in 1855, the limitation to the number of State pupils was properly and justly removed; and, instead of bestowing an education on certain selected deaf-mutes, and shutting the door on equally deserving applicants, who happened to be in excess of the limited number,—the Institution is now authorized, with the sanction in each case of the State Superintendent of Public Instruction, to receive as State pupils, all suitable applicants. Of this class of pupils there are now two hundred and thirty-four. While the number of pupils educated at the charge of the State has increased, there has been an equally large increase of other pupils. The State of New Jersey sends its deaf-mute pupils to New York or to Philadelphia, at the

No. 9.—[VOL. III., No. 2.]—23.

choice of the parents. In 1830, there were but two New Jersey pupils at the New York Institution,—the present number from that State is twenty-three. The number of private pay pupils has increased from seven in 1830, to thirty-four in 1856. The city of New York, which, as we have noticed, paid the tuition of ten day scholars during the first eleven years, has, ever since the Institution was removed to its site on Fiftieth street, in pursuance of an authority granted by law to the supervisors of the counties,—but seldom acted on by other counties than that of New York,—supported a number of boarding pupils equal to its number of members of Assembly. The present number is sixteen. To these should be added one or two supported by the Commissioners of Emigration, and several small children boarded and instructed by the Institution gratuitously, under peculiar circumstances, which required that they should be removed from situations of destitution, temptation, and danger, at an earlier age than that limited for the admission of State pupils. As the State of New York contains a population of three and a half millions, and all its deaf-mute children are collected, or sought to be collected, in one school,\* together with many attracted by the reputation of the Institution from abroad, it is to be expected that the New York school should be one of the very largest of its kind in the world. The present number of pupils is three hundred and fifteen. No other school for deaf-mutes on either side of the Atlantic,—the London Asylum excepted,—approaches the New York Institution in this respect. The Hartford Asylum, which stands next, receiving the deaf-mute children from all New England, has a little over two hundred pupils,† and the institutions of Paris and Groningen, (Holland,) each about one hundred and eighty. As it is shown by three national and several State enumerations, that the number of deaf-mutes in the State, though with a slightly fluctuating proportion, increases with the whole population of the State, the period seems not remote when the Institution will contain between four and five hundred pupils, for which number the dimensions of the new buildings, to be presently spoken of, have been planned. Such are the facilities of access by railroad and steamboat to the city of New York, from all parts of the State, and such the liberality of the railroad and steamboat compa-

---

\* From 1825 to 1836, there was a Central Asylum for the Deaf and Dumb at Canajoharie, united in the latter year to the New York Institution, of which its last Principal, Mr. O. W. Morris, is still a teacher.

† The number 240, given in the last report of the Hartford Asylum, is made up by including both the class that left and the class that entered during the year, both of which were not in school at the same time. A similar mode of computation gives for the New York Institution 346 pupils in school within the year (1856) covered by the last Annual Report.



nies, in passing the unfortunate deaf and dumb to and from school, either free, or at reduced rates of fare, that there exists no motive for dividing the patronage of the State between two or more schools, on account of the distance part of the pupils have to travel. And every other consideration is in favor of the State's maintaining one large, efficient, well organized school, rather than two or three small and inferior ones.

The increase in the term of instruction shows a great advance in correct public sentiment, since the law of 1821 allowed but three years to each State pupil. We have not noted that this period was extended in 1825 to four years, and in 1830 to five. Two years more were added to the term in 1838, for such pupils, usually about one-half of the whole, as desired to continue, and gave promise of profiting by the extension. Finally, in 1853, the Legislature gave its sanction to the High Class, established the year before, by authorizing the continuance of those State pupils selected as suitable members of such a class, for three years instruction in the higher branches of education after the completion of the regular term. A similar extension of the regular term, and the same privilege for the more deserving, of remaining an additional term as members of the High Class, has also been granted to its State pupils by the State of New Jersey.\*

Another fact to be noted in a history of the New York Institution, is the publication of elementary books for the use of the deaf and dumb. There was, for many years, a total want of such works in the American schools for deaf-mutes. Two or three volumes of exercises had been, at an early day, committed to the press; but these were hardly satisfactory even to their authors; and when the first small edition of each was worn out, they were laid aside, if not before. The First Part, with the title of "A Vocabulary and Elementary Exercises for the Deaf and Dumb," published in 1844, was welcomed with satisfaction and even with enthusiasm by American and some English teachers of the deaf and dumb. It has since been carefully revised, and three or four editions have been exhausted. In the greater number of American schools for the deaf and dumb, it is put as the regular text-book, into the hands of each pupil in the new classes. The one or two schools where it is not thus used are those in which the teacher or the Superintendent has a preference for manuscript lessons of his own compilation.

This *First Part*, as the title now reads, has since been followed up with a *Second* and *Third Part* of a "*Course of Instruction for the*

---

\* Massachusetts has also authorized a like act of justice as much as of liberality, toward such of her State pupils as may be found qualified to join the High Class at Hartford.

*Deaf and Dumb*," and with a small volume of *Scripture Lessons*, all of which were prepared by the President, Dr. Peet, and were very favorably received, and are in constant demand, as text-books, in most of the American schools for deaf-mutes.

It was early considered an important part of a system of education for the deaf and dumb, to give instruction out of school hours in some eligible trade. There is, we believe, hardly any school of this class, either in America, or in France, Belgium and Southern Europe, where such mechanical instruction as the means and conveniences of the establishment will admit, is not given. In the British and German schools, the pupils are dismissed at an age early enough to begin a regular apprenticeship to some trade; but this, in the view of American teachers and educators, necessitates the beginning at too early an age for the pupil to derive the greatest benefit from the term allowed him. We prefer to begin not earlier than the age of twelve; for the difficult study of written language,—difficult beyond expression for those who have no knowledge of *audible* language, and can only regard words as arbitrary characters, like the Chinese, only much more complicated,—demands, if we would attain the best results, some maturity of mind, and greater power of attention and continuous application, than young children usually possess. Accordingly, though under peculiar circumstances, children are sometimes admitted at an earlier age, twelve years is the age prescribed by law for the admission of State pupils in the New York Institution; and many of the pupils are, from the ignorance of their friends, or their unwillingness to send them to a distance, kept from school to a considerably later age. It is evident that pupils admitted at twelve or thirteen, and continuing from five to eight or ten years, will leave at an age past that which is the most favorable for learning a trade; and also, which is worse, with long established habits of manual idleness.

The number of trades that can be taught in connection with such an Institution, is of course very limited. The selection made, usually embraces *first*, the making of clothes, shoes, and furniture, enabling the institution to be the largest customer of its own shops,—and *second*, such trades as from local circumstances, can be most remuneratively carried on, and which promise the best assurance of future support to the pupils. As most of the pupils, when they leave school, return to their families in the country, or in distant towns and villages, evidently the greater number should learn trades at which they can readily obtain employment in all parts of the country. For this reason, *shoe-making*, *tailoring*, *cabinet-making*, and *horticulture* are trades taught at the New York Institution. *Book-binding* is added

as being well adapted to deaf-mutes, and in its location, near a city where so much publishing is done, promising steady and lucrative employment. It is designed to add printing, and perhaps engraving, to the list, as soon as the Institution, established in its new locality, shall have the requisite room and means. All of the pupils now receive regular instruction in linear drawing, and some have taken lessons in wood engraving.

The building on Fiftieth street was erected in the years 1827 to 1829. As the number of pupils increased, it was three times enlarged, and it was in contemplation to enlarge it a fourth time. Meantime, the rapid growth of the great city was threatening to hem in the Institution with a dense population, for whose convenience streets were opened through its grounds; and the space available for fresh air and exercise became very seriously restricted. The same causes that made a continuance in the old site undesirable, enabled the Directors to sell their grounds for building lots at a great advance on their first cost. A new site, every way highly eligible, including thirty-seven acres, on the historical locality known as Washington Heights, overlooking the broad panorama of the Hudson, about nine miles from the New York City Hall, to which ready access is had by the Hudson River railroad, was purchased for less than half the sum realized from the sale of the grounds, far less eligible, and hardly one-fourth as large, on Fiftieth street.

The plans for the new buildings were the subject of long and anxious deliberation. The projectors aimed to combine every advantage of a pleasant site, a convenient arrangement, the separation of the sexes, except when assembled for meals, religious worship, and instruction, economy of light and fuel, thorough ventilation, and an external appearance not unworthy in architectural effect of the great city and State of New York. There is no similar institution in America, and so far as inquiry and very extensive personal examination enables us to judge, none even in Europe, the plan of which is satisfactory, and such as its managers would prefer, if they had to build over again. All institutions for the deaf and dumb, we believe, indeed most institutions for the education of youth of both sexes, approaching the size of the New York Institution, have grown up by successive additions, in which both internal convenience and architectural appearance have been at the mercy of circumstances. The conductors of the New York Institution thus found themselves obliged to have an original plan for their new buildings, and used their best efforts,—they have the gratification of believing with success,—to have such a one as other similar institutions might profitably study and follow.

The whole number who have been admitted as pupils, from May, 1818, to January 1st, 1857, is 1,237, of whom 315 remain under instruction. The number of deaths of pupils occurring in the Institution in these thirty-eight years, is thirty-five. The rate of mortality among the pupils of the Institution during twelve years, from December, 1843, to December, 1855, including those who died at home during the term of instruction, is one death to 122 survivors; viz.: one in 160 of the males, and one in 94 of the females. But counting only those who died in the institution, the rate of mortality is only one in 217.

In a sketch like this, only a very brief account can be given of the system of instruction; and for this we are indebted to a communication from Dr. Peet. It should be understood that, though some of our pupils, having learned to read before becoming deaf, bring with them more or less knowledge of language, yet these are not properly deaf-mutes. Technically, they are called *semi-mutes*, and possess the great advantage that to them words are what they are to other men, *sounds*, heard or recollected, of which written words are mere representatives. Deaf-mutes, properly so-called, are those whose education was once held impossible, and is still, with all the lights of science and experience, sufficiently difficult. The misfortune that cut them off in childhood from the acquisition of speech, not only deprived them of all that mass of traditional knowledge, of which speech is the treasury and the vehicle; but, which is worse, deprived their mental and moral faculties of a fair chance for exercise and development, and caused them to grow up with habits of thought different from those of other men. When they come to school, they have usually a development of ideas; but far inferior to,—and quite different from that of speaking children of the same age and native capacity. The mind of an uneducated deaf-mute has been compared to a *camera obscura*, through which pass, not the general and abstract propositions, the play upon words, the rhythm and roll of sounds that usually ring in the memory of a hearing person;—but mental images of objects, qualities and actions. Along with these, it is true, are present certain intellectual perceptions, such as those of approbation and disapprobation, comparison, number, cause and effect, time, etc; and these may be present as dim perceptions, even when the deaf-mute possesses, as yet, no signs to express them. Such intellectual perceptions, however, become more distinct, when they are connected with certain signs. In other words, a deaf-mute acquires the ability to think and reason, and hence attains a greater strength of under-

standing, and a higher development of faculties, in proportion to the cultivation of his dialect of signs.

For, to a deaf-mute, the language of signs or *gestures*, (to use a less ambiguous term,) is the only language that can become, in the full sense of the word, *vernacular*, that is to say, a language which the child learns spontaneously, because it is used by those around him, to which his thoughts will cling by natural affinity, and which will promote the most rapid development of his faculties. Words can never be to a deaf-mute what words are to us,—*sounds*, ringing in the innermost temple of the ear, and awakening sympathetic chords through brain and nerve. The mere fact of cognate or early deafness, cuts them irrevocably off from all this interior life of words uttered by the living voice, and leaves words to them, mere arbitrary assemblages of characters, not only cold and dead, as compared with the warmth and life of speech or of gestures; but almost insufferably tedious as instruments of social communication to those accustomed to the fluent ease of speech, or the still greater rapidity of gestures. Hence it is that our pupils, and indeed, deaf-mutes, however instructed, the world over, prefer their own language of gestures, often graphic as a painting, rapid as thought, and illumined by the speaking face and eye, to a cold and tedious conversation in words. Nor will it much, if any, mend the matter, if they have, with incredible labor, acquired the power of reading words in the fugitive and indistinct motions of the lips, instead of the more legible characters of writing or the manual alphabet.

The dialect of gestures which each deaf-mute possesses when he first comes to school, is usually crude and scanty. But in a very brief time after their arrival, they learn by mere usage, the expanded and improved dialect which they find in use among the older pupils. In thus learning a superior mode of communication, their ideas acquire a considerable development, and also become more precise. Of this expanded and improved dialect, the teacher avails himself to impart new ideas; to define words; to explain the forms of language; to acquire moral control over his pupils; and to communicate,—which is done within the first few weeks,—the simple rudiments of religious truth. There seems, however, to be a great mistake abroad, in supposing the language of signs to be one of the *ends* of instruction. It is simply a *means*. If we had to *teach* this language to deaf-mute pupils, at least with even a small proportion of the labor which is required in teaching a language of alphabetic words, we should not think the advantages to be derived from it would pay for the added labor of teaching two languages instead of one. It is because deaf-

deaf-mutes learn this language spontaneously, and use it among themselves, in preference to words, that we avail ourselves of it to lighten and shorten the labor of defining words and explaining their laws of construction.

We do not, as De l' Epée did, and some few teachers at the present day still do, seek to make our pupils associate every word with a sign, either taken from their colloquial dialect, or specially devised to represent that word, technically called methodical signs. The idea that such signs are *necessary* to stand between written words and ideas, (as spoken words do for those who hear,) that is, that a deaf-mute, seeing a written word, must actually or mentally substitute a sign for it, before he can attach any meaning to it,—now finds very few advocates. The better and more prevalent opinion is, that the deaf-mute pupil should be led to attach his ideas *directly* to words, either under their written form, or, which is probably easier for him, under the form of the manual alphabet, in which words are spelled out by positions of the fingers corresponding to each letter. Had we a *syllabic* alphabet, sufficiently simple and easy of acquisition for general use, it would greatly facilitate the learning, retention, and rapid repetition of words by deaf-mutes, and thus be of great advantage in their instruction. Such alphabets have been proposed,—and perhaps one may hereafter be found that will commend itself to general use.

The deaf-mute, as we have already noted, thinks, at least when he first comes to school, mainly in mental images of objects, clothed with their proper qualities, and moving in their appropriate attitudes and actions. Hence when he attempts to attach his ideas to words, it is these mental images that have to be attached to words. As he thinks in a series of mental pictures, we choose for his first lessons, words and phrases adapted to describe such pictures, whether of single objects or groups; e. g., *a horse; a white horse; two white horses; a white horse running; a boy riding a horse; a little boy riding a white horse;* and so of other objects, qualities and actions.\*

When a certain number of such words and phrases have become familiar, each recalling a mental image of an object, or group of objects, we introduce the idea of *assertion* and *time*, by which the verb is produced. This part of speech we present first in the two forms, explaining each other by contrast, of the habitual present,—*a boy plays often;* and the *actual present*,—*that boy is playing now.* The

---

\*The first lesson in language will be best given to a deaf-mute by showing him the name of some present object, and then appealing to some person who can read, who on seeing the word, immediately points to the object.

Idea of assertion, which is the essence of the verb, is brought out more prominently by contrasting the affirmative and the negative ;—*That boy is playing; that girl is not playing.* There is not, in the colloquial language of signs, any thing corresponding to *tense*,—the time of an action or event being stated, once for all, the only distinctions afterward made, are to explain the order and sequence of the successive actions or events. Hence it is that the tenses and other grammatical forms, like them having nothing corresponding in the pupil's colloquial language of signs, e. g., the *pronouns*, are a difficult study for deaf-mutes, and occupy a large part of the teacher's attention during several years of his course. It is held important that they should have, at the outset, clear ideas of the nature and use of each tense taught them. This can only be secured by teaching the principal tenses in such a way that they shall mutually limit and shed light on each other. For instance, either by an actual example, or by a picture, the pupil's attention is directed to two girls carrying baskets of strawberries, and he is made to write, "Those two girls *have picked, are carrying, and will sell* strawberries." In this way, he comes to attach correct notions to the mere forms of language indicating *tense*, as also to those forms denoting *interrogation, case, comparison*, and other grammatical relations.

It would require far more space than can be afforded in such an article, to follow out this exposition in subsequent parts of the course. We content ourselves with saying that our golden rule is to *divide difficulties*; to present but one difficulty at a time, and endeavor so to arrange our lessons that this mastered shall serve as a stepping stone to the next. Thus we endeavor to make the difficult path our pupils have to scale, as smooth and gradually ascending as possible. On such a plan, even the difficulties presented by *abstract nouns* are readily mastered, when the pupil reaches the proper period for introducing them.

The degree of our success is very various, according to the native capacity of our pupils, and the time they are permitted to remain under instruction. While there are very few, and those marked by natural imbecility, who do not acquire as great an amount of positive knowledge, as the average of speaking men, information that will be useful to them, and promote their happiness through life ;—there are quite a number who never become able to read books, or to converse in writing, except in an imperfect and broken dialect, or in a mixed dialect of words and gestures. On the other hand, there are many whose attainments in every branch of a good English education, not less than their perfect command of written language, and the readi-



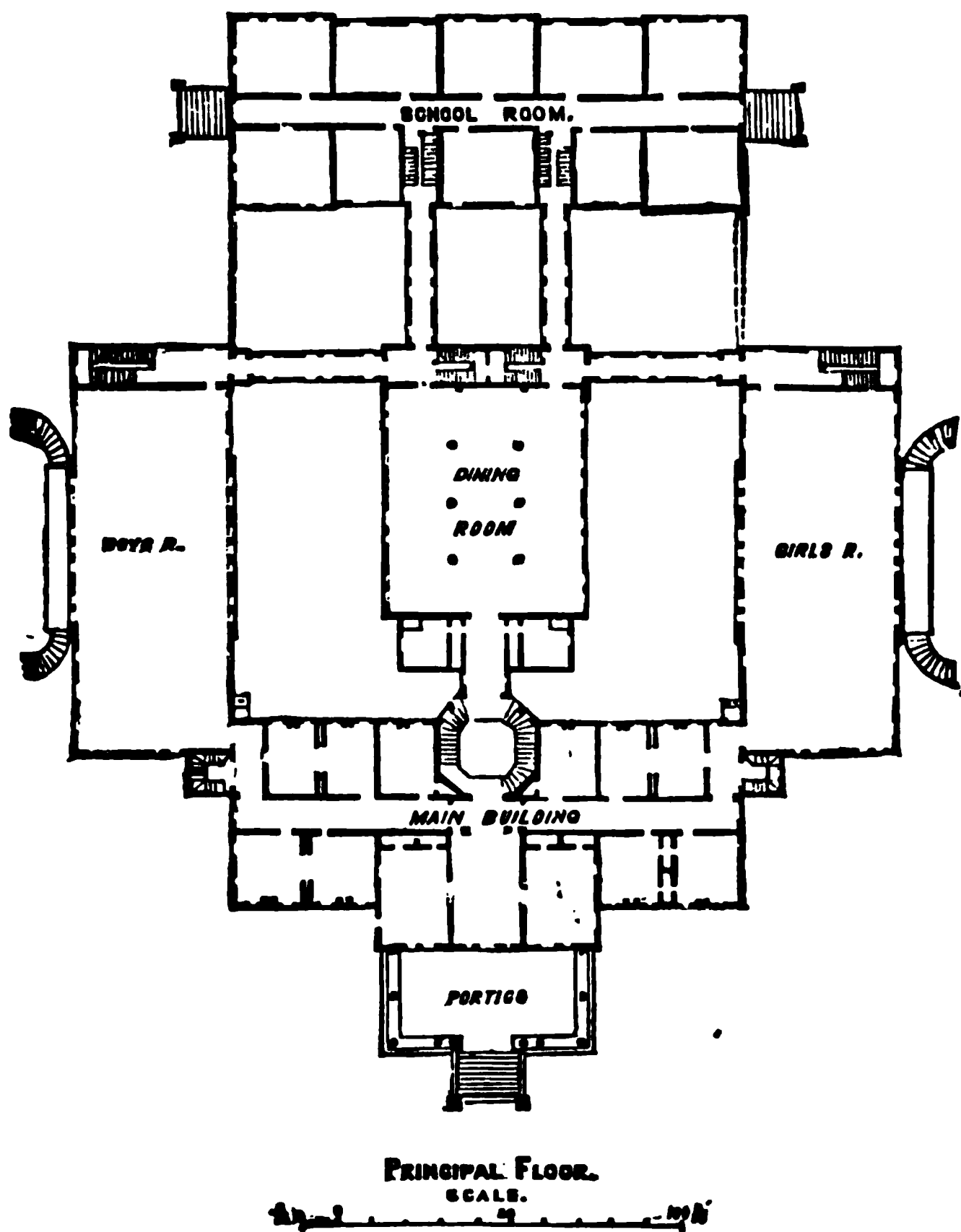
ness, appropriateness, and justness of the sentiments they express, have repeatedly called forth the admiration of the most intellectual and fastidious examiners and visitors. The High Class in our Institution, and especially that portion of it which graduated a year ago last July, furnish striking examples of this degree of intellectual cultivation.

The establishment of the High Class is a matter of congratulation for all friends of the deaf and dumb. Formerly, our pupils, however gifted, and however ardent in the pursuit of learning and science, were compelled to leave school just when they had reached that point at which their future progress would have been easy and rapid. Now we have the pleasure of opening to the more gifted and persevering, those higher walks of knowledge hitherto seen only in the unattainable distance. The superior cultivation of the High Class moreover reacts in the classes below, producing a higher intellectual tone, a wider range of thought, and more earnest strivings after scholastic excellence in the younger classes. This class, moreover, promises to be valuable as a nursery of teachers. Of the class that graduated in the summer of 1855, more than one half have already obtained permanent and honorable employments, as teachers of their companions in misfortune, either in our own, or in other institutions. And the frequent applications to the New York Institution, to furnish teachers, as well as books, school apparatus, and plans of buildings, to the new schools for the deaf and dumb, almost annually springing up in the south and southwest, indicates that there will continue to be openings for permanent, honorable, and remunerative employment, as teachers of their deaf and dumb brethren, for those graduates of our High Class who may evince the moral and intellectual qualities necessary for a good teacher.

## PLANS AND DESCRIPTIONS OF THE NEW YORK INSTITUTION FOR THE DEAF AND DUMB.

The grounds belonging to the Institution comprise thirty-seven and a half acres, bounded by the Hudson River and the Kingsbridge road, at the intersection of the tenth avenue, about nine miles from the city hall, and within a half mile of old Fort Washington. The buildings occupy a portion of the lawn, at an elevation of 127 feet above the river—fronting westward, and commanding an extensive and ever shifting panorama of the water above and below, and extending, from some points of observation, from the highlands to the narrows.

The buildings—including the front, wings, and school-house in the rear, form a quadrangle of two hundred and forty feet front, and more than three hundred feet in depth. Within the quadrangle is a fifth or central building. The shops and other out buildings will occupy convenient locations to the north and east of the boys' wing and school-house. The four exterior buildings have each four stories, including the basement,—the central building only three,—the chapel which occupies its upper part having an elevation equal to both the upper stories.



The front building is one hundred and fifty feet long, by fifty-five deep,—besides a projection of twelve feet in the centre, from which the portico, (fifty-seven feet wide,) ornamented with elliptical arches, projects twenty-nine feet more. Entering by this portico, there is an entrance hall of twenty feet wide

and forty deep, terminating on the great staircase, and crossed at that end by a corridor of ten feet wide, which runs the whole length of the building, one hundred and fifty feet. There are corresponding corridors in each of the stories above, leaving the rooms on each side twenty feet deep, from the doors upon the corridors, to the front or rear windows. From each extremity of the corridors, as seen in the plan, halls extend to the connections with the wings, and the private staircases in the towers.

On one side of the entrance hall are a reception room for visitors, and a director's room. On the same floor are rooms for the superintendent and for the matron and steward. The second story contains rooms for the teachers, part of whom will lodge and board in the institution, for such visitors as may have, (as parents of pupils, for instance,) claims to special attention, and for other purposes. In the upper story are dormitories for the pupils, those connected with the male and female departments respectively, being separated at the centre by an intervening hall, which affords a passage to the lantern, or observatory, at the top of the stair-dome. The basement of this building contains rooms for domestics, store-rooms, etc.

Each of the wings is one hundred and twenty feet by forty-six. Entering one of them through the passage or hall leading from the central corridor, you find on the first floor the saloon or sitting room for the pupils, one hundred and six feet by forty-two in clear interior space, and sixteen feet to the ceiling. In these spacious and lofty rooms, well warmed by heated air in winter, and well ventilated at all times, each pupil has a seat or desk for reading or study, or composition, in the evening, and at such other fragments of time as reading and study may be in order. The evening light here, as in the other rooms, is furnished by gas made on the premises, as the institution is remote from any established circuit of gas pipes.

In the basements of the wings are wash and bathing rooms, and in the girls' wing, a laundry; in the second story, separate dormitories, hospitals, ward-robcs, &c.; and in the upper story of each an open dormitory, of size corresponding to the sitting room below, and of equal height. Instead of the pillars which, in an ordinary building, would be required to support the floors in rooms of such dimensions, the floor of the dormitory is braced up by trusses, and supports the floor below it by iron rods. By this expedient, the four great rooms, the saloons below, and the dormitories above, are left entirely clear of pillars or supporting rods. Each of these four rooms will have a clear content of over seventy thousand cubic feet, which with the provision for the renewal of the air by ventilation, and the height of the ceiling, will secure to each pupil abundant breathing space and pure air. The private staircases in the towers, afford to the steward and matron access to the apartments of the pupils under their respective care. The main staircases to the dormitories are at the eastern end of each wing, and to give every guarantee of safety in case of fire, are massively constructed of stone.

The school-house in the rear, one hundred and fifty feet by fifty-five, contains class, lecture, library and cabinet rooms, and in its upper story a hall of design, lighted from above. Each class, (usually averaging twenty pupils,) will have a large, lofty, well lighted and well ventilated room, of an average size of twenty by twenty-eight feet. In the basement of this building, are the air chambers of the heating and ventilating apparatus to be presently described,—also vegetable cellars, store-rooms, wash-rooms, &c.

The central building contains on its first floor the dining-room, under which in the basement are the kitchens, and on its second floor the chapel, eighty by sixty feet, and over thirty feet high, with ten lofty windows of stained glass. It is also further lighted by a dome in the roof. At the east end, against the wall and under the skylight, is the platform, raised three feet above the floor, for the officiating teacher, while the pupils and spectators, if any, occupy seats rising successively one behind the other. As the worship in which the deaf and dumb can share must be addressed to the eye only, care is taken that every eye in the congregation can rest with ease on the platform, and that the light should be thrown that way. It will be seen by the plan that the pupils have access to the chapel by corridors from their respective sitting rooms, each department entering by its own door; and after the morning prayer and

explication by signs of a text of scripture, each department passes along another corridor to the school-house. At the close of school each day, the pupils re-assemble in the chapel, are dismissed by prayer, and return to their respective wings by the corridors. The same corridors also give access to the dining-room under the chapel. From the front building, the access to the chapel is by the great staircase. In this chapel, besides the religious exercises by which school is opened and closed each day,—public worship in the language of gestures, intelligible to all the pupils, is held every Sabbath. Here also, public examinations will, on certain days of the year be held.

For the supply of water, the main reliance is upon the rain falling on the roofs. This source, it is estimated, will, at that height from the ground, afford an average annual supply of more than thirty inches, equal on an area of about 35,000 square feet of roof to nearly 700,000 gallons in a year, or not much less than two thousand gallons per day. The water will be collected in cisterns, and great iron tanks, some of which are placed in the highest story, thus giving facility for having an abundant supply in all parts of the building. Should the rain water fail in a dry season, the tanks are to be filled by means of the steam-engine, now to be mentioned.

This steam apparatus is placed in a separate building, at least one hundred feet from the main buildings. From this boiler-house steam will be conducted to the air chambers under the school-house, already mentioned. In this room, which is some twenty-one by thirty feet, and sixteen feet high, fresh air by 40,000 feet of iron pipes, will be heated by the steam, and then distributed by the action of a fan-blower, through air chambers and flues under and from beneath, through all the buildings. Each room has a separate flue connecting with the air passage in the base of each building, and a separate flue to carry off the vitiated air. The plan here briefly and imperfectly sketched, is that of Mr. Joseph Nason of New York, who has put up similar apparatus in several large public institutions. The expense is estimated at sixteen thousand dollars.

From this sketch of the internal arrangements, we return to the external features of the building. The basement is of a beautiful speckled gray granite, from Seal Harbor Island, Maine, as also the portico, window sills, and lintels. The upper stories are indicated by courses of the same material, running round the entire building. The walls, with the exceptions just indicated, are of brick, as equally durable and far more economical than stone; and to save the future expense of frequent renewals of paint or of stucco, the external walls are faced with yellow Milwaukie brick, giving, with the granite, an agreeable contrast of light tints. The roofs are of slate, with a handsome balustrade, and cornice of granite. The other architectural features of the buildings will appear from an inspection of the plans.

Work on the preparation of the site was begun in the summer of 1853. Much expense and delay was incurred on one part of the site, in removing a vast deposit of rock; and on another, in removing a quicksand, the place of which had to be filled up with concrete, to the depth, in some places, of eighteen feet. There being a water front to the property, a wharf was built, on which the building materials were landed from the river, and carried up the hill at first by teams, on a graded road; but this road being too circuitous, a railroad was laid on a rapidly inclining plane directly down the face of the hill, up which cars loaded with brick, stone, lime, &c., were drawn by stationary steam power, at a great saving in the cost of transportation. The buildings were put up chiefly by day labor, under the direction of competent engineers and superintendents.

The cost including the shops, gas-house, and steam-warming and ventilating apparatus, will exceed three hundred thousand dollars, exclusive of the cost of the grounds; which last item may be regarded as a mere investment, it being probable that a few years hence, it can be re-imbursed, in whole or in part, by the sale of such portions of the grounds as can be spared.

To give a better idea of the magnitude of the buildings, we add that the areas of the several floors in the five main buildings is very nearly three acres; about double the area of the buildings on Fiftieth street. As the latter were found capable of comfortably accommodating from 220 to 240 pupils, it may rationally be calculated that the new buildings will afford comfortable accommodations for 450 deaf-mutes, with their teachers and superintendents, and the necessary domestics.

of  
profe  
stud



Wm. H. Loring

H. P. Peck

## VII. MEMOIR OF HARVEY PRINDLE PEET,

PRESIDENT OF THE NEW YORK INSTITUTION FOR THE DEAF AND DUMB.

---

HARVEY PRINDLE PEET was born in the little town of Bethlem, Litchfield Co., Conn., November 19, 1794. Bethlem is one of the smallest and roughest towns in the state, but has been remarkably favored in the successive ministrations of two great lights of the church, the Rev. Joseph Bellamy, D. D., and Rev. Azel Backus, D. D., both eminent as theologians, as preachers, and as teachers of youth. Dr. Backus, afterward the first president of Hamilton College, conducted in this town a family school of high character, which attracted to Bethlem several families of rare intelligence and refinement. Under such influences, the intellectual and religious tone of the society in which the earliest years of the subject of this sketch were passed, was eminently such as to favor the acquisition of that force of character, amenity of manners, and strength of religious feeling for which Dr. Peet has ever been distinguished; while at the same time, born a farmer's son, and growing up with healthful alternations of study, labor and free recreation on the rugged and picturesque hills of Litchfield County, he acquired that well developed frame, freedom of movement, physical hardihood, and practical tact that have eminently fitted him for the exhausting work of a teacher of the deaf and dumb.

His early advantages of education were few. Working on a farm in the summer, and attending a district school in the winter, and fond of reading at all seasons, like many other New England boys who have worked their own way to education, and in the rough process acquired the power of working their way to subsequent distinction, he began at the early age of sixteen to teach a district school. This employment he continued during five winters, till at the age of twenty-one, he had established a character for ability in his profession, which procured him the situation of teacher of English studies in schools of a higher class,—at first, in that of Dr. Backus already mentioned, in his native town, and afterward in that of Rev. Daniel Parker, in Sharon, Conn. He now saw prospects of higher usefulness opening before him, to the realization of which the advantages of a college education would be important. In the school of Dr. Backus he began his Latin grammar at the same time that he taught





Wm. H. P. P. P.

H. P. P. P.



a class in English studies. After a delay, chiefly occasioned by want of means, he went, in the fall of 1816, to Andover, and fitted for college in Phillip's Academy, under the care of John Adams, LL. D.,\* father of Rev. William Adams, D. D., of New York.

As an illustration of the early difficulties that young Peet manfully met and overcame in his pursuit of a liberal education, we mention that, at Andover, he earned a portion of his support by gardening in summer, and sawing wood in winter.

Mr. Peet entered the time honored walls of Yale in 1818, and graduated in 1822, taking rank with the first ten in his class. He had made a public profession of faith in Christ some years before, and his original purpose was to devote himself to the work of the christian ministry, but an invitation to engage as an instructor of the deaf and dumb in the American Asylum at Hartford, gave him an opportunity of discovering his special fitness for this then new profession. Thus began that career which has proved so honorable to himself, and so beneficial to that afflicted portion of the human family in whose service his life has been spent.

The early success and reputation of the American Asylum, which made it, thirty years ago, in popular estimation, the model institution of its kind, was mainly due to the careful and felicitous choice of its early teachers. Mr. Peet's associates at Hartford were all able and most of them distinguished men. When we find that, among such teachers as his seniors in the profession, Thomas H. Gallaudet, Laurent Clerc, William C. Woodbridge, Lewis Weld, and William W. Turner, Mr. Peet was early distinguished in all the qualifications of an efficient teacher of the deaf and dumb, we are prepared for the subsequent eminence he attained. Within two years after he joined the Asylum, he was selected as its steward, an office giving him the sole control of the household department, and of the pupils out of school hours. The duties of this post were superadded to those of the daily instruction of a class, either alone sufficient to occupy the energies of an ordinary man. Shortly before assuming the duties of steward, he had married his first wife, Miss Margaret Maria Lewis, daughter of Rev. Isaac Lewis, D. D., an estimable, accomplished and pious woman, who proved in every sense a helpmeet for him.

In the year 1830, the Directors of the New York Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, the second American school of its kind in priority of date,—which had been for years losing ground in public estimation, were awakened to the importance of placing their school on higher ground. Seeking for a man whose weight of character, acquaintance

---

\* This worthy man is still living at Jacksonville, Ill., at the advanced age of 83.

with the most successful methods of instruction and tried efficiency as a teacher and as an executive officer, would invite confidence in advance, and justify it by the results; who could introduce improved methods of instruction, in the school-rooms, and at the same time, order and efficiency in all departments of the institution, their attention was fortunately directed to Mr. Peet, who, almost alone in his profession, had established a reputation for equal and eminent efficiency as a teacher and as the superintendent of an asylum. The offices of principal teacher and superintendent had been separated at the New York Institution, much to the disadvantage of the institution. The title of principal, uniting the two offices, was now tendered to, and accepted by Mr. Peet. He held likewise the office of secretary of the Board of Directors, till he became its president fourteen years later. The new head of the institution thus had immediate control of all departments of the establishment, with a seat in the Board of direction itself. While such an arrangement increases the labors and responsibilities of the principal, it also makes success more fully dependent on the qualities and personal exertions of that officer, and, where the man is equal to his task will secure higher results by securing unity of will in all departments of the establishment.

Mr. Peet, entering on his new duties in New York, on the first of February, 1831, found, in the task before him, abundant need of all his energies and resources. Order and comfort in the household, discipline and diligence among the pupils, and interest and method in the school-room, had to take the place of confusion, negligence, frequent insubordination, and imperfect methods of instruction. The labors which Mr. Peet imposed upon himself at that period were multitudinous and herculean. He practically inculcated that all the inmates of the institution formed but one great family, and himself as its head, taking with his wife and children his meals with the pupils, rose to ask in the visible language of the deaf and dumb, a blessing, and return thanks at every meal. He ever gave prompt and paternal attention to the complaints and little petitions of his pupils, and devoted for the first few weeks, a large share of his personal attention to inculcating and enforcing habits of order and neatness. He conducted, for the first year or two, without assistance, as he has ever since continued to do in his turn, the religious exercises with which the school is opened each morning and closed each evening. On Sundays, he delivered two religious lectures in signs, each prepared with as much care as many clergymen bestow on their sermons, and delivered with the impressive manner, lucid illustrations, and perspicuous pantomime for which he was so eminent. He gave his personal attention to the school-room arrangements of all the

classes, and to preparing lessons for the younger classes. He kept the accounts and conducted the correspondence of the institution, and attended the meetings of its Directors. He planned numerous improvements in the details of every department of the establishment, down to dividing the classes by screens, painting the floors, and marking the linen,—and superintended their execution. And in addition to all this amount of labor, enough to task the full energies of most men, he taught with his accustomed eminent ability a class during the regular school hours.

Those who were then members of the institution still retain a vivid recollection of the wonderful powers of command which Mr. Peet displayed over the male pupils, many of them stout young men, grown up wild before coming to school, habitually turbulent, and prejudiced in advance against the new principal. Equally vivid is their recollection of the lucid and forcible manner, strongly in contrast with the style of the former teachers, in which he was wont to deliver in pantomime a religious lecture or a moral exhortation, or explain a scripture lesson. Where some other teachers were only understood by a particular effort of attention, the signs of Mr. Peet were so clear and impressive, even to those not much conversant with the language of the deaf and dumb, that they could have imagined themselves actual spectators of the events he related, and in his gestures, and the play of his features, traced all the thoughts and emotions of the actor.

The following, preserved by one of his assistants, as the first Sabbath lecture delivered by Mr. Peet in the New York Institution, (February 6, 1831,) may serve as a specimen of the outlines or skeletons of these lectures, which were written out on the large slates at one side of the room, fitted up as a temporary chapel;\* the object of preparing and writing out these skeletons being in part to aid the lecturer, and in part to make the lecture an occasion of improvement for the whole school in written language, as well as in moral and religious knowledge. But no words would give an adequate idea of the spirit and power with which these written outlines were explained and illustrated in pantomime. What appeared on paper a mere skeleton, under the hand of the teacher started to life, and swelled out in full, natural and graceful proportions.

“Matthew, 19 : 14. But Jesus said, suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for of such is the kingdom of heaven.”

“The kingdom of heaven is that kingdom of which Christ is king. All belong to it, whether in heaven or on earth, who love and obey him.

---

\* There was no room fitted up as a chapel in the New York Institution till Mr. Peet took charge of it.

All these enjoy his present favor, and they will enjoy eternal glory with him.

This is the kingdom to which children who seek the blessings of Christ belong.

They belong to it because they are united to it.

1st, In their feelings, 2d, in their services, 3d, in their enjoyments, 4th, in their prospects."

#### REFLECTIONS.

"1. Children who indulge in wicked feelings do not belong to the kingdom of heaven.

2. Children should be kind and affectionate to others, and try to lead their companions to Christ.

3. Children should not seek their happiness in this world, for they can not obtain it.

4. They who are humble and pious will go to heaven when they die, and be happy forever.

5. If you are impenitent, and do not seek the favor of Christ, you can not be admitted into heaven."

In delivering a lecture like the above, to a congregation of deaf mutes, for most of whom, signs are far more clear and impressive than words, and many of whom are in so rude a state of ignorance that they have never distinctly contemplated many of the ideas which seem simple and elementary to those who hear and speak, it is necessary for the teacher, at almost every word on his slate, to go back to the simplest elements of thought, to define, analyze and illustrate; to adduce familiar examples, and prefer always the concrete to the abstract. In this art of adapting his explanations and illustrations to the comprehension of intellects as yet very imperfectly developed, as in other branches of his profession, Mr. Peet was eminent.

The effect of Mr. Peet's labors was soon evinced in a marked improvement in every department of the institution, which, from that day to this, has been steadily gaining in reputation and usefulness. In the domestic department, he was well seconded by his excellent wife, and by her devoted friend, Miss Martha Dudley. In the department of instruction, he had the able assistance of Mr. Leon Vaysse, who had been invited a few months previously from the institution of Paris, to which he returned three or four years later.\* With this exception, Mr. Peet had for some time, to labor alone. The old teachers left within a year or two, and the selection of new ones was a difficult task, for it is not every clever and well educated

---

\* Mr. Vaysse is senior professor and *ex-officio*, second Director, (vice-principal,) of the institution of Paris.

young man who is found, on trial, to possess the mental and physical adaptation, necessary to success in the instruction of the deaf and dumb. But in making the selection, Mr. Peet displayed his accustomed tact, and met with his wonted success. Within a few years, the institution could boast of a corps of teachers hardly to be rivaled for zeal, talent, and special adaptation to their profession by those of any similar institution in the world.

In proportion as Mr. Peet succeeded in training up an efficient corps of teachers, his labors were lightened. Each teacher, as he acquired sufficient skill and readiness in pantomime, conducted the religious exercises in turn, and took charge of the pupils out of school in turn. And after the first three or four years, the principal was relieved from teaching a class personally, to enable him to superintend more at ease the general course of instruction, and the general affairs of the institution. At a much later day, however, he voluntarily assumed the instruction of the highest class for several terms, in a temporary scarcity of experienced teachers.

Mr. Peet was soon called to experience a bereavement of the heaviest kind. His amiable, intelligent and accomplished wife, for seven years, had added to the cares of a young family, the duties of matron at the American Asylum, and on removing to New York, continued to devote herself to the general oversight of the female pupils, and of the domestic department, though relieved by her friend, Miss Dudley, of much of the actual labor. There is reason to fear that her warm sympathy with the efforts of her husband to elevate, in every sense, the institution with whose interests and success he had identified himself, led to greater exertions in her own department than her feeble frame could support. A constitutional tendency to consumption became developed in the year following their removal to New York, and soon assumed that character of beautiful yet hopeless decline, so familiar to thousands whose dearest connections have traveled this gentle declivity to the grave. Removed to her native air, in the vain hope of relief, she died at Hartford, on the 23d of September, 1832, leaving three little sons,—an infant daughter having been taken to heaven before her. Those who watched by her death-bed, remember with deep and solemn interest, that in the last moments of life, after the power of speech had failed, the dying one was able to spell distinctly the word *MOTHER* with her weak, emaciated fingers. Did she mean to recall to her weeping sister her promise to be a *mother* to the babe left motherless ; or to convey that the sainted spirit of her own mother, who had departed six years before her, in the triumphs of faith, was hovering to welcome her



on the confines of the spirit land? In the words of Lydia Huntly Sigourney, whose little poem "The Last Word of the Dying" commemorates this touching incident:

We toil to break the seal with fruitless pain,  
Time's fellowship is riven, earth's question is in vain.

But in view of this and other instances in which dying persons have been able to make intelligible communications by the aid of the manual alphabet, after the power of speech has failed, we would suggest that a familiarity with that alphabet may be of priceless value in many exigences easy to be conceived, but impossible to predict.

Three years after, Mr. Peet formed a second connection, by marriage, with Miss Sarah Ann Smith, daughter of Matson Smith, M. D., whose wife was a lineal descendant of the first Mather's of New England.

As soon as the success of the institution, under its new head, had become such as to invite public confidence, successful application was made to the legislature of the state for an increase of pupils and appropriations; and there was at the same time an increase of those pupils from families of better circumstances, who are attracted by the reputation of a school. The New York Institution became, within a few years, the largest on this side of the Atlantic; and, gaining slowly but surely, during a quarter of a century, in the confidence of the public and of the legislature, it has recently overtaken even the institution of London, long the largest in the world.

Mr. Peet did not confine himself to exhibiting such marked results in his school as should challenge investigation and inspire confidence. Feeling it his duty to use every means to secure the opportunity of a good education to all the deaf and dumb children of the state, he labored, by his annual reports and other publications, to diffuse correct information, and keep alive an interest in the cause of these unfortunate children. Almost every year he visited Albany, to urge the claims of his institution on the legislature; and on such occasions, his tact and knowledge of the world, not less than his distinguished reputation, gave him much personal influence among the members of the legislature. It was customary, when an application on the part of the deaf and dumb was before the house, to exhibit the attainments of a few of the pupils by special invitation, in the legislative hall itself; a scene always of great interest to the members, and which never failed to convince the most incredulous of the benefits of instructing the deaf and dumb. On one occasion, in order to awaken in remote parts of the state an interest which might (and did) result in sending to school several promising deaf-mutes, hitherto kept in heathen ignorance by the apathy or want of information of their

friends, Mr. Peet traveled with a deputation of his teachers and pupils from the Hudson river to Buffalo, and Niagara, holding exhibitions at the principal places on the route. A lively and graphic report of this tour is annexed to the twenty-sixth Annual Report of the institution, from which we make an extract, bearing on a question that has been raised by some, as to the propriety of public exhibitions of the pupils of such an institution.

“From the above brief sketch, it will be seen that we held exhibitions in seventeen of the principal cities and villages west of Albany, in five places repeating our exhibitions at the urgent request of the citizens. The audiences assembled were estimated at from two hundred to two thousand. Probably in all from ten to fifteen thousand persons, many of them among the best educated and influential citizens of the state, have had the opportunity, through this excursion, of acquiring correct notions on the subject of the instruction of the deaf and dumb, and of witnessing, many of them for the first time, practical illustrations of the success attained under our system.

Many thousands besides, who could not personally attend, have had their attention awakened to the subject, and have acquired some degree of correct information, through the notices of our exhibitions, published in the papers of the various places we visited. We have reason to believe that the results have been highly beneficial, and that the large accession of promising pupils to the institution, within a few weeks after our tour, is, in part attributable to the interest and attention which we were the means of awakening.

The obstacles which the friends of deaf-mute education have to encounter, are, partly, the prejudices of many, formed from occasional instances of partial failure in instructing deaf-mutes under unfavorable circumstances, partly the incredulity of others, who refuse to believe, upon report, facts as contrary to their own previous experience as is the congelation of water, or the lengthened day and night of polar regions to that of an inhabitant of the equator; and partly, the indifference with which the great bulk of mankind regard matters which no peculiar circumstances have pressed upon their personal notice.

There are thousands who regard the deaf and dumb with some degree of compassion, and hear of the efforts made in their behalf with cold approbation, but the subject has never taken hold of their feelings. They hear of deaf-mute children in the families of their acquaintances, perhaps they meet them; they advise their being sent to the institution; but the advice is too coldly given to turn the scale, when, as is too often the case, there exists disinclination on the

part of the parent or guardian. If we could infuse, into the mass of our benevolent and educated men, a more heartfelt interest in this subject,—if we could prompt each to warmer and more earnest efforts in those cases that may come to his knowledge,—if finally, the pastor or magistrate, or professional man, in whose neighborhood there may be a deaf-mute growing up in ignorance, and in danger of being left for life without the pale of social communion, and of christian knowledge, could be fully impressed with the momentous consequences at stake, and fully apprised of the only and easy means of escape, then we should have less cause to complain that parents and guardians, often uneducated themselves, take too little thought for the education of their deaf and dumb children.

In this point of view, we trust our excursion has, in many places, sown the seed which may hereafter spring up and ripen to a gladdening harvest. Many men, now wielding, or destined to wield an important influence, attended our exhibitions. In two or three places the opportunities of this kind were peculiarly favorable. In Auburn, for instance, the students of the Theological Seminary were present at our lecture and exercises. These young men are destined to go forth into the various cities and towns of the state, to exert a high moral and intellectual influence, and *ex-officio*, to take the lead in benevolent undertakings. That this body of men should be correctly informed of the extent to which the instruction of the deaf and dumb is practicable; that they should be warned against the blind enthusiasm that, aiming at too much, fails of accomplishing the greatest practical good, and that their feelings should be interested in view of the striking intellectual, moral and religious contrast between the educated and the uneducated deaf-mute, is a great point gained, and can hardly be too highly appreciated."

When Dr. Peet, (we find it easier to speak of him by that now familiar title, though the degree of LL. D., conferred on him by the regents of the university of New York, is of somewhat later date than the period we are now speaking of,) had been able to collect around him such a corps of well trained teachers that his daily attention to the routine of instruction was no longer required, he turned his attention to the preparation of a course of instruction, or a series of language lessons, adapted to the peculiar circumstances of a class of deaf-mutes,—then a very serious want. Several attempts, under the spur of urgent necessity, had indeed been made to provide such lessons; and in two or three instances, they had been printed to save copying with a pen; but these little books were of a character unsatisfactory even to their authors; and, such as they were, copies were

no longer to be procured in sufficient numbers for a school. Dr. Peet, therefore, finding nothing he could use, and little even to improve upon, beyond some hints in the French work of Bébien, and the manuscript lessons previously used in his own school, was obliged to go back to the first principles of the art; and following these to their logical results in the light of his long experience, and intimate acquaintance with the peculiarities of the deaf and dumb, he produced a course of lessons on a plan in many respects entirely new. The first fruit of his labors, after being tested for a few months in his own school, was published in the spring of 1844, with the title of, "A Vocabulary and Elementary Lessons for the Deaf and Dumb." It met, (says Dr. Peet in the preface to the second edition,) with "favor and success beyond the author's hopes," being received with a satisfaction amounting in some cases to enthusiasm. The first edition being exhausted much sooner than was anticipated, it was revised with great care, and under the title of "Elementary Lessons, being a course of instruction for the Deaf and Dumb, Part First," has gone through two or three editions, and is still the only text-book in general use for the younger classes in the American Institutions for the Deaf and Dumb. Orders have also been received for copies to be used in British schools; and missionaries whose task, like that of the teacher of deaf-mutes, is to teach the first rudiments of the English language to intellects but imperfectly developed, have found Dr. Peet's Elementary Lessons a very suitable text-book for that purpose.

The success of the First Part encouraged the author to proceed with his undertaking of supplying that total want of acceptable elementary books which had so seriously increased the labors of teachers of the deaf and dumb. A Second Part was published in 1845, a little volume of Scripture Lessons in 1846, the new edition of the First Part, already mentioned, the same year, and finally a new Second Part, by which the Second Part published in 1845 became the Third Part, appeared in 1849. A carefully revised edition of Dr. Peet's Scripture Lessons appeared in the latter year, and being equally well adapted to the use of children who hear, besides the edition for the use of the deaf and dumb, a large edition was put in general circulation by the American Tract Society.

The "Course of Instruction," as far as prepared, thus consists of four volumes, of which the Elementary Lessons and the Scripture Lessons have been received with the most general approbation. Experience has shown that the arrangement of the Second and Third Parts is susceptible of improvement, and if Dr. Peet's life and health are spared, it is understood that he has in view to revise both, and

perhaps, to add a work, long the great desideratum in the instruction of the deaf and dumb, a Methodical Vocabulary, in two parts, the First Part embracing the words of our language, in an ideological order, so<sub>x</sub> explained and illustrated, that the deaf-mute student once made familiar with the principle of classification, can find in it the word he needs to express a given idea; while the Second Part, in the customary alphabetical order, by means of simple definitions and illustrations, by cuts where practicable, and by references to the First Part, shall more readily enable a deaf-mute to discover the meaning of a word than he generally can by the definitions in our common English dictionaries. Such a work would render to a deaf-mute student the same aid both in reading and composing, that the English student finds in his double lexicons of Latin, or whatever other language he has in hand. For want of such a work, a deaf-mute, for whom the language of his countrymen is always a foreign language, the language of signs being his vernacular, can only obtain a word he needs to express a given idea by application to a living teacher; and the definitions in our dictionaries are seldom well adapted to his use. But great as would be the advantages of such a work, the labor of preparing it would evidently be so great that the few who have attempted it have recoiled. And perhaps the advanced years of Dr. Peet, and his many other avocations may not permit him to undertake it. He is understood to be now employing his leisure upon a School History of the United States, which, while its simplicity and perspicuity of style shall adapt it to the use of the deaf and dumb, will be equally well adapted for children who hear; and in which it is proposed to take special care to secure *accuracy* of statement, as well as to preserve the interest by the choice of incidents.

The limits of a sketch like this will not permit us to give, as we were tempted to do, an exposition of the plan of Dr. Peet's course of instruction. Such an exposition may be found in some able articles contributed by him to the "American Annals of the Deaf and Dumb," a quarterly, published at Hartford.\* We can here only explain that the plan of the "Course" is founded on a principle of philosophical progress, beginning with the words and phrases that accurately express ideas already familiar to the pupil, on the great fundamental principle that "ideas should precede names," and thence going by gradual and skillfully arranged steps from the simple to the complex, from the concrete to the abstract; so that, as far as practicable, only one difficulty shall be introduced at one time, and each

---

\* See in particular, Vol. III., p. 99, and on; also Dr. Peet's article on the Course of Instruction, in the Proceedings of the Second Convention, etc., p. 39, and on.

difficulty overcome shall serve as a stepping stone to the next. Cuts are, of course, used for explaining words and phrases, wherever practicable; and the reading lessons are admirably simple in style and construction, yet attractive and piquant.

Simple and obvious as these principles are,—in their practical application there is much room for divergence of opinion; and even the first step can not be intelligently taken except by one who is familiar with the mental habits of the deaf and dumb, and knows that when they first come to the instructor, the current of their private thoughts is very different from that series of abstract and general propositions which prevail in the meditations of those who hear,—that they think by “direct intuition,”—as though, in a sort of mental *camera obscura*, objects with their qualities and actions were continually passing. Hence Dr. Peet begins with words and phrases correctly representing these mental images; at first single words, a *book*, a *horse*, a *bird*; then descriptive phrases, made more intelligible by contrast, as a *black book*, a *white book*, a *large horse*, a *small bird*. Numbers and the plural form are early introduced, and verbs first appear under the form of the participle, as a *horse running*, a *bird flying*, it being considered that these phrases accurately describe the pictures shown to the pupil, whereas no pictures will adequately represent the sentences, *The horse runs*; *The bird flies*. Hence the finite verb is deferred till, by the development of his ideas during two or three months of instruction, and by some practice in appreciating the divisions of time, the pupil has become able to apprehend those ideas of assertion and time which constitute the essence of the verb. And at his first introduction to the verb, care is taken to make a distinction which, for want of such early care, we have known many educated mutes to go through life without being able to appreciate, the distinction between the *actual present*, “Mary is dancing,” and the habitual present, “Mary dances sometimes.” In this philosophical spirit the work is planned, and it is no small praise to say that the execution is worthy of the plan.

In order to take all Dr. Peet’s series of school books for the deaf and dumb in one view, we have anticipated the order of time. The institution was, by its charter, placed under the care and control of a Board of Directors, composed of twenty-five of the most respectable and intelligent citizens of New York, men whose judgment might aid the principal in the management of the institution, and whose social and political influence had much weight with the legislature in its behalf. The presidency of this board was successively filled by such men as DeWitt Clinton, Samuel L. Mitchell, LL. D., Rev. James Mil-

nor, D. D., and Robert C. Cornell. On the death of the two last, which occurred within a few months of each other in the spring of 1845, the title of president was, by general consent, and as a just tribute to his eminent worth and services, conferred on Mr. Peet; the first, and we believe the only case in which the principal or superintendent of such an institution is also president of its Board of Directors or Trustees. (The degree of Doctor of Laws, (LL. D.,) was conferred on Mr. Peet, as we have said, by the regents of the university, three or four years later.) This change of title brought no change in the immediate relations of Dr. Peet to the institution. He continued, as he has ever done, to reside in the building, to fulfill the duties both of the head of the institution, and the head of the family; and to give his personal attention and the benefit of his great experience in all cases of difficulty in any department of the establishment.

It was, we think, early in the year, 1844, that the Hon. Horace Mann, returning from a visit of inspection to the educational institutions of Europe, especially of Germany, published his report, in which he took occasion to say that, in his opinion the "Institutions for the Deaf and Dumb in Prussia, Saxony, and Holland, are decidedly superior to any in this country." On examination, it appeared that the distinguished author of this report, who, with all his eminent zeal for the cause of education, and admitted ability, was too apt to jump to conclusions upon insufficient premises, had formed this opinion upon a very superficial examination of the German schools, and no examination at all of our own. Still the specific point of difference on which his opinion was based, that the German teachers teach, or attempt to teach their deaf pupils to speak, while ours had long since formally relinquished that attempt, was *prima facie* such as to make an impression on the public mind, ever moved by novelties, and prone to believe in the marvelous. Though, therefore, all the evidence we then had went to show that even in the German language, much more favorable to such an attempt than our own, the teaching or articulation to the deaf and dumb seldom yielded any results of real practical value, while it certainly involved a heavy waste of time and labor,—still it seemed proper to ascertain by actual examination whether we were in fact so far behind the German or other European schools, that, if there were valuable lessons to be learned, we might learn them, and if not, that our institutions, might retain in the public estimation the place they had so hardly won. To this end, each of the two oldest and largest American Institutions for the deaf and dumb, sent an agent to Europe. The American Asylum, sent its late esteemed principal, Mr. Weld, and the New York Institution, sent one of its former



instructors, Rev. George E. Day, now a professor in the Lane Theological Seminary, Ohio. The reports of these gentlemen made after very full and candid examination, were justly held to be conclusive that, on the whole, the results of our system of instruction were superior to those obtained in the German schools. Mr. Peet's letter of instruction to Mr. Day, prefixed to the report of the latter, (see Twenty-Sixth Annual Report of the New York Institution,) is esteemed a model paper of its kind, and shows how fully and clearly its author understood, in advance, all the bearings of the question at issue. Seven years later, (in the spring of 1851,) Dr. Peet himself, with his eldest son and three of his pupils, visited Europe on a similar errand; and made a voluminous report on the condition of the European schools he visited, and on the various systems of instruction he found in use, which is one of the most valuable and interesting documents of the kind extant, and at the same time, a graphic and agreeable book of travels. While in London, on this occasion, he took part in the first annual convention of British teachers of the deaf and dumb.

The first convention of American Instructors of the Deaf and Dumb, had been held at the New York Institution, a year before this time, (in 1850,) and Dr. Peet, returned from Europe just in time to attend the second convention, held at Hartford, in August, 1851. Two other conventions have been held since, (the interval having been changed from one to two years, and two meetings postponed a year, from unfavorable and unforeseen circumstances.) At all these conventions, Dr. Peet, to whose exertions and influence the holding of the first convention was mainly due, took a leading part. Besides, in the discussions that arose, freely imparting the benefit of his rare experience to his younger brethren, papers of great value, and prepared with much labor and research, were presented by him at each convention, and published with its proceedings. Of these papers, we will particularize that on the "Origin and Early History of the Art of Instructing the Deaf and Dumb," presented at the first convention, and also inserted in the American Annals, (III., 129 and on,) and the "Report on the Legal Rights and Liabilities of the Deaf and Dumb," presented at the fourth convention, whose proceedings are not yet published, but an imperfect copy of this paper appeared in the American Journal of Insanity, last summer. The former of these papers corrects several errors of Degerando, hitherto almost the only authority usually referred to on that subject; and the latter has been pronounced by competent judges a valuable contribution to our legal literature, and supplies information which hitherto could be obtained only by very extensive and laborious research.

We will close our account of Dr. Peet's contributions to the literature of deaf-mute instruction, by noticing three or four other remarkable productions; the address at the dedication of the chapel of the New York Institution, (December 1846,) that delivered on the occasion of laying the corner-stone of the North Carolina Institution, (April, 1848,) the "Report on the Education of the Deaf and Dumb in the Higher Branches of Learning," (1852,) which led to the establishment of the High Class in the New York Institution, a measure that has contributed essentially to elevate the general standard of deaf-mute education;\* and the curious article on the "Notions of the Deaf and Dumb before Instruction, especially on Religious Subjects," which appeared in the *Bibliotheca Sacra* for July, 1855. In the last mentioned article, it is shown that, whatever may be the ability of the human intellect in a high stage of development, to arrive at just and ennobling conceptions of a Creator and supreme governor of the world, the uneducated deaf and dumb have, in no clearly attested instances, originated, from their own reflections, the idea of God, or of a Creator.

Space is wanting for a more particular notice of these and other papers, nor can we here enumerate the topics treated of in the Annual Reports of the New York Institution, which, unlike the generality of such reports, instead of being confined to details of local or temporary interest,—discuss with Dr. Peet's characteristic ability, fullness of information, and comprehensiveness of examination, the most important topics connected directly or indirectly, with the subject of deaf-mute instruction. The Thirty-Fifth Report, for instance, embraces the fullest and best digested body of statistics of the deaf and dumb which has been yet published.

Dr. Peet has been fortunate in his children. He has the able assistance of his two elder sons, accomplished teachers of the deaf and dumb, in his own institution. The eldest, as teacher of the High Class, has had the satisfaction of training up the best educated class of deaf-mutes taken as a class, that ever graduated.

Dr. Peet has now nearly reached the accomplishment of his last great labor, the planning and erection of buildings that will make the New York Institution, in that respect, as we believe it to be in all others, a model institution of its kind. In this, and in his other labors for the benefit of the deaf and dumb, he has been ably seconded by an intelligent and energetic Board of Directors. From the mode of

---

\* It is due to General P. M. Wetmore, recently vice-president of the Institution, to say that, in the establishment of the High Class, as in other measures for the benefit of the deaf and dumb, he rendered very valuable aid, and merits the lasting gratitude of the deaf and dumb of New York.

election, by a few life members and subscribers, and the gratuitous nature of their services, the Directors of the New York Institution are solely men attracted together by benevolent interest in the cause of the deaf and dumb, and respect for, and sympathy with the character of the president. Hence it is that they have been so ready to appreciate, encourage and aid his labors. In this matter of the erection of the new buildings, especially, it required zeal, foresight, and sanguine trust in the future, to prevent that perfection of plan and proportions so admirable in the new buildings from being sacrificed to a severe, though temporary pecuniary pressure.\* Of those features that have been more particularly the object of Dr. Peet's personal attention and solicitude, we may specify the arrangements and apparatus for warming and ventilation.

From this sketch of Dr. Peet's public life, his character as a christian gentleman, as the head of an institution, as a teacher, as an accomplished master of the language of pantomime, as a leader and energetic laborer in all movements for the benefit of the common cause of deaf-mute education,—and as the author of the best existing series of works in our language, perhaps in any language, on the instruction of the deaf and dumb,—though inadequately set forth, will, we trust, be apparent to the reader. But to his many friends, and to the hundreds of deaf-mutes who, educated under his care, have learned to love and honor him as a father, such a portraiture will appear not only feeble, but very incomplete, as omitting one of Dr. Peet's most prominent traits of character,—his warm benevolence of heart,—of which the best illustration is the filial affection with which he is regarded by his pupils, the warm and active interest he has ever taken in their temporal and spiritual welfare, and the aid he has ever been ready to give to any of his former pupils who deserved and stood in need of his assistance. When dismissing his pupils at the end of their course, he is wont to give each a little letter of advice, in which, encouraging them to seek his aid in any future season of trouble, he says, "Come to us, I repeat, with the confidence of children to a father. We shall be ever ready to redress your wrongs, to seek for you employment that shall ensure for you comfort and respectability; and in those afflictions which only time and Providence can relieve, to afford the sympathy and advice that may inspire consolation, patience, and cheerfulness." And the instances are not few in which this pledge has been fulfilled.

---

\* The result of the pecuniary difficulties referred to, has been that the State of New York, has *formally* assumed the proprietorship of the institution, maintaining it as it is. It has thus become in name, as it long has been *de facto*, a State Institution.

Comparing the present state of the institution with what it was in 1830, then a small and inferior school, ill provided with teachers, without any good plan of instruction, or acceptable series of lessons; now in the very foremost rank of special educational institutions, furnishing text-books and teachers to other schools, and looked to as a model, both in its system of instruction and the plan of its buildings, by its results and publications elevating the standard of deaf-mute instruction, and spreading abroad an interest that leads to the founding of new institutions, Dr. Peet may well feel that the earnest and unfaltering labor of twenty-six years has not been in vain. He has not, we trust, nearly reached the term of his active usefulness. Though crowned with the glory of grey hairs, judging from his erect form, active step, and unabated powers of attention to the duties of his arduous post,—the deaf and dumb of New York, and of the whole Union may, for years to come, benefit by his labors. And when the time shall come for retirement from active labor, he will know that the blessings of hundreds follow him down the vale of years, and that the future of the institution to which his life has been devoted,—with its great trust for the benefit of the deaf and dumb of generations to come, may safely be left in the care of the teachers he has trained up.

## VI. SEMINARY FOR ORPHAN AND DESTITUTE CHILDREN

AND TEACHERS OF THE POOR,

AT BEUGGEN, GRAND DUCHY OF BADEN.

---

THE establishment at Beuggen, in Baden, near Basle, for the training of poor children and country teachers, was established in 1820, by an association of benevolent persons of the Protestant persuasion in Basle. The building, formerly a commandery of the Teutonic Order, is a handsome chateau in a fine situation upon the banks of the Rhine. During the wars of 1814-15, it was used as a hospital for the allied armies, and eight thousand soldiers died in it, and were buried in the fields around. It is the property of the grand duke of Baden, who allows it to be used for the school at a merely nominal rent.

The institution has been sustained altogether by voluntary contributions, and the confidence of its managers in the benevolence of the community has been well repaid; there is no debt, the annual expenditures have invariably been met, and a considerable surplus funded.

The childrens' department contains about sixty pupils of both sexes, Protestants only. The girls and boys meet at lessons and meals, and often during their work; and the supervision being strict and continual, no inconvenience has resulted. The age of admission is from six to fourteen years, and of leaving, at an average of sixteen or seventeen; and pupils are received from all the Swiss cantons, the poorest and most neglected children having the preference. Communes and benefactors pay thirty dollars a year for each pupil whom they place in school; but those who can command no payment are received free.

There are three school classes; the course includes, in general, the same matter with that of a good Protestant primary school: Bible history and doctrine, reading, writing, German, mental and written arithmetic, geography, history, music by note, and thorough base. There is four hours' school a day, besides four hours a week, for singing lessons. The remaining time is so laid out in manual labor and recreations, that the variety of employments may avoid fatigue. The children of the laborers on the premises and some from the neighborhood are admitted to the instruction and apprenticeship of the institution. The boys are employed in farming, gardening, in the stable, in plaiting straw, and spinning wool; some are under the instruction of the tailor and the shoemaker of the establishment, and others are employed in the bakery, the book-bindery, and in such household labor as requires some strength. The girls knit, sew, make and mend clothes and bedding, help in washing, laundry work and cooking, sometimes in the garden and poultry yard, and acquire such other accomplishments as pertain to a good housekeeper.

There are religious exercises on the sabbath, during the intervals of which the children may sing, read, walk, or play in the garden.

The food and clothing are simple, but sufficient, and in general similar to those of the surrounding agricultural population; and the health of the institu-

tion is excellent. The yearly expense per head for pupils is estimated at thirty dollars. At leaving the school, the children are apprenticed to farmers or artizans. There are two committees of patronage connected with the institution, one of men for the boys, and the other of women for the girls, to assist them in procuring good situations, and to watch over their welfare. Contrary to the design of the institution, however, only a few of the graduates follow agriculture, most of them adopting some mechanical occupation. During the thirty years' existence of the school, the number of graduating pupils has been in all about four hundred and forty.

The other department of the school is intended to train teachers for the country schools. Its members are chiefly from the families of laborers and artizans, and are admitted at from eighteen to twenty-five, remaining three years. They are usually from fifteen to twenty in number. In return for their education and maintenance, they act as assistants to the principal, in instruction and general oversight: and they receive at graduation a wardrobe and some books. These normal pupils are certain of appointments at graduation; indeed, the applications for them are more numerous than can be filled. The normal course includes whatever is essential in the theory and practice of teaching. It occupies six hours a day; three hours more are spent in manual labor, and the remainder of the day in various useful occupations and in recreations. As they become fit, they are placed in charge of a few pupils, then of an entire class, and finally of the whole school.

Christian Heinrich Zeller, the director, is brother of the deceased Karl August Von Zeller, the well known Prussian High School Councilor and educationist, and was born in Wurtemberg, in 1777. He studied law at Tubingen, but by the influence of his brother was induced to devote himself to teaching, and accordingly, after having been tutor in a patrician family at Augsburg for two years, and a successful teacher six years in St. Gall, and twelve years at Zofingen, where he became a Swiss burgher and married, he accepted the charge of organizing and conducting the establishment at Beuggen. He is now seventy-five years of age, but still vigorous and healthy, and though receiving but a small salary, is happy in his labors, and with his excellent wife, is still ardently devoted to the enterprise under his direction. They well deserve the names of "father" and "mother" which they receive from the members of the numerous family around them.

There is a committee for the control of the institution, appointed by the association of founders, and located at Basle. It meets monthly, directs as to admission and graduation of pupils and pupil teachers, oversees their establishment as far as possible, authorizes expenditures and repairs, arranges the affairs of the course of instruction and labor, audits accounts, and determines important matters in general. It also presides over the anniversary of the establishment.

The director, who has immediate charge of instruction, discipline, and accounts, (his wife, with one or more assistants, managing domestic affairs, and the concerns of the household and the farm,) is assisted by two sub-teachers, who instruct the pupil teachers and children, and with whom he holds a weekly consultation upon matters of instruction, discipline, &c. There is a fortnightly meeting, attended by the pupil teachers, at which the director presides, communicates correspondence from former graduates now teaching, listens to observations, gives advice, and attends to all appropriate subjects.

There are three dormitories for the girls, each under a female overseer, and five for the boys, over each of which is appointed by the director one of the pupil teachers, who thus becomes as it were the father of a small family within the large one. He walks out with them on Sunday, takes care of them when sick, and watches constantly over their physical and moral prosperity; and thus becomes well initiated both in the pleasures and pains of his intended career. They also eat with the children, and of the same food.

In order to maintain the connection between the institution and its graduates, a monthly gazette, (*Monaths-Blatt von Beuggen*,) has been published for the last twenty years, to give information of the progress and condition of the institution, and to encourage its charitable friends. The director also maintains a frequent and intimate correspondence with graduates of both departments, for the sake of assisting them by good advice and of maintaining a favorable influence over them.\*

The order and industry exhibited in the school and on the farm are worthy of all praise. Emulation and laudation are not employed as stimulants; M. Zeller believing with Pestalozzi, that if instruction is given, and discipline managed, in the right way, the pleasure of acquiring knowledge and of doing right, are abundantly adequate encouragements.

Facts seem to be wanting to explain the general tendency of the pupils toward mechanical rather than agricultural pursuits. It may possibly be partly owing to deficient development of that occupation at the institution, to the shortness of the apprenticeship served in it by the pupils, to the relations of graduates to their families at leaving, or to the operations of the committee in charge of the business of finding situations. In his last report, (for 1850,) M. Zeller has seasonably directed attention to the inconveniences of the usual system of apprenticeship, especially in towns; the apprentices, instead of being as formerly lodged in their master's houses, boarded at their tables, and treated to a certain extent as members of their families, are now obliged to find board and lodging for themselves, and are thus exposed to influences and temptations which often ruin them. M. Zeller proposes, as a remedy, that establishments should be erected in the towns, for the express purpose of furnishing economical board and lodging to apprentices, and conducted under such management as might avert these evils. Indeed, such a one has already been erected at Strashourg, for graduates from the school at Neuhof, and has already done good. The example is worthy of imitation.

---

\* Zeller's chief publications, besides the monthly above mentioned, are the following:

THE TEACHING OF EXPERIENCE. (*LEHREN DER ERFAHRUNG*.) for christian teachers of common schools, and poor schools. Three volumes: Beuggen. 1826-28.

TWENTY-FIFTH ANNUAL REPORT UPON THE INSTITUTION FOR TRAINING TEACHERS of poor schools, at Beuggen. Basle: Bahnmaier's. 1846.

PSYCHOLOGY, founded upon experience, for parents, educators and teachers, and for domestic instruction. Stuttgart: Steinkopf.



C. H. ZELLER'S "*Lessons, or Teachings of Experience for the Christian Teachers of Country and Poor Schools*,"—embodies the author's long experience in conducting the school for orphan and destitute children at Beuggen, and in training teachers for similar schools in Germany and Switzerland. The introductory chapters develop his views as to the three great divine institutions for the education of man—the Family, the State and the Church. The school whether managed by civil or ecclesiastical authorities arises in part out of the failure of the family to perform its functions in the early training of children, and in part as a necessary auxiliary, to enable parents collectively as a portion of the state to do their duty better than under most circumstances, they will or can do singly. The church must sanctify by its appropriate service, both the family and the state. After distinguishing the different kinds of schools, which the state has been compelled to originate or aid, to rectify the want of insight, of affection, or of means in the parents, or the consequences of utter abandonment of children by them, he proceeds to sketch the history of education in different ages and countries, and especially its modern developments in Germany. After examining the theories of education, as propounded by the teachings of Spener, Franke and other representatives of Pietism: of Rousseau, Basedow, Campe and others of the Philanthropic school, and schools which separated from it; of Ernesti and other advocates of the Humanistic System or of the old writings of Greece and Rome as the principal object of attention in the superior schools; of Canon, Rochow, Hecker, Felbiger, the founders of the Real School, and improvers of the popular school in the country districts; of Pestalozzi and the influence of his writings, and of his institutions,—in reinstating the family organization and breathing the family spirit into the school and its teachings; of Niemeier, in the orphan house of Halle, who undertook to work out an Eclectic system in which the good of each was to be preserved—the author proceeds to develop his own idea of *schools for the people*, and especially of *schools for country districts*, and for the *poor*, whether conducted by the state, the church, or any number of parents, or persons acting in behalf of parents.

INSTRUCTION AND DISCIPLINE—all the christian influences which bear on the child's capacity of *knowing*, and all those which bear upon his *heart* and *disposition*, constitute the education which can be given in the school.

Instruction is considered in reference to its *form*, its *substance*, its *object*. That form of instruction is best, which is best fitted to develop, in orderly series, the child's capacities for knowing, that is, which enables it to understand, grasp, retain and use, what is taught, or has yet to be learned. Its substance is best, when the truths which the child has acquired are most needful for his temporal and spiritual destination. The object is but attained, when the child is prepared for his earthly calling, and in the absence of earthly support, can feel a faith in God. The capacities of the child to be developed are, 1, The capacity of receiving impressions from the outer world; 2, of receiving impressions from the inner world, (the *moral sense*;) 3, of becoming conscious of impressions proceeding from either source; 4, of reflection, imagination and fancy; 5, of understanding, (of distinguishing;) 6, of reason; 7, of curiosity, (or craving to see, hear, &c;) 8, of utterance; 9, of believing; 10, of executing. (the artistic faculty.) When these capacities exist in a child, so as to give readiness to apprehend—they constitute *docility*; when to these is added quickness of communication, they constitute *talent*; when to these is added invention or discovery, they constitute *genius*.

The success of the teacher in intellectual training will depend on his tact and skill in giving these several faculties their appropriate and timely work. The methods of doing this constitute the next portion of the treatise. This is followed by the subject of discipline—the culture of the heart and moral nature; and in this, Zeller lays great stress on the power of example—the “unconscious tuition” of the character, manners, language, voice, and all that make up the daily life of the teacher, as shown in the following extract.

Young minds can at all times be acted upon without words, simply by example. The further any person is from what he ought to be, the more does he experience this influence. The less his mind is developed, the more is he urged by a propensity to *imitate*, to direct and govern himself according to what he sees and hears in the society of other men, better, older, stronger, more skillful, and more experienced than himself. This is a truth that can not be too often dwelt upon, especially in these days, when we attribute so many wonders to the power of words. Yes; example alone, a life of practice without display, exercises a most marked influence on the soul, the character, and the will; for the *conduct* of a man is the true expression of his being, and gives a tone to (or animates) every thing around him; consequently nothing can remain uninfluenced within the sphere of a living being. There emanates from the active noiseless life of a single individual, power which is to others, either “a savour of life unto life, or a savour of death unto death.”

This explains to us why parents, simple, and without culture, especially mothers, who perhaps have never opened a book on education, and speak very little to their children, yet offer them every day the example of a lively affection, and a well-employed though retired life, bestow an excellent education; while, on the other hand, we see the children of well instructed parents frequently turn out ill, who have been acted upon by words alone, rather than by example, and who contemplate around them a class of beings who exercise no good moral influence. Alas! that all parents and instructors knew how much power there is in being virtuous, and how little in only *appearing* to be so!

There can never be any efficacious or happy influence in the example of a hypocrite. Many people avoid showing before children what they really are; they speak and act in their presence as persons of morality, modesty, and piety; but it is only a cloak to cover their internal corruption, their self love, and want of charity. These are hypocrites; their piety is but babbling, a tongue which they have learned, as we learn a foreign language, but it is not their mother tongue; the fruit is of no greater value than the tree which produces it.

It concerns all who are called to occupy themselves in education, to consider the holy lesson taught by a well beloved disciple of the Saviour, in these words: “Be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.” 1 Tim. iv. 12. “In all things showing thyself a pattern of good works; in doctrine showing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity, sound speech, that can not be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.” Titus ii. 7, 8.

Here we address the following exhortations to all persons, parents or tutors, who are charged with the task of education, beseeching them to give serious attention thereto.

1. Be what the children ought to be.
2. Do what they ought to do.
3. Avoid what they should avoid.
4. Aim always that, not only in the presence of the children, but also in their absence, your conduct may serve them for an example.
5. Are any among them defective? *examine what you are yourself*, what you do, what you avoid; in a word, your whole conduct.
6. Do you discover in yourself defects, sins, wanderings? Begin by improving yourself, and seek afterwards to improve your children.
7. Think well that those by whom you are surrounded, are often only the reflection of yourself.
8. If you lead a life of penitence, and seek daily to have grace given you, it will be imparted to you, and through you to your children.

9. If you always seek Divine guidance, your children will more willingly be directed by you.

10. The more obedient you are to God, the more obedient will your children be to you ; thus in his childhood the wise Solomon asked of the Lord "an obedient heart," in order to be able to judge and govern his people.

11. As soon as the master becomes lukewarm in communion with God, that lukewarmness will extend itself among his pupils.

12. That which forms a wall of separation between God and yourself, will be a source of evil to your children.

13. An example in which love does not form a chief feature, is but as the light of the moon ; it is cold and feeble.

14. An example animated by an ardent and sincere love, shines like the sun ; it warms and invigorates.

## VII JACOB VEHRLI,\*

AT

HOFWYL AND KRUITZLINGEN.

---

No name is more indissolubly associated with the origin and successful establishment of agricultural schools for the poor, and for teachers of country schools, than that of Jacob Vehrli. Without his entire and self-sacrificing devotion, sweet and attractive personal character and vast practical ability, it is altogether improbable that either Pestalozzi, by his desultory and distinctively unpractical labors, or Fellenberg, amongst the vast and varied operations necessary to carry forward his comprehensive and rather complicated plans, would ever have worked out this single problem of educational reform to its present state of triumphant and widely influential demonstration.

JACOB VEHRLI, was the son of a country schoolmaster in the Canton of Thurgoviæ; and was born in 1790. He was only seventeen, when his father, becoming profoundly interested in Fellenberg's enterprise at Hofwyl, entreated him to employ the youth in executing the projected plan of a school for the poor, two teachers having already failed in it. Fellenberg received him at first into his own family, but was so well satisfied with his character that before the end of a year, he placed him in the farmhouse where the school was to be established, with three pupils, fresh from mendicancy on the highways. Vehrli made himself the friend and associate of these young outcasts, lived on their vegetable diet, slept on straw beds as they did, and in a short time had both firmly established himself as a new and beloved parent and guide to the youths, and has securely founded the Vehrli School, or agricultural school for the poor, which was in fact, though not generally so considered, the chiefest and best beloved of the institutions at Hofwyl, as being that through which Fellenberg hoped to effect something toward the elevation of the masses of the Swiss population; and which is moreover now the only surviving portion of all the schools there.

Under the incomparable power of Vehrli's character and skillful management, the school gradually increased in numbers, stability and reputation, until it became necessary to employ assistants, and to subdivide it, by establishing, in 1827, the colony of Maykirch, with six pupils from the Vehrli School, under the charge of one of the older pupils. Within a few years this colony had built itself a complete house, with barns and offices, brought some fifteen acres under cultivation, and become a self-supporting institution.

---

\* Often spelled Wehrli.

As the Vehrli School grew, a department, also part of the original design, including ultimately twenty pupils, was set apart for training teachers for the country schools.

Having remained at Hofwyl twenty-six years, Vehrli left the place, to become director of the school for country teachers at Krutzlingen, on the Lake of Constance, where he yet remains, devoting a vigorous old age, and the treasures of a half century's experience, to the furtherance of the same noble and patriotic purposes for which his whole life has been given.

Amongst his pupils, Vehrli has always appeared as a kind and beloved elder brother, rather than as a person of superior authority or merely disciplinary power. His punishments were a private and affectionate admonition; a more public one, deprivation of society or meals or play; in the last resort, a light corporal infliction administered in private, some time after the fault, and with kind preparatory remonstrances; if these means failed, dismissal was preferred to further compulsion. Love was the prevailing influence; faith in human capacity of improvement, and in the support of religion, the basis of all action; and kindness, the principle of right, and desire of self-improvement and the good of others, the regulating and stimulating forces of the school. The course of education was calculated to prepare the pupils well and faithfully to fill the places allotted them, under the stringent classification of European society, as farmers and farm laborers, or as country school masters; a course too limited for absolute imitation in a country truly free, but of the very utmost excellence, so far as it was actually developed; defective not in its kind, but in its scope. The children were received at about eight or nine years of age, and remained until eighteen or twenty; the latter portion of their stay being mainly in honorable fulfillment of their implied obligation to reimburse M. de Fellenberg, by the proceeds of their labor, for the expenses of maintaining them through their earlier and more helpless years. Many of them were picked up from the highways, from beggary and vagrancy and trained into well-behaved and useful men. They had each a sleeping-room, small and poor, such as a laboring man must expect to occupy, but neatly kept. The clothing was uniform; in summer of coarse linen, in winter of woolen; they were used to go bareheaded all the year, and barefooted in summer. The diet was simple; chiefly bread, vegetables, soup and milk, with meat once or twice a week, and wine (of Swiss home manufacture, and very nearly like ordinary cider,) on three or four great occasions, such as the new year, the harvest home, and the birth-day of Vehrli, which latter was celebrated with remarkable and touching demonstrations of love and gratitude from the pupils. The time devoted to farm labor was from ten hours to seventeen, (such an exertion being voluntary, and not allowed except in some urgent case,) in summer, and from seven to nine in winter. Instruction usually wholly occupied three or four hours in summer, and five or six in winter. But the whole life of the pupil was made an instruction, by the diligent use of every opportunity of conversation or intercourse; and subjects or questions were proposed for consideration

during working hours, to be discussed or answered at the general meeting in the evening. The course of instruction included reading, writing, arithmetic, mental and written, the elements of drawing, surveying, and mensuration, music and singing, and a general rudimentary training in natural history and philosophy, especially so far as the natural phenomena and productions of their daily life and immediate neighborhood furnished materials. Besides the field and home labor of the farm, they were also taught to perform all the ordinary household duties, and to sew enough to enable them to mend their own clothes. The stimulus of emulation or reward was diligently avoided; no commendation being used except the appearance of pleasure in the teacher, or the words, "That is right." The reward for the efforts of the pupils was their satisfaction in attainment, in self-control, in self-respect, and in power of execution, and in doing good.

In his management of the school for teachers at Kruitzingen, Vehrli has uniformly adhered to the same general principles. His long experience in training poor children enables him to train teachers for poor children, with rare and singularly adapted skill. In some letters by K. G. Lessmuller, of Dresden, published in the Saxon Church Gazette, (1846, No. 8,) there is a characteristic, but casual view of Vehrli. "His pupils" says Lessmuller, "are not permitted to acquire habits of refinement which could not assist them in their future experience, but, aside from their special instruction in teaching, they are taught such other acquirements as may be useful, not only to the children under their charge, but to their parents also. Accordingly, they not only study the principles of agriculture, but are required to put their knowledge into practice in detail by the labor of their own hands, Vehrli and his wife setting the example. I myself found them both, with a company of pupils, in the latter part of the afternoon, busy at harvesting. In strengthening and hardening his own body, Vehrli serves as an excellent model for his pupils; and I had an opportunity of seeing for myself how thoroughly he has inured himself to the weather. At my departure he accompanied me during about four hours, to direct me in the road, through a pretty heavy rain, without any covering on his head, and as he maintained, without any risk of injuring his health."

The fifty years of Vehrli's labors have not been without fruit. Although the reform and elevation of the masses of the Swiss people has not been so great as he hoped for, it has been appreciable and important. Still, it is probable that the greatest result has been the general diffusion throughout Europe of his principles and practice in the establishment and management of schools of refuge and reform for the young. All the Swiss establishments, thirty or forty in number, with hardly an exception, follow the example of the Vehrli School, and of Kruitzingen, in regard to the course of training and general design and management; and a large proportion of them are actually under the direction of Vehrli's former pupils. But this is not all. The example has been followed in Germany, France, and England. The training school at Battersea, Lady Byron's school at Ealing,

the school at Beuggen, in Baden, the Rauhe Haus, at Hamburg ; indeed, the large majority of all the modern European institutions for assisting or reforming vicious or unfortunate children, have been organized upon the basis of some of the distinctive features of Hofwyl, or Kruitzlingen.

Thus, the efforts of Vehrli may be considered as having attained, if not perfect success, yet a much greater measure of it than often falls to the lot of the benevolent worker for the good of his kind. He has set a standard of excellence already widely known, and every where approved, and so lofty that it will scarcely be raised, for the creation of a class of institutions already numerous, daily increasing in number, yet hardly having commenced their work, whose future influence in preventing and repressing vice and unhappiness throughout the whole civilized world, will be valuable beyond all computation.

We append several interesting notices of Vehrli and his school, by visitors every way competent to judge fairly of the value of his labors. We begin with a description by Sir J. Kay Shuttleworth

The normal school at Kruitzlingen is in the summer palace of the former abbot of the convent of that name, on the shore of the Lake of Constance, about one mile from the gate of the city. The pupils are sent thither from the several communes of the canton, to be trained three years by Vehrli, before they take charge of the communal schools. Their expenses are borne in part by the commune, and partly by the council of the canton. We found ninety young men, apparently from eighteen to twenty-four or twenty-six years of age, in the school. Vehrli welcomed us with frankness and simplicity, which at once won our confidence. We joined him at his frugal meal. He pointed to the viands, which were coarse, and said,—“I am a peasant’s son. I wish to be no other than I am, the teacher of the sons of the peasantry. You are welcome to my meal: it is coarse and homely, but it is offered cordially.”

We sat down with him. “These potatoes,” he said, “are our own. We won them from the earth, and therefore we need no dainties, for our appetite is gained by labor, and the fruit of our toil is always savory.” This introduced the subject of industry. He told us all the pupils of the normal school labored daily some hours in a garden of several acres attached to the house, and that they performed all the domestic duty of the household. When we walked out with Vehrli, we found them in the garden digging, and carrying on other garden operations, with great assiduity. Others were sawing wood into logs, and chopping it into billets in the court-yard. Some brought in sacks of potatoes on their backs, or baskets of recently gathered vegetables. Others labored in the domestic duties of the household.

After a while the bell rang, and immediately their out-door labors terminated, and they returned in an orderly manner, with all their implements, to the court-yard, where having deposited them, thrown off their frocks, and washed, they reassembled in their respective class-rooms.

We soon followed them. Here we listened to lessons in mathematics, proving that they were well-grounded in the elementary parts of that science. We saw them drawing from models with considerable skill and precision, and heard them instructed in the laws of perspective. We listened to a lecture on the code of the canton, and to instruction in the geography of Europe. We were informed that their instruction extended to the language of the canton, its construction and grammar, and especially to the history of Switzerland ; arithmetic ; mensuration ; such a knowledge of natural philosophy and mechanics as might enable them to explain the chief phenomena of nature and the mechanical forces ; some acquaintance with astronomy. They had continual lessons in pedagogy, or the theory of the art of teaching, which they practiced in the neighboring village school. We were assured that their instruction in the Holy Scriptures, and other religious knowledge, was a constant subject of solicitude.

The following extract from Vehrli’s address at the first examination of the pupils, in 1837, will best explain the spirit that governs the seminary, and the



attention paid there to what we believe has been too often neglected in this country—the education of the heart and feelings, as distinct from the cultivation of the intellect. It may appear strange to English habits to assign so prominent a place in an educational institution to the following points, but the indication here given of the superior care bestowed in the formation of the character, to what is given to the acquisition of knowledge, forms in our view the chief charm and merit in this and several other Swiss seminaries, and is what we have labored to impress on the institution we have founded. To those who can enter into its spirit, the following extract will not appear tinged with too sanguine views:—

“The course of life in this seminary is three-fold.

“1st.—Life in the home circle, or family life.

“2nd.—Life in the school-room.

“3rd.—Life beyond the walls in the cultivation of the soil.

“I place the family life first, for here the truest education is imparted; here the future teacher can best receive that cultivation of the character and feelings which will fit him to direct those, who are entrusted to his care, in the ways of piety and truth.

“A well-arranged family circle is the place where each member, by participating in the others’ joys and sorrows, pleasures and misfortunes, by teaching, advice, consolation, and example, is inspired with sentiments of single-mindedness, of charity, of mutual confidence, of noble thoughts, of high feelings, and of virtue.

“In such a circle can a true religious sense take the firmest and the deepest root. Here it is that the principles of Christian feeling can best be laid, where opportunity is continually given for the exercise of affection and charity, which are the first virtues that should distinguish a teacher’s mind. Here it is that kindness and earnestness can most surely form the young members to be good and intelligent men, and that each is most willing to learn and receive an impress from his fellow. He who is brought up in such a circle, who thus recognizes all his fellow-men as brothers, serves them with willingness whenever he can, treats all his race as one family, loves them, and God their father above all, how richly does such a one scatter blessings around! What earnestness does he show in all his doings and conduct, what devotion especially does he display in the business of a teacher! How differently from him does that master enter and leave his school, whose feelings are dead to a sense of piety, and whose heart never beats in unison with the joys of family life.

“Where is such a teacher as I have described most pleasantly occupied? In his school amongst his children, with them in the house of God or in the family circle, and wherever he can be giving or receiving instruction. A great man has expressed, perhaps too strongly, ‘I never wish to see a teacher who can not sing.’ With more reason I would maintain, that a teacher to whom a sense of the pleasures of a well-arranged family is wanting, and who fails to recognize in it a well-grounded religious influence, should never enter a school-room.”

As we returned from the garden with the pupils on the evening of the first day, we stood for a few minutes with Vehrli in the court-yard by the shore of the lake. The pupils had ascended into the class-rooms, and the evening being tranquil and warm, the windows were thrown up, and we shortly afterward heard them sing in excellent harmony. As soon as this song had ceased we sent a message to request another, with which we had become familiar in our visits to the Swiss schools; and thus, in succession, we called for song after song of Nageli, imagining that we were only directing them at their usual hour of instruction in vocal music. There was a great charm in this simple but excellent harmony. When we had listened nearly an hour, Vehrli invited us to ascend into the room where the pupils were assembled. We followed him, and on entering the apartment, great was our surprise to discover the whole school, during the period we had listened, had been cheering with songs their evening employment of peeling potatoes, and cutting the stalks from the green vegetables and beans which they had gathered in the garden. As we stood there they renewed their choruses till prayers were announced. Supper had been previously taken. After prayers, Vehrli, walking about the apartment, conversed with them familiarly on the occurrences of the day, mingling with

his conversation such friendly admonition as sprang from the incidents, and then lifting his hands he recommended them to the protection of heaven, and dismissed them to rest.

We spent two days with great interest in this establishment. Vehrli had ever on his lips:—"We are peasant's sons. We would not be ignorant of our duties, but God forbid that knowledge should make us despise the simplicity of our lives. The earth is our mother, and we gather our food from her breast, but while we peasants labor for our daily food, we may learn many lessons from our mother earth. There is no knowledge in books like an immediate converse with nature, and those that dig the soil have nearest communion with her. Believe me, or believe me not, this is the thought that can make a peasant's life sweet, and his toil a luxury. I know it, for see my hands are horny with toil. The lot of men is very equal, and wisdom consists in the discovery of the truth that what is *without* is not the source of sorrow, but that which is within. A peasant may be happier than a prince if his conscience be pure before God, and he learn not only contentment, but joy, in the life of labor which is to prepare him for the life of heaven."

This was the theme always on Vehrli's lips. Expressed with more or less perspicuity, his main thought seemed to be that poverty, rightly understood, was no misfortune. He regarded it as a sphere of human exertion and human trial, preparatory to the change of existence, but offering its own sources of enjoyment as abundantly as any other. "We are all equal," he said, "before God; why should the son of a peasant envy a prince, or the lily an oak; are they not both God's creatures?"

We were greatly charmed in this school by the union of comparatively high intellectual attainments among the scholars, with the utmost simplicity of life, and cheerfulness in the humblest menial labor. Their food was of the coarsest character, consisting chiefly of vegetables, soups, and very brown bread. They rose between four and five, took three meals in the day, the last about six, and retired to rest at nine. They seemed happy in their lot.

Some of the other normal schools of Switzerland are remarkable for the same simplicity in their domestic arrangements, though the students exceed in their intellectual attainments all notions prevalent in England of what should be taught in such schools. Thus in the normal school of the canton of Berne the pupils worked in the fields during eight hours of the day, and spent the rest in intellectual labor. They were clad in the coarsest dresses of the peasantry, wore wooden shoes, and were without stockings. Their intellectual attainments, however, would have enabled them to put to shame the masters of most of our best elementary schools.

Such men, we felt assured, would go forth cheerfully to their humble village homes to spread the doctrine which Vehrli taught of peace and contentment in virtuous exertion; and men similarly trained appeared to us best fitted for the labor of reclaiming the pauper youth of England to the virtues, and restoring them to the happiness, of her best instructed peasantry.

A brother of Dr. Kay, in his "Education of the Poor in England and Europe," thus speaks of Vehrli:

"I saw Vehrli twice. The first time I found him clad in a plain coarse tweed vest, at work upon his fields; and on my second visit, he was busily engaged with his boys in repairing the plain wooden furniture of his house, and the handles, &c., of his farming tools. He said to me, 'You must not expect to find any grandeur in our house; my boys are all to be engaged among our peasants, and I teach them to sympathize with those with whom they must associate hereafter, by accustoming them and myself to simple peasants' lives.' On my first visit I dined with him. The viands were of the plainest possible kind, but Vehrli reminded me that the laborer's fare was no better, and that therefore the laborer's companion and teacher ought to be satisfied. The result of this simple life is, that while in other parts of Switzerland, schoolmasters, who have been admirably instructed at Normal schools, but who have never had the advantage of the excellent discipline of the habits which Vehrli's pupils

receive, often become discontented with the drudgery of a schoolmaster's life, the young men, who have left Vehrli's school, are found to persevere with cheerfulness and Christian enthusiasm in the work of instruction and social reformation.

Throughout Switzerland, Vehrli's school is looked on as the pattern, and in all the other Normal Schools they are gradually adopting his views relative to the education of the teachers.

I have thus particularly noticed the necessity of a great simplicity in the daily life of a pupil-teacher, as I fear this important part of a schoolmaster's training is almost entirely neglected in several of the few Normal schools we at present possess. We seem to imagine that it is a perfectly easy thing for a man, who has acquired habits of life fitting him for the higher circles of society, to associate with the poor, without any previous training. No mistake can be more fatal to the progress of the religious education of the poor. An instructed man, accustomed for several years to the society of intellectual professors and companions, without having any thing to remind him of, still less to habituate him to communication with, the humble class among whom he is afterward to live, must feel considerable reluctance, if not decided disgust, when he finds himself called on to associate with the simple, rude, and uneducated poor. To enable him to do this, requires as careful a training as to enable him to teach; and although men are found, whose sense of duty and whose Christian philanthropy triumph over the defects of their education, yet, in the majority of cases, the dissimilarity of tastes between the teacher and his associates, must at least curtail his power of doing good, even if it does not actually cause him to neglect altogether the principal of his duties, from that natural repugnance which he cannot surmount. To teach the poor effectively, we must choose the teachers from among themselves; and during their education we must continually accustom them to the humble character of their former lives, as well as to that of their future associates. The Roman Catholic Church has always clearly understood this truth. She has perceived from the first, with that sagacity which has marked all her worldly policy, that to obtain men who would really understand and sympathize with the poor, and who would feel no disgust for the greatest duty of a priest's life, the visitation of the meanest hovels, she must take her teachers from the poor themselves, and keep their minds continually habituated to a toilsome and humble life, whilst receiving education fitting them to be the religious teachers of the people. The greater part, therefore, of her priests are chosen from the poorer classes. The poor know that these priests can understand their necessities, can sympathize with their sufferings, and can visit their simple firesides without disgust. Whilst, therefore, the Roman Catholic peasant respects his priest for the sacred character of the office he fills and for the education he has received, there is none of that painful sense of separation between them, which exists, where the peasant feels that his religious minister belongs to another class and can never perfectly comprehend the situation, the wants, and the troubles of the poor. Still less does such a religious minister feel any difficulty in his communications with the poor. He visits the meanest hovel without disgust, he associates with the laborer without any danger of exhibiting an insolent air of worldly superiority, and knowing what a laborer's feelings are, he communicates with him without embarrassment, without reserve, and above all, without superciliousness.

In the Catholic cantons of Switzerland the priest is not only the spiritual adviser, but he is also the friend and companion of the laborer, and that too, naturally, without any difficulty to himself, and with infinite advantage to the poor. An Englishman would scarcely believe me, were I

to describe how the priests, in the Catholic cantons, may be seen associating with the peasants.

In this country, where the clergyman is so far separated from the poor man by his station in society, his associations, habits, and education, it becomes doubly important that the schoolmaster of the Church should be a connecting link between the clergyman and his flock. He ought to be the adjutant of the clergyman, capable by his education to be indeed his assistant, and strictly united by his habits to the poor, among whom he ought with cheerfulness to labor.

Deeply grieved am I, then, to see that in some of our Normal schools we have not only abandoned the idea of labor being a necessary part of the discipline of a Normal school, but that we are accustoming the pupil-teachers to manners of dress and living far, far above those of the poor, among whom they must afterward live, and with whom they ought continually to associate. The life of a pupil-teacher in a Normal school ought to be such, that when he leaves it for his village school, he shall find his new position one of greater ease and comfort than the one he has left, and that he may feel no disgust for the laborious drudgery that must fall to his lot in such a situation.

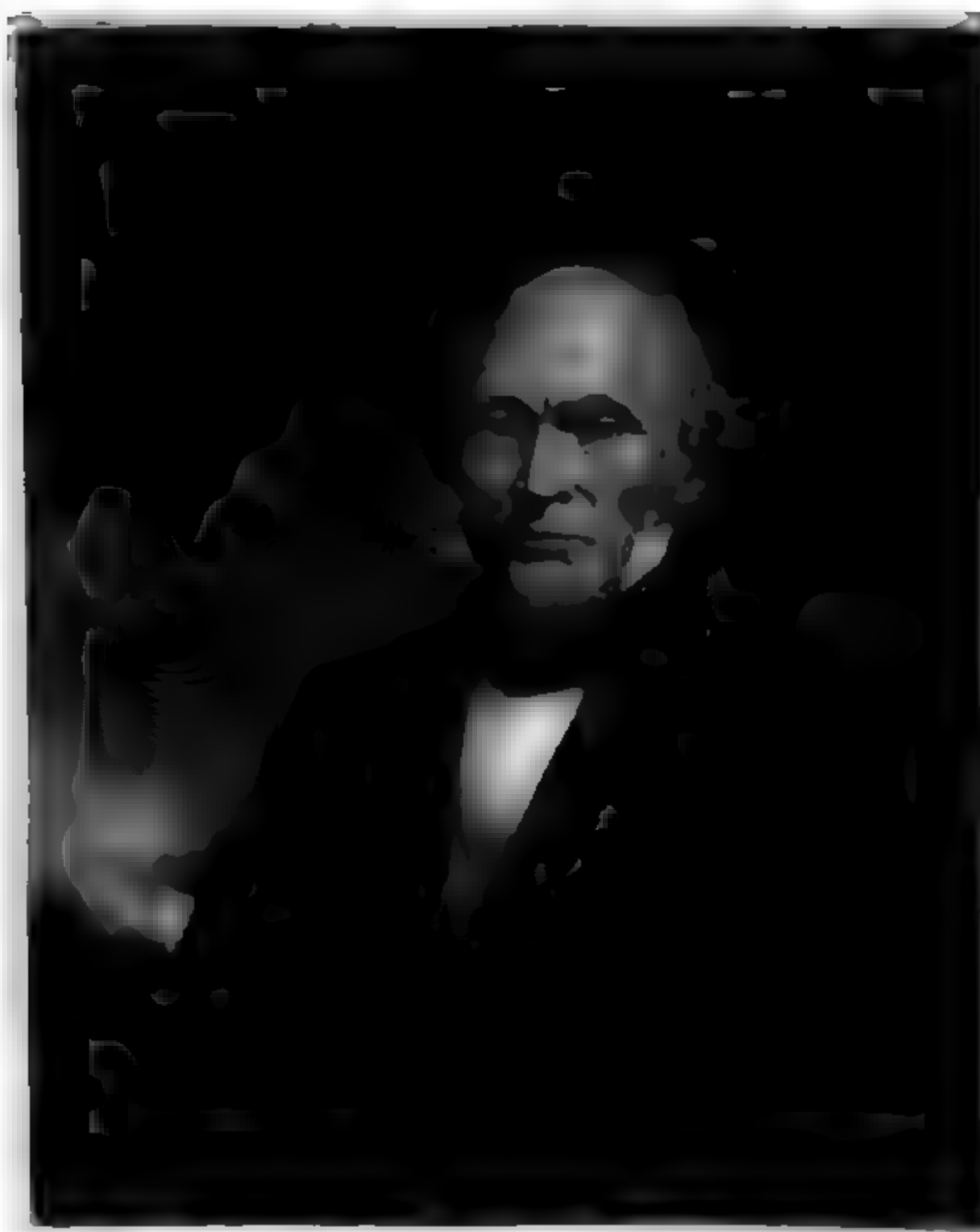
M. Prosper Dumont, in his treatise\* on Normal Schools, published in Paris, in 1841, commends the Normal School of Vehrli, "as an excellent model for educating teachers for country schools." So profoundly was he impressed by the character of this practical educator, and the results of his teaching and example, that he regards Vehrli "as a beautiful example of the Normal teacher,—the religious and well-informed laborer, capable of demonstrating, in an unequivocal manner, to working men, that enlightened and elevated sentiments are not incompatible with manual labor. All is here combined to contribute to the education of a country teacher; the example is always placed by the side of the precept; all instruction is mutually connected, and illustrative of each other; the moral, mental, and physical development go along together. The whole atmosphere is pedagogic—the pupil teacher imbibes the spirit of his vocation at every pore. That which strikes most is the happy application of the best principles of education, and the profoundly Christian spirit, without ostentation, which characterizes every portion of the detail."

---

\* M. Dumont received the prize offered by the Academy of Moral and Political Sciences, in 1838, for the best discussion of the question: "What degree of perfection may the establishment of primary Normal Schools acquire, considering them in their relation to the moral education of youth?"

The title of the work is "De l'Education Populaire et des Ecoles Normales Primaires." Paris, 1841.





Portrait of Paul F. Farnham, President of the Board of Directors, 1904-1905

*Paul Farnham*

100

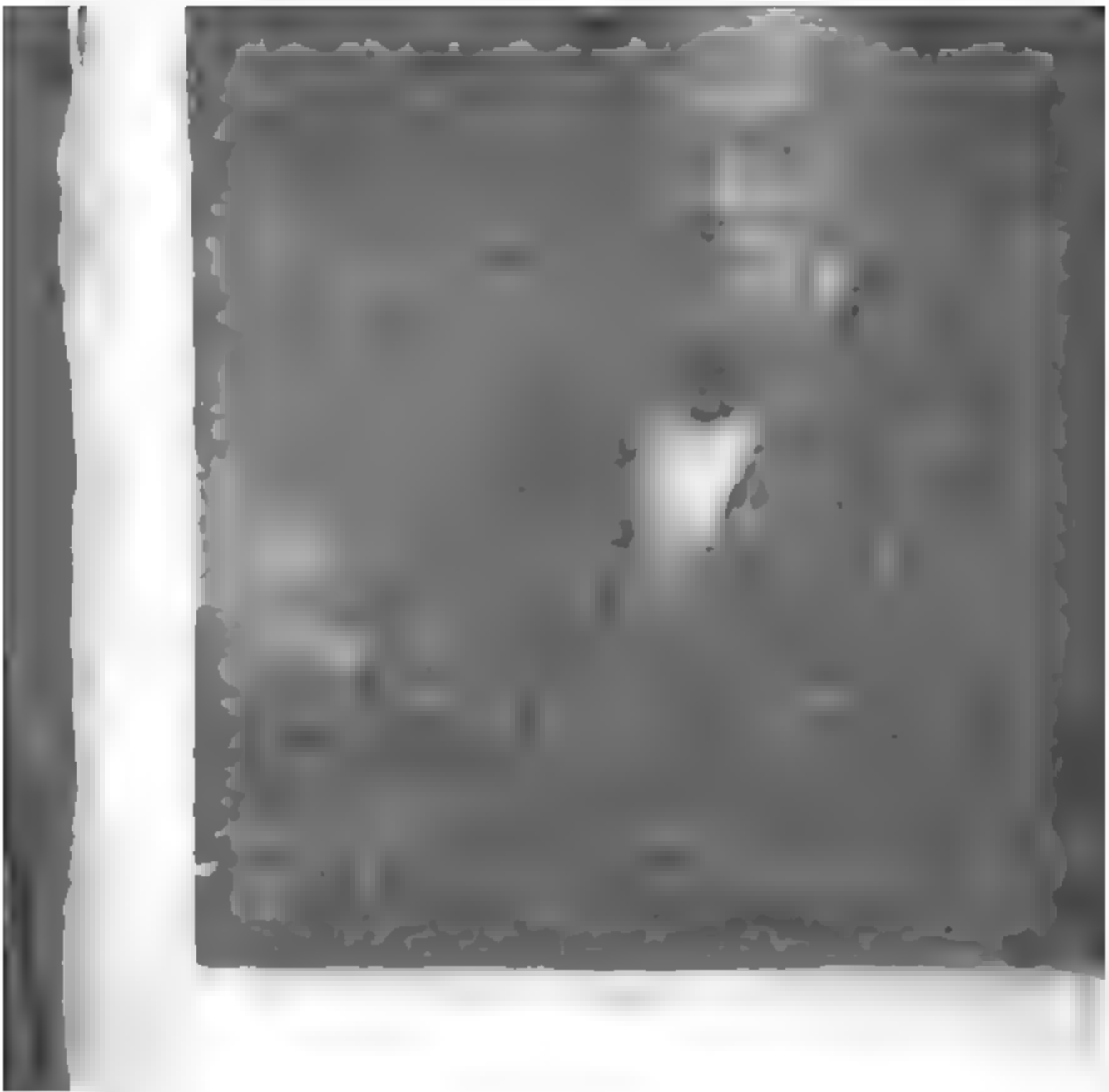
100

100

100

100





## VIII, FARNUM PREPARATORY SCHOOL,

OF NEW JERSEY.

---

**PACI FARNUM**, whose name is indissolubly associated by act of the legislature of New Jersey, passed May, 1857, with the Preparatory School, at Beverly, which his liberality has established, endowed, and conveyed to that state, and by the legislature adopted as a state institution, was born in Worcester County, Mass., in the year 1788, and is now therefore in his seventieth year. He removed to Boston, in 1825, and from that year, until 1846, was very successfully engaged in mercantile pursuits in the cities of Boston, and Philadelphia. During the latter year he abandoned business, and retired to a quiet and rural home on the high banks of the Delaware, near the borough of Beverly, where he now resides.

**Mr. Farnum** had for many years, entertained as a favorite idea, the project of establishing and endowing a school of a high order, for the benefit of the youth in his adopted vicinage. But when the legislature of New Jersey, in the winter of 1855, passed an act for the establishment of a Normal School for the training of teachers, leaving the location of the institution, open to the competition of the different localities desiring it, his quick eye readily discerned the means by which his generous purposes might be made at once to assume a much more comprehensive and beneficent shape, and to confer a succession of untold blessings, not only upon his own immediate neighborhood, but upon the people of the entire state. Accordingly, when proposals for the location of the Normal School were solicited, **Mr. Farnum**, appeared before the Board of Trustees, with offers more liberal than those made by any other man, or association of men.

His propositions would have been promptly accepted, but for overruling considerations, which compelled the trustees to fix upon the capital of the state, as the most appropriate theater for the trial of an "experiment," instituted by the legislature, and dependent upon its approving aid for a successful issue.

**Mr. Farnum** cheerfully acquiesced in this decision of the trustees, but proceeded with the erection of the building already commenced by him, and awaited a favorable opportunity for the realization of his favorite object,—that of aiding the commonwealth in her efforts for the training of teachers for her public schools. The State Normal

School, established by the legislature, was opened in October, 1855, in a building temporarily secured for the purpose, until the completion of the elegant and commodious edifice provided by the citizens of Trenton, and now occupied by the institution. After the Normal School had been in operation for a sufficient length of time to vindicate its utility, and importance to the great scheme of public education, and to turn the strong tide of opposition which was at first brought to bear against it, Mr. Farnum again appeared before the trustees on the occasion of the dedication of the Normal School edifice, and made a proposition still more liberal than that originally laid before that body. He not only offered to place the building which he had erected, and furnished, freely at their disposal, but proposed that, if a preparatory school should be opened therein, auxiliary to the State Normal School, he would defray its entire expenses for at least one year. He also agreed, that the entire property, together with an endowment of twenty thousand dollars, should be left at his decease, in trust for the state, conditional only, that a preparatory school should be maintained therein, under the direction of the state government. Of course there could be but one opinion, and one disposition in regard to proposals so generous in their origin, and so philanthropic in their bearing upon the welfare of future generations. They were promptly accepted, in so far as the trustees felt themselves empowered by the act creating the board to do so, until such time as the requisite authority could be obtained from the legislature to connect the scheme more intimately with the state educational machinery.

The preparatory school was accordingly opened for the reception of pupils on the 8th of October, 1856. The applications for admission were very numerous, summing up about one hundred and eighty, of which number, about one hundred and forty were, on due examination, admitted. The organization of the school is such as to secure in a high degree the peculiar objects of such an institution, to wit: the preparation of candidates for admission to a Teachers' Seminary, where a strictly professional education and training are to be imparted. To this end it is so graded as to lay the foundations broad and deep, in a thorough and rigorous system of elementary training, for the future *teacher-scholar*. And not only does it aim to secure this great *desideratum*, but it also seeks to determine the fitness of a candidate to *become* a candidate for the office of a teacher of youth. In other words, its forces are so applied as to determine as far as human judgment *can* determine, the *adaptation* of its pupils for the profession of teaching. For this purpose, there is an "experimental department," composed of young children to which the candidate is sent to practice

the duties of the teacher under the supervision of a competent master. This practice is continued for a sufficient length of time, and under such circumstances as to make it a decisive test. He is for a portion of the time left to himself, and his ability to impart instruction, to govern children, to influence conduct and character, is thus allowed to have full play. If one trial be insufficient to determine the question of adaptation, another is instituted, and the process is repeated until a decided tendency in one direction or another is developed and confirmed. If this question be settled unfavorably the candidate is not allowed to enter the Normal School where the liberality of the state would be wasted upon him, but is advised and encouraged to seek other means of usefulness and support, more in consonance with his peculiar tastes and his special adaptations.

In order to meet this exigency, there is connected with the preparatory school an academic department, to which the unsuccessful aspirant for pedagogic honors is permitted to go for the purpose of continuing his general education and his preparation for active life. Here he ceases to be a beneficiary, either of the state, or of the founder of the institution, but is required to pay a tuition, adequate to meet the expenses of his pupilage.

It will be at once obvious to those who have studied the working of our normal systems, that this operation of the preparatory school will correct, to a great extent, evils of no little magnitude; for, while it divides the labor of the merely scholastic training of the pupil-teacher, it also diminishes the number of those who having been at the public expense trained at the Normal School, are destined at last to fail as teachers in the public schools. These evils have doubtless done more to embarrass, and retard the progress of normal schools in our country than all other causes combined. If, in carrying on the general education of the people, a division and adaptation of labor by means of a gradation of schools is necessary, there is an equal urgency for it, in the great work of the special training of teachers who are to form the moral and intellectual character of our future citizens. If good schools are the product of good teachers, it must be equally obvious that good teachers can be produced only by the operation of such intelligent, judicious, and adequate causes as a graded system of preparatory and normal schools alone can supply.

Such are some of the leading ideas attempted to be embodied in the organization of the institution which forms the subject of these remarks. Time and effort will be required fully to work them out, but that they may in an eminent degree be realized, there can scarcely be a doubt. The legislature, at its late session, having given legal

sanction to the action of the trustees, by recognizing it as a part of its educational system, have at the same time endorsed the propriety of these views, and afforded ample scope for submitting them to a rigorous practical test.

As a crowning act of the comprehensive liberality of the founder of the preparatory school, he submitted directly to the legislature of New Jersey, during the month of February last, another proposition accompanied by an agreement duly verified, not only to bequeath to the commonwealth the property of the school, valued at not less than thirty thousand dollars, including the expenses of its support for the first year, with an endowment of twenty thousand dollars more, but he offered to pay the interest on the proposed endowment for the benefit of the institution until his decease, on condition, that the state should pay an amount equal to this interest, for the support of the same, for all time. A law was promptly, and by an almost unanimous vote of both houses passed, accepting the trust, and placing the institution under the the direction of the trustees of the State Normal School.

The preparatory school, is therefore, in possession of an elegant and commodious brick edifice, two and a half stories in height, liberally, and tastefully furnished, and surrounded by ample grounds, which will soon be handsomely laid out and adorned with ornamental shrubbery. It has also, an annual income of two thousand four hundred dollars, one half of this sum, being the interest of Mr. Farnum's endowment, and the remainder, being the amount of the annual appropriation fixed by the legislature of 1857.

A more particular elucidation of the plan of organization, and mode of management, will hereafter be given, in an article upon the legal provision for the training and improvement of teachers in New Jersey, including the Teachers' Institutes, and State Normal School, to appear in a future number of the Journal. In conclusion it may not be inappropriate to remark, that in the establishment of this institution, Mr. Farnum, has not only thus rendered "material aid," to the common schools of his adopted state, but he has rendered it in such a manner as will secure to them the greatest possible amount of perpetual and ever increasing good. By thus contributing to the thorough training of an endless succession of teachers, qualified to guide the susceptible minds and hearts of youth, his far reaching benevolence is destined to affect for good, either directly or remotely, every household in the commonwealth, and, indeed, throughout our widely extended country. Surely the hand of whole-souled benevolence will never be able to find a broader or nobler field in which to exercise its activity than this.

## IX. THE LIFE AND EDUCATIONAL SYSTEM OF PESTALOZZI.

BY CARL VON RAUMER,\*

*Minister of Public Worship and Instruction in Prussia.*

---

JOHN HENRY PESTALOZZI was born at Zurich on the 12th of January, 1746. His father was a medical practitioner; his mother, whose maiden name was Hotze, was a native of Wädenschwyl on the Lake of Zurich, and first cousin to the Austrian general Hotze, who fell at Schännis in 1799.

The father died prematurely, when Pestalozzi was only six years old; from this time forward, therefore, "every thing was wanting, in the influences around him, which a manly education of the faculties so urgently requires at that age." "I was brought up," he relates, "by the hand of the best of mothers like a spoilt darling, such that you will not easily find a greater. From one year to another I never left the domestic hearth; in short, all the essential means and inducements to the development of manly vigor, manly experience, manly ways of thinking, and manly exercises, were just as much wanting to me, as, from the peculiarity and weakness of my temperament, I especially needed them."

This peculiarity, according to Pestalozzi's own statement, was, that with the most sensitive feelings and the liveliest imagination, he was deficient in the power of sustained attention, in reflection, circumspection, and foresight.

His mother devoted herself wholly to the education of her three children, in which she was assisted by a faithful servant girl from the country, of the name of Babeli. Pestalozzi's father, on his death-bed, sent for this girl. "Babeli," said he, "for the sake of God and mercy, do not leave my wife; when I am dead, she will be forlorn, and my children will fall into strange and cruel hands." "I will not leave your wife when you die," replied Babeli; "I will remain with her till death, if she has need of me." Her words pacified the dying father; she kept her promise, and remained till her death with the

---

\* In this article we follow literally, but with occasional abridgments, the translation of Prof. J. Tilleard, originally published in the *Educational Expositor* for 1853-4, and afterward collected in a volume of 80 pages, by Longman, Brown, Green and Longmans, London: 1855.

mother. "Her great fidelity," Pestalozzi says, "was the result of her strong, simple, and pious faith." As the mother was in very straitened circumstances, Babeli economized wherever she could; she even restrained the children when they wanted to go into the street, or to any place where they had no business to go, with the words, "why will you needlessly wear out your shoes and clothes? See how much your mother denies herself, in order to be able to give you an education; how for weeks and months together she never goes out any where, but saves every farthing for your schooling." Nevertheless, the mother was liberal in those expenses which respectability requires, nor did she let the children be without handsome Sunday clothes. These, however, they were allowed to wear but seldom, and they had to take them off again as soon as they came home.

"I saw the world," says Pestalozzi, "only within the narrow limits of my mother's parlor, and within the equally narrow limits of my school-room; to real human life I was almost as great a stranger, as if I did not live in the world in which I dwelt."

Pestalozzi's grandfather on the mother's side was minister at Hönegg, a village three miles from Zurich. With him Pestalozzi spent several months every year, from the time when he was nine years old. The old man conscientiously cared for the souls of his flock, and thereby exercised a great influence upon the village school; his piety made a deep and lasting impression on his grandson.

Of his early school days, Pestalozzi relates the following:—

"In all boys' games, I was the most clumsy and helpless among all my school fellows, and nevertheless, in a certain way, I always wanted to excel the others. This caused some of them very frequently to pass their jokes upon me. One of them gave me the nickname 'Harry Whimsical of Foolstown.' Most of them, however, liked my good natured and obliging disposition; though they knew my general clumsiness and awkwardness, as well as my carelessness and thoughtlessness in everything that did not particularly interest me.

"Accordingly, although one of the best pupils, I nevertheless committed, with incomprehensible thoughtlessness, faults of which not even the worst of them was ever guilty. While I generally seized with quickness and accuracy upon the essential matter of the subjects of instruction, I was generally very indifferent and thoughtless as to the forms in which it was given. At the same time that I was far behind my fellow scholars in some parts of a subject, in other parts of the same subject I often surpassed them in an unusual



degree. This is so true, that once, when one of my professors, who had a very good knowledge of Greek, but not the least eloquence of style, translated and published some orations of Demosthenes, I had the boldness, with the limited school rudiments which I then possessed, to translate one of these orations myself, and to give it in, at the examination, as a specimen of my progress in this branch of study. A portion of this translation was printed in the Linden Journal, in connection with an article entitled 'Agis.' Just in the same manner as I made incomparably more progress in certain parts of my subjects of instruction than in others, so generally it was of far more importance to me to be sensibly affected by, (I dare not say to understand thoroughly,) the branches of knowledge which I was to learn, than to exercise myself in the means of practicing them. At the same time, the wish to be acquainted with some branches of knowledge that took hold on my heart and my imagination, even though I neglected the means of acquiring them, was nevertheless enthusiastically alive within me; and unfortunately, the tone of public instruction in my native town at this period was in a high degree calculated to foster this visionary fancy of taking an active interest in, and believing one's self capable of, the practice of things in which one had by no means had sufficient exercise, and this fancy was very prevalent among the youth of my native town generally." What a foreshadowing is Pestalozzi's childhood of the whole of his subsequent career!

Among Pestalozzi's teachers, there were three who exercised an influence upon him in his youth,—Bodmer, Breitinger, and Steinbrüchel. Bodmer was Professor of History from 1725 to 1775; he is known by his literary controversies with Gottsched and Lessing, his edition of the Minniesingers, and his epic poem upon the Deluge. Breitinger, Professor of Greek and Hebrew from 1731 to 1776, edited the Septuagint. Steinbrüchel is described as a witty and learned man, but very much inclined to infidel "illumination." "Independence, freedom, beneficence, self-sacrifice, and patriotism, were the watchwords of our public education," says Pestalozzi. "But the means of attaining all this which was particularly commended to us—mental distinction—was left without solid and sufficient training of the practical ability which is its essential condition. We were taught, in a visionary manner, to seek for independence in an abstract acquaintance with truth, without being made to feel strongly what was essentially necessary to the security both of our inward and of our outward domestic and civil independence. The tone of the instruction which we received, led us, with much vivacity and many attractive representations, to be so short-sighted and inconsiderate as

to set little value upon, and almost to despise, the external means of wealth, honor, and consideration. This was carried to such a length, that we imagined, while we were yet in the condition of boys, that, by a superficial school acquaintance with the great civil life of Greece and Rome, we could eminently prepare ourselves for the little civil life in one of the Swiss cantons."

Pestalozzi further relates, that the appearance of the writings of Rousseau was a great means of keeping alive the errors into which the noble flight of true and patriotic sentiment had led the more distinguished of the young Swiss. "They had run," he says, "into one-sided, rash, and confused notions, into which Voltaire's seductive infidelity, being opposed to the pure holiness of religion, and to its simplicity and innocence, had helped to lead them. Out of all this," he tells us, "a new tendency was produced, which was totally inconsistent with the real welfare of our native town, constituted as it was according to the old-fashioned style of the imperial free cities, which was neither calculated to preserve what was good in the old institutions, nor to introduce any that were substantially better."

At this time, Pestalozzi's contemporary, Lavater, founded a league which Pestalozzi joined, being then a lad of fifteen. The young men who formed this league, with Lavater at their head, brought a public charge of injustice against Grebel, the governor of the canton, impeached the character of Brunner, the mayor of Zurich, and declared war against unworthy ministers of religion.

"The moment Rousseau's *Emile* appeared," says Pestalozzi, "my visionary and highly speculative mind was enthusiastically seized by this visionary and highly speculative book. I compared the education which I enjoyed in the corner of my mother's parlor, and also in the school which I frequented, with what Rousseau demanded for the education of his *Emilus*. The home as well as the public education of the whole world, and of all ranks of society, appeared to me altogether as a crippled thing, which was to find a universal remedy for its present pitiful condition in Rousseau's lofty ideas.

"The ideal system of liberty, also, to which Rousseau imparted fresh animation, increased in me the visionary desire for a more extended sphere of activity, in which I might promote the welfare and happiness of the people. Juvenile ideas as to what it was necessary and possible to do in this respect in my native town, induced me to abandon the clerical profession, to which I had formerly leaned, and for which I had been destined, and caused the thought to spring up within me, that it might be possible, by the study of the law, to find a career that would be likely to procure for me, sooner or later, the

opportunity and means of exercising an active influence on the civil condition of my native town, and even of my native land."

There was at this time a great controversy in the canton of Zurich, particularly between the town and the country. Pestalozzi had already as a boy, when living with his grandfather, the village pastor, won the affection of the people of the country, and might early have heard the complaint of the country clergy, *omne malum ex urbe*,—"all harm comes from the town." A fierce hatred toward the aristocracy who oppressed the country people was kindled in his young heart, and even in old age it was not altogether extinguished. This warmth of anger coexisted in him with great warmth of love for the people; Göthe's saying—

"Youth's wings should trim themselves for flight  
Ere youthful strength be gone,  
Thro' hate of wrong and love of right  
To bear him bravely on—"

characterizes not only the young Pestalozzi, but also the old man; it characterizes most of his writings.

He was seconded at this time by a friend of the name of Bluntschli, but a pulmonary complaint laid this young man upon his death-bed. He sent for Pestalozzi, and said to him, "I die, and when you are left to yourself, you must not plunge into any career which from your good natured and confiding disposition, might become dangerous to you. Seek for a quiet, tranquil career; and unless you have at your side a man who will faithfully assist you with a calm, dispassionate knowledge of men and things, by no means embark in any extensive undertaking whose failure would in any way be perilous to you." An opinion of Pestalozzi's character which was strikingly confirmed by almost every subsequent event of his life.

Soon after his friend's death, Pestalozzi himself became dangerously ill, probably in consequence of his overstrained exertion in the pursuit of his legal and historical studies. His physicians advised him to give up scientific pursuits for a time, and to recreate himself in the country. This advice, which was strengthened by Rousseau's anti-scientific diatribes, Pestalozzi followed too faithfully. He renounced the study of books, burnt his manuscripts, went to his maternal relation, Dr. Hotze at Richterswyl, and from thence to Kirchberg, in the canton of Bern, to Tschiffeli, a farmer of considerable reputation. From him Pestalozzi sought advice as to how he might best realize his plans for the country people. "I had come to him," says Pestalozzi, "a political visionary, though with many profound and correct attainments, views, and prospects in political matters; and I went

away from him just as great an agricultural visionary, though with many enlarged and correct ideas and intentions in regard to agriculture. My stay with him only had this effect—that the gigantic views in relation to my exertions were awakened within me afresh by his agricultural plans, which, though difficult of execution, and in part impracticable, were bold and extensive; and that, at the same time, they caused me, in my thoughtlessness as to the means of carrying them out, to fall into a callousness, the consequences of which contributed in a decisive manner to the pecuniary embarrassment into which I was plunged in the very first years of my rural life.”

Tschiffeli's plantations of madder were exciting great attention at that time, and induced Pestalozzi to make a similar experiment. He learnt that near the village of Birr there was a large tract of barren chalky heath-land to be sold, which was only used for a sheep-walk. He joined a rich mercantile firm in Zurich, and bought about 100 acres of this land, at the nominal price of ten florins. A builder erected for him, on the land he had purchased, a dwelling house in the Italian style; Pestalozzi himself calls this an injudicious and imprudent step. To the whole estate he gave the name of Neuhof.

Among the friends of Pestalozzi's youth, was Schulthess, (the son of a wealthy merchant in Zurich,) for whose beautiful sister, Anna Schulthess, Pestalozzi entertained an affection. A letter which he wrote to the beautiful maiden, gives us a profound insight into the workings of his heart, and even into his future life. In this letter he lays before her his hopes and resolutions, and also, with the utmost candor and with great self-knowledge, his faults. He thus writes:—

“MY DEAR, MY ONLY FRIEND.

“Our whole future life, our whole happiness, our duties toward our country and our posterity, and the security of virtue, call upon us to follow the only correct guide in our actions—Truth. I will, with all candor, made known to you the serious reflection I have had in these solemn days upon the relation subsisting between us; I am happy that I know before-hand, that my friend will find more true love in the calm truth of this contemplation, which so intimately concerns our happiness, than in the ardor of pleasant, but often not too wise, outpourings of a feeling heart, which I now with difficulty restrain.

“Dear friend, first of all I must tell you that in future I shall but seldom dare to approach you. I have already come too frequently and too imprudently to your brother's house; I see that it becomes my duty to limit my visits to you; I have not the slightest ability to conceal my feelings. My sole art in this respect consists in fleeing from those who observe them; I should not be able to be in company

with you for even half an evening, without its being possible for a moderately acute observer to perceive that I was in a disturbed state of mind. We know each other sufficiently, dear, to be able to rely upon mutual straightforward honesty and sincerity. I propose to you a correspondence in which we shall make our undisguised thoughts known to each other with all the freedom of oral conversation. Yes, I will open myself fully and freely to you; I will even now with the greatest candor, let you look as deep into my heart as I am myself able to penetrate; I will show you my views in the light of my present and future condition, as clearly as I see them myself.

“Dearest Schulthess, those of my faults which appear to me the most important in relation to the situation in which I may be placed in after-life, are improvidence, incautiousness, and a want of presence of mind to meet unexpected changes in my future prospects, whenever they may occur. I know not how far they may be diminished by my efforts to counteract them, by calm judgment and experience. At present, I have them still in such a degree, that I dare not conceal them from the maiden whom I love; they are faults, my dear, which deserve your fullest consideration. I have other faults, arising from my irritability and sensitiveness, which oftentimes will not submit to my judgment. I very frequently allow myself to run into excesses in praising and blaming, in my likings and dislikings; I cleave so strongly to many things which I possess, that the force with which I feel myself bound to them often exceeds the limits which reason assigns; whenever my country or my friend is unhappy, I am myself unhappy. Direct your whole attention to this weakness; there will be times when the cheerfulness and tranquillity of my soul will suffer under it. If even it does not hinder me in the discharge of my duties, yet I shall scarcely ever be great enough to fulfill them, in such adverse circumstances, with the cheerfulness and tranquillity of a wise man, who is ever true to himself. Of my great, and indeed very reprehensible negligence in all matters of etiquette, and generally in all matters which are not in themselves of importance, I need not speak; any one may see them at first sight of me. I also owe you the open confession, my dear, that I shall always consider my duties toward my beloved partner subordinate to my duties toward my country; and that, although I shall be the tenderest husband, nevertheless I hold it to be my duty to be inexorable to the tears of my wife, if she should ever attempt to restrain me by them from the direct performance of my duties as a citizen, whatever this might lead to. My wife shall be the confidant of my heart, the partner of all my most secret counsels. A great and honest simplicity

shall reign in my house. And one thing more. My life will not pass without important and very critical undertakings. I shall not forget the precepts of Menalk, and my first resolutions to devote myself wholly to my country; I shall never from fear of man, refrain from speaking, when I see that the good of my country calls upon me to speak: my whole heart is my country's; I will risk all to alleviate the need and misery of my fellow countrymen. What consequences may the undertakings to which I feel myself urged on, draw after them; how unequal to them am I; and how imperative is my duty to show you the possibility of the great dangers which they may bring upon me!

"My dear, my beloved friend, I have now spoken candidly of my character and my aspirations. Reflect upon every thing. If the traits which it was my duty to mention, diminish your respect for me, you will still esteem my sincerity, and you will not think less highly of me, that I did not take advantage of your want of acquaintance with my character, for the attainment of my inmost wishes. Decide now whether you can give your heart to a man with these faults and in such a condition, and be happy.

"My dear friend, I love you so truly from my heart, and with such fervor, that this step has cost me much; I fear to lose you, dear, when you see me as I am; I had often determined to be silent; at last I have conquered myself. My conscience called loudly to me, that I should be a seducer and not a lover, if I were to hide from my beloved a trait of my heart, or a circumstance, which might one day disgust her and render her unhappy; I now rejoice at what I have done. If the circumstances into which duty and country shall call me, set a limit to my efforts and my hopes, still I shall not have been base-minded, not vicious; I have not sought to please you in a mask,—I have not deceived you with chimerical hopes of a happiness that is not to be looked for; I have concealed from you no danger and no sorrow of the future; I have nothing to reproach myself with."

It was in the year 1767 that Pestalozzi removed to Neuhof. On the 24th of January, 1769, two years later, he married Anna Schulthess, being then only twenty-four years old. It was not long before troubles came upon the young married couple. The madder plantation did not prosper; an assistant whom Pestalozzi had engaged, caused himself to be hated by every body; the Zurich firm, which had advanced money to Pestalozzi, sent two competent judges to examine into the condition of the estate—both of them reported so unfavorably upon it, especially upon the buildings, that the firm preferred taking back their capital with loss, to trusting it any longer in Pestalozzi's

hands. "The cause of the failure of my undertaking," says he, "lay essentially and exclusively in myself, and in my pronounced incapacity for every kind of undertaking which requires eminent practical ability."

Notwithstanding the great distress into which he fell, he resolved not only to go on with farming, but to combine with it a school for poor children. "I wished," says he, "to make my estate a centre for my educational and agricultural labors. In spite of all difficulties, I wanted, like a visionary, to reach the highest point in every respect, at the same time that I lacked the faculties, abilities, and skill, from which alone can proceed a proper attention to the first and humblest beginnings and preparatory steps to the great things which I sought after. So great, so unspeakably great, in consequence of the peculiarity of my mind, was the contrast between what I wished to do and what I did and was able to do, which arose from the disproportion between my good natured zeal, on the one side, and my mental impotency and unskillfulness in the affairs of life on the other."

By mental impotency, we must understand only a want of schooling or intellectual disciplining of the mind, for just at this time Pestalozzi's literary talent made itself known. He came forward with a plan for the establishment of the Poor School. His views and principles met with so much approbation in an economical point of view, in spite of the want of confidence, in his practical ability, that he received offers of assistance from Zurich, Bern, and Basel, and many poor children were sent to him.

Thus began the Neuhof Poor School in the year 1775; it had soon fifty pupils. In the summer, the children were to be chiefly employed in field-work,—in winter, with spinning and other handicrafts. During the time that they were engaged in the handicrafts, Pestalozzi gave them instruction; exercises in speaking were predominant.

But no long time elapsed before the establishment declined; to which result many things contributed. The children, who were to earn their support by their work, were, although beggar children, spoilt and full of demands. Their parents, who every Sunday besieged Neuhof, confirmed them in this, and also ran off with them as soon as they had got new clothes. None of the authorities protected Pestalozzi against this misconduct, from which the farming suffered a great deal. "But these difficulties," says Pestalozzi, "might gradually have been more or less overcome, if I had not sought to carry out my experiment on a scale that was quite disproportioned to my strength, and had not, with almost incredible thoughtlessness, wanted to convert it, in the very beginning, into an undertaking which pre-



supposed a thorough knowledge of manufactures, men, and business, in which I was deficient in the same proportion as they were rendered necessary to me by the direction which I now gave my undertaking. I, who so much disapproved of the hurrying to the higher stages of instruction, before a thorough foundation had been laid in the elementary steps of the lower stages, and looked upon it as the fundamental error in the education of the day, and who also believed that I was myself endeavoring with all my might to counteract it in my plan of education, allowed myself to be carried away by illusions of the greater remunerativeness of the higher branches of industry, without knowing even remotely either them or the means of learning and introducing them, and to commit the very faults in teaching my school children spinning and weaving which, as I have just said, I so strongly reprobated and denounced in the whole of my views on education, and which I considered dangerous to the domestic happiness of all classes. I wanted to have the finest thread spun, before my children had gained any steadiness or sureness of hand in spinning even the coarser kinds, and, in like manner to, make muslin fabrics, before my weavers had acquired sufficient steadiness and readiness in the weaving of common cotton goods. Practiced and skillful manufacturers ruin themselves by such preposterous conduct,—how much more certain to be ruined by such conduct was I, who was so blind in the discernment of what was necessary to success, that I must distinctly say, that whoever took but a thread of mine into his hand was at once in a position to cause half of its value to vanish for me! Before I was aware of it, too, I was deeply involved in debt, and the greater part of my dear wife's property and expectations had in an instant, as it were, gone up in smoke. Our misfortune was decided. I was now poor. The extent and rapidity of my misfortune was owing to this among other causes—that, in this undertaking, as in the first, I readily, very readily, received an unquestioning confidence. My plan soon met with a degree of confidence which an attentive consideration of my former conduct would have shown that which I did not merit in the present undertaking. After all the experience they had had of my errors in this respect, people still did not think the extent of my incapacity for everything practical was so great as it really was. I even yet enjoyed for a while, to all appearance, an extensive confidence. But when my experiment went rapidly to wreck, as it necessarily did, this feeling changed, in my neighborhood, into just as inconsiderate a degree of the contrary, into a totally blind abandonment of even the last shadow of respect for my endeavors, and of belief in my fitness for the accomplishment of any part of them. It is the course

of the world, and it happened to me as it happens to every one who thus becomes poor through his own fault. Such a man generally loses, together with his money, the belief and the confidence in what he really is and is able to do. The belief in the qualifications which I really had for attaining my objects was now lost, along with the belief in those which, erring in my self-deception, I gave myself credit for, but which I really had not."

Thus it happened, that in the year 1780, Pestalozzi was obliged to break up the establishment at Neuhof, after it had been five years in operation. His situation was frightful. Frequently in his only too elegant country house he wanted money, bread, fuel, in order to protect himself against hunger and cold. His faithful wife, who had pledged nearly the whole of her property for him, fell into a severe and tedious illness. "My friends," relates Pestalozzi, "now only loved me without hope; in the whole circuit of the surrounding district it was every where said that I was a lost man, that nothing more could be done for me."

The breaking up of the establishment at Neuhof was a fortunate thing for Pestalozzi—and for the world. He was no longer to fritter away his strength in efforts to which he was not equal. And, nevertheless, his severe mental and physical labor was not to have been in vain, but was to bear precious fruits. As the first of these fruits, there appeared in 1780 a paper of his, brief but full of meaning, in Iselin's *Ephemerides*, under the title, *The Evening Hour of a Hermit*. It contains a series of aphorisms, which nevertheless are cast in one mould, and stand among one another in the closest connection. Fruits of the past years of Pestalozzi's life, they are at the same time seeds of the following years, programme and key to his educational labors. "Iselin's *Ephemerides*," he writes in 1801, alluding to this *Evening Hour*, "bear witness, that the dream of my wishes is not more comprehensive now, than it was when at that time I sought to realize it."

It is scarcely possible to make a selection from these concise and thought-teeming aphorisms, the more so because they form, as I have said, a beautiful and ingenious whole, which suffers in the selection. Nevertheless, I will run the risk of selecting some of the principal thoughts.

The paper begins with melancholy seriousness. "Pastors and teachers of the nations, know you man; is it with you a matter of conscience to understand his nature and destiny?"

"All mankind are in their nature alike, they have but *one* path to contentment. The natural faculties of each one are to be perfected

into pure human wisdom. This general education of man must serve as the foundation to every education of a particular rank.

“The faculties grow by exercise.

“The intellectual powers of children must not be urged on to remote distances before they have acquired strength by exercise in things near them.

“The circle of knowledge commences close around a man, and from thence stretches out concentrically.

“Real knowledge must take precedence of word-teaching and mere talk.

“All human wisdom is based upon the strength of a good heart, obedient to truth. Knowledge and ambition must be subordinated to inward peace and calm enjoyment.

“As the education for the closest relations precedes the education for more remote ones, so must education in the duties of members of families precede education in the duties of citizens. But nearer than father or mother is God, ‘the closest relation of mankind is their relation to Him.’

“Faith in God is ‘the confiding, childlike feeling of mankind toward the paternal mind of the Supreme Being.’ This faith is not the result and consequence of cultivated wisdom, but is purely an instinct of simplicity; a childlike and obedient mind is not the consequence of a finished education, but the early and first foundation of human culture. Out of the faith in God springs the hope of eternal life. ‘Children of God are immortal.’

“Belief in God sanctifies and strengthens the tie between parents and children, between subjects and rulers; unbelief loosens all ties, annihilates all blessings.

“Sin is the source and consequence of unbelief, it is acting contrary to the inward witness of right and wrong, the loss of the childlike mind toward God.

“Freedom is based upon justice, justice upon love, therefore freedom also is based upon love.

“Justice in families, the purest, most productive of blessings, has love for its source.

“Pure childlike feeling is the true source of the freedom that is based upon justice, and pure paternal feeling is the source of all power of governing, that is noble enough to do justice and to love freedom. And the source of justice and of all worldly blessings, the source of the love and brotherly feeling of mankind toward one another, this is based upon the great thought of religion, that we are children of God, and that the belief in this truth is the sure ground

of all worldly blessings. In this great thought of religion lies over the spirit of all true state policy that seeks only the blessing of the people, for all inward power of morality, enlightenment and worldly wisdom, is based upon this ground of the belief of mankind in God; and ungodliness, misapprehension of the relation of mankind as children to the Supreme Being, is the source which dissolves all the power with which morals, enlightenment, and wisdom, are capable of blessing mankind. Therefore the loss of this childlike feeling of mankind toward God is the greatest misfortune of the world, as it renders impossible all paternal education on the part of God, and the restoration of this lost childlike feeling is the redemption of the lost children of God on earth.

“The Son of God, who with suffering and death has restored to mankind the universally lost feeling of filial love toward God, is the Redeemer of the world, He is the sacrificed Priest of the Lord, He is Mediator between God and sinful mankind. His doctrine is pure justice, educative national philosophy; it is the revelation of God the Father to the lost race of his children.”

Much might be said upon these aphorisms; each is a text for a discourse; indeed, Pestalozzi's life is a paraphrase in facts of these texts. We must accuse human weakness, if the realization of his great anticipations henceforward also turns out but miserably, nay, only too often stands in the most glaring contradiction with them. The plan of an inventive builder, however, retains its value, if even the builder himself lack the skill to carry out the building according to the plan.

Rousseau's *Emile* appeared eighteen years before Pestalozzi's *Evening Hour*; in what relation does Rousseau stand to Pestalozzi? In particular points they frequently agree. Like Pestalozzi, Rousseau requires real knowledge and trained skill in the business of life, not an empty display of words, without an insight into the things themselves, and a ready power of acting. Like Pestalozzi, Rousseau also ridicules the plan of giving children a discursive knowledge about things remote, and leaving them in ignorance of the things in their immediate vicinity; he requires, like Pestalozzi, that they should first be at home in this vicinity.

In this manner many other things might be pointed out in which both men agree, arising principally from their common aversion to a baseless, dead talkativeness, without any real intelligence, activity of mind, or readiness of action. But when viewed more closely, how immensely different are the two men in all that is most essential.

Rousseau will not have God named before children; he is of opinion

that long physical and metaphysical study is necessary to enable us to think of God. With Pestalozzi, God is the nearest, the most intimate being to man, the Alpha and Omega of his whole life. Rousseau's God is no paternal God of love, his Emile no child of God. The man who put his children into a foundling hospital, knew nothing of paternal and filial love; still less of rulers as the fathers of the nations, and of the childlike obedience of subjects; his ideal was a cold, heartless freedom, which was not based upon love, but was defensive, isolating, and altogether selfish.

While, therefore, according to Pestalozzi, the belief in God penetrates, strengthens, attunes, sanctifies all the relations of men; while the relations between ruler and subjects, between fathers and children, and the paternal love of God to his children, men, are every where reflected in his paper—with Rousseau there is never any mention of such bonds of love.

A year after the publication of the Evening Hour, namely, in 1781, appeared the first part of that work of Pestalozzi's which established his reputation, which exercised an extensive and wholesome influence at the time, and which will continue to exercise an influence in future. That work is "Leonard and Gertrude: A Book for the People." It was undertaken at a time, when, as he relates, "my old friends looked upon it as almost settled that I should end my days in a workhouse, or in a lunatic asylum." The form was suggested by Marmontel's *Contes moraux*; and he was stimulated to effort, by a few words of encouragement from the bookseller Füssli, of Zurich, or rather of the brother better known as *Fuseli*, the painter. After a few attempts at composition with which he was not satisfied, "the history of Leonard and Gertrude flowed from my pen, I know not how, and developed itself of its own accord, without my having the slightest plan in my head, and even without my thinking of one. In a few weeks, the book stood there, without my knowing exactly how I had done it. I felt its value, but only as a man in his sleep feels the value of some piece of good fortune of which he is just dreaming. "The book appeared, and excited quite a remarkable degree of interest in my own country and throughout the whole of Germany. Nearly all the journals spoke in its praise, and, what is perhaps still more, nearly all the almanacs became full of it; but the most unexpected thing to me was that, immediately after its appearance, the Agricultural Society of Bern awarded me their great gold medal, with a letter of thanks."

Pestalozzi himself has repeatedly spoken of the character and object of Leonard and Gertrude. In the preface to the first edition of the work, he says: "In that which I here relate, and which I have for the most part seen and heard myself in the course of an active life, I have even taken care not once to add my own opinion to what I saw and heard *the people themselves feeling, judging, believing, speaking, and attempting*. And now this will show itself:—If the results of my observation are true, and if I gave them as I received them, and as it is my aim to do, they will find acceptance with all those who themselves have daily before their eyes the things which I relate. If, however, they are incorrect, if they are the work of my imagination and the preaching of my own opinions, they will, like other Sunday sermons, vanish on the Monday." In the preface to the second edition, Pestalozzi gives as the object of the book, "To bring about a better popular education, based upon the true condition of the people and their natural relations." "It was," he says, "my first word to the heart of the poor and destitute in the land. It was my first word to the heart of those who stand in God's stead to the poor and destitute in the land. It was my first word to the mothers in the land, and to the heart which God gave them, to be to theirs what no one on earth can be in their stead."

"I desired nothing, and to-day, (1800,) I desire nothing else, as the object of my life, but the welfare of the people, whom I love, and whom I feel to be miserable as few feel them to be miserable, having with them borne their sufferings as few have borne them."

The remarks which I have cited characterize the soul of Leonard and Gertrude. In the severe years of suffering at Neuhof, Pestalozzi appeared to have wrought and suffered in vain. "To the accomplishment of my purpose," he says, "there stood opposed my entire want of trained practical skill, and a vast disproportion between the extent of my will and the limits of my ability."

He did not work in vain, however; what was denied him on the one side turned out to his advantage on the other. If he lacked all skill in carrying out his ideas, he possessed on the other hand, in the highest degree, the faculty of observing, comprehending, and portraying character. If he was not able to exhibit to the world his ideal realized, it was given to him to infuse the loving desires of his heart into the hearts of others, by means of his talent of poetical delineation. He might hope that men of practical ability would be among the readers of his book, and would be incited by it to realize what he only knew how to picture. He has found such readers. Leonard and Gertrude is in so many hands, that it is almost superfluous to give a selection from the work. Only this. The principal

person in it is Gertrude, the wife of Leonard, a good-natured but rather weak man, whose stay and guardian she is. The manner in which she keeps house and instructs and trains her children, is Pestalozzi's ideal. Such house-keeping, such a manner of instructing and training, he desires for all people. Gertrude is consulted even in the management of the village school. Her house-keeping is the bright side of the circumstances depicted; in contrast with her is a terribly dark side, a peasant community in the deepest depravity. It is related of what Arner, the equally benevolent and intelligent lord of the village, does to check the depravity.

Pestalozzi wished to give the people the knowledge and skill needful for them chiefly by means of a good elementary instruction. If this instruction began at the right place, and proceeded properly, what an entirely different race would arise out of the children so instructed, a race made independent by intelligence and skill!

In vain, however, did Pestalozzi look around him for elementary teachers who could and would instruct after his manner and in his spirit. Seminaries, too, were wanting in which such teachers could be trained. Then the thought occurred to him who had grown up in his mother's parlor: "I will place the education of the people in the hands of the mothers; I will transplant it out of the school-room into the parlor." Gertrude was to be the model of mothers. But how are the mothers in the lower classes to be qualified for instructing?—We shall see how Pestalozzi's Compendiums are meant to be an answer to this question, to supply the place of knowledge and teaching talent. The mothers have only to keep strictly to these books in the instruction of their children; if they do this, the mother of the most limited capacity will instruct just as well as the most talented; compendiums and method are to equalize their minds: such was Pestalozzi's ideal, to which I shall afterward come back.

With extreme short-sightedness, the persons in immediate intercourse with Pestalozzi saw in this book of his dearly-bought experience nothing more than a proof that its author was born for novel-writing, and would in future be able to earn his bread by it.

Others understood better the value of the book. Karl von Bonstetten entreated Pestalozzi to come and live with him on his estate in Italian Switzerland; the Austrian Minister of Finance, Count Zinzendorf, wished to have him in his neighborhood. Subsequently, he became known, through Count Hohenwart, in Florence, to the Grand Duke Leopold of Tuscany, who was about to give him an appointment, when he was called by the death of Joseph II., to the imperial throne of Germany, and the appointment, was therefore not made.

[To be continued.]



## X NORMAL SCHOOLS:

THEIR RELATIONS TO PRIMARY AND HIGHER INSTITUTIONS OF LEARNING, AND  
TO THE PROGRESS OF SOCIETY.\*

BY WILLIAM F. PHELPS,

Principal of New Jersey State Normal School.

---

EDUCATION, viewed in its most comprehensive sense, may be defined to be both a science and an art.

As a science, it investigates the laws which regulate the harmonious development of the physical, intellectual, and moral powers of the human being.

As an art, it applies those laws to the cultivation, and, as far as possible, to the perfection of man's three-fold nature.

Regarded in this imposing aspect, there is not an organ of the body, a faculty of the mind, nor an affection or passion of the soul, which its forces should not aim to reach, cultivate, strengthen, or subdue.

Between *education* and *learning*, between an *educated* man and a *learned* man, there is a marked distinction. While profound attainments in positive knowledge are by no means to be underrated or undervalued, neither are they to be *substituted* for that thorough discipline, that careful training of all the powers and faculties which alone can give sound minds in vigorous healthy bodies—which makes one know, feel, and practice his duties and obligations to himself, to his family, to his neighbor, to humanity, and to the beneficent Author of his being.

A merely *learned* man is one who has made profound attainments in knowledge, regardless of the ability requisite to make those attainments available for the elevation and improvement of his fellow creatures, and for the advancement of human society. He may be apt to *acquire*, but incompetent to impart, to disseminate, to use, to apply. An intellectual giant, he may be a moral dwarf, a social nonentity, a physical imbecile; a human encyclopedia, his stores of knowledge may be and often are, locked up within the narrow precincts of his own individuality.

An *educated* man, on the other hand, is he who superadds to his

---

\* This article forms a portion of the Author's Second Annual Report to the Trustees of the New Jersey State Normal School, of which he is principal.

knowledge the skill, the disposition, and the ability to use it for the promotion of the great objects of human existence—for the moral, intellectual, social and material progress of humanity. He is a man of action as well as of acquisition. He is not only an intelligent, but a useful man; a healthy, vigorous man; an honest man, “the noblest work of God.” He measures his actual attainments in knowledge and virtue, in a great degree, by *their* availability and *his opportunity* for bringing himself and his brethren into harmony with those immutable laws by which the Creator upholds and governs every domain of his universe.

The most perfect type of human wisdom and of human power would therefore undoubtedly be what may be denominated an educated scholar; or, if you please, an educated learned man. Such a man contains within himself not only a vast reservoir of power, but he is at the same time, so to speak, the engine through which that power is applied, and the engineer to control its movements and guide them to the production of noble and beneficent results.

But there is another fundamental truth too often disregarded, which in this connection may not be altogether out of place. The Creator, in his infinite wisdom, while bestowing upon his creatures the same general characteristics of mind and soul, while giving to all the same order of faculties, has yet impressed upon each, to a certain extent, a peculiar and special individuality. Mankind may thus be said to be an embodiment of unity in diversity. While all have powers to be developed and cultivated, while all have responsibilities to meet and duties to perform, yet it is not to be supposed that all are to be fused in the same crucible, or run through the same stereotyped mould. As each has, to a limited extent, a peculiar organization, so has each a correspondent special adaptation; and this adaptation is to be sought out, preserved, improved, and, as far as possible, perfected, to the end that each individual may be prepared to act well his part in the grand drama of human life.

Now, the question is, what kind of men does society, does our country, does the world most need? This is the great question of the age; and upon its proper solution depend not only the welfare and progress of society, but its very existence also.

Since human society is made up of rational beings, if it has wants, those wants must have their origin in the necessities of the individuals that compose it. But the necessities of individuals may all be summed up in the means that are required for the proper development and expansion of their manifold and undying faculties. The more perfect and the more widely diffused these means, therefore, the

more perfect the society and the less its wants. It hence follows that the great, unceasing, relentless want of society is, that of cultivated, refined, and in the fullest sense of the term, *educated* men; not the *learned few*, but the *educated many*. This want properly met, subordinate ones will gradually disappear; and the innumerable forms of vice and crime, of injustice and wrong, with their endless train of nameless woes, will be supplanted by the benignant reign of virtue and intelligence, and the consequent blessings of individual and social order and happiness.

"So shall licentiousness and black resolve  
Be rooted out, and virtuous habits take  
Their place; and genuine piety descend,  
Like an inheritance, from age to age "

It is evident, that for the rearing of such individuals, and for the production of such results as these, it is idle to rely upon divided, and one-sided, and partial efforts. As the greatest want of human society is *man* himself,—*man*, "broad-shouldered, symmetrical, swift" *men*, purified, ennobled, exalted—*man*, trained, individualized, educated,—so it is equally clear that the means for the accomplishment of this end must be commensurate with the lengths, breadths, depths and urgency of the want which is to be supplied. Such a work needs, nay, *must have*, to succeed, the unflagging interest, the untiring zeal, the undivided influence, the cordial sympathy, the earnest coöperation of every citizen, irrespective of party, sect, or creed. In the solution of this complicated problem, the family, the school in all its gradations and ramifications, the parent, the teacher in all his varied relations, the patriot, the philanthropist, the christian, each and all have solemn duties to perform in virtue of a common existence, common interests, and a common destiny.

The development of the mind, body, and all the parts of human life, must, to be real, from the nature of the case, be progressive and slow. Beginning with the first dawn of being, the work must advance by toilsome, gradual steps, through the successive periods of infancy, childhood and youth, up to the maturity and vigor of symmetrical manhood. So far as *Nature* is left to carry on the processes of tuition, she faithfully observes her own well defined and benignant laws. It is only *man* in his blindness and ignorance that errs, and mars the exquisite handiwork committed to his charge. The great problem then, in the education of the present day, is to observe, to learn and to apply those wholesome lessons which nature is ever ready to impart for our guidance and direction, in the work before us.

The first lessons of infancy and early childhood are taught in the school of home with its clustering affections, its deep-toned sympathies, and its winning smiles. It is here that the foundations of the future character are begun. It is here that for good or evil the young mind receives its first impressions. Are these foundations laid in intelligence and grounded in love? Are these early impressions all faithful transcripts from pure and pious hearts? If so, there is more than a presumption, there is almost a certainty, that the race thus commenced will be one of virtuous youth, of honorable, useful manhood, and of tranquil old age. If otherwise, there is more than a prophecy of a weary, wasted life, and an ignoble end.

From the home circle, passing to the pupilage of the primary school, the child is subjected to the more direct appliances of the educational process. It is here, and at this tender age, that the potent influence of the professional teacher is first brought to bear upon his impressible nature. If perchance, the home training has been, and still is, wise and judicious, the task of the teacher becomes comparatively easy and his burden light; for he has but to coöperate with the parent in the continuation of a work already begun. But if, as in a majority of cases, the education of the fireside has been a work of perversion and misdirection, if only a superficial foundation has been laid, if habits of disobedience and disorder prevail, if there be an absence of parental sympathy, coöperation and support, his position becomes one of almost overwhelming anxiety and insurmountable difficulty. It is at this stage, and surrounded by these common—alas! too common—circumstances, that he is called upon to exercise all the skill and all those high attributes which his nature can command, for the promotion of the work committed to his charge.

Even under the most favorable conditions, the merely intellectual training of the young is a task of exceeding complexity. To comprehend the capacities, the peculiarities, the attainments, the wants of individual minds; to bring them under a proper classification; so to adjust the processes of tuition as to arouse their latent energies into vigorous action; to awaken a desire for advancement in the paths of knowledge; to stimulate each and all to manly exertion and a heroic self-reliance, is an undertaking of no ordinary magnitude. But when, superadded to this, the teacher is called upon to guide the development of those still higher attributes of our nature, to impress upon the young those lessons of morality and christian virtue, those duties which they owe to themselves, to their fellow creatures, and to their Creator; when he passes a step further and assumes to train his charge to the *practice* of these duties, he undertakes a work which, in

magnitude and importance, is commensurate with the imperishable nature and the priceless worth of the material upon which his forces are expended.

It is thus that we are to look to the joint partnership of the family and the primary school for the origin and early development of that perfect stature of manhood which the world so much needs, and which will surely yet rise up to adorn, to dignify, and to bless a coming age. It is to these, and especially to the latter, that we are to look for those peculiarly complicated and philosophical formative processes that alone can bring order out of chaos, give to the youthful mind its shape and direction, inspire it with an undying love of truth, impart to it those habits of patient application and of methodical procedure so essential to conduct it to definite and useful results, and implant the desire and prepare the way for that more enlarged culture which successive schools of superior grade may be so well adapted to secure.

If this great work be not done by these agencies, then it will not be done at all, and we may as well abandon the experiment of a comprehensive system of universal education. It is in vain that we endeavor to make up in the high school and the college for the radical deficiencies of the common school. As well may we attempt to purify the fountain by cleansing the stream that flows from it. The functions of the primary school are preëminently formative and fundamental; and beyond this work it can not, with either propriety or safety, be allowed to go. To depart from it is unmitigated failure and irreparable injury. The task which in the economy of nature is assigned to it, is all that the most assiduous care, the most ample means, and the most untiring devotion will enable it, under the most favorable circumstances, to fulfill. Its work well done, that of its legitimate successors will, with comparative ease, be accomplished.

Beyond the primary schools, in a complete system of education adapted alike to the wants of our varied natures and to the necessities of human society, there must lie on the one hand, properly organized and conducted, the grammar school, the high school, and the college, or their equivalents; and on the other, the "Real" and the Polytechnic Schools, little known in our own country, but destined in the future to take their appropriate places in the great scheme of public instruction.

These two distinct classes of institutions are undoubtedly the types of two distinct forms of education, each complete in itself, and each adapted, under suitable organization and management, to meet two distinct classes of wants in the economy of society. These wants

may be denominated the Philological, or those which pertain to *language* in its relations to thought, including grammar, rhetoric, criticism, the interpretation of authors, history and antiquities; and the "real," or those which relate to *objects* or *things*, and their relations to each other and to man himself. These classifications seem to be entirely natural, and to some extent, the result of that special organization and adaptation, before alluded to as existing in individuals of the human species. The institutions of the first class named, following out to their legitimate specialties, give rise to Schools of Law, Divinity, &c.; while those of the second, lead to Schools of Medicine, Natural History, Mining, Engineering, Agriculture, and others of like character.

Of these two forms of education, the first, for obvious reasons, is the most ancient and the most prevalent. But with the rapid development of modern science and its application to the manifold purposes of life, it can not be doubted that the "real" will assume that position in the regards of mankind to which its transcendent importance entitles it. And not alone on account of the merely utilitarian tendencies of science is it destined to be more generally cultivated through the instrumentality of schools, but preëminently, because it unfolds to man the creature an unfailing source of happiness and felicity in the contemplation of the works of the Creator; enabling him, through a mastery of the laws of the material universe, better to comprehend the great plan of God in creation, and leading him to adore and praise that All-wise and Eternal Being who hath thus indeed manifested himself "Philologically" and "Really," in the two-fold sense of his word and his works.

If the foregoing brief summary has been made intelligible, it will readily be understood that from the primary school as a foundation, other institutions must successively arise adapted to carry on to completion the work already begun. They should flow from it as naturally as the stream flows from its source, widening and deepening with each influx of its tributaries as it moves majestically onward to the sea. When we understand and appreciate, as we ought, the object which these successive institutions are designed to answer, we shall give to them such an organization as will fit them for the progressive development of the complex forces of our three-fold nature. They will thus become but logical parts of one consistent harmonious whole, each adapted to its special functions, each laboring *for* and aspiring *to* the same desirable and comprehensive end.

From this commanding stand-point, having in full view the nature of the work which the education of the present day proposes, as well as the entire system of means by which this work is intended to be

accomplished, it is an easy task to trace the relation of normal schools to the great scheme of public education, and to the welfare and progress of that society whose most urgent necessity is that of earnest, enterprising, active, working, intelligent, moral, religious men, devoted to the great interests of their species and to the fulfillment of those high destinies which man is placed here to work out.

It will be easily seen that they aim to strike a powerful and effective blow at evils at once radical and deep, that they seek to remove difficulties and impediments at once serious and overwhelming, which beset man at the very outset of his disciplinary and preparatory career. Descending to those deep well-springs of individual and social life, welfare, progress, and happiness—the primary schools—they labor to purify, elevate, and improve. Recognizing the simple truth that “it is the master that makes the school,” they take the teacher by the hand, unfold to his view the fearful and wonderful structure of this complex physical being, teach him to look in upon the mysterious spirit that animates it, to understand, as far as possible its nature and capacities, to observe its manifestations, to master its laws, to investigate the methods by which its subtle forces are to be drawn out, train him to their application, and send him forth over the lengths and breadths of the land to wake up the latent energies of its embryo citizens, to infuse into the home circle a higher appreciation of parental duty and obligation, and to animate the public heart with a livelier interest in that great work which should ever be its chief concern.

Hence it is that normal schools, by the direct and powerful influence which they must inevitably exert upon the principal sources of public intelligence, virtue, and happiness, will serve to invigorate and intensify the entire social organization. If conducted in accordance with their true intent and spirit, if conducted as they *may* and *should* be, they will do more in the course of years for primary education, for the education of the fireside and the common school, and hence for the real welfare of society, than all other agencies combined. For who does not know that the moral and intellectual renovation of entire neighborhoods is often effected by the almost silent, yet potent influence of a good school and a faithful, intelligent, skillful and conscientious teacher of youth? The heart of the true parent is said to be bound up in his child; and if the teacher can mould that child—like clay in the hands of the potter—to his will, by what a natural and easy transition may he not work upon the parent too? leading him to a knowledge and practice of the duties which he owes to those who are dear to him as the “apple of his eye,” and to his brethren of a common heritage.



But normal schools, by virtue of their diffusion of the great *principles* of education, and the improved and philosophical methods of training based thereon, by the desire and ability for further advancement which they impart through their pupils to the young, by the habits of manly self-reliance which they instill, and by the almost incredible abridgment of labor and of time which they secure, are destined to play an important part in that modification and regeneration of all those institutions growing out of the primary schools, which are certain gradually to take place. These institutions will be forced to reorganize on a more comprehensive and philosophical basis. They will be obliged more fully to recognize the great truth, that the office of the school, of whatever grade, is not, and can not be, to make profound scholars, but rather to *train the powers of the student*; to arm him with the means and methods, by the proper and diligent use of which he may himself become learned, and wise, and good; to teach him the uses of knowledge; to qualify him for its judicious application; to impress upon him the dignity and duty of labor: and thus to qualify him for whatever position on the busy stage of life a beneficent God may assign him.

We need not mistake the signs of the times; we need not close our eyes and ears to the teachings of experience. What has been done, and is doing on another theatre, can be done and will be done in our own land. While this grand idea of education has attained on a less congenial soil a degree of development hitherto unequalled and unknown, how can we doubt that, fostered by the genius of a people and a government, whose hopes and whose safety are based upon its legitimate results, it is destined here, to its noblest, fullest, most unlimited expansion. In those countries where education is the most complete and the most universal, normal schools are the most numerous and the most nearly perfect; and they have been the all-potent agency, by means of which, this completeness and universality have been reached. They have accomplished this work by regenerating and vivifying the primary schools, impelling them to lay a broad and deep foundation, as well as creating an unconquerable desire in the youthful mind for higher attainments, by a rigorous mastery of elementary principles, and a judicious application of the same at every stage of its progress. Discarding the dogmatic modes of teaching which compel the pupil to take on trust the unqualified *dicta* of the master, and which are alike destructive of intellectual freedom and rational progress, they aim to develop and to disseminate those means and methods of tuition which result from an intelligent perception and application of those laws which God has imposed upon the human faculties.

And while laboring for the improvement of the intellectual, they strive also to draw out the moral powers and to inculcate those kindly, courteous, and fraternal sentiments which should regulate the intercourse of mankind in the routine of social life. Passing even further still, they have been made the instruments for infusing into the entire texture of the teacher's life, enabling him thus to inculcate it in turn upon the hearts of the future citizens, a spirit of contentment with whatever lot in the order of Providence may be assigned him, and a faithful discharge of the duties, however humble, which that lot imposes.

If we do not under our own genial skies mould them to the accomplishment of all, and more than all, of the high purposes which have been indicated, it will not be because of their exotic origin, or of their inherent incompatibility with our peculiar needs, or of their lack of a direct and powerful relation to our most vital interests, either as individuals or as a people, but rather because of our blind ignorance of their true nature, distinctive objects, and priceless value, or to a perverse determination to close our eyes to the light alike of immutable truth and of enlightened experience.

He who in this country sits down deliberately to calculate the cost of its teachers, at the same time puts a price upon the privileges and the blessings which under the benignant sway of its government, he is permitted to enjoy. And on the other hand he who would even approximate to the *value* of our true, intelligent, and faithful teachers must, as a preliminary step, absolutely *determine* the value of these same privileges and blessings. And again, he who feels that under the operation of this principle of self-government, he has a superabundance of the good gifts which it imparts, will find that the most philosophical mode of removing these incumbrances is to offer a premium for incompetent and inefficient schoolmasters, and send them abroad to stultify and pervert the juvenile mind of the community.

But if there be any who feel deeply sensible that an abnormal abridgment of their rights and privileges has already occurred; if there be any who have a remote suspicion that justice is a costly commodity, and difficult to secure, at any price, that virtue and truth are held at a ruinous rate of discount, that portentous signs of anarchy and disorder are distinctly visible, that pauperism, idiocy, insanity, vice, and crime, already stalk abroad over the land in frightful procession, that our houses of correction and our penitentiaries are unduly patronized, that the demons of corruption, avarice, and misrule, like so many vampires, are extracting the life blood of the body politic,—if any have come to a realizing sense of these startling facts, they are

in some measure prepared to appreciate the value and importance to the republican commonwealth of a band of whole-souled, well-trained, and devoted teachers of youth. If passing a step further, they are penetrated by an intense desire to see these evils eradicated—not covered—and if they in honesty and sincerity, seek for the most effective means for their removal, they have but to exercise that ordinary common sense so highly commendable in every other pursuit, to perceive, and to know, that these same humble teachers, imbued with the humanitarian spirit, filled with a sense of the magnitude of their mission, specially drilled and prepared for their special work, and full of energy and zeal for its accomplishment,—that these offer the surest the *only* practical mode for the solution of so great and so important a problem.

The Prussians say that, “whatever you would have appear in the life of a nation, you must put into its schools.” But they may with equal truth, go still further, and affirm that whatever you would put into its schools, you must put into its teachers, and whatever you would put into its teachers, you must first put into its normal schools. No combination of words could be made more forcibly to express the direct and intimate relation of the normal school, not only to the people, but to the government itself. In determining the future of these institutions, therefore, their numbers, their influence, in moulding the moral, intellectual, social, and political character of our people, we may say with impressive distinctness, that we likewise determine the future of our government, as founded upon the principle of popular virtue and intelligence.

Wherefore, does it not become our government and every subject of that government by every means in *its* and *his* power to multiply build up, and perfect that instrumentality by which more than by any other, the blessings of liberty are to be preserved, perpetuated, and increased, through all coming time?

In Europe, these institutions have been, according to our ideas, perverted to the strengthening, preservation, and perpetuation of arbitrary power. But how much more may they become the means in the hands of freemen for the propagation of the great doctrine of equal rights, and of the inviolability of our immortal natures, as well as for cementing those ties of unity and of brotherhood so conducive to the welfare, progress and happiness of a free people.

The great length of this paper, will not permit a more extended development of the train of thought here initiated, we will therefore conclude it by the enunciation of a few concise, yet self-evident propositions which must commend themselves to the assent and approbation of every honest and intelligent mind.

1. A free government is, and ever must be based upon the fundamental idea of virtue and intelligence, universally diffused among the people.

2. This virtue and intelligence can be adequately secured only by means of the thorough mental and moral training afforded by a general system of effectively administered schools.

3. These schools depend for their value and efficiency upon a perpetual supply of well trained and properly qualified teachers.

4. All experience, no less than the dictates of common sense, has demonstrated that an adequate supply of competent teachers, fitted for the high duty of rearing a nation of intelligent freemen, can be secured only through the instrumentality of normal schools comprehending their great and distinctive mission, and organized and conducted with direct reference to the fulfillment of that mission.

5. Whence it follows that when these self-evident truths come to be fully understood and acknowledged, normal schools will become co-extensive with the wants of the people, and co-equal with the power, the dignity, and the importance of the government itself.

Wherefore let these impressive truths sink deep into the hearts of all who cherish the priceless blessings of good government and of social order. Let them be pondered by those upon whom is imposed the responsibility of conducting the normal "experiment," that it be so conducted as to vindicate that *perfection of common sense* upon which these institutions repose. Let them be weighed by the great mass of our "Popular Sovereigns," and by their servant, the government, whose first duty it is to foster, encourage, perpetuate and support. Let them not only sink deep into the heart, let them not only be pondered and weighed, but let them spring up and bring forth prolific fruits to the enduring welfare and glory of our country, and the happiness of our race.

## **XI. NATURAL HISTORY IN ITS EDUCATIONAL ASPECTS.**

**BY J. W. DAWSON, A. M. F. G. S. &C.,**

**PRINCIPAL OF M'GILL COLLEGE, MONTREAL.**

**(Extracts from the Introductory Lecture of the Popular course of the Natural History Society of Montreal, Winter of 1856-7.)**

---

**THIS Society wisely regards as one of its functions, the cultivation among its members and the public in general, of a taste for those useful and ennobling pursuits to which it is devoted. Viewing this as the principal object of the popular course, the introductory lecture of which I have the honor of delivering, I have determined, instead of selecting any special scientific subject, to lay before you a few general thoughts on the importance of Natural History, as a branch of education; understanding by that term the training of our mental powers, of our æsthetic sentiments, and our moral faculties; and this not only in our Schools and higher Institutions of learning, but in our self-cultivation throughout life.**

**Man and the nature that surrounds him, are products of the same almighty, all-pervading mind. Hence man finds natural things adapted to his wants and powers, and can perceive in them a likeness to the results at which his own taste and reason arrive—finding thus fixed law, progressive movement, beauty, adaptation, and order, in nature, similar to those which exist in his own works, but of a higher type. Man's soul is thus the link between the spiritual Creator and the material creation; and this appears to be the real central truth of all those dark though exciting controversies, on the relations of the subjective and the objective in man and nature, which have bewildered the minds of those who, leaving the firm ground of revealed religion and inductive science, have wandered into the mists and darkness which shroud from our gaze the precise junction of the spiritual and the material. The middle path that leads between the opposite errors of transcendentalists and materialists, is the old familiar truth of our infancy, that man was made in the image of that God who made all things and pronounced them good.**

**Thus constituted, man must sympathize with nature, must observe its objects, must reason on them; and nature must react on man, strengthening and stimulating the faculties that act on it, and more**

or less deepening on his mind the impress of that of the Creator of both. It is principally to this last aspect of the subject, the reaction of nature on ourselves, that I wish to direct your attention.

In this respect then, the study of nature presents itself in the first place, as a means of training the observing powers. This is an office strictly educational, and strictly elementary. Observation of external things begins in earliest infancy, and is essential to the happiness, the utilities, and even the safety of after life. It has been apparently a subject of doubt with modern educators, whether in this direction we require any training whatever. This has at least been strangely neglected in schools and colleges. We have been content to know that the savage can teach his children without any school or college, to detect and distinguish with the nicest discrimination, the minutest traces of men and animals; while civilized men highly cultivated in other respects, are often deficient in such powers to the last degree.

To what extent are such powers actually deficient in the generality of educated men? to what extent are they desirable in civilized life? to what extent can they be cultivated? In attempting to answer such questions, it is but fair to admit that, in many handicraft trades, and in the prosecution of the fine arts, the observing powers are extensively cultivated in persons of very different degrees of education. On the other hand, it can not be denied that men of the highest education are often remarkably unobservant; sometimes peculiarly so, insomuch that their absent-mindedness, as it is called, has become proverbial; while the mass of men, apart from the special points to which business directs their attention, have little useful perception of outward things, in comparison with that which they might attain. The accounts of natural objects and scenes given by popular writers, and in conversation; and the extraordinary diversity of the evidence respecting matters of fact in our courts of law, sufficiently show the prevailing deficiency in accurate observation. It is deserving of note, also, that this deficiency is often only aggravated by the superior development of the reflective and imaginative powers; because in this case the observer is induced to substitute his own fancies and speculations for matters of fact. Much of the want of originality, and distortion of natural truth, which we lament in our literature, as compared with that of earlier and simpler states of society, proceeds from the same cause.

That the removal of these defects is desirable, I think no judicious educator will doubt. They are in part remedied by the object lessons in our primary schools, by the drawing, the music, the natural history of our more advanced schools; by the natural science of our colleges; and under these influences we may hope that among the educated

men now leaving our institutions of learning, we shall have more independent observation and originality, and less pedantry and absence of mind, than in those of former times. That these results may be fully attained, the study of nature must have a due place in education, and this it can attain only by engaging, as far as may be, the most gifted original investigators, to train the minds of others. Much of the teaching of natural history by object lessons and popular text-books, is too inaccurate and superficial, and too deficient in enlargement of view, to be really useful. In our colleges and scientific institutions, nature should be illustrated by the best possible collections of typical forms, explained and examined under the guidance of the best scientific skill. In the training of the teachers of the elementary schools, similar influences should be employed ; that through them a higher kind of training of the senses and perceptive faculties may be given to those who do not receive the benefit of a collegiate education. In this way alone, will it be possible to send forth men and women trained to the right use of their senses, as well as of their reflective powers.

I have already suggested the connection between defective training of the observing powers and want of originality in literature, and want of accurate and truthful description in ordinary conversation and in public testimony. I may add that this same deficiency is closely connected with the prevalence of many of the errors that spread like epidemics through society. No one who has witnessed the ready faith in the feats of table-turners, accorded even by cultivated assemblages, and the evident want of perception in such cases of the real agencies producing the results observed, need doubt that cultivation of the reflective and imaginative faculties, without that of the observing powers, may leave us exposed to the most dangerous consequences. In no way can society be more effectually delivered from such delusions than by cultivating aright our powers of observation by the study of nature.

Nature also affords a large scope for the training of our thinking powers, whether those which are concerned in abstraction and analysis, or the comparison of facts and objects, or those which relate to the investigation of cause and effect. The careful comparing of objects, and the estimation of the amount and value of their differences, required in the determination and classification of species in natural history ; the separation of qualities common to many species from those peculiar to one ; the distinction between structures properly homologous and those which are merely analogous, the tracing of the functions and uses of structures ; the application of modern causes to the



explanation of the ancient phenomena of the earth's crust, and many other operations required in the study of nature, not only cultivate habits of observation, but the reasoning powers, in directions not so much within the scope of other branches of education. Such investigations have also a powerful influence in cultivating the love of truth, and those mental habits which lead to acuteness and earnestness in working out the many contingent problems of ordinary life, which lie beyond the domain of the exact sciences. On this account the study of nature does not tend to alienate the mind from the ordinary business of life. This is well exemplified in the works of modern scientific travelers. Such men as Humboldt, Lyell and Darwin, even when they digress from their own immediate field of study, and enter on social habits and questions, give us representations more truthful, and reasonings more profound than those of ordinary travelers, because they carry to these things the mental habits which they have cultivated in their own proper department.

Natural History also claims a high position in education, in connection with the cultivation of taste—that appreciation of the truly grand and beautiful which opens up so many avenues of innocent pleasure, and is so intimately connected with the right exercise of our higher moral sentiments. A very high authority informs us, that the kingly state of the most sumptuous of Eastern monarchs, was inferior to that of the lily of the field; and we but announce a principle whose germ is hidden in that beautiful illustration, in saying that nature transcends art, not only in its grandeur, its varied contrivance, and self-sustaining power, but also in the beauty of its objects considered with reference to our æsthetic powers and preferences.

The world has worshipped art too much, revered nature too little. The savage displays the lowest taste when he admires the rude figures which he paints on his face or his garments, more than the glorious painting that adorns nature: yet even he acknowledges the preëminent excellence of nature, by imitating her forms and colors, and by adapting her painted plumes and flowers to his own use. There is a wide interval, including many gradations, between this low position, and that of the cultivated amateur or artist. The art of the latter makes a nearer approach to the truly beautiful, inasmuch as it more accurately represents the geometric and organic forms, and the coloring of nature; and inasmuch as it devises ideal combinations not found in the actual world; which ideal combinations, however, are beautiful or monstrous, just as they realize or violate the harmonies of nature.

I do not wish here so to depreciate art, as to raise the question—why

should there be such a thing as fine art? Why we should attempt to imitate that which we can not equal, and which yet every where surrounds us? The necessities of man's fallen nature—his desire to perpetuate the perishing forms dear to him—his own conception of the beautiful, and his longing to realize them—his ambitious wish to create something that may give him an undying reputation—his idolatrous desire to embody in material form, something that he or others may reverence or worship; these and such reasons are sufficient to account for art aspirations, as constant products of our mental constitution. Let us accord to art the admiration which it deserves, but let us not forget that nature is the highest art—the art which embraces in itself all else that truly deserves the name.

One essential difference between imitative art and nature, in reference to our present subject, is that the former is wholly superficial while the latter has an inner life and finer structure, corresponding to its outward form. The painter's bouquet of flowers, may charm us with its fine combination of forms and colors, and with the thought and taste that speak in every hue and tint; but examine it closely and it becomes merely a mass of patches of colors, in which the part of the actual flowers are but rudely shadowed forth. The natural flower, on the other hand, yields to the closest examination, only new structures and more delicate beauties not perceived at the first glance and even under the microscope, we find it pregnant with new wonders, so that if we represent separately all its various parts and internal structures, we have a series of pictures, each full of beauty and interest, and the whole showing us that the painter's genius has availed only to depict that outer layer of charms which lies at the very surface: and then in the actual flower, we have all those changes of beauty that march in procession from the unfolding bud to the ripening fruit. Truly may the lily of the field laugh to scorn the efforts of human art.

In like manner the Apollo of the Sculptor may represent, not only years of study and laborious days of delicate chiseling, but also a beau-ideal of manly symmetry and grace, such as we can seldom find approached in the real world; but take for comparison, the living well-developed human form, and you have an object infinitely more full of beauty. Every motion of such a form is a new statue. In a few minutes it gives you a whole gallery of varied attitudes, and then within, you have the wondrous mechanism of bones and muscles which, if not individually beautiful, become so to our inner mental vision, when we consider their adaptation to this infinity of graceful form and motion. The frame contrived to enshrine the immortal

mind of man, is the chief of the works of God known to us, and is not the less beautiful, that in our present fallen state, considerations, both moral and physical, require that the nakedness which was its primeval glory and distinction, should be covered from our sight. It is a high ambition that fires the sculptor with the hope, that he shall be able to embody even one of those attitudes that speak the emotions of the soul within. Yet after he has exhausted all his art, how cold, how dead, how intensely wearisome and monotonous, when compared with the living form, is the changeless beauty of the statue.

The littleness of art is equally apparent when it attempts to rival the grandeur of nature. Her towers and spires have less effect than those rocky pinnacles and mountain peaks, her pillared porticos do not equal nature's colonnades of stately trunks and graceful foliage. We habitually acknowledge this, when we adorn our finest buildings with surrounding trees, just as nature masks with foliage the bases of rude cliffs, and the flanks of precipices.

Art takes her true place when she sits at the feet of nature, and brings her students to drink in its beauties, that they may endeavor, however imperfectly, to reproduce them. On the other hand, the naturalist must not content himself with "writing latin names on white paper," wherewith to label nature's productions, but must rise to the contemplation of the order and beauty of the Kosmos. Both will thus rise to that highest taste, which will enable them to appreciate not only the elegance of individual forms, but their structure, their harmonies, their grouping and their relations, their special adaptation and their places as parts of a great system. Thus art will attain that highest point in which it displays original genius, without violating natural truth and unity, and nature will be regarded as the highest art.

Much is said and done in our time, with reference to the cultivation of popular taste for fine art, and this so far as it goes is well; but if the above views are correct, the only sure path to success in art education, is the cultivation of the study of nature. This is also an easier branch of education, provided the instructors have sufficient knowledge. Good works of art are rare and costly; but good works of nature are every where around us, waiting to be examined. Such education, popularly diffused, would react on the efforts of art. It would enable a widely extended public to appreciate real excellence, and would cause works of art to be valued just in proportion to the extent to which they realize or deviate from natural truth and unity. I do not profess to speak authoritatively on such subjects, but I confess that the strong impression on my mind is, that neither the

No. 9.—[Vol. III., No. 2.]—28.

revered mediæval models, nor the practice and principles of the generality of modern art reformers, would endure such criticism ; and that if we could combine popular enthusiasm for art, with scientific appreciation of nature, a new and better art might arise from the union.

I may have appeared to dwell too long upon this part of my subject ; but if so, my excuse must be that it leads to the vastly more important use to which I have now to refer. The study of nature guides to those large views of the unity and order of creation, which alone are worthy of a being of the rank of man, and which lead him to adequate conceptions of the Creator. The truly wise recognize three grades of beauty. First, that of art, which in its higher efforts, can raise ordinary minds far above themselves. Secondly, that of nature, which in its most common objects, must transcend the former, since its artist is that God, of whose infinite mind the genius of the artist is only a faint reflection. Thirdly, that preëminent beauty of moral goodness, revealed only in the spiritual nature of the Supreme. The first is one of the natural resources of fallen man in his search for happiness. The second was man's joy in his primeval innocence. The third is the inheritance of man redeemed. It is folly to place these on the same level. It is greater folly to worship either or both of the first, without regard to the last. It is true wisdom to aspire to the last, and to regard nature as the handmaid of piety, art as but the handmaid of nature.

Nature to the unobservant, is merely a mass of things more or less beautiful or interesting, but without any definite order or significance. An observer soon arrives at the conclusion that it is a series of circling changes, ever returning to the same points, ever renewing their courses, under the action of invariable laws. But if he rests here, he falls infinitely short of the idea of the Kosmos ; and stands on the brink of the profound error of eternal succession. A little further progress conducts him to the inviting field of special adaptation and mutual relation of things. He finds that nothing is without its use ; that every structure is most nicely adjusted to special ends ; that the supposed ceaseless circling of nature is merely the continuous action of great powers, by which an infinity of utilities are worked out—the great fly-wheel, which in its unceasing and at first sight apparently aimless round, is giving motion to thousands of reels and spindles and shuttles that are spinning and weaving, in all its varied patterns, the great web of life.

But the observer as he looks on this web, is surprised to find that it has in its whole extent a wondrous pattern. He rises to the contemplation of type in nature, a great truth to which science has only

lately opened its eyes. He begins dimly to perceive that the Creator has from the beginning had a plan before his mind, that this plan embraced various types or patterns of existence ; that on these patterns he has been working out the whole system of nature, adapting each to all the variety of uses, by an infinity of minor modifications. That in short, whether he study the eye of a gnat, or the structure of a mountain chain, he sees not only objects of beauty and utility, but parts of far-reaching plans of infinite wisdom, by which all objects, however separated in time or space, are linked together

Natural history, rising from the collection of individual facts to such large views, does not content itself with merely naming the objects of nature. A naturalist is not merely a man who knows hard names for many common or uncommon things, or who collects rare and curious objects, and can tell something of their habits and structures. His studies lead him to grand generalizations, even to the consideration, in part at least, of the plans that from eternity existed in the infinite mind, and guided the evolution of all material things. Natural history thus rises to the highest ground occupied by her sister sciences, and gives a mental training which in grandeur, can not be surpassed, inasmuch as it leads her pupils as near as man may approach, to those counsels of the Almighty in the material universe, which are connected, at least by broad analogies, with our own moral and religious interests.

It follows from the preceding views, that the study of nature forms a good training for the rational enjoyment of life. How much of positive pleasure does that man lose who passes through life absorbed with its wants and its artificialities, and regarding with a "brute, unconscious gaze," the grand revelation of a higher intelligence in the outer world. It is only in an approximation through our Divine Redeemer to the moral likeness of God, that we can be truly happy; but of the subsidiary pleasures which we are here permitted to enjoy, the contemplation of nature is one of the best and purest. It was the pleasure, the show, the spectacle prepared for man in Eden, and how much true philosophy and taste shine in the simple words, that in that paradise, God planted trees "pleasant to the sight," as well as "good for food;" and other things being equal, the nearer we can return to this primitive taste, the greater will be our sensuous enjoyment, the better the influence of our pleasures on our moral nature, because they will then depend on the cultivation of tastes at once natural and harmless, and will not lead us to communion with, and reverence for merely human genius, but will conduct us into the presence of the infinite perfection of the Creator. Nature is thus less likely

to lead to idolatry than art. Hence the Holy Scriptures, which guard so jealously against the tendencies of human nature to exalt itself and its works into divinities, every where recognize nature as a secondary revelation of God. So deep is the degradation of man, that even in the contemplation of nature, he tends to rest contented with the material creation—to abase himself in idolatrous veneration of the creature, rather than to worship the Creator. But if men will depart from the true God, even in this way, I may still be permitted to maintain that the Chaldean or Egyptian, who recognized the hosts of heaven, or the creeping things of earth, as fit emblems of Deity, or the naturalist, whose religion rises no higher than the theism to be gathered from nature, has a nobler faith than that of the Greek who worshipped the Phidian Jove, or the modern amateur who adores the genius of Raphael or Michael Angelo.

I have sought to magnify the office of this Society, on educational grounds alone; but I can not conclude without reminding you that natural science has its utilitarian aspects. All our material wealth consists of the objects of natural history. All our material civilization consists of such knowledge of these things, as may give us mastery over their uses and properties. Such knowledge is every day finding its reward, not merely in the direct promotion of the happiness of its possessor, but in enabling him to add to the comforts of our race, or to diminish the physical evils to which they are exposed. Into this subject, however, I can not now enter; and this is the less necessary, since the minds of nearly all intelligent men are sufficiently alive, at least, to the utilitarian value of the natural Sciences.

## **X. FRERES CHRETIENS, OR CHRISTIAN BROTHERS,**

**FOR THE**

**INSTRUCTION OF POOR CHILDREN.**

---

**THE Christian Brothers, or Brothers of the Christian Doctrine, or Teaching, constitute a most remarkable body of teachers devoted exclusively, and without pay to the education of the children of the poor. The original Institute of this brotherhood was the earliest professional school for the training of teachers in Europe, and the body has been instrumental in introducing improved methods of organization, instruction and government into elementary schools.**

**The Institute was established as a professional school in 1681, and to Abbe John Baptist de la Salle, belongs the high honor not only of founding it, but of so infusing into its early organization his own profound conviction of the Christ-like character of its mission among the poor, that it has retained for nearly two centuries the form and spirit of its origin. This devoted Christian teacher, was born at Rheims on the 30th of April, 1651, of parents distinguished alike by their piety and their high social position. To his mother he owed a prayerful and watchful home training, and to his father every facility for obtaining a university education. He was early distinguished for his scholarly attainments and maturity of character; and at the age of seventeen, before he had completed his full course of theological study, he was appointed Canon in the Cathedral church of Rheims. From the first, he became interested in the education of the young, and especially of the poor, as the most direct way of leading them to a Christian life;—and with this view before he was twenty-one years old, he assumed the direction of two charities, devoted to female education. From watching the operation of these schools, conducted by teachers without professional training, without plan, and without mutual sympathy and aid, he conceived the design of bringing the teachers of this class of schools from the neighboring parishes into a community for their moral and professional improvement. For this purpose, he invited them first to meet, and then to lodge at his house, and afterwards, about the year 1681, he purchased a house for their special accommodation. Here, out of school hours and during their holydays, they spent their time in the practice of religious duties, and in mutual conferences on the work in which they were engaged. About this period, a large number of free schools for the poor were established in the neighboring towns; and applications were constantly made to the Abbe, for teachers formed under his training, care, and influence. To meet this demand, and make himself more directly useful in the field of**



Christian education, he resigned his benefice, that he might give his whole attention to the work. To close the distance between himself, having a high social position and competence from his father's estate, and the poor schoolmasters to whom he was constantly preaching an unreserved consecration of themselves to their vocation—he not only resigned his canonry, with its social and pecuniary advantages, but distributed his patrimony, in a period of scarcity, in relieving the necessities of the poor, and in providing for the education of their children. He then placed himself on the footing equality—as to occupation, manner of life, and entire dependence on the charity of others—with the schoolmasters of the poor. The annals of education or religion, show but few such examples of practical self-denial, and entire consecration to a sense of duty. His reasons for the step are thus set forth in a memorandum found among his papers.

1. "If I have resources against misery, I can not preach to them an entire confidence in Providence.

2. "In remaining as I am, they will always find a specious pretext in my revenue to warrant their diffidence.

3. "A temptation, so plausible in appearance, can not ultimately fail to produce the effects which the demon desires; and the masters in part or in whole will desert the schools, and leave me without persons to conduct them.

4. "The rumor of their desertion will spread through the city: and those who would have a vocation to become masters, will be attacked by the same temptations, even before they enter.

5. "The schools without permanent masters will fail, and the Institute will become buried under their ruins, never more to be re-established.

6. "Should none of these anticipations be realized, can I be superior of these masters without ceasing to be a canon? are the two duties compatible? I must renounce either.

7. "Now, in this choice, what should determine me? The greater glory of God, the greater service of the church, my own perfection, and the salvation of souls. If I consult but such motives, so worthy of a priest of the Lord, I must resign my canonry to take upon me the care of the schools, and to form masters capable of conducting them.

8. "I feel no further attraction in the vocation of a canon; and though I have entered upon it legitimately, it appears to me that God now calls me to renounce it. He has placed me in my present situation; but does he not show me another which merits a preference?"

Having completed his act of resignation and self-imposed poverty, he assembled his teachers, announced to them what he had done, and sung with them a *Te Deum*. After a retreat—a period set apart to prayer and fasting,—continued for seventeen days, they devoted themselves to the consideration of the best course to give unity, efficiency, and permanence to their plans of Christian education for the poor. They assumed the name of "The Brothers of the Christian Doctrine," as expressive of their vocation—which by usage became to be abbreviated into "Christian Brothers." They took on themselves vows of poverty, celibacy, and obedience for three years. They prescribed to themselves the most frugal fare, to be provided in turns by each other. They adopted at that time some rules of behavior, which have since been incorporated into the fundamental rules of order, viz., not to speak of any individual in censorious terms—not to contradict, or correct each other,

this being reserved to the brother-director—not to jest, or speak of idle and frivolous topics, but to introduce such matters only as might lead to the love of God and practice of virtue—to exhibit equal affection for all poor scholars, and more for the poor than the rich—to give a continual example of modesty and of all the virtues which these pupils ought to practice ; and never to punish when they were irritated.

Their dress was fixed by a sort of accident. The mayor of Rheims saw some of the brothers badly clothed ; and, as it was the depth of winter, he feared lest their health might suffer, from want of defense from the inclemencies of the weather. He represented this to the founder, who accordingly procured some coarse black cloth, part of which he got made into cloaks, and part into *soutans*, such as were worn in former times by ecclesiastics—closed in front by hooks and eyes. To this he added a collar of coarse linen, strong shoes, and a hat of ample dimensions, which is the dress still worn by the brothers.

Ardent zeal, like that of these Christian schoolmasters, is liable, if not joined with discretion, to run into excess. Some of the brothers carried their austerities so far that their health was destroyed, and three of them fell victims to their indiscreet ardor. This left a sad blank in the establishment. However, in spite of these losses, the number of the brothers soon began rapidly to increase, and still more the demand for their services ; so great was their reputation for skill, patience, and indefatigableness in teaching.

From the great increase of the establishment, M. de la Salle resolved to vacate the office of principal. He also judged it necessary, for his soul's health, to be subject like the rest, to the orders of a superior. Accordingly, he persuaded the brothers to elect brother Felix, as his successor. He was the first to greet the new superior ; and, for a time, became an ordinary brother. He swept the house in his turn ; washed the utensils ; and submitted himself implicitly to all the rules of the institution. However, it was judged expedient that he should resume the office of superior, which he did from a sense of duty, though with great reluctance.

The life which this pious man had chosen was not without its disappointments and drawbacks. His former friends, and even his relations, scoffed at his pious labors, and publicly insulted him ; all of which he bore with patience. Some of the younger members of the institute were unable to command the respect of the children under their instruction ; and, in the hope of maintaining discipline, had recourse to undue severity. M. de la Salle knew the source of the evil : he exhorted his disciple to *watch over themselves* ; to restrain their impatience ; and to make themselves beloved by mildness. His instruction and example had the desired effect ; and the leading characteristic of the Christian Brothers is, that imperturbable patience, joined with kind benevolence, which are the most valuable qualities of the teachers of youth. *If the teachers would but watch over themselves, they would soon learn to influence others.*

The demand for teachers, in connection with the brothers, exceeded the supply ; and to remedy this, those who stood in need of teachers sought out young men of good dispositions to attend on the instructions of M. de la Salle. These young candidates were lodged and instructed by the most experienced brothers, and thus received a normal training in their future duties.

In 1688, M. de la Salle, with two brothers, took charge of a school in the parish of St. Sulpice, in Paris. They found the schools in great disorder ; without regulation, as the time of opening and closing, the order and length of lessons, and without discipline. By skill and patience the school was improved, and a desire created for similar schools in other parishes. But all this was done at a time when some of the brothers proved weak and faithless ; and the founder was under the necessity of

reorganizing this institute, and providing for its permanence by a novitiate at Vaugirard, near Paris, in which pious young persons who felt it to be a duty and a pleasure to teach and labor for the poor, might go through a course of trial and preparation for the self-denying life of the brothers. He accordingly associated with him two brothers, and they together consecrated themselves entirely to God, "to procure by all our power, and all our care, the establishment of Christian schools, and for this purpose make vow of association and union, to procure and maintain this establishment, without liberty to swerve, even though there should remain but three in the society, and that we should be obliged to ask alms, and live on bread only." And they did persevere in seasons of scarcity, when they lived on herbs only, against the misapprehensions of good men, and the interested opposition of the teachers of Paris, who found that the gratuitous and skillful labors of the brothers interfered with their emoluments. The schoolmasters of Chârtres, where M. de la Salle had sent six brothers to open a large school, succeeded in obtaining from the bishop an order, that no children should be admitted into this school unless they were inscribed on the list of paupers. This regulation was fatal to the school. In 1700 a school was opened at Calais.

In 1699, M. de la Salle attached to the novitiate in Paris, a Sunday school for apprentices and other young persons under twenty years of age. In these schools, besides oral instruction in the catechism and Bible, lessons in reading, arithmetic, and drawing, were given to those whose early education had been entirely neglected. But he was not allowed to continue these schools many years without opposition. In 1706, the society of writing masters presented a memorial to the officer of police, charging the brothers with keeping, under pretext of charity, schools not legally authorized, to the prejudice of those that were, and asking if these schools were to be tolerated, they should be confined to those only who were paupers, and that such children should be taught only those things which were suitable to the condition of their parents. They succeeded, and at a subsequent application, obtained a grant, prohibiting parents who had means from sending to free schools. By these efforts the Sunday schools were broken up, after some six years trial.

In 1702, the first step was taken to establish an Institute at Rome, under the mission of one of the brothers, Gabriel Drolin, who after years of poverty, was made conductor of one of the charitable schools founded by Pope Clement XI. This school became afterwards the foundation of the house which the brothers have had in Rome since the pontificate of Benedict XIII., who conferred on the institute, the constitution of a religious order. In 1703, under the pecuniary aid of M. Chateau Blanc, and the countenance of the archbishop, M. de Gontery, a school was opened at Avignon. The archbishop, in a certificate addressed to the Pope in 1720, says: "since the establishment of the gratuitous schools in the city of Avignon, the brothers have already discharged their duties with zeal and assiduity. The public have derived great advantages

from their application to the Christian education of the children ; and their modesty and purity of morals have, at all times, given singular edification."

In 1704 a school was opened at Marseilles, for the children of sailors, under the care of two brothers. They were so successful, that in 1735 their number was increased to 10, and they were received into the regular communities, or guilds, of the city.

In 1705, two teachers, under the invitation of the archbishop of Rouen, opened a school in that city, and in the course of a few months, M. de la Salle, decided to remove and establish his Novitiate there. But here the established order of schoolmasters interposed their claim against the new comers, and it was only after submitting to the following conditions prescribed by a committee of the great hospital, to whom the right of granting permission to teach belonged by charter.

1. That the brothers should be present when the poor of the city hospital were rising and going to bed ; and that they should recite for them morning and evening prayers.

2. That they should, moreover, instruct them, and attend also to the four large schools of the city.

3. They were to return from the schools, though situated in the most remote parts of the city, to take their refraction at the hospital.

4. On their return from the schools, they were to serve the poor at table.

5. Five brothers were to perform all these duties.

The brothers acceded to these terms. And in the neighborhood established, in 1705, a novitiate on an estate called St. You—through the aid of Madame de Louvois. Here candidates for admission to the community came and entered the novitiate—here he renewed the annual retreats, in which the brothers who were now dispersed abroad in different cities, reassembled and renewed their vows of poverty and obedience.

In 1710, a priest of Vans, Vincent de St. John Delzé du Rouze, having witnessed the success of the schools at Avignon, made provision in his will for the support of a school to be taught by the brothers, "persuaded as I am, that the greater part of young children fall into irregularity of morals, for want of a religious education."

In the same year a school was established at Moulins, where the Abbé Languet was so pleased with their methods of instruction, that he engaged the senior brother to instruct the children in the church of St. Peter, the principal church in the town, and required all the young ecclesiastics to attend on his instruction with a view of acquiring his methods. The last labor of M. de la Salle, was to assist in establishing a school at Boulogne under the auspices of M. de la Cocherie, and the Marquis de Colbert.

In the year 1716, he urged the acceptance of his resignation as superior over the community ; and brother Bartholomew was elected in his stead. At this time, the rules of the order were revised and confirmed. He died on the 7th of April, 1719, at the Institute of St. You, near Rouen ; a portion of the last year of his life was devoted to a class of little children, confided by their parents to the care of the brothers for their

training. Born with a large endowment of mental faculties, which he had enriched by studious and careful culture, after a life of laborious usefulness, he died poor, having in possession only the New Testament, the Imitation of Christ, a crucifix, a breviary, and his beads, on the 17th of April, 1719, in the sixty-eight year of his age.

In 1724, the society obtained a corporate existence under letters-patent from Louis XV., and early in 1725 the rules of the institute were approved by Pope Benedict XIII., and the community raised to the dignity of a religious order. The Bulls of the Pope were approved by the king's council, and immediately accepted by the society. St. Yon continued to be the residence of the superior general until 1770, when it was changed to Paris, and in 1778 to Melun. In 1777, the society raised a fund to sustain the aged and infirm brothers who could no longer labor in their vocation as schoolmasters, and at the same time established a normal school at Melun, for the training and education of novitiates. In addition to the common or ordinary gratuitous day schools, for rich and poor, as taught by the brothers, there were two classes of boarding schools under their care—the first consisted of lads of noble and respectable parents, whose early profligacy and bad character, required a separation from home; and the second was composed of children of parents in easy circumstances. There was one of the first class a boarding school at St. Yon, and its establishment was one of the conditions on which the lease, and afterwards the purchase of the property, was obtained. It was a sort of reform school. Of this last class, there were five or six, which were established in consideration of liberal subscriptions in aid of the day schools, for the benefit of the children of the subscribers. These schools did not fall within the regular plan of the brothers, but were maintained until their dispersion in 1792.

In 1789, the national assembly prohibited vows to be made in communities; and 1790, suppressed all religious societies; and in 1791, the institute was dispersed. At that date there were one hundred and twenty houses, and over one thousand brothers, actively engaged in the duties of the school room. The continuity of the society was secured by the houses established in Italy, to which many of the brothers fled, and over which Pope Pius VI., appointed one of the directors vicar-general. The houses were suppressed in 1798, on the success of the French arms, and of the once flourishing society, there remained in 1799 only the two houses of Ferrara and Orvietto. In 1801, on the conclusion of a *Concordat* between the Pope and the government, the society was revived in France by the opening of a school at Lyons; and in 1815, they resumed their habit, and opened a novitiate, the members of which were exempt from military service. At the organization of the university in 1808, the institute was legally reorganized, and from that time has increased in numbers and usefulness. Since 1833, they have opened evening schools for adults in Paris, and the large provincial towns. To supply teachers for this class of schools, a preparatory novitiate was established in 1837 at Paris, which has since become the normal school of the society.

In 1842, there were 390 houses, (of which 326 were in France) with 3,030 brothers, and 585 novices. There were 642 schools with 163,700 children, besides evening schools with 7,900 adults in attendance, and three reformatory schools with 2,000 convicts, under instruction.

The self-devotion and missionary spirit of the Christian Brothers, and the religious influence which pervades their schools have attracted the attention, and won the admiration of every visitor.

The following sketch is taken from Kay's "*Education of the Poor in England and Europe*," published by J. Hatchard and Son, London, 1846.

"The Frères are a society of men devoted entirely and exclusively to the education of the poor. They take the vow of celibacy, renounce all the pleasures of society and relationship, enter into the brotherhood, and retain only two objects in life,—their own spiritual advancement and the education of the people. But before a young man can be received into the society, he is required to pass an intermediate period of education and trial, during which he is denied all the ordinary pleasures of life, is accustomed to the humblest and most servile occupations, and receives an excellent and most liberal education. During this period, which lasts three years, he is carefully instructed in the principles of the Roman Catholic religion, in the sciences, in the French and Latin languages, in history, geography, arithmetic, writing, &c., and at the same time he is required to perform the most humble household duties. The Frères and the young men who are passing through their first novitiate, manage in turn all the household duties, as the cooking, the preparation of the meals, and all the ordinary duties of domestic servants; whilst their simple and perfectly plain costume, their separation from the world and from their friends, who are only permitted to visit them at long intervals, accustom them to the arduous and self-denying life they are called upon afterward to lead in the primary schools.

By these means they form a character admirably fitted for the important office of a schoolmaster.

The Frères never leave the walls of one of their houses except in company. One Frère is not permitted to travel without being accompanied by another; and when a department or commune requires their services at a primary school, three are sent out, one of whom manages their domestic concerns, whilst the other two conduct the school classes. If, however, there is in any town more than one school conducted by Frères, they all live together under the superintendence of an elder Frère, who is styled director.

If at the end of the first novitiate the young man is still willing and desirous of entering the brotherhood, he is admitted by gradual advancement and preparation into the bosom of the society. He is then at the disposition of the principal of the order, who sends him, in company with two brothers, to some district which has demanded a master from them.

What remains of their salaries after defraying the expenses of their frugal table, is returned to the treasury of the society, by which it is expended in the printing of their school-books, in the various expenses of their central establishment, and in works of charity.

Before a Frère is allowed to conduct a primary school, he is obliged to obtain, in like manner as the other teachers, a brevet de capacité; government demanding in all cases assurance of the secular education of the teachers, and of the character of the instruction given by them in their schools. All their schools are of course open as well to the inspectors of government, who visit, examine, and report upon them, as to their own, who strictly examine the conduct and progress of the Frères in their different schools, and report to the principal.



The following table will show the number of schools conducted Frères in 1844, and the number of children educated in them :—

	No. of Schools.	No. of Children.
France, . . . .	658	169,501
Belgium, . . . .	41	9,535
Savoy, . . . .	28	5,110
Piedmont, . . . .	30	6,490
Pontifical States, . . . .	20	4,199
Canada, . . . .	6	1,840
Turkey, . . . .	2	580
Switzerland, . . . .	2	444
Total, . . . .	787	197,699

The education given in their schools is very liberal and the books u very good. The Frères consider that if they *neglect to develope the in lect of their pupils, they can not advance their religious education satinf torily* ; they consequently spare no pains to attain the former devel ment, in order that the latter, which is the great end of their teaching: of all instruction whatsoever, may not be retarded.

The following are among the regulations of the Society :

1. The Institution des Frères des Ecoles Chrétiennes is a society which fesses to conduct schools gratuitously. The design of this institution is to a Christian education to children. With this object in view, the Frères cond schools where children may be placed under the management of masters f morning until evening, so that the masters may be able to teach them to honestly and uprightly, by instructing them in the principles of our holy gion, by teaching them Christian precepts, and by giving them suitable sufficient instruction.

2. The spirit of the institution is a spirit of faith which ought to encourag members to attribute all to God, to act as continually in the sight of God, an perfect conformity to His orders and His will. The members of this asso tion should be filled with an ardent zeal for the instruction of children, for ti preservation in innocence and the fear of God, and for their entire separa from sin.

3. The institution is directed by a *superior*, who is nominated for life. He two assistants, who compose his council, and aid him in governing the soci These assistants live in the same house with him, assist at his councils, render him aid whenever necessary.

4. The superior is elected by ballot by the directors assembled at the princ houses; the two assistants are chosen in the same manner, and these latter l office ten years, and can then be re-elected.

5. The superior may be deposed, but only by a general chapter, and for gi causes.

6. This chapter is composed of thirty of the oldest Frères, or directors of principal houses, who assemble by right once every ten years, and whenever is deemed necessary to convoke an extraordinary meeting.

7. The private houses are governed by Frères-directors, who are appointed three years, unless it appears advisable to the superior and his assistant name a shorter period, or to recall them before the end of it.

8. The superior names the visitors. They are appointed for three years, make a round of visits once every year. They require of the directors an count of their receipts and expenses, and as soon as their visits are compk they present a report to their superior of the necessary changes and correct to be made by him.

9. No Frère can take priest's orders, or pretend to any ecclesiastical of neither can he wear a surplice or serve in the churches, except at daily m but they confine themselves to their vocation, and live in silence, in retreat, in entire devotion to their duties.

10. They are bound to the institution by three simple religious vows, w are taken at first for only three years, as well as by a vow of perseverance a renouncement of any recompense for the instruction they give. These v can only be annulled after dispensation granted by the Pope.



11. They are not admitted to take the vows until they have been at least two years in the institution, and until they have passed one year in the novitiate and one year in the school.

12. They are only admitted after a severe examination, and then only by a majority of the votes of the Frères of the house where they have passed their novitiate.

13. There are two novitiates, one where they admit young men between 13 and 16 years of age, the other for older men. But all young men who are admitted below the age of 25 renew their vows every year till they attain that age.

14. They banish from the society every Frère who conducts himself unbecomingly. But this is only done for grave offenses, and by a majority of votes at a general chapter.

15. The same regulation is observed when a Frère desires to leave the society and to obtain a dispensation from his vows.

16. The Frères do not establish themselves in the dioceses without the consent of the bishops, and they acknowledge their authority as their spiritual government, and that of the magistrates as their civil government.

19. The Frères shall instruct their pupils after the method prescribed to them by the institution.

20. They shall teach their scholars to read French and Latin, and to write.

21. They shall teach them also orthography, and arithmetic, the matins and vespers, le Pater, l'Ave Maria, le Credo et le Confiteor, and the French translations of these prayers, the Commandments of God and of the Church, the responses of the holy mass, the Catechism, the duties of a Christian, and the maxims and precepts that our Lord has left us in the holy Testament.

22. They shall teach the Catechism half an hour daily.

27. The Frères shall not receive from the scholars, or their parents, either money or any other present, at any time.

30. They shall exhibit an equal affection for all their poor scholars, and more for the poor than for the rich; because the object of the institution is the instruction of the poor.

31. They shall endeavor to give their pupils, by their conduct and manners, a continual example of modesty, and of all the other virtues which they ought to be taught, and which they ought to practise.

37. The Frères shall take the greatest care that they very rarely punish their children, as they ought to be persuaded that, by refraining as much as possible from punishment, they will best succeed in properly conducting a school, and in establishing order in it.

38. When punishment shall have become absolutely necessary, they shall take the greatest care to punish with the greatest moderation and presence of mind, and never to do it under the influence of a hasty movement, or when they feel irritated.

39. They shall watch over themselves that they never exhibit the least anger or impatience, either in their corrections, or in any of their words or actions; as they ought to be convinced, that if they do not take these precautions the scholars will not profit from their correction, (and the Frères never ought to correct except with the object of benefiting their children) and God will not give the correction his blessing.

40. They shall not at any time give to their scholars any injurious epithet or insulting name.

41. They shall also take the greatest care not to strike their scholars with hand, foot, or stick, nor to push them rudely.

42. They shall take great care not to pull their ears, their hair, or their noses, nor to fling any thing at them; these kinds of corrections ought not to be practised by the Frères, as they are very indecent and opposed to charity and Christian kindness.

43. They shall not correct their scholars during prayers, or at the time of catechising, except when they cannot defer the correction.

They shall not use corporal punishment, except when every other means of correction has failed to produce the right effect.

58. The Frère-director shall be inspector over all the schools in his town; and when more than one inspector is necessary for one house of Frères, the other inspector shall report to the Frère-director twice a week on the conduct of each Frère, on the condition of his class, and on the progress of his scholars.

The following remarks on the Training School of this Brotherhood of Teachers are taken from "the Second Report of J. P. Kay Shuttleworth, on the Schools for the Training of Parochial Schoolmasters at Battersea."

We had frequently visited the schools of the Brothers of the Christian Doctrine in France, and had spent much time in the examination of their *Écoles-mères*, or Mother-School. Our attention was attracted to these schools by the gentle manners and simple habits which distinguished the Frères; by their sympathy for children, and the religious feeling which pervaded their elementary schools. Their schools are certainly deficient in some of the niceties of organization and method; and there are subjects on which the instruction might be more complete and exact; but each master was, as it were, a parent to the children around him. The school resembled a harmonious family.

The self-denying industry of these pious men was remarkable. The habits of their order would be deemed severe in this country. In the Mother School (where they all reside,) they rise at four. After private meditation, their public devotions in the chapel occupy the early hours of the morning. The domestic drudgery of the household succeeds. They breakfast at seven, and are in the schools of the great cities of France at nine. When the routine of daily school-keeping is at an end, after a short interval for refreshment and exercise, they open their evening schools, where hundreds of the adult population receive instruction, not merely in reading, writing, and the simplest elements of numbers, but in singing, drawing, geography; the mensuration of planes and solids; the history of France, and in religion. Their evening schools do not close till ten. The public expenditure on account of their services is one-third the usual remuneration of an elementary schoolmaster in France, and they devote their lives, constrained by the influence of a religious feeling, under a rule of celibacy, but without a vow, to the education of the poor.

The unquestionable self-denial of such a life; the attachment of the children, and of the adult pupils to their instructors, together with the constant sense of the all-subduing presence of Christian principle, rendered the means adopted by the Christian Brothers, for the training of their novices, a matter of much interest and inquiry.

The Mother School differs in most important respects from a Normal School, but the extent of this difference is not at first sight apparent, and is one of those results of our experience which we wish to submit.

The Mother School is an establishment comprising arrangements for the instruction and training of novices; for the residence of the brothers, who are engaged in the active performance of the duties of their order, as masters of elementary day and evening schools; and it affords an asylum, into which they gradually retire from the fatigues and cares of their public labors, as age approaches, or infirmities accumulate, to spend the period of sickness or decrepitude in the tranquillity of the household provided for them, and amidst the consolations of their brethren. The brothers constitute a family, performing every domestic service, ministering to the sick and infirm, and assembling for devotion daily in their chapel.

Their novices enter about the ages of twelve or fourteen. They at once assume the dress of the order, and enter upon the self-denying routine of the household. The first years of their novitiate are of course devoted to such elementary instruction as is necessary to prepare them for their future duties as teachers of the poor. Their habits are formed, not only in the course of this instruction, but by joining the religious exercises; performing the household duties; and enjoying the benefit of constant intercourse with the elder brethren of the Mother School, who are at once their instructors and friends. In this life of seclusion, the superior of the Mother School has opportunities of observing and ascertaining the minutest traits of character, which indicate their comparative qualifications for the future labors of the order; nor is this vigilance relaxed, but rather increased, when they first quit the private studies of the Mother School, to be gradually initiated in their public labors as instructors of the people.

Such of the novices as are found not to possess the requisite qualifications, especially as respects the moral constitution necessary for the duties of their order, are permitted to leave the Mother School to enter upon other pursuits.

During the period of the novitiate, such instances are not rare, but we have reason to believe, that they seldom occur after the brother has acquired maturity.

As their education in the Mother School proceeds, the period devoted every day to their public labors in the elementary schools is enlarged; and they thus, under the eye of elder brethren, assisted by their example and precepts, gradually emerge from the privacy of their novitiate to their public duties.

In all this there is not much that differs from the life of a young pupil in a Normal School; but, at this point, the resemblance ceases, and a great divergence occurs.

The brother, whose novitiate is at an end, continues a member of the household of the Mother School. He has only advanced to a higher rank. He is surrounded by the same influences. The daily routine which formed his domestic and religious habits continues. His mind is fed, and his purposes are strengthened by the conversation and examples of his brethren, and his conduct is under the paternal eye of his superior. Under such circumstances, personal identity is almost absorbed in the corporate life by which he is surrounded. The strength of the order supports his weakness: the spirit of the order is the pervading principle of his life: he thinks, feels, and acts, by an unconscious inspiration from every thing by which he is surrounded, in a calm atmosphere of devotion and religious labor. All is prescribed; and a pious submission, a humble faith, a patient zeal, and a self-denying activity are his highest duties.

Contrast his condition with that of a young man leaving a Normal School at the age of eighteen or nineteen, after three or four years of comparative seclusion, under a regimen closely resembling that of the Mother School. At this age, it is necessary that he should be put in charge of an elementary school, in order that he may earn an independence.

The most favorable situation in which he can be placed, because remote from the grosser forms of temptation, and therefore least in contrast with his previous position, is the charge of a rural school. For the tranquil and eventless life of the master of a rural school, such a training is not an unfit preparation. His resources are not taxed by the necessity for inventing new means to meet the novel combinations which arise in a more active state of society. His energy is equal to the task of instructing the submissive and tractable, though often dull children of the peasantry; and the gentle manners and quiet demeanor, which are the uniform results of his previous education, are in harmony with the passionless life of the seclusion into which he is plunged. His knowledge and his skill in method are abundantly superior to the necessities of his position, and the unambitious sense of duty which he displays attracts the confidence and wins the regard of the clergyman of the parish and of his intelligent neighbors. For such a life, we have found even the young pupils whom we introduced into the training schools at their foundation well fitted, and we have preferred to settle them, as far as we could, on the estates of our personal friends, where we are assured they have succeeded. Those only who have entered the Normal School at adult age, have been capable of successfully contending with the greater difficulties of town schools.

But we are also led by our experience to say, that such a novitiate does not prepare a youth of tender age to encounter the responsibilities of a large town or village school, in a manufacturing or mining district. Such a position is in the most painful contrast with his previous training. He exchanges the comparative seclusion of his residence in the Normal School for the difficult position of a public instructor, on whom many jealous eyes are fixed. For the first time he is alone in his profession; unaided by the example of his masters; not stimulated by emulation with his fellows; removed from the vigilant eye of the Principal of the school; separated from the powerful influences of that corporate spirit, which impelled his previous career, yet placed amidst difficulties, perplexing even to the most mature experience, and required to tax his invention to meet new circumstances, before he has acquired confidence in the unsustained exercise of his recently developed powers. He has left the training school for the rude contact of a coarse, selfish, and immoral populace, whose gross appetites and manners render the narrow streets in his neighborhood scenes of impurity. He is at once brought face to face with an ignorant and corrupt multitude, to whose children he is to prove a leader and guide.

His difficulties are formidable. His thoughts are fixed on the deformity of

this monstrous condition of society. It is something to have this sense of the extremity of the evil, but to confront it, that conviction should become to persevering exertion. We have witnessed this failure, and we conclude that such difficulties can only be successfully encountered by masters of age and experience.

The situation of the novice of a Mother School, founded in the centre of a manufacturing city, is in direct contrast with that of the young student changing his secluded training in a Normal School for the unaided child in a great town school.

If such a Mother School were founded in the midst of one of our commercial towns, under the charge of a Principal of elevated character and acquirements; if he had assembled around him devoted and humble men to spend their lives in reclaiming the surrounding population by the foundation and management of schools for the poor; and into this society a young man introduced at a tender age, instructed, trained, and reared in the habits and ties of his profession; gradually brought into contact with the actual state of the world, the healing of which his life was to be devoted; never abandoned to comparatively feeble resources, but always feeling himself the mission of a body able to protect, ready to console, and willing to assist and instruct in such a situation, his feebleness would be sustained by the strength of principle animated with the vitality of Christian principle.

We are far from recommending the establishment of such a school, to the success of which we think we perceive insurmountable obstacles in this country. The only form in which a similar machinery could exist in England is the Town Normal School, in which all the apprentices or pupil teachers of several elementary schools might lodge, and where, under the supervision of a Principal, their domestic and religious habits might be formed. The pupil teachers of the elementary schools might be associates of the Normal School, and conduct the instruction of the pupil teachers, in the evening or early morning, when free from the duties of their schools. The whole body of pupil teachers would thus form a society, with the Principal at their head, actively employed in the practical daily duties of managing and instructing schools, and also by their connection with the Town Normal School, keeping in view the general interests of elementary education, and contributing to promote them, forming a body of assistant masters. If a good library were collected in this institution, and lectures from time to time delivered on appropriate subjects, the whole body of masters and assistants, or, which would be better, if a Normal School were founded, which might be attended by the masters and most of the assistant masters, every improvement in method would thus be rapidly communicated through the elementary schools of towns.

### XIII. THE SCHOOL AND THE TEACHER IN LITERATURE.

(Continued from page 160, Vol. III., No. 8.)

WILLIAM SHENSTONE, 1714—1763.

WILLIAM SHENSTONE was born at Leasowes, in the parish of Hales-Owen, Shropshire, in 1714. He was taught to read at a “dame school,” the house, and teacher of which, have been immortalized in his poem of the *Schoolmistress*—spent four years at Pembroke College, Oxford,—and then impoverished himself in embellishing a small paternal estate, which he made the envy of men of wealth, and the admiration of men of taste. His poems, essays, and lectures, were collected and published after his death, which occurred in 1763. His “*Schoolmistress*,” a descriptive sketch in imitation of Spenser, ranks in poetry, with the paintings of Teniers and Wilkie, for its force and truthfulness to nature, as well as its quiet humor.

#### THE SCHOOLMISTRESS. (1.)

Ah, me! full sorely is my heart forlorn,  
To think how modest worth neglected lies;  
While partial fame doth with her blasts adorn  
Such deeds alone as pride and pomp disguise;  
Deeds of ill-sort and mischievous emprise;  
Lend me thy clarion, goddess! let me try  
To sound the praise of merit ere it dies;  
Such as I oft have chanced to espy,  
Lost in the dreary shades of dull obscurity.

In every village mark'd with little spire,  
Embowered in trees, and hardly known to fame,  
There dwells, in lowly shed and mean attire,  
A matron old, whom we schoolmistress name,  
Who boasts unruly brats with birch to tame;  
They grieven sore, in piteous durance pent,  
Awed by the power of this relentless dame,  
And oft-times, on vagaries idly bent,  
For unkempt hair, or task unconn'd, are sorely shent.

And all in sight doth rise a birchin tree, (2.)  
Which learning near her little dome did stowe,  
Whilom a twig of small regard to see,  
Though now so wide its waving branches flow,  
And work the simple vassals mickle woe;  
For not a wind might curl the leaves that blew,  
But their limbs shudder'd, and their pulse beat low  
And as they looked, they found their horror grew,  
And shaped it into rods, and tingled at the view.

So have I seen (who has not, may conceive)  
 A lifeless phantom near a garden placed ;  
 So doth it wanton birds of peace bereave,  
 Of sport, of song, of pleasure, of repast ;  
 They start, they stare, they wheel, they look aghast ;  
 Sad servitude ! such comfortless annoy  
 May no bold Briton's riper age e'er taste !  
 Ne superstition clog his dance of joy,  
 Ne vision empty, vain, his native bliss destroy.

Near to this dome is found a patch so green,  
 On which the tribe their gambols do display ;  
 And at the door imprisoning board is seen,  
 Lest weakly wights of smaller size should stray,  
 Eager, perdie, to bask in sunny day !  
 The noises intermixed, which thence resound,  
 Do learning's little tenement betray ;  
 Where sits the dame, disguised in look profound,  
 And eyes her fairy throng, and turns her wheel around.

Her cap, far whiter than the driven snow,  
 Emblem right meet, of decency does yield ;  
 Her apron, dyed in grain, as blue, I trowe,  
 As is the hare-bell that adorns the field ;  
 And in her hand, for scepter, she does wield  
 Tway birchen sprays, with anxious fears entwined,  
 With dark distrust, and sad repentance filled,  
 And steadfast hate, and sharp affliction joined,  
 And fury uncontrolled, and chastisement unkind.

Few but have kenned, in semblance meet portrayed,  
 The childish faces of old Eol's train ;  
 Libs, Notus, Auster ; these in frowns arrayed,  
 How then would fare on earth, or sky, or main,  
 Were the stern god to give his slaves the rein ?  
 And were not she rebellious breasts to quell,  
 And were not she her statutes to maintain,  
 The cot no more, I ween, were deemed the cell,  
 Where comely peace of mind, and decent order dwell.

A russet stole was o'er her shoulders thrown ;  
 A russet kirtle fenced the nipping air ;  
 'Twas simple russet, but it was her own ;  
 'Twas her own country bred the flock so fair ;  
 'Twas her own labor did the fleece prepare ;  
 And, sooth to say her pupils, ranged around,  
 Through pious awe, did term it passing rare ;  
 For they in gaping wonderment abound,  
 And think, no doubt, she been the greatest wight on ground !

Albeit ne flattery did corrupt the truth,  
 Ne pompous title did debauch her ear ;  
 Goody, good-woman, n'aunt, forsooth,  
 Or dame, the sole additions she did hear ;  
 Yet these she challenged, these she held right dear ;  
 Ne would esteem him act as mought behove,

Who should not honored eld with these revere ;  
 For never title yet so mean could prove,  
 But there was eke a mind that did that title love.

One ancient hen she took delight to feed,  
 The plodding pattern of the busy dame ;  
 Which, ever and anon, impeled by need,  
 Into her school, begirt with chickens, came !  
 Such favor did her past deportment claim ;  
 And if neglect had lavished on the ground  
 Fragment of bread, she would collect the same,  
 For well she knew, and quaintly could expound,  
 What sin it were to waste the smallest crumb she found.

Herbs, too, she knew, and well of each could speak,  
 That in her garden sipped the silvery dew ;  
 Where no vain flower disclos'd a gawdy streak ;  
 But herbs for use and physic not a few,  
 Of grey renown, within those borders grew ;  
 The tufted basil, pun-provoking thyme,  
 Fresh baum, and mary-gold of cheerful hue ;  
 The lowely gill, that never dares to climb ;  
 And more I fain would sing, disdaining here to rhyme.

Yet euphrasy may not be left unsung,  
 That gives dim eyes to wander leagues around,  
 And pungent radish, biting infants tongue ;  
 And plantain ribbed, that heals the reaper's wound ;  
 And marjoram sweet, in shepherd's posie found ;  
 And lavender, whose spikes of azure bloom  
 Shall be ere-while in arid bundles bound,  
 To lurk amidst the labors of her loom,  
 And crown her kerchiefs clean, with mickle rare perfume.

And here trim rosemarine, that whilom crowned  
 The daintiest garden of the proudest peer,  
 Ere, driven from its envied site, it found  
 A sacred shelter for its branches here ;  
 Where edged with gold its glittering skirts appear.  
 O, wassel days ! O, customs meet and well !  
 Ere this was banished from its lofty sphere ;  
 Simplicity then sought this humble cell,  
 Nor ever would she more withthane and lordling dwell.

Here oft the dame, on sabbath's decent eve,  
 Hymn'd such psalms as Sternhold forth did mete ;  
 If winter 'twere, she to her hearth did cleave,  
 But in her garden found a summer-seat ;  
 Sweet melody ! to hear her then repeat  
 How Israel's sons, beneath a foreign king,  
 While taunting foe-men did a song intreat,  
 All for the nonce, untuning every string,  
 Uphung their useless lyres—small heart had they to sing

For she was just, and friend to virtuous lore,  
 And passed much time in truly virtuous deed ;  
 And in those elfin ears would oft deplore



The times when truth by popish rage did bleed,  
 And torturous death was true devotion's meed;  
 And simple faith in iron chains did mourn,  
 That nould on wooden image place her creed;  
 And lawny saints in smouldering flames did burn;  
 Ah, dearest lord, forefend, thilk days should e'er return!

In elbow-chair, like that of Scottish stem  
 By the sharp tooth of cankering eld defaced,  
 In which, when he receives his diadem,  
 Our sovereign prince and liefest liege is placed,  
 The matron sate, and some with rank she graced,  
 (The source of children's and of courtiers pride!)  
 Redressed affronts, for vile affronts there passed;  
 And warned them not the fretful to deride,  
 But love each other dear, whatever them betide.

Right well she knew each temper to descry;  
 To thwart the proud, and the submiss to raise,  
 Some with vile copper-prize exalt on high,  
 And some entice with pittance small of praise;  
 And other some with baleful sprig she frays;  
 Ee'n absent, she the reins of power doth hold,  
 While with quaint arts the giddy crowd she sways;  
 Forewarned if little bird their pranks behold,  
 'Twill whisper in her ear, and all the scene unfold.

Lo! now with state she utters the command;  
 Eftsoons the urchins to their tasks repair;  
 Their books of stature small they take in hand,  
 Which with pellucid horn secured are, (3.)  
 To save from fingers wet the letters fair;  
 The work so gay, that on their back is seen,  
 St. George's high achievements does declare;  
 On which thilk wight, that has y-gazing been  
 Kens the forth-coming rod—unpleasing sight, I ween!

Ah! luckless he, and born beneath the beam  
 Of evil star! it irks me whilst I write;  
 As erst the\* bard by Mulla's silver stream,  
 Oft as he told of deadly, dolorous plight,  
 Sighed as he sung, and did in tears indite.  
 For, brandishing the rod, she doth begin  
 To loose the brogues, (4.) the stripling's late delight!  
 And down they drop; appears his dainty skin,  
 Fair as the furry-coat of whitest ermilin.

O, ruthful scene! when, from a nook obscure,  
 His little sister doth his peril see;  
 All playful as she sate, she grows demure;  
 She finds full soon her wonted spirits flee;  
 She meditates a prayer to set him free;  
 Nor gentle pardon could this dame deny  
 (If gentle pardon could with dames agree)  
 To her sad grief which swells in either eye,  
 And wrings her so that all for pity she could die.

No longer can she now her shrieks command,  
 And hardly she forbears, through awful fear,  
 To rushen forth, and, with presumptuous hand,  
 To stay harsh justice in his mid career.  
 On thee she calls, on thee, her parent dear!  
 (Ah! too remote to ward the shameful blow!)  
 She sees no kind domestic visage near,  
 And soon a flood of tears begins to flow,  
 And gives a loose at last to unavailing woe.

But, ah! what pen his piteous plight may trace?  
 Or what device his loud laments explain?  
 The form uncouth of his disguised face?  
 The pallid hue that dyes his looks amain?  
 The plenteous shower that does his cheek distain?  
 When he, in abject wise, implores the dame,  
 Ne hopeth aught of sweet reprieve to gain;  
 Or when from high she levels well her aim,  
 And, through the thatch, his cries each falling stroke proclaim.

The other tribe, aghast, with sore dismay,  
 Attend, and conn their tasks with mickle care;  
 By turns, astonied every twig survey,  
 And from their fellow's hateful wounds beware,  
 Knowing, I wist, how each the same may share;  
 Till fear has taught them a performance meet,  
 And to the well-known chest the dame repair,  
 Whence oft with sugared cates she doth them greet,  
 And ginger-bread y-rare; now, certes, doubly sweet.

See to their seats they hie with merry glee,  
 And in beseemly order sitten there;  
 All but the wight of flesh y-galled; he,  
 Abhorreth bench, and stool, and form, and chair;  
 (This hand in mouth y-fixed, that rends his hair;)  
 And eke with snubs profound, and heaving breast,  
 Convulsions intermitting, does declare  
 His grievous wrong, his dame's unjust behest;  
 And scorns her offered love, and shuns to be caressed

His face besprent with liquid crystal shines,  
 His blooming face, that seems a purple flower,  
 Which low to earth its drooping head declines,  
 All smear'd and sullied by a vernal shower.  
 O, the hard bosoms of despotic power!  
 All, all but she, the author of his shame,  
 All, all but she, regret this mournful hour;  
 Yet hence the youth, and hence the flower, shall claim,  
 If so I deem aright, transcending worth and fame.

Behind some door, in melancholy thought,  
 Mindless of food, he, dreary caitiff! pines;  
 Ne for his fellows' joyaunce careth aught,  
 But to the wind all merriment resigns;  
 And deems it shame, if he to peace inclines;

And many a sullen look asance is sent,  
Which for his dame's annoyance he designs ;  
And still the more to pleasure him she's bent  
The more doth he, perverse, her havior past resent.

Ah me ! how much I fear lest pride it be !  
But if that pride it be, which thus inspires,  
Beware, ye dames, with nice discernment see,  
Ye quench not too the sparks of nobler fires :  
Ah ! better far than all the muses' lyres,  
All coward arts, its valor's generous heat ;  
The firm fixt breast which fit and right requires,  
Like Vernon's patriot soul ! more justly great  
Than craft that pimps for ill, or flowery false deceit.

Yet, nursed with skill, what dazzling fruits appear  
Ee'n now sagacious foresight points to show  
A little bench of heedless bishops here,  
And there a chancellor in embryo,  
Or bard sublime, if bard may e'er be so,  
As Milton, (5.) Shakspeare, names that ne'er shall die !  
Though now he crawl along the ground so low,  
Nor weeting how the muse should soar on high  
Wisheth, poor starveling elf ! his paper kite may fly.

And this perhaps, who, censuring the design,  
Low lays the house which that of cards doth build,  
Shall Dennis be ! if rigid fate incline,  
And many an epic to his rage shall yield ;  
And many a poet quit the Aonian field ;  
And, soured by age, profound he shall appear,  
As he who now with disdainful fury thrill'd  
Surveys mine work ; and levels many a sneer,  
And furls his wrinkly front, and cries, " What stuff is here ?"

But now Dan Phœbus gains the middle sky,  
And liberty unbars her prison-door ;  
And like a rushing torrent out they fly ;  
And now the grassy cirque had covered o'er  
With boisterous revel-rout and wild uproar ;  
A thousand ways in wanton rings they run.  
Heaven shield their short-lived pastimes, I implore ;  
For well may freedom erst so dearly won,  
Appear to British elf more gladsome than the sun.

Enjoy, poor imps ! enjoy your sportive trade,  
And chase gay flies, and cull the fairest flowers ;  
For when my bones in grass-green sods are laid,  
O, never may ye taste more careless hours  
In knightly castle or in ladies' bowers.  
O, vain to seek delight in earthly thing !  
But most in courts, where proud ambition towers ;  
Deluded wight ! who weens fair peace can spring  
Beneath the pompous dome of kesar or of king.

See in each sprite some various bent appear !  
 These rudely carol most incondite lay,  
 Those, sauntering on the green, with jocund leer  
 Salute the stranger passing on his way ;  
 Some builden fragile tenements of clay ;  
 Some to the standing lake their courses bend,  
 With pebbles smooth at duck and drake to play ;  
 Think to the huxter's savory cottage lead,  
 In pastry kings and queens the allotted mite to spend.

Here as each season yields a different store,  
 Each season's stores in order ranged been ;  
 Apples with cabbage-net y-covered o'er,  
 Galling full sore the unmoneyed wight, are seen ;  
 And goose-b'rie clad in livery red or green,  
 And here, of lovely dye, the catharine pear,  
 Fine pear, as lovely for thy juice, I ween ;  
 O, may no wight e'er pennyless come there,  
 Lest, smit with ardent love he pine with hopeless care !

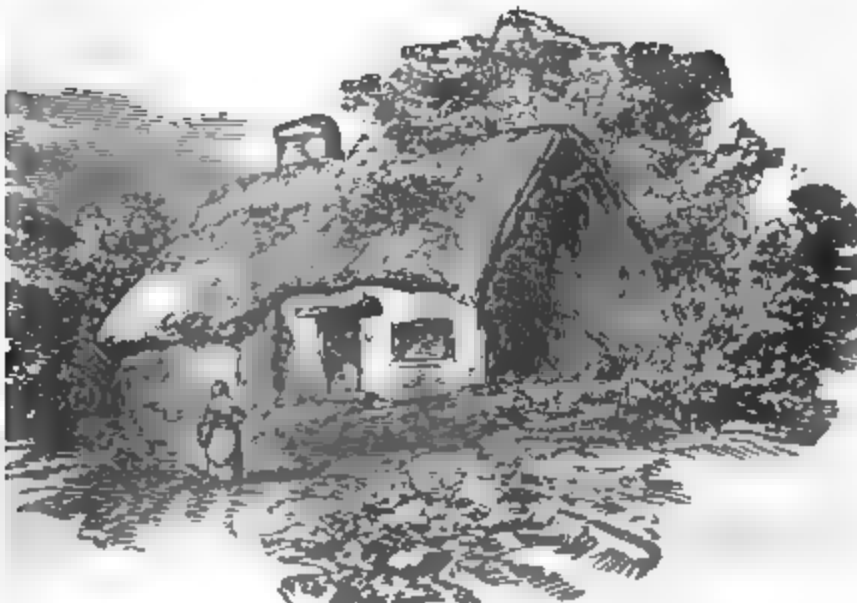
See, cherries here, ere cherries yet abound,  
 With thread so white in tempting posies tied,  
 Scattering, like blooming maid, their glances round.  
 With pampered look draw little eyes aside,—  
 And must be bought, though penury betide.  
 The plum all azure, and the nut all brown,  
 And here each season do those cakes ( . ) abide,  
 Whose honored names \* the inventive city owns,  
 Rendering through Britain's isle Salopia†'t praises known.

Admired Salopia ! that in venial pride  
 Eyes her bright form in Severn's ambient wave,  
 Famed for her loyal cares in perils tried,  
 Her daughters lovely, and her striplings brave :  
 Ah ! midst the rest, may flowers adorn his grave  
 Whose art did first these dulcet cakes display !  
 A motive fair to learning's imp he gave,  
 Who cheerless o'er her darkling region stray ;  
 Till reason's morn arise, and light them on their way.

---

\* Shrewsbury cakes.

† Salopia, Shrewsbury.



## ANNOTATIONS.

(1.) *The Schoolmistress.*

OF honest Sarah Lloyd, "the Schoolmistress" of Shenstone, whose faithful portraiture has given her school and her vocation, with all its interesting details, to undying fame, we have had in this country but few representatives. There are traditions among us, of such "dame schools," and such bent and wrinkled "school-marms," but the female teachers of our primary schools belong to a much younger, and much prettier class, of whom "Mary Smith" in Warren Burton's *"District Schools as it was,"* is a charming specimen. But the universal acceptance by successive generations, of this poem, by which Shenstone passes into the list of the living authors of the language, proves that the sketch was drawn from life, and that the race has not yet died out in England or Scotland. Gilfillan, in his edition of Shenstone, remarks :

"Almost all people have some aged crone who stands to them in the light through which Shenstone has contemplated honest Sarah Lloyd ; and as soon as she appears on his page, every one hails her as an old acquaintance, and is ready to prove, by her gown, or her cap, her birch, her herbs, or her devout hatred for the Pope, that she answers to his ancient preceptress—just as every one who has read Goldsmith's *Schoolmaster* in the "Deserted Village" is ready to cry out "that is my old teacher."

"We, at least, never can read Goldsmith's lines without seeing a certain worthy old *domine*, long since dead, with his two wigs, the dun for ordinary, and the black for extra occasions ; the one synonymous with frowns and flagellations, and the other with a certain snug smile which sometimes lay all day on his face and spoke of a projected jaunt, or a quiet evening jug of punch,—with his sage advice, his funny stories, at which we were compelled to laugh, his smuggled translations discovered by us sometimes with infinite glee in his neglected desk, the warm fatherly interest he displayed now and then in his famed scholars, and the severe inimical sarcasm, (a power this in which he peculiarly excelled,) which he drew at other times in a merciless mesh around the victim of his wrath till he writhed again. Nor can we take up Shenstone's poem without reviving the memory of an elderly dame, now many years at rest, with her spectacles on her nose, her cat at her feet, her well-worn *torse*, (twisted leather,) in her hand, and this universal apology for her continued flagellations upon her lips, the logic of which her pupils were never able exactly to comprehend, "If ye are no in a fault just now, ye're sure to be't !" And we are certain that if all who have had similar experience were piling each a stone on two cairns, (*heaps over the dead*,) erected to the two ingenious authors who have impressed and represented this common phase of human life, they would soon out tower the pyramids. Shenstone's "Schoolmistress" has not indeed the point and condensation of Goldsmith's "Schoolmaster," but its spirit is the same ; and there is besides about it a certain, soft, warm slumberous charm, as if reflected from the good dame's kitchen fire. The very stanza seems murmuring in its sleep."

In justice to the "schoolmistress" of our day—of the many accomplished young women, "in whose own hearts love, hope and patience, have first kept school," now in charge of the "Primary" and "District Schools" of our country, we introduce the following sketch of "My First Teacher" from the *"District School as it was,"* \*

"Mary Smith was my first teacher, and the dearest to my heart I ever had. She was a niece of Mrs. Carter, who lived in the nearest house on the way to school. She had visited her aunt the winter before ; and her uncle being chosen committee for the school at the town meeting in the spring, sent immediately to her home in Connecticut, and engaged her to teach the summer school. During the few days she spent at his house, she had shown herself peculiarly qualified to interest, and to gain the love of children. Some of the neighbors, too, who had dropped in while she was there, were

---

\* THE DISTRICT SCHOOL AS IT WAS, SCENERY-SHOWING, AND OTHER WRITINGS, by Rev. WARREN BURTON. This little volume should belong to every teacher, and every popular library, for its faithful portraiture of the common school as it was, in the country districts of New England, and for its many excellent suggestions in the way of improvement.

much pleased with her appearance. She had taught one season in her native state; and that she succeeded well, Mr. Carter could not doubt. He preferred her, therefore, to hundreds near by; and for once the partiality of the relative proved profitable to the district.

Now Mary Smith was to board at her uncle's. This was deemed a fortunate circumstance on my account, as she would take care of me on the way, which was needful to my inexperienced childhood. My mother led me to Mr. Carter's, to commit me to my guardian and instructor for the summer. I entertained the most extravagant ideas of the dignity of the school-keeping vocation, and it was with trembling reluctance that I drew near the presence of so lovely a creature as they told me Mary Smith was. But she so gently took my quivering little hand, and so tenderly stooped and kissed my cheek, and said such soothing and winning words, that my timidity was gone at once.

She used to lead me to school by the hand, while John and Sarah Carter gamboled on, unless I chose to gambol with them; but the first day, at least, I kept by her side. All her demeanor toward me, and indeed toward us all, was of a piece with her first introduction. She called me to her to read, not with a look and voice as if she were doing a duty she disliked, and was determined I should do mine too, like it or not, as is often the manner of teachers; but with a cheerful smile and a softening eye, as if she were at a pastime, and wished me to partake of it.

My first business was to master the A B C, and no small achievement it was; for many a little learner waddles to school through the summer, and waddles to the same through the winter, before he accomplishes it, if he happens to be taught in the manner of former times. This might have been my lot, had it not been for Mary Smith. Few of the better methods of teaching, which now make the road to knowledge so much more easy and pleasant, had then found their way out of or into, the brain of the pedagogical vocation. Mary went on in the old way indeed; but the whole exercise was done with such sweetness on her part, that the dilatory and usually unpleasant task was to me a pleasure, and consumed not so much precious time as it generally does in the case of heads as stupid as mine. By the close of that summer, the alphabet was securely my own. That hard, and to me unmeaning, string of sights and sounds, were bound forever to my memory by the ties created by gentle tones and looks.

That hardest of all tasks, sitting becomingly still, was rendered easier by her goodness. When I grew restless, and turned from side to side, and changed from posture to posture, in search of relief from my uncomfortableness, she spoke words of sympathy rather than reproof. Thus I was won to be as quiet as I could. When I grew drowsy, and needed but a comfortable position to drop into sleep and forgetfulness of the weary hours, she would gently lay me at length on my seat, and leave me just falling to slumber, with her sweet smile the last thing beheld or remembered.

Thus wore away my first summer at the district school. As I look back on it, faintly traced on memory, it seems like a beautiful dream, the images of which are all softness and peace. I recollect that, when the last day came, it was not one of light-hearted joy—it was one of sadness, and it closed in tears. I was now obliged to stay at home in solitude, for the want of playmates, and in weariness of the passing time, for the want of something to do; as there was no particular pleasure in saying A B C all alone, with no Mary Smith's voice and looks for an accompaniment. \* \*

The next summer, Mary Smith was the mistress again. She gave such admirable satisfaction, that there was but one unanimous wish that she should be re-engaged.

Mary was the same sweet angel this season as the last. I did not, of course, need her soothing and smiling assiduity as before; but still she was a mother to me in tenderness. She was forced to caution us younglings pretty often; yet it was done with such sweetness, that a caution from her was as effectual as would be a frown, and indeed a blow, from many others. At least, so it was with me. She used to resort to various severities with the refractory and idle, and in one instance, she used the ferule; but we all knew, and the culprit knew, that it was well deserved.

At the close of the school, there was a deeper sadness in our hearts than on the last summer's closing day. She had told us that she should never be our teacher again,—should probably never meet many of us again in this world. She gave us much parting advice about loving and obeying God, and loving and doing good to everybody. She shed tears as she talked to us, and that made our own flow still more. When we were dismissed, the customary and giddy laugh was not heard. Many were sobbing with grief, and even the least sensitive were softened and subdued to an unusual quietness.

The last time I ever saw Mary was Sunday evening, on my way home from meeting. As we passed Mr. Carter's, she came out to the chaise where I sat between my parents, to bid us good by. Oh, that last kiss, that last smile, and those last tones! Never shall I forget them, so long as I have power to remember or capacity to love. The next morning she left for her native town; and before another summer she was married. As Mr. Carter soon moved from our neighborhood, the dear instructress never visited it again. \* \*

There was one circumstance connected with the history of summer schools of so great importance to little folks, that it must not be omitted. It was this. The mistress felt obliged to give little books to all her pupils on the closing day of her school. Otherwise she would be thought stingy and half the good she had done during the summer would be canceled by the omission of the expected donations. If she had the least generosity, or hoped to be remembered with any respect and affection, she must devote a week's wages, and perhaps more, to the purchase of these little toy-books. My first present, of course, was from Mary Smith. It was not a little book the first summer, but it was something that pleased me more.

The last day of the school had arrived. All, as I have somewhere said before, were sad that it was now to finish. My only solace was that I should now have a little book, for I was not unmoved in the general expectation that prevailed. After the reading and spelling, and all the usual exercises of the school, were over, Mary took from her desk a pile of the glittering little things we were looking for. What beautiful covers,—red, yellow, blue, green! Oh! not the first buds of spring, not the first rose of summer, not the rising moon, nor gorgeous rainbow, seemed so charming as that first pile of books now spread out on her lap, as she sat in her chair in front of the school. All eyes were now centered on the outspread treasures. Admiration and expectation were depicted on every face. Pleasure glowed in every heart; for the worst, as well as the best, calculated with certainty on a present. What a beautifier of the countenance agreeable emotions are! The most ugly visaged were beautiful now with the radiance of keen anticipation. The scholars were called out one by one to receive the dazzling gifts beginning at the oldest. I being an abecedarian, must wait till the last; but as I knew that my turn would surely come in due order, I was tolerably patient. But what was my disappointment, my exceeding bitterness of grief, when the last book on Mary's lap was given away, and my name not yet called! Every one present had received, except myself and two others of the A B C rank. I felt the tears starting to my eyes; my lips were drawn to their closest pucker to hold in my emotions from audible outcry. I heard my fellow-sufferer at my side draw long and heavy breaths, the usual preliminaries to the bursting out of grief. This feeling, however, was but momentary; for Mary immediately said, "Charles and Henry and Susan, you may now all come to me together;" at the same time her hand was put into her work-bag. We were at her side in an instant, and in that time she held in her hand—what? Not three little picture books, but what was to us a surprising novelty, viz.: three little birds wrought from sugar by the confectioner's art. I had never seen or heard or dreamed of such a thing. What a revulsion of delighted feeling now swelled my little bosom! "If I should give you books," said Mary, "you could not read them at present; so I have got for you what you will like better perhaps, and there will be time enough for you to have books, when you shall be able to read them. So, take these little birds, and see how long you can keep them." We were perfectly satisfied, and even felt ourselves distinguished above the rest. My bird was more to me than all the songsters in



the air, although it could not fly, or sing, or open its mouth. I kept it for years, until by accident it was crushed to pieces, and was no longer a bird."

It must be confessed that all the "schools of the olden time" in New England were not taught by "Mary Smiths," and some of the worthy "school-ma'ams," continued to "board round" long after they had passed out of "their teens." The following stanzas which were first published in the *Maine Farmer*, describe a class of schools and teachers, which many graduates of common schools will recognize as their own.

The Schools—the schools of other days !

Those were the schools for me ;  
When, in a frock and trousers dressed,  
I learned my A B C.

When, with my dinner in my hat,  
I trudged away to school ;  
Nor dared to stop, as boys do now,—  
For school-ma'ams had a rule.

With locks well combed, and face so clean,  
(Boys washed their faces then,)  
And a "stick horse" to ride upon—  
What happy little men.

And if a traveler we met,  
We threw no sticks and stones  
To fright the horses as they passed,  
Or break good people's bones.

But, with our hats beneath our arms,  
We bent our heads full low ;  
For ne'er the school-ma'am failed to ask,  
"Boys, did you make a bow?"

And all the little girls with us  
Would courtesy full low ;  
And hide their ankles 'neath their gowns—  
Girls don't have ankles now.

We stole no fruit, nor tangled grass ;  
We played no noisy games,  
And when we spoke to older folks,  
Put *handles* on their names.

And when the hour for school had come—  
Of bell we had no need—  
The school-ma'am's rap upon the glass  
Each one would quickly heed.

The school-ma'am—Heaven bless her name—  
When shall we meet her like ?  
She always wore a green calash,  
A calico vandyke.

She never sported pantelets,  
No silks on her did rustle ;  
Her dress hung gracefully all round—  
She never wore a bustle.

With modest mien and loving heart  
Her daily task was done,  
And, true as needle to the pole,  
The next one was begun.

The days were all alike to her,  
 The evenings just the same,  
 And neither brought a change to us  
 Till Saturday forenoon came.

And then we had a "spelling match,"  
 And learned the sounds of A—  
 The months and weeks that made the year,  
 The hours that made the day.

And on that day we saw her smile—  
 No other time smiled she—  
 'Twas then she told us learnedly  
 When next "leap-year" would be.

Alas, kind soul, though leap-year came  
 And went full many a time,  
 In "single-blessedness" she toiled  
 Till far beyond her prime.

But now indeed her toils are o'er,  
 Her lessons all are said,  
 Her rules well learned, her words well spelled—  
*She's gone up to the head.*

We now return to our English authorities for the character and social star  
 the schoolmistress of former days.

HENRY KIRKE WHITE thus commemorates the "village matron," of Not  
 Mrs. Garrington, who introduced him into the mysteries of alphabetic lore :

In yonder cot, along whose mouldering walls,  
 In many a fold the mantling woodbine falls,  
 The village matron kept her little school—  
 Gentle of heart, yet knowing well to rule.  
 Staid was the dame, and modest was the mien,  
 Her garb was coarse, yet whole and nicely clean ;  
 Her neatly border'd cap, as lily fair,  
 Beneath her chin was pinn'd with decent care ;  
 And pendant ruffles of the whitest lawn  
 Of ancient make her elbows did adorn.  
 Faint with old age, and dim were grown her eyes ;  
 A pair of spectacles their want supplies.  
 These does she guard secure in leather case,  
 From thoughtless wights in some unweeded place.  
 Here first I entered, though with toil and pain,  
 The low vestibule of learning's fane—  
 Entered with pain, yet soon I found the way,  
 Though sometimes toilsome, many a sweet display.  
 Much did I grieve on that ill-fated morn  
 When I was first to school reluctant borne ;  
 Severe I thought the dame, though oft she tried  
 To soothe my swelling spirits when I sighed,  
 And oft, when harshly she reprov'd, I wept—  
 To my lone corner broken-hearted crept—  
 And thought of tender home, where anger never kept ;  
 But, soon inured to alphabetic toils,  
 Alert I met the dame with jocund smiles—  
 First at the form, my task for ever true,  
 A little favorite rapidly I grew ;

And oft she strok'd my head, with fond delight  
Held me a pattern to the dunce's sight ;  
And, as she gave my diligence its praise,  
Talked of the honors of my future days.

Rev. GEORGE CRABBE, the poet of homely life, in his description of the Borough, is speaking of the "Poor and their Dwellings," pays a passing tribute of respect and gratitude to his first teacher :

At her old house, her dress, her air the same,  
I see mine ancient letter-loving dame :  
" Learning, my child," said she, " shall fame command ;  
Learning is better worth than house or land—  
For houses perish, lands are gone and spent ;  
In learning then excel, for that's most excellent."  
" And what her learning ?"—'Tis with awe to look  
In every verse throughout one sacred book  
From this her joy, her hope, her peace is sought ;  
This she has learned, and she is nobly taught.  
If aught of mine have gained the public ear ;  
If RUTLAND deigns these humble Tales to hear ;  
If critics pardon, what my friends approved ;  
Can I mine ancient Widow pass unmoved ?  
Shall I not think what pains the matron took,  
When first I trembled o'er the gilded book ?  
How she, all patient, both at eve and morn,  
Her needle pointed at the guarding horn ;  
And how she soothed me, when with study sad,  
I labored on to reach the final sad ?  
Shall I not grateful still the dame survey,  
And ask the Muse the poet's debt to pay ?  
Nor I alone, who hold a trifler's pen,  
But half our bench of wealthy, weighty men,  
Who rule our Borough, who enforce our laws ;  
They own the matron as the leading cause,  
And feel the pleasing debt, and pay the just applause :  
To her own house is borne the week's supply ;  
There she in credit lives, there hopes in peace to die.

CRABBE, in his Parish Register he gives us a pleasing picture of the Good School-  
mistress, out of school hours :

————— With due respect and joy,  
I trace the matron at her loved employ ;  
What time the striplings wearied down with play,  
Part at the closing of the summers' day,  
And each by different path returned the well-known way.  
Then I behold her at the cottage door,  
Frugal of light ;—her Bible laid before,  
When on her double duty she proceeds,  
Of time as frugal ; knitting as she reads  
Her idle neighbors, who approach to tell  
Of news or nothing, she by looks compels  
To hear reluctant, while the lads who pass  
In pure respect walk silent on the grass :  
Then sinks the day, but not to rest she goes,  
Till solemn prayers the daily duties close.

(2.) "*And all in sight doth rise a birchen tree.*"

THE BIRCH has attained a place in English life and literature hardly surpassed by any other tree. It figures in name and in fact—in prose and verse—in matters sacred and profane. Our readers, many of whom, must have a traditional reverence for this emblem of magisterial authority in the school-room, may be pleased with a few of the many references to its manifold uses and virtues as described by the classic authors of our language, as well as with specimens of the wit and poetry which it has inspired.

It had place in the popular festivities of May-day, and of Mid-Summer's Eve, and Christmas. Owen, in his Welsh Dictionary defines *Bedwen*, a birch tree, by "a May-pole, because it is always made of birch." Stowe, in his "Survey of London," tells us "that on the vigil of St. John Baptist, every man's door being shadowed with *green birch*, long fennel, &c., garnished with garlands of beautiful flowers, had also lamps of glass with oil burning in them all night." Coles, in his "Adam in Eden," says—"I remember once as I rid through little Brickhill in Buckinghamshire, every sign-post in the towne almost, was bedecked with green birch," on Mid-Summer Eve. Coles quaintly observes among the civil uses of the birch tree, "the punishment of children both at home and at school; for it hath an admirable influence on them when they are out of order, and therefore some call it *make peace*." In some sections, on Christmas Eve, a nicely bound bundle of birchen twigs with one end immersed in cake or frosted sugar, was placed in the stockings of naughty boys.

In "Whimsies," or a New Cast of Characters, (1631,) mention is made of the *birch pole*, as having been set up before ale-houses for a sign,—as a *bush* of some kind was formerly hung over the door of wine-shops,—whence came the proverb, "good wine needs no bush."

Pope introduces one of his heroes with

"His beaver'd brow a *birchen* garland bears."

Roger Ascham, in his "Toxophilus: or Schole of Shootinge," enumerates it among "the kinde of wood, whereof the shaft is made"—"being both strong enough to stand in a bowe, and light enough to fly far." Of its use in archery, Spencer, in the "Faerie Queene," speaks of "the birch for shafts" in the equipment of one of his characters.

Shakspeare has not forgot its disciplinary use, (in *Measure for Measure*, Act I., Sen. 2d.)

———— "Now as fond fathers,  
Having bound up the threatening *twigs of birch*,  
Only to stick it in their childrens' sight  
For terror, not for use: in time the rod  
Becomes more mocked than used."

The scholastic uses of the birch have been celebrated not only in occasional stanzas, but constitute the inspiration and burden of poems devoted exclusively to its praise.

Rev. Henry Layng, Fellow of New College, Oxford, published in 1754, Oxford, a poem entitled "*The Rod*, a poem in three cantos, 4to, 46 pages." It has an advertisement of three pages, deprecating the imputation of any personal allusions or designs to encourage school rebellions. It has also a frontispiece, representing two youths, one standing, the other sitting on a form, and before them the figure of an ass, erect on his hind legs, clothed in a pallium (the dress of a Doctor at Oxford.) A birch, doctorial hat, and books, lettered Priscian and Lycophron, form the base; and on the ribbon above is the legend, "An ass in the Greek pallium teaching."

The following is a specimen of the spirit and humor of the poem, being a description of the birch tree.

"A tree there is, such was Apollo's will,  
That grows uncultured on the Muses' Hill,  
Its type in Heav'n the blest Immortals know,  
There call'd the tree of Science, Birch below.

These characters observ'd thy guide shall be,  
 Unerring guide to the mysterious tree.  
 Smooth like its kindred Poplar, to the skies  
 The trunk ascends and quivering branches rise ;  
 By teeming seeds it propagates its kind,  
 And with the year renew'd it casts the rind ;  
 Pierc'd by the matron's hand, her bowl it fills,  
 Scarce yielding to the vine's nectareous rills.  
 Of this select full in the Moon's eclipse,  
 Of equal size thrice three coeval slips,  
 Around the Osier's flexile band entwine,  
 And all their force in strictest union join.  
 Each Muse shall o'er her favorite twig preside,  
 Sacred to Phœbus, let their band be tied ;  
 With this when sloth and negligence provoke,  
 Thrice let thy vengeful arm impress the stroke,  
 Then shalt thou hear loud clamors rend the breast,  
 Attentive hear, and let the sound be blest ;  
 So when the priestess at the Delphic shrine,  
 Roar'd loud, the listening votary hail'd the sign."

We find in the London Notes and Queries—from which the above notice and extract  
 taken, the following lines.

THE BIRCH : A POEM.

*Written by a Youth of thirteen.*

Though the *Oak* be the prince and the pride of the grove,  
 The emblem of power and the fav'rite of Jove ;  
 Though Phœbus his temples with *Laurel* has bound,  
 And with chaplets of *Poplar* Alcides is crown'd ;  
 Though Pallas the *Olive* has graced with her choice,  
 And old mother Cybel in *Pines* may rejoice,  
 Yet the Muses declare, after diligent search,  
 That no tree can be found to compare with the *Birch*.  
 The Birch, they affirm, is the true tree of knowledge,  
 Revered at each school and remember'd at college.  
 Though Virgil's famed tree might produce, as its fruit,  
 A crop of vain dreams, and strange whims on each shoot,  
 Yet the Birch on each bough, on the top of each switch,  
 Bears the essence of grammar and eight parts of speech.  
 'Mongst the leaves are conceal'd more than mem'ry can mention,  
 All cases, all genders, all forms of declension.  
 Nine branches, when cropp'd by the hands of the Nine,  
 And duly arranged in a parallel line,  
 Tied up in nine folds of a mystical string  
 And soak'd for nine days in cold Helicon spring,  
 Form a sceptre composed for a pedagogue's hand,  
 Like the Fasces of Rome, a true badge of command.  
 The sceptre thus finish'd, like Moses's rod,  
 From flints could draw tears, and give life to a clod.  
 Should darkness Egyptian, or ignorance, spread  
 Their clouds o'er the mind, or envelop the head,  
 The rod, thrice applied, puts the darkness to flight,  
 Disperses the clouds, and restores us to light.  
 Like the *Virga Divina*, 'twill find out the vein  
 Where lurks the rich metal, the ore of the brain,

Should Genius a captive in sloth be confined,  
 Or the witchcraft of Pleasure prevail o'er the mind,  
 This magical wand but apply—with a stroke,  
 The spell is dissolved, the enchantment is broke.  
 Like Hermes' caduceus, these switches inspire  
 Rhetorical thunder, poetical fire :  
 And if Morpheus our temple in Lethe should steep,  
 Their touch will untie all the fetters of sleep.

Here dwells strong conviction—of Logic the glory,  
 When applied with precision *a posteriori*.

I've known a short lecture most strangely prevail,  
 When duly convey'd to the head through the tail ;  
 Like an electrical shock, in an instant 'tis spread,  
 And flies with a jerk from the tail to the head ;  
 Promotes circulation, and thrills through each vein  
 The faculties quickens, and purges the brain.

By sympathy thus, and consent of the parts,  
 We are taught, *fundamentally* classics and arts.

The Birch, *a priori*, applied to the palm,  
 Can settle disputes and a passion becalm.  
 Whatever disorders prevail in the blood,  
 The birch can correct them, like guaiacum wood :  
 It sweetens the juices, corrects our ill humors,  
 Bad habits removes, and disperses foul tumors.  
 When applied to the hand it can cure with a switch,  
 Like the salve of old Molyneux, used in the itch  
 As the famed rod of Circe to brutes could turn men,  
 So the twigs of the Birch can unbrute them again.  
 Like the wand of the Sybil, that branch of pure gold,  
 These sprays can the gates of Elysium unfold—  
 The Elysium of learning, where pleasures abound,  
 Those sweets that still flourish on classical ground.  
 Prometheus's rod, which, mythologists say,  
 Fetch'd fire from the sun to give life to his clay,  
 Was a rod well applied his men to inspire  
 With a taste for the arts, and their genius to fire.

This bundle of rods may suggest one reflection,  
 That the arts with each other maintain a connection.  
 Another good moral this bundle of switches  
 Points out to our notice and silently teaches ;  
 Of peace and good fellowship these are a token,  
 For the twigs, well united, can scarcely be broken.

Then, if such are its virtues, we'll bow to the tree,  
 And THE BIRCH, like the Muses, immortal shall be."

This poem was written by Rev. Thomas Wilson, B. D., Head-master of Clitheroe Grammar School, Lancashire, in 1784, and first published in *Adam's Weekly Courant*, July 25, 1786. See *Notes and Queries*, Vol. x. p. 432.

HOOD, in his whimsical and comic stanzas indulges in frequent allusions to the school where he "was *birched*," and contrives to extract some sweet out of the bitter discipline of his school days :

" Ay, though the very birch's smart  
 Should mark those hours again ;  
 I'd kiss the rod, and be resigned  
 Beneath the stroke, and even find  
 Some sugar in the cane."

(3.) " *Their books of stature small they take in hand,  
Which with pellucid horn secured are,  
To save from fingers wet the letters fair.*"

A **HORNBOOK** was the earliest form of the Primer—or first book to teach children to read—being a card or table, set in a frame, on which the letters were inscribed, and covered with a thin plate of *horn* to prevent the paper being soiled, and thumbed to pieces by rough and frequent use.

A writer in "*Notes and Queries*," Vol. III. p. 151, describes a *Hornbook* in the British Museum, as follows: "It contains on one side the 'Old English Alphabet'—the capitals in two lines, the small letters in one. The fourth line contains the vowels twice repeated, (perhaps to doubly impress upon the pupil the necessity of learning them.) Next follow in two columns, our ancient companions, 'ab, eb, ib,' &c., and 'ba, be, bi,' &c. After the formula of exorcism comes the 'Lord's Prayer,' (which is given somewhat differently to our present version,) winding up with 'i. ii. iii. iv. v. vi. vii. viii ix. x.' On the other side is the following whimsical piece of composition:—

" *What more could be wished for, even by a literary gourmand under the Tudors, than to be able to Read and Spell; To repeat that holy charm before which fled all unholy Ghosts, Goblins, or even the old Gentleman himself to the very bottom of the Red Sea, and to say that immortal prayer, which secures heaven to all who ex animo use it, and those mathematical powers, by knowing units, from which spring countless myriads.*"

Shakspeare, in "*Love's Labor's Lost*," introduces the schoolmaster, (Holofernes,) as being "lettered" because "he teaches boys the *hornbook*."

It appears from a stanza of Prior, that children were sometimes served with a **horn-book**, far more palatable and easily digested than that described by Shenstone.

To master John the English maid  
A *hornbook* gives of gingerbread;  
And, that the child may learn the better,  
As he can name, he eats the letter.

Locke was one of the earliest English writers on Education to recommend the abandonment of hornbooks, or any arrangement of the letters in horizontal or perpendicular columns, as in the old fashioned Primers, to be learned by the direst repetitions at school, for some game, in which the letters should be pasted on the sides of the dice, or on blocks, and that the shape and name of each should be acquired by familiarity at home.

(4.) "To loose the brogues," &c.

The word *brogue* is used in Scotland to mean a coarse kind of shoe, stitched together by thongs of leather. Shenstone adopts some provincial use of the word for *breeches*. But be the origin of the word what it may, the schoolmistress was not the first or last to act on the maxim—

" *Spare the rod and spoil the child.*"

Samuel Butler who is the author of this line makes the hero of his satirical poem say—

'Whipping, that's virtue's governess,  
Tutoress of Arts and Sciences;  
That mends the gross mistakes of nature,  
And puts new life into dead matter;  
That lays foundation for renown,  
And all the heroes of the gown."

Byron, in a satirical stanza urges the unsparing use of the rod.

"Oh ye! who teach the ingenious youth of nations,  
Holland, France, England, Germany or Spain,  
I pray ye flog them upon all occasions  
It mends their morals, never mind the pain."

No. 9. [Vol. III, No. 2]—30.



(5.) 'A little bench of heedless bishops here,  
And there a chancellor in embryo,  
Or bard sublime, if bard may e'er be so,  
As Milton, Shakspeare—names that ne'er shall die," &c.

These lines, are thought by Mr. D'Israeli, to have suggested to Gray, the lines in his Elegy—

Some mute inglorious Milton here may rest,  
Some Cromwell guiltless of his country's blood, &c.

Chambers thinks the conception of Shenstone—that in the undeveloped minds of these young children there may slumber the powers of poet or statesman far more natural, than that of Gray, that the peasant should have grown up to be a man, and to have gone to his grave, without having given indications of the existence of these powers.

(6.) *Embowered in trees, and hardly known to fame,  
There dwells in lowly shed," &c.*

For the illustration of Sarah Lloyd's thatched cottage, near Hales-Owen, Shropshire, we are indebted to J. P. Jewett & Co., Boston, the publishers of "*Rural Poetry*," a royal octavo volume of 544 pages of the best poetry which has been inspired by the charms of nature, the occupations of the garden and the field, and the genius of domestic life. The cut is copied from one introduced by Shenstone in the original edition of his poem—which was printed in red letter, and illustrated by designs of his own. The last edition published by Shenstone contains seven stanzas more than the first, with several omissions and verbal alterations. To the first edition was appended a "*ludicrous index*," so styled by Shenstone himself, in one of his letters, "purely to show fools that I am in jest." As a contribution to the literature of Education, we publish this Index, from Mr. D'Israeli's *Curiosities of Literature, second series.*"

	Stanza.		Stanza.
Introduction, . . . . .	1	structure, decoration, and fortifications of an HORN-BIBLE, . . . . .	18
The subject proposed, . . . . .	2	A surprising picture of sisterly affection by way of episode, . . . . .	20, 21
A circumstance in the situation of the MANSION OF EARLY DISCIPLINE, discovering the surprising influence of the connections of ideas, . . . . .	3	A short list of the methods now in use to avoid a whipping—which nevertheless follows, . . . . .	22
A simile; introducing a deprecation of the joyless effects of BIGOTRY and SUPERSTITION, . . . . .	4	The force of example, . . . . .	23
Some peculiarities indicative of a COUNTRY SCHOOL, with a short sketch of the SOVEREIGN presiding over it, . . . . .	5	A sketch of the particular symptoms of obstinacy as they discover themselves in a child, with a simile illustrating a blubbered face, . . . . .	24, 25, 26
Some account of her NIGHT CAP, APRON, and a tremendous description of her BIRCHEN SCEPTRE, . . . . .	6	A hint of great importance, . . . . .	27
A parallel instance of the advantages of LEGAL GOVERNMENT with regard to children and the wind, . . . . .	7	The piety of the poet in relation to that school-dame's memory, who had the first formation of a CERTAIN patriot, [This stanza has been left out in the later editions; it refers to the Duke of Argyle.]	
Her gown, . . . . .	8	The secret connection between WHIPPING and RISING IN THE WORLD, with a view as it were, through a perspective, of the same LITTLE FOLK in the highest posts and reputation, . . . . .	28
Her TITLES, and punctilious nicety in the ceremonious assertion of them, . . . . .	9	An account of the nature of an EMBRYO FOX-HUNTER, . . . . .	
A digression concerning her HEN's presumptuous behavior, with a circumstance tending to give the cautious reader a more accurate idea of the officious diligence and economy of an old woman, . . . . .	10	[Another stanza omitted.]	
A view of this RURAL POTENTATE as seated in her chair of state, conferring HONORS, distributing BOUNTIES, and dispersing PROCLAMATIONS, . . . . .	16	A deviation to an huckster's shop, . . . . .	32
Her POLICIES, . . . . .	17	Which being continued for the space of three stanzas, gives the author an opportunity of paying his compliments to a particular county, which he gladly seizes; concluding his piece with respectful mention of the ancient and loyal city of SHREWSBURY. . . . .	
The ACTION of the poem commences with a general summons, follows a particular description of the artful			

#### XIV. ART.—ITS IMPORTANCE AS A BRANCH OF EDUCATION.

BY M. A. DWIGHT.

---

Continued.

WE have already considered the rise and progress of ancient art, and its various influences as well as the importance of artistic monuments as historical records of the people by whom they were produced. Let us now suppose, that the historians of the year of our Lord, three thousand, will refer to the productions of the nineteenth century for statistics, and find that the Dusseldorf school, which ignores all rules of art, is considered as exhibiting the highest standard of excellence, and that these productions are regarded by their contemporaries as possessing a merit superior to all others that have stood the test of ages;—and Ruskin, who gives no principles to guide his followers, saying, that he “can only account for his dislike to the Gothic capital by the reason contained in the well known lines,

I do not like the Doctor Fell,” etc.,

the most acceptable writer on the subject, they will probably record the time in regard to art, as the second period of the dark ages.

In every period but the dark ages, so called, all cultivated nations had their established schools of art; and in every period the best masters were the teachers. Phidias and Michel Angelo had their scholars. “Raffaello, at all times employed a number of scholars, constantly instructing them, whence he never went to court as we are assured by Vasari, without being accompanied out of respect, by probably fifty of the first artists. He employed every one in the way best suited to his talent. Some of them, after having received sufficient instruction, returned to their native places. Others remained with him, and after his death established themselves at Rome, where they became the germ of a new school. At the head of these was Giulio Romano, but they taught with little energy, and the works of their scholars soon degenerated to mannerism.”

According to Lanzi, “the school of the Carracci was the last one in Italy that deserved any celebrity. The three brothers were on the most perfect understanding as to the art of teaching; but the most laborious branches of the professorship were sustained by Agostino. He drew up a short treatise upon perspective and architecture, from which he expounded to the schools. He explained the nature of the

bones and muscles, designating them by their names, in which he was assisted by a professor of anatomy. His lectures were sometimes founded upon history, at others upon fictions. These he illustrated and offered for designs, which, being exhibited at stated intervals, were examined by skillful judges who decided upon their respective merits. The meed of fame was sufficient for the crowned candidates, around whom the poets assembled to celebrate their names. Agostino enthusiastically joined, both with harp and voice, applauding the progress of his scholars. These last were likewise instructed in true criticism, and to give due praise or blame to the works of others. They were also taught to criticise their own works, and whoever was unable to give good reasons for what he had done, and defend his own work, must cancel it upon the spot. Each, however, was at liberty to pursue what path he chose, or rather, each entered upon that to which nature had best adapted him; which accounts for so many original styles from the same school. Yet each style was founded upon reason, nature, and imitation. In all more doubtful points, recourse was had to Lodovico Carracci; the cousins presided over the daily exercise of designs, full of assiduity, industry, and perseverance. Even the recreations of the academicians had a view to art. Drawing landscapes from nature, or sketching caricatures, were the customary amusements of Annibal and the disciples of his school, when they wished to relax from study. Uniting the study of nature, and the maxims of the best masters, formed the real foundation of the Carracci school. At the same time, they were careful to adapt this study to the peculiar talent of the scholar." [*Lanzi, Vol. III., p. 70.*]

At the present day, no rules are inculcated in the teaching of art, consequently, artists work as it were in the dark, much in the same manner as when art was in its infancy, before rules were formed and established. If, as some suppose art has no rules, how could the Carracci have "instructed in true criticism," or require of a scholar either to "defend his own work or cancel it on the spot." There is no study in which scholars are so wronged as in this. "Sir Joshua Reynolds took scholars, and Northcote who was one of them, and a favorite one too—is the best authority on this point. He informs us, that after the drudgery of the studio was over, cleaning palettes, dead coloring, etc., he was allowed to copy his master's pictures, but received no instruction as to the colors to be used, or the mode of mixing and applying them. On the contrary, Sir Joshua kept his colors locked up, and never allowed Northcote, or any of his scholars to see him at work. Sir Thomas Lawrence likewise took pupils at a high premium, whom he permitted to copy his pictures from nine

until four, under the special condition that he was to give them no instruction whatever, and that they were not to see him at work. Harlow was one of these favorite pupils who paid him one hundred pounds yearly for that privilege." [*Cleighorn's Hist. of Art.*]

Such was art in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, and such in the eighteenth and nineteenth. Let us "look on this picture—and then, on this." Raffaello went to court alike honored and conferring honor. Ruskin, who in these degenerate days is considered authority in matters of art, says, "an artist should be fitted for the best society and keep out of it." In the time of Raffaello and the Carracci, a thorough knowledge of the rules and principles of art was considered indispensable to success in every department, and in all good schools they were faithfully inculcated. Now, artists take scholars with the express stipulation that no instruction shall be given them, and the editor of the *TRIBUNE*, in speaking of the establishment of the New-York school of design, says, "the idea of the movement was fundamentally, *charity*, and not *art*. The first aim was to aid women, not to improve art." The Boston and Philadelphia schools of design, both established on the same false foundation have come to nought; and the New York School, after a few years of sickly existence, is rescued from absolute extinction by being engrafted on another institution. Still, nothing can save any department of instruction from obloquy and oblivion, where the vital principle, indispensable to all existence, is absolutely wanting.

In order to understand the causes of failure in these schools, let us look a little into their details. Two of them at their commencement, the one in Boston and the other in New York, placed at the head, teachers who understood nothing of art, and were incompetent to use the pencil in any but the most mechanical drawing. The instruction was then limited to the "Pestalozzi system," so called, on the supposition that the only thing necessary to success in designing, was the development of the inventive powers. Even if it were so, they made a mistake in this system which exercises the powers of ingenuity only, and the most ingenious will the most excel in it, as the most ingenious will be the first to unriddle a conundrum, or explain a puzzle. Pestalozzi no doubt intended it for the practice of children on the black-board, and for that purpose it is excellent. In drawing upon the black-board there is no possibility of acquiring a cramped hand. At the schools referred to, it was practiced with the pencil, and in the Boston school, people in mature life practiced it by the day, month after month. What would our people say, if in a school for engineers, the only instruction given during the first six months was,

how to use a calculating machine. Yet this Pestalozzi system is quite as important and quite as valuable to the artist, as a calculating machine to the engineer. It is to ideal art, just what the machine is to the science of mathematics.

The question naturally arises, how could such an egregious blunder have been committed in regard to the method of instruction adopted in those schools? It was because they were managed by "people of taste," instead of being in the charge of educationists. The acting committee of a school of design should be well informed upon the essential requisites of art as well as the best method of teaching it; because, in the first place, they have accepted a public trust, and control the funds appropriated to the establishment of a school, the success of which depends upon its being well directed. In the next place, the teacher who is best competent to conduct the school, both from natural ability and skillful acquisition, would shrink from subjecting himself to a committee, who from ignorance of the subject in pursuit, were incapable of appreciating his qualifications; besides which, his chance of success would be so small, that he would not willingly risk his reputation. Again, if both teacher and committee are ignorant, they act in harmony, neither one detecting the deficiencies of the other, and the public look in vain for some progress proportioned to the time, money and labor that the school has absorbed. On the contrary, if each one engaged in the undertaking, is qualified to discharge his duties, the efforts will be well directed, and great good accomplished. Every one knows that ignorance is ever subject to imposition, and in observing the school of design at New York, we have been reminded of an anecdote told of a certain committee of taste in London, in which no artist was included. In the execution of some work which was to come under their supervision, a pupil of a celebrated sculptor accidentally cut away the middle knuckle of a hand. In a great fright he called out to his master, "what's to be done?" To which the master replied, "Oh, never mind! The committee will never find it out."

Another cause for failure was, that the funds for the establishment of those schools were obtained by an appeal to the benevolent, and this being made the prominent object of the institutions, the acting committees were embarrassed in their course, because they were from time to time obliged to bring the schools to the notice of the public, for the purpose of increasing their funds, when it must be made to appear that there was something accomplished; therefore, the scholars were hurried on beyond their acquisition in skill. But what was gained in the end by thus temporising? Some scholars, immediately

on entering the schools were placed under the wood engraver. Others, after a few months mechanical practice, and before any thing was learned of the principles of design, or any instruction given in the rules and requisites of art, were encouraged to make designs for prints, paper-hangings, etc. The benevolence of the manufacturer was then appealed to for the purchase of these productions. For the sake of benevolence he took them, paid the price asked, laid them on the shelf, and the school was pronounced flourishing and successful. A scholar of the Boston school stated to us that at one manufactory, six designs for paper-hangings were purchased—one of them her own production—all of which proved so imperfect that they were laid aside as useless. This is the natural and necessary result of making art subordinate to *charity*.

The excellence of the motive which actuated the committees, we fully appreciate; but, can any one who will give the slightest attention to the subject, believe that the efforts of benevolence, independent of artistic excellence, can sustain schools of design, or accomplish the end proposed, *viz.*: “essential benefit to suffering needle-women,” by enlarging the sphere of woman’s labor. On the present plan, schools of design, instead of promoting the interests of woman, are doing them a positive injury. Because in the first place, with such superficial instruction, their work must necessarily be inferior, and of course unsuccessful; and in the second, the failure not only throws schools of design into disrepute, but also woman’s work. The responsibility of the system, adopted, and the manner in which art is taught, rests with the committee of management, who control all regulations, and have the power of selecting teachers. With regard to instruction in every pursuit, there are certain observations that are too common to be regarded or discussed as individual opinions, one of which is, the importance of thorough instruction in the rudiments, or rather, fundamental principles, and to drawing must be added a faithful practice with the pencil, until skill of hand and accuracy of eye are acquired before advancing to the higher departments of art. The race is not to the swift, and the managers of schools of design must not expect that glaring faults will be overlooked in the work of their scholars on the ground of charity. The public responded generously to the calls for funds, and ample provision was made for establishing schools of the highest order, and when the women who have been admitted to the full privileges of these schools compete with designers who have been thoroughly trained in schools where art, not “charity,” is the “fundamental idea,” what will be their chance of success? To those who understand the rules of art, the preëminence

of the French as designers and artisans, is no mystery ; and without true artistic knowledge and thorough training, no people of any nation can compete with them in the arts of design and manufactures.

If the committees had informed themselves on the subject, as they should have done, they would have turned in some other direction to find a new sphere of labor for women. Any person who will take the trouble to inquire, will learn that new designs are not much in demand, because those who manufacture for the market find that foreign designs can be modified, altered, or combined to suit their purpose. It is true, a practiced eye will detect the want of harmony in a whole that is made up of various parts, originally designed by different minds, and for different objects. But the multitude see no defect in the incongruity or want of taste displayed in these combinations, which is proof sufficient of the necessity for a school where art can be taught to all classes of people. The taste of the whole community needs cultivation, therefore schools of design should not be made exclusive. The disadvantages of an exclusive system are very great. If one class monopolize art as an elegant accomplishment, excluding all others from a knowledge of it, they would need the stimulus given by that universal cultivation, which makes an appreciative public, neither will a school succeed that is on a strictly benevolent plan, and for the benefit of the industrial classes only, for the wishes of the donors must ever be made the rule of action, and govern the standard of teaching. Yet, an industrial department in a school that is open to the community may be supported by a benevolent fund without the least disadvantage. On the contrary, a great amount of good may be accomplished by such an arrangement, for it is these who continue to labor, and whose works are scattered abroad, that will help to diffuse the taste there cultivated. Suppose a scholar has entered, who leaves after having taken only the course of lessons in drawing, the instruction given and received is not lost, for if she becomes a seamstress, her work will show the training of the eye and hand ; and if she has progressed so far as to have acquired the principles of color, she will make a better dress-maker and milliner. In this way alone, schools of design may be made an immense benefit to women, for the best workmanship always commands the best price, therefore skill in any of the mechanic arts is capital to the possessor. In such a department, those who are capable of it could be made embroiderers. The French embroiderers, whose work commands the highest price, are first taught to draw, and any person accustomed to the use of the pencil would see at once, that nothing but skill in the art of drawing could enable them to work with such exquisite delicacy. Many of



these embroiderers design for their own work, and obtain copy-rights for their designs which gives them the control of the pattern. This, we are convinced, is the only way of making schools of design essentially useful to the "suffering class of seamstresses." Let them be thoroughly taught in all that belongs to their respective trades, and a certificate of qualification given as dress-makers, milliners, or shirt-makers, and there would then be no complaint of want of work, or ill-requited labor.

Schools of design, like our other schools, should be open to the public without reference to any one class of people, and such instruction given to all scholars as will prepare them to enter any department of art according to their several abilities, and the school will soon take a high rank, and meet the expenses incurred. An industrial department should be a part of the establishment where those scholars can enter who wish to render their skill of pecuniary profit to themselves. This department should not be limited in the branches pursued, because among those who enter it, few will have the ability to excel as designers. The same may be said of those whose wealth gives them every facility for study, and at the same time makes them independent of all exertion. Why does not every graduate of a college become a prominent man and an author. For the same reason that every scholar instructed in all that belongs to true art does not make a designer. God has not gifted all men with great abilities, and each one must work according to that which he hath, and not according to that which he hath not. Of the graduates of such a school, some will become designers, some teachers, some botanical draftsmen, others portrait painters, miniature painters and teachers. Yet none can excel in his chosen department, who has not received as thorough instruction in the rules of art as would be given in the rules of mathematics to a school of engineers.

We are often asked, what is the best course of instruction in art? Our only reply is, a thorough knowledge of the rules and principles, beginning at the foundation, combined with such practice as will not only give to the scholar skill of hand and accuracy of eye, but also make these rules his own. First the rules of form must be mastered, then of light and shade, and then of color. Having mastered these first and fundamental principles of art, the scholar is prepared to learn their application in composition and design, from the highest department of art to the lowest, for the same rules are essential to every branch from the highest ideal composition to the simplest design for the artizan. An experienced teacher will soon discover in what branch of art the scholar will most excel, and direct his studies with

reference to the talent developed. Success with each one depends no less upon natural ability than upon right instruction.

It is the same with the study of art as with that of mathematics. If the scholar is not well grounded in the first principles of arithmetic, and made familiar with numbers, he can make little or no progress in algebra or geometry; and in the study of mathematics, no progress is expected unless the scholar goes on regularly from step to step. When the same importance is attached to method and accuracy in teaching the first principles of art, we shall have artists who will produce works of intrinsic excellence. Without it, they can never rise above mediocrity either as historical painters or designers.

We lately visited a collection of drawings that were open to the public for the purpose of displaying the progress of a school devoted to that art. There were about a hundred pieces exhibited, the majority of them fancy heads, shaded in black chalk. They were, without exception, faulty in drawing, the shading as hard and dry as possible, and absolutely deficient in its most essential requisite, transparency. The execution of each one marked it at once as a beginner's work. Indeed, this was so manifest, that it was quite superfluous for the spectators to point to the production of some favorite acquaintance, and say, "just look at that, she has taken lessons only three months!" Would a music teacher give to a beginner, one who had taken lessons only three months, a difficult opera to learn, with the expectation that she would perform it creditably? And if he were to do anything so injurious to the success of his scholar, would the parents sanction it by continuing his services as teacher? The successful drawing of a head, belongs to an advanced stage of progress. The representation of stiff inflexible features, where there is no indication of muscle underneath the surface, is hardly pardonable in the work of a tyro. But such combinations of wooden mouths, and stony eyes, all set awry, representing what is called, "the human face divine," grates upon the cultivated eye, like the harshest discords of a sound upon the cultivated ear; and in each case, the offended sense is forcibly closed or withdrawn to escape further molestation. If fault is found with such work, it is at once excused on the ground that the scholar has but just commenced the use of the pencil. Suppose a teacher of mathematics should call forward a class to exhibit their skill in demonstrating a problem in Euclid, and then excuse all blunders of the scholars by stating that they were beginners, not yet having mastered simple arithmetic. This would be quite as rational and pardonable in the teacher of mathematics as in the teacher of art, and we earnestly hope that the time will come when the public will realize it.

If a teacher of drawing really knows what belongs to art and good teaching, he must, in making such an exhibition, confide most implicitly in the incompetence of the public to judge of the work of his scholars. If on the contrary, he is himself as ignorant of the subject as the exhibition would lead one to suppose, the sooner he is discarded the better,—because, in the first place, this system of omitting all elementary instruction, giving his scholars something to do that will make a show, rather than secure accuracy of eye and skill of hand, fosters and encourages the false notion already existing in regard to the subject, and which must be dispelled before any real improvement is made in this important department of instruction. In the next place, such a teacher essentially retards the progress of art by promulgating a style so ordinary, that it borders upon the vulgar. In the article on the subject of art published in this Journal, [Drawing in Schools of Art,] the writer speaks of the importance of using models of the highest standard. The same principle pervades all departments of instruction. A teacher of belle lettres might with as good reason adopt coarsely written works for the use of his classes, as the teacher of drawing bad models.

It is difficult for one who is not familiar with the practise of art, as well as the general theory of the subject, to realize the deleterious influence of such a school. Suppose the leader of a church choir in a country village, should go to some city and establish himself as a music-teacher, opening an academy for the purpose of collecting under his instruction a large class of scholars for any length of time, and should then be followed by a musician of refined and cultivated taste and a master of his art; how long would it be before he could undo the work of his predecessor, and establish a higher and truer standard of teaching and practice? A mediocre teacher of art, who is so ignorant of the subject that he attaches no importance to the inculcation of rules and elementary practice is as much out of place at the head of a school of art, as an uneducated village chorister would be at the head of an academy of music.

The study of music has been so thoroughly cultivated, that at the present time there is little danger of such an imposition. The study of art seems the last one to be rescued from this great evil. Some twenty years since, a lady, by way of praising a friend, remarked to a Parisian, "she speaks French very fluently." "Yes,"—he replied, "but she uses expressions such as no true French lady would ever allow to pass her lips. She has learned her French of a *femme de chambre*." Ignorance also praises and commends the efforts of the pencil, under teachers of the same common stamp, while those who

truly understand the subject, look on and lament the blunders and bad work, to which both the scholars and their friends are perfectly insensible.

Our schools of design have done nothing toward the accomplishment of their ostensible object, neither have they done any thing for art proper. Nothing has ever contributed so much to the interest of art and artists in our country as the Art Union. By distributing pictures, scattering them far and wide, a universal taste for pictorial works has been excited and seeks gratification. This led to the employment of artists, and the benefit resulting to them is so certain and so great, that they could well afford to pay the managers of an Art-Union for keeping a free gallery, and distributing some of their pictures gratuitously. The Art Union did for artists what they could never have accomplished unaided and alone, and every one interested in art is more or less indebted to it. The next step in our progress must be to educate the taste so universally excited by the efforts of this institution. Our people are beginning to feel their ignorance of the subject, and are seeking information. On this point we are sometimes told how much the French gain by a free access to all works of art. Yes, because they are prepared for it by instruction in their schools, and until our people have the same advantage, they might as profitably visit a library filled with beautifully bound volumes written in the dead languages, of which they know not a word. To diffuse this knowledge, the importance of which is so universally acknowledged, we need good teachers; and to send out scholars thoroughly qualified to impart it, should be the first object of our schools of design. Then the emulation excited by an appreciative and discriminating public, than which no stimulus can be more powerful, will call out the best powers of the best artists, when we shall successfully compete with European skill in every department of art. We are not wanting in artistic ability, but without the requisite instruction we must forever remain in the back-ground, taking the low rank of followers and imitators.

It is with nations as with individuals, "those that follow must always go behind," an imputation that we must bear, until educationists take an interest in the study of art, introduce it into all schools, and require that it shall be as well taught as others pursued. They will then be as they have already been, the benefactors of their age and their country, and produce a new era in its arts and manufactures.



✦



## XV. VALENTIN HAÜY.

THE FOUNDER OF INSTITUTIONS FOR THE INSTRUCTION OF THE BLIND.

BY L. P. BROCKETT, M. D.

---

COMPARATIVELY few Americans are prepared to do justice to the character of the French people. The English writers whose productions till within a very few years constituted the greater part of American literature, invariably represented them as frivolous and heartless; devoid alike of morality and of high intellectual power, and fit only to preside over the toilet or the cuisine.

Yet to this people, belongs the honor of having achieved the greatest discoveries of modern times in Mathematical, Chemical, and Astronomical Science; of having explored successfully the animal and vegetable kingdoms, and what is more honorable to them than aught else, of having initiated four of the most remarkable philanthropic enterprises of modern times. At the command of Pinel, the maniac was freed from his chains and soothed by kindness till reason resumed its deserted throne; the deaf-mute, under the instruction of the Abbe De l'Epee, was raised to the intelligence and responsibility of citizenship; the blind, enlightened by Haüy's teachings, no longer sought a subsistence at the hand of charity; and the idiot, roused from his apathy by the patient and laborious toils of Seguin, asserted, though perhaps with imperfect utterance, his claims to manhood. The memory of Pinel and De l'Epee is enshrined too deeply in the hearts of those whom their labors have benefited to need eulogy at our hands—Haüy, not less deserving than they, was in his latter years the victim of a malice which sought to consign to oblivion his well earned reputation, and a brief sketch of his philanthropic labors may interest our readers.

VALENTIN HAÜY, born at St. Just, a small village in Picardy, on the 13th November, 1745, was the second son of a poor weaver whose constant toil only sufficed for the support of his little family. His elder son, Renè, afterward the Abbe Haüy, the most eminent mineralogist of his time, was, through the kindness of the monks of a neighboring monastery, educated at their expense. It was probably through their good offices, also, that the young Valentin, who, in such schools as the poor vicinage afforded, had manifested a wonderful aptitude for



learning, was removed, at an early age, to one of the colleges of Paris. Here his thirst for knowledge could be measurably gratified, and his proficiency, especially in classical learning, was remarkable. His collegiate course completed, he soon received an appointment, to which, probably, his superb penmanship contributed, in the Bureau of Foreign affairs, where for nearly twenty years he filled the post of translator of dispatches. Up to his thirty-eighth year he seems to have had no premonitions of the future in store for him; his life was quiet, but schemes of benevolence had their fascination for him, for we read that he was deeply interested in the organization of the school for the Deaf and Dumb, by the Abbe De l'Epee, and devoted much time to visiting it, and ascertaining the processes adopted for their instruction.

At length his attention was called to the condition of the blind, by an incident, which though trivial in itself, changed the whole current of his thoughts.

The proprietor of a Café, in one of the principal thoroughfares, desirous of attracting a larger amount of custom, procured the services of eight or ten blind men, whom he arranged before a long desk, with spectacles on nose, and instruments in their hands; upon the desk were placed open music books and the blind men feigning to read their music from these, executed, at short intervals, the most discordant symphonies. The object of the proprietor of the Café was gained; the music drew together a large crowd, who laughed heartily at the ridiculous performance, while they patronized the Café. Among the by-standers was Haüy; but to him it was not an occasion of mirth; the misfortunes of his fellow men seemed to him not to be a subject for idle jest, and the performance at once suggested to his mind the query, whether the blind might not in some way, be enabled to read words and music.

Haüy not only possessed a benevolent heart, but a high order of mechanical talent, and he soon contrived some apparatus for enabling the blind to discern letters and characters by the touch. His efforts in this direction were materially aided by the counsels of a young German lady, of high rank, who, blind from the age of two years, had acquired a good education, and had made extensive attainments in music, with very little assistance. She explained and exhibited to him her movable types with raised letters, and the pin-type, both the invention of Weissebourg, of Mannheim—by means of which, she could communicate with her absent friends. After repeated interviews with M<sup>lle</sup> de Paradis, Haüy determined to test his plans by the instruction of one or more blind persons. This was in the spring of 1784. After some time he found a lad of seventeen years, blind from

infancy, named Lesueur, who was in the habit of soliciting charity at the door of one of the city churches. Forming his acquaintance, he proposed to him to come to his house, and receive instruction—Lesueur would have been delighted to do so, but a widowed mother and several helpless children, were dependent on the amount he received in charity, for their support, and they must starve unless his income were continued. Haüy inquired the average amount of his receipts, and learning it, paid it from his own pocket.

Lesueur proved a very tractable pupil. After six months instruction, his progress in reading, geography, arithmetic and music, was such that Haüy after reading an essay on the instruction of the blind, before the Royal Academy of Science, exhibited his pupil's attainments as a proof of the positions he had advanced. The members of the Academy expressed much gratification at the results they had witnessed, and appointed a commission to examine the matter more fully, and report. Meantime the Philanthropic Society, then recently established, and which numbered among its members some of the best men in France, offered to support twelve blind children, if Haüy would instruct them. The offer was accepted.

In February, 1785, the commission of the Royal Academy reported. Meantime, such was the interest excited by the labors of the philanthropist, that in less than three months the number of his pupils had increased to twenty. During this interval, too, he had given to the world his great invention of printing for the blind, in raised letters. This, like many other important inventions, seems to have been partly the result of accident. M. Gailliod, who at a later date became one of Haüy's most celebrated pupils, thus relates the circumstance. "Lesueur was sent one day to his master's desk, for some article, and passing his fingers over the papers, they came in contact with the back of a printed note, which, having received an unusually strong impression, exhibited the letters in relief on the reverse—he distinguished an o, and brought the paper to Haüy, to show him that he could do so; Haüy at once perceived the importance of the discovery, and testing it further, by writing upon paper with a sharp point, and reversing it found that Lesueur read it with great facility." The invention was not yet complete, however; the blind must not only be able to distinguish raised characters by touch, but they must perceive the difference between those which were similar, and this so readily, that their reading may approach in fluency, that of persons possessing sight. The selection of a form of letter which would fulfill these requisites was a matter of considerable difficulty; the inventor adopted at first the Illyrian letter which, from its angular character, promised

to be more tangible than any other; but his letters were too large, and his embossing, for want of a proper press, not so distinct as was desirable—still his pupils mastered it with tolerable facility.

The report of the Commission appointed by the Royal Academy was as favorable as could have been desired. They describe very fully the processes of instruction adopted, and the results attained, and conclude with these words: "If the success, which we have witnessed, does honor to the intelligence of the pupils, it is no less satisfactory and creditable to their instructor, whose beneficent labors merit the public gratitude." The effect of this report upon the community was soon perceptible. The school for the blind attracted universal attention. Eminent musical performers, and actors, musical societies even, gave it benefits; the nobility, at their soirees, must have one or more of the blind pupils to exhibit their proficiency under training; royalty itself must witness their performances. There seemed every probability, that the school and its teacher would be spoiled by public adulation. But the noble hearted philanthropist was not one whom flattery could spoil; he pursued the even tenor of his way, amid the commendations of the public, constantly seeking the improvement of his processes of instruction, and providing for the training of his pupils in those studies and mechanical arts which would best fit them to acquire an independent and honorable support. During the five years, 1785—1790, he had reduced the size and improved the character of his type; introduced and carried to a high state of perfection a system of musical instruction; invented and published a series of maps in relief; and established a number of workshops, in which those trades best adapted to the capacities of the blind were taught.

But if the days of prosperity had been long, the days of adversity which succeeded them were longer, and amid their gloom, any but a stout heart would have sunk in despair.

In 1791, the Philanthropic Society, which had patronized his undertaking almost from its inception, was broken up, its members imprisoned or exiled—many of them, alas, subsequently guillotined; and the school for the blind passed under the care of the state, which provided liberally for its support, and gave it a home in what had once been the convent of the Celestins.

All yet looked fair for it; but the reign of terror soon followed, and philanthropy, which had so lately been the *fashion* in Paris, gave place to a demoniac and blood-thirsty cruelty which has no parallel in the history of nations. The best blood of France flowed like water; the Abbe Sicard, the successor of De l'Epee in the instruction of the Deaf and Dumb, was imprisoned, and narrowly escaped the

illotine. All thought of humanity, as well as all idea of God, had been banished from the minds of the frantic and blood-stained barons who ruled Paris. Amid all the confusion and discord, Haüy quietly continued his course of instruction, though sorely straitened means to sustain the helpless children confided to his care; the government nominally provided for them, but the orders on a bankrupt treasury were nearly worthless; he gave up freely his own little fortune, and when this was gone, with the aid of his pupil Lesueur, he worked faithfully at a printing press, which in the more prosperous times of the Institution he had purchased; printing the numberless bulletins, hand-bills, affichés and tracts, which so abounded in that period of anarchy. Meantime, want each day pressed more sorely on them, and for nearly a year this noble-hearted philanthropist existed on one meal a day, lest his dear children, as he called them, should suffer from hunger.

As the government and the country became more quiet, their condition was somewhat improved, and though food was never plentiful, yet there came a time when the satisfying of hunger was not so decidedly the first necessity. Amid this long period of darkness and misery, extending over ten years, (from 1791 to 1801,) Haüy had been able to form some pupils, whose subsequent renown reflected its luster upon their patient and self-denying teacher; among these were Galliod, who, in after years, became one of the most eminent of French Musical composers; Penjon, whose mathematical attainments were such, that, for thirty years, he filled, with the highest distinction, the post of professor of mathematics, at the college of Angers; and Avisse, whose early death deprived France of one of her greatest poets.

In 1801, a blow fell upon the Institution, in comparison with which, its previous privations and suffering seemed light. The government decided that the school for the young blind should be incorporated with the Hospice des Quinze-Vingts. This Institution, an Asylum for the adult blind, was occupied at this time by a large number of blind persons, with their families, who were indolent, degraded and vicious. To place the children, for whom he had sacrificed so much and upon whose tender minds, even in that godless era, he had sought to impress religious truth, in constant association with these vicious, indolent and profligate men and women, was more than he could bear. Cheerfully had he endured hunger and privation for their sake, and as cheerfully would he do it again—but to see their minds and morals corrupted, their habits of industry and study abandoned—this was too much. The government however was in-

No. 9.—[VOL. III., No. 2.]—31.

exorable, and Haüy resigned his position. The government acknowledged his past services by a pension of 400 dollars per annum!

Unwilling to abandon a class for whom he felt so deep a sympathy, Haüy opened a private institution for the blind under the title of *Musée des Aveugles*. He maintained it for three years, and in that time educated, among others, two pupils whose names and reputation are yet fresh throughout Europe; Rodenbach, the eloquent writer and statesman of Belgium, and Fournier, hardly less distinguished in France. The undertaking, however, proved pecuniarily unsuccessful, and in 1806, he accepted the pressing invitation of the Czar, to establish an Asylum for the blind at St. Petersburg. On his way thither, he visited Berlin, and gave the first impulse to the organization of the school for the blind there, which has gone on, increasing in usefulness, with each succeeding year, to the present time. Arrived at St. Petersburg, he organized an institution, over which he presided, for ten years, with great ability.

In 1817, having attained his seventy-second year, and feeling the pressure of disease, as well as years, he determined to return to his native land to die. His parting with the Czar Alexander, who was greatly attached to him, was very affecting. The Emperor embraced him repeatedly, and conferred upon him the order of St. Vladimir—the highest order of merit then established in Russia. On his return to Paris, Haüy was domiciled with his brother, the Abbe. During his absence, the government had experienced the evils, which he had predicted, as the result of the transfer of the school for the blind to the Hospice des Quinze-Vingts, and after fourteen years of union, they had re-organized the school as a separate establishment, and upon a liberal basis, but had found it necessary to expel more than half the pupils for the indolent and vicious habits they had contracted there.

The heart of Haüy was overflowing with affection for the school he had organized, and for which he had suffered so much, and he hastened, feeble as he was, to pay it a visit; but the new director, Dr. Guillié with a cruelty worthy of the inquisition, refused him admission, alleging that as the Bourbons were now in power, and Haüy had been favorably disposed to the Revolution, it would be displeasing to the Royal family, to have him recognized. It is difficult to believe that even a Bourbon, imbecile as Louis XVIII was, could have authorized so contemptible an act; we incline rather to the opinion that the refusal was the result of Dr. Guillié's own malignity; and the more, as with a refined cruelty, which shows the baseness of his disposition, he forbade the teachers, many of whom had been pupils of Haüy, ever

mentioning his name, and soon after published a history of the school for the young blind, in which he did not even refer to Haüy, but attributed its origin to Louis XVI.

It is pleasant to know, however, that justice is sometimes done even in this world, and that meanness and injustice meet their reward. It was so with Dr. Guilliè; his cruelty to the aged Haüy, led to such clamors against him, that the government were compelled to appoint a commission to investigate his management of the school; and after careful and thorough inquiry, this commission reported that, in every department, they found ample evidence of the fraud, deception, and charlatanism of the director, and this was so abundantly illustrated by the details of their report, that the miserable man, finding the poisoned chalice which he had drugged for others, commended to his own lips, was fain to resign amid a storm of popular indignation. He was succeeded by Dr. Pignier, in February, 1821. After re-organizing the school and adopting regulations which should prevent the deceptions and finesse, practiced in the previous administration, Dr. Pignier felt that it was due to Haüy, that his eminent services should be recognized by a suitable ovation. Accordingly on the 22d of August, 1821, a public concert, in his honor, was given at the Institution of the Blind in the Rue de St. Victor, and the pupils and teachers vied with each other in their expressions of gratitude to the Father of the blind. Songs and choruses composed for the occasion, commemorated his trials, his hardships and his successes; and as the good old man, with streaming eyes, witnessed the triumphant results of his early labors, and listened to their expressions of thankfulness, he exclaimed, "Give not the praise to me, my children; it is God who has done all."

It was his last visit to the Institution. His health, long feeble, gave way during the succeeding autumn, and after months of suffering, he fell asleep on the 18th of March, 1822. In the hall of the National Institution for the young blind, on the Boulevard des Invalides, the visitor may read the following inscription: "To the memory of Valentin Haüy, former translator to the King, to the Admiralty of France, and to the Hotel de Ville, chevalier of the imperial order of St. Vladimir, born at St. Just in Picardy, the 13th of November, 1745, died at Paris the 18th of March, 1822, inventor of the methods and processes employed for the education of the blind. He established, at first, at his own expense, this school, afterward organized at his petition by Louis XVI in 1791, and subsequently propagated in Russia and other states of Europe, through the impulse given by the French director."

The slanders and falsehoods which the insane jealousy of Dr. G. led him to circulate, may have prejudiced, to some extent the reputation of Haüy in other countries; but in his own land, few names are mentioned with more of reverence or love, and this emotion is due, not more to his genius, than to his self-denying goodness and purity of heart. This was strikingly manifested at the inauguration of the new edifice of the Institution for the young blind, in 1843. The principal exercises consisted of a eulogy upon Haüy, and ode in which were rehearsed his efforts and sacrifices for the blind. Gratitude is by no means extinct in the heart of the French people.

## NOTE.

As a public testimonial to Valentin Haüy's services to humanity, a marble statue will soon be erected in front of the Imperial Institution which he founded in Paris, to which the blind of all nations are invited to contribute. The Secretary of the Department of the Fine Arts has subscribed the sum of (\$2,400,) twelve thousand francs, toward the expense. But his noblest monument is in the schools and workshops and asylums for the blind, of which there were, in 1853, over one hundred and twenty in Europe and America.

FRANCE had 13, all except the Institute for the young blind at Paris, and Dr. Rattier's Day School for the Blind in the same city, being under the control of the different religious orders and none of them having more than 15 or 20 pupils. The whole number of blind persons under instruction in France at that date was not more than 400.

In GERMANY, including Austria and Prussia, there were 32 Institutions—divided among the different states as follows: Austria 9, Prussia 8, Bavaria 4, Wurtemberg 3, Dresden, Frankfort, Hamburg, Hamelin, Leipsic, Ratisbon and Regensburg each 1. None of these are large except those at Berlin and Vienna, and the whole have not more than 1000 pupils. The number of blind persons in Germany is estimated at more than 30,000.

SWITZERLAND has 5 schools for the Blind, at Zurich, Schaffhausen, Lausanne, Berne and Fribourg. None of these are large; but those at Zurich and Lausanne have a high reputation.

● SWEDEN has but one, at Stockholm, which is connected with the Deaf and Dumb Asylum, and for a few years past has been conducted with great ability.

RUSSIA has three, viz.: at St. Petersburg, Warsaw and Gatschina. The first was founded by Haüy and is quite large—the others are of less extent. The number of the blind in Russia is about 50,000.

BELGIUM has three, viz.: at Bruges, Brussels, and Liege, all receiving Deaf and Dumb, as well as Blind pupils.

SPAIN has two. One at Madrid intended principally to educate blind persons for teachers.

GREAT BRITAIN has thirteen. Of these that at Liverpool, organized in 1791, had in 1855 seventy-nine pupils. In London there are three, all richly endowed, and two of them having nearly 200 pupils each; Edinburgh has one, established in 1792. The others are at Manchester, Brighton, Norwich, Glasgow, York, Bristol, Nottingham and Warwick. Most of them are mainly industrial in their character, and in none of them is the course of instruction as extended as in the American schools.

IRELAND has six Institutions for the Blind; four of them, however, are hospitals in which little or no instruction is attempted. The whole six contained in 1855, 131 inmates. There are in Great Britain and Ireland about 25,000 blind persons.

Italy has six, viz.: at Naples, Palermo, Rome, Milan, Turin and Padua.

PORTUGAL has one, at Lisbon. Turkey has one, at Constantinople.

HOLLAND has three—the largest at Amsterdam, the others are quite small. The Amsterdam Institution is largely endowed, and in its means of instruction and the extent of its course, is one of the best institutions for the Blind in Europe. In 1853 there were in the school 55 pupils, and in the work department for the adult blind 30. Great attention is given in this school to mathematical and musical instruction. The most eminent organists in Holland are graduates of this school.

In the UNITED STATES there are 20 Institutions, with over 800 pupils.



## XVI. SPECIAL TRAINING OF WOMEN

### FOR SOCIAL EMPLOYMENTS.

---

THE following article on the "Institution of Rev. Thomas Fliedner, at Kaiserswerth on the Rhine," was prepared originally to illustrate the views entertained by the editor of this Journal, as to the kind of special preparation which should be provided for, somewhere in our country, for women who are willing to devote themselves to the charitable, sanitary and reformatory work of society. In the department of education much has already been done in the right direction, by establishing Public High Schools for girls, as well as boys, and Normal Schools for the appropriate training of such young women as show the requisite tact, taste and character, for the employment of teaching. Our experience in New England has already shown, not only the capacity of women, but their superiority to the male sex, in the whole work of domestic and primary instruction, not only as principal teachers of infant and the lowest class of elementary schools, but as assistants in schools of every grade in which girls are taught, and as principal teachers, with special assistants in certain studies, in country schools generally. Their more gentle and refined manners, purer morals, stronger instinctive love for the society of children, and greater tact in their management,—their talent for conversational teaching, and quickness in apprehending the difficulties which embarrass a young mind, and their power, when properly developed and sustained by an enlightened public sentiment, of governing the most wild and stubborn dispositions, by mild and moral influences, are now generally acknowledged by our most enlightened educators.

In this department we are far in advance of European practice and opinion. There even in states where public instruction is most thoroughly organized, the provision for the education of girls, beyond schools of the lowest grade, is very defective. While boys are highly instructed in language, and the elements and higher principles of science, as applied in the useful arts, in public schools of different kinds, general and special, the girls, except those of wealthy and aristocratic families, are entirely neglected. Until within fifteen years, no attempt was made to train females for the employment of teaching, except in certain convents of the Catholic

Church, where the self-denying life which the rules of the establishment require, and the excellent education there given, are an admirable preparation for the important duties which many of the sisters are called upon to perform, as teachers in schools of the poor, as well as for boarding-schools connected with their religious houses. This omission in European systems of public education, has opened a chasm, broad and deep, between the intelligence and intellectual capabilities of the two sexes—has weakened the power and influence of woman in society—has narrowed the circle of a mother's teaching at home, and shut her out from the wide and appropriate field of employment as a teacher in public and private schools of different grades.

But in opening other spheres of useful activity for women, especially in associating them with men in the administration of many departments of charitable, sanitary and penal establishments, we have yet much to learn, especially from the Catholic countries of Europe. In confirmation of our own views, especially in respect to the co-operation of women in the management of Homes and Asylums for orphans, and of Refuges, Reformatory and Farm Schools for destitute, vagrant and criminal children, we have incorporated copious extracts from two lectures of Mrs. Jameson, (recently published\* by Longman, London,) one entitled "Sisters of Charity at Home and Abroad," and the other, "Communion of Labor." These extracts are published with our notice of Mr. Fliedner's establishment at Kaiserswerth, as illustrating the views we entertain of the peculiar natural endowments, and the necessity of special preparation of women for the highest labors of beneficence.

Something has already been attempted among us, in this direction, and with a good degree of success. Women have long been associated with men in the *visitation* of institutions for the insane, in the management of asylums for orphans, and in the subordinate work of hospitals; and some facilities are provided for training them to the duties of nurses and physicians. But much more is required to be done, not with a view of confounding the special functions and provinces of labor of men and women, but to enable the latter to understand thoroughly their own specific work, and to acquire that practical knowledge of principles and details, which are essential to the highest success. Institutions and opportunities of acquiring this practical knowledge, and testing the possession of the requisite tact and talent, are now wanting to women.

---

\* Reprinted by Ticknor & Co., Boston.

## XVII. INSTITUTION OF PASTOR FLIEDNER,

AT

KAISERSWERTH, ON THE RHINE.\*

---

KAISERSWERTH, on the Rhine, is a town of about four hundred inhabitants, in which a manufactory of cotton goods, was established about the year 1812, the proprietors of which failed in 1822, and thus left the workmen, who were principally Protestants, without the means of supporting their pastor,—the Rev. Thomas Fliedner, then twenty-two years of age. In 1823 and 1824, he traveled through Holland and England to collect funds sufficient to maintain a church in his little community. He succeeded, but this was the smallest part of the results of his journey. In England, he became acquainted with Mrs. Fry—and his attention having been thus turned to the fact, that prisons were but a school for vice, instead of for reformation, he formed, at Düsseldorf, in 1826, the first German society for improving prison discipline. He soon perceived how desolate is the situation of the woman, who, released from prison, but often without the means of subsistence is, as it were, violently forced back into crime. With one female criminal, with one volunteer (Mdlle. Göbel, a friend of Madame Fliedner,) who came, without pay, to join the cause, he began his work in September, 1833, in a small summer-house in his garden. Between December and June of the next year, he received nine other penitents, of whom eight had been more than once in prison. A second volunteer was then found, who has since gone out as the wife of the missionary, Barnstein, to Borneo.

The Infant School was the next branch of the Institution, which was added in May, 1836, under a first-rate infant schoolmistress, Henrietta Frickenhaus, who still conducts it, and has already trained more than four hundred candidates for the office of infant schoolmistresses.

In October, of the same year, induced partly by the general feeling of the great deficiency of good nurses, partly by regret at seeing how much good female power was wasted, and also by the fact that the volunteers, who had come forward for the first Institution, wanted a further field for the education of their faculties, pastor Fliedner established a hospital (with one patient, one nurse, and a cook, in the manufactory before spoken of, which was now vacant. The nurse, now the deaconess Reichardt, (sister of a missionary of that name, among the Jews in Lon-

---

\* This account is drawn from a pamphlet of 32 pages, entitled "*The Institution of Kaiserswerth on the Rhine, for the Practical Training of Deaconesses, under the direction of the Rev. Pastor Fliedner, embracing the support and care of a Hospital, Infant and Industrial Schools, and a Female Penitentiary.*"

don,) is still in the Institution; though too infirm for physical nursing, her services are found invaluable in conducting the devotions of the male patients, who look up to her as a mother, and in instructing and advising the probationers and younger deaconesses. During the first year, the number of nurses thus volunteering, had increased to seven, but these were submitted to a probation of six months—sister Reichardt only having been exempted, from her long experience and faithfulness in this department. From fifteen to eighteen patients were now received, so that the number of those nursed during the first year, in the Institution, amounted to sixty, besides twenty-eight at their own homes. The hospital having been established chiefly as a school for training the deaconesses, all kinds of sick were received, though the proportion of recoveries thus afforded a less brilliant list at the close of the year.

Behind the present hospital is a large enclosed court, with outbuildings; and again, behind that, a walled garden, of about an acre, fit for the use of the patients. Beyond, lies a row of small houses, which pastor Fliedner has hired, and in which the different branches of his Institution were established, as they arose. First, on the right, is the Infant School, which numbers about forty children, and almost as many young women, training for infant schoolmistresses. These do not necessarily become deaconesses, and most of them have chosen to remain independent—a fortunate thing for the Institution, which, with its present funds, would have provided with difficulty for the old age of so many.

Next to the infant school is the Penitentiary. Here the Institution, which sprung, in 1833, from the small beginning in the summer-house, was transplanted. It has now a large garden and field behind, stretching beyond the Infant School, with farm yard and outbuildings.

Thirdly, comes the Orphan Asylum, where two families, twelve in each, of orphans,—chiefly the daughters of clergymen, missionaries, schoolmasters, and other respectable parents, live with their respective deaconesses. These take the entire care of the children committed to their charge, sleep with them, eat with them, and instruct them in household work. This Institution is meant to become a nursery ground for future deaconesses and teachers.

Connected with it is the Seminary, (Normal School,) for industrial, day, and infant schoolmistresses, who here receive a practical education in learning to teach, (passing through the orphan asylum, the infant school, the parish day school, and the children's wards in the hospital,) a theoretical education from a first-rate master, and some excellent female teachers, in every branch of knowledge necessary to them,—and a religious education from the pastor himself, and an assistant clergyman.

The other houses in the row are occupied by the pastor Fliedner and his family, by the bureau, where the accounts of the Institution are kept by two clerks; and further on, nearest the river, are the parish school, church, and vicarage. Pastor Fliedner has now resigned the care of the parish, which was become impossible in addition to that of the institution.

In the Rhine are baths for the whole establishment, and the scrofulous children receive great benefit from them. Behind the row of houses are about forty acres of land, which supply the institution with vegetables and herbs, and with pasture for eight cows and several horses. And the little summer-house, the starting point of the whole, still stands in the pastor's garden.

We see by these details, how, with small funds, without a competition of architects or vast plans for a "new and convenient" erection, using only the means and the buildings near at hand, a great institution can grow up and flourish.

In 1854, the hospital contained 120 beds, which were generally full, and more than 6000 patients have been received since its commencement.

But the chief purpose of this hospital is, to serve as a training school for nursing sisters or deaconesses. Every one who offers herself (and there is no want of offers,) is taken on trial for six months, during which she must pay for her board, and wears no distinctive dress. If she persists in her vocation and is accepted, she undergoes a further probation, (like the novitiate of the Roman Catholic sisters, of from one to three years. She then puts on the hospital dress, and is boarded and lodged gratis. The male wards are served by men nurses, of whom there are five, who have been educated in the hospital, and are under the authority of the sisters.

As no inducements are offered to these Protestant sisters, no prospect of pecuniary reward, or praise, or reputation, nothing in short, but the opportunity of working in the cause of humanity for which Christ worked and still works; so if this does not seem to be their ruling principle, they are dismissed. After they have been accepted and made their profession, they receive yearly a small sum for clothing, and nothing more; they can receive no fee or reward from them they serve, but in age, or illness the parent institution is bound to receive and provide for them. The deaconess even after her solemn consecration in the church to her vocation, and her engagement to serve for a period of five years, is at liberty to retire from the service, if her parents, or marriage, or any important duty claim her.

In 1854, there were 190 sisters, eighty of whom were stationed in the different hospitals of Germany; five in London; five in Jerusalem; two in Smyrna; and the rest were still probationers and learners. Their success illustrates in a beautiful manner the importance of Normal or professional training in every department of life which involve art and method. The following account of a visit to the institution is abridged from a communication in Lowes' Edinburg Magazine, for 1846.

"Kaiserswerth is the name of a small village on the east bank of the Rhine, about an hour from Dusseldorf. The village is clean and orderly, but very ancient in its houses, and still more so in the aspect of its church and manse. This circumstance the more fixes the attention of the traveler on a new street running at right angles to the old one. All the buildings in it are peculiar, and piece on but awkwardly with the old manse, whence they spring, and which is occupied by the "School for Deaconesses." The Rev. Thomas Fliedner is pas-

tor of this small parish, and has found full occupation for his benevolent energy in the institution of which he is the founder.

We unwittingly made our visit of investigation on the great anniversary; day for school examinations, for inspecting the hospitals, and for setting apart for the exercise of their functions, wheresoever they may be called, such deaconesses as have satisfactorily passed through their period of training. The whole place was therefore in its best attire. Windows bright, walls newly colored, and every here and there, where an arch or a peg to hang a wreath upon could be found, active and tasteful hands had transferred the garden's autumnal treasures of flowers to the various chambers of the dwellings. In a room on one side of the street, the floor was covered with beds for the repose of visiting schoolmistresses and deaconesses who had returned to enjoy the day with their former associates; while, on the other, the hall with its table of many covers, and the savor of good food from the kitchen, indicated that the mother was on that day to entertain her children. In short, it was a gala day—the day of all the year when many acquisitions are brought to light, and for which many a studious preparation is made. As all were engaged in the examination of the orphan-school, we had leisure, while waiting, to observe the characteristic furniture of the manse parlor, where, according to the fashion of the country, the pale sand crackled under our feet. There hangs a portrait of Mrs. Fleidner, the honored and most useful coadjutor of her husband. She has been a fitting mother of that institution, of which he is the father. Having given out all her strength to it, she was in her prime translated from the land of labor and anxiety to the land of eternal rest.

Near her is placed, in meet companionship, a portrait of our Mrs. Fry, whose experienced eye took in at once, with much delight, the utility of the whole institution. On the same wall appears a portrait of Mr. Fleidner's mother, a venerable widow of a former pastor, whose lovely Christian bearing we had occasion to respect and admire, having made her acquaintance in a distant city. She had reared a large family for the church, and suffered many hardships while her country was the scene of French warfare, being long separated from her husband, uncertain of his safety, and moving from place to place with her young children, at times at a loss for a lodging and all necessary provision.

Opposite to these portraits are engravings of some of the Protestant Reformers, among whom appear Luther and Calvin; and in a corner a cupboard with a glass door, furnished with books for sale, chiefly such as are employed in the schools or report their condition. Also the noble set of Scripture prints which was prepared for the institution, but which is now to be found in many seminaries for the benevolent instruction of the young in Germany and Prussia.

Presently an amiable and gentlemanly man, who apologized for his imperfect English, came and guided us to the school-room, in which an intelligent teacher was calling forth the attainments of his pupils. The audience consisted of Mr. Fleidner's co-presbyters, the physician, a few personal friends, the teachers who were that day visitors to the school where they had themselves been trained, and as many of the deaconesses as could be spared from their regular avocations.

The orphans under examination are many of them the children of pastors and schoolmasters. They looked more vigorous and hearty than most children of their age do in Germany, and are receiving good, sound education, which will fit them to help both themselves and others in future life.

We were led from the school-room to the dormitories, and found each containing six small beds, and one larger. The deaconess, who occupies the larger bed, is regarded as the mother of these six children, and fills that office as to washing, clothing, medicating, and instructing them, just as a real mother ought to do. Each bed has a drawer which draws out at its foot, containing all the little tenant's property, and on the opposing wall is hung a tin basin, jug, and tooth-brush for the use of each. The deaconess soon feels an attachment to the orphans spring up in her bosom, while she also feels responsibility about their neat and healthy appearance, proper demeanor, and attainments of all kinds.

We next saw the delinquents' shelter, and two women in charge, one an older, sensible, firm-looking person, whose post is probably never changed, and another younger, her pupil. They showed us with some satisfaction the needle-work they had taught to a set of lowering-browed, unpromising-looking females,



who, like their peers in Scotland, gratify their curiosity by side-peeps, but never look you fairly in the face. From the educational system of Prussia, it rarely occurs that reading requires to be taught to adults. The senior deaconess spoke mildly and sensibly of some intractable, two or three runaways, some reconciled to friends, some restored to society, and acquitting themselves well in service. In short, it was a fac-simile of poor humanity, and the uncertain results of benevolent effort at home. These women sleep in small apartments, which fill one side of a long gallery—each contains a bed, a stool, and a box, and in the midst of them is the room for the deaconess, who is, by means of her open door, enabled to observe all movements, and prevent all communications on the subject of past transgressions. The delinquents are shut into their night-rooms.

In the infant school department, we did not observe any thing differing from what is to be seen in the best schools of the same style elsewhere, unless we might mention an extensive frame of pigeon-holes, each numbered to indicate the proprietor, and occupied by pieces of bread. In this Normal School have been trained teachers who are now engaged in managing the infant population in many parts of Prussia and Germany.

We crossed the little street, and entered, on the opposite side, the hospital, a handsome building entirely of recent erection, in a pretty extensive and neatly laid-out garden, where we observed some patients of all ages—the children at play or carried in the arms of their tender-looking nurse—the adults resting on benches in the sun, for the day was cool, or moving feebly as their reduced strength enabled them.

Our guide, whom we here discovered to be chaplain to the hospital, led us first into the apothecary's room, where we saw two sensible, energetic-looking women compounding medicines after the prescription of the physician. They are licensed by government, serving a regular time to the acquisition of this important branch of knowledge, and are always on the spot to watch the effect of their administrations. The place is fitted up like a druggist's shop at home. We forgot to inquire if the counter, within whose railed-off quarter the chief apothecary stood, is rendered necessary by the shop being frequented by the villagers, which seems probable. The other deaconess was working at a mortar. From this place we passed to the kitchen, and saw the huge apparatus necessary for feeding such a family, and the extra supply required on that festal day, when their family was greatly increased. The plans for keeping food in that warm country, the cleanliness and beautiful order of the larder and laundries, indeed of every corner, was quite remarkable, and the ventilation so perfect, that even when we ascended to wards occupied by persons in bed, or resting on the long benches, who looked very ill, the atmosphere was tolerably fresh and agreeable. Our conductors dropped here and there a good word to the sick as we passed. In the male wards a part of the attendance seems to be done by men, but each has its quota of deaconesses who have their own charge and responsibility. In one chamber we found five women who had joined the establishment a few days before, who were engaged in learning the useful art of cutting out clothing, under two instructors. There was something touching in the ward of sick children, where we saw many eyes beaming tenderness, and many hearts exercising all the maternal instincts, albeit not mothers. Some who were very sick formed for the time the sole charge of one deaconess, while three or four might be intrusted to the care of another. In addition to minute watchfulness over the body, there is, as they can bear it, an endeavor to occupy the memory with suitable hymns and passages of Scripture, and to engage their minds on subjects that lead them to glorify God by honoring and loving Him in the days of their youth. The chaplain was acquainted with each face, and its owner's little history, and tried to draw out a little repetition of their small store of Scripture learning. One could not but remark the useful discipline which such employment must be for the young women who are engaged in it, or fail to observe the loving patience with which one or two met the feverish fractiousness of their nurslings.

The office of these 'sisters of charity,' which elevates them above the common sick nurse, and engages them in concerns that touch on eternity, is that of reading the Scriptures to the sick and aged, and dropping a word of consolation into the languid ear, while they minister to the bodily wants. This they are authorized and expected to do, so that, instead of doing it by stealth, as a pious



sick nurse may do in our hospitals; or, instead of railing on the poor sufferer who cries out in concern for his soul's health, as an impious one has sometimes been known to do, they breathe balm while they turn the pillow, and speak of the way of reconciliation while they endeavor to lull pain. They are by the bed in the midnight hour, and can seize the moment of coolness and clearness to speak to the afflicted—a moment which neither chaplain, nor medical man, nor friendly visitor, may be so happy as to hit upon; and, while they are forbidden to be preachers, their living actions, their Christian bearing, and their faithful advices, are calculated to drop like balm on the wounded spirit, and have, in many cases, accomplished good which we may justly call incalculable, for its consequences are eternal.

After examining the excellent arrangement of the sick wards, we found ourselves in the chapel. It is placed at the lower extremity of the long range of buildings, and so crosses the end of four wards, two on the first, and two on the second story, the door of entrance to the chapel being placed in the center. Each ward has a folding-door of glass in the side of the place of worship, by opening which the Word of God can sound along even to the remoter beds. On communion occasions, the pastor is accustomed to convey the elements into these wards, so that many a fainting soul is thus refreshed, which, in any other circumstances, would be denied the privileges of the house of God. There are, on one side of the chapel, seats where the feeble can recline, and some with muslin curtains, behind which the unhappy or unsightly can find shelter. In this small, but sacred, place of worship, at three o'clock on that afternoon, October 5th, were the deaconesses, whose term of training was satisfactorily come to a close, questioned before the congregation with respect to their willingness to devote themselves to the work of mercy for the next five years, and having assented to the engagement proposed to them, they were solemnly set apart by prayer. They are now prepared to go to whatever city or country, to whatever hospital, or Normal Institution, or private family they may be called, the taste and capacity of the individual of course being consulted; for it must be carefully explained that there is nothing like a monastic vow of 'obedience to the church' in this affair, and that the engagement is formed subject to being set aside by the claims of nearer domestic duties, if such should arise. Some deaconesses have been called away to assist their own families, some have been lost to the Institution by entering on the conjugal relation. In truth, unfortunately for their vocation, they are rather too popular, as making excellent wives. But while one regards this circumstance with regret as respects the scheme, it is delightful to contemplate the sister of charity transformed into the rearer of her own children in the fear of the Lord.

In conversing with Mr. Fleidner, before taking leave, on the utility of forming such an institution in Scotland, he suggested, as a fundamental and absolute necessity, that it be ascertained that all who are admitted to the school are persons renewed in the spirit of their minds, and willing, under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, to devote themselves in humility and love to the service of their fellow-creatures for Christ's sake.

The two Prussian provinces of the Rhineland and Westphalia are united for its support, and it is under the superintendence of the Protestant Provincial Synod. Above one hundred deaconesses are now at work in different parts of Germany. Sixty are occupied in seventeen hospitals and orphan-houses at Berlin, Dresden, Frankfort, Worms, Cologne, Elberfeld, &c. Several are engaged for large congregations which have no hospital, and about twenty are sent out at the request of private families to nurse their sick members, &c. Five are now at work in the German hospital at Dalston, near London: one of them is matron of the establishment. It can readily be apprehended how uniformity of language, ideas, methods of preparing food, &c., will render these acceptable nurses to their sick countrymen.

In this country we lack a little of the German simplicity, and are so nice about distinctions of rank, and what belongs to our supposed station in society, that it may excite strong displeasure if we say that there are many single women in Scotland, of the excellent of the earth, who are not so useful in the church as they might be; that the reason of this is their want of proper guidance in selecting their work, and of support in its prosecution, and that the deaconess' status in society, and the style of character and bearing expected from her, is exactly what is wanted to confer the necessary energy and steadiness.

lner's "*Diaconissen Anstalt*," at Kaisers-  
 hment of fifteen similar institutions for  
 and teachers, on the continent; and in  
 edgment for the services of Miss Night-  
 to be expended in founding a hospital  
 g Institution for similar purposes. In  
 ect of widening the sphere of woman's  
 cson has published two lectures, deliv-  
 , the first entitled, "*Sisters of Charity,*  
*ed and At Home*," on the 14th of Feb-  
*Communion in Labor, or the Social*  
 28th of June, 1856. These lectures  
 educational literature of the English  
 any American edition, we give copi-

#### EMPLOYMENT OF WOMEN.

concerning the moral purposes of this world  
 n, in reference to us, its human inhab-  
 state of transition between two conditions  
 ers as being worthless in itself, except as  
 and a higher life; while others, absorbed  
 l sorrows around them, have really come  
 r penance for sins committed in a former  
 e best definition—the best, at least, for  
 peare: he calls it, with his usual felicity  
 d; " and it is truly this; it is a place in  
 n *must* be done—work which it is *good*  
 kind or another is at once the condition  
 iness.

ld of ours we must all work. The only  
 w is it granted to choose their work. In-  
 to leave us no choice. We are called to it.  
 i within, sometimes from without; but in  
 ively our *vocation*, and in either case the  
 n or woman consists in finding in our voca-  
 faculties, and of as many of them as can be

there are works of necessity, and works of  
 ;—man's work, woman's work;—and, upon  
 concordance with the divine law, and what Milton  
 nature, depends the well-being of the whole  
 f each individual.

ged foundation of all social life, has settled by a  
 an, and the work of the woman. The man gov-  
 family; the woman cherishes, regulates, and  
 the relative work is inseparable,—some-

which have made her name dear to the army and the country, and which secure to her a place in the history of our times as the worthy leader of one of the most remarkable movements which this war, in many respects memorable, has produced. I can not, however, refrain from stating one or two facts creditable to the soldiers of the British army, which ought to be known. Miss Nightingale had, of course, occasion to be in the hospital wards at all hours, and she informed me that she never heard even an oath from a soldier. [Applause.] And, lest you should imagine this propriety of behavior proceeded from deference and respect to her personally, I will read a very short extract from a letter written by a lady who was in another hospital. She says: "In bearing testimony, as I do most gratefully, to the extreme delicacy and respect with which I was in every instance treated by our soldiers, I am but echoing the sentiments of every lady who has been in the Eastern hospitals."

In answer to my inquiry whether she had observed on the part of the soldiers much reluctance to leave the hospital and return to their duty in the Crimea, Miss Nightingale replied that she did not remember having been asked to write one letter for any soldier with a view to prolong his stay in the hospital, but she believed she had written five or six hundred for men who wished to inform their officers that they considered themselves fit for duty. Such is the character which the soldiers of the army of the East have established for themselves in action, in camp during the worst times, and in hospital. I am confident that they will not throw away at home the high reputation they acquired in foreign service. [Applause.] Every one knows the public services of Florence Nightingale, but those only who have had the honor of meeting her can know the refinement and truly feminine delicacy of her mind and manners, or the unconsciousness of having done any thing great or remarkable that pervades her whole deportment and conversation.

Far from dwelling upon the past, or taking any pride in the applause which has followed her unsought, the whole energies of her powerful, highly cultivated, and essentially practical intellect are already directed toward further and more permanent plans of usefulness. Truly pious and thoroughly Protestant in her sentiments, her attachment to the Church of England is free from any tincture of sectarian bitterness. [Cheers.] She has not so read her Bible as to believe that it inculcates ill-will toward any class of God's creatures. Ready to extend her assistance to the sick and wounded of all persuasions without distinction, she has freely availed herself of the assistance of all.

Holding fast her own principles with a firm composure of a strong mind and a settled conviction, she avoids alike the extremes of High Church and Low Church, and hears without resentment the extravagant and contradictory absurdities that are circulated in regard to her opinions. She appears to be too intent upon doing the good which it may be permitted her to do in the walk she has chosen, to care for either the evil or the good that is spoken of her—otherwise than that it may affect her usefulness. It is not from us, and it is not here, that she seeks praise or reward. But I should be acting little in accordance with her practice, if, in speaking of the services rendered to the sick and wounded, I omitted to direct your attention to the obligations which she and all of us owe to the ladies who shared her pious labors; and I may be permitted, without disparagement to others, to remind you that some of the most prominent were our own countrywomen.

Miss Shaw Stewart had charge of the nurses in the general hospital at Balaclava; Mrs. Mackenzie, and after her Miss Erskine, in the naval hospital at Therapia—the first a member of a leading family among our untitled aristocracy; the second, daughter of one of the foremost men of our generation, the late Dr. Chalmers, [loud cheers;] the third, daughter of the accomplished historian of the Mahomedan conquest of India, and granddaughter of the late Sir James Mackintosh. And there were other Scottish ladies in less prominent positions. Our country, therefore, was worthily represented in the hospitals of the East. [Cheers.] Let us hope that the moral and material improvements, the higher standard of feeling and of comfort which the wise benevolence and patriotism of Miss Nightingale and the ladies who aided her efforts have introduced into our military hospitals, will not be permitted to pass away with the occasion that gave rise to them.

**THE** success of Pastor Fliedner's "*Diaconissen Anstalt*," at Kaiserswerth, has led to the establishment of fifteen similar institutions for training of Protestant nurses and teachers, on the continent; and in England, the popular acknowledgment for the services of Miss Nightingale and her associates, is to be expended in founding a hospital which is to become a Training Institution for similar purposes. In furtherance of the general object of widening the sphere of woman's benevolent activity, Mrs. Jameson has published two lectures, delivered by her privately in London, the first entitled, "*Sisters of Charity, Catholic and Protestant, Abroad and At Home*," on the 14th of February, 1855, and the other, "*Communion in Labor, or the Social Employment of Women*," on the 28th of June, 1856. These lectures are valuable contributions to the educational literature of the English language, and, in the absence of any American edition, we give copious extracts.

#### SOCIAL POSITION AND EMPLOYMENT OF WOMEN.

**THERE** are many different theories concerning the moral purposes of this world in which we dwell, considered, I mean, in reference to us, its human inhabitants; for some regard it merely as a state of transition between two conditions of existence, a past and a future; others as being worthless in itself, except as a probation or preparation for a better and a higher life; while others, absorbed or saddened by the monstrous evils and sorrows around them, have really come to regard it as a place of punishment or penance for sins committed in a former state of existence. But I think that the best definition—the best, at least, for our present purpose—is that of Shakspeare: he calls it, with his usual felicity of expression, "*this working-day world*;" and it is truly this; it is a place in which work is to be done—work which *must* be done—work which it is good to do;—a place in which labor of one kind or another is at once the condition of existence, and the condition of happiness.

Well, then, in this working-day world of ours we must all work. The only question is, what shall we do? To few is it granted to choose their work. Indeed, all work worth the doing seems to leave us no choice. We are called to it. Sometimes the voice so calling is from within, sometimes from without; but in any case it is what we term expressively our *vocation*, and in either case the harmony and happiness of life in man or woman consists in finding in our vocation the employment of our highest faculties, and of as many of them as can be brought into action.

And work is of various kinds; there are works of necessity, and works of mercy;—*head* work, *hand* work;—man's work, woman's work;—and, upon the distribution of this work in accordance with the divine law, and what Milton calls the faultless proprieties of nature, depends the well-being of the whole community, not less than that of each individual.

Domestic life, the acknowledged foundation of all social life, has settled by a natural law the work of the man, and the work of the woman. The man governs, sustains, and defends the family; the woman cherishes, regulates, and purifies it; but, though distinct, the relative work is inseparable,—some-

circle. When from the cross those memorable words were uttered by "Behold thy Mother ! Behold thy Son !" do you think they were addressed to the two desolate mourners who then and there wept at his feet ? They were spoken, like all his words, to the wide universe, to all humanity, to

I rest, therefore, all I have to say hereafter upon what I conceive to be a vital truth, — an unchangeable, indisputable, natural law. And it is that men and women are, by nature, mutually dependent, mutually helpful. This communion exists not merely in one or two relations, which can define and authorize, and to which opinion may restrict them in their class, in this or that position ; but must extend to every possible mode of existence in which the two sexes can be socially approximated. Take, for instance, a man, in the first place, merely sustains and defends his household ; he works to sustain and defend the community or the nation he belongs to, so of woman. She begins by being the nurse, the teacher, the cherisher of the home through her greater tenderness and purer moral sentiments ; she uses these qualities and sympathies on a larger scale, to cherish and sustain the society. But still the man and the woman must continue to share together ; there must be the communion of labor in the large human family just as well as within the narrower precincts of home.

The great mistake seems to have been that in all our legislation it is assumed and granted that the woman is always protected, always under tutelage, always within the precincts of a home ; finding there her work, her interests, her duties, and her happiness ; but is this true ? We know that it is false. There are thousands and thousands of women who have no protection, no guide, no help, no home ; — who are absolutely driven by circumstances, by necessity, if not by impulse and inclination, to carry out into the large world the sympathies, the domestic instincts, the active administrative abilities, with which God has endowed them ; but these instincts, sympathies, and abilities, require, first, to be properly developed, then properly trained, and finally directed into large and useful channels, according to the individual tendencies.

As to the want, what I insist on particularly is, that the means do not exist for the training of those powers ; that the sphere of duties which should be assigned to them is not acknowledged ; and I must express my deep conviction that

## HOSPITALS.

What is the purpose of a great hospital? Ask a physician or a surgeon, zealous in his profession: he will probably answer that a great hospital is a great medical school, in which the art of healing is scientifically and experimentally taught; where the human sufferers who crowd those long vistas of beds are not men and women, but "cases" to be studied: and so under one aspect it ought to be, and must be. A great, well-ordered medical school is absolutely necessary; and to be able to regard the various aspects of disease with calm discrimination, the too sensitive human sympathies must be set aside. Therefore much need is there here of all the masculine firmness of nerve and strength of understanding. But surely a great hospital has another purpose, that for which it was originally founded and endowed, namely, as a refuge and solace for disease and suffering. Here are congregated in terrible reality all the ills enumerated in Milton's visionary lazar-house:

" All maladies  
Of ghastly spasm or racking torture, qualms  
Of heart-sick agony, wide-wasting pestilence " —

I spare you the rest of the horrible catalogue. He goes on:

" Dire was the tossing, deep the groans; despair  
Tended the sick, busiest from couch to couch."

But why must despair tend the sick? We can imagine a far different influence "busiest from couch to couch"!

There is a passage in Tennyson's poems, written long before the days of Florence Nightingale, which proves that poets have been rightly called prophets, and see "the thing that shall be as the thing that is." I will repeat the passage. He is describing the wounded warriors nursed and tended by the learned ladies:

" A kindlier influence reigned, and everywhere  
Low voices with the ministering hand  
Hung round the sick. The maidens came, they talked,  
They sung, they read, till she, not fair, began  
To gather light, and she that was, became  
Her former beauty treble; to and fro,  
Like creatures native unto gracious act,  
And in their own clear element they moved."

This you will say is the poetical aspect of the scene: was it not poetical, too, when the poor soldier said that the very shadow of Florence Nightingale passing over his bed seemed to do him good?

Paula, a noble Roman lady, a lineal descendant of the Scipios and the Gracchi, is mentioned among the first Christian women remarkable for their active benevolence. In the year 385 she quitted Rome, then still a Pagan city; with the remains of a large fortune, which had been expended in aiding and instructing a wretched and demoralized people, and, accompanied by her daughter, she sailed for Palestine, and took up her residence in Bethlehem of Judea. There, as the story relates, she assembled round her a community of women "as well

of noble estate as of middle and low lineage." They took no vows, they made no profession, but spent their days in prayer and good works, having especially a well-ordered hospital for the sick.

In the old English translation of her life there is a picture of this charitable lady which I cannot refrain from quoting : " She was marvellous debonair, and piteous to them that were sick, and comforted them, and served them right humbly ; and gave them largely to eat such as they asked ; but to herself she was hard in her sickness and scarce, for she refused to eat flesh how well she gave it to others, and also to drink wine. She was oft by them that were sick, and she laid the pillows aright and in point ; and she rubbed their feet, and boiled water to wash them ; and it seemed to her that the less she did to the sick in service, so much the less service did she to God, and deserved the less mercy ; therefore she was to them piteous and nothing to herself."

It is in the seventh century that we find these communities of charitable women first mentioned under a particular appellation. We read in history that when Landry, Bishop of Paris, about the year 650, founded an hospital, since known as the Hotel-Dieu, as a general refuge for disease and misery, he placed it under the direction of the *Hospitalières*, or nursing-sisters of that time, — women whose services are understood to have been voluntary, and undertaken from motives of piety. Innocent IV., who would not allow of any outlying religious societies, collected and united these hospital-sisters under the rule of the Augustine Order, making them amenable to the government and discipline of the church. The novitiate or training of a *Sœur Hospitalière* was of twelve years' duration, after which she was allowed to make her profession. At that time, and even earlier, we find many hospitals expressly founded for the reception of the sick pilgrims and wounded soldiers returning from the East, and bringing with them strange and hitherto unknown forms of disease and suffering. Some of the largest hospitals in France and the Netherlands originated in this purpose, and were all served by the *Hospitalières* ; and to this day the Hotel Dieu, with its one thousand beds, the hospital of St. Louis, with its seven hundred beds, and that of *La Pitié*, with its six hundred beds, are served by the same sisterhood, under whose care they were originally placed centuries ago.

For about five hundred years the institution of the *Dames* or *Sœurs Hospitalières* remained the only one of its kind. During this period it had greatly increased its numbers, and extended all through western Christendom ; still it did not suffice for the wants of the age ; and the thirteenth century, fruitful in all those results which a combination of wide-spread suffering and religious ferment naturally produces, saw the rise of another community of compassionate women destined to exercise a far wider influence. These were the *Sœurs Grises*, or Grey Sisters, so called at first, from the original color of their dress. Their origin was this : The Franciscans (and other regular orders) admitted into their community a third or secular class, who did not seclude themselves in cloisters, who took no vows of celibacy, but were simply bound to submit to certain rules and regulations, and united together in works of charity, devoting themselves to visiting the sick in the hospitals, or at their own homes, and doing good wherever and whenever called upon. Women of all classes were enrolled in this sisterhood. Queens, princesses, ladies of rank, wives of burghers, as well as poor widows and maidens. The higher class and the married women occasionally served ; the widows and unmarried devoted themselves almost entirely to



the duties of nursing the sick in the hospitals. Gradually it became a vocation apart, and a novitiate or training of from one to three years was required to fit them for their profession.

The origin of the Béguines, so well known in Flanders, is uncertain ; but they seem to have existed as hospital sisters in the seventh century, and to have been settled in communities at Liege and elsewhere in 1773. They wear a particular dress (the black gown, and white hood), but take no vows, and may leave the community at any time, — a thing which rarely happens.

No one who has travelled in Flanders, visited Ghent, Bruges, Brussels, or indeed any of the Netherlandish towns, will forget the singular appearance of these, sometimes young and handsome, but always staid, respectable-looking women, walking about, protected by the universal reverence of the people, and busied in their compassionate vocation. In their few moments of leisure the Béguines are allowed to make lace and cultivate flowers, and they act under a strict self-constituted government, maintained by strict traditional forms. All the hospitals in Flanders are served by these Béguines. They have besides, attached to their houses, hospitals of their own, with a medical staff of physicians and surgeons, under whose direction, in all cases of difficulty, the sisters administer relief ; and, of the humility, skill, and tenderness, with which they do administer it, I have never heard but one opinion ; \* nor did I ever meet with any one who had travelled in those countries who did not wish that some system of the kind could be transferred to England.

In the fifteenth century (about 1448), when Flanders was under the dominion of the Dukes of Burgundy, a few of the Béguines were summoned from Bruges to Beaune to take charge of the great hospital founded there by Rollin, the Chancellor of Philip the Good. They were soon joined by others from the neighboring districts, and this community of nurses obtained the name *Sœurs de Ste. Marthe*, Sisters of St. Martha. It is worth notice that Martha, who is represented in Scripture as troubled about household cares, while her sister Mary “sat at the feet of Jesus, and heard his words,” was early chosen as the patroness of those who, instead of devoting themselves to a cloistered life of prayer and contemplation, were bound by a religious obligation to active secular duties. The hospital of Beaune, one of the most extensive and best managed in France, is still served by these sisters. Many hospitals in the South of France, and three at Paris, are served by the same community.

In Germany, the Sisters of Charity are styled “Sisters of St. Elizabeth,” in honor of that benevolent enthusiast, Elizabeth of Hungary, whose pathetic story and beautiful legend has been rendered familiar to us by Mr. Kingsley’s drama. When Joseph II. suppressed the nunneries throughout Austria and Flanders, the Elizabethan Sisters, as well as the Béguines, were excepted by an especial

\* Howard mentions them with due praise, as serving in their hospital at Bruges : “There are twenty of them ; they look very healthy ; they rise at four, and are constantly employed about their numerous patients.” “They prepare as well as administer the medicines. The Directress of the Pharmacy last year celebrated her jubilee or fiftieth year of her residence in the hospital.” (P. 149.)

A recent traveller mentions their hospital of St. John at Bruges as one of the best conducted he had ever met with : “Its attendants, in their religious costume, and with their nuns’ head-dresses, moving about with a quiet tenderness and solicitude, worthy their name as ‘Sisters of Charity ;’ and the lofty wards, with the white linen of the beds, present in every particular an example of the most accurate neatness and cleanliness.”

decree, "because of the usefulness of their vocation." At Vienna, a few years ago, I had the opportunity, through the kindness of a distinguished physician, of visiting one of the houses of these Elizabethan Sisters. There was an hospital attached to it of fifty beds, which had received about four hundred and fifty patients during the year. Nothing could exceed the propriety, order, and cleanliness, of the whole establishment. On the ground-floor was an extensive "Pharmacie," a sort of Apothecaries' Hall; part of this was divided off by a long table or counter, and surrounded by shelves filled with drugs, much like an apothecary's shop; behind the counter two Sisters, with their sleeves tucked up, were busy weighing and compounding medicines, with such a delicacy, neatness, and exactitude, as women use in these matters. On the outside of this counter, seated on benches, or standing, were a number of sick and infirm, pale, dirty, ragged patients; and among them moved two other Sisters, speaking to each individually in a low, gentle voice, and with a quiet authority of manner, that in itself had something tranquillizing. A physician and surgeon, appointed by the government, visited this hospital, and were resorted to in cases of difficulty, or where operations were necessary. Here was another instance in which men and women worked together harmoniously and efficiently. Howard, in describing the principal hospital at Lyons, which he praises for its excellent and kindly management, as being "so clean and so quiet," tells us that at that time (1776), he found it attended by nine physicians and surgeons, and managed by twelve Sisters of Charity. "There were Sisters who made up, as well as administered, all the medicines prescribed; for which purpose there was a laboratory and apothecary's shop, the neatest and most elegantly fitted up that can be conceived." \*

It can easily be imagined that institutions like these, composed of such various ingredients, spread over such various countries, and over several centuries of time, should have been subject to the influences of time; though from a deep-seated principle of vitality and necessity they seem to have escaped its vicissitudes, for they did not change in character or purpose, far less perish. That in ages of superstition they should have been superstitious, that in ages of ignorance they should have been ignorant, — debased in evil selfish times, by some alloy of selfishness and cupidity, — in all this there is nothing to surprise us; but one thing does seem remarkable. While the men who professed the healing art were generally astrologers and alchymists, dealing in charms and nativities, — lost in dreams of the Elixir Vitæ and the Philosopher's Stone, and in such mummeries and quackeries as made them favorite subjects for comedy and satire, — these simple Sisters, in their hospitals, were accumulating a vast fund of practical and traditional knowledge in the treatment of disease, and the uses of various remedies; — knowledge which was turned to account and condensed into rational theory and sound method, when in the sixteenth century Surgery and Medicine first rose to the rank of experimental sciences, and were studied as such. The poor Hospitalières knew nothing of Galen and Hippocrates, but they could observe, if they could not describe, and prescribe, if they could not demonstrate. Still, in the course of time great abuses had certainly crept into these religious societies, — not so bad or so flagrant, perhaps, as those which

\* Howard also mentions the hospitals belonging to the order of Charity, in all countries, as the best regulated, the cleanest, the most tenderly served and managed, of all he had met with. (In 1776.)

disgraced within a recent period many of our own incorporated charities, — but bad enough, and vitiating, if not destroying their power to do good. The funds were sometimes misappropriated, the novices ill-trained for their work, the superiors careless, the sisters mutinous, the treatment of the sick remained rude and empirical. Women of sense and feeling, who wished to enrol themselves in these communities, were shocked and discouraged by such a state of things. A reform became absolutely necessary.

This was brought about, and very effectually, about the middle of the seventeenth century.

Louise de Marillac — better known as Madame Legras, when left a widow in the prime of life, could find, like Angela da Brescia, no better refuge from sorrow than in active duties, undertaken, “for the love of God.” She desired to join the Hospitalières, and was met at the outset by difficulties, and even horrors, which would have extinguished a less ardent vocation, a less determined will. She set herself to remedy the evils, instead of shrinking from them. She was assisted and encouraged in her good work by a man endued with great ability and piety, enthusiasm equal, and moral influence even superior, to her own. This was the famous Vincent de Paul, who had been occupied for years with a scheme to reform thoroughly the prisons and the hospitals of France. In Madame Legras he found a most efficient coadjutor. With her charitable impulses and religious enthusiasm, she united qualities not always, not often, found in union with them: a calm and patient temperament, and that administrative faculty, indispensable in those who are called to such privileged work. She was particularly distinguished by a power of selecting and preparing the instruments, and combining the means, through which she was to carry out her admirable purpose. With Vincent de Paul and Madame Legras was associated another person, Madame Goussaut, who besieged the Archbishop of Paris till what was refused to reason was granted to importunity, and they were permitted to introduce various improvements into the administration of the hospitals. Vincent de Paul and Louise Legras succeeded at last in constituting, not on a new, but on a renovated basis, the order of Hospitalières, since known as the Sisterhood of Charity. A lower class of sisters were trained to act under the direction of the more intelligent and educated women. Within twenty years this new community had two hundred houses and hospitals; in a few years more it had spread over all Europe. Madame Legras died in 1660. Already before her death the women prepared and trained under her instructions, and under the direction of Vincent de Paul (and here we have another instance of the successful communion of labor), had proved their efficiency on some extraordinary occasions. In the campaigns of 1652 and 1658 they were sent to the field of battle, in groups of two and four together, to assist the wounded. They were invited into the besieged towns to take charge of the military hospitals. They were particularly conspicuous at the siege of Dunkirk, and in the military hospitals established by Anne of Austria at Fontainebleau. When the plague broke out in Poland in 1672, they were sent to direct the hospitals at Warsaw, and to take charge of the orphans, and were thus introduced into Eastern Europe; and, stranger than all, they were even sent to the prison-infirmaries where the branded *forçats* and condemned felons lay cursing and writhing in their fetters. This was a mission for Sisters of Charity which may startle the refined, or confined, notions of Englishwomen in the nineteenth cen-

tury. It is not, I believe, generally known in this country that the same experiment has been lately tried, and with success, in the prisons of Piedmont, where the Sisters were first employed to nurse the wretched criminals perishing with disease and despair ; afterwards, and during convalescence, to read to them, to teach them to read and to knit, and in some cases to sing. The hardest of these wretches had probably some remembrance of a mother's voice and look thus recalled, or he could at least feel gratitude for sympathy from a purer, higher nature. As an element of reformation, I might almost say of regeneration, this use of the feminine influence has been found efficient where all other means had failed.

At the commencement of the French Revolution the Sisterhood of Charity had four hundred and twenty-six houses in France, and many more in other countries ; the whole number of women then actively employed was about six thousand. During the Reign of Terror, the superior (Mdlle. Duleau), who had become a Sister of Charity at the age of nineteen, and was now sixty, endeavored to keep the society together, although suppressed by the government ; and, in the midst of the horrors of that time — when so many nuns and ecclesiastics perished miserably — it appears that the feeling of the people protected these women, and I do not learn that any of them suffered public or personal outrage. As soon as the Consular government was established, the indispensable Sisterhood was recalled by a decree of the Minister of the Interior.

I cannot resist giving you a few passages from the preamble to this edict, — certainly very striking and significant, — as I find it quoted in a little book on “Hospitals and Sisterhoods” now before me. It begins thus :

“ Seeing that the services rendered to the sick can only be properly administered by those whose vocation it is, and who do it in the spirit of love ; —

“ Seeing, further, that, among the hospitals of the Republic, those are in all ways best served wherein the female attendants have adhered to the noble example of their predecessors, whose only object was to practise a boundless love and charity ; —

“ Seeing that the members still existing of this society are now growing old, so that there is reason to fear that an order which is a glory to the country may shortly become extinct ; —

“ It is decreed that the Citoyenne Duleau, formerly Superior of the Sisters of Charity, is authorized to educate girls for the care of the hospitals,” &c.

Previous to the Revolution, the chief military hospitals, and the naval hospitals at Brest, Saint-Malo, and Cherbourg, had been placed under the management of the Sisters of Charity. During the Reign of Terror, those Sisters who refused to quit their habit and religious bond were expelled ; but, as soon as order was restored, they were recalled by the naval and military authorities, and returned to their respective hospitals, where their reëpearance was hailed with rejoicing, and even with tears. At present the naval hospitals at Toulon and Marseilles, in addition to those I have mentioned, are served by these women, acting *with*, as well as *under*, authority.

The whole number of women included in these charitable orders was, in the year 1848, at least twelve thousand. They seem to have a quite marvellous ubiquity. I have myself met with them not only at Paris, Vienna, Milan, Turin, Genoa, but at Montreal, Quebec, and Detroit ; on the confines of civilization ; in Ireland, where cholera and famine were raging. Everywhere, from

the uniform dress, and a certain similarity in the placid expression, and quiet deportment, looking so like each other, that they seemed, whenever I met them, to be but a multiplication of one and the same person. In all the well-trained Sisters of Charity I have known, whether Protestant or Roman Catholic, I have found a mingled bravery and tenderness, if not by nature, by habit; and a certain tranquil self-complacency, arising, not from self-applause, but out of that very abnegation of self which had been adopted as the rule of life.

The Paris hospitals are so admirably organized by the religious women, who, in almost every instance, share in the administration so far as regards the care of the sick, that I have often been surprised that hitherto the numbers of our medical men who have studied at Paris have not made any attempts to introduce a better system of female nursing into the hospitals at home. But they appear to have regarded everything of the kind with despair or indifference.

In my former lecture, I mentioned several of the most famous of these hospitals. During my last visit to Paris, I visited an hospital which I had not before seen, — the hospital Laborissière, — which appeared to me a model of all that a civil hospital ought to be, — clean, airy, light, and lofty; above all, cheerful. I should observe that generally, in the hospitals served by Sisters of Charity, there is ever an air of cheerfulness caused by their own sweetness of temper and voluntary devotion to their work. At the time that I visited this hospital, it contained six hundred and twelve patients, three hundred men and three hundred and twelve women, in two ranges of building divided by a very pretty garden. The whole interior management is entrusted to twenty-five trained Sisters of the same Order as those who serve the Hôtel-Dieu. There are besides about forty servants, men and women, — men to do the rough work, and male nurses to assist in the men's wards under the superintendence of the Sisters. There are three physicians and two surgeons in constant attendance, a steward or comptroller of accounts, and other officers. To complete this picture, I must add that the hospital Laborissière was founded by a lady, a rich heiress, a married lady, too, whose husband, after her death, carried out her intentions to the utmost with zeal and fidelity. She had the assistance of the best architects in France to plan her building; medical and scientific men had aided her with their counsels. What the feminine instinct of compassion had conceived, was by the manly intellect planned and ordered, and again by female aid administered. In all its arrangements this hospital appeared to me a perfect example of the combined working of men and women.

In contrast with this splendid foundation, I will mention another not less admirable in its way.

When I was at Vienna, I saw a small hospital, belonging to the Sisters of Charity there. The beginning had been very modest, two of the Sisters having settled in a small old house. Several of the adjoining buildings were added one after the other, connected by wooden corridors: the only new part which had any appearance of being adapted to its purpose, was the infirmary, in which were fifty-two patients, — twenty-six men and twenty-six women, — besides nine beds for cholera. There were fifty Sisters, of whom one half were employed in the house, and the other half were going their rounds amongst the poor, or nursing the sick in private houses. There was a nursery for infants, whose mothers were at work; a day-school for one hundred and fifty girls, in which only knitting and sewing were taught; all clean, orderly, and, above all,

cheerful. There was a dispensary, where two of the Sisters were employed in making up prescriptions, homœopathic and allopathic. There was a large, airy kitchen, where three of the Sisters, with two assistants, were cooking. There were two priests and two physicians. So that, in fact, under this roof we had the elements, on a small scale, of an English workhouse ; but very different was the spirit which animated it.

I saw at Vienna another excellent hospital, for women alone, of which the whole administration and support rested with the ladies of the Order of St. Elizabeth. These are *cloistered*, that is, not allowed to go out of their home to nurse the sick and poor ; nor have they any schools ; but all sick women who apply for admission are taken in without any questions asked, so long as there is room for them — cases of childbirth excepted. At the time I visited this hospital, it contained ninety-two patients ; about twenty were cases of cholera. There were sixteen beds in each ward, over which two Sisters presided. The dispensary, which was excellently arranged, was entirely managed by two of the ladies. The Superior told me that they have always three or more Sisters preparing for their profession under the best apothecaries ; and there was a large garden, principally of medicinal and kitchen herbs. Nothing could exceed the purity of the air, and the cleanliness, order, and quiet, everywhere apparent.

In the great civil hospital at Vienna, one of the largest I have ever seen, — larger, even, than the *Hôtel-Dieu*, at Paris, — I found that the Sisters of Charity were about to be introduced. One of my friends there, a distinguished naturalist and philosopher, as well as physician, told me that the disorderly habits and the want of intelligence in the paid female nurses, had induced him to join with his colleagues in inviting the coöperation of the religious Sisters, though it was at first rather against their will. In the hospital of St. John, at Salzburg, the same change had been found necessary.

The hospital of St. John, at Vercelli, which I had the opportunity of inspecting minutely, left a strong impression on my mind. At the time I visited it, it contained nearly four hundred patients. There was, besides, in an adjacent building, a school and hospital for poor children. The whole interior economy of these two hospitals was under the management of eighteen women, with a staff of assistants both male and female. The Superior, a very handsome, intelligent woman, had been trained at Paris, and had presided over this provincial hospital for eleven years. There was the same cheerfulness which I have had occasion to remark in all institutions where the religious and feminine elements were allowed to influence the material administration ; and everything was exquisitely clean, airy, and comfortable. In this instance, the dispensary (*Pharmacie*) was managed by apothecaries, and not by the women.

Now, in contrast with this hospital, I will describe a famous hospital at Turin. It is a recent building, with all the latest improvements, and considered, in respect to fitness for its purpose, as a *chef-d'œuvre* of architecture. The contrivances and material appliances for the sick and convalescent were exhibited to me as the wonder and boast of the city ; certainly they were most ingenious. The management was in the hands of a committee of gentlemen ; under them a numerous staff of priests and physicians. Two or three female servants of the lowest class were sweeping and cleaning. In the convalescent wards I saw a great deal of card-playing. All was formal, cold, clean, and



silent ; no cheerful kindly faces, no soft low voices, no light active figures, were hovering round. I left the place with a melancholy feeling, shared, as I found, by those who were with me. One of them, an accomplished physician, felt and candidly acknowledged the want of female influence here.

One of the directors of the great military hospital at Turin told me that he regarded it as one of the best deeds of his life, that he had recommended and carried through the employment of the Sisters of Charity in this institution. Before the introduction of these ladies, the sick soldiers had been nursed by orderlies sent from the neighboring barracks — men chosen because they were unfit for other work. The most rigid discipline was necessary to keep them in order ; and the dirt, neglect, and general immorality, were frightful. Any change was, however, resisted by the military and medical authorities, till the invasion of the cholera ; then the orderlies became, most of them, useless, distracted, and almost paralyzed with terror. Some devoted Sisters of Charity were introduced in a moment of perplexity and panic ; then all went well — propriety, cleanliness, and comfort prevailed. “No day passes,” said my informant, “that I do not bless God for the change which I was the humble instrument of accomplishing in this place !”

Very similar was the information I received relative to the naval hospital at Genoa ; but I had not the opportunity of visiting it.

Another excellent hospital at Turin, that of St. John, contained, when I visited it, four hundred patients, a nearly equal number of men and women. There were, besides, a separate ward for sick children, and two wards containing about sixty “incurables” — the bedridden and helpless poor, of the same class which find refuge in our workhouses. The whole of this large establishment was under the management of twenty-two religious women, with a staff of about forty-five assistants, men and women, and a large number of medical men and students. All was clean, and neat, and cheerful. I was particularly struck by the neatness with which the food was served ; men brought it up in large trays, but the ladies themselves distributed it. Some friends of the poor sick were near the beds. I remember being touched by the sight of a little dog, which, with its fore paws resting on the bed, and a pathetic, wistful expression in its drooping face, kept its eyes steadfastly fixed on the sick man ; a girl was kneeling beside him, to whom one of the Sisters was speaking words of comfort.

In this hospital and others I found an excellent arrangement for the night-watch. It was a large sentry-box, of an octagon-shape, looking each way, the upper part all of glass, but furnished with curtains ; and on a kind of dresser or table were arranged writing materials, all kinds of medicine and restoratives which might be required in haste, and a supply of linen, napkins, etc. Here two sisters watched all night long ; here the accounts were kept and the private business of the wards carried on in the daytime. A certain degree of privacy was thus secured for the ladies on duty when necessary. The Superior, whom we should call the matron, was an elderly woman, wearing the same simple, convenient religious dress as the others, and only recognized by the large bunch of keys at her girdle.

The Marchese A——, one of the governors of the *Hospice de la Maternité*, described to me in terms of horror the state in which he had found the establishment when under the management of a board of governors who employed hired matrons and nurses. At last, in despair, he sent for some trained Sisters,



ten of whom, with a Superior, now directed the whole in that spirit of cheerfulness, and unremitting attention, which belongs to them. The M particularly dwelt on their economy. "We cannot," said he, "give th limited means (*des fonds à discretion*), for these good ladies think i should go to the poor ; but if we allow them a fixed sum, we find that ti do more with that sum than we could have believed possible, and they a beyond it ; they are admirable accountants and economists."

#### LUNATIC ASYLUMS.

With regard to the employment of women in the lunatic asylums, I ca say that I have the testimony of men of large experience that feminin influence, presence, would in many cases be most beneficial in the male v Of course there are certain cases in which it would be dangerous, ina ble ; but it is their opinion that in most cases it would have a soothing tary, harmonizing effect. In reference to this subject let me mention with whom I had the honor to be personally acquainted. She is a native United States, and has given her attention for many years to the mana of the insane, and the improvement of mad-houses. She has travelled through every part of the United States — from New York to Chicago New Orleans to Quebec. She has been the means of founding ninety asylums, and improving and enlarging a greater number. She has wor in power to listen to her, and is considered in her own country a fin authority on such subjects, just as Mrs. Fry was here in regard to prison Chisholm in regard to emigration, and Miss Carpenter in regard to j criminals. As to the use of trained women in lunatic asylums, I will more at present, but throw it out as a suggestion to be dealt with by pl gists, and entrusted to *time*.

"Gentle as angels' ministry,  
The guiding hand of love should be,  
Which seeks again those chords to bind  
Which human woe hath rent apart, —  
To heal again the wounded mind,  
And bind anew the broken heart.  
The hand which tunes to harmony  
The cunning harp whose strings are riven,  
Must move as light and quietly  
As that meek breath of summer heaven  
Which woke of old its melody ; —  
And kindness to the dim of soul,  
Whilst aught of rude and stern control  
The clouded heart can deeply feel,  
Is welcome as the odors fanned  
From some unseen and flowering land  
Around the weary seaman's keel !"

\* Of the Salpêtrière, Howard says that, at the time of his visit (1776), the whole hou kept clean and quiet by the great attention of the religious women who served it ; b terribly crowded, containing more than five thousand poor, sick, and insane persons."

Again : "Here (at Ghent) is a foundation belonging to the Béguines for the resu twelve men who are insane, and for sick and aged women. The insane have, when r assistance from their own sex ; and the tenderness with which both these and the poe are treated by the Sisters, gave me no little pleasure." — *Howard on Prisons*, p. 145.

## PRISONS AND REFORMATORY SCHOOLS.

Howard, — well named the Good, — when inquiring into the state of prisons, about the middle of the last century, found many of those in France, bad as they generally were, far superior to those in our own country ; and he attributes it to the employment and intervention of women “in a manner,” he says, “which had no parallel in England.” In Paris, he tells us, there were religious women “authorized to take care that the sick prisoners were properly attended to ; and who furnished the felons in the dungeons with clean linen and medicine, and performed kind offices to the prisoners in general.” This, you will observe, was at a period when in England felons, debtors, and untried prisoners, were dying by inches of filth, and disease, and despair.

Forty years after the publication of Howard's “State of Prisons,” what was the state of the greatest prison in England ? When Elizabeth Fry ventured into that “den of wild beasts,” as it was called, the female ward in Newgate, about three hundred women were found crammed together, begging, swearing, drinking, fighting, gambling, dancing, and dressing up in men's clothes, and two jailers set to watch them, who stood jeering at the door, literally afraid to enter. Elizabeth Fry would have been as safe in the men's wards as among her own sex ; she would certainly have exercised there an influence as healing, as benign, as redeeming ; but she did well in the first instance, and in the *then* state of public feeling, to confine her efforts to the miserable women.\*

In the General Report to the Minister of the Interior on the state of the prisons in Piedmont, it is said :

“It is an indisputable fact that the prisons which are served by the Sisters are the best-ordered, the most cleanly, and in all respects the best-regulated, in the country ; hence it is to be desired that the number should be increased ; and this is the more desirable because, where the Sisters are not established, the criminal women are under the charge of jailers of the other sex, which ought not to be tolerated.”

To this I add the testimony of the minister himself, from a private communication. “Not only have we experienced the advantage of employing the Sisters of Charity in the prisons, in the supervision of the details, in distributing food, preparing medicines, and nursing the sick in the infirmaries ; but we find that the influence of these ladies on the minds of the prisoners, when recovering from sickness, has been productive of the greatest benefit, as leading to permanent reform in many cases, and a better frame of mind always ; for this reason, among others, we have given them every encouragement.”

In the Reformatory prison at Neudorf is an experiment which, as yet, has only had a three years' trial, but it has so completely succeeded up to this time, that they are preparing to organize eleven other prisons on the same plan. From a conversation I had with one of the government officers, I could under-

\* The act of parliament, procured through Mrs. Fry's influence, ordered the appointment of matrons and female officers in all our prisons ; but no provision has been made for their proper training, nor are the qualifications at all defined.

My idea is, that besides a superior order of female superintendents, we should have lady visitors also, as it is like an infusion of fresh life and energy ; but I do not think that such visiting should be confined to the female wards.

larged, and organised as a prison as well as a penitentiary; the original system being strictly adhered to, and the same management retained.

At the time that I visited it, this prison consisted of several divisions, and a large garden enclosed by high walls. The inmates were divided into three classes completely separated. The first were the criminals, desperate characters, brought there from the prisons at Vienna, and refused of those prisons. They had been brought there six or eight years, fettered hand and foot, and guarded by soldiers and policemen.

The second class, drafted from the first, were called the penitents; they were allowed to assist in the house, to cook, and to wash, and to work in the garden, which last was a great boon. There were more than fifty of this class.

The third class were the voluntaries, those who, when their term of imprisonment and penitence had expired, preferred remaining in the house, allowed to do so. They were employed in work of which a part of the proceeds were retained for their benefit. There were about twelve or fourteen of this class. The whole number of criminals then in the prison exceeded two hundred. They expected more the next day.

To manage these unhappy, disordered, perverted creatures, there were several women, assisted by three chaplains, a surgeon, and a physician; and several men resided in the house, but visited it every day. The soldiers and officers, who had been sent in the first instance as guards and jailers, had been dismissed. The dignity, good sense, patience, and tenderness, of this system of management were extraordinary. The ventilation and the cleanliness were perfect, while the food, beds, and furniture, were of the very best. The medical supervision was important, where there was as much dreadful physical disease — as there was of moral disease, crime and misery. There was a surgeon and physician, who visited daily. There was a dispensary under the care of two Sisters, who acted as chief nurses and apothecaries. One of these was busy with the sick, the other went round with me. She was a little, active woman, not more than two or three and thirty, with a sweet face, and bright, kind, dark eyes. She had been two years in the prison and had previously received a careful training of five years — three years of general duties of her vocation, and two years of medical training.

arrived, and those who had been admitted into the class of penitents, was extraordinary. The first were either stupid, gross, and vacant, or absolutely frightful from the predominance of evil propensities. The latter were at least humanized.

When I expressed my astonishment that so small a number of women could manage such a set of wild and wicked creatures, the answer was, "If we want assistance, we shall have it ; but it is as easy, with our system, to manage two hundred or three hundred as one hundred or fifty." She then added, devoutly, "The power is not in ourselves ; it is granted from above." It was plain that she had the most perfect faith in that power, and in the text which declared all things possible to faith.

We must bear in mind that here men and women were acting together ; that in all the regulations, religious and sanitary, there was mutual aid, mutual respect, an interchange of experience ; but the women were subordinate only to the chief civil and ecclesiastical authority ; the internal administration rested with them.\*

The extreme difficulty of finding masters at the best of all our reformatory schools, that at Redhill, was the subject discussed in a recent meeting of benevolent and intelligent men, interested in this institution. I happened to be present. I heard the qualifications for a master to be set over these unhappy little delinquents thus described : He must have great tenderness and kindness of heart, great power of calling forth and sympathizing with the least manifestations of goodness or hopefulness ; quick perception of character ; great firmness, and judgment, and command of temper ; skill in some handicraft, as carpentering and gardening ; a dignified or at least attractive presence, and good manners, — the personal qualities and appearance being found of consequence to impress the boys with respect. Now it is just possible that all these rare and admirable qualities, some of which God has given in a larger degree to the woman and others to the man, might be found combined in one man ; but such a man has not yet been met with, and many such would hardly be found for a stipend of thirty pounds or forty pounds a year. Then, in this dilemma, instead of insisting on a combination of the *paternal* and the *maternal* qualifications in one person, might it not be possible, by associating some well-educated and well-trained women in the administration of these schools, to produce the required influences — the tenderness, the sympathy, the superior manners, and refined deportment, on one hand, and the firmness and energy, the manly government, and skill in handicrafts and gardening, on the other ? This solution was not proposed by any of the gentlemen who spoke ; it did not seem to occur to any one present ; and yet, is it not worth consideration ? At all events, I must express my conviction that, going on as they are now doing, without the combination of those influences which ought to represent in such a community the maternal and sisterly, as well as the paternal and fraternal, relations of the home, their efforts will be in vain ; their admirable institution will fall to

\* I hope it will be remembered here, and in other parts of this essay, that I am not arguing for any particular system of administration, or discipline, or kind or degree of punishment ; but merely for this principle, that, whatever the system selected as the best, it should be carried out by a due admixture of female influence and management combined with the man's government.

pieces sooner or later, and people will attribute such a result to every possible cause except the real one.

When I was at Turin, I visited an institution for the redemption of "unfortunate girls" (as they call themselves,\* poor creatures!) which appeared to me peculiarly successful. I did not consider it perfect, nor could all its details be imitated here. Yet some of the *natural* principles, recognized and carried out, appeared to me most important. It seemed to have achieved for female victims and delinquents what Mettrai has done for those of the other sex.

This institution (called at Turin *il Refugio*, the Refuge) was founded nearly thirty years ago by a "good Christian," whose name was not given to me, but who still lives, a very old man. When his means were exhausted, he had recourse to the Marquise de Barol, who has from that time devoted her life, and the greater part of her possessions, to the objects of this institution.

In the Memoirs of Mrs. Fry† there may be found a letter which Madame de Barol addressed to her on the subject of this institution and its objects, when it had existed for three or four years only. The letter is dated 1829, and is very interesting. Madame de Barol told me candidly, in 1855, that in the commencement she had made mistakes; she had been too severe. It had required twenty years of reflection, experience, and the most able assistance, to work out her purposes.

The institution began on a small scale, with few inmates. It now covers a large space of ground, and several ranges of buildings for various departments, all connected, and yet most carefully separated. There are several distinct gardens enclosed by these buildings, and the green trees and flowers give an appearance of cheerfulness to the whole.

There is, first, a refuge for casual and extreme wretchedness. A certificate from a priest or a physician is required, but often dispensed with. I saw a child brought into this place by its weeping and despairing mother—a child about ten years old, and in a fearful state. There was no certificate in this case, but the wretched little creature was taken in at once. There is an infirmary, admirably managed by a good physician and two medical Sisters of a religious order. There are also convalescent wards. These parts of the building are kept separate, and the inmates carefully classed, all the younger patients being in a separate ward.

In the penitentiary and schools, forming the second department, the young girls and children are kept distinct from the elder ones, and those who had lately entered from the others. I saw about twenty girls under the age of fifteen, but only a few together in one room. Only a few were tolerably handsome; many looked intelligent and kindly. In one of these rooms I found a tame thrush hopping about, and I remember a girl with a soft face crumbling some bread for it, saved from her dinner. Reading, writing, plain work, and embroidery, are taught; also cooking and other domestic work. A certain number assisted by rotation in the large, lightsome kitchens and the general service of the house, but not till they had been there some months, and had received badges for good conduct. There are three gradations of these badges of merit, earned by various terms

\* If you ask a good-looking girl in an hospital, or the infirmary of a workhouse, what is her condition of life, she will perhaps answer, "If you please, ma'am, I'm an unfortunate girl," in a tone of languid indifference, as if it were a profession like any other.

† Vol. ii., p. 39.

of probation. It was quite clear to me that these badges were worn with pleasure. Whenever I fixed my eyes upon the little bits of red or blue ribbon attached to the dress, and smiled approbation, I was met by a responsive smile, sometimes by a deep, modest blush. The third and highest order of merit, which was a certificate of good conduct and steady industry during three years at least, conferred the privilege of entering an order destined to nurse the sick in the infirmary, or entrusted to keep order in the small classes. They had also a still higher privilege. And now I come to a part of the institution which excited my strongest sympathy and admiration. Appended to it is an infant hospital for the children of the very lowest orders — children born diseased or deformed, or maimed by accidents, — epileptic, or crippled. In this hospital were thirty-two poor, suffering infants, carefully tended by such of the penitents as had earned this privilege. On a rainy day I found these poor little things taking their daily exercise in a long airy corridor. Over the clean shining floor was spread temporarily a piece of coarse gray drugget, that their feet might not slip ; and so they were led along, creeping, crawling, or trying to walk or run, with bandaged heads and limbs, carefully and tenderly helped and watched by the nurses, who were themselves under the supervision of one of the religious Sisters already mentioned.

There is a good dispensary, well supplied with common medicines, and served by a well-instructed Sister of Charity, with the help of one of the inmates whom she had trained.

Any inmate is free to leave the Refuge whenever she pleases, and may be received a second time, but not a third time.

I was told that when these girls leave the institution, after a probation of three or four years, there is no difficulty in finding them good places as servants, cooks, washerwomen, and even nurses ; but all do not leave it. Those who, after a residence of six years, preferred to remain, might do so. They were devoted to a religious and laborious life, and lived in a part of the building which had a sort of conventual sanctity and seclusion. They are styled "*les Madeleines*" (Magdalens). I saw sixteen of such, and I had the opportunity of observing them. They were all superior in countenance and organization, and belonged apparently to a better class. They were averse to reëntering the world, had been disgusted and humiliated by their bitter experience of vice, and disliked or were unfitted for servile occupations. They had a manufactory of artificial flowers, were skilful embroiderers and needlewomen, and supported themselves by the produce of their work. They were no longer objects of pity or dependent on charity ; they had become objects of respect, and more than respect, of reverence. One of them, who had a talent for music, Madame de Barol had caused to be properly instructed ; she was the organist of the chapel and the music-mistress ; she had taught several of her companions to sing. A piano stood in the centre of the room, and they executed a little concert for us : everything was done easily and quietly, without effort or display. When I looked in the faces of these young women, — the eldest was not more than thirty, — so serene, so healthful, and in some instances so dignified, I found it difficult to recall the depth of misery, degradation, and disease, out of which they had risen.

The whole number of inmates was about one hundred and forty, without reckoning the thirty-two sick children. Madame de Barol said that this infant

hospital was a most efficient means of thorough reform : it called out what was best in the disposition of the penitents, and was indeed a test of the character and temper.\*

If this institution had been more in the country, and if some of the penitents (or patients), whose robust *physique* seemed to require it, could have been provided with plenty of work in the open air, such as gardening, keeping cows or poultry, etc., I should have considered the arrangements, for a Catholic country, perfect. They are calculated to fulfil all the conditions of moral and physical convalescence ; early rising ; regular, active, *useful* employment ; thorough cleanliness ; the strictest order ; an even, rather cool, temperature ; abundance of light and fresh air ; and, more than these, religious hope wisely and kindly cultivated ; companionship, cheerfulness, and the opportunity of exercising the sympathetic and benevolent affections.

If these conditions could be adopted in some of the female penitentiaries at home, I think failure would be less common ; but, since the difficulty of redemption is found to be so great, should we not take the more thought for prevention ? Among the causes of the evil are some which I should not like to touch upon here ; but there are others, and not the least important, which may be discussed without offence. The small payment and the limited sphere of employment allotted to the women of the working-classes are mentioned by a competent witness as one of the causes of vice leading to crime. " Much I believe would be done towards securing the virtue of the female sex, and therefore towards the general diminution of profligacy, if the practical injustice were put an end to by which women are excluded from many kinds of employment for which they are naturally qualified. The general monopoly which the members of the stronger sex have established for themselves, is surely most unjust, and, like all other kinds of injustice, recoils on its perpetrators."† The same writer observes, in another place : " The payment for the labor of females in this country is often so small as to demand, for obtaining an honest living, a greater power of endurance and self-control than can reasonably be expected."

\* The above account of the Penitentiary at Turin is from memoranda made on the spot, and from verbal information in November, 1855.

I have since received (while this sheet is going through the press) a letter from a very accomplished and benevolent ecclesiastic, containing some further particulars relative to Madame de Barol's Institution. It appears that the number of inmates is at present two hundred.

The Refuge itself, and the ground on which it stands, were purchased by the government, after Madame de Barol had expended a large sum of money in the original arrangements. The government granted 10,000fr. a year to the necessary expenses, and have since made over the Penitentiary to the Commonalty of Turin ; but the hospital for the children, and the convent with the gardens adjoining, have been erected on land belonging to Madame de Barol, and at her sole expense. The infant hospital contains eighty beds. The whole institution is managed by Madame de Barol, and she has the entire control of the funds which the city has placed at her disposal, in addition to those contributed by herself.

† On Crime, its Amount, Causes, and Remedies, by F. Hill, p. 85.



## XVIII. PUBLIC INSTRUCTION IN SARDINIA.

BY VINCENZO BOTTA.\*

Late Professor of Philosophy in the Colleges of Sardinia.

---

**THE** system of public instruction in Sardinia embraces three degrees or departments, viz.: I. Primary Instruction. II. Secondary Instruction. III. Superior Instruction.

### I. PRIMARY INSTRUCTION.

The department of primary instruction includes the infant asylums and the common schools, both inferior and superior, for boys and girls.

**INFANT ASYLUMS.**—The first infant asylum in Sardinia was founded in Turin in 1825, by private benevolence. Since 1841, these institutions have rapidly increased under the direction of private individuals and associations, and they now number eighty, and contain about ten thousand children of both sexes, who are gratuitously admitted, instructed and fed; they are brought to the school early in the morning, and taken home late in the evening. They are admitted at the age of two years, and can remain in the asylum until they reach the age of six or seven,

The programme of instruction consists of three parts, corresponding to the three classes into which the pupils are divided. *In the first class* they are taught to pronounce their own names, to recite the Lord's Prayer, the Ave Maria, and the first part of the catechism. They are also taught numeration, with the simplest problems of mental arithmetic, with mechanical illustrations; the first nine numeral figures, the names of portions of the human body and of other objects adapted to their comprehension. They read the vowels and the simplest syllabic combinations. *In the second class* the teaching of prayers and of the catechism is continued, with sacred narratives; more advanced exercises in arithmetic, written and mental, are given, syllables are continued, entire words read, and names of various productions of nature and art are learned. *In the third class* the studies of the preceding classes are continued and amplified, with the addition of sacred history, rudiments of fractions, the tables of weights and measures, reading and composition of phrases, singing,\* and gymnastic exercises.

The infant asylums are sustained entirely by private subscriptions, by subsidies from the municipalities, or by donations from other charitable institutions. The government has the right of inspection and some degree of direction. The teachers, who for the most part are women, are required to have the certificate of capacity from the appointed authorities.

---

\* Prof. Botta is the author, in connection with Dr. Parola, of an elaborate treatise on Public Instruction in Germany,—“*Del Pubblico Insegnamento in Germania*. Turin, 1851. 1022 pp No. 9—[Vol. III., No. 2.]—33.

**COMMON SCHOOLS.**—In 1772, a decree was published establishing primary schools, but with the sole object of preparing boys for the Latin schools, and they were strictly confined to the study of the first elements of the Italian language. The occupation of Sardinia by the republican government of France at the close of the last century, gave a decided impulse to popular instruction. Every township was compelled to establish a common school for boys, in order to give to them instruction in reading, writing, and in the first elements of Italian, Latin, and French grammar. But on the restoration of the former government in 1814, all the laws and provisions which had been made were abolished, and public education was again entirely neglected, and regarded as revolutionary and dangerous. After the revolution of 1821, an attempt was made to reestablish the public schools, and a decree was issued by which all the chief boroughs, and, as far as possible, all the townships were obliged to support free schools for teaching children reading, writing, arithmetic, christian doctrine, and the elements of the Italian language; but owing to the suspicions of the government and to the inability of its officers, this decree was neutralized, and little progress was made.

Meanwhile in all the countries of Europe pedagogical questions had assumed a new importance, and were treated in their social and political aspects by men of the highest ability. In Sardinia the opposition of the Jesuits to the infant asylums and popular schools had united all the liberals, who considered the education of the people as the first step toward independence, and who labored for it with all the enthusiasm that love of country and love of freedom could inspire. Under their combined influence, the government was obliged to make many provisions for the improvement and the extension of popular schools, and in 1844, established at Turin the first normal school for the education of teachers, which was soon followed by others in different cities.

The constitution granted in 1848 to the Sardinian states by Charles Albert, began a new era in the progress of the country, and securing political freedom, produced a happy necessity of a new and better system of public education. It prepared the way for the law published in the same year, which again provided for a free school in every township, and furnished a new programme and better methods for popular instruction.

According to this organization the common schools are divided into the inferior and superior. Each township is obliged to establish and support at least one inferior school; and none can establish a Latin school if it has not provided for a superior common school.

**THE INFERIOR COMMON SCHOOLS** are divided into two classes, each of which has a course of one year. *In the first year* the children are taught spelling, reading, exercises of nomenclature from the first reading book, vowels and syllables first copied from the slate, and afterward written from dictation; numeration and calculation on the numeral frame, figures as high as one hundred; geometrical definitions and the drawing of right and curved lines, circles, and polygons, the first part of the catechism, and narratives from sacred history. *In the second year* the pupils receive instruction in the Italian language, the

first parts of speech and the conjugation of the verbs; they pass to the second reading book, into exercises in Italian, and go through the simplest rules of arithmetic with numbers as high as ten thousand. They continue the study and drawing of geometrical figures, plain and solid, the measure of squares and rectangles, parallelograms and triangles; exercises in the catechism and sacred history.

The Sardinian states contain a population of about five millions. The Continental Kingdom is divided into 39 provinces, which are subdivided into 3099 townships. In these in 1848, there were 8829 inferior public schools; and in 1856, 5622. The island of Sardinia has a population of 448,112, with only 6325 pupils in the elementary schools.

The number of private inferior schools is four hundred and ninety; the cost of the public inferior schools exceeds two millions of francs, of which one million and a half is given by the townships for the support of their own schools, and the remainder by private donations or charitable institutions. The government gives about 175 thousand francs, to be divided among the poorer townships. The townships are obliged to tax themselves for the support of their schools, and if they fail in this, the government itself imposes upon them the necessary tax.

The teachers of these schools number about six thousand. They are appointed by the municipalities subject to the approbation of the scholastic authorities; from which they must receive the certificate of capacity. Their salaries are different according to the different townships in which they are appointed.

THE PRIMARY SUPERIOR SCHOOLS complete the system of popular instruction. They are divided also into two courses of one year each, so that a complete course occupies four years. These schools have all been organized since 1848. Though there is no obligation upon the townships to establish the superior schools, yet in 1856, we find 239 of these institutions sustained entirely by them.

*In the first year* of the superior school the pupils are instructed in the third part of the catechism, the continuation of sacred history, the analysis of propositions, definitions of analyzed objects, short compositions of narratives and letters, exercises in caligraphy, measures of cubes, parallelopipeds, prisms, and pyramids, the drawing of circles and of curves used in drawing solids, and the study of the map of the world; the division of the earth, a general knowledge of Europe, a particular knowledge of Italy, especially of Sardinia; calculation of decimal fractions, and the legal system of weights and measures. *In the second year* the instruction in the catechism is concluded; sacred history continued with the history of the church, syntax of phrases and periods, and grammatical rules applied to the works of some of the Italian classical writers, narratives from the history of Italy; the measure of spheres, cones and cylinders, the principal figures of geometry; the particular geography of Europe, the elements of physical science applied to the uses of life, to agriculture and industry, and to the explanation of the principal phenomena of nature.

INFERIOR AND SUPERIOR PRIMARY SCHOOLS FOR GIRLS.—Under the ab-

absolute government the education of women was not only entirely neglected, but considered superfluous and even dangerous. Before 1848, there were no institutions of learning for the daughters of the people, and those of the aristocracy received in the nunneries only a limited degree of instruction, pernicious in its effects and immoral in many of its results. After that time, the schools for the education of girls rapidly multiplied, and in 1856 the number of inferior schools exceeded 2792, and the superior 65. Besides these, there were many private schools established to counteract the influence of the nunneries. Since 1848, all the schools and the nunneries regarded as schools, have been submitted to the control of the government, and the teachers obliged to pass an examination from its officers and to obtain their certificate.

*In the inferior schools* for girls they are taught reading, writing, the elements of arithmetic and of the Italian language, and the catechism. *In the superior*, writing, grammar, domestic book-keeping, composition, geography, ancient and modern history, and christian doctrine.

The teachers are divided into three classes:—instructresses, teachers properly so called, and assistants. The two former are obliged to pass an examination before a committee appointed by the government. Since 1850, many municipalities and private associations have founded normal schools for the preparation of able teachers of the schools for girls. Custom, if not law, prescribes men for instructors of boys, and women for girls; the only exception to this rule is in the infant asylums.

There are also *popular schools for adults*, supported by the municipalities or by private philanthropy. They are open for the day, the evening, or on Sunday, and are either *elementary* or *superior*. In the first they are taught reading, writing, Italian, arithmetic, and the system of weights and measures. We find these elementary schools in almost all the townships of the average population. The superior schools of this class are found in the larger towns and cities, and their course of instruction includes Italian grammar, constitutional rights and duties, civil laws most in practical use, geography and history, domestic and rural economy, public and private hygiene, arithmetic applied to industry and commerce, book-keeping, the principles of geometry applied to agriculture, arts and trades, linear drawing, and the elements of natural sciences.

In regard to the method of teaching in the primary schools, the teachers are desired to follow the laws of the development of the human mind. In the best schools the method of Pestalozzi is adopted, which rests on the following basis:—1st. Religion, the universal principle, and common to all the branches of education. 2d. Morals and logic, the prominent principle of method. 3d. Education of man considered in his totality, and harmonious nature. 4th. Full development of the faculties, peculiar dispositions and individualities of each pupil. 5th. Union and order of the faculties and of the different departments of learning. 6th. Method of education entirely *positive*. 7th. *Intuition*, principal basis and means of instruction. 8th. Gradation of all the branches of education. 9th.

nion of the elements of both domestic and public education. 10th. human life considered as essential and universal means of education. It also recommended to the teachers to lead their pupils to self-instruction, to avoid every thing which can overcharge and confuse their memory, and to aid them in the gradual development of their faculties. Intellectual perception and observation ought to precede the analysis of the objects which are to be taught; reading and writing ought to be considered as means, not as an object of instruction; language as expression of human thought, and arithmetic as expression of human reasoning; the passage from the simplest and easiest ideas to more complex and difficult ones is considered as the fundamental principle of pedagogy.

**NORMAL SCHOOLS.**—These are called schools of method, as their object is to teach the method of instruction. The first school of this class was founded in 1844, for those who were afterward to become professors of method and to preside over schools for teachers. This school belongs to the University of Turin, and we shall speak of it elsewhere. In 1845 special schools for teachers were established in the principal cities of the kingdom, and their course is limited to the three months of autumnal vacations. They are *inferior* and *superior* as they give instruction to the teachers of these different classes. In the inferior schools of method there are three courses given by a professor and by two assistants; the former teaches method, the latter the objects of primary instruction. The teachers who have not yet obtained the certificate of capacity are obliged to attend these schools, and after their course to pass an examination.—The superior schools were first opened in 1850; they last four months and give an instruction appropriate to their object. Since 1845 about 150 of these temporary schools have been opened. The professors are appointed by the government, under whose direction and control these schools are. They are supported however by the provinces and townships, the local authorities of which have desired their establishment in the districts.

We find also in many cities schools of method for instruction of the teachers of girls; they are entirely supported by the municipal authorities. Their programme is different in different cities, extending in some only through three or four months, in others during the year, and one in Turin has a course of three years.

The cost of all the primary instruction, inferior and superior, including the schools of method, was in the year 1856, of 3,557,212 francs. The whole number of pupils in the winter of the same year was 343,227 or 138,540 boys and 139,687 girls; and in the summer 120,520 boys, and 9,025 girls.

**GOVERNMENT OF THE PRIMARY SCHOOLS.**—All the schools which we have now described are directed, under the authority of the minister of public instruction, by a general Board of elementary education, by provincial Boards, inspectors and local superintendents. The general Board presided over by the general inspector of the normal schools and of the primary instruction, and is composed of the following members, taken from the university of Turin. 1. Professors of method. 2. Professor of

philosophy. 3. Professor of belles-lettres. 4. Professor of mathematics. 5. Professor of natural sciences. 6. Professor of religion, in the national college of the same city. To this Board belongs the general direction of all the primary and normal schools of the kingdom, and under their authority, provincial boards are instituted in all the provinces. These are composed of the royal superintendent of the province, of the superintendent of education in the province, of the provincial inspector of the primary instruction, of two professors of the college of the city, of a normal teacher, and of two members of the provincial council. These provincial boards, the inspectors, and the local superintendents, who reside in all the central townships, form the connecting link between the schools of the townships, the provinces, and the central authority.

No one can teach in the primary schools, either public or private, without a certificate of competency from the government, given on the authority of a special committee appointed to examine the students of the normal schools. The government upon the nomination of the general board appoints the provincial inspectors, whose salary however is paid by the provinces. The municipalities nominate the teachers of their schools from among those who received the certificate of capacity; but the appointment to be valid must be confirmed by the provincial board.

It is unnecessary to enter into any criticism of the primary and normal schools of Sardinia; the system introduced in 1848 must be considered as a decided improvement upon the former institutions, and the country during the short period since its establishment has been greatly benefited. Yet experience has proved the system defective in some points, and the liberal party of the country is earnestly engaged in preparing reforms, which are required by the conditions of the people. Among these reforms it is proposed:

1st. To reduce the administration to a more simple system; and the Parliament has just now under consideration a new bill to this effect. 2d. To enforce the obligation of parents to send their children to school; as in the present system there is great negligence in this respect, and it is considered as a necessary step for securing the free institutions of the country, to provide by legal force for the education of the people. 3d. To establish better normal schools, with a course of two years for the teachers of the inferior school, and of three years for the teachers of the superior school. 4th. To declare teachers functionaries of the state, and after having taught for thirty years to be provided with a competent pension for the remainder of their lives. 5th. To increase the salaries of the teachers, so as to enable them to devote themselves entirely to their profession. 6th. To oblige the townships to establish not only inferior but superior schools both for boys and girls; besides Sunday and evening schools for the adults.

## II. SECONDARY INSTRUCTION.

The secondary schools are divided into the *classical* and *technical*.

---

\* See page      for recent revision of School System.



*col.* In the former the students are taught the ancient and modern languages and literatures, and the elements of philosophy and science, as a preparation for the studies of the university. In the latter the elementary course of instruction is continued, and the students prepared for the exercise of the different professions, for which the university makes no special provision.

**SECONDARY CLASSICAL SCHOOLS.**—To this department of instruction belong,—1st, *The Public Latin Schools.* 2d, *The Royal Colleges.* 3d, *The National Colleges.*

**PUBLIC LATIN SCHOOLS**—are those in which, without being supported by the government, a part or the whole of the Latin course is given with the course of philosophy and science. They are also called *municipal colleges*, and are *complete* when their programme embraces besides the four classes of the primary school, three courses of Latin grammar, two of rhetoric, and two of philosophy. They are *incomplete*, if the courses of rhetoric, or even of philosophy are omitted. The municipal colleges, either complete or incomplete, are supported by the municipalities, but the professors and teachers are appointed by the government, which directs their instruction, inspects their schools, prescribes their programmes, and text-books, and has the general control of them. These and especially the incomplete schools under the absolute government were multiplied in every township, and for a long time took the place of popular schools. They have always been of a very low standard and sustained only to keep alive the prejudices of the peasants, who believed that a knowledge of Latin was the highest attainment of wisdom, and by the interest of the clergy, who found in these schools the pupils for their seminaries. In 1850, there were yet 118 inferior Latin schools, of which only 14, gave a full course of grammar. There were besides, 47 incomplete colleges, in which two courses of rhetoric were given, and in a few of them a partial course of philosophy. Since that time a great number of these incomplete schools were abolished, and primary superior schools substituted for them.

**ROYAL COLLEGES.**—In every principal city there is a royal college, supported by the government, with the exception of the Latin inferior classes, in which the salaries of the teachers are paid by the municipality. The constitution of 1848 found six of these royal colleges in the hands of the Jesuits, viz.: one of the colleges of Turin, one of Genoa, the colleges of Nice, of Novara, of Voghera, of Chambery. In that year the Jesuits having been expelled from the country, the government organized those colleges according to a new system, upon which afterward all the royal colleges were organized, and called them national.

**NATIONAL COLLEGES.**—The improvements introduced by these institutions are felt in all branches of public instruction. They have prolonged the course of primary schools from two to four years, introduced into the system the superior course and improved the inferior. They have also improved the programme and the method of classical instruction, simplified the philosophical and scientific course, and organized a



new system of examination. While in the former colleges the instruction was given by eight or nine teachers, in the new ones the programme is carried out by fifteen or twenty professors, whose condition was bettered by the new organization.

*The course of Latin Grammar* is of three years, and it is divided into three parts, over each of which presides a professor. No one can enter into the first part of the course without having passed an examination on the subjects of the highest primary course. The promotion from a part of one course to another depends always on the result of the examination. The following is the programme of the grammatical course:—

*First year.*—Continuation of the Italian grammar, the first elements of the Latin grammar. Sacred history and arithmetic.

*Second year.*—Italian grammar, grammatical rules applied to the explanation of some selected pieces of classic writers from the reader. Elements of Latin grammar continued. Sacred history and arithmetic.

*Third year.*—Italian grammar; analysis of the thoughts of the classics. Latin grammar. Prosody.—Its application to the reading of classic writers. Religion. Arithmetic. Roman and Greek history, and ancient geography.

*Course of Rhetoric* with two professors. *First year.*—Composition, explanation of the text-book of rhetoric, Greek grammar, religion, history, mathematics. *Second year.*—Different kinds of composition, both in prose and poetry, explanation of the text-book of rhetoric in connection with the compositions which are under examination. Greek grammar.—Its rules applied to the explanation of some selected pieces from the reader. Religion, history, mathematics, French language. Besides their own professors, the courses of grammar and rhetorics have four professors in common for the instruction of religion, history, and geography, mathematics, and modern languages.

*Course of Philosophy* with two professors. *First year.*—Logic and metaphysics, algebra, plane and solid geometry, religion, Italian and Latin literature. *Second year.*—Moral philosophy with the exposition of constitutional duties and rights, physical science, religion and natural history; viz.: the elements of mineralogy, zoölogy, botany and geology. This course has in common with the preceding, the professor of religion, and besides the two professors of philosophy, has a professor of natural history. The lectures on Italian and Latin literature presented for the first year of this course are delivered by one of the professors of rhetoric. No student is admitted to the course of philosophy before the age of fourteen years.

After having pursued all the collegiate courses and passed successfully the examination of the second year of the course of philosophy, the students are allowed to present themselves for examination preparatory to their admission to the university. This examination is conducted by various committees, composed of professors from the university itself, and is scientific and literary. The first scientific examination consists of oral questions on logic, metaphysics, arithmetic, algebra, and geometry; the second of questions on moral philosophy and physical science. The

Literary examination is both written and oral. The written embraces a Latin and Italian composition. The oral runs through the examination of the written compositions, and of the questions suggested by them. It consists besides, of interpretation of the Latin and Italian classics, according to the programme, and of questions drawn from ancient and modern history. The questions of history, logic, metaphysics, arithmetic, algebra, geometry, moral philosophy and physical science, to which the candidate is requested to answer, are drawn from the programmes, which are prescribed by the government as guides for the lectures, to be delivered by the professors on the said subjects. The committee which is to preside over the examination of each student is also drawn by lot.

An entire liberty is left to the professors in selecting the methods of their teaching. Yet the greatest care is recommended in order to regulate the secondary instruction according to the laws of a rational methodology. The instruction of languages and especially of Latin is considered as a most essential means of mental training. It is not the language in itself which is considered of so great importance, but it is its eminently logical construction, which renders the Latin the most powerful instrument of general education. The study of this language must be directed in such a way as to make of it the expression of the genius and development of human thought. The analysis of the classic writers must give the interpretation of the great ideas of the Roman ages; the explanation of the orators and poets must present the living image of the works of art, of war, of politics, of the entire world, which has been under the dominion of Rome. This instruction is given in three degrees through the courses of grammar and of rhetoric, from etymology and syntax to the rules of different kinds of style. The former parts are taught in the course of grammar, the latter in the course of rhetoric, so that the great rule of method is observed through all that instruction, viz.: the passage from the known to the unknown, from the easy to the difficult, from the simple to the compound. The teachers are accustomed to unite the composition of easy and short sentences to the study of words in order to render more intellectual the etymological exercises. As soon as the pupils begin to learn how to compose those sentences, they are taught to translate from the Latin into Italian, and from Italian into Latin; in which exercises the teachers are requested to take particular care in showing to their classes the analogy of the two languages. Learning the etymology and syntax in the two first years of the grammatical course especially by practice and experience, in the third year the students are taught the science of those parts of the grammar, and learn how to apply the grammatical principles to the explanation and translation of the easiest Latin writers, like C. Nepos, Phædrus, the letters of Cæsar, Cicero, &c. Before learning the course of grammar they begin to translate Ovid, and to study the first elements of poetry.

In the course of rhetoric the instruction of Latin becomes more scientific, or rather is transformed into a study of philology and rhetoric. Compositions of different kinds become the task of every day; Livy,

Sallust, Tacitus, the orations of Cicero, Virgil, Horace, are taken for the daily reading, interpretation, and translation. The teachers are desired to dwell not so much on the beauties of the language, and on its character, as in showing the ways with which the writers unite together the different parts of speech, giving to their writings unity, order, and harmony.

To give more unity to this study, each professor of the grammatical course carries through all the course the full programme, so that the students passing from the first to the second part of their course, do not change their teacher, who follows them in their progress. The same thing must be said of the professors of rhetoric. While the school of Latin proposes to make Latin scholars, who are taught to speak and to write that language with purity and elegance, the school of Greek has a more limited object, viz.: of teaching the simple knowledge of the Greek writers. The method, however, of this instruction does not differ in its substance from that which is followed in teaching the Latin. The same method is applied to the Italian, which as the national language takes one of the most important parts in the programme of the secondary schools, in which the instruction of the primary course is continued and amplified. We might say that in the course of rhetoric, the national literature is studied rather than the language, which finds a complete instruction in the primary, superior, and grammar schools. Besides these languages, in the colleges generally, the pupils are taught French, in a few German, and in some, the English language. The method is left entirely to the discrimination of the teachers.

Mathematics form another branch of study which is considered of the most vital importance in the secondary courses. The courses of grammar return to the experimental and theoretical arithmetic, which has been a subject of instruction in the primary schools. But it is rather than mere repetition of the same study, a complement and perfection of elementary arithmetic, which in this course is treated not only in its determined quantities, both integral and fractionaries, but also as an expression of undetermined quantities, giving in this way to the pupils the first and fundamental principles of algebra. This subject is more enlarged in the course of rhetoric, in which the students are taught a more direct application of the arithmetical principles to the ordinary uses of domestic and commercial economy, and it becomes one of the two main studies of the first part of the course of philosophy, in which the knowledge acquired in the preceding schools is revived and amplified on its philosophical grounds, and completed with a thorough study of algebra and of plain and solid geometry. The complete programme of mathematical study as it is developed in the secondary schools follows this order:—idea of quantity and of number; system of enumeration; the four arithmetical operations on integral numbers; their reduction, and philosophical grounds; application of the rules to solution of problems; the properties of divisibility of integral numbers; division of numbers; fractions, their theory and principles; nature and character of fractions;

reduction of fractions to their simplest expression; the greatest common divisor; reduction of fractions to the same denominator. The rules of the first operations applied to fractions; alone and with integral numbers. Decimal fractions; system of their construction and enunciation; their addition, subtraction, multiplication, division; reduction of an ordinary fraction to a decimal one; periodical simple, and periodical mixed; transformation of fractions into others of same value, etc. Complex numbers, their addition, subtraction, multiplication, and division. The decimal metric system, which is the legal system of weights and measures of the country—its relation with the systems used in other countries. Difference between arithmetic and algebra; system of algebraical enumeration, main algebraical operations, rules, and their philosophical grounds. Powers of numbers, and their formation; extraction of square and cubic roots, both of integral and fractionary numbers—equations and their different degrees. Solution of equations of the first and the second degree, with one or more unknown quantities. Problems in relation with the theory of equations. Ratio and proportions. Properties of arithmetical and of geometrical proportions. Direct and inverted ratios. Rule of three and problems. Double rule of three. Rule of interest and its application to business, especially to loss and gain, to reduction of currencies, to fellowship, etc. Geometry is taught in the first year of the course of philosophy; but before that time the pupils received the fundamental ideas of that science, especially in the superior primary course. In the course of philosophy this teaching receives a complete development, in the following order. After having given the first and fundamental ideas, the professor of geometry considers in his lectures straight lines on one and the same plane, then he explains the theories, the theorems, and the problems on angles, perpendicular and oblique lines on triangles, on parallels, on polygons, on proportional lines, on similar polygons, and on the area of polygons; then proceeds to circles and straight lines on one and the same plane; and undertakes to develop the theorems and to solve the problems on the circumferences of the centers and the straight lines, which have some points in common; on the measure of angles, on the relations of straight lines which meet in and out of the circle; on regular polygons inscribed and circumscribed, and on the area of circle; after which he applies the theories to the solution both by analysis and synthesis to the most important geometrical problems. Then comes the study of planes, and of spaces ended by planes; of planes meeting straight lines; of dyhedron angles, of polyhedron angles, of polyhedrons in general, and especially of pyramid and prism, on volume of polyhedron on similar polyhedrons. Then cylinder, cone, sphere, their parts, properties, measure, volume of sphere, etc., and the application of the theories to practical problems.

History not less than mathematics takes an important place in the programme. The fundamental ideas of geography precede the teaching of this branch, and in the course of grammar the professor is desired to give to his pupils a clear knowledge of the earth and of its natural

divisions, using in their teaching maps and drawings. In the same time with geography is given the instruction of history by ethnographical process; the basis of the historical study is laid, however, in the history of Rome and Greece, to which the histories of all other ancient peoples are in some way connected. The history of Rome especially becomes one of the most important objects of all the instruction, as it is the foundation not only of modern civilization, but of all the history of Italy, to which the attention of the pupils is directed, as to the history of their own nation. This is divided into different periods, from the primitive immigrations to modern times. After having examined the different immigrations the professor considers the foundation of Rome, and follows its early development in religion, politics, and general civilization. Then he examines the causes of the Roman greatness in the republic, describing its constitution with the modifications which were gradually introduced in it, the conquests made through a century of war, the corruption, and the civil perturbations of the internal factions, pointing out the Gracchi, the war of Jugurtha, Marius and Sylla, Pompeius, Crassus, Cæsar, Cicero, Catilina, the first triumvirate, Cæsar's dictatorship, which brought the agony and death of the republic. The attention of the pupils is next directed to the rise of the Roman empire, to its progress, through the age of Augustus, to its decline under Tiberius, its various vicissitudes under the sway of the three last scions of Cæsar's family, and of the three Flavii, their successors. Then the best century of the empire is considered in the times of Trajan and his successors, until the commencement of its decline through many emperors from Commodus to the successors of Diocletian, to be restored again by Constantine, for some time, till it is destroyed. In perusing this period of the Roman history, the professor is requested to mark the different characters of the two civilizations, which he meets in that period, the one old and pagan, the other new and christian. The invasion of the barbarians, the restoration of the kingdom under the Longobards, the popes, and their quarrel with the dukes and kings, the fall of the Longobards, the formation of a code of laws, which ruled for a long time all the civil nations, Charlemagne, and the kings sent by the emperor to rule Italy. Their successors form the subject of another period, and thus the period of the Italian municipalities is opened, in which so many great historical facts recur to the teachers. Here we find the age of Gregory VII., the first municipal constitutions, the crusades, the quarrels between cities, emperors, and popes, the insolence of the feudal masters, the schism of the west, the parties which divided the entire nation. Here the programme takes great amplification on account of the history of Piedmont which as an individual state properly begins from this period. (1100—1434.) The professor of history is naturally called to dwell with preference on this part of the history of Italy, and to endeavor to give to his pupils a clear and thorough idea of its gradual development. He is requested also to describe the ages and the facts of the Visconti, Medici, of the other most influential families, the different schisms which occurred in this

period, and finally the civilization of this age, which in many respects surpassed not only the preceding but also the following periods. Next comes the history of the Spanish dominion over Italy, the ages of Emanuel Philibert, Charles Emanuel I., Victor Amadeus II., the wars of the French revolution, the treaty of Campo Formio, the peace of Amiens, Napoleon consul and president of the Italian republic, and then emperor and king of Italy. The programme is closed with a view of the treaty of 1815, of the partial revolutions which have taken place in Italy since that time, and especially the great struggle for the national independence in 1848-49.

Logic, metaphysics, and geometry constitute the main studies of the first part of the course of philosophy. Having given before the programme of geometry we will add here the order of the subjects of logic and metaphysics, on which the professor is required to deliver his daily lectures. As an introduction to that study, some lectures are delivered on the general idea of philosophy, on its distinction, division, method, and history. Then the teaching goes through the fundamental principles of anthropology, as far as is necessary to prepare the minds of the pupils for the higher questions of logic and metaphysics. Thus a general description of the human faculties is given, grouping all them in three great divisions, of animal, intellectual, and moral. The senses, sensual imagination, animal instinct, intellectual perception, attention, analysis and synthesis, abstraction, judgment, reasoning, memory, intellectual imagination, will, freedom, spiritual sentiment and instinct, present so many different subjects of instruction, and afford the occasion of refuting the doctrine of the sensualist school, after which the programme enters in logic properly so called. This is considered as the science of the art of reasoning. And as the object of reasoning is certitude, viz.: the certain knowledge of truth, so logic is divided in two parts; the first of which proposes to teach the essence of truth, to establish its existence, and to show that reasoning is the certain means to attain it; the second part teaches the method of reasoning to this end. Thus after having explained the nature of truth, the professor establishes its existence, refutes all scepticisms, inquiries into the supreme criterion of truth and certitude, distinguishes different species of certitude and settles their relative principles, draws the different theories of probability, and shows the nature of ignorance, doubt, and error, pointing out their causes and remedies. Entering afterward into the art of reasoning, viz.: into methodology, he distinguishes the different species of method, inquisitive, deductive, and inductive, establishes their different nature and laws, and takes this occasion for developing the theory of argumentation, its different forms, and faults; he concludes the first part of logic with the theory and rules of criticism and exegesis. In the second part are considered the principles of the didactic method, of which the laws are settled, and fixes the rules of division, definition, and demonstration; finally the pupils are directed to the method of polemics, by learning the rules which ought to preside over every kind of disputation, academic or Socratic.



Metaphysics are divided into three parts ; psychology, cosmology, and theology. In the first is considered the nature of the human soul, and its simplicity and spirituality is demonstrated by its three fundamental faculties. The origin of the human soul, its connection with the body, and its immortality form the other subjects of psychology. Cosmology considers the world in its ultimate reasons, and treats of the nature of contingent beings and of their cause, of the general order of the world, and establishes the general cosmic laws, to which all created beings are submitted. Theology is preceded by an introduction, in which are laid down the principles of ontology, viz.: the science which considers the being in its unity of essence and in its trinity of forms. This leads the mind to theology, in which the existence of God is demonstrated, his attributes described, and especially the relation of the creating act, both with the act of the divine essence and of the creatures themselves, is considered.

In the second year of the course of philosophy the students are taught moral philosophy and physical science.

The professor of moral philosophy divides his teaching in two main parts ; in the first of which he considers ethics in their general principles, in the second in their application. The general ethics are divided in three parts, viz.: *pure nomology*, i. e., the science of the supreme moral principle ; *moral psychology*, viz.: the science of man considered as a subject of moral obligation ; and *moral logic*, viz.: the science which teaches the art of applying moral law to man. Here we have the discussion on the essence of morality, of good and evil generally and especially, of moral law, of the supreme moral principle, and its consequences, of natural law, considered as innate, of its character and properties, of its promulgation, obligation and sanction. After having given a comparative history of the principal moral systems which occur in the history of philosophy, the professor enters upon the exposition of the moral faculties, and establishes the nature of human as distinguished from moral acts and of moral as distinguished from free acts, and gives the theory of moral responsibility. In moral logic he considers especially the nature and origin of moral conscience, its species and rules. Then coming to the application he considers the principal moral formulas, which are derived from the supreme moral *Imperative*, and dwells upon those, the objects of which are God and man. Here he discourses on religion, and religious duties and especially on the Christian religion, considered in itself above all sectarian doctrines. Then comes the discussion on duties toward ourselves and our neighbors, on the duties of our own moral, intellectual, and eudæmonologic perfection, on the criterion of our duties toward our neighbors, on duties of justice, and benevolence, where the complete theory is given of right, its different species, its derivation, transmission and modification. Then the discussion on duties arising from society,—on society itself, and on its different species, natural, domestic and civil. In speaking of civil society, the professor is required to give a complete exposition of the political constitution of the country,



and of duties, and rights arising from it. Finally the moral formulas are considered in the man, who executes them, in his moral habits; and here a complete theory is given of moral virtue and vice, and of their species.

The programme of physical science is the following: *first part*.—Object of the physical science, bodies, matter, atoms, simple and compound bodies, constitution of bodies, general properties of bodies, natural forces or agents.—*Statics*; equilibrium of a material point. Parallel forces. Simple machines. *Dynamics*. Simple movement. Compound and uniform movement. Reflexed movement. Elastic and not elastic bodies.

*Hydrostatics*; Homogeneous liquids, pressure of liquids, floating or immersed bodies, specific gravity, heterogeneous liquids. *Hydrodynamics*; Torricelli's theorem, and its different applications. *Pneumatics*; gravity of the air, barometer, elasticity of the air, Mariotti's law, elasticity of a mixture of gases. *Acoustics*; velocity, intensity, echo, properties of sounds, vibrating cords, scale, harmonious sounds, the sense of hearing, and of voice. *Astronomy*; fundamental ideas of uranography, and geography. Sphere, celestial globes, terrestrial globes, and geographical maps. Apparent movement of the sun, moon, planets. Proofs of the truth of the system of Copernicus, Kepler's laws, precession of the equinoxes, the tides, general idea of the solar system, comets, peculiarities of the sun and planets; sidereal astronomy, fixed stars, distances, parallax, double stars, movement of the stars, nebulous stars, milky way, measures of time. *Second part*.—*Molecular attraction*; crystallization, theory of Haüy—relation between the crystalline form and the atomic constitution of bodies, isomorphism, and bimorphism, chemical laws, allotropy, capillary attraction, endosmosis, molecular constitution of bodies, mechanical qualities of bodies. *Caloric*; variation of volume and temperature, thermometer, common thermometer, differential thermometer, thermoscopium of Rumford, pyrometers, changes, latent and sensible caloric, caloric of fusion, caloric of elasticity, specific caloric,—method of mixtures, Lavoisier's method, method of cooling. Specific caloric of gases, specific caloric with a constant pressure and a constant volume, radiant caloric, its intensity, reflexion of caloric, reflecting power, diffusion of caloric, power of emission and absorption, transmitted caloric, termocrosis, conducted caloric, its coefficient, safety lamp. *Steams and gases*, elasticity of steams, mixture of steams and gases, density, influence of pressure on evaporation, ebullition, Papin's digester, eolipile, steam-engines, hygrometry, Saussure's hygrometer, other hygrometers, sources of caloric, caloric by mechanic action, molecular actions, chemical operations, animal heat, artificial cold, mixtures producing cold. *Static electricity*; sources of electricity, conductors and non-conductors, electrical machines, attractions and repulsions, hypothesis of two fluids, electrometers, electrical light, electrical induction, diffusion of electricity on the superficies of bodies, points, accumulated electricity, Leyden jar, magic table, condensed electrophorus, electrical battery, lightning, lightning-rods, hypothesis of Franklin. *Galvanism*; Experiments of Galvani and Volta, experiment of disks, Voltaic pile—Its theory according to Volta, chemical theory of the

piles, electrometers, effects of the electrical current, chemical, physis, and physiologic effects, electricity developed from heat, electricity in the crystal thermo-electrical currents, thermo-electrical piles, electricity of steam-engines, animal electricity. *Magnetism*; General phenomena, ancient hypotheses on magnetism, artificial magnetic, polarity, declination, inclination, and variations of the magnetic needle, compass, magnetic intensity. *Electro-magnetism*; Ampere's theory, electro-dynamic and electro-magnetic forces, analogies between electro-dynamic cylinders, magnet, and earth, electro-dynamical state of the earth, electro-magnetic and magno-electric induction, electro-magnetic and magno-electric currents, their chemical force, secondary currents of induction, Volta-electric induction, double induction, current induced from the Leyden jar, hypothesis on the terrestrial magnetism. *Optics*; catoptrics, theories of light, its propagation, its intensity, law of reflexion, images of plain mirrors, spherical mirrors, anamorphosis; dioptrics, refraction, Descartes' law, prism, lens, amplifying force, optical instruments, sight, decomposition of light, property of the spectrum, achromatism, colors, diffraction, colored images, reflexion and refraction in the theory of undulations, constitutions of a ray, colors of polarized light, circular polarity, polarity of calorific and chemical rays. *Meteorology*; constitution of the atmosphere, terrestrial temperature, middle temperature, temperature of the ground in different depths, temperature of fountains, temperature of lakes and seas, atmospheric temperatures, perpetual snows. *Winds*; periodical winds, irregular winds, hurricanes, waterspouts, watery meteors, dew, white-frost, clouds and fog, rain, snow, wonderful rains, hail, electric and fire meteors, atmospheric electricity, phosphoric fires, meteoric stones, and falling stars, aurora borealis; light meteors, rainbow, parheliions, fata morgana, barometric variations, periodic and irregular.

The teaching on physical science is given by lectures, recitations, written composition; and it is explained by a series of experiments, which the pupils attend according to the order of the lectures. For these experiments the municipalities are requested to furnish the colleges of their own cities with apparatus and instruments, of which every college possesses a collection more or less complete.\* The other parts of the course of philosophy are also taught by lectures, and by recitations, in which generally the Socratic method is followed. The teaching of the courses of grammar and of rhetoric proceeds by lectures, reading and explanation of classics, by translations and compositions, and by learning the theoretic rules of grammar and of rhetoric, which are previously explained by the professors from the text-books, and which are gradually applied to practical examples.

The discipline of the schools is kept by a stringent enforcement of all the regulations, which are sanctioned by the permanent committee for the direction of the secondary instruction. Yet every kind of corporal punishment is strictly prohibited not only in the secondary, but also in

---

\* Besides these collections of scientific apparatus, almost every city possesses a public library for the use of its college and population.

primary courses; and the only means allowed for the correction of refractory pupils are the admonition given by the professor, by the director, or by the superintendent of the schools, according to the nature of the offense. Sometimes the admonition is given before the collegial council, and when this fails to bring the pupil to his duty, he is finally expelled from the college. In this case he can not be admitted to any other college of the State, before he obtains such an admission from the government.

The secondary instruction in the colleges of the State is almost free; the pupils are only obliged to pay a small annual fee of fifteen *lira*. The teaching is given every day of the week, except Thursdays and Sundays; the scholastic year begins on the 15th of October, and ends for the course of philosophy in the last part of June, and for the lower courses with the close of July.

In 1856, there were 89 royal and national colleges supported by the government. In the same year there were 47 municipal colleges more or less complete; the pupils reached a total number of 15,000, and the number of teachers and professors was about 1000. There were besides a few seminaries, belonging to bishops, in which the pupils were prepared for the ecclesiastical education to be given in the high seminaries, after they have completed the secondary course. The instruction given in these seminaries is not recognized by the government, and does not give any right to the pupils to be admitted to the university, unless the bishops obtain the permission of opening such seminaries, and unless the teachers and professors appointed by them have received their diploma from a university. In every case the government reserves to itself the right of inspection in these institutions. There are also a few private schools, which are granted the privileges of the public institutions; viz.: of presenting their pupils for admission to the university. But to enjoy this privilege, the professors must have received their diploma from the university, must follow the programmes of the public schools, use the same text-books approved for the colleges, and pay the ordinary fees to the treasurer. Besides, a special decree of the minister of public instruction is required by which the establishment of such schools is granted. Parents, however, have a right to have their children educated in their own families; but for the validity of the course of philosophy they must receive from them this instruction through professors approved by the university. For any other course the certificate of a parent, by which it is testified that his child pursued the regular course of grammar and rhetoric in his own family, is sufficient to have him admitted to the examination for admission to the courses of the university.

GOVERNMENT OF THE SECONDARY CLASSICAL SCHOOLS.—The direction of these schools and colleges belongs to a permanent committee of five members of the council of the university. The number of these committees is equal to the number of the universities, and their jurisdiction is confined to the district embraced by the university, to which they belong. Under the dependence of these committees there are four inspectors, whose duty

No. 9.—[VOL. III., No. 2.]—34.

it is to visit every year all the public and private secondary schools. Besides there is in every college a council, which is presided over by the royal superintendent of the schools of the province, and composed of the director of the institution, of the professor of religion, of one of the professors of philosophy, of one of rhetoric, of one of grammar, and of another of mathematics, or of any other scientific course. This council has the immediate direction of the college, and it is its duty to enforce the regulations published by the permanent committee, to which they send an annual report of the conditions of the schools. Should there be an establishment for boarding and lodging the pupils annexed to the colleges, as in some cases, a president is appointed to direct it in connection with a council of administration. In this case a censor of discipline and a few assistants are added to the other officers.

(To be continued.)

## **XIX. PUBLIC HIGH SCHOOL IN CHICAGO.\***

**BY W. M. WELLS,**

**Superintendent of Public Schools,**

---

THE most important event in the history of the public schools for the year 1856, is the organization of a High School for both sexes; embracing three distinct departments—Classical, English High, and Normal. This school was opened on the 8th of October.

No other city in the Union has so early in its history manifested such liberality in the endowment of a High School for both sexes. In Boston, a public Latin School was instituted as early as 1635, and an English School in 1821; but these schools provided for the instruction of boys only. The arrangements for a Girl's High School were not perfected till 1855. The Central High School of Philadelphia was organized in 1838, and during the first ten years of its existence was without a rival in the completeness of its appointments and the extent of its course of instruction. Its only compeer at the present time is the Free Academy of New York, which was organized in 1849. Both of these schools, though open and free to all classes, embrace a course of instruction that is equal to an ordinary college course, and both have the power to confer the usual college degrees; but they are for boys only, and neither New York nor Philadelphia has yet made any special provision for the higher education of girls. The number and character of the girls already admitted to the Chicago High School, afford abundant evidence of the wisdom of our Common Council in making the same provision for them as for the other sex.

Though our public schools have heretofore been under one general direction, they have yet been so many separate institutions, in a great degree independent of each other. We have now one central High School, to which all the others bear the most direct and intimate relation; so that the establishment of this school not only gives completeness to our system of public instruction, but serves also to bind the other schools more closely together.

*Admission to the High School.*—On the morning of the examina-

---

\* The following article constitutes a portion of the author's Third Annual Report, as Superintendent of Public Schools of the city of Chicago, for the year 1856.

tion, each candidate is presented with a card having some particular number written on it, by which the candidate is known during the day. On the back of the card are printed several directions and explanations :

1. Throughout the examination you will be known only by the number on the opposite side of this card.
2. Do not write your name upon any of your exercises.
3. Write your number very plainly at the upper left hand corner of each exercise, your age in years and months at the upper right hand corner, and the date in the middle, so that they will all be on the same line.
4. Number each answer to correspond with the number of the question.
5. Avoid all communication with other candidates.
6. Be careful not to lose this card ; candidates admitted will bring their cards with them at the opening of the school.

Slips of paper are next distributed among the candidates, on which they write their names and numbers on their cards. These papers are collected and carefully laid aside, till after the examination has been completed and the Board has decided on the admissions. They are then used to identify the successful applicants. After attending to these preliminaries, the candidates are distributed in different rooms, and arranged at separate desks so as to prevent, as far as possible, any opportunity for communication with one another. Each candidate is furnished with a slate and pencil, and also with pen, ink and paper. The first set of questions, printed on slips of paper, is now distributed at the same moment in all the rooms, and the candidates are allowed a definite time to write out their answers ; usually from an hour to an hour and a half, according to the number and difficulty of the questions. Every effort is made to put the candidates as much at ease as possible, and secure them from all unnecessary embarrassment. If they do not understand any of the requirements, or lack little convenience for writing out their work, they are requested to make known their difficulties with the utmost freedom. Each candidate writes the number of his card at the upper left-hand corner of his exercise, before passing it in. When the time appointed for the first exercise expires, the answers written by the candidates are collected together, and the next set of questions is distributed as before, and so on, through the day. Besides the teachers of the school, on whom the examination chiefly devolves, several members of the Board of Inspectors and the superintendent are in constant attendance, aiding and directing in the different exercises. A large part of the labor still remains to be performed, after the candidates are dismissed. Several days are now spent by the teachers in examining the papers that have been written. Every answer is read with care, and its value, estimated on a scale of 100, is marked in the margin. The sum of these

estimates standing against the several answers on any one paper, divided by the number of answers on the paper, gives the *average* for that exercise. The *averages* of each candidate in all the different branches are set against the card number by which he is known during the examination; and the sum of these averages, divided by the number of branches, gives the *general average* of each. To render the result of the examination still more reliable, the principal of the school and the superintendent select the papers of all the candidates whose general averages are within five or ten per cent. of the lowest rank admitted, whether above or below, and revise all the estimates with special care. This course ensures uniformity in the standard of judging, and also the correction of any slight errors that may have occurred in estimating the answers of any candidate who could possibly be affected by such an error. The names of candidates are never seen by any one, from the time they are received on the morning of the examination, till after this revision of estimates and the final decision of the Board. As the question of a candidate's admission or rejection depends entirely upon the *general average* of his examination, it is hardly possible that injustice should be done to any of the applicants. There are doubtless cases in which candidates are not able to do justice to *themselves*; and these instances would be far more numerous if the examination was conducted orally. A large number and variety of experiments have been tried by different Boards of Examiners, and they have almost invariably resulted in the decision that written examinations afford the most reliable test of qualifications, and are on the whole the most just and satisfactory to all parties. This mode of examining candidates is now adopted in nearly all the principal cities of the Union.

If any instance occurs in which an applicant is supposed to be rejected for insufficient reasons, the answers on which this rejection is based are always on file in the office of the superintendent, in the applicant's own hand, and can be examined at any time by the candidate or his friends. There have been several cases in which the parents of applicants have called at the office for this purpose, and I am not aware that a *single instance* has occurred in which the party interested has not been perfectly satisfied, after making the examination, that the decision of the Board was just.

The examinations thus far has been confined to reading, writing, spelling, grammar, geography, arithmetic, and history of the United States. In conducting the examination in reading, each candidate is requested to read two passages, one in poetry and one in prose. The estimates in penmanship are based upon the written answers which are given in the other branches.



The first examination for admission to the High School was held July 15th, 1856. The whole number examined was 158. Of these, 114, were admitted, and 44 rejected. The per cent. of correct answers required for admission at this examination was *fifty*. A *special* examination was held Oct. 1st., for those only whose rank at the previous examination stood as high as *forty* per cent., and those who had been detained from the examination by sickness. The number admitted at this examination was 11, and the number rejected 24. At the examination held Dec. 19th, the whole number of applicants was 204; of whom 51 were admitted and 153 rejected. The per cent. of correct answers required for admission at this examination was *fifty-seven*.

It is essential to a complete system of free schools, that provision should be made for a thorough course of instruction in the higher as well as lower branches of study and discipline, and such an education Chicago now freely offers to the humblest of her children. But while it is the duty of the city to make this provision for those whose time allows them to pursue a more extended course of study, the value and importance of the High School are not to be estimated simply by the influence it exerts upon its own pupils. Before the opening of the New York Free Academy, one of the principal arguments advanced for its establishment, was the influence it would exert upon the common schools; and after it has completed the seventh year of its existence, the Board of Education, in their last Report, appeal to its history as evidence that this expectation of its projectors has not been disappointed. As early as 1844, the Controllers of the Public Schools of Philadelphia, in speaking of the High School of that city, expressed the opinion that "the influence of the institution upon the other schools is believed to be worth more than all it cost, independent of the advantages received by its actual pupils." Similar sentiments are embodied in the School Reports of Cincinnati, Providence, and other cities. Although it is now but a few months since the opening of the Chicago High School, it is already exercising a salutary influence through every grade of the public schools. Rightly directed, this influence has, in other cities, been found to do more to elevate the lower schools than any other agency that could be brought to bear upon them. It is by no means confined to those who are expecting soon to offer themselves as candidates for admission to the High School. While they are putting forth their best efforts for the accomplishment of this object, they become in turn so many examples by which those below are stimulated to increased diligence and zeal, and thus a healthy tone of action is given to every part of the system, from the highest to the lowest.

The rule requiring a period of attendance upon the public schools, as a condition of admission to the High School, is essential to the greatest improvement of the Grammar and Primary Schools; but it has been found in other cities, that all the substantial benefits of this rule are gained by requiring a *single year's* attendance upon the public schools. I would, therefore, suggest, that it may be desirable to rescind or modify the rule requiring *two years'* attendance.

*Organization.*—No pains have been spared by the Board of Inspectors, to give the High School a *right direction at the beginning*; and I believe that such an institution could hardly be opened under similar circumstances, with a better system of classification and instruction, or with greater promise of permanent usefulness and success. The three Departments—Classical, English High, and Normal—are now fully and distinctly organized under one general direction, as parts of a complete system of higher education. Provision is made for instruction in the modern languages, and the class in German already numbers forty-seven, and the class in French forty. The Board were fortunate in securing the services of a principal who is eminently qualified for the situation which he is called to fill. To his practical wisdom and untiring devotion to the interests of the school, it is in a great degree indebted for the elevated position it has already attained. Special mention should also be made of the fidelity and earnestness of the teachers who have assisted in the organization and instruction of the different departments.

The number of pupils enrolled in the High School at the present time, is one hundred and fifty-one. Of these, fifty belong to the Classical Department, seventy-nine to the English High, and twenty-two to the Normal Department. The building has accommodations for about three hundred and twenty pupils. The average age of the pupils in the High School, on the 1st of January, 1857, was fifteen and seven-twelfths years. The average age in the Classical Department was fifteen and six-twelfths; in the English High Department, fifteen and one-twelfth, and in the Normal Department, seventeen and nine-twelfths. The Normal or Teachers' Department, which has opened under favorable auspices, is one of the most important features of our system of public schools; and we may reasonably hope that a large portion of the female teachers employed in the Grammar and Primary Schools, will hereafter be furnished by our own Normal School.

*Written Examinations.*—Besides frequent oral reviews in the different branches of study, at the close of each term the several classes are subjected to a written examination on all the general topics to which they have attended, and no pupil is advanced to a higher class

till he has fully established his claim to the new position. written reviews are among the most successful means that can be employed for securing thoroughness and accuracy of scholarship. Several topics are written distinctly on the black-board, and the pupil is required to expand them as fully and accurately as possible. Each pupil is seated by himself, and furnished with pen and paper; he receives no assistance, direct or indirect, from either teacher or text-book. This mode of examining a class accomplishes at least three important objects at the same time. It affords a thorough test of the knowledge of the subject; it is one of the best methods of cultivating freedom and accuracy in the use of language; and it furnishes a valuable discipline to the pupil's mind, by throwing him entirely upon his own resources.

*Course of Study.*—The following course of study and instruction has been adopted by the Board of Inspectors:

#### ENGLISH DEPARTMENT.

1. Preparatory studies reviewed, using the text-books authorized in the Public Schools. 2. Warren's Physical Geography. 3. Weber's Universal History. 4. Ancient Geography. 5. Greenleaf's National Arithmetic. 6. Greenleaf's Algebra. 7. Davie's Legendre. 8. Plane and Spherical Trigonometry. 9. Mensuration. 10. Gillespie's Surveying. 11. Navigation. 12. Crittenden's Elementary Botany. 13. Botany. 14. Burritt's Geography of the Heavens. 15. Higher Mathematics. 16. Cutter's Physiology. 17. Tate's Natural Philosophy. 18. Yancy's Chemistry. 19. Geology and Mineralogy. 20. Rhetoric. 21. Logic. 22. Wayland's Political Economy. 23. Principles of Government. 24. Wayland's Philosophy. 25. Wayland's Moral Science. 26. Etymology. 27. English Literature. 28. Hillard's First Class Reader. 29. Drawing. 30. Vocal Music. 31. German or French. Woodbury's German Series. Fasquelle's French Course. 32. Recitations and Compositions.

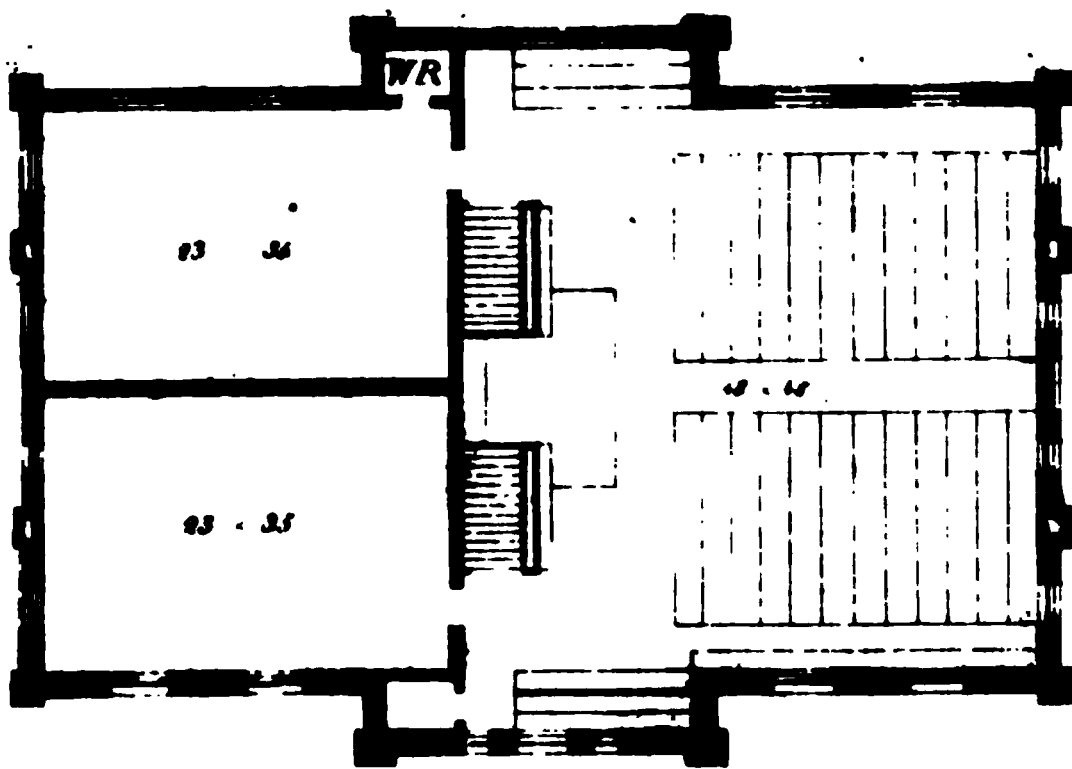
#### NORMAL DEPARTMENT.

Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 12, 13, 14, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29. Theory and Practice of Teaching. German and French; both optional.

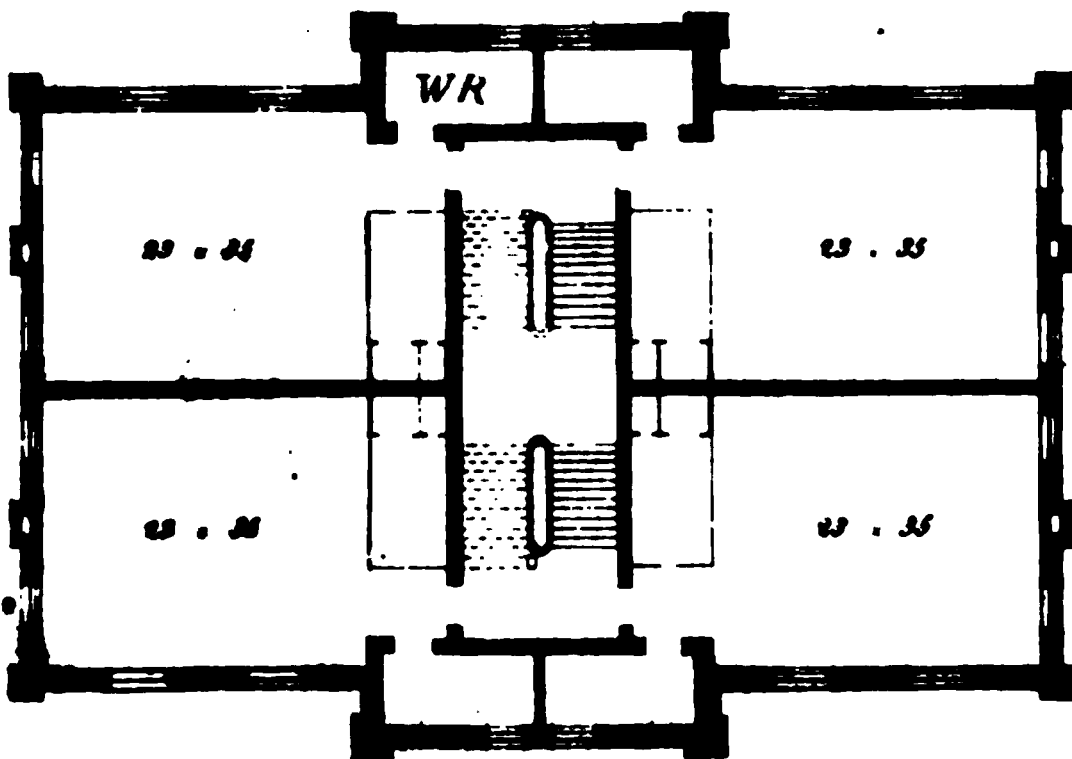
#### CLASSICAL DEPARTMENT.

Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 14, 16, 17, 26, 28, 30, 32. Andrews' and Zumpt's Grammars. Harkness' Arnold's First and Second Latin Lessons. Arnold's Prose Composition. Andrew's Cæsar. Johnson's Cicero. Bowen's Virgil. Andrew's Latin Lexicon. Anthon's Classical Dictionary. Crosby's Greek Course. Crosby's Greek Lessons. Arnold's Greek Prose Composition. Felton's Greek Course. Boise's Xenophon's Anabasis. Owen's Homer's Iliad. Liddell and Scott's Latin Lexicon.

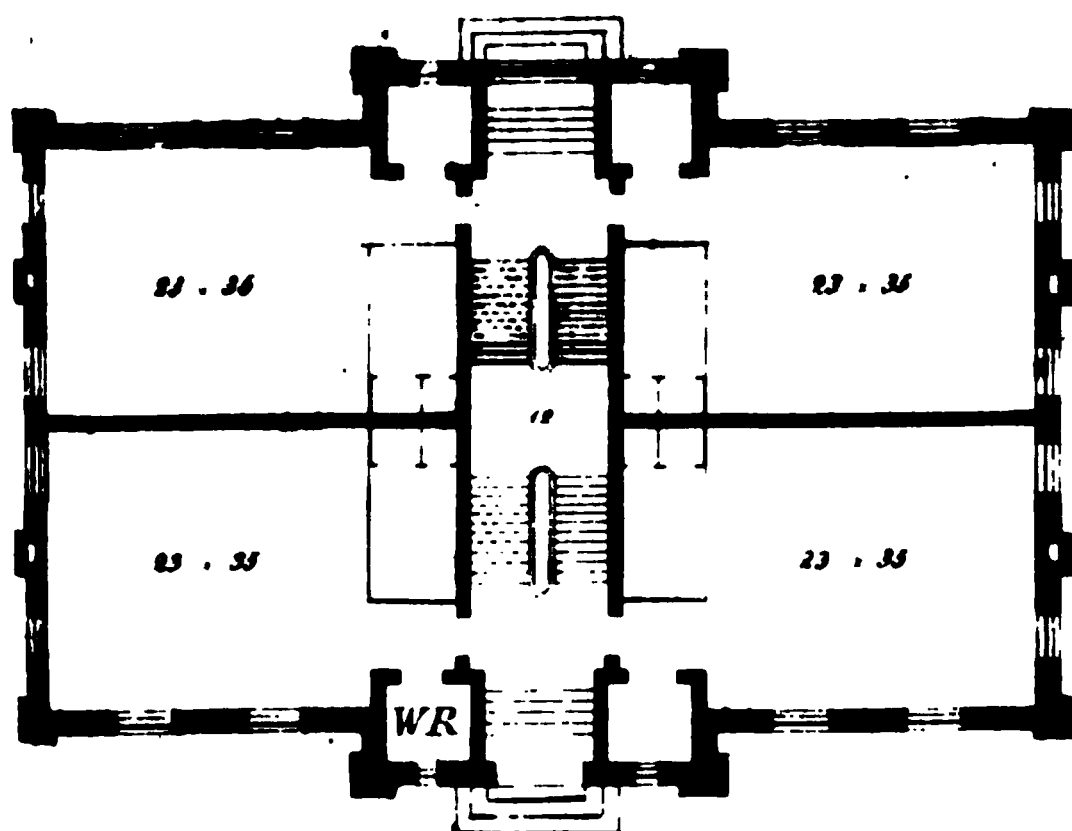
*Building.*—The building erected for the Public High School in 1856, is 88 feet long by 52 feet, with central projection 5 feet wide. The first and second stories are each 14 feet high, and the third story is 14 feet high in the clear, with a basement 7 feet high. There are ten classrooms each 23 feet by 35 feet, and a hall in the third story 40 feet wide. The outer walls are built of stone and the partitions throughout of brick. The whole cost of building and furniture was \$50,000, exclusive of the lot which is 200 feet square, and is valued at \$20,000.



*III<sup>d</sup> Story.*

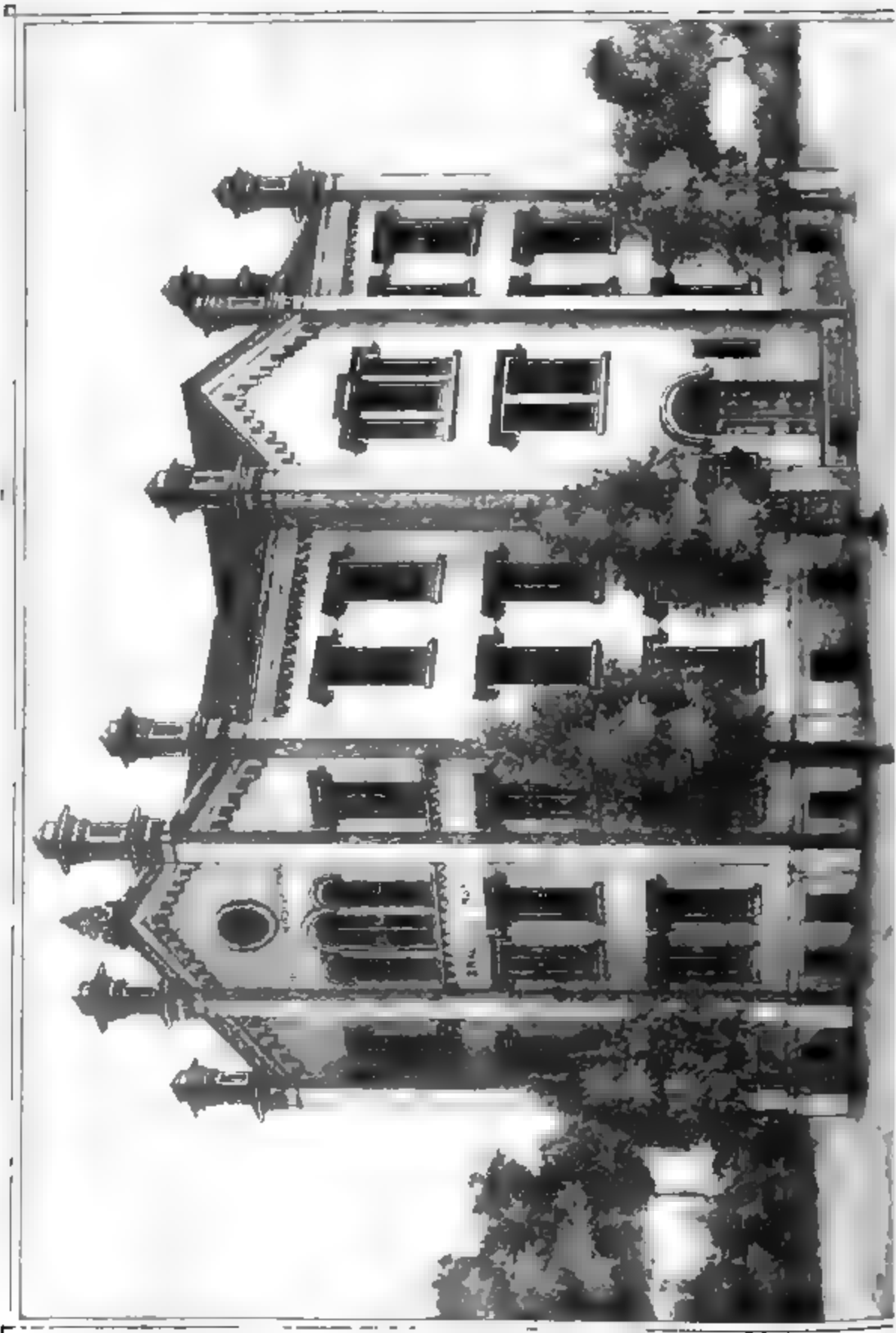


*II<sup>d</sup> Story.*



*I<sup>st</sup> Story.*

*Internal arrangement of High School Building*



## XX. EDUCATIONAL MISCELLANY AND INTELLIGENCE.

### ROTARY MOTION AS APPLIED TO THE GYROSCOPE.

BY MAJOR J. G. BARNARD,

Am. Corps of Engineers of United States Army.

---

AFTER reading most of the popular explanations of the above phenomenon given in our scientific and other publications, I have found none altogether satisfactory. While, with more or less success, they expose the more obvious features of the phenomenon and find in the force of gravity an efficient cause of horizontal motion, they usually end in destroying the foundation on which their theory is built, and leave an effect to exist ~~without a cause~~; a horizontal motion of the revolving disk about the point of support is supposed to be accounted for, while the descending motion, which is the first and direct effect of gravity (and without which no horizontal motion can take place), is ignored or supposed to be entirely eliminated. Indeed it is gravely stated as a distinguishing peculiarity of rotary motion, that, while gravity acting upon a non-rotating body causes it to descend vertically, the same force acting upon a rotary body causes it to *move horizontally*. A *tendency to descend* is supposed to produce the effect of an *actual descent*; as if, in mechanics, a mere tendency to motion ever produced any effect whatever without that motion actually taking place.

Whatever 'mystification' there may be in analysis—however ~~it may~~ hide its results under symbols unintelligible save to the initiated, it is most certain that the greater portion of the physical phenomena of the universe are utterly beyond the grasp of the human mind without its aid. The mind can—indeed it ~~must~~—search out the inducing causes, bring them together and adjust them to each other, each in its proper relation to the rest; but farther than that (at least in complicated phenomena) unaided, it cannot go. It cannot *follow* these causes in all their various actions and re-actions and at a given instant of time bring forth the results.

This, analysis alone can do. After it has accomplished this, it indeed usually furnishes a clue by which to trace how the workings of known mechanical laws have conspired to produce these results. This clue I now propose to find in the analysis of rotary motion as applied to the gyroscope.

The analysis I shall present, so far as determining the equations of motions is concerned, is mainly derived from the works of Poisson (vide "Journal de l'Ecole Polytech." vol. xvi—*Traité de Mécanique*, vol. ii, p. 162). Following his steps and arriving at his analytical results, I propose to develop fully their meaning, and to show that they are expressions not merely of a visible phenomenon, but that they contain within themselves the sole clue to its explanation: while they dispel all that is mysterious or paradoxical, and, in reducing it to merely a "particular case" of the laws of "rotary motion," throw much light upon the significance and working of those laws.

Although not unfamiliar to mathematicians, it may not be uninteresting to those who have not time to go through the long preliminary study necessary to enable them to take up with Poisson this special investigation; or whose studies in mechanics have led them no farther than to the general equations of "rotary motion" found in text books, to show how the particular equations of the gyroscopic motion may be deduced.

In so doing I shall closely follow him; making however some few modifications for the sake of brevity and of avoiding the use of numerous auxiliary quantities not necessary to the limited scope of this investigation.

The general equations of rotary motion are (see Prof. Bartlett's "Analytical Mechanics" Equations (228), p. 170):

$$\left. \begin{aligned} C \frac{dv_x}{dt} + v_x v_y (B - A) &= L_1 \\ B \frac{dv_y}{dt} + v_x v_z (A - C) &= M_1 \\ A \frac{dv_z}{dt} + v_y v_z (C - B) &= N_1 \end{aligned} \right\} (1.)$$

In the above expressions the rotating body (of any shape)  $A B C D$  (fig. 1) is supposed retained by the *fixed* point (within or without its mass)  $O$ .  $Ox$ ,  $Oy$  and  $Oz$  are the three co-ordinate axes, *fixed in space*, to which the motion of the body is referred.  $Ox_1$ ,  $Oy_1$ ,  $Oz_1$ , are the three *principal axes* belonging to the point  $O$ , and which, of course, partake of the body's motion. The position of the body at any instant of time is determined by those of the moving axes.

$A$ ,  $B$  and  $C$  express the several "moments of inertia" of the mass with reference, respectively, to the three principal axes  $Ox_1$ ,  $Oy_1$ ,  $Oz_1$ ;  $N_1$ ,  $M_1$  and  $L_1$  are the moments of the *accelerating forces*, and  $v_x$ ,  $v_y$ ,  $v_z$ , the *components of rotary velocity*, all taken with reference to these same axes.

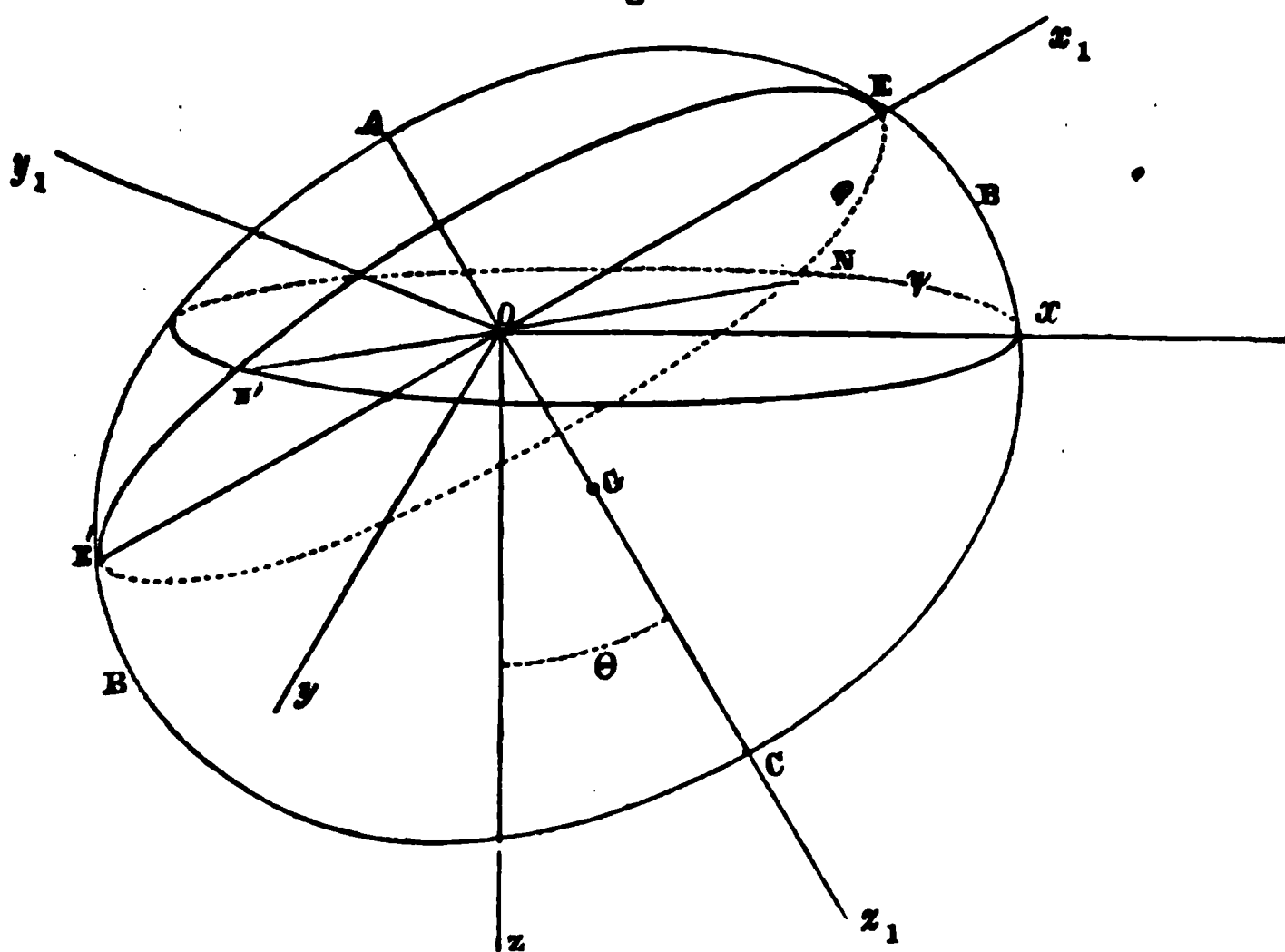
Like lineal velocities, velocities of rotation may be decomposed—that is, a rotation about any single axis may be considered as



the resultant of components about other axes (which may always be reduced to three rectangular ones): and by this means, about whatever axis the body, at the instant we consider, may be revolving, its actual velocity and axis are determined by a knowledge of its components  $v_x$ ,  $v_y$ ,  $v_z$ , about the principal axes  $Ox$ ,  $Oy$ ,  $Oz$ , these components being, as with lineal velocities, equal to the resultant velocity multiplied by the cosine of the angles their several rectangular axes make with the resultant axis.

As the true axis and rotary velocity may continually vary, so the components  $v_x$ ,  $v_y$ ,  $v_z$ , in equations (1) are variable functions of the time.

Fig. 1.



For the purpose of determining the axes  $Ox_1$ ,  $Oy_1$ , and  $Oz_1$ , with reference to the (fixed in space) axes  $Ox$ ,  $Oy$ ,  $Oz$ , three auxiliary angles are used.

If we suppose the moving plane of  $x_1 y_1$ , at the instant considered, to intersect the fixed plane of  $xy$  in the line  $NN'$  and call the angle  $xON = \psi$ , and the angle between the planes  $xy$  and  $x_1 y_1$  (or the angle  $zOz_1 = \theta$ , and the angle  $NOx_1 = \phi$ , (in the figure, these three angles are supposed *acute* at the instant taken,) these three angles will determine the positions of the axes  $Ox_1$ ,  $Oy_1$ ,  $Oz_1$ , (and hence of the body) at any instant, and will themselves be functions of the time; and the rotary velocities  $v_x$ ,  $v_y$ ,  $v_z$ , may be expressed in terms of them and of their differential co-efficients.

For this purpose, and for use hereafter in our analysis, it is necessary to know the values, in terms of  $\phi$ ,  $\theta$  and  $\psi$ , of the co-

sines of the angles made by the axes  $Ox_1$ ,  $Oy_1$ , and  $Oz_1$ , with the fixed axes  $Ox$  and  $Oy$ .

These values are shown to be (vide Bartlett's Mech., p. 172)

$$\begin{array}{ll} \cos x_1, Oz = -\sin \theta \sin \varphi & \cos x_1, Oy = \cos \theta \cos \psi \sin \varphi - \sin \psi \cos \varphi \\ \cos y_1, Oz = -\sin \theta \cos \varphi & \cos y_1, Oy = \cos \theta \cos \psi \cos \varphi + \sin \psi \sin \varphi \\ \cos z_1, Oz = \cos \theta & \cos z_1, Oy = \sin \theta \cos \psi \end{array}$$

The differential angular motions, in the time  $dt$ , about the axes  $Ox_1$ ,  $Oy_1$ ,  $Oz_1$ , will be  $v_x dt$ ,  $v_y dt$ , and  $v_z dt$ . We may determine the values of these motions by applying the laws of composition of rotary motion to the rotations indicated by the increments of the angles  $\theta$ ,  $\varphi$  and  $\psi$ .

If  $\theta$  and  $\varphi$  remain constant the increment  $d\psi$  would indicate that amount of angular motion about the axis  $Oz$  perpendicular to the plane in which this angle is measured. In the same manner  $d\varphi$  would indicate angular motion about the axis  $Oz_1$ ; while  $d\theta$  indicates rotation about the line of nodes  $ON$ . In using these three angles therefore, we actually refer the rotation to the three axes  $Oz$ ,  $Oz_1$ ,  $ON$ , of which one,  $Oz$ , is fixed in space, another,  $Oz_1$ , is fixed in and moves with the body, and the third,  $ON$ , is shifting in respect to both.

The angular motion produced around the axes  $Ox_1$ ,  $Oy_1$ ,  $Oz_1$ , by these simultaneous increments of the angles  $\varphi$ ,  $\theta$  and  $\psi$ , will be equal to the sum of the products of these increments by the cosines of the angles of these axes, respectively, with the lines  $Oz$ ,  $Oz_1$ , and  $ON$ .

The axis of  $Oz_1$  for example makes the angles  $\theta$ ,  $0^\circ$  and  $90^\circ$  with these lines, hence the angular motion  $v_z dt$  is equal (taking the sum without regard to sign) to  $\cos \theta d\psi + d\varphi$ .

In the same manner (adding without regard to signs),

$$v_x dt = \cos x_1, Oz d\psi + \cos \varphi d\theta$$

and

$$v_y dt = \cos y_1, Oz d\psi + \cos (90^\circ + \varphi) d\theta.$$

But if we consider the motion about  $Oz_1$  indicated by  $d\varphi$ , positive, it is plain from the directions in which  $\varphi$  and  $\psi$  are laid off on the figure, that the motion  $\cos \theta d\psi$  will be in the reverse direction and negative, and since  $\cos \theta$  is positive  $d\psi$  must be regarded as negative, hence

$$v_z dt = d\varphi - \cos \theta d\psi.$$

The first term of the value of  $v_x dt$ ,  $\cos x_1, Oz d\psi$  [since  $\cos x_1, Oz (= -\sin \theta \sin \varphi)$  is negative and  $d\psi$  is to be taken with the negative sign] is positive. But a study of the figure will show that the rotation referred to the axis  $Ox_1$ , indicated by the first term of this value, is the reverse of that measured by a positive increment of  $\theta$  in the second, and hence, (as  $\cos \varphi$  is positive,)  $d\theta$  must be considered negative. Making this change and substituting the values given of  $\cos x_1, Oz$ ,  $\cos y_1, Oz$ , and for  $\cos (90^\circ + \varphi)$ ,  $-\sin \varphi$ , we have the three equations

$$\left. \begin{aligned} v_x dt &= \sin \theta \sin \varphi d\psi - \cos \varphi d\theta \\ v_y dt &= \sin \theta \cos \varphi d\psi + \sin \varphi d\theta \\ v_z dt &= d\varphi - \cos \theta d\psi \end{aligned} \right\} (2.)*$$

general equations (1.) are susceptible of integration only in particular cases. Among these cases is that we consider, viz., that of a *solid of revolution* retained by a fixed point *axis of figure*.

the solid  $ABCD$  (fig. 1) be supposed such a solid, of  $Oz_1$  is the axis of figure. It will be, of course, a principal axis, and any two rectangular axes in the plane, through  $O$  perpendicular to it, will likewise be principal. By way of designating them, let  $Ox_1$  be supposed to pierce the surface in an arbitrarily assumed  $E$  point in this plane. Let  $G$  be the centre of gravity (gravity being the sole accelerating force). Moments of inertia  $A$  and  $B$  become equal, and equations reduce to

$$\left. \begin{aligned} C dv_x &= 0 \\ A dv_y - (C - A) v_x v_z dt &= \gamma a M g dt \\ A dv_x + (C - A) v_y v_z dt &= -\gamma b M g dt \end{aligned} \right\} (3.)†$$

where the distance  $OG$  of the point of support from the centre of gravity is represented by  $\gamma$ ,  $g$  is the force of gravity,  $M$  the mass, and  $a$  and  $b$  stand for the cosines  $x_1, Oz$  and  $y_1, Oz$  and the values are (p. 52)

$$a = -\sin \theta \sin \varphi, \quad b = -\sin \theta \cos \varphi.$$

The first equation (3) gives by integration  $v_x = n$ ,  $n$  being an arbitrary constant; it indicates that the rotation about the axis  $Ox_1$  remains always constant.

Multiplying the two last equations (3) by  $v_y$  and  $v_x$  respectively and adding the products, we get

$$A(v_y dv_y + v_x dv_x) = \gamma M g (a v_y - b v_x) dt.$$

With the values of  $a$  and  $b$  above, and from those  $v_x$  and  $v_y$  in eqns 2) it is easy to find

$$(a v_y - b v_x) dt = -\sin \theta d\theta = d \cos \theta;$$

Substituting this value and integrating and calling  $h$  the arbitrary constant

$$A(v_y^2 + v_x^2) = 2\gamma M g \cos \theta + h \quad (a)$$

To avoid the introduction of numerous quantities foreign to our particular inquiry and a tedious analysis, I have departed from Poisson and substituted the simpler method of getting equations (2.), which is an instructive illustration of the principles of the composition of rotary motions.

Bartlett's Mech. Equations (225) and (118) for the values of  $L_1, M_1, N_1$ : as we consider the extraneous force  $P$  (of eq. 118) is  $g$ ; the co-ordinates of the point of application  $G$  (referred to the axes  $Ox_1, Oy_1, Oz_1$ .) are zero;  $OG = \gamma$ : cosines of  $\alpha, \beta$  and  $\gamma$  are  $a, b$  and  $c$ : hence  $L_1 = 0, M_1 = \gamma a M g, N_1 = \gamma b M g$ .

Multiplying the two last equations (3), respectively, by  $b$  and  $a$  and adding and reducing by the value just found of  $d \cdot \cos \theta$  of  $v_x$ , we get

$$A(bdv_y + av_x) + (C - A)n d \cdot \cos \theta = 0 \quad (b)$$

Differentiating the values of  $a$  and  $b$  and referring to equation (2) it may readily be verified (putting for  $v_x$  its value  $n$ ) that

$$\begin{aligned} db &= (v_x \cos \theta - an) dt \\ da &= (bn - v_y \cos \theta) dt \end{aligned}$$

and multiplying the first by  $Av_y$  and the second by  $Av_x$ , adding

$$A(v_y db + v_x da) = An(bv_x - av_y) dt = -A n d \cdot \cos \theta.$$

Adding this to equation (b), we get

$$\begin{aligned} Ad \cdot (bv_y + av_x) + C n d \cdot \cos \theta &= 0, \text{ the integral of which is} \\ A(bv_y + av_x) + C n \cos \theta &= l \text{ (} l \text{ being an arbitrary constant).} \end{aligned}$$

Referring to equations (2) it will be found by performing operations indicated, that:

$$\begin{aligned} v_x^2 + v_y^2 &= \sin^2 \theta \frac{d\psi^2}{dt^2} + \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} \\ bv_y + av_x &= -\sin^2 \theta \frac{d\psi}{dt} \end{aligned}$$

Substituting these values in equations (a) and (c), we get

$$\begin{aligned} C n \cos \theta - A \sin^2 \theta \frac{d\psi}{dt} &= l \\ A \left( \sin^2 \theta \frac{d\psi^2}{dt^2} + \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} \right) &= 2 M g \gamma \cos \theta + h \end{aligned}$$

If, at the origin of motion, the axis of figure is simply viated from a vertical position by an arbitrary angle  $\alpha$ , in plane of  $xz$ , and an arbitrary velocity  $n$  is imparted about axis alone; then  $v_x$  and  $v_y$  will, at that instant, be zero,  $\theta$  and the substitution of these values in equations (a) and (c) determine the values of the constants  $l$  and  $h$ .

$$\begin{aligned} h &= -2 M g \gamma \cos \alpha \\ l &= C n \cos \alpha, \end{aligned}$$

which substituted in the above equations, make them

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \sin^2 \theta \frac{d\psi}{dt} &= \frac{C n}{A} (\cos \theta - \cos \alpha) \\ \sin^2 \theta \frac{d\psi^2}{dt^2} + \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} &= \frac{2 M g \gamma}{A} (\cos \theta - \cos \alpha) \end{aligned} \right\} (4.)$$

These together with the last equation (2) which may be written, (substituting the value of  $v_x$ )

$$d\varphi = n dt + \cos \theta d\psi \quad (5.)$$

will, (if integrated) determine the three angles  $\varphi$ ,  $\theta$  and  $\psi$  terms of the time  $t$ . They are therefore the differential equations of motion of the gyroscope.

Let  $NEE'$  (fig. 1) be a section of the solid by the plane  $x, y$ . This section may be called the *equator*.  $E$  being some fixed point in the equator (through which the principal axis  $Ox$ , passes), the angle  $\varphi$  is the angle  $EO N$ .

If  $N$  is the *ascending node* of the equator—that is, the point at which  $E$  in its axial rotation *rises above* the horizontal plane, the angle  $\varphi$  must increase from  $N$  towards  $E$ —that is,  $d\varphi$  (in equation 5) must be positive and (as the second term of its value is usually very small compared to the first) the angular velocity  $n$  must be positive. That being the case the value of  $d\varphi$  will be exactly that due to the constant axial rotation  $n dt$ , augmented by the term  $\cos \theta d\psi$ , which is the projection on the plane of the equator of the angular motion  $d\psi$  of the node. This term is an *increment* to  $n dt$  when it is positive, and the reverse when it is negative. In the first case, the motion of the node is considered *retrograde*—in the second, *direct*.

The first member of the second equation (4) being essentially positive, the difference  $\cos \theta - \cos \alpha$  must be always positive—that is, the axis of figure  $Oz$ , can never rise *above* its initial angle of elevation  $\alpha$ . As a consequence  $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$  [in first equation (4)] must be always positive. The node  $N$ , therefore, moves always in the direction in which  $\psi$  is laid off positively, and the motion will be direct or retrograde, with reference to the axial rotation, according as  $\cos \theta$  is negative or positive—that is, as the axis of figure is above or below the horizontal plane. In either case the motion of the node in its own horizontal plane is always progressive in the same direction. If the rotation  $n$  were reversed, so would also be the motion of the node.

If this rotation  $n$  is zero,  $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$  must also be zero and the second equation (4) reduces at once to the equation of the compound pendulum, as it should. Eliminating  $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$  between the two equations (4) we get

$$\sin^2 \theta \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} = \frac{2Mg\gamma}{A} \left[ \sin^2 \theta - \frac{C^2 n^2}{2AM\gamma g} (\cos \theta - \cos \alpha) \right] (\cos \theta - \cos \alpha).$$

The length of the simple pendulum which would make its oscillations in the same time as the body (if the rotary velocity  $n$  were zero) is  $\frac{A}{M\gamma}$ .\* If we call this  $\lambda$  and make for simplicity

\* The length of the simple pendulum is (see Bartlett's Mech., p. 252)  $\lambda = \frac{k_1^2 + \gamma^2}{\gamma}$

The moment of inertia  $A = M(k_1^2 + \gamma^2)$ ; hence  $\frac{A}{M\gamma} = \lambda$ .

$\frac{C^2 n^2}{2 A^2 g} = \frac{2 \beta^2}{\lambda}$  the above equation becomes

$$\sin^2 \theta \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} = \frac{2g}{\lambda} [\sin^2 \theta - 2\beta^2 (\cos \theta - \cos \alpha)] (\cos \theta - \cos \alpha)$$

and the first equation (4) becomes

$$\sin^2 \theta \frac{d\psi}{dt} = 2\beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} (\cos \theta - \cos \alpha). \quad (7.)$$

Equation (6) would, if integrated, give the value of  $\psi$  of the time; that is, the inclination which the axis makes at any moment with the vertical; while eq. (7) substituting the ascertained value of  $\theta$  would give the value of  $\psi$  and hence determines the progressive movement of the axis about the vertical  $Oz$ .

These equations in the above general form, have been integrated;\* nevertheless they furnish the means of obtaining all that we desire with regard to gyroscopic motion, and in particular that self-sustaining power, which it is the particular object of our analysis to explain.

In the first place, from eq. (6), by putting  $\frac{d\theta}{dt}$  equal to zero, we can obtain the maximum and minimum values of  $\theta$ . The co-efficient is zero, when the factor  $\cos \theta - \cos \alpha = 0$ , that is,  $\theta = \alpha$ ; and this is a *maximum*, for it has just been seen from equations (4) that  $\theta$  cannot exceed  $\alpha$ . It will be zero a *minimum*,† when

$$\sin^2 \theta - 2\beta^2 (\cos \theta - \cos \alpha) = 0$$

$$\text{or} \quad \cos \theta = -\beta^2 + \sqrt{1 + 2\beta^2 \cos \alpha + \beta^4}$$

(The positive sign of the radical alone applies to the case, the negative one would make  $\theta$  a greater angle than  $\alpha$ .)

It is clear that ( $\alpha$  being given) the value of  $\theta$  depends on  $\beta$  alone, and that it can never become zero unless  $\beta$  is zero, as long as the impressed rotary velocity  $n$  is not itself zero (no matter how minute it may be),  $\beta$  will have a finite value.

Thus, however minute may be the velocity of rotation, it is sufficient to prevent the axis of rotation from falling to its initial position.

The self-sustaining power of the gyroscope when the velocities are given is but an extreme case of this law. If  $\alpha$  is very great, the small quantity  $1 - \cos^2 \alpha$  may be neglected from the quantity under the radical (eq. 8) without altering its value, which would cause that eq. to become

$$\cos \theta = \cos \alpha.$$

\* The integration may be effected by the use of elliptic functions: the process is of no interest in this discussion.

† It is easy to show that this value of  $\theta$  belongs to an actual minimum, scarcely worth while to introduce the proof.

That is, when the impressed velocity  $n$ , and in consequence  $\beta$  is very great, the minimum value of  $\theta$  differs from its maximum  $\alpha$  by an exceedingly minute quantity.

Here then is the result, analytically found, which so surprises the observer, and for which an explanation has been so much sought and so variously given. The revolving body, though solicited by gravity, *does not visibly fall*.

Knowing this fact, we may assume that the impressed velocity  $n$  is very great, and hence  $\cos \theta - \cos \alpha$  exceedingly minute, and on this supposition, obtain integrals of equations (6) and (7), which will express with all requisite accuracy the true gyroscopic motion. For this purpose, make

$$\theta = \alpha - u, \quad d\theta = -du$$

in which the new variable  $u$  is always extremely minute, and is the angular descent of the axis of figure below its initial elevation.

By developing and neglecting the powers of  $u$  superior to the square, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \sin^2 \theta &= \sin^2 \alpha - u \sin 2\alpha + u^2 \cos 2\alpha * \\ \cos \theta - \cos \alpha &= u \sin \alpha - \frac{1}{2} u^2 \cos \alpha \end{aligned}$$

substituting these values in eq. 6 we get

$$\sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} dt = \frac{du}{\sqrt{2u \sin \alpha - u^2 (\cos \alpha + 4\beta^2)}}. \quad \dagger$$

$\beta$  having been assumed very great,  $\cos \alpha$  may be neglected in comparison with  $4\beta^2$ , and the above may be written

$$\sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} dt = \frac{du}{\sqrt{2u \sin \alpha - 4\beta^2 u^2}}. \quad (d)$$

Integrating and observing that  $u = 0$ , when  $t = 0$ , we have

\* By Stirling's theorem,

$$f(u) = U + U' \frac{u}{1} + U'' \frac{u^2}{1.2}, \text{ \&c.},$$

in which  $U, U', U''$  &c. are the values of  $f(u)$  and its different co-efficients when  $u$  is made zero.

Making  $f(u) = \sin^2(\alpha - u)$ , and recollecting that  $\sin 2u = 2 \sin u \cos u$  and  $\cos 2u = \cos^2 u - \sin^2 u$ , we get the value of  $\sin^2 \theta$ ; and making  $f(u) = \cos(\alpha - u) - \cos \alpha$  the value in text of  $\cos \theta - \cos \alpha$  is obtained.

† Eq. 6 may be written

$$\frac{\lambda}{g} \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} = 2(\cos \theta - \cos \alpha) - 4\beta^2 \frac{(\cos \theta - \cos \alpha)^2}{\sin^2 \theta}.$$

By substituting the values just found, of  $d\theta$ ,  $\sin^2 \theta$  and  $\cos \theta - \cos \alpha$  and performing the operations indicated, neglecting the higher powers of  $u$ , (by which  $\frac{(\cos \theta - \cos \alpha)^2}{\sin^2 \theta}$  reduces simply to  $u^2$ ) and deducing the value  $\int \frac{g}{\lambda} dt$ , the expression in the text, is obtained.



$$\sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} \cdot t = \frac{1}{2\beta} \cdot \text{arc} \left[ \cos = 1 - \frac{4\beta^2 u}{\sin \alpha} \right] *$$

$$u = \frac{\sin \alpha}{4\beta^2} \left( 1 - \cos 2\beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} \cdot t \right)$$

or, (since  $\cos 2\alpha = 1 - 2 \sin^2 \alpha$ )

$$u = \frac{1}{2\beta^2} \sin \alpha \sin^2 \beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} \cdot t \quad (9.)$$

Putting  $\alpha - u$  in place of  $\theta$  (equat. 7) neglecting square of  $u$ , we get

$$\frac{d\psi}{dt} = \frac{1}{\beta} \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} \cdot \sin^2 \beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} \cdot t \quad (10) \dagger$$

from which, observing that  $\psi = 0$ , when  $t = 0$

$$\psi = \frac{1}{2\beta} \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} \cdot t - \frac{1}{4\beta^2} \sin \left( 2\beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} \cdot t \right) \quad (11)$$

These three expressions (9), (10), (11), represent the vertical angular depression—the horizontal angular velocity—and the

$$* \sqrt{\frac{du}{2u \sin \alpha - 4\beta^2 u^2}} \text{ may be put in the form } \frac{2\beta}{\sin \alpha} \cdot \frac{\frac{\sin \alpha}{4\beta^2} du}{\sqrt{2u \frac{\sin \alpha}{4\beta^2} - u^2}}.$$

Call  $\frac{\sin \alpha}{4\beta^2} = R$ , and the integral of the 2d factor of the above is the arc whose radius is  $R$  and versed sine is  $u$ ; or whose cosine is  $R - u$ ; or it is  $R$  times the arc whose cosine  $1 - \frac{u}{R}$  with radius unity. Substituting the value of  $R$  in the integral and multiplying by the factor  $\frac{2\beta}{\sin \alpha}$  we get the value of  $\sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} t$ , of the text.

† In eq. (7) if we divide both members by  $\sin^2 \theta$ , and, in reducing the fraction  $\frac{\cos \theta - \cos \alpha}{\sin^2 \theta}$ , use the values already found and neglect the *square*, as well as higher powers  $u$ , (which may be done without sensible error owing to the minuteness of  $u$ , though it could not be done in the foregoing values of  $dt$  and  $t$ , since the co-efficient  $4\beta^2$  in those values, is reciprocally great, as  $u$  is small) the quotient will be simply  $\frac{u}{\sin \alpha}$ .

Substituting the value of  $u$  and dividing out  $\sin \alpha$  we get the value of  $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$  in the text.

The integral of  $\sin 2\beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} t dt$  results from the formula  $\int \sin^2 \varphi d\varphi = \frac{1}{2} \varphi - \frac{1}{4} \sin 2\varphi$ , easily obtained by substituting for  $\sin^2 \varphi$ , its value  $\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2} \cos 2\varphi$ .

ment of horizontal angular motion of the axis of figure after time  $t$ .\*

The first two will reach their respective maxima and minima

when  $\sin \beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} t = 1$  and  $= 0$ ; or when  $t = \frac{\pi}{2\beta} \sqrt{\frac{\lambda}{g}}$  and  $t = \frac{\pi}{\beta} \sqrt{\frac{\lambda}{g}}$ . These values of  $t$  in equation (11) give

$$\psi = \frac{\pi}{4\beta^2} \quad \psi = \frac{\pi}{2\beta^2}.$$

Hence, counting from the commencement of motion when  $t$ ,  $u$ ,  $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$  and  $\psi$  are all zero, we have the following series of corresponding values of these variables

$$t = \frac{\pi}{2\beta} \sqrt{\frac{\lambda}{g}}, \quad u = \frac{1}{2\beta^2} \sin \alpha, \quad \frac{d\psi}{dt} = \frac{1}{\beta} \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}}, \quad \psi = \frac{\pi}{4\beta^2}$$

which correspond to the moment of greatest depression, when  $u$  and  $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$  are maxima, and

$$t = \frac{\pi}{\beta} \sqrt{\frac{\lambda}{g}}, \quad u = 0, \quad \frac{d\psi}{dt} = 0, \quad \psi = \frac{\pi}{2\beta^2},$$

when, it appears ( $u$  being the zero), the axis of figure has regained its original elevation and the horizontal velocity is destroyed.

All these values are (owing to the assumed large value of  $\beta$ ) very minute. If we suppose the rotating velocity  $n = 100\pi$  or 100 revolutions per second, the maximum of  $u$  (with an instrument of ordinary proportions) would be a fraction of a minute of arc, and the period of undulation but a fraction of a second.

Hence the horizontal motion about the point of support will be exceedingly slow compared with the axial rotation of the disk expressed by  $n$ .

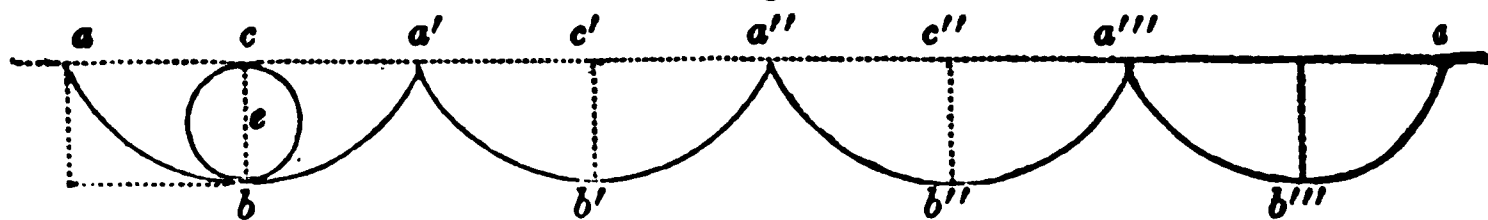
If, in equations (9) and (10), we increase  $t$  indefinitely, we will find but a repetition of the series of values already found, they being recurring functions of the time.

We see then the revolving body *does not* in fact maintain a uniform unchanging elevation, and move about its point of support at a uniform rate, (as it appears to do). But the axis of figure generates what may be called a *corrugated cone*, and any

\* The assumption that  $\psi = 0$  when  $t$  is zero supposes that the initial position of the node coincides with the fixed axis of  $x$ . In my subsequent illustrations and analysis I suppose the initial position to be at  $90^\circ$  therefrom, which would require the above value of  $\psi$ , the constant  $\frac{1}{2}\pi$  to be added. The horizontal angular motion of the axis of figure is the same as that of the node.

point of it would describe an undulating curve (fig. 2) whose superior culminations  $a, a', a'', \&c.$ , are *cusps* lying in the same

Fig. 2.



horizontal plane, and whose sagittae  $cb, c'b', \&c.$ , are to the amplitudes  $aa', a'a'', \&c.$ , as  $\frac{\sin \alpha}{2\beta^2} : \frac{\pi}{2\beta^2} :: \sin \alpha : \pi$ . If the initial elevation  $\alpha$  is  $90^\circ$ , this ratio is *as the diameter to the circumference of the circle*: a property which indicates the *cycloid*.

Assuming  $\alpha = 90^\circ$  and  $\sin \alpha = 1$ , equations (9) and (10) will give,

by elimination of  $\sin^2 \beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} t$ ,

$$\frac{d\psi}{dt} = 2\beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} u \quad \frac{dt}{d\psi} = \frac{1}{2\beta \sqrt{\frac{g}{\lambda}} u}$$

substituting this value in eq. (d) we get

$$d\psi = \frac{2\beta u du}{\sqrt{2u - 4\beta^2 u^2}} = \frac{u du}{\sqrt{\frac{1}{2\beta^2} u - u^2}};$$

*the differential equation of the cycloid* generated by the circle whose diameter is  $\frac{1}{2\beta^2}$ .

In this position of the axis, both the angles  $u$  and  $\psi$  are arcs of great circles described by a point of the axis of figure at a units distance from  $O$ , and owing to their minuteness may be considered as rectilinear co-ordinates.

If  $\alpha$  is not  $90^\circ$ , the sagittae  $bc = \frac{1}{2\beta^2} \sin \alpha$ ; but then, while the angular motion  $\psi$  is the same, the arc described by the same point of the axis will be that of a *small circle*, whose actual length will likewise be reduced in the ratio of  $1 : \sin \alpha$ . The curve is therefore a cycloid in all circumstances; and the axis of figure moves as if it were attached to the circumference of a minute circle whose diameter is  $\frac{1}{2\beta^2} \sin \alpha$ , which rolled along the horizontal circle,  $aa'a''$ , about the vertical through the point of support.

The centre  $e$  of this little circle moves with uniform velocity. The *first term* of the value of  $\psi$  (equation 11) is due to this uniform motion: it may be called the *mean precession*.

The second term is due to the circular motion of the axis about this centre, and, combined with the corresponding values of  $u$ , constitutes what may be called the *nutation*.

These cycloidal undulations are so minute—succeed each other with such rapidity, (with the high degrees of velocity usually given to the gyroscope,) that they are entirely lost to the eye, and the axis seems to maintain an unvarying elevation and move around the vertical with a uniform slow motion.

It is in omitting to take into account these minute undulations that nearly all popular explanations fail. They fail, in the first place, because they substitute, in the place of the real phenomenon, one which is purely imaginary and *inexplicable*, since it is in direct variance with fact and the laws of nature;—and they fail, because these undulations—(great or small, according as the impressed rotation is small or great) furnish the only true clue to an understanding of the subject.

The fact is, that the phenomenon exhibited by the gyroscope which is so striking, and for which explanations are so much sought, is only a *particular and extreme phase* of the motion expressed by equations (6) and (7)—that the self-sustaining power is not *absolute*, but one of degree—that however minute the axial rotation may be, the body never will fall quite to the vertical;—however great, it cannot sustain itself without any depression.

I have exhibited the undulations, as they exist with high velocities,—when they become minute and nearly true cycloids; with low velocities, they would occupy (horizontally) a larger portion of the arc of a semi-circle, and reach downward approximating, more or less nearly, to contact with the vertical: and, *finally*, when the rotary velocity is zero, their cusps are in diametrically opposite points of the horizontal circle, while the curves resolve themselves into vertical circular arcs which coincide with each other, and the vibration of the pendulum is exhibited. All these varieties of motion, of which that of the pendulum is one extreme phase and the gyroscopic another, are embraced in equations (6) and (7) and exhibited by varying  $\beta$  from 0 to high values, though, (wanting general integrals to these equations) we cannot determine, except in these extreme cases, the exact elements of the undulations. The minimum value of  $\theta$  may however always be determined by equation (8).

If we scrutinize the *meaning* of equations (6) and (7), it will be found that they represent, the first, the horizontal angular component of the velocity of a point at units distance from  $O$ , and the second, the actual velocity of such point.\*

---

\* In more general terms equations (4) express, the first, that the *moment of the quantity of motion* about the fixed vertical axis  $Oz$  remains always constant: the second that the living forces generated in the body (over and above the impressed axial rotation) are exactly what is *due to gravity through the height,  $h$* .

Both are expressions of truths that might have been anticipated; for gravity

For  $\sin \theta \frac{d\psi}{dt}$  is the horizontal, and  $\frac{d\theta}{dt}$  the vertical, component of this velocity. Calling the first  $v_h$ , and the second  $v_v$ , and the resultant  $v_s$ , and calling  $\cos \theta = \cos \alpha$ , (which is the true height of fall)  $h$ , those equations may be written

$$v_h = \frac{Cn}{A} \frac{h}{\sin \theta} \quad (e)$$

$$(v_h^2 + v_v^2) = v_s^2 = \frac{2g}{\lambda} h \quad (f)$$

This velocity  $v_s$  (as a function of the height of fall) is exactly that of the compound pendulum, and is entirely independent of the axial rotation  $n$ . Hence, (as we might reasonably suppose) rotary motion has no power to impair the work of gravity through a given height, in generating velocity; but it does have power to change the direction of that velocity. Its effect is precisely that of a material undulatory curve, which, deflecting the body's path from vertical descent, finally directs it upward, and causes its velocity to be destroyed by the same forces which generated it.

And it may be remarked, that, were the cycloid we have described such a material curve, on which the axis of the gyroscope rested, without friction and without rotation, it would travel along this curve by the effect of gravity alone, (the velocity of descent on the downward branch carrying it up the ascending one,) with exactly the same velocity that the rotating disk does, through the combined effects of gravity and rotation.

Equation (a) expresses the horizontal velocity produced by the rotation.

If we substitute its value in the second, we may deduce

$$v_v \text{ or } \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \sqrt{\frac{2g}{\lambda} h - \frac{C^2 n^2}{A^2} \frac{h^2}{\sin^2 \theta}}$$

If we take this value at the commencement of descent, ~~and~~ before any horizontal velocity is acquired, (making  $h$  indefinite ~~and~~ small), the second term under the radical may be neglected, ~~and~~

the first increment of descending velocity becomes  $\sqrt{\frac{2g}{\lambda} h}$ , precisely what is due to gravity, and what it would be were there ~~no~~ rotation.

Hence the popular idea that a rotating body offers any ~~dire~~ resistance to a change of its plane, is unfounded. It requires ~~a~~ little exertion of force (in the direction of motion) to move it

---

cannot increase the moment of the quantity of motion about an axis parallel to itself; while its power of generating living force by working through a given height, cannot be impaired.

Had we considered ourselves at liberty to assume them, however, the equations might have been got without the tedious analysis by which we have reached them.

one plane to another, as if no rotation existed; and (as a  
ary) as little expenditure of work.

deflecting forces are developed, by angular motion given  
axis, and normal to its direction, which are very sensible,  
re mistaken for *direct* resistances. If the extremity of the  
of rotation were confined in a vertical circular groove, in  
it could move without friction; or if any similar fixed re-  
ce, as a material vertical plane, were opposed to the de-  
g force, the rotating disk would vibrate in the vertical  
, as if no rotation existed. Its equation of motion would

re that of the compound pendulum,  $\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \sqrt{\frac{2g}{\lambda}} h$ . What

is the resistance to a change of plane of rotation so often  
ed to and described? A *misnomer* entirely.

e above may be otherwise established. If in equations (3)  
roduce in the second member an indeterminate horizontal  
g', applied to the centre of gravity, parallel to the fix d  
of y, and contrary to the direction in which, in our figure,  
ppose the angle  $\psi$  to increase, the projections of this force  
e axes  $Ox_1, Oy_1$ , will be  $a'g'$  and  $b'g'$  and the last two of  
equations will become, (calling cosines  $x, Oy$  and  $y, Oy$ ,  
l b',)

$$A dv_y - (C - A) n v_x dt = \gamma M (a g + a' g') dt$$

$$A dv_x + (C - A) n v_y dt = -\gamma M (b g + b' g') dt$$

plying the first by  $v_y$  and the second by  $v_x$  and adding  
 $(v_y dv_y + v_x dv_x) = \gamma M [g(a v_y - b v_x) dt + g'(a' v_y - b' v_x) dt]$ .

$a v_y - b v_x) dt$  has been shown (p. 53) to be  $= d \cdot \cos \theta$ ,—and  
similar process it may be shown that  $(a' v_y - b' v_x) dt =$   
 $\sin \theta \cos \psi$ . (For values of  $a'$  and  $b'$ , see p. 52.)

t us suppose now that the force  $g'$  is such that the axis of  
isk may be always maintained in the plane of its initial po-  
xz. The angle  $\psi$  would always be  $90^\circ$ ,  $d\psi = 0$ , and  $d \cdot (\sin \theta)$   
 $= 0$ . That is, the co-efficient of the new force  $g'$  becomes  
and the integral of the above equation is as before (p. 54),

$$A(v_y^2 + v_x^2) = 2\gamma M g \cos \theta + h.$$

he value of  $v_y^2 + v_x^2$  likewise reduces (since  $\frac{d\psi}{dt} = 0$ ) to  $\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}$ .  
he above becomes the equation of the compound pendulum.

$$\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} = \frac{2\gamma M g}{A} \cos \theta + h = \frac{2g}{\lambda} (\cos \theta - \cos \alpha), \text{ (} h \text{ being determined.)}$$

is the principle just before announced, that, with a force so  
ed as to prevent any *deflection* from the plane in which  
ity tends to cause the axis to vibrate, the motion would be  
sely as if no axial rotation existed.

To determine the force of  $g'$ ; multiply the first of preceding equations by  $b$ , and the second by  $a$ , and add the two, and add likewise  $A(v_y db + v_x da) = -A n d \cos \theta$  (see p. 54) and we shall get

$$A d(b v_y + a v_x) + C n d \cos \theta = \gamma M g' (a' b - a b') d t.$$

By referring to the values of  $a, a', b, b'$ , and performing the operations indicated and making  $\cos \psi = 0, \sin \psi = 1$ , the above becomes,

$$A d(b v_y + a v_x) + C n d \cos \theta = \gamma M g' \sin \theta d t.$$

But the value of  $(b v_y + a v_x)$  (p. 54) becomes zero when  $\frac{d \psi}{d t} = 0$ .

Hence

$$g' = \frac{C n d \cos \theta}{\gamma M \sin \theta d t} = - \frac{C n}{\gamma M} \frac{d \theta}{d t} *$$

The second factor  $\frac{d \theta}{d t}$  is the *angular velocity* with which the axis of rotation is moving.

Hence calling  $v_s$  that angular velocity, the value of the deflecting force,  $g'$  may be written (irrespective of signs),

$$g' = \frac{C}{\gamma M} n v_s : \quad (h)$$

that is, it is directly proportional to the axial rotation  $n$ , and to the angular velocity of the axis of that rotation. By putting for  $C, M k^2$  (in which  $k$  is the distance from the axis at which the mass  $M$ , if concentrated, would have the moment of inertia,  $C$ ), the above takes the simple form

$$g' = \frac{k^2}{\gamma} n v_s.$$

In the case we have been considering above, in which  $g'$  is supposed to counteract the deflecting force of axial rotation, the angular velocity  $v_s$ , or  $-\frac{d \theta}{d t}$  (equation  $g$ ) is equal to  $\sqrt{\frac{2g}{k}} (\cos \theta - \cos \phi)$ .

But in the case of the free motion of the gyroscope, this deflecting force combines with gravity to produce the observed movements of the axis of figure.

If, therefore, we disregard the axial rotation and consider the body simply as fixed at the point  $O$ , and acted upon, at the center of gravity, by two forces—one of gravity, constant in intensity and direction—the other, the deflecting force due to an axial rotation  $n$ , whose variable intensity is represented by  $\frac{C}{\gamma M} n v_s$ ,

\* The effect of gravity is to diminish  $\theta$  and the increment  $d \theta$  is negative in the case we are considering. Hence the negative sign to the value of  $g'$ , indicating that the force is in the direction of the positive axis of  $y$ , as it should, since the tendency of the node is to move in the reverse direction.



and whose direction is always normal to the plane of motion of the axis; we ought, introducing these forces, and making the axial rotation  $n$  zero, in general equations (3), to be able to deduce therefrom the identical equations (4) which express the motion of the gyroscope.

This I have done; but as it is only a verification of what has previously been said, I omit in the text the introduction of the somewhat difficult analysis.\*

Equation (5) becomes (in the case we consider), by integration,

$$\varphi = nt + \psi \cos \alpha$$

which, with the values of  $u$  and  $\psi$  already obtained, determines completely the position of the body at any instant of time.

Knowing now not only the exact nature of the motion of the gyroscope, but the direction and intensity of the forces which

\* To introduce these forces in eq. (3) I observe, first, that as both are applied at  $G$  (in the axis  $Oz_1$ ) the moment  $L_1$  is still zero and the first eq. becomes, as before,

$$Cdv_x = 0 \text{ or } v_x = \text{const.}$$

And as we disregard the impressed axial rotation, we make this constant (or  $v_x$ ) zero.

The deflecting force  $\frac{Cn}{\gamma M} v_x$  (taken with contrary sign to the counteracting force just obtained) resolves itself into two components  $\frac{Cn}{\gamma M} \frac{d\theta}{dt}$  and  $-\frac{Cn}{\gamma M} \frac{d\psi}{dt} \sin \theta$ , the first in a horizontal, the second in a vertical plane, and both normal to the axis of figure.

The second is opposed to gravity, whose component normal to the axis of figure, is  $g \sin \theta$ .

Hence we have the two component forces (in the directions above indicated),

$$M \cdot \frac{Cn}{\gamma M} \frac{d\theta}{dt} \text{ and } M \left( g - \frac{Cn}{\gamma M} \frac{d\psi}{dt} \right) \sin \theta.$$

These moments with reference to the axes of  $y_1$  and  $x_1$  will be

$$-\sin \varphi \gamma M \left( g - \frac{Cn}{\gamma M} \frac{d\psi}{dt} \right) \sin \theta - \cos \varphi \gamma M \frac{Cn}{\gamma M} \frac{d\theta}{dt}, \text{ and}$$

$$\cos \varphi \gamma M \left( g - \frac{Cn}{\gamma M} \frac{d\psi}{dt} \right) \sin \theta - \sin \varphi \gamma M \frac{Cn}{\gamma M} \frac{d\theta}{dt}.$$

Hence equations (3) (making  $v_x$  zero, and putting for  $M_1$  and  $N_1$  the above values, and recollecting the values of  $a$  and  $b$ , (p. 53) become

$$\left. \begin{aligned} Adv_y &= a\gamma M g dt - aCn \frac{d\psi}{dt} dt - Cn \cos \varphi \frac{d\theta}{dt} dt \\ Adv_x &= -b\gamma M g dt + bCn \frac{d\psi}{dt} dt - Cn \sin \varphi \frac{d\theta}{dt} dt \end{aligned} \right\} i$$

Multiplying the equations severally by  $v_y$  and  $v_x$ , adding and reducing (as on p. 53) we get

$$A(v_y dv_y + v_x dv_x) = \gamma M g d \cdot \cos \theta - Cn \frac{d\psi}{dt} d \cdot \cos \theta - Cn d\theta (v_y \cos \varphi + v_x \sin \varphi)$$

But  $v_y \cos \varphi + v_x \sin \varphi$  will be found equal to  $\sin \theta \frac{d\psi}{dt}$  (by substituting the values

produce it, it is not difficult to understand why such a motion takes place.

Fig. 1 represents the body as supported by a point *within* its mass; but the analysis applies to any position, in the axis of figure, within or without; and figs. 3 and 4 represent the more familiar circumstances under which the phenomenon is exhibited.

Let the revolving body be supposed (fig. 3, vertical projection), for simplicity of projection, an exact *sphere*, supported by a point in the axis prolonged, at *O*, which has an initial elevation  $\alpha$  greater than  $90^\circ$ . Fig. 4 represents the projection on the horizontal plane  $xy$ ; the initial position of the axis of figure (being in the plane of  $xz$ ) is projected in  $Ox$ .

$Ox$ ,  $Oy$ ,  $Oz$ , are the three (fixed in space) co-ordinate axes, to which the body's position is referred.

In this position, an initial and high velocity  $n$  is supposed to be given about the axis of figure  $Oz$ , so that the visible portions move in the direction of the arrows  $b$ ,  $b'$ , and the body is left subject to whatever motion about its point of support *O*, gravity may impress upon it. Had it no axial rotation, it would immediately fall and vibrate according to the known laws of the pendulum. Instead of which, while the axis maintains (apparently) its elevation  $\alpha$ , it moves slowly around the vertical  $Oz$ , receding from the observer, or from the position  $ON''$  towards  $ON$ .

It is self-evident that the first *tendency* (and as I have likewise proved, the first effect) of gravity is to cause the axis  $Oz$ , to descend vertically, and to generate vertical *angular velocity*. But with this angular velocity, the *deflecting* force proportional to that velocity and normal to its direction, is generated, which pushes aside the descending axis from its vertical path.—But as the direction of motion changes, so does the direction of this force—always preserving its perpendicularity. It finally acquires

of  $v_y$  and  $v_x$ ); hence the two last terms destroy each other, and the above equation becomes identical with equation (a) from which the 2d eq. (4) is deduced.

Multiplying the 1st equation (i) by  $\cos \varphi$  and the second by  $\sin \varphi$  and adding, we get,

$$A(\cos \varphi dv_y + \sin \varphi dv_x) = -Cn d\theta.$$

By differentiating the values of  $v_y$  and  $v_x$ , performing the multiplications, and substituting for  $d\varphi$  its value,  $\cos \theta d\psi$ , (proceeding from the 3d equation (2) when  $v_z=0$ ) the above becomes

$$A \left( \sin \theta \frac{d^2 \psi}{dt^2} + 2 \cos \theta \frac{d\psi}{dt} \frac{d\theta}{dt} \right) = -Cn \frac{d\theta}{dt}.$$

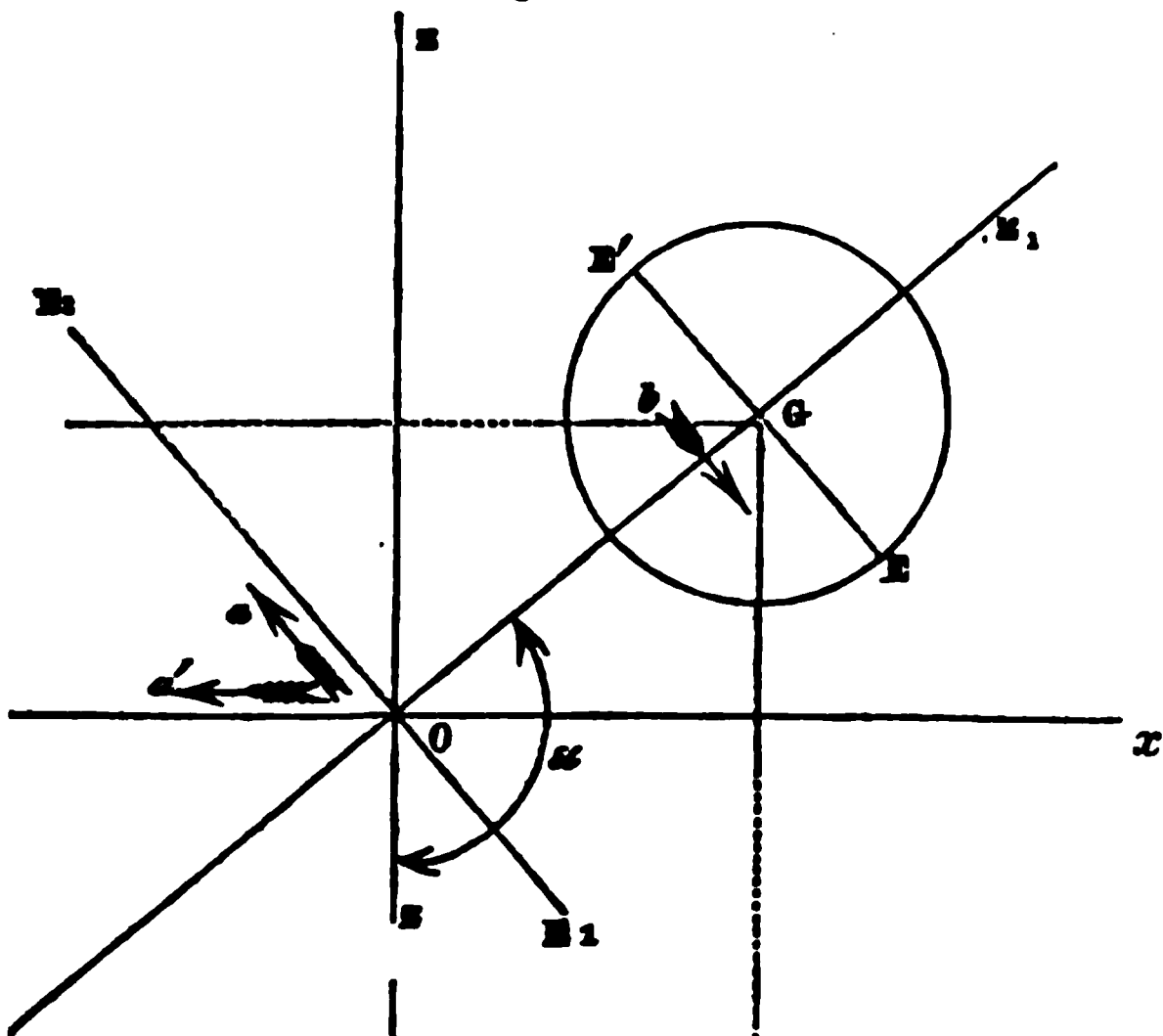
Multiplying both members by  $\sin \theta dt$ , and integrating, the above becomes

$$\sin^2 \theta \frac{d\psi}{dt} = \frac{Cn}{A} \cos \theta + l;$$

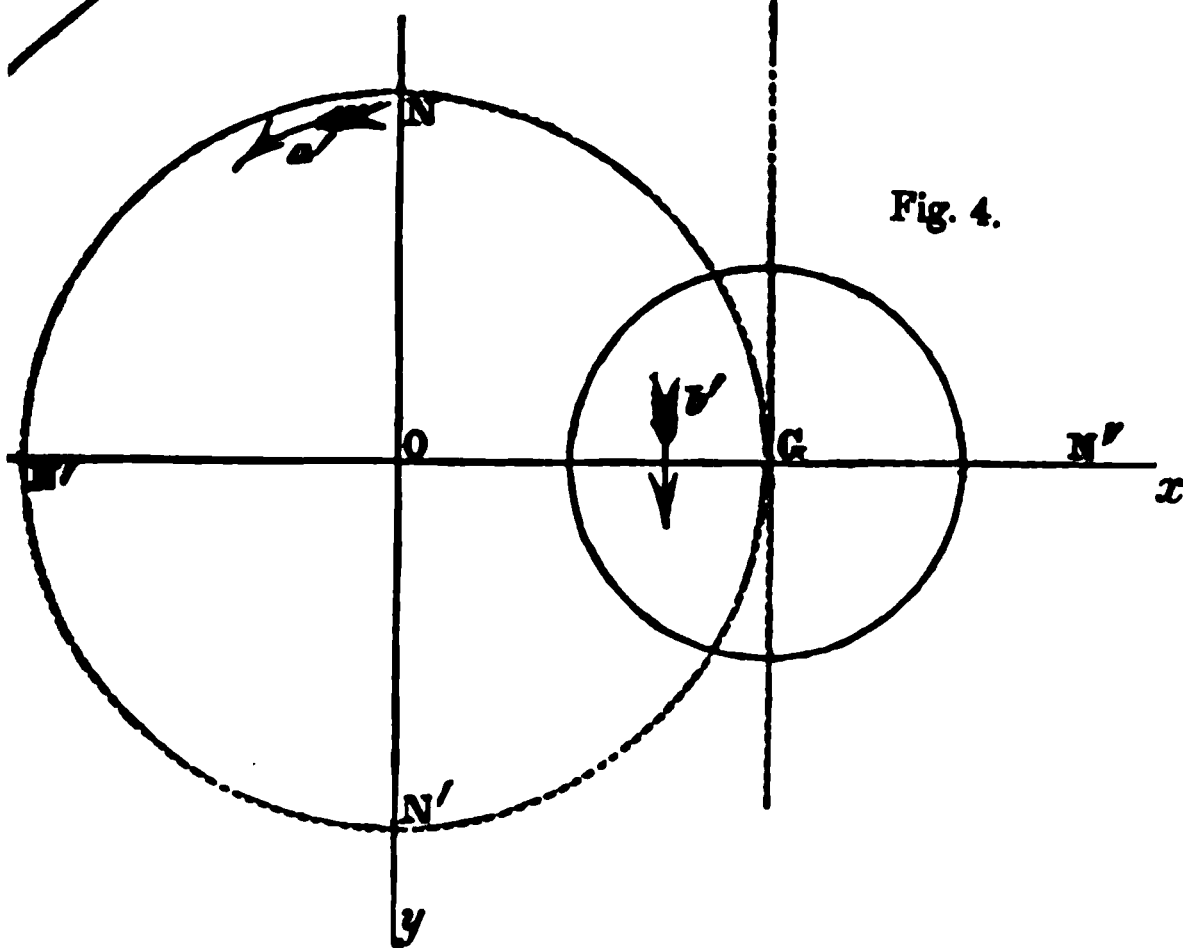
the same as the 1st equation (4) when the value of the constant  $l$  is determined.

ity and upward direction adequate to neutralize the action of gravity; but the *acquired downward velocity* is and the axis *still* descends at the same time acquiring a still increasing horizontal component, and with it a still greater upward deflecting force. At length the descending

**Fig. 8.**



**Fig. 4.**



nt of velocity is entirely destroyed—the path of the  
horizontal; the deflecting force due to it acts directly  
to gravity, which it exceeds in intensity, and hence  
the axis to commence rising. This is the state of things  
at *b* (fig. 2). The axis has descended the curve *ab*, and

has acquired a velocity due to its *actual* fall  $a d$ ; but this has been deflected to a *horizontal* direction. The *ascending* branch  $b a'$  is precisely the converse of its descent. The horizontal velocity impels the axis horizontally, while deflecting force due to it (now at its maximum) causes it to commence ascending. As the curve bends upward, the direction of this force opposes itself more and more to the horizontal, while gravity is equally counteracting the verticality. As the *horizontal* velocity at  $b$  was due to a fall through height  $a d$ , so, through the medium of this deflecting force, just capable of restoring the *work* gravity had expended in *lifting* the axis back to its original elevation at  $a'$ , and the cloidal undulation is completed, to be again and again repeated, and the axis of figure, performing undulations too rapid and minute to be perceived, moves slowly around its point of support.

Referring to fig. 3, the *equator* of the revolving body perpendicular to the axis of figure and *through the fixed point* would be an imaginary plane  $E_1 E_2$ . Its intersection with the horizontal plane of  $xy$  would be the line of nodes  $N$ , the position delineated, the progression of the nodes is upwards. For, at the *ascending* node  $N$ , any point in the imaginary equator (supposed to revolve with the body) would move *upwards* in the direction of the arrow  $a$ , while the node itself moves in the *same* direction from  $O$  (of the arrow  $a'$ ). Were the

Fig. 5.

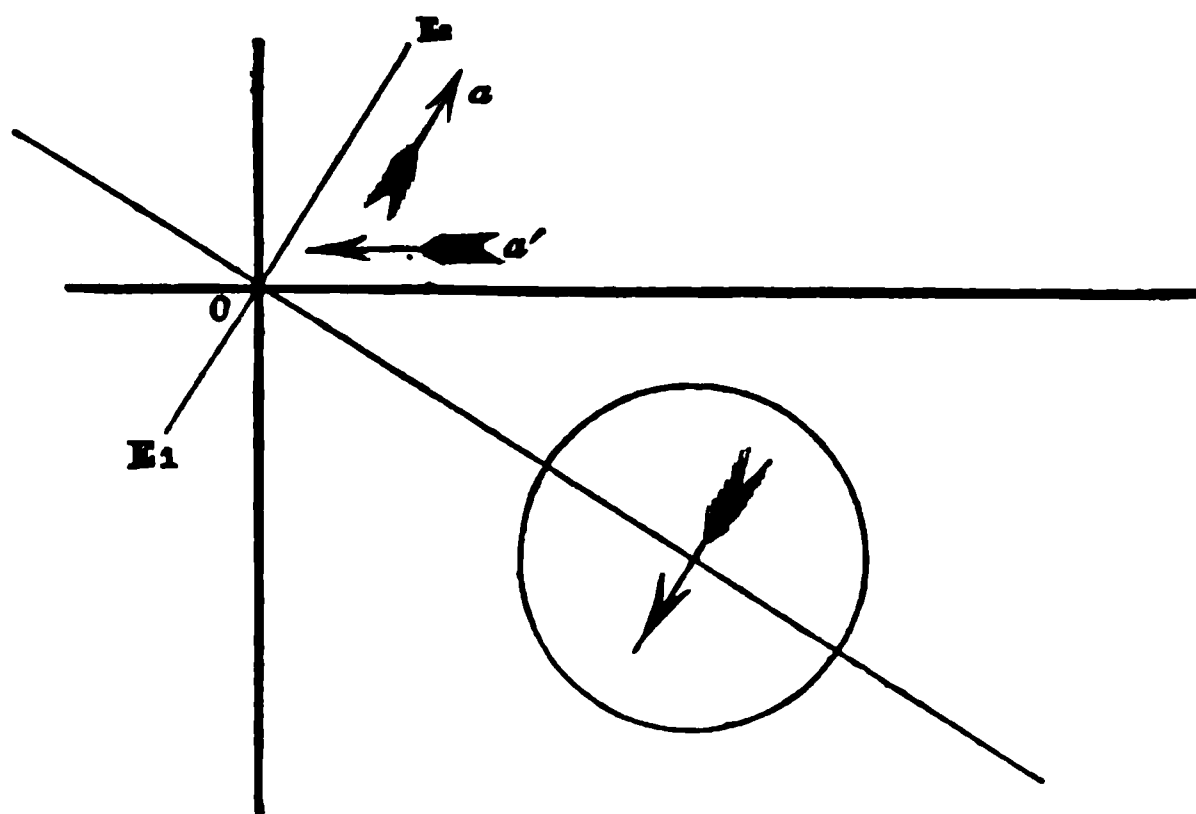


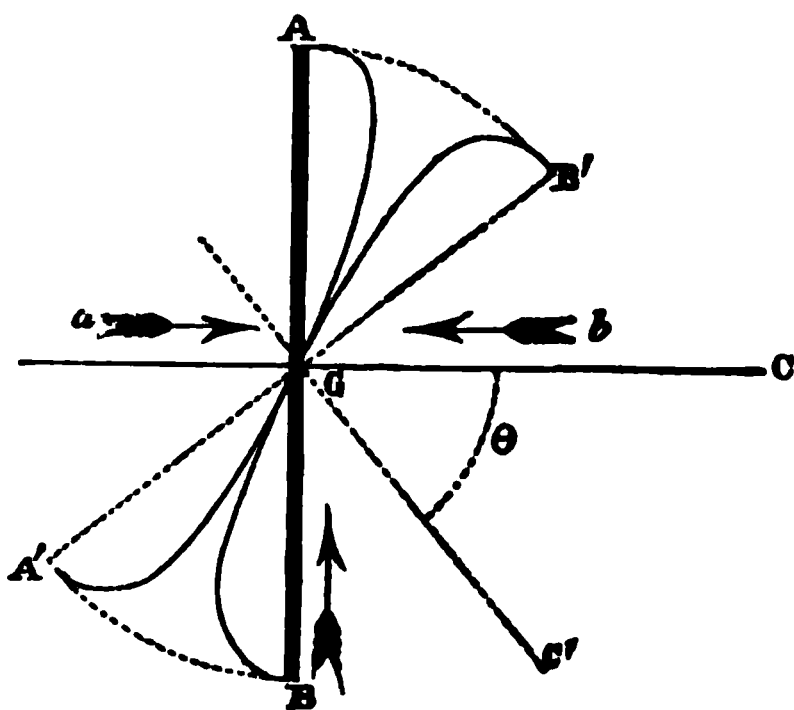
figure below the horizontal plane, (fig. 5) the upward rotation of the point would be from  $O$  to  $E_2$  (as the arrow  $a$ ), while the progression of the node (in the same direction as before as the arrow  $a'$ ) would be the reverse, and the motion of the node would be *retrograde*—yet in both cases the same in space.

flecting force of rotary motion is the sole agent in a vertical velocity produced by gravity from its deflection, and in producing these paradoxical effects; foregoing analysis while it has determined its value, no light upon its origin, it may be well to inquire how it is created.

Explanations have usually turned upon the deflexion of the components of rotary velocity by the vertical angle of the axis produced by gravity. In point of fact, both vertical and horizontal components are deflected, as the other; and the simplest way of studying the result, is to trace a vertical projection of the path of a body under these combined motions. For this purpose the mass of the revolving disk concentrated in a point of matter of a radius  $k$  due to its moment of inertia (Bartlett Mech. p. 178) and, for simplicity, suppose the rotation of the axis to take place around the centre of gravity  $G$ .


Let such a ring be perpendicular to the plane of projection) rotate about its axis of figure. Let the axis of figure turn in the plane about the vertical axis. Let the rotation be such that the visible edge of the disk moves through the semi-circle from  $B$  to  $A$ , while the axis moves down through the angle  $\theta$  to the position  $C'$ . The point  $A$  moves down along the vertical axis alone,

Fig. 6.



arrives at  $A$ ; but the plane of the disk, by simultaneous rotation of the axis, is carried to the position  $A'B'$ , and arrives at  $B'$  instead of  $A$ , through the curve projected by  $B'$ . The equation of the projection, in circular form, is easily made; but its general character is readily understood if it is sufficient to say, that it passes through the points  $A$  and  $B$ , and that its tangents at  $B$  and  $B'$  are perpendicular to  $AB$  and that its concavity, throughout its whole length, is to the right. The point  $A$  descends on the other, or reverse, side of the disk, and makes an exactly similar curve  $A'GA'$  with gravity reversed.

The centrifugal forces due to the deflections of the vertical axis are normal to the concavities of these curves; hence, on the right side of the axis towards the eye, they are to the left, and on the left side, they are to the right.

the opposite or further side, to the *right*, (as the arrows *b* and ). Hence the joint effect is to press the axis *G C* from its vertical plane *CGC'*, horizontally and towards the eye. Reverse the direction of axial rotation and the curves *AA'* and *BB'* will be the same, except that *AA'* would be on the *near*, and *BB'* on the *remote* side of the axis *G C*, and the direction of the resulting pressure will be reversed.

A projection on the horizontal plane would likewise illustrate this deflecting force and show at the same time that there is *resistance in the plane of motion of the axis*, and that the whole effect of these deflexions of the paths of the different material points, is a mere *interchange of living forces between the different material points of the disk*; but it is believed that the foregoing illustration is sufficient to explain the *origin* of this force, whose measure and direction I have analytically demonstrated.

It may be remarked, however, that the intensity of the force will evidently be directly as the velocities *gained and lost* in the motion of the particles from one side of the axis to the other; or as the *angular velocity of the axis*, and as the distance, *k*, of the particles from that axis. It will also be as the *number of particles* which undergo this gain and loss of living force in a given time; or as the *velocity of axial rotation*. Considered as applied normally at *G* to produce rotation about *any* fixed point *O* in the axis, its intensity will evidently be *directly* as the arm of lever *k*, and *inversely* as the distance of *G* from *O* (*γ*). Hence the measure of this force already found, from analysis,  $g' = \frac{k^2}{\gamma} n v$ .

In the foregoing analysis, the entire ponderable mass is supposed to partake of the impressed rotation about the axis of figure *Oz*, ; and such must be the case, in order that the results we have arrived at may rigidly apply. Such, however, cannot be the case in practice. A portion of the instrument must consist of mountings which do not share in the rotation of the disk. It is believed the analysis will apply to this case by simply including the *whole mass*, in computing the moment of inertia *A* and the mass *M*, while the moment *C* represents, as before, that of the disk alone.

In this manner it would be easy to calculate what *amount of extraneous weight* (with an *assumed* maximum depression *u*), the instrument would sustain, with a given velocity of rotation.

The analogy between the minute motions of the gyroscope and that grand phenomenon exhibited in the heavens,—the “precession of the equinoxes”—is often remarked. In an ultimate analysis, the phenomena, doubtless, are identical; yet the immediate causes of the latter are so much more complex, that it is difficult to institute any profitable comparison.

At first sight, the undulatory motion attending the precession, known as "nutation" (nodding) would seem identical with the undulations of the gyroscope. But the identity is not easily indicated; for the earth's motion of nutation is mainly governed by the moon, with whose cycles it coincides; and the solar and lunar recessions and nutations are so combined, and affected by causes which do not enter into our problem, that it is vain to attempt any minute identification of the phenomena, without reference to the difficult analysis of celestial mechanics.

On a preceding page, I said that a horizontal motion of the rotating disk around its point of support, without descending undulations, was at variance with the laws of nature. This assertion applied however only to the actual problem in hand, in which no other external force than gravity was considered, and no other initial velocity than that of axial rotation.

Analysis shows, however, that an initial *impulse* may be applied to the rotating disk in such a way that the horizontal motion shall be absolutely without undulation. An initial horizontal angular velocity such as would make its corresponding deflective force equal to the component of gravity,  $g \sin \theta$ , would cause a horizontal motion *without* undulation.

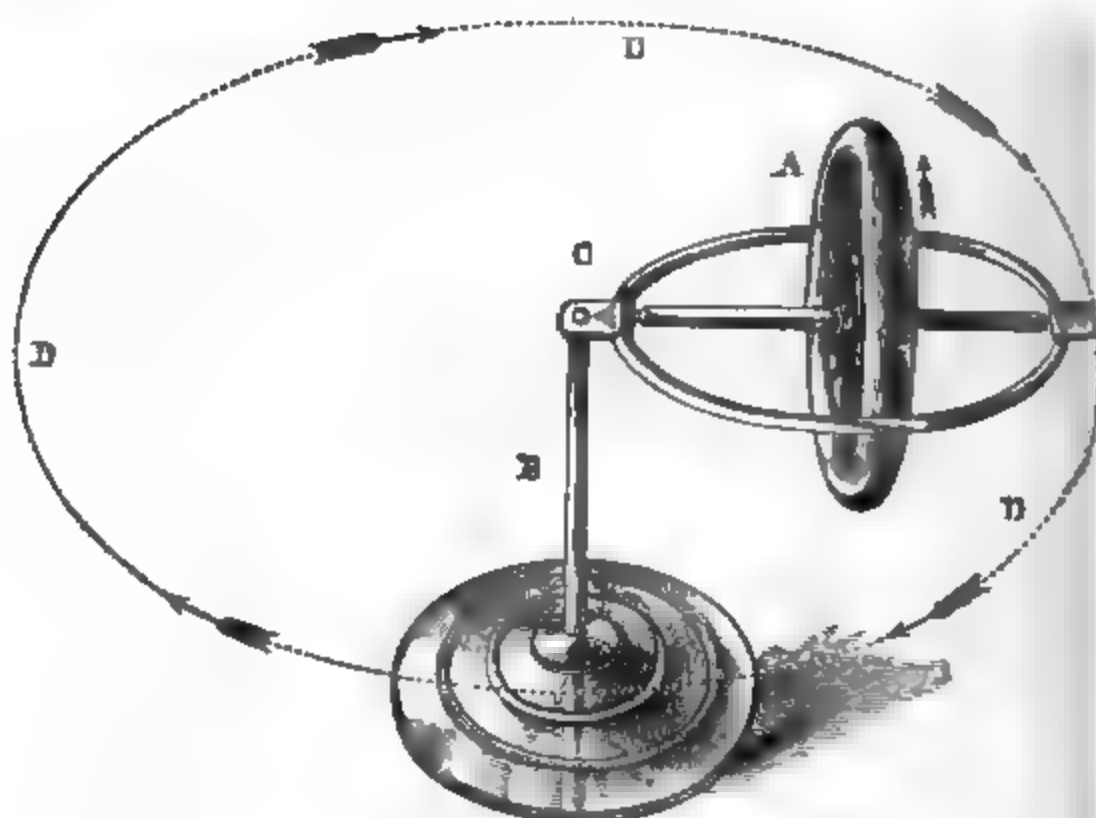
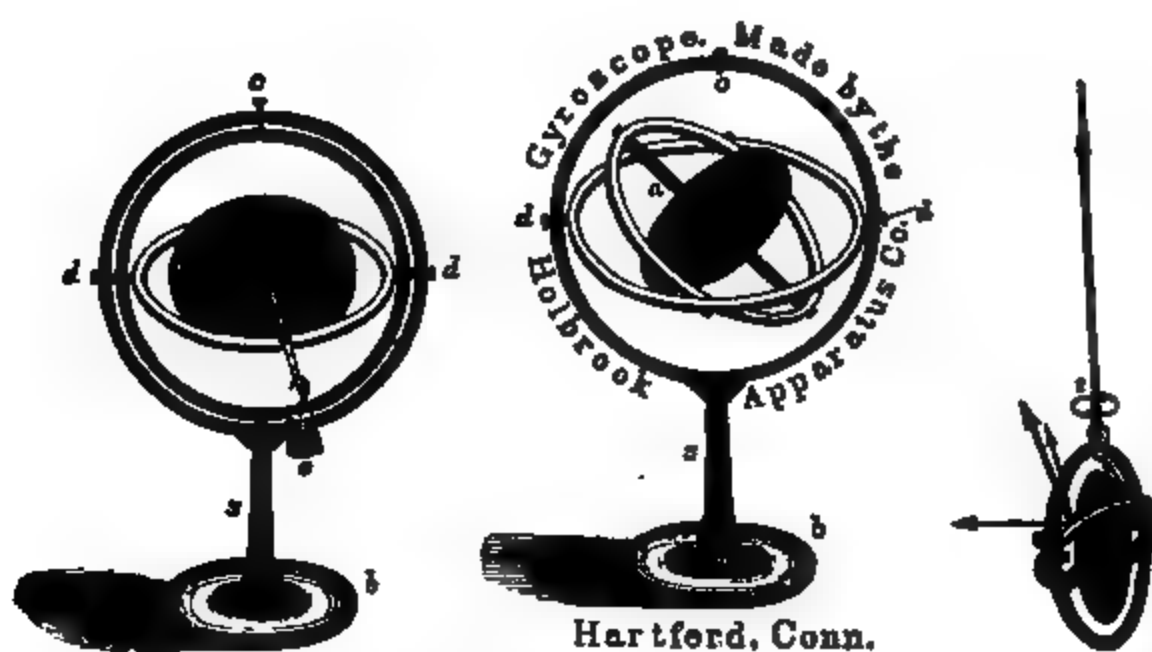
If the axial rotation  $n$ , as well as the horizontal rotation, is communicated by an impulsive force, analysis shows that it may be applied in *any plane* intersecting the horizontal plane in the *line of nodes*; but if applied in the plane of the equator (where it can communicate nothing but an *axial* rotation  $n$ ), or in the horizontal plane, its intensity must be infinite.

My announced object does not carry me further into the consideration of the gyroscope than the solution of this peculiar phenomenon, which depends solely upon, and is so illustrative of, the laws of rotary motion.

If I have been at all successful in making this so often explained subject more intelligible—in giving clearer views of some of the supposed effects of rotation, it has been because I have trusted solely to the *only* safe guide in the complicated phenomena of nature, *analysis*.

[The foregoing analysis of the phenomena of the Gyroscope, by Major Barnard, of the Corps of Engineers of the United States Army, and late Superintendent of the Military Academy at West Point, is inserted in this Journal, although it will also appear in the '*American Journal of Science and Art*,' for July, because many of our readers have become interested in the subject from the articles which have already appeared in our pages, and because we have been asked for a more scientific explanation of what has been called the self-sustaining power in the rotary disc. The length of the paper has crowded many articles of educational intelligence into the next number.] ED.





The following patterns of Gyroscopes can be safely sent by Express to any remitting the price:—

No. 1.	Gyroscopes of Iron, simplest form,	\$2.00
" 2.	" " " Brass " " "	3.00
" 3.	" " " " sphere in place of wheel,	3.50
" 4.	" " " " with lever and weight,	4.00
" 5.	" " " " with socket and arms,	5.00
" 6.	" " " " hung on gimbals,	7.00
" 7.	" " " " with three concentric rings, (next page,)	8.00
" 8.	" " " Rings of brass with lever & weight large size,	10.00

Nos. 5, 7, and 8, are best for Schools and Colleges.

Address at Hartford, Conn.,  
" " Chicago, Ill.,

F. C. BROWNELL, Secy.-  
TALCOTT & SHERWOOD.

## Supplement to No. IX.

---

### XXI. PREVENTIVE AND REFORMATORY EDUCATION.

FROM our earliest connection with the administration and improvement of public Schools in the States of Connecticut and Rhode Island, we have been convinced of the necessity of establishing and employing special institutions and agencies, of various kinds, to meet the educational deficiencies, and counteract the causes and tendencies to vice and crime among the poor and increasing class of the population in cities and manufacturing towns. In a report to the Legislature of Rhode Island in 1845, the following suggestions were made in reference to the Supplementary Schools and agencies required in the cities and large villages of that State.

Evening Schools should be opened for apprentices, clerks, and other young persons, who have been hurried into active employment without a liberal elementary education. In these schools, those who have completed the ordinary course of school instruction, can devote themselves to studies as are directly connected with their several trades or pursuits; and those whose early education was entirely neglected, can supply, to a certain extent, such deficiencies. It is not beyond the legitimate scope of a system of public instruction, to provide for the instruction of adults, who, for any cause, in early life were deprived of the advantages of school attendance.

Libraries, and courses of familiar lectures, with practical illustrations, excursions in natural history, and the natural sciences, a system of scientific exchanges between schools of the same, and of different towns,—these and other means of extending and improving the ordinary instruction of the school-room and of early life, ought to be provided, not only by individual enterprise and liberality, but by the public, and the authorities invested with the care and advancement of popular education.

One or more of that class of educational institutions known as "Reformatory Schools," "Schools of Industry," or "Schools for Juvenile Offenders," should receive such children, as defying the restraining influence of parental authority, and the discipline and regulations of the public schools, and who, as are abandoned by orphanage, or worse than orphanage, by parental neglect or example, to idle, vicious and pilfering habits, are loitering about places of public resort, polluting the atmosphere by profane and vulgar speech, alluring, to their own bad practices, children of the same, and other conditions of life, and originating or participating in every street brawl and low-bred riot. Such children cannot be properly gathered into the public schools; and if they are, their vagrant

habits are chafed by the restraints of school discipline. They soon become irregular, play truant, are punished and expelled, and from that time their course is almost uniformly downward, until on earth there is no lower point to reach.

Accustomed, as many such children have been from infancy, to sights and sounds of open and abandoned profligacy,—trained to an utter want of self-respect, and the decencies and proprieties of life, as exhibited in dress, person, manners and language,—strangers to those motives of self-improvement which spring from a sense of social moral and religious obligation, their regeneration involves the harmonious co-operation of earnest philanthropy, missionary enterprise, and sanctified wisdom. The districts of all our large cities, where this class of children are found, are the appropriate field of home missions, of unobtrusive personal effort and charity, and of systematized plans of local benevolence; embracing friendly intercourse with parents, an affectionate interest in the young, the gathering of the latter into week-day, infant, and primary schools, and schools where the use of the needle, and other forms of labor appropriate to the sex and age of the pupils can be given, the gathering of both old and young into the Sabbath schools and worshipping assemblies, the circulation of books and tracts, of other than a strictly religious character, the encouragement of cheap, innocent and humanizing games, sports and festivities, the obtaining employment for adults who may need it, and procuring situations as apprentices, clerks, &c., for such young persons as may be qualified by age, capacity and character. By individual efforts and the combined efforts of many, working in these and other ways, from year to year, these moral jungles can be broken up,—these infected districts can be purified,—these waste places of society can be reclaimed, and many abodes of penury, ignorance and vice can be converted by education economy and industry, into homes of comfort, peace and joy."

To enforce and illustrate these suggestions, the experience of other States and Countries in providing instruction for clerks, apprentices, and adults, as well as for orphan, vagrant, vicious, and criminal children, was set forth in lectures, "Educational Tracts," and School Journals.

In consequence of these lectures and publications, and the earnest efforts of many philanthropic men and women, a "Reform School for Juvenile offenders" has been established both in Connecticut and Rhode Island, and the other more important, although less obviously useful agencies of prevention, such as industrial schools, and small family asylums in the neighborhood of cities and villages, are receiving serious attention.

A selection from the publications above referred to, together with many new articles, having been published by the Editor. under the title of "*Reformatory Education*," we have concluded to issue in this Supplementary Number such articles as have not before appeared.

## HISTORICAL SKETCH OF CHARITABLE INSTITUTIONS.

---

**CHARITY**, (i. e., aid to the unfortunate; not including the idea of reformatory effort,) as either theory or practice, has descended by revelation from God. Humanity alone has never originated or practiced it far enough to entitle itself to credit as its parent or its patron. In the heathen world, before Christ, the most utter selfishness seems to have been absolutely the universal rule of individual and national conduct; such apparent exceptions, even, as the vaunted generosity of the ancient Arabs, were nothing but the result of ambition, ostentation, and love of approbation.

God, the legislator of the Jews, incorporated into the politico-religious code which was the *corpus juris* of their theocracy, injunctions of charity as extensive as their moral and intellectual development would endure, yet operative exclusively amongst their own nation, and as compared with the corresponding Christian idea, very narrow and low. The half-century jubilee remitted all debts, and gave each family its old inheritance anew. The septennial or Sabbatical year gave to all alike the spontaneous fruit of the earth. The Sabbath was a rest for all, men and animals. Wheat and grapes were to be left for the poor gleaners. No interest was to be taken from a Jew; and no pledge retained after sundown. The poor were always to be remembered and helped. A triennial tithe was exacted, for strangers, widows, and orphans. The first fruits were to be bestowed in charity.

Except this compulsory practice, scarcely a trace of even the form of charity is visible amongst the ante-Christian nations. Much more expressive of the general heathen hard-heartedness, is the prevalence of legalized child-murder or exposure, slaughter of the old to be rid of them, and such other institutional abominations. The distribution of food or money, by the great rich men of Rome to clients, or on public occasions, to the citizens generally, were to buy votes or influence, or to maintain a pompous retinue. As for the long established custom of daily largesses of food or money to the common people of Rome, established to gain their votes or support, it was continued simply from pure necessity, because these turbulent and powerful beneficiaries, (said to have numbered not less than two millions,\*) would have ended the authority and life together,

---

\* Late researches, however, render doubtful the common high estimates of the population of the city of Rome.

of any emperor who had dared discontinue it. The experiment was more than once approached, but the instant signs of revolt always put a stop to the attempt.

Somewhat more worldly-wise, but not more charitable, were the efforts of the better Roman emperors to maintain and educate the pauper children who swarmed about all the Italian cities. Augustus (B. C. 29—A. D. 14) first extended these largesses to children under eleven years old, previously utterly uncared for; but only with the design of afterwards filling his legions with them. His successors were too busy with their wars or pleasures, to continue these benefactions; and it is a curious trait of the thorough heathenism of the time, which is related of one of them, the persecutor Diocletian; that in order to relieve himself of a troublesome army of beggars, he had a large number of them summarily drowned.

The comparatively benevolent Nerva, (A. D. 96–98,) re-established a similar system and extended it; buying waste lands and giving them to settlers; taking the children of beggars away from them and establishing them in the country; and causing the children of poor freemen to be supported and educated at the public expense, under the name of *pueri et puellæ alimentarii*. Trajan appointed public officers to superintend these operations, in each Italian city; and the funds which he invested for the purpose, have been estimated at \$660,000. Adrian still further extended the system; and M. Aurelius Antonius granted its privileges, before confined to the children of Roman citizens, to those also of *novi homines*. Antoninus Pius, (about A. D. 140,) provided, in memory of his deceased wife Faustina, for the education of a number of girls, called *puellæ alimentariæ Faustinianæ*. Alex. Severus, in like manner erected, (A. D. 233,) in memory of his mother, Mammaea, an institution for educating a number of boys and girls, called *Mammaeani* and *Mammaeanæ*. Neither of these provisions however survived their founders. As the imperial treasury latterly grew poor, these gifts ceased; though several emperors bequeathed special funds to their native cities or towns, for the instruction or maintenance of the children of the aged.

Even the best of the heathen efforts at charity, therefore, were late in time, low in purpose, imperfect and transitory; and to a great extent, moreover, attributable to the indirect influence of Christianity, diffused amongst an increasing proportion of the population, and whose advancing power is indicated in other quarters, by the statue of Christ in the private chapel of Alexander Severus, and the recognized color which it gave to the works of the great jurisconsults.

Between this heathen charity and that which sprang up so suddenly, and spread so gloriously and so widely among the Christians, there was the difference of midnight and noon. “A stranger is a wolf”—*Homo ignoto homini lupus est*, (Plautus)—was the heathen doctrine; while “Good will to man” was the preparatory announcement of Christianity; the golden rule was the creed and summary of all Christ’s teachings in

social life; and disinterested, boundless and munificent charity, unheard of and unintelligible to the wondering pagans, the most prominent feature in the external life of the new religionists. Charity constitutes a large share of the works which are to be the only evidence of faith, and which, with faith, make up the sum and substance of all religion. And the place it occupied in the labors of the apostolic churches and individual Christians, corresponded with its prominence as an enjoined duty. Although it seems that the early churches did not observe, as has often been believed, an absolute community of goods, yet the instinct of property yielded almost entirely to the demands of benevolence, and the rich Christian always gave bountifully to the poorer brethren, and often sold all his possessions to benefit them. *Agapae*, or love-feasts, were repasts which followed their religious services, furnished by the rich for the poor, and eaten by both in common. Deacons and deaconesses, afterwards under the supervision of the bishops, had official charge of the poor of every church, and also of the widows, the orphans, the old and the infirm. The churches of one city or country sent vast contributions in money or provisions to their brethren in another, when suffering from famine. A single church (of Rome, A. D. 250,) besides a hundred and fifty-four clergymen, maintained fifteen hundred poor. In pestilences, the Christians nursed the sick and buried the dead at the risk of their lives, when the frightened pagans fled away or shut themselves up. They universally sheltered outcast or fugitive fellow-Christians from the pagan persecutors, visited and comforted them in prison, and countenanced them on trial or at the amphitheater, without fear of the gigantic, cruel, and inevitable power of the emperors.

Nor were these labors confined to their own co-religionists. Although of course, these were their first care, yet no sentiment of enmity or fear restrained them from extending a helping hand to the unfortunate pagan. Julian the apostate wrote to one of his officers that it was a shame to the pagans that the Christians took care of their own poor and the pagan poor likewise. When Christianity became the state religion, and open and associated action was therefore possible by its followers, and co-incidentally with the great disasters of the empire and the consequent increase of poverty and misery, great hospitals and other institutions for relief were established by charitable men and women, by cities or churches, for the sick, for orphans, for poor maidens and widows, for infirm old men, for travelers and pilgrims; many of them served by voluntary assistants of the appropriate sex, who devoted themselves to such offices out of benevolent zeal.

The various offices of charity thus subserved, came to be the recognized province of the church, so that this body acted as the trustee of vast possessions and contributions devoted to charitable uses. As the practice of monasticism arose, much of this duty was transferred to the convents and religious brotherhoods, which yet continue, in Catholic countries, more or less to fulfill it.

We have thus glanced at 1. The pure selfishness of heathenism; 2. The legal and exclusive charity of the Jews; 3. The true and divine charity of Christianity; whether exerted in individual efforts, or in institutions and with civil aid.

For the period from about A. D. 800 to 1200, information is exceedingly vague and scanty. Of education for morally endangered youth, or even for the poor, there was comparatively little. Just before the Reformation, cloister and cathedral schools were almost the only ones existing. Various decrees of emperors and councils, from A. D. 523 to 1213, established such schools, and parochial and village schools under them, for the gratuitous instruction of the poor by the clergy. These schools infused a minute and hardly traceable element of letters amongst the people. But now, first single points of more liberal effort, and then more extended systems, begin to appear. The rich cities of the Netherlands, Ypres, according to Cramer, being first, began to establish orphan houses, with departments for literary and industrial training annexed. In Ghent, the cloister St. Bertin was established before 1200, which educated poor and talented children from Great Britain and Ghent, for the priesthood. During the last half of the fourteenth century, Gerhard the Great and his associate, Florentius Radewins, established the order of Hieronymians, or Brethren of the Common Life. The institutions founded by this order were primarily for the education and maintenance of the poor.

Various individual benefactions with a similar purpose, had already appeared; e. g., Abbot Sampson's school for forty boys, at Bury St. Edmund's, in England, 1198; a school for twelve good poor boys, at Brussels, in 1374; a house to maintain and instruct poor orphans, at Bologna, 1485; the asylum of St. Mary in Aquiro, at Rome, for three hundred orphans, of both sexes, to be taught trades and letters, 1540; a dominical school at Cambray, to teach boys and girls, and to instruct the former in a trade, and the latter in household services, 1626, &c., &c.

All these, however, though both charitable and educational, were not reformatory. The first institution expressly for such a purpose, was a refuge, made a department in the Hospital of St. Michael at Rome, by Cardinal Odeschalchi, before 1586, for destitute and runaway boys, with work-shops and a school. The next notable advance in principle, was that made by Pestalozzi, which contained the germ of the best institutions now existing; i. e., the endeavor to establish a *home, school, and industrial training together*, for endangered children. And the celebrated institutions at Horn and at Mettray, with the numerous others patterned after them, are the culmination of the series, and the best exemplifications of reformatory education thus far existing. Of these two latter institutions, a full account will be found in the following pages.

A part of the history of Christian Charity applied to Preventive and Reformatory Institutions, we add—sketch of the “Agricultural Colonies” or “Farm Schools” of Europe.



# REFORM SCHOOLS, OR AGRICULTURAL COLONIES

FOR

YOUNG PAUPERS, VAGRANTS, AND CRIMINALS.

---

**THE** frequent wars in which the several States of Europe have been engaged, by carrying desolation into the home, the field, and the workshop, have multiplied the number of orphan and penniless children, beyond the ordinary causes of such visitations, and at the same time by weakening the bonds of law and virtue, have increased the temptations to a vicious life, and thus swelled the ranks of juvenile criminality. The extreme severity, and almost uninterrupted succession of belligerent operations, growing out of the revolutionary movement of France, left at its close, in every continental State, a larger number than ever before, of poor, neglected, and vicious children to care for, which arrested the attention of government, and benevolent individuals, and led to many interesting experiments as to the best means of relief and reformation.

To Switzerland belongs the credit of having first applied the principles of domestic and agricultural training to the reformation of young criminals, and to the still higher purpose of preventing pauperism and crime, by incorporating these principles into the early education of orphan, pauper, and neglected children. The Orphan House of Pestalozzi, at Neuhof, opened in 1775, in which he lived with his pupils as a friend, pastor, and teacher, and on which he expended all his limited means; the Rural School for indigent children, established by Fellenberg in 1805, as an essential part of his great enterprise at Hofwyl, to demonstrate what could be done to elevate the people by a good education; the Agricultural Normal School of Vehrli, at Krutzlingen, to train a class of practical agriculturists to be skillful teachers; and the Reform School of Kuratli at Bachtelen, near Berne, for vicious and offending boys,—have all established the practicability of accustoming young persons, while engaged in their studies, to habits of useful manual labor, and the wisdom of subjecting all children, and especially the orphan and outcast, to the kindly restraints, and humanizing influences of domestic life. These principles of home, farm, and shop training, have been slowly recognized and introduced among the charitable, preventive, and reformatory agencies of other countries.

Small rural colonies, arranged in families, are fast supplanting the great hospitals and asylums where hundreds of orphans, it may be, are well fed, clothed and lodged, under salaried governors, secretaries, and keepers, but with little or nothing of that fireside education, that cultivation of the feelings, those habits of mutual help and courtesy, that plantation of delightful remembrances of innocent sports and rambles in the field, or that acquisition of ready tact in all household and rural industry, which

are the distinguishing features of a good New England practical home culture.

Prisons, of high stone walls and barred windows, where hundreds of young inmates are congregated, with nothing useful for head or hands to do; or else working in large squads, at some undiversified employment, under the watchful eye of armed men, without the cheering word or sympathy of woman, acting and feeling as a mother, sister, or companion, or the wise counsel and example of men, acting like fathers, brothers, or friends—such places of detention and punishments are giving way to farm, reform, and industrial schools, where young criminals, or those who would soon become such in a majority of cases, the neglected and wretched outcasts of tainted homes, the offspring of vicious and intemperate parents, or the fatherless or motherless boys who commenced their downward career by committing petty thefts to keep life together, or under the influence of bad companionship, and of temptation too strong for their neglected moral culture to resist,—where such children are subjected to kind domestic training, to watchful guardianship, and are treated with a long suffering forbearance, while they are acquiring the habit of useful occupation in the workshop or farm, and are getting rid of their wild impulses and irregular habits, in the round of duties and employments of a well regulated household.

These rural and industrial schools, especially on the continent of Europe, constitute an interesting class of educational institutions. They are of two kinds. 1. Asylums and houses for pauper, orphan, deserted, and morally endangered children, who are destitute of that education supplied by the common relationship of the family. 2. Correctional and reformatory schools for children and young persons convicted of crime, or acquitted only as having acted without knowledge, but detained under a certain age for the purpose of being instructed and trained to some useful occupation. In all of them, farm and garden labor form the basis of all industrial instruction; trade and handicraft are recognized and provided for, but are deemed of secondary importance, except in a limited number of cases. Before giving a particular description of a few of the most interesting and successful institutions of each kind, we will give a brief statement of the principal features of the charitable and reformatory system now in operation in these countries.

In each of the cantons of Switzerland, in 1852, there were, at least, one rural or farm school conducted on the basis of a well regulated family. The superintendence is ordinarily committed to a married teacher, who is called the father of the family; and his wife, who assists in the domestic and industrial instruction of the girls, bears the title of mother. The school is open both to girls and boys, an arrangement which, under vigilant supervision and separate dormitories, is attended with but few inconveniences, and facilitates an economy of management, and a judicious distribution of labor, both in employment and instruction, and the diffusion of a true domestic spirit throughout the whole establishment. The number of inmates average from twenty to

forty, and when the entire family exceed twenty, it is subdivided into lesser ones of twelve or more, who are placed under an assistant "father." The school instruction occupies three hours in summer, and four in winter; the remainder of the day being devoted to work in the field or garden, or at certain seasons of the year, and for a class of pupils, in some in-door trade or handicraft. Those children who show an aptness to teach, and a peculiar fitness to conduct or assist in establishments of this class, are sent to a rural normal school, like that at Krutzlingen. The subdivision into groups of families is an essential feature of the reformatory discipline in the institutions designed exclusively for young criminals, and morally endangered children. This organization in families, with a trial class, or section of six or eight of the best behaved pupils, who are allowed still larger liberty and are intrusted with special duties, into which the new comers are admitted until they can be properly classified, facilitates supervision, fosters a kindly emulation, and permits the application to each child of that sort of care and management best adapted to its character and disposition. The annual cost in the orphan school is about \$35 per child, and in the penal colonies about \$50 per inmate.

In Germany we find the best example of reform schools in the kingdom of Wirtemberg, and at Horn, near the city of Hamburg. In Wirtemberg the large number of children who were driven by the loss of fathers in the wars which ravaged all Europe from 1796 to 1816, and the scarcity of food, to beg or steal for a living, arrested the attention of governments and led to the organization of benevolent societies, and to the establishment of asylums for their relief under the active patronage of Queen Catherine in 1819.

In the reform schools of moral industry in Wirtemberg, the average number of inmates in each is fifty-six, of whom thirty-three are boys and twenty-three girls. If the domestic character and feeling is to be maintained, it is evident that one "father" and one "mother" can not direct and supervise so large a number. But it must be added, that the age for leaving is commonly fourteen years, though in some the girls are kept a year longer. The aim of the education given in these reformatory schools is to correct vicious habits, and to form honest men, good Christians, and useful members of society. Together with constant religious instruction every opportunity is taken of inculcating habits of order, propriety, and activity, and of inspiring the children with sentiments of obedience, humility, truthfulness and honor. Under a vigilant and continuous supervision, account is taken of their good or bad dispositions, of their progress and faults. In some schools the less hopeful are confided to children distinguished by their good conduct, who serve them as guides to bring them back to the right path, and to form them to the discipline of the school. Many, even of tender years, have contracted bad habits, which it is necessary to root out at any sacrifice. In such a case the head of a family takes a child particularly suspected, and elicits an entire confession, which is usually followed by a promise

of amendment; from that time his attention is awakened, and no means are spared to effect a lasting reformation. Decency is to the mind what propriety is to the body, and every thing that might bring injury to the former is avoided, and a scrupulous watch kept over the latter. The girls and boys only meet at meals, in school and at religious exercises; at other times, during work, in play time, and in the dormitories, they are entirely separate. Each child has its own bed. In each sleeping apartment there is a male or female overseer who never leaves, and exercises an especial control over those children whom any peculiar circumstance points out to their attention. Through these precautions the union of boys and girls leaves no room for abuse, and all the heads of establishments agree that a too entire separation of the sexes is more prejudicial than useful. The intellectual instruction comprises religious instruction, the history of the bible, reading, writing, the German language, written and mental arithmetic, the history of Wirtemberg, geography, and music. Four or five hours daily are commonly given to lessons, according to the seasons and the demands of the field labor. The instruction is given by the head of the family, who is chosen from the certificated teachers. Each school has its little library. Every six or twelve months the children are subjected to an examination. In industrial education agriculture generally forms the basis, and the boys under the overlooker of the farm, perform all the requisite work, and also the heavier part of the housework. In most of the schools there are also workshops of tailors, shoemakers, joiners, weavers, bookbinders, &c.

The girls are principally employed in household work, sewing, and knitting; but they also take part in the out-door work of the kitchen-garden, the cow-sheds, and the poultry-yard, and assist in the hay and corn harvest. In the choice of these operations it is especially designed to retain them in the humble sphere in which they were born, by carefully avoiding whatever might tend to turn them against the employments upon which they must ultimately depend for subsistence—such as service, whether domestic or on the farm. Each reformatory school has a separate savings' bank, in which are kept the petty sums allowed to the children in the character of wages, or any presents they may receive, and each child has its little book of account. On leaving, the boys are commonly apprenticed to artizans, and the girls go to service. Care is taken to place them with employers of approved integrity, and in Christian families.

The reform school of the Rauhe -Haus, near Hamburg, has attached to it the largest and perhaps the best normal school for institutions of this kind in Europe. It was founded in 1833, by a few charitable persons, with the view of assembling and correcting the vicious and morally endangered children of the city. It was at first located in a modest thatch-covered house, whence its name is derived; but it has now increased to about a dozen buildings, each having its special application, which are variously dispersed in the midst of surrounding gardens, and of which several have been erected by the children them-

elves. The establishment consists of three divisions: 1. The reformatory school, containing about 100 children, of whom two-thirds are boys and one-third girls. 2. The institute of "brothers," which is composed of those assigned to the direction and superintendence of the different "families," and which serves also as a preparatory or normal school; it comprised 34 brothers in 1847. 3. The printing and agency department, containing a bookseller's shop and workshop for bookbinding and stereotyping. The organization of the Rauhen-Haus has been based on that of the natural family. The children are classed in groups of 12 each, forming a family, under a superintendent or father. All these are attached to their common center or father, the director, who presides over the whole. The chapel, the school, and the workshops alone are common to the whole, and serve as a bond of association among the different families.

The institute of "Brothers" attached to the reform school of the Rauhen-Haus, forms the basis of the whole organization. It was soon perceived that the work of improvement among vicious and delinquent children could not be confined to merely mercenary hands, and that it was a condition of success to employ persons influenced by motives of a higher nature. The brethren of the Rauhen-Haus may be compared, in some respects, to the "Frères de Charité" and "Frères de la Doctrine Chrétienne" in Roman Catholic countries. To qualify for admission to the institute, proof must be furnished of their conduct having been always honorable and without reproach, of the constant practice of Christian duties, of being animated with the spirit of a true religious calling, of freedom from physical infirmity, of good health and a sound constitution, of knowledge of agriculture or of some trade available in the establishment, or of aptitude for acquiring one, of the possession of a certain amount of learning or intelligence, and of the will necessary to profit by the special instruction provided in the institution. Consent of parents is also required. The age of admission for brothers is usually from 20 to 30 years of age, and notwithstanding the strictness of the conditions candidates have never been deficient. The institute, like the school of reform, is supported by private subscriptions and donations. In their relations with the school of reform, the brothers have charge of every thing connected with the direction of the families and supervision of the children, who can not be out of their sight by day or night. They take their meals with them, sleep in their dormitory, direct them in their work, accompany them to chapel, and take part in their recreations and games. They are at first attached to the families as assistants, and after a certain time of probation take the direction in their turn; they visit the parents of the children, to report their conduct and progress; they exercise over their pupils, after their departure, an active patronage, give instruction in the elementary classes, and keep up the writing and correspondence of the institution. The transfer of the assistants from family to family every month, places each brother successively in contact with all the children, extends his indi-

vidual experience, and places the experience acquired in each group at the service of all the families. The brothers have also a course of special instruction under the director and two assistants. This occupies 20 hours per week, arranged in a manner to coincide with the working hours of the children, and comprehends religion, sacred and profane history, the German language, geography, pedagogy, singing, and instrumental music; there is also a special course of English. The pupils are classed in two courses. The duration of each course is two years, so that the education of each brother occupies an average period of four years. At the expiration of this time they ought to be prepared for being placed, as they usually are, in one or other of the following positions: as chiefs and fathers of families in the reformatory schools, organized upon the plan of the *Rauhe -Haus*; as overseers and assistants, or teachers in similar establishments; as teachers in rural schools; as directors, stewards, overseers, or guardians in prisons of various organization; as directors or fathers of a family in hospitals and charitable establishments; as overseers of infirmaries in the hospitals; as agents of provident and benevolent societies; or as foreign or home missionaries. The applications for brothers to fill these and kindred employments increase yearly, so that the director is compelled to extend the normal institute designed for their preparation.

The reformatory schools of France, established since 1840, are not only penal but preventive in their design and discipline. They receive, 1. Young persons of both sexes under twenty years of age, who have been condemned for some crime; 2. Young persons, who have been acquitted of criminal charges because they acted without discernment; 3. Orphans and young persons, who are abandoned by their parents, or whom parental example is educating for mendacity and crime; 4. Children, who are without employment, and in a bad way, or on the slippery verge of open vice and crime.

The 66th and 67th articles of the penal code of France, sweeps society of all the above classes of young persons, by authorizing the courts and magistrates to send them to a *house of correction*. Unfortunately this class of penal institutions had no independent existence prior to 1837, and the young criminals or suspected persons were mingled with those of greater age, and deeper depravity in the common prisons. The first step in the right direction was to remove them to a separate quarter of the prison, and then to apprentice out such as showed signs of reformation and amendment. These steps were found altogether ineffectual in reforming the morals, or inducing better habits in any considerable number of this class of persons; and two gentlemen, M. Demetz and the Viscount de Breteuil, both of them highly educated, and occupying positions of power and influence, the former at Paris and the latter as member of a departmental council, became deeply interested in devising some plan for supplying a happy home and the influence of domestic relations and occupations, for the destitute, the vagrant, and criminal children of their native country.

He had visited the reform school at Horn, near Hamburg, and M. Metz had become particularly interested in the houses of refuge at Philadelphia and New York for juvenile delinquents. He was associated with M. Blout in 1837, in a second governmental commission to investigate particularly the moral influence of the prison discipline and prison architecture adopted in this country. Their report is a proper sequel to that of Beaumont and De Tocqueville in 1830. M. Demetz devoted his efforts especially to effecting a complete and wide separation, and distinct treatment of vagrant and even convicted youths from adult criminals. "Society is answerable for its neglect of these young men. They are abandoned to misery, and, therefore, to mischief. Society owes it to herself and to them, rather to prevent, than to punish their crimes. Let these juvenile delinquents be instructed in the doctrines and motives of the Christian religion. Teach their young hearts the exceeding sinfulness of sin. Show them the woe which awaits the wicked, and the infinite blessedness which will finally encircle the just. dispel the ignorance, which darkens their intelligence. Bring them up to habits of industry, order, and economy. Try to overcome those vicious propensities, which will soon expand into full-grown crimes. Of men who end their lives on the gibbet, experience shows that most have been depraved in childhood. No friend has checked the growth of their licentious passions. They have been precocious in badness, and unrepented."

On this noble mission M. Demetz and Viscount de Courteilles entered, to make a demonstration to the government and benevolent men in France, of a practicable scheme of rescuing unfortunate, vagabond, and depraved boys from destruction, and give them the power of obtaining an honest living. Their plan involved extensive grounds and buildings, which should not present the aspect of prison-yards and walls, but the facilities of education and occupation, and the exercise of the charities of a paternal home. It was to be an agricultural and vocational colony. For this purpose they selected an estate a few miles from Tours, within marketable reach of several large towns, healthy and fertile, not highly improved, but capable of profitable cultivation, and devoid of old and large buildings erected for other purposes. The buildings were erected gradually, as the number of inmates increased, although the plan of the whole establishment was projected from the outset. It consisted in a series of houses, each of a peculiar construction, and each adapted to a family of forty persons. Each family has its yard, fruit trees, and kitchen-garden. The whole is not enclosed by brick walls, or high palisades, but by low, green hedges, over which any person could climb, and through which a boy, so disposed, could easily creep without drawing attention. The real confinement to the spot is found in the encircling and attractive charities of a domestic life, and occupations of the institution.

As soon as the estate had been secured, and the household plan of management, instruction, and discipline determined on, the projectors



endeavored to find, or train, intelligent and devoted teachers and assistants, who should understand thoroughly the details of the moral and industrial education which alone presents any prospect of reforming a juvenile criminal, and who, possessing that personal piety, which has its motives in the principles of Christianity, can live, according to a rule of monastic strictness, and yet exercise the habits and affections of a free domestic life,—while subjecting themselves to the simplicity and roughness of country employment, can exhibit the courtesies which are generally associated with city manners, and while voluntarily adopting the discipline of a camp or prison, be neither jailors nor drill sergeants. The raising up of such a class of foremen and teachers, for this and similar institutions, is one of the most valuable services rendered by the projectors of the agricultural colony of Mettray. The department of the colony for training these teachers is called the preparatory school of foremen.

The colonists are brought to the institution, not in prison wagons, with guards and in chains, but by the directors themselves, who employ the favorable opportunities of the journey to cultivate an intimate acquaintance with the past history and disposition of the youths. They are encouraged to converse freely with each other, and the new conductors, and every exhibition of truthfulness or falsehood, of vivacity or dullness, of sobriety or intemperance, of aptitude or aversion to particular employments, is made the data for their right classification as to associates and occupation.

On their arrival they are placed in the family best adapted to the characteristics of each—their deficiencies in manners and character, and the facilities for cultivating better habits of life. They are made cleanly in person and dress—they are informed as to the rules of the establishment—the chaplain addresses them solemnly on the new life to which they are called, the advantages they will enjoy, and the practical results which that life is calculated to subserve. They are gradually taught the rights of private property and the love of the domestic hearth, and become familiarized with the sentiments and the duties which that sacred idea implies—and to which most of the inmates of the institution were strangers on their arrival. While they are taught the occupations of the farm and garden, those who have an aptitude for handicraft are taught such trades as are wanted by country people, so that they can find occupation as wheelwright, harness-maker, shoemaker, blacksmith, in a village, away from the great cities—those seats of corruption, want, and vice.

Much attention is paid to cultivating the taste and the habit, of innocent and rational amusement—as the great safeguard of the young. The principle of all the amusements is to attach them to their own homes, and to make them in some way useful, either as teaching and enabling them to do good to others, or as developing and exercising their own bodily and mental powers. They are taught, therefore, to use the fire-engine, to swim, to save persons from drowning and to use

be remedies to recover them, to climb a mast, to handle the sails and rigging of a ship, &c., and in wet weather they are allowed the use of a reading library, and to play at chess, and more simple games. On special occasions there are concerts and social sports.

The spirit of mutual help and self-government is cultivated. The occupants of each family are allowed to choose by election two of the colonists, (called *freres ainés*, or elder brothers,) whose authority lasts a month, and the directors judge of the condition and disposition of the house by the parties thus selected. These, with the Sisters of Charity, form one of the visitors to the institution designates as "angels whom heaven has given to the earth, and whom the earth gives to Heaven" from the domestic staff of each family.

The colonists are also allowed to act as a jury, fining the punishments on their companions and themselves, subject to the reversal or mitigation of the directors. The effect, on the whole, has been salutary. In one of the houses a boy was forced by his companion to return a book he had received as a reward, because he subsequently misconducted himself. In another they demanded the expulsion of a colonist, who had degraded the family to which he belonged. When a portion of the poorer districts of Lyons was visited by the disasters of a flood, the boys voluntarily gave one of their meals to the sufferers, and one of them who refused was compelled by the rest to eat his portion alone at the end of the table. On one occasion, a visitor desired the boys of a family to point out the three best; all eyes were turned immediately toward the three most worthy. "Tell me now, who is the worst?" Every eye was lowered, and a single boy advanced from the rest and said in a whisper, "Mister, it is me."

The chief reward is to be enrolled in the table of honor, which any one who has remained three months without punishment is entitled to. More than half of the boys are, on an average, at any one time, inscribed in this table, and some even for four and six times, who therefore have fallen under no punishment for eighteen months.

Of the 1,184 children received at Mettray from its foundation to the 1st of January, 1850, 717 were completely ignorant; 270 had commenced reading; 143 knew how to read; 54 only knew how to write. The greater number who have left, have been taught to read, write, and cipher. Of 528 who were placed out in various situations, only 46 are known to have relapsed into crime; of these, 33 were children from towns, 19 being from Paris.

To meet the great difficulty of obtaining proper moral agency for the management of the young by adding the motives of religion, an order of the agricultural brothers of St. Vincent de Paul has been instituted by M. Bazin, who, so early as 1828, founded the agricultural colony of Menil-St.-Firmin, in the department of Oise, for rearing orphan children in agricultural labor. This religious corporation, composed entirely of laymen, has for its object to supply directors or assistants to agricultural

colonies of pauper children, and especially of foundlings. Above all, as being *laborers*, the agricultural brothers have no uniform but that of labor; and if they are distinguished from other agriculturists, it is by their self-denial, their devotion to the common cause, and by that hope of a divine reward which doubles their powers. The "brothers" are placed in every respect on the same footing with the boys under their charge. They take their meals with them, and have only the same accommodation for rest.

There is an institution at Paris of the same general character, called the society of St. Nicholas, founded on a small scale in 1827, but which, since 1846, has contained above 900 children, of very mixed origin, variously collected by charitable societies and generous patrons, and many of them only by the number assigned to each. The payments are 20 francs per month for orphans, and 25 francs for other children; and for this small sum the establishment provides maintenance, instruction, and apprenticeship to a trade. Seventy persons in charge live in the establishment, who, with twenty-five master-workmen, living out of the house, make an average of one *employee* to every seven or eight children, a proportion which insures a vigilant surveillance day and night. The teachers, called "*freres*," are all laymen; but they extend their care not merely to the instruction, but also to the education of the children, and to make them honest, industrious, and able workmen. The remarkable peculiarity of this school is the organization of its industry in workshops, which are hired, together with the apprenticed services of the children, by master-workmen of approved character in various trades, such as watch-makers, jewelers, engravers, and all the multifarious occupations, half arts, half trades, which supply the numerous articles of refinement specially produced at Paris; besides the ordinary trades of baker, shoemaker, tailor, and so forth. The children do not go to these workshops except on the express requirement of their parents, and those employed give, on the average, eight hours and a half daily to work, and two to instruction in classes. The apprenticeship is for two, three, or four years, according to the profession; and, after its close, the young people may remain in the establishment, pursuing their work, and depositing what they earn, beyond the cost of their sustenance, in the savings-bank. The employers find materials, tools, and skill, and take the profits of the trade, undertaking to treat the children well, as kind and faithful masters.

In Belgium, the government has undertaken the work of rescuing the destitute and delinquent children from their evil ways, and converting them into moral and productive laborers and valuable citizens. Before embarking in the enterprise, M. Ducpetiaux, inspector general prisons and institutions of public charity in the kingdom, was commissioned to visit the different states of Europe, and gather their experience in this class of institutions for guidance in the organization of a reformatory school at Ruyssede.

**M. DUCPETLAUX's** report to the ministry, upon his examination of reformatory institutions and agencies, presented in February 1851, is one of the most valuable summaries of well-arranged and comprehensive and careful conclusions, in its department, ever compiled. These conclusions may be condensed as follows :

1. Agricultural reform schools are a valuable remedy for pauperism, idleness, and surplus city population.

2. The literary and industrial instruction furnished in them is much superior to that enjoyed by most farmers and artizans.

3. Such schools require teachers trained specially, both in letters and agriculture.

4. Institutions similar in principle, should be established for the sons of respectable farmers, artizans, &c.

5. For the beneficiary young, the various charitable and reformatory institutions requisite are *a.* Hospitals proper ; *b.* Asylums for the blind, and deaf mutes ; *c.* Rural schools for the morally endangered ; *d.* Reform schools for beggars, vicious, those detained by courts for education, &c. ; Reform schools for young criminals.

But no child should be admitted into such artificial family, if there be a natural family of relatives able to support him and bring him up.

6. Boarding out such children singly in families, is hazardous, even under the best possible inspection, and inadmissible without it.

7. For adult paupers, agricultural establishments are of less proved utility and efficiency, but yet right and good in principle.

In England, Sir Matthew Hale about the year 1656, proposed to establish a Home of Industry in each parish, where children might be instructed in various kinds of labor. A little later, (1678,) Firmin recommended that pauper vagrant children over eight years old, should be employed in knitting, silk winding, needlework, &c., and in 1703, John Locke, then Secretary of the Board of Trade, in a report on the relief of pauperism, proposed a "School of Labor" in each parish, "where poor children, between the ages of three and fourteen should be lodged, maintained, instructed and kept at work." In 1796, Mr. Pitt submitted a bill to ameliorate the condition of the poor," in which the establishment of an industrial school was contemplated for the instruction and maintenance of pauper children over five years of age. In 1788, the Philanthropic Society established in London a Refuge for the industrial, moral and intellectual training of juvenile criminals and the offspring of convicted criminals. In 1849, this Refuge, which was a sort of prison, work-shop, and school was abandoned for an estate in the country of about 140 acres, known as Red Hill, on which a Farm School or Agricultural colony, after the model of Mettray, was organized. From this date, the whole subject of Preventive and Reformatory institutions and agencies has been agitated in and out of Parliament, and there are now over forty schools of variously small, organized on the basis of the family, established by voluntary associations, and aided to some extent, out of public grants.

## ROME.

---

THE city of Rome is well supplied with Charitable Institutions of every kind for the diseased, the infirm, the destitute, the vicious, and the criminal. If rightly organized and administered, these institutions, and the agencies which they employ, would be sufficient to rid the streets of vagrancy and pauperism, provide for all the sick, for all orphans of poor but respectable parents, and the innocent offspring of criminals, as well as for the reformation of juvenile offenders, and for the destitution of aged people of both sexes and every condition of life.

The following are the names of a few of these institutions, with the objects to which they are devoted, taken from *Morichini's Instituti di Roma*:

ASYLUM AND HOSPITAL OF SAN SPIRITO—erected originally in 717, and extended by Pope Innocent III., in 1198, who placed it under the charge of a religious order of “Hospitalices,” and a “Confraternity” of the laity. A portion of this great establishment is devoted to the reception of foundlings or abandoned children—the boys being trained to trades or agriculture, and the girls, to become hospital nurses. If the latter marry, they receive a dowry of \$100.

The Hospital is divided into different wards, and is one of the best arranged, attended and managed in Europe. The buildings embrace a circuit of nearly half a mile, and the annual expense for support exceeds \$120,000. About 12,000 patients are received in the course of the year.

ORPHANS OF ST. MARY IN AQUIRO—founded by Paul III., in 1540, on the application of Ignatius Loyola—for orphans over seven and under eleven years of age. Those who show talent receive a superior education in a school connected with the asylum.

HOUSE OF INDUSTRY OF CANON MANFREDI—established in 1815, for poor children, who are brought up to making candles, soap, &c.

HOSPICE OF ST. MARY OF THE ANGELS—a house of industry for the poor, both old and young, and of both sexes. The men and boys are under the charge of the Brothers of the Christian Doctrine, and the girls, are under the immediate supervision of the Congregation of Daughters of Refuge of Mount Calvary, founded in 1651. There are over 900 inmates.

HOSPITAL OF ST. GALLE—established in 1656, as a night asylum for the poor, especially in winter, by a priest, named M. A. Odescalchi.

HOSPITAL OF ST. LOUIS—established about 1700, for poor women out of employment.

HOSPITAL FOR POOR SICK PRIESTS—established in 1650.

**CONSERVATORY OF ST. CATHARINE**—established in 1543, for the female children of abandoned women.

**CONSERVATORY OF MENDICANTS**—established in 1650, for destitute and vagrant girls, who are here taught to make silk fringe, cord, stockings, &c.

**CONSERVATORY OF DIVINE PROVIDENCE AND ST. PASCAL**—founded in 1674, by Francis Papaceti, for one hundred children of poor but honest parents. They are educated, and employed in making gloves, and other work of superior quality in leather. At marriage, or entering a convent, each receives a dowry of \$100.

**CONSERVATORY OF ST. MARY OF REFUGE**—founded in 1703, by Alexander Bussi, for orphans and destitute young women, from 8 to 26 years of age.

**CONSERVATORY OF STS. CLEMENT AND CRESCENTIUS**—founded in 1706, by Monsignor Aldini, for poor girls from 7 to 11 years of age. The inmates do all the work of the house, and are taught all household work and plain sewing. When they marry or enter a convent they receive a dowry.

**CONSERVATORY OF ST. PIUS**—founded in 1775, for poor girls, by Mgr. Potenziani. Taught to weave fine toweling and napkins.

**CONSERVATORY OF TRINITARIANS AND ST. EUPHEMIA**—established in 1789, by Catharine Marcheti, for orphans of officers of government.

**CONSERVATORY OF BORROMEO**—founded in 1790, by Cardinal Vitalian Borromeo, for forty destitute orphans—who are taught, supported, and trained to do plain and fine needlework, &c.

**CONSERVATORY OF THE VIRGIN OF SORROW**—established by Cardinal Oldeschalchi, in 1816, for girls over 12 years of age, not poor enough to enter the charitable conservatories, to acquire certain feminine industries, by paying \$4 to \$5 per month.

**ASYLUMS FOR POOR WIDOWS**—one founded by J. Ghislieri, for residence, the inmates furnishing their own board and clothing; another by Princess Barberini, for widows of a better social condition, having ten rooms and a kitchen.

**REFUGES OF THE CROSS**—one established by St. Ignatius, in 1542; another by Father Dominic de Jesus, in 1615; another by Sister Maria Theresa Sebastiani, in 1798—for females desirous to escape from wicked courses. The inmates are trained to some industrial pursuit, and thus help to support the institution, and themselves on leaving.

**REFUGE OF ST. MARY IN TRASTEVERE**—founded by Father Stracchini, for women leaving the prison of St. Michele. The inmates are instructed in some honest industry, and assisted, till on their discharge they can support themselves.

**REFUGE OF LORETTE**—founded by the Princess Theresa Doria Pamphili, in 1825, and supported by an association, for the benefit of poor women discharged convalescent from the hospitals of St. James.

We give a more extended notice of the Reformatory connected with the Hospital of San Michele, and of the Juvenile Asylum of "Papa John," Tata Giovanni.

# ASYLUM AND REFORMATORY OF SAN MICHELE,

AT

ROME.

[*From Travels of Rev. G. F. Haskins.*]

---

SAN MICHELE was originally formed by uniting three institutions already existing. The first was founded by Sixtus V., in 1580, for the reception of the poor of both sexes. It was, properly speaking, an almshouse, and was intended to suppress pauperism and mendicity in the city. The second was founded in 1582, by Leonardo Ceruso, for orphan and deserted boys. The third was founded by Tommaso Odescalchi, in 1686, for yet another class of boys, viz: those who had run away from their parents or guardians, and had no one to guard their morals and provide for their education. These three institutions were, by Innocent XII., in 1696, united into one, and placed in the building erected by Odescalchi on the Ripa Grande.

In 1703 Clement XI., with the aid of Carlo Fontana, erected another building for the correction and reformation of young boys, who had been convicted of crimes. We imagine that in this country was first conceived the idea of reforming juvenile delinquents, and of establishing institutions for that object. The scheme of juvenile reformation was in full and successful operation a whole century before it was even thought of in this country. It was devised in Rome, where almost every measure of philanthropy had its origin. The building just spoken of is admirably constructed for the purpose, and doubtless suggested the first idea of modern improvements in prison architecture in America, Switzerland and England. The dormitory consists of a vast rectangular hall, on the two longer sides of which it has a triple tier of cells, or rather small and neat apartments, one above the other. These are approached by means of an open gallery; two large windows at each end furnish an abundance of light and air. At one end of the hall stands an altar, and the inmates assist every morning at the holy sacrifice of the mass. For this purpose each inmate has only to leave his cell and kneel at the rail of the gallery. The cells are sixty-four in number, and all can be overlooked by a glance of the eye of the superintendent.

In 1735 Clement XII. constructed between these two buildings a female penitents' refuge. To Rome, therefore, are we also indebted for the first of these institutions for the protection and reformation of a most despised and unfortunate class.

In 1790 Pius VI. added an establishment for young girls who had no means of earning a livelihood. Here they acquired habits of industry, and were instructed in branches adapted to their strength, age and ability. Thousands have, in consequence, been rescued not only from poverty and ignorance, but also from vice and prostitution. This building, which is entirely separated from the others, has a pretty court yard attached to it, in the centre of which constantly plays a fountain of water. There is a small church attached, expressly



the girls, and there is also a larger one for the old people and boys. The establishment is more than half a mile in circumference.

San Michele is destined, therefore, for four classes of persons, viz.: aged men, women, youths and maidens. The men, to be entitled to admission, must be Romans or must have resided five years in Rome, and must also be free from every incurable or contagious disease. They are divided into two classes—the able-bodied and infirm. The latter occupy the lower story, that may go to chapel and to the refectory without ascending or descending a set of stairs. The charge of this community is intrusted to an ecclesiastic, of the title of prior, and it numbers at present one hundred and thirty individuals, one hundred of whom are gratuitously maintained, and thirty pay a living board. They who are strong enough are permitted to go abroad at certain fixed hours, and the others have a covered corridor to walk about in. Their daily allowance of food consists of eighteen ounces of wheat bread, four ounces of meat, (to which, twice a week, are added herbs, vegetables, &c.,) a quart of soup, and a pint of wine. A smaller portion of meat and salad is allowed at supper. On festival days they have a greater variety of dishes, and more rice.

The aged women are about one hundred and fifty in number. In this community there are, besides, about thirty younger women, who do the washing, sewing, cooking, &c., for the whole establishment. It is presided over by a prioress, selected from among the inmates, and she is changed every three years. The prior of the men's department has also a general supervision over the women. The diet is the same as above described.

The department of young women and girls, called the Conservatory of St. Michael, from the fact of its having existed for more than a century in the Lateran Palace, numbers two hundred and seventy inmates, nearly all gratuitously maintained. The great aim of this institution is to instruct the girls in religion, to save them from seduction, and teach them the duties and arts proper to their rank.

By night they are distributed into nine large dormitories, presided over by some of the older ones. They are superintended by a prioress and sub-prioress, selected once every three years from among themselves. They have a school, where they are taught reading, writing, arithmetic, and the arts suitable to their state; they are also instructed in singing. They do their own washing and cooking; they make the epaulets and other ornaments worn by the soldiers, for their encouragement they receive half the profits. They never leave the institution, except to become wives or nuns. The institution gives a dowry of one hundred dollars to each one who marries, and two hundred dollars each to those who become nuns. We saw among them some advanced in life. The most capable and prudent of these are made teachers and guardians of the younger ones.

At the department of San Michele which most interested me was that of the boys. Their number at present is about two hundred and twenty. They are divided into six *cameratas*, or classes, according to their ages. Each *camerata* has its patron saint, and takes his name. There is St. Michael, St. Francis, St. John, St. Peter and Paul, St. Charles, and the Holy Innocents. Each *camerata* has a prefect, who is an ecclesiastic, and two sub-prefects, called *decurions*, the latter are selected from the more mature and virtuous of the boys themselves. The conditions of admission are, that they be orphans, of the Roman Empire, and not under eleven years of age. The revenues will permit but a

limited number to be taken gratuitously. At present there are one hundred and sixty gratuitous pupils, and about sixty who pay four dollars and a half a month, which is all that is demanded. The diet of the children is the same as that of the adults. Their beds consist of a straw mattress, pillows stuffed with wool, a pair of sheets, two blankets, and an iron bedstead. On holidays they sally forth for recreation by *cameralas*, walking two by two, each *camerala* guided by its prefect, and repair to a fine vineyard without the walls, where they freely amuse themselves.

These boys are carefully instructed by the very best of masters. They are taught mechanical trades and the fine arts. We visited their workshops. The boys were busily occupied in statuary, Gobelin and other tapestry, carving, engraving in wood and copper, cutting cameos and medallions, moulding, drawing, painting, draughting, silk and woollen weaving, book binding, harness making, brass finishing, hat making, marble working, blacksmithing, cabinet making, locksmithing, carriage building, knapsack making, alto rilievo, architecture, tailoring, shoemaking, carpentering, stone cutting, working of metals, and printing books.

From these shops have gone forth some of the most distinguished artists in Europe. The boys remain till they have attained the age of twenty-one, when they are presented with a sum of money sufficient to start them in the world. Thus encouraged, they set sail bravely on the sea of life. But while so much attention is bestowed on mechanics and the fine arts, literary instruction is by no means neglected. According to their tastes, ages and abilities, they are taught christian doctrine, reading, writing, arithmetic, anatomy, mythology, sacred and profane history, and music, vocal and instrumental.

In a word, no pains, no expense, are spared to inflame the piety, to augment the virtue, to direct the energies, and to expand the intellect of these interesting youths, and to fit them for future usefulness and enjoyment. This department of San Michele is, in truth, a complete polytechnic school,—a conservatory of trades, of arts, of literature and of religion, opened by the wisdom and paternal zeal of the sovereign pontiffs of Rome a whole century before the example was imitated by other nations of Europe.

## THE JUVENILE ASYLUM OF TATA GIOVANNI,

AT

ROME.

---

[THE following sketch of the Hospice or Asylum of Papa John—who seems to have anticipated the shoemaker, John Pounds, in his way of benefiting vagrant and orphan children—is taken from De Bazelaire's Account of the Charitable and Educational Institutions at Rome. Paris, 1837.]

To accomplish great and useful results for the benefit of men, it is not always necessary to possess powerful influence, superior genius, or large resources. It is enough if the soul is kindled with the fire of charity from the altar of religion. Jean Borgi, a poor mason, and entirely uneducated, succeeded, fifty years ago, in founding an eminently successful institution for the training of abandoned orphans. He had seen troops of boys wandering about the city, almost naked and barefoot, growing up in vice and indolence; some of them orphans, others abandoned by their parents. He took them home with him, and by means of some alms, managed to clothe them and apprentice them amongst the artizans of the city, so that they could earn their living by their labor. Generous benefactors soon assisted him with advice and with money; amongst others, Michael di Pietro, since an eminent cardinal, who hired a tenement for him upon the Julian Way, and allowed him thirty crowns a month, which enabled him to increase the number of his orphans to forty. He called them his children, and they in return called him father; whence the institution came to be called Papa John's. Pius VII., a man of generous disposition, became the principal protector of Borgi; bought for him the house in which he was established, and treated him in the most friendly manner, as well as the orphans, to whom he often gave money with his own hand, in the sacristy of the Vatican.

Although Papa John was ignorant, he felt the need of instruction, and caused his children to be taught reading, writing and arithmetic, by one Francis Cervetti. But as John, although charitable, was rude and coarse in his manners, they failed to agree; Cervetti left him, and founded another refuge for orphans, called that of the Assumption of the Virgin, which was consolidated with that of Papa John in 1812. Borgi died of apoplexy, at the age of sixty-six. If his orphan asylum had not been a work of God, it would certainly have been entirely swept away by the whirlwind of the Revolution; since, under the new government, it had no cardinals or prelates to protect it, and people were thinking of anything except benevolence. The advocate, Belisarius Cristaldi, who afterward became a cardinal, took charge of the asylum, and transferred it to the convent of St. Nicolo di Tolentino, where he re-organized it, and arranged an industrial department, it not being judged safe, at the time, to trust the children in the workshops of the town. At the Pope's return, the convent passed again into the hands of the Augustines. The orphans were successively transferred to St. Sylvester, on the Quirinal, into the care of the fathers of the Company of the Faith; to the town of St. Agatha; to the palace of Ravenna; to the cate-

chumens' house of the Madonna of the Mountains; and at last, shortly afterward, Pius VII., having re-instated the catechumens, granted to them the church of St. Anne of the Carpenters, and a part of the convent of St. Francis de Sales.

The orphan house yet remains in this inconvenient place, receiving poor and abandoned children, after the rules of the founder; and indeed it is remarkable to observe how much prudence his charity seemed to inspire into this man, uneducated as he was, and disinclined to receive advice. The children occupy six rooms, named respectively after St. Joseph, St. Philip, St. Peter, St. Paul, St. Stanislaus, and Saints Camillus and Louis. All the arrangements of the institute being quite simple, the oldest and most steady children take charge of the rooms, and instruct the rest in the rudiments of study. Good priests or pious laymen often come in the evening to give instruction; some of them even instruct in the principles of decoration and geometry, which are important studies for young artizans. But above all, importance is attached to religious training; since, when faith has once become firmly planted in the soul, it causes the growth and fruitfulness of all the christian and social virtues.

Among the doctrines inculcated by religion, is this, that men are bound to work for their living. Accordingly, the pupils, as soon as they are old enough, are put to learn a trade in the workshops of the town, the institution employing only one tailor and shoemaker for the exclusive use of the house. This practice permits the young people to choose their own occupations according to their strength and disposition; and amongst the hundred and twenty pupils, there are thirty different employments. The fine arts and even literature, are not neglected; but before pupils are allowed to leave the mechanical pursuits, which are the chief occupations contemplated by the institution, they are required to give conclusive proof of talent, to avoid perverting its purposes. At the age of twenty they are dismissed, being then old enough to take care of themselves; and the after good conduct of most of them proves the good influence of such institutions upon the public morals.

The orphan house of Papa John has no dependence upon the magistracy; but by a special grant of Pius VII., its director for the time being chooses a coadjutor, and at the death or removal of one of them, the survivor chooses another, and so on. As long as this form of appointment is preserved, the house will always have good superiors; for the director, being really attached at heart to the institution, will choose one who will succeed him in his affection as well as his office. Two priests superintend the interior discipline; a good layman oversees the location of the pupils in workshops, and is continually on the watch over their progress and their conduct. The other *employés* are, a tailor, a shoemaker, a cook, his assistant, and a nurse; so that the administration goes on very thoroughly and simply, without great expenses.

The house has no funds, but is supported by the help of a small monthly allowance of two hundred and thirty dollars, from the apostolic chamber, from some benefactions, and from the earnings of the orphans themselves, who pay in about fifteen cents a day; which amounts sometimes to a hundred and fifty dollars a month. The total maintenance amounts to about four hundred and fifty dollars a month; each individual costing about forty-six dollars a year. The reader, who is desirous to know more of the details of the orphan house of Tata Giovanni, whose simplicity must render it easy of imitation in all countries, may consult the memoir, entitled "John Borgi, master mason, surnamed Papa John, and his house of refuge for abandoned children."

# PESTALOZZI'S EDUCATIONAL LABORS FOR THE POOR,

## AND FOR POPULAR SCHOOLS.

---

"It is to the charitable efforts of Pestalozzi"—remarks M. Demetz, the founder of the most complete and successful institution of reformatory education in the world, in a report on the Agricultural Reformatory Colonies of France,—“that we owe the establishment of agricultural colonies,” that is, of institutions, organized on the basis, and in the spirit of the family, with agricultural employment as the principal means of industrial training, and with methods of instruction, moral, intellectual, and physical, so far as applied, good enough for children of any class of society, and yet capable of being followed by an intelligent mother in the home of the poor. Not that Pestalozzi's own plans and methods under his own application, were eminently successful—for they were not. His institution at Neuhof, was a disastrous failure, in its immediate results, both as a school, and as a pecuniary speculation. But the christian spirit in which this excellent man labored—the family organization into which he gathered, even the outcasts of society, living among such pupils as a father, as well as pastor and teacher, and denying himself the quiet seclusion and comforts of the home which the fortune of his noble minded wife had secured for him, that he might inspire the orphan, and the abandoned and even criminal child with filial attachments, cultivate habits of self-reliance and profitable industry, and thus enable them “to live in the world like men”—this spirit, system and aim, the dream and labor of his long and troubled life, imperfectly inaugurated at Neuhof, and never fully realized at Stanz, Burgdorf, and Yverden, but widely diffused by his writings, and the better success, under more favorable conditions, of his pupils and disciples in Switzerland and Germany, have led to the establishment of new educational institutions for rich and poor, of schools of practical agriculture, as well as of agricultural reformatories, and at the same time has regenerated the methods of popular education generally. To the connected and comprehensive survey of Pestalozzi's Life and Educational System by Karl von Raumer, the present Minister of public instruction in Prussia, already given,\* we add a notice of his labors at Neuhof by Dr. Blochmann, of Dresden, and by Dr. Diesterweg, of Berlin, from discourses pronounced on the occasion of the Centennial celebration of Pestalozzi's birth-day on the 12th of January, 1846.

### PESTALOZZI'S POOR SCHOOL AT NEUHOF.

PESTALOZZI having failed in a plantation of madder which he had commenced in connection with a mercantile house of Zurich, on an estate of about one hundred acres of land on which he commenced a house in the

---

\* *Barnard's American Journal of Education*, Vol. III., p. 401.

Italian villa style, to which he gave the name of Neuhof, projected the plan of an educational establishment respecting which Dr. Blochmann,\* an admiring pupil and avowed follower thus writes:

It was not in Pestalozzi's nature to sink under misfortune, so long as he could pursue the attainment of the object of his life. He had early learned and deeply fixed in his mind the maxim,

"Tu ne cede malis, sed contra fortior ito."

He advanced like a roused lion, with resolute courage, against all unfriendly influences. In spite of the severe distress into which the unforeseen withdrawal of the Zurich house plunged him, he determined to go on, and to make his landed estate the centre of operations for his educational and agricultural plans. He resolved even upon more and higher designs. Henceforward he will live amongst beggar children, and share his bread in poverty amongst them; will live like a beggar himself, that he may learn to teach beggars to live like men.

He also proposed to render his establishment an institution for the poor. This undertaking attracted attention. It was considered a noble and benevolent enterprise; and his views and principles had so much influence, in spite of the mistrust of his practical ability, that he found assistance in Zurich, Bern and Basle, and was able without much difficulty to obtain the necessary funds for the institution, by the aid of a loan, for several years, without interest. His friends on all sides assisted him; more especially Iselin of Basle, whom he had met and known in the Helvetic Diet, and who introduced the beloved enterprise to public notice in his Ephemerides.

The Institution for the Poor at Neuhof was opened in 1775. Poor children flocked in from all directions, many of them gathered by Pestalozzi himself from their misery, and out of the streets. He had soon fifty children, whom he kept busy in summer with field labor, and in winter with spinning and other handicrafts, instructing them all the time, and developing and clearing up their mental faculties, especially by oral recitations and mental arithmetic.† Pestalozzi had early perceived

\* HENRY PESTALOZZI. Touches at a Picture of his Life and Labors: from his own testimony, from observation, and communication. By Dr. Karl Justus Blochmann, Privy School Councilor and Professor: Leipzig. 1846.

† The idea of such a school for the poor, in which agricultural and industrial labor were to be combined with instruction, accompanied Pestalozzi, to whose mind it was so new and stimulating, all his life; and even remained like a sunbeam shining from behind the dark and clouds of the past, his last love, his last active desire. What, however, he never completely accomplished, has been done by Emanuel von Fellenberg, who was assisted in the work, not only by his certain and practical skill and experience, but especially by his good fortune in discovering in Vehrli, such a man as is very seldom to be found, but absolutely necessary in the actual realization of such a school. Whoever, like myself—and there are thousands—has become thoroughly acquainted with Vehrli's school in Hofwyl, must be convinced that in institutions for the education of the poor so organized, conducted in such a spirit, with such love and self-sacrifice, there is to be found an inestimable blessing for the state and the people. Fellenberg has shown from his account books, that a poor boy, received at his ninth year, and remaining in the institution through his eighteenth, pays by his labor during the last half of his stay, for the excess of the expense of maintaining him over his earnings, during the first half. Lange, in his work on "The Country Educational Institutions for Poor Children," (*Landliche Erziehungs Anstalten für Armenkinder*), has made very thorough researches into this

that in the nature of every man are innate powers and means sufficient to assure him an adequate support ; and that the hindrances arising from exterior circumstances, to the development of the natural endowments, are not in their nature insuperable.

The usual means of benevolence and mercy (as he was accustomed to name the orphan houses, institutions for supporting the poor, &c., of the period,) seemed to him to stimulate and encourage the evil, instead of helping it. The thousand public and private ways of spending alms, with which the times were crowded to nausea, the beggar making and hypocrite training modes of assisting the poor, seemed to him only a palliative. The only means of affording real assistance he saw to lie in this ; that the inborn natural powers of every man to provide for his own necessities, and sufficiently to perform the business, duties and obligations of his being, should be developed, encouraged, and set upon an independent footing. With this conviction the impulse increased within him to labor for this definite purpose ; that it should become practicable for the poorest in the land to be assured of the development of their bodily, spiritual and moral powers both in relation to their own characters, and to their personal, domestic and social relations ; and through this development to obtain the sure basis of a peaceful and sufficient means of existence. He had already taken the first step in this direction, by admitting into his house beggar children and others abandoned to neglect, that he might rescue them from their debasing condition, lead them back to manhood and a higher destiny, and thus prove to himself and those around him more and more clearly the truth of his opinion. His institution was to comprise the means for a sufficient instruction in field labor, in domestic work, and in associated industry. This was not, however, the ultimate purpose. That was, a training to manhood ; and for it, these other departments were only preparatory.

First of all, he proposed to train his poor children to exertion and self-control, by forbearing and assiduous discipline, and by the ever powerful stimulus of love. He aimed to possess himself of their hearts, and from that starting point to bring them to the consciousness and the attainment of every thing noble and great in humanity. "I had from my youth " he says, "a high instinctive value of the influence of domestic training in the education of poor children, and likewise a decided preference for field labor, as the most comprehensive and unobjectionable external basis for this training, and also for another reason : as it is the condition of the manufacturing population which is increasing so rapidly amongst us, who, abandoned to the operations of a mercantile and speculating

---

subject, not only from other writings upon institutions for the poor after the model of Fellenberg's, but from his own repeated and extensive travels and personal observation. Our own teacher's association (*pädagogische verein*, at Dresden,) has proposed as a chief aim of its practical efforts, the realization of an institution for the education of poor and abandoned children, after Pestalozzi's model ; for which purpose, it purchased some eight years since, a property in great part already in cultivation, and with a roomy mansion house, near the *Löblicher Schlage*, which was dedicated on the 12th of January, 1845, by the name of the Pestalozzi Foundation, (*Pestalozzi Stiftung*.)



interest, wholly destitute of humanity, are in danger, in case of unforeseen accident, of being able to find within themselves no means of escape from entire ruin.\* Full of a love for my father-land, which hoped for it almost impossible things, and longed to lead it back to its native dignity and power, I sought with the greatest activity not only for the possible but for the certain means of averting the coming evil, and of awakening anew the remainder of the ancient home happiness, home industry, and home manners. These designs sank deep into my heart and often made me feel with sorrow what a high and indispensable human duty it is to labor for the poor and miserable, with all the means which our race possesses, in church, state or individuals, that he may attain to a consciousness of his own dignity through his feeling of the universal powers and endowments which he possesses, awakened within him; that he may not only learn to gabble over by rote the religious maxim that 'man is created in the image of God, and is bound to live and die as the child of God,' but may himself experience its truth by virtue of the divine power within him, so that he may be irresistibly and really elevated not only above the ploughing oxen, but above the man in purple and silk, who lives unworthily of his high destiny."

With such lofty and magnificent views, and with a heart at even a higher level of love, Pestalozzi labored at NeuhoF from sunrise to sunset, amongst his beggar children. He lived steadily up to his principles, laboring in his vocation to the full extent of his powers; always knew what he was seeking, cared not for the morrow, but felt from moment to moment the needs of the present. Among his children were very many ungovernable ones of a better class, and still worse, many who had brought themselves from a better condition to beggary, and who were presumptuous and pretentious by reason of their former situation; to whom the energetic discipline which he applied, according to his design, was at first hateful. They considered their situation with him as more degrading than that in which they had been before. NeuhoF was full every Sunday of the mothers and relatives of children who found their situation not what they had expected. All the impertinences which a miserable rabble of beggars could indulge in a house without visible protection or imposing exterior, were practiced, to encourage the children in their discontent; even so far that they were often tempted to run away by night just after they had been washed clean and clad in their Sunday clothes. However, these difficulties would little by little

---

\* Upon the influence of manufacturing wealth amongst the Swiss at that time, Pestalozzi expresses himself thus in another place: "The paternal love of the upper and the filial love of the lower classes, in consequence of the increase of the manufacturing interest, is going more and more to ruin under the effects of ignoble wealth. The blinding height of arrogance derived from an eminent position obtained by money, the deceitful cornucopia of an unreliable life of mere pleasure, has drawn all within its destructive influence, even down to the commonest of the people, and carried them into the crooked path of a spiritless and powerless routine life. Truth, honor, sympathy, moderation, are daily vanishing. Pride, insolence, recklessness, contemptuousness, laxity, immorality, the eager pursuit of vain and ostentatious pleasure, the cherishing of boundless selfishness, have taken the place of the ancient simplicity, faith and honor."

have been overcome, had not Pestalozzi pushed his undertaking to an extent altogether beyond his means, and undertaken to modify it according to the original design, which supposed the possession of the utmost knowledge of manufacturing and of human nature; qualities in which he was lacking in the same measure in which he needed them urgently for managing his institution. Moreover, he hurried on to the higher branches of instruction, before supplying the solid foundation of acquaintance with the lower; an error recognized as the leading one of the teaching of the age, against which he had striven in his scheme of education with all his strength. For the sake of a fallacious prospect of greater profit, in higher branches of industry, he committed, in teaching his children to spin and weave, the very faults which he had so strongly abjured in all his expressed opinions upon education, and which he saw to be so dangerous to children of all classes. He would attempt to secure the finest spinning, before his children had acquired even a small amount of firmness and surety of hand in coarse work; and undertook to manufacture muslin before his weavers had attained skill in weaving common cotton stuff.

Through these and the like mistakes, through his ignorance of business, and his great lack of a sound practical faculty of learning it, it happened that Pestalozzi fell every year deeper in debts; and when these also from time to time had been paid by the self-sacrificing generosity of his noble wife, there came at last an end of this means of help, and in a few years the greater part of his substance and his expected inheritance was dissolved into smoke. The great confidence which he had enjoyed among his neighbors, changed when his undertaking failed so soon, into an utter and blind rejection of any shadow even of faith in his enterprise, or of belief in his possessing any capacity at all as a teacher. But such is the way of the world; it treated Pestalozzi, when poor, as it treats all who become poor by their own faults. Their money being gone, it withdraws also its confidence from them, in matters where they really are capable and efficient.

His enterprise failed, in a manner excessively painful, both to himself and his wife, in the year 1780, in the fifth year of its existence. His misfortune was complete; he was now poor. He felt most deeply the condition of his noble hearted wife, who in the excess of her devotion had mortgaged away for him nearly all her possessions. His situation was indeed shocking. In his over handsome country house, he was often destitute of bread, wood, and a few pennies, wherewith to defend himself from cold and hunger. Only the entire forbearance of his creditors and the kind help of his friends preserved him from despair and entire ruin.

Thus he lived a poor and destitute life in NeuhoF for eighteen years, fighting with want and misery. He lived as a poor man amongst the poor; suffered what the common people suffered, and saw what they were. He studied the wants of the lower classes and the sources of their misery, in a manner which would have been impossible for one in better circumstances.

# ORPHAN HOUSE

AT

TROGEN, (APPENZELL.)

---

THIS establishment is intended for orphans from the neighborhood, who are received gratuitously; but it admits boarders from other cantons, who pay about \$43,00 a year. Its number of scholars was at first only twelve, but has now reached the statutory limit of forty. There are also forty-six day scholars, who pay a small rate for instruction in the school and workshops. The first pupils were only boys; but upon the marriage of the director, in 1825, a small number of girls were admitted. No inconveniences have resulted from this admission, the different sexes occupying separate buildings. The orphans are admitted at twelve years, after a year's probation; boarders being admitted only at ten, and after a shorter probation of three months.

The establishment is organized on the plan of a family, the director representing the father, and his wife the mother. They are never separated from the children under their charge, and the same education is given to them and their own children. The director with the assistance of pupil teachers chosen from the school, has the general charge, gives instruction, manages the out-door and in-door labor, and administers the finances. The directress has the management of the household and of the girls. With their assistance she superintends the cooking, the laundry, and the making and mending of clothes and bedding; and instructs them in all the handiwork suited to their needs.

All the pupils attend school up to fourteen years; after that time they belong to a reviewing class, and always attend the classes in singing and in religious instruction. There are usually about four hours a day of study; the course includes reading, writing, memorizing, arithmetic, written and mental, grammar, linear drawing, with applications to agriculture and surveying, history of the country, mathematical geography, singing and religion.

The amusements are varied with suitable gymnastic exercises. There are annual festivals and excursions to the mountains, and the founder, M. Zellweger, was during his life accustomed from time to time to entertain the more deserving of the pupils at his own table.

In this establishment, the constant presence of parental watchfulness, and the love and family feeling which prevails, render faults few and small. Punishment is scarcely ever more than a mere admonition; if that is not enough, the culprit is usually caused to repair his fault in some mode having a direct relation to it; by amending harm done; clearing up disorderly work; remaining away from church if irreverent, &c.

A society of patronage has been formed to assist graduates in establishing themselves, which pays the expense of an apprenticeship, or makes advances to them of money, or tools, or raw materials, and usually assigns to each a special patron for oversight and advice.

The girls most frequently become domestics or sempstresses; of the boys, some become teachers, others mechanics, gardeners, farm workmen, weavers, &c. The reports of their success and good conduct are in general satisfactory.

## EDUCATIONAL ESTABLISHMENT

37

MR. DE FELLEBERG, AT HOFWYL.

---

THE great educational establishment of Mr. de Fellenberg at Hofwyl, in the canton of Berne, has attracted more attention, and exerted a wider influence, than any one institution in Europe or America, during the present century. It originated in motives of patriotism and benevolence, about the year 1805, and was sustained for forty years by personal efforts and pecuniary sacrifices on the part of its founder, which have never been equalled among men of his wealth, and social position. Born to every advantage of education which wealth and rank could secure, advanced early to positions of trust and influence in public life, enjoying extensive opportunities of observation by travel in the most refined nations, thrown by the political convulsions of his country and of Europe, from 1790 to 1805, much among the people and their rulers, Fellenberg became convinced that improvement in *early education* was the only resource for the permanent strength and elevation of the state of his own and other countries. To this object, at the age of thirty-one, he consecrated himself and his fortune. Being possessed of ample means, he resolved to form on his own estate, and on an independent basis, a model institution, in which it should be proved what education could accomplish for the benefit of humanity. Out of this determination arose the Institution at Hofwyl.

He commenced with two or three boys from abroad, with his own children, in his own house; and from time to time received others, but never more than two or three new pupils at once, that they might fall insensibly into the habits of the school, without producing any effect upon its general state. In 1807, the first building was erected for the "Literary Institution," and the number of pupils increased to eighty, mostly from patrician families. During this year he projected an institution for indigent children, and employed Vehrli, the son of a schoolmaster of Thurgovia, in the execution of the plan, after training him in his own family. The farmhouse of the establishment was assigned for this school, and here Vehrli received the pupils taken from among the poorest families in the neighborhood. He left the table of Mr. de Fellenberg, and shared their straw beds and vegetable diet, became their fellow-laborer on the farm, and companion in hours of relaxation, as well as their teacher, and thus laid the foundation of the "Agricultural Institution," or "Poor School," in 1808. The principles on which this school was established, were to employ agriculture as the means of moral education for the poor, and to make

their labors the means of defraying the expense of their education. In this institution, Vehrli attained that practical knowledge of teaching, which fitted him for his higher work in the Normal School at Krutzingen.

About the same time, a school of "Theoretical and Practical Agriculture" for all classes, was formed and provided with professors. To this school several hundred students resorted annually. In the same year, Fellenberg commenced the formation of a Normal School, or seminary for teachers, at his own expense, inviting one of the most distinguished educators of the day to conduct it. Forty-two teachers, of the canton of Berne, came together the first year and received a course of instruction in the art of teaching. So great was the zeal inspired by the liberality of Fellenberg, and the course of instruction, that the teachers were content to prolong their stay beyond their first intention, and to lodge in tents, in lack of other accommodations on the premises. Owing to some jealousy and low party intrigue, the government of Berne interfered with his plan of bringing the teachers of the canton annually together for a similar course, and henceforth the benefits were open only to teachers from other cantons, and to such as belonged to the School of Agriculture. The teachers, after one of these annual courses, presented an address to Fellenberg, from which the following is an extract. It is addressed to "the worthy Father and Friend of the People."

"When we reflect that without education no true happiness is to be attained, and that this can only be secured by means of well-taught and virtuous teachers; and when we recollect that you have devoted yourself to the object without regard to the sacrifice it may require,—we must rejoice that this age is favored with such a friend of his country; and when we remember the kindness and friendship with which we have been treated at Hofwyl, we are compelled to give you our affection as well as our admiration, and which will not diminish as long as our hearts shall beat, and our children shall learn to say, 'So lived and labored Father Fellenberg.'\* We will not enter here into any particular statement of our views concerning the course of instruction we have received, which we shall in due time make known to the public: we will only say, for your own satisfaction, that this course has far exceeded our expectations, by its complete adaptation to practical life, by the skill and efforts of your assistants, and by the moral and religious spirit with which the whole has been animated. We have been led to enter with a fervent devotion into a sacred engagement, that we will live and labor in our calling in the spirit which you have exhibited, and thus prove to you that your noble sacrifices have not been vain. We are more deeply penetrated than ever before with a sense of the sacredness of our calling. We are resolved to conduct ourselves with prudence and caution, in affection and union, with unyielding and conscientious faithfulness, in the discharge of our duty, and thus to prove ourselves worthy of your Institution."

In continuation of our brief sketch of Fellenberg's establishment at Hofwyl, we will add that, from 1810 to 1817, it attracted the attention of educators and statesmen in Switzerland and all parts of Europe. Pupils were sent from Russia, Germany, France and England. Deputations from foreign governments visited it, to learn especially the organization of the School of Agriculture, and the Poor, or Rural School. In 1815, a

---

\* This title was habitually given to De Fellenberg by the Swiss teachers and youth who appreciated his character, or who had experienced his kindness.

new building was erected to accommodate the increasing number of the Agricultural School, the lower part of which was occupied as a riding-school and gymnasium. In 1818 another building became necessary for the residence of the professors, and the reception of the friends of the pupils; and soon after, a large building, now the principal one of the establishment, with its two wings, was erected for the Literary Institution, which furnished every accommodation that could be desired for health or improvement. In 1823 another building was erected, in the garden of the mansion, for a school of poor girls, which was placed under the direction of the oldest daughter of Fellenberg; and in 1827 the Intermediate or Practical Institution was established. It is much to be desired that this example of slow and cautious progress might be imitated by those who are establishing institutions in our own country, in place of collecting at once a large mass of discordant materials, without any preparation which can render them a solid basis for a well-proportioned or permanent moral edifice.

The Practical Institution, or "Real School," was designed for the children of the middle classes of Switzerland, and not solely for the same class in the canton of Berne, aiming thereby to assimilate the youth of the whole country into common feelings and principles of patriotism, by being educated together, and on one system. The course of instruction included all the branches which were deemed important in the education of youth not intended for the professions of law, medicine and theology. The pupils belonged to families of men of business, mechanics, professional men, and persons in public employment, whose means did not allow them to furnish their children an education of accomplishments, and who did not wish to have them estranged from the simplicity of the paternal mansion. In view of these circumstances, the buildings, the furniture, the table, and the dress of the pupils, were arranged in correspondence to the habits in these respects of their families at home. In addition to an ordinary scholastic course, the pupils were all employed two hours in manual labor on the farm, in a garden plot of their own, in the mechanic's shop, and in household offices, such as taking care of rooms, books, and tools.

More than one hundred reports, many of them quite voluminous, have been published in this country and in Europe, respecting the whole, or portions of Fellenberg's Establishments at Hofwyl. The most particular account, and that in which the spirit of the institutions was considered by their founder to be best exhibited, was given in a series of Letters from Hofwyl, by William C. Woodbridge, in the *Annals of Education*, published in Boston. These letters were republished in London, in 1842, as an Appendix to "*Letters from Hofwyl, by a Parent, on the Educational Institutions of De Fellenberg*," pp. 372.



## FELLENBERG'S PRINCIPLES OF EDUCATION.

"The great object of education is to develop all the faculties of our nature, physical, intellectual, and moral, and to endeavor to train and unite them into one harmonious system, which shall form the most perfect character of which the individual is susceptible; and thus prepare him for every period, and every sphere of action to which he may be called. It is only by means of the harmonious development of every faculty of our nature, in one connected system, that we can hope to see complete men issue from our institutions—men who may become the saviors of their country, and the benefactors of mankind. To form such characters is more important than to produce mere scholars, however distinguished, and this is the object on which the eye of the educator should be fixed, and to which every part of his instruction and discipline should be directed, if he means to fill the exalted office of 'being a fellow-worker with God.'"

"On the reception of a new pupil, our first object is to obtain an accurate knowledge of his individual character, with all its resources and defects, in order to aid in its farther development, according to the apparent intention of the Creator. To this end, the individual, independent activity of the pupil is of much greater importance than the ordinary, busy officiousness of many who assume the office of educators and teachers. They too often render the child a mere magazine of knowledge, collected by means purely mechanical, which furnishes him neither direction nor aid in the business of life. The more ill-digested knowledge a man thus collects, the more oppressive will be the burden to its possessor, and the more painful his helplessness. Instead of pursuing this course, we endeavor, by bestowing the utmost care upon the cultivation of the conscience, the understanding, and the judgment, to light up a torch in the mind of every pupil, which shall enable him to observe his own character, and shall set in the clearest light all the exterior objects which claim his attention.

A great variety of exercises of the body and the senses are employed to prepare our pupils for the fulfilment of their destination. It is by means of such exercises that every man should acquire a knowledge of his physical strength, and attain confidence with regard to those efforts of which he is capable, instead of that fool-hardiness which endangers the existence of many who have not learned to estimate their own powers correctly.

All the various relations of space should be presented to the eye, to be observed and combined in the manner best adapted to form the coup d'œil. Instruction in design renders us important service in this respect—every one should thus attain the power of reproducing the forms he has observed, and of delineating them with facility, and should learn to discover the beauty of forms, and to distinguish them from their contrasts. It is only where the talent is remarkable that the attempt should be made to render the pupil an artist.

The cultivation of the ear by means of vocal and instrumental music is not less important to complete the development of the human being. The organs of speech, the memory, the understanding, and the taste, should be formed in the same manner by instruction, and a great variety of exercises in language, vocal music, and declamation. The same means should also be employed to cultivate and confirm devotional feelings.

In the study of natural history the power of observation is developed in reference to natural objects. In the history of mankind the same faculty is employed upon the phenomena of human nature and human relations, and the moral taste is cultivated, at the same time the faculty of conceiving with correctness, and of employing and combining with readiness, the materials collected by the mind, and especially the reasoning faculty, should be brought into exercise, by means of forms and numbers, exhibited in their multiplied and varied relations.

The social life of our pupils contributes materially to the formation of their moral character. The principles developed in their experience of practical life among themselves, which gradually extends with their age and the progress of their minds, serves as the basis of this branch of education. It presents the examples and occa-



sions necessary for exhibiting and illustrating the great principles of morals. According to the example of Divine Providence, we watch over this little world in which our pupils live and act, with an ever vigilant, but often invisible care, and constantly endeavor to render it more pure and noble.

At the same time that the various improvements of science and art are applied to the benefit of our pupils, their sound religious education should be continually kept in view in every branch of study; this is also the object of a distinct series of lessons, which generally continue through the whole course of instruction, and whose influence is aided by the requisite exercises of devotion.

By the combination of means I have described, we succeed in directing our pupils to the best methods of pursuing their studies independently; we occupy their attention, according to their individual necessities and capacities, with philology, the ancient and modern languages, the mathematics, and their various modes of application, and a course of historical studies, comprising geography, statistics, and political economy.

*Moral Education.*—The example of the instructor is all important in moral education. The books which are put into the pupils' hands are of great influence. The pupil must be constantly surrounded with stimulants to good actions in order to form his habits. A new institution should be begun with so small a number of pupils, that no one of them can escape the observation of the educator and his moral influence. The general opinion of the pupils is of high importance, and hence should be carefully directed. Intimate intercourse between pupils and their educators begets confidence, and is the strongest means of moral education. The educator must be able to command himself—his conduct must be firm and just; frequent reproofs from such are more painful to the pupil than punishment of a momentary sort.

While influences tending directly to lead the pupil astray should be removed from the school, he must be left to the action of the ordinary circumstances of life, that his character may be developed accordingly. The pupil should be led as far as possible to correct his faults by perceiving the consequences of them; the good or bad opinion of his preceptor and comrades are important means of stimulation. Exclusion from amusements, public notice of faults, and corporal punishment, are all admissible. Solitary confinement is efficacious as a punishment. Rewards and emulation are unnecessary as motives.

Religion and morality are too intimately connected to admit of separation in the courses inculcating them. The elementary part of such a course is equally applicable to all sects.

No good is to be derived from employing the pupils as judges or juries, or giving them a direct share in awarding punishment for offenses. It is apt to elevate the youth too much in his own conceit.

Family life is better adapted, than any artificial state of society within an institution, to develop the moral sentiments and feelings of youth.

*Intellectual Education.*—A system of prizes, or emulation, and the fear of punishment, do not afford the strongest motives to intellectual exertion. Experience shows that places in a class may be dispensed with. It is possible to develop a taste for knowledge, a respect and attachment for teachers, and a sense of duty which will take the place of any lower motive in inducing the requisite amount of study.

In the higher departments of instruction it is better to confine the task of the teacher to giving instruction merely, placing the pupil under the charge of a special educator, at times when he is not engaged in the class-room.

With the other, and more useful branches of instruction, correct ideas of natural history and phenomena should be communicated to children, and require, first, that they shall be duly trained to observation by calling the observing faculties into frequent exercise. Second, that they shall be made acquainted with the elements of natural history, especially in reference to familiar objects. Third, that the most familiar phenomena of nature, such as thunder and lightning, the rain bow, &c.; and further, the most simple principles of the mechanic arts, trades, &c., should be explained to them. Fourth, they should be taught to draw, in connection with the other instruction. Accuracy of conception is favored by drawing, and it is a powerful aid to the memory. The most important principles of physiology, and their application to the preservation of health, should form a part of the instruction.

**Physical Education.** Pure air, a suitable diet, regular exercise and repose, and a proper distribution of time, are the principal means of physical education. It is as essential that a pupil leave his studies during the time appropriated to relaxation, as that he study during the hours devoted to that purpose. Voluntary exercise is to be encouraged by providing suitable games, by affording opportunities for gardening, and by excursions, and by bathing. Regular gymnastic exercises should be insisted on as the means of developing the body; a healthy action of the bodily frame has an important influence on both mind and morals. Music is to be considered as a branch of physical education, having powerful moral influences. The succession of study, labor, musical instruction, or play, should be carefully attended to. The hours of sleep should be regulated by the age of the pupil.

Experience has taught me that *indolence* in young persons is so directly opposite to their natural disposition to activity, that unless it is the consequence of bad education, it is almost invariably connected with some constitutional defect.

The great art of education, therefore, consists in knowing how to occupy every moment of life in well-directed and useful activity of the youthful powers, in order that, so far as possible, nothing evil may find room to develop itself."

Mr. de Fellenberg died in 1846, and his family discontinued the educational establishments at Hofwyl, in 1848, except "the Poor School," which is now placed under a single teacher, and the pupils are employed in the extensive operations of the farm to acquire a practical knowledge of agriculture. But the principles developed by the distinguished philanthropist and educator, have become embodied in the educational institutions of his native country and of Europe. This is particularly true of the great aim of all his labors to develop all the faculties of our nature, physical, intellectual and moral, and to train and unite them into one harmonious system, which shall form the most perfect character of which the individual is susceptible, and thus prepare him for every period, and every sphere of action to which he may be called.

# REFORM SCHOOL AT BÄCHTELEN.

CANTON OF BERNE.

REPORT OF E. DUCPETIAUX.

---

THE establishment of agricultural schools for poor children has been of great advantage to Switzerland, and has powerfully contributed to relieve misery and arrest the progress of pauperism. But experience has shown that these establishments are not sufficient for the necessities of vicious and criminal children. When mingled with others in the schools for the poor, these children spread around the seeds of a demoralization, which the vigilance of the directors can not always counteract. Thus it came to be understood that a distinction must be made between these two classes of children, and that special establishments must be created for the latter. One of the first promoters of this reform, Jean Gaspard Zellweger, of Trogen, submitted a plan for accomplishing it, to the general assembly of the Swiss Society of Public Utility. It was adopted, and in order to hasten its execution, M. Kuratli, a former pupil of Vehrli, was deputed to visit such foreign institutions, as might furnish models for the projected school. Kuratli spent two years in Germany, where, after having visited the establishment of Kopf at Berlin, he devoted himself to the careful study of the organization and management of the institution for children morally endangered, called the Rauhe Haus, at Horn, near Hamburg. At his return to Switzerland in 1840, he was placed in charge of the reform school, the establishment of which had been decided upon since 1837.

The school was opened at Bächtelen, half a league from Berne, on the first of May, 1840. It was intended for the special purpose of educating and reforming vicious children, and those convicted of petty misdemeanors; a design midway between the schools for poor children, and the house of correction. The most scrupulous caution was exercised in the admission of children; they were received singly, and at intervals more or less extended. At the end of 1841, accordingly, there were but twelve children in the school, who constituted one "family," under the special direction of M. Kuratli. A second family was commenced in 1842, and in 1844 was completed, and placed under the charge of a second teacher, M. Engeli, also a former pupil of Vehrli. In 1845, a third class was formed, consisting, like the others, of twelve children. Besides these three families, there has been organized a probationary department of six or eight children, where new comers are placed before being definitely located in the different families, as vacancies occur. This organization by families, modeled after the plans of Dr. Wichern, at the Rauhe Haus, has thus far fully answered its purpose; it facilitates supervision, encourages emulation, and permits application to each child of the influences which his peculiar character demands.

The school of Bächtelen admits children from all the cantons; but for reasons easily understood, it receives only boys, and of the Protestant communion. But its founders intend to establish a similar institution for Catholic children, and one for girls.

Children are admitted, at from six to fifteen years of age, and their stay is four years long at least.

The final authority over the school, is in a central committee, composed of from four to six members of the Swiss Society for Public Utility, chosen by it, and belonging to different cantons; its interior arrangements are entrusted to a special committee, whose members live in the neighborhood. These committees have distinct and clearly defined duties.

The officers of the establishment are, a director, who is also principal teacher; an assistant teacher, who is "father" of the first family; two under teachers, each at the head of one of the other families. A farmer, a stable-man, and a housekeeper, complete the list, which seems at first sight a pretty long one, for only forty children. But considering the character of these children, their individual needs, the necessity of vigilant and unceasing watchfulness over each one, it is evident that it would be impossible to accomplish the proposed purpose with a less number. At Horn, the institution of brothers, or teacher aspirants, furnishes an ample supply of subordinate officers, but at similar institutions where they are wanting, the defect must be supplied by a greater number of paid teachers.

The salaries, all together, amount to about six hundred dollars. The director and principal is paid one hundred and sixty dollars; each of the assistants, the farmer, and the housekeeper, sixty dollars. All these have besides lodging, board and maintenance, except clothing.

Farming and gardening occupy the children during most of the year. Under the name of accessory occupations, are established shops for rope-making, cabinet work and cooperage.

The instruction is similar to that of the primary schools of the canton, and occupies two or three hours a day in summer, and four or five in winter. Religious instruction is given by the parish minister. As for the work of education, it goes on every day and every instant. The children, being always in some relation or other with the director, or with the teacher who is at the head of the family to which they belong, can not escape from the salutary influences which are operating upon them from every side. Accordingly, their general conduct leaves nothing to desire; and their progress in study and amendment in morals keep pace with each other. Up to the present time, although graduations have been but few, the success already obtained augurs well for the future. A committee of patronage has been appointed, to facilitate the obtaining advantageous situations for graduates and for maintaining a benevolent supervision over them.

To extend the benefits of this institution, and to prepare for the establishment of other similar ones, there has recently been created at Bächtelen a special department for training instructors and foremen. Before actual admission, pupils in this department are subjected to a probation of three months. Their course lasts for three years.

The reform school at Bächtelen owes its existence to the indefatigable charitableness of the Swiss cantons, which has already originated so many useful institutions. It is sustained by the help of subscription, and private gifts, subsidies from the cantons, the returns of the farm and workshops, and the payments of communes, parents and benefactors, for particular pupils. The average of these payments is about fifteen dollars a year. The property includes forty *jucharten*\* of fertile land, in full cultivation, and worth, along with buildings, furniture, cattle, &c., about sixteen thousand five hundred dollars. Deducting from this amount the unpaid debt and the amount due for ordinary maintenance of the children, it appears that on the 31st Dec., 1843, the real capital of the institution was about seven thousand dollars. The average annual expense of each pupil has of late years been about forty-nine and one-half dollars.

---

\* The *juchart* is nearly half an acre

# RURAL SCHOOL OF CARRA.

CANTON OF GENEVA.

REPORT OF E. DUOPETIAUX.

---

THIS establishment was erected in 1820, on the plan of the Poor School at Hofwyl, by several benevolent men, at whose head was M. C. P. de Rochemont. The design of the founders was to rescue and bring up respectably, the foundlings and orphans of the canton. These had usually, from motives of economy, been boarded out amongst the peasants of Savoy, who, by reason of their poverty, took no care of their physical or moral education. When they grew old enough to be useful, they were brought back to be apprenticed to mechanics, who usually managed them with an exclusive and selfish view to their own interests.

The reform of these abuses was undertaken at first upon a very limited scale; it was commenced with only three orphans, to whom three more were added at the end of the first year. The number increased gradually; and for some years has now averaged twenty-six boys. Girls are not received; there is an exclusive establishment for them not far off, on the same basis.

At Carra is to be found the type of the organization which is common to most of the rural schools for the poor in Switzerland. The director of the school fills the place of the father of a family, in which the pupils are children. The place of director has been filled, since its origin, by a devoted man, Jean Jacques Eberhard, a pupil from the school of Vehrli, that remarkable seminary, from which came the characteristics which have given the Swiss rural schools the reputation which they justly and generally enjoy.

The rural school of Carra was at once established upon a private estate, where it received as it were a friendly hospitality. By the efforts and sacrifices of its benefactors, it has little by little acquired a sort of independence, and has extended the area of its agricultural operations. In 1830, this included about twenty *hectares*, (nearly fifty acres,) of tilled land and pasturage.

There is no body of statutes, properly speaking; but only some rules which serve as a basis for the organization of the establishment. It is exclusively intended for the poor protestant orphans of the canton. The board of the children is charged at from \$1.25 to \$1.50 a month, which is paid by relatives or benefactors, or in their default, by the hospital of Geneva. The age of admission is fixed at from seven to twelve years, and that of departure at eighteen or nineteen.

The buildings include a mansion house, and the additions necessary for farm labor. The house contains a basement, in which are the cellars and a weaving shop; a first story, including a room which serves for school-room, refectory, and general place of resort, and also three small rooms for the director; and a second story, in which, under the roof, are the two dormitories, in which the pupils are arranged, according to their ages, and a guest chamber.

The maximum number of pupils is thirty. The example of Vehrli's own school, has demonstrated that this number can not be exceeded, without endangering the good effects of the system of education, and neutralizing all the efforts and care of the director.

The *personnel* of the institution includes a director, who is chief teacher, his wife, two servants, and a farmer, or assistant, who acts as assistant teacher and oversees the workshops. The chief employment is agriculture; including farming, gardening, tree culture, and care of animals. The children are also employed in all the miscellaneous work of the establishment, and especially during winter, in learning various trades. They make matting and straw hats, baskets and wooden utensils, knit stockings, and mend their clothes. Each has his appointed work; one has charge of the horses, another of the cattle, another of the hogs, another of the poultry-yard, another of the kitchen, garden, &c. A yearly, or half-yearly rotation is arranged, which enables each pupil to become acquainted with all the farm work in turn. Each of these young foremen is assisted by one or more of the younger scholars. Others are employed to draw water, bring wood, to shell peas, &c., and to prepare food; taking turns also in this business. All the children are also, in turn, entrusted with the care of house-cleaning, arrangement, &c. Thus they become acquainted with the infinite details of housekeeping and family life, and accustomed to the duties which they are expected to fulfill in society.

Instruction is in some respects subordinate to manual labor, on the ground that a man must first of all be able to maintain himself and his family, and that next to this follows the duty of cultivating his mind and heart. At Carra, there are usually from one to three school-hours in summer, and from three to five in winter; and at busy seasons, instruction is altogether discontinued.

The course of study includes reading, writing, spelling, arithmetic, singing, drawing, and some knowledge of surveying, geography, and natural history. The pupils themselves, keep the farming accounts. The more advanced and intelligent of them act as monitors. Annual examinations are held, both to measure the progress of the pupils, and to estimate their talents and dispositions.

The style of living is that of farm laborers in the canton. Bread and soup are the chief food. Each pupil is allowed, per day, about a pound of bread, of wheat mixed with barley, beans, rye, vetches, or peas. In winter, this mixture is replaced by a bread of buckwheat. The soup is that called "Rumford soup," and is usually made of potatoes, or of fresh or dry legumes; and sometimes of meat, or Indian corn or wheat. This soup is distributed twice a day, with a piece of bread; the dinner consists of legumes, potatoes, bread, and a glass of wine and water, with a piece of meat twice or thrice a week. Except rice, the establishment consumes only the food raised upon it.

The clothing of the pupils, is in summer, of coarse linen, and in winter, of coarse woolen; they wear pantaloons, with gaiters reaching to the knee, single-breasted round jackets, woolen caps in winter, and straw hats in summer. During severe cold, they wear also over-coats and woolen stockings; but usually go barefoot in summer, and wear wooden shoes in winter. The dress of those scholars who have been confirmed, resembles the costume of the neighborhood, in cut, color and material. The yearly supply of clothing, is one pair pantaloons of linen, one pair of woolen, two shirts, two handkerchiefs, two pair of wooden shoes, and a straw hat; and once in two years, a jacket of linen and one of woolen, an overcoat, a pair of gaiters for summer, and of long stockings for winter, and a woolen cap.

During hours of play and of rest, the pupils are permitted to cultivate small gardens, which are allotted to them, and whose produce is bought for its value by the establishment; study their lessons; perform their various household duties; and indulge in various games. Besides these daily recreations, they have annual festivals, in which all the pupils take part. Thus, on the 31st of December, the anniversary of the admission of the canton into the Helvetic Confederation, there was set up, for the benefit of the fund raised from fines, a lottery of useful objects, such as knives, hammers, pincers, compasses, pens, pencils, paper, pen-knives, &c. On new year's day, which is the anniversary festival of the institution, it is allowable to buy, sell or exchange the articles gained in the lottery of the day before. On the first Sunday of May, there is a shooting match, with long-bow and cross-bow, the prizes being furnished in part from the common fund of the pupils, and in part from the funds of the school. Some time before harvest, on some pleasant Sunday, the pupils make an excursion to some neighboring mountain, as Mt. Voaron, Mt. Salève, or Mt. Môle, taking a day's provisions with them; and another similar excursion follows the gathering in of the harvest. But of all the festivals, the gayest and most joyous is that of the harvest-home. When the crops are all gathered and ready to carry in, the pupils make an immense bouquet; wagons and horses are ornamented with flowers and foliage, and the triumphal procession passes through all the fields. They sit down to a feast of rice, meat, salad of potatoes and fresh carrots, dry prunes, and pure wine. After dinner, which is enlivened with toasts and songs appropriate to the occasion, the procession resumes its march, with flags flying, and the day is ended with a salute of musketry and fire-works. In autumn comes "The feast of the Escalade," celebrated with games and contests of bodily strength and skill, in memory of a glorious occasion in the annals of the canton, and which is made the means of awakening the patriotism of the pupils, and of inculcating love of country. At Christmas, there is a solemnity of a different character. The pupils are gathered to a supper of legumes, of fruits, of coarse pastry and confections, with pure wine; they listen to an account of the birth of Christ, and the evening is ended with the singing of hymns.

These festivals operate as rewards, stimulating to zeal and good conduct. Emulation and labor are further encouraged by a system at once simple, practical and cheap. Each pupil distinguished by industry in work or in school, receives for that day a *good mark* and a premium of five centimes, (about one cent.) Pupils allowed to remain in the school after their confirmation, receive in return for their services, wages of from four to six cents a day, from which they are expected to keep themselves in clothing. These premiums and wages are deposited in a fund where they bear interest, and whence they are drawn from time to time as they are needed. This course assists in accustoming the pupils to the wages of practical life and to habits of economy which will be useful to them in society.

Punishments are rare at Carra; they are inflicted at the discretion of the director, and consist chiefly in small fines, which are placed in the common fund. This fund is increased by the gifts of charitable persons, earnings from field labor performed for neighboring farmers, sale of produce, &c. This fund bears the expense of festivals, and the due proportion of its amount is distributed to the pupils who leave the institution. In order to the profitable use of this fund, advances are sometimes made from it to pupils of especially enter-



prising character, who purchase sheep, goats, &c., which they fatten and sell at a profit. By this means the common fund becomes a powerful instrument of instruction in practical matters.

The accounts of the establishment are kept with order and simplicity. A special account is opened for the agricultural department, which shows, in spite of the large cost of the location, a net annual profit of from forty to a hundred and twenty dollars. It is computed that each pupil costs about fifty-one dollars a year, or about fourteen cents a day.

The receipts and expenditures of the establishment for the year 1843, were as follows:

## EXPENSES.

Salaries and Emoluments,.....	\$291.98
Maintenance,.....	355.01
Furniture,.....	114.67
Clothing,.....	241.60
Farm Expenses,.....	572.90
Fuel and Lights,.....	128.53
Washing,.....	90.40
Maintaining and repairing Buildings,.....	51.79
Payment in <i>good marks</i> ,.....	72.18
School, Medical services, Sundries,.....	39.57

Total,.....\$1,958 63

To the item of maintenance must be added the value of farm produce consumed, estimated at \$843.53, which makes the whole expense of maintenance \$1,198.54. The number of days' maintenance in 1843, reached a total of 11,833; and the expense of food per day, per head, was therefore a little more than ten cents.

## RECEIPTS.

Labor for various persons,.....	\$186.90
Sale of farm produce,.....	347.33
Payments for board,.....	468.03

Total,.....\$1,002 26

The comparison of receipts and expenses, shows a deficit of about \$956.00, which should have been made up from subscriptions and private gifts. But these sources of revenue being uncertain, and not always equal to this deficit, it has often been necessary to make it up from the capital stock of the concern, which has been successively reduced, until it is now, (1851,) completely absorbed. Under these difficulties, and from the retirement or death of its original founders and chief benefactors, the existence of the school is seriously endangered. It is now, however, undergoing a process of re-organization, which it is to be hoped may result in its substantial reestablishment.

The main object of the rural school at Carra, is to train good farm workmen; and a chief principle of its operation is to train its pupils in such humble and simple habits, as may attach them to rural occupations. But experience shows that this purpose is only imperfectly attained. A certain proportion of pupils, at their graduation, take service as farm workmen, gardeners, cow keepers, &c., but a much more considerable number adopt occupations which take them into towns, such as wagon-making, cabinet-work, locksmithing, tailoring, shoe-making, paper-hanging, shop-keeping, factory labor, domestic and military service. Some devote themselves to instruction, and others seek their fortunes abroad. One, for instance, is a hotel-keeper in Spain, another, clerk of a steam-boat on the Mississippi, &c.

## REFORM SCHOOL OF THE RAUHEN-HAUS,

AT

HORN, NEAR HAMBURG.

---

THE Redemption Institute, or Rauhen-Haus, at Horn, four or five miles out of the city of Hamburg, was established by an association of benevolent individuals, aided by a legacy of Mr. Gercken, in 1833, for the reception of abandoned children of the very lowest class. From the beginning it has been conducted by Mr. T. H. Wichern who has made it the mission of his life, to reclaim this class from habits of idleness, vagrancy, and crime, by making them feel the blessing of a Christian and domestic life, and the pleasure of earning their own bread, and of doing good to others, by their own industry. His first step was to procure a plain dwelling, and to remove every thing from without or within which gave it the appearance of a place of punishment or correction; and in this house he has resided with his own family. Into the bosom of his own family he received three boys of the worst description, and in the course of a few months, nine others of the same stamp, making them feel *at home*, and yet with full liberty to go away if they wished, but recognized by him, and his wife, and his sister, as members of the same household, and fellow-laborers in the garden and the farm. By forgetting or forgiving the past, and encouraging every effort on the part of these depraved outcasts of society, to form better manners and habits, by addressing them always in the look and tone of heartfelt interest in their welfare, by patient and long suffering forbearance with their short comings, by touching exhibitions, at appropriate times, of the character and teachings of Christ, by regular instruction in the branches of an elementary education, by alternate recreation and employment, of which they receive the return not only in their own comfortable lodging and support, but in small but constantly accumulating savings, Mr. Wichern succeeded in working remarkable changes in the character of a large majority of all who became inmates of his family.

By degrees the establishment has been extended from a single house to nine, on the original plan of not increasing the size of each, so to impair its domestic character, and to make each family to some extent an independent community, having its own house—father and mother, its own garden, table, fireside, and family worship; and yet all the families uniting in larger meetings and operations, as neighbors and a community, and all looking to Mr. Wichern as the patriarch of the whole establishment. The following account of the institution is taken from the Report of M. Ducpetiaux, inspector general of prisons to the minister of justice, preparatory to the organization of the reform school of Belgium.

The reform school of the Rauhen-Haus, at Horn, near Hamburg, was founded in 1833, by a society of charitable persons, and by the aid of private contributions, for the purpose of receiving and reforming vicious and unfortunately situated children. Commenced in a modest building roofed with thatch, from which it has taken its name, it now occupies about twenty-five acres of ground, upon which have been built, as they have been needed, a dozen houses, more or less spacious, each one of which has its proper destination. These houses are,

1. The old thatched house, the cradle of the institution, serving for the dwelling of a family composed of twelve children and their chief. It contains, besides, the apartments of one of the principal instructors, a preparatory department for children entering, and the business office, of which more will be said below.

2. The bakery building, with the storehouse for grain; containing also the gardener's lodgings, and those of five apprentices and a printing assistant.

3. The Swiss house, occupied in the lower story by the printing office, and above by the boys' infirmary and the store-room for paper.

4. The working house, containing in the first story a number of workshops for carpenters, tailors, shoemakers, spinners, wooden-shoe makers, &c., and above, apartments for a family of boys and a number of brothers.

5. The bee-hive is occupied in the first story by a family of boys, and above by the lodgings of a number of brothers and the teacher of an elementary class.

6. The girls' house, accommodating two families of little girls, one of which occupies the lower story and the other the upper.

7. The tower building containing the chapel or oratory, the library, the school-rooms, the preparatory department for girls, sundry rooms used by the children and brothers, the apartments of the second head instructor, &c.

8. The mother house, containing, besides the apartments of the director and his family, the kitchen, the laundry and store-room of provisions, lodging for some girls, the chambers for strangers, and some other premises for the use of the establishment.

9. The stables, the horse stables, store-room of farming tools; together with the apartments of the farming overseer, and the sheds serving for barns and store-rooms.

10. The bookbinding and stereotyping shop.

11. The fisher's cabin; lodging a family of boys and a group of brothers.

12. The shepherd's cabin; containing in the first story a division of new comers with their overseer; above the brothers' infirmary, and the apartments for pupils re-entering the establishment.

13. The wash-room and its appurtenances.

All these buildings are scattered and grouped picturesquely about, among the gardens belonging to the establishment. Several of them have been built by the children, with the help of the brothers overseeing them. There are three divisions in the establishment.

1. The reform school for children; which contains on an average 100 pupils, of whom two-thirds are boys, and one-third girls.

2. The institute of brothers, including the officers of the institution and assistants; and which serves also as a preparatory or normal school for the young men intending to join the "inner mission" founded by M. Wichern. The inner mission is intended, among other things, to train chiefs of families, overseers for reform schools, prisons, charitable institutions, hospitals, agents for Christian associations, (Bible societies, mutual aid societies,) working missionaries for home and colonies, &c. The institute contained 34 brothers in 1847; at which period 20 had left the establishment, and were acting in some of the above capacities, in Germany, Switzerland, and America.

3. The printing establishment and business office, including a bookseller's, a bookbinder's, and a stereotyper's shop.

These three departments, although attached to a common center, have each their separate existence, accounts and appropriations. They all originate from the private association, and are sustained by subscriptions, gifts, and legacies. The reform school has chiefly a local character, and draws its support principally from the city of Hamburg. The institute of brothers is of a more general character, and is accordingly principally supported by beneficent persons elsewhere. The printing office and business establishment was organized by a stock company.

The pupils of the reform school are classed in groups of 12 children. Each family under the supervision of a brother or sister, according to the sex of the children, occupies, as we have seen, a separate habitation, consisting of a sitting-room and a common sleeping-room. There are five families of boys, and two of girls; and besides a preparatory department for new comers, before their admission and regular location in families.

To each family is attached a group of brothers, of whom one fills the place of chief or father, and the others assist him or supply his place in regular order.

The officers, &c., employed in the government supervision, and other services of the establishment, are, 1. the director and his family. This post has been filled since the origin of the institution, by M. Wichern, with remarkable distinction; it is chiefly to his efforts and persevering zeal that the Rauhen-Haus owes its completion and prosperity; 2. three instructors; 3. three or four foremen or assistants; 4. brothers, whose number is various and increasing; 5. two sisters or assistants; 6. twelve workmen in the printing and business establishment, merely paid wages, and not lodged on the premises.

The instruction given to the pupils does not differ from that given in good German primary schools. The labor performed is of various kinds, and executed by separate families and pupils. They include the domestic labors, the housekeeping and house-work, field and garden culture, and certain industrial occupations, whose profits are added to the resources of the establishment.

Under the first class of occupations are, shoe-making, making and mending clothes and bedding, carpentry, wooden-shoe making, woolen thread-spinning, in which the young children are employed, baking, masonry and painting, house-keeping, cleaning house, furniture, &c.

The farming work is directed by a farming overseer. The land is principally cultivated by the spade; and the large kitchen-garden furnishes abundance of legumes (beans or peas) for the consumption of the establishment. There are several head of cattle on the farm. There has been established a basket-making shop, which employs a number of children during winter.

The workshops proper are the printing shop, the bindery, lithographing shop, coloring shop, stereotypery, and wood-engraving shop. A silk-weavers' shop has also been in operation since 1846.

The girls are chiefly busied in the household, and fill the places of servants, cooks, washerwomen, ironers, laundry-women, and seamstresses. The younger assist the elder; they pick legumes, make and mend coarse linen, knit and mend stockings, and keep the rooms in order. They all keep in order and mend their own clothes.

All this work, except the printing and bookbinding, is performed under the direction and supervision of brothers or sisters, who, as a general rule, are expected to understand, at entering the establishment, some one of the occupations practiced there.

The physical training of the Rauhen-Haus is at once simple and healthy. Nothing is neglected as to care of bedding, clothing, neatness, and sanitary regulations. Although the establishment is very healthy, a physician visits the establishment regularly. The food is frugal, but abundant. It usually consists, at breakfast, of soup thickened with buckwheat flour cooked in milk; at dinner, of soup of various kinds, rice, barley, beans and others, with potatoes; to which are added in summer, green legumes, and meat regularly twice a week; at supper, of a piece of bread and a glass of beer, or of the remains of dinner. The children are not put on allowance, and may eat as much as they please. The brothers eat at their own ordinary, except at supper, when they dine at a common table, presided over by the wife or mother of the director, at which also sit children whose birthdays are celebrated.

The children are admitted at from eight to ten years of age, and remain at the establishment until after their confirmation, or until they can be placed in good situations, or returned to their families without inconvenience. In 1845, of 82 children, four (girls) were from 8 to 10 years old; 31 from 10 to 14; 29 from 14 to 16, and 18 from 18 to 23 years. No child, unless orphan or abandoned, is received without the consent of its parents.

During ten years after the foundation of the establishment, the average age of the children, at the moment of their entrance, was 12 years and 6 months and a half, and at the time of their dismissal, 17 years, two months, and two-thirds. It follows that the average duration of their stay, was 4 years, 2 months, and  $\frac{1}{3}$ ths. From 1834 to 1847, there were 120 admissions. Pupils who can not re-enter their families, are usually apprenticed to masters carefully selected from among honest and pious artizans. There is no difficulty in getting these situations, and the apprentices from the Rauhen-Haus are even sought after, on account of the education and practical training which they have received at the establishment. The institution continues to exercise a beneficiary patronage over its graduates. Apprentices in the neighborhood are regularly visited every week or every fifteen days, according to the distance, by the brothers, who carry them good advice, and converse with them on subjects interesting to them. Every fifteen days they meet in the afternoon or evening, in summer at the Rauhen-Haus, and in winter in the town, under the presidency of the director. They attend also at the festivals celebrated from time to time at the establishment. As active a correspondence as possible is maintained with the elder pupils who are at distant places or in strange countries. The existence of the institute of brothers, and its extension within the last few years, as well as the situation of the brothers in different parts of Germany, facilitate reports, and contribute to maintain, outside the establishment, the spirit which reigns within.

The girls are usually placed at service.

There is established a patronage fund, which pays expenses of apprenticeship, &c., occasioned by procuring situations.

At the beginning of 1844, of 81 children who had left the establishment, 33 were apprenticed to artizans or mechanics, 7 entered at service as farm-laborers or domestics, 7 had become day-laborers, 11 (girls) had become servants, 9 became sailors, 3 entered the army, 1 prepared himself for the university, 5 continue at the school; the occupation of 3 is unknown, and 2 children belonging to a family of vagrants have not been able to be kept to any regular occupation. Of this number, 27 including the sailors, either have no fixed residence, or are living at a distance; 16 have returned to their families, and consequently have ceased to sustain regular relations with the establishment; 38 remain in regular and more or less frequent communication with it.

According to information very carefully collected about the conduct of these 81 children, 6 or 7 only are conducting ill; two of these were imprisoned for theft; all the others, 74 or 75, have given no cause for complaint, and some have distinguished themselves by activity in labor and sound morality. A result so favorable would be very satisfactory in ordinary life; it therefore testifies much more strongly in favor of the organization and discipline of the Rauhen-Haus, which, as we have already said, receives only vicious or condemned children, or those whose primary instruction has been entirely defective.

At first sight, the organization of the Rauhen-Haus establishment present nothing; fault even might be found with the confusion of the buildings, scattered here and there, and an absence of centralization which would seem calculated to cause difficulties in supervision, and to be contrary to economy. But these apparent faults disappear upon studying the interior organization of the institution, and upon considering the purpose of its creation. This purpose was to restore a family to the children; to place them within a sphere of relations, duties and affections calculated to change their habits, to reform their character, and to elevate their souls. The organization of the Rauhen-Haus has therefore been modeled upon that of the natural family. The children are classed in groups of 12; each group forms one family; over each family is one overseer, who fills the place of a father. All the families besides, are gathered about a common center, and are under the authority of a common father, the director who presides over the entire institution and watches over its general interests.

Each family occupies a separate tenement. This is usually in the lower story; it includes a common sitting-room, furnished with benches, tables, and cupboards, and having on one side a sleeping-room, and a small apartment serving for washing-room, and for a depository for housekeeping utensils. These apartments are distinguished only by neatness and plainness; they have no ornaments, except gifts presented by friendly hands. Each dwelling has a yard for exercise, more or less

and a small garden in which the children raise the beans and peas needed for their own consumption. All these little gardens are inclosed within the precincts of the establishment, and form with it a whole by no means destitute of beauty and harmony.

Chapel, school, and workshop, are common to all, and serve as a common meeting-place between the members of different families, who meet each other in them at intervals.

In the morning, in summer at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 4, and in winter at 5, the bell rings, as the children rise. The brother or sister repeats a short prayer; the children make their beds, wash and comb themselves, and usually, in summer, the boys run and bathe in a small river running through the middle of the estate. Each boy then puts his house in order; the rooms are cleaned, the furniture dusted. When there is spare time, it is used in study and reading, or in working in the garden. At 6 the bell rings again, and each family, under the conduct of its overseer, takes a Bible under arm, to chapel, to attend domestic divine service. This service, which is performed with solemnity, lasts about an hour, at the end of which each family returns home, where it finds breakfast ready. Half an hour is allowed for this, during which the brother reviews and explains, as may be necessary, the preceding instruction. From half past seven to twelve, the families are divided into new groups. This time is occupied in school (usually for an hour) and in manual labor in the gardens and workshops. At 12, all the members of each family meet again for dinner; one of the children has set the table; the overseers have been to the central establishment for provisions; the meal is then served and ended with a short prayer repeated by the brother, who partakes of the same equal fare with the children, and takes advantage of this intercourse to put on more familiar terms with them. After dinner comes play-time; the children take the care of their flowers, or read; the servants wash and set away the dishes and eating utensils. At one the bell gives the signal for returning to school, which is continued till half past four. From half past four to five, supper is served. From five to seven, the time is again divided between labor and study. From seven to eight each family is within its own habitation, where it may busy itself with relaxation or in whatever manner it pleases. At eight comes the evening service, which, like that in the morning, calls all the members of the institution together in the chapel. Bedtime is from eight to half past nine, and the day is then begun, by a short prayer repeated by the brother who lodges in the refectory with them, but who sits up much longer than they.

The occupations of Saturday are in some measure different from those of the other days of the week, 2 or 3 children are designated in each family, to clean up the house completely; from 5 to 6, the whole family together puts the yard and garden in order, so that all may be neatly arranged for Sunday. From six to seven the brother or sister presides at a conference, where are discussed the events of the past week, and matters of interest to the family; the arrangement of the next week is made, and the children in charge of them selected; the overseers, for the time being restore the utensils which they have had in charge, and the children are committed, after examination, to their successors, who become responsible for them in their turn. This species of rotation maintains the activity and stimulates the emulation of the children, at the same time that it accustoms them to domestic occupations, and gives them a taste for, and habits of, order and industry.

Sunday is consecrated to worship and rest. Except while in chapel, each family is together during the whole day. In the morning, at a proper time, the children change their linen, and put on their festival clothes, which generally differ from the other in form and color. The family appointed for that purpose, according to a session previously designated, goes, with spades and rakes, to the burying-ground, to put in order, to remove weeds and shrubs, and to keep it in good condition. In the afternoon, after attending divine service, each family, if there is time, goes to walk with its overseer. This walk has usually an object; sometimes to visit a teacher or a far-off neighbor, sometimes to see some remarkable site, monument, or monument. These excursions are varied by games or singing. Sunday is also a day for visits from parents; and some children whose conduct is good, receive as a reward, permission to visit their families, in the town or vicinity. And



all the school, meeting together again, attends evening service, which concludes the day.

Every day after morning service, the director holds a short meeting, at which the children and the assistants attend. At this meeting faults committed the day before are noticed, and the director admonishes or punishes; the particular arrangements of the day are announced; necessary directions to the assistants given, and a review made of the children, to see that they are clean and neat, and their clothes in good order.

Every Monday, the director holds a meeting of the assistants, at which special reference is made to every child; the director listens to the observations of the brothers, and gives them instructions.

Lastly, on Saturday evening there is held a special meeting for the discussion of matters pertaining to labor, economy, supervision of workshops, &c.

The two head teachers assist the director, and occupy his place, if needed. They have charge in particular of the supervision of families and workshops. All the premises are also visited once or oftener, every day. In each vestibule are two registers; on one of them is an inventory of the furniture, and on the other the inspector enters whatever remarks his visit may have suggested.

The organization of the Rauhen-Haus is so contrived, as we have remarked, as to attach the pupils to the institution, and to unite them and their overseers together, as if they were members of the same family. To appreciate the influence exerted for this purpose, we must, so to speak, descend into the depths of the establishment, and investigate the little events which vary its existence. We will only mention, under this head, the festivals at which the pupils and assistants meet several times a year. These are of two kinds; one confined to a single family, as those which celebrate the birthday and baptism of pupils or brothers, the arrival or departure of one of them, &c.; the others are the general festivals at which all the families and assistants meet, together with the friends and benefactors of the establishment. At these, which take place monthly, the boxes intended to receive voluntary gifts are ornamented with flowers, and carried solemnly to the chapel by two little girls. They are opened before the assembly, and prayer is offered for those persons whose charity contributes to the support of the institution. The anniversary of the foundation of Rauhen-Haus is celebrated every year, with solemnity; but of all these solemnities, the most remarkable are those at Advent and at Christmas. We shall be thanked for giving, on this subject, some details which we find in the tenth report of the director, (1845,) and which give, at the same time, an idea of the spirit reigning within the establishment, and of the artless character of its members.

"From the commencement of autumn may be discerned the symptoms of joy at the approach of Christmas. A new life seems to animate the families of boys and girls. All is excitement; one is thinking of the gift which he expects, another of that which he means to give; imagination is active; plans fail and succeed; when all arrangements are in good train, each family is hard at work within its own particular circle; every body is carefully keeping a secret; the brothers and sisters help the children at their work. As the important day approaches, activity redoubles; not a leisure moment is lost; the weekly evening which each family has at its disposal, is especially devoted to these mysterious preparations. What is their design? To prepare Christmas presents wherewith to surprise the director and his family. Sometimes they are models of the Rauhen-Haus buildings; sometimes of religious edifices; or pictures in relief of scenes from the Bible. Some of these models are five or six feet high, and executed with remarkable care and accuracy; in the chapel may be seen the altar, the pulpit, the organ, the stalls, the bells; the workshop is supplied with all its tools, the chamber with its furniture, beds, chairs, tables, stoves, &c. All these articles are carefully hidden until the day of their solemn exhibition. Meanwhile, at Advent, begins the religious instruction introductory to the coming festivals; by which their minds and hearts are both prepared. The Christmas songs are practiced; and soon are in every mouth; those lately arrived learn them from the elder; their meaning and religious signification is explained. During the last week of Advent, joy resounds from all sides. On the Sunday before Christmas, each family, under the direction of the brother its supervisor, goes about the neighborhood to invite to the feast the respectable poor, with whom the establishment has constant connection. These



good people must also have their gifts ; and the pupils take upon themselves this responsibility, and appropriate to this purpose their small savings. In these visits they sometimes see wretched spectacles ; but a picture before their eyes serves to put good thoughts and useful remembrances into their minds.

At last the holy day is come. All is properly prepared ; the day passes ; it is evening. The large vestibule of the " Mother House " is opened, and each family arrives in procession, carrying the gift which it has patiently prepared. All the articles, whose bulk is sometimes considerable, are arranged in the middle of the room, and are ornamented with wreaths and evergreens ; the Christmas tapers are lighted, and when all is in complete order the director and his family are invited to behold the spectacle prepared for them. Their arrival is greeted with shouts and songs ; the hall glitters with lights ; all gather in groups and admire the result of the labor of each family ; paintings, transparencies, inscriptions, testify to the sincere affection of the children towards their benefactor ; and certainly, to him, this testimony is not the least precious of their gifts. During the same evening, the assistants and brothers receive the gifts designed for them. The programme of the rejoicings of the next day is communicated to the assembly, the Christmas songs which have been printed are distributed, and after having returned thanks to God by hymns and prayer, the families return in the same order to their respective dwellings.

Next day the bell proclaims the grand festival. All arise in haste by lamp-light ; the children put on again their festive garments and gather at the " Mother House," where was held the joyous meeting of the preceding evening. All sing the hymn of the day, and after having returned thanks to God, they return home to breakfast. Divine service takes place as usual. Meanwhile the kitchen is in unusual activity. At noon, all members of the establishment take their places at a large table, and partake of a repast, whose most delicate dishes have been sent as presents by friends from the town and neighborhood. Some of these friends, some former pupils, some parents, seat themselves among the children, and become with them members of one large family. There is joy in every heart ; singing succeeds ; and before the feast is finished, come the poor invited several days before by each family. All rise, in a few minutes every thing is put away in its place, and every trace of the repast has disappeared. Each family, with its guests, returns to its well-warmed home, to familiar entertainment ; where the children sing their prettiest songs, to do honor to their visitors. About half-past two, there arrive from every direction the friends of the institution, who, for the sake of attending this ceremony, have often traveled several leagues in inclement weather, and in the depth of winter. The bell rings anew, and the families proceed to the chapel, conducting their poor visitors, who at their arrival take their seats at a table spread expressly for them. The chapel ornamented with foliage and evergreens, looks like a thick grove. Although of considerable size, it can scarcely hold the numerous audience assembled at the solemnity. The director reads the gospel for the day, between whose verses are sung hymns appropriated to the occasion. A discourse chiefly addressed to the poor and to visitors from abroad, reviews the purpose, origin, and progress of the institution. Then come forward the schools of the neighborhood, with their instructors at their head ; one offers a prayer and sings a hymn in memory of the pupils dismissed from the Rauhen-Haus ; another invokes the protection of God for poor and abandoned children ; another implores pity upon all prisoners ; all then unite their voices in a concluding hymn, after which each school deposits its modest offering in the box appointed for receiving gifts to the establishment.

It is time to proceed to the decoration of the feast to the memory of absent friends. This is the moment which is awaited with so much impatience by the children from the beginning of the Advent. From the commencement of this period, all the school meets at noon to listen to the reading of those passages of scripture which announce the coming of the Messiah ; which is followed by the singing of a hymn. The chandelier of the chapel is furnished with as many candles as there are days in Advent ; every day one more of these is lighted, so that the number of lights constantly corresponds with the approach of the festival.

We left all the members of the institution in the chapel. No sooner have the ceremonies above described terminated, than is commenced the lighting of all the tapers in the chandelier, and also of a multitude of wax candles skillfully arranged

throughout the building, which quickly glitters with light. This illumination is generously furnished by the friends of the establishment. The appearance of the chapel, with its tapers, its candles, its green boughs and ornaments, is truly marvellous. The spectator, especially if for the first time, is overpowered by the enthusiasm of the pupils and the guests. As the illumination proceeds, the singing concludes; when it stops, the director, amidst profound silence, reads the following passage from St. Matthew: "When the Son of Man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory," &c. After this reading the pupils come forward by families towards the poor guests, and give them the little presents which they have prepared for them; then each family in succession sings another song, and the ceremony concludes with a prayer and concluding chant, in which all the assistants join.

The poor return home, carrying salutary impressions and joyful recollections; the children return to their homes until 6 in the evening, when another signal calls them to the chapel. Some of the friends of the institution, present in the afternoon, have departed; but others have arrived to be present at the ceremony of the evening. In the interval, tables are arranged in the chapel, on which are put the Christmas gifts for the families and the children; which gifts also are supplied by the inexhaustible kindness of the benefactors of the institution. These gifts are of all descriptions; books, images, wall-cards, (*cartes murales*), little articles of furniture, tools, &c.; they are accommodated to the wants, and commonly satisfy the desires of each. It is delightful to see the pleasure which is afforded by the sight of this little exhibition. Scarcely is the saloon opened, when all, small and great, pupils and visitors, hurry in, crowding together as if in a fair, where each selects the article which pleases him best. Thus ends the day, which, of all the days in the year, is most ardently desired, and leaves the most delightful impressions.

This day has more to-morrows than one; each family renews its own memory of it, within itself. Let us transport ourselves to one of these renewals, some weeks after Christmas. It is Sunday evening, a new comer would imagine that the festival had been postponed for that family, and that it was celebrating it for the first time. Evergreens and green pyramids ornament the saloon, and upon the table the presents are arranged. The organ, the violin, and the flute, accompany all kinds of singing; the joy is as great and as uncontrolled as at the general feast. The guests have not been forgotten; and an invitation to the private festival of a family is never neglected. The day before, the children sent written invitations to comrades in other families, who are present at the designated time. Among them is a newly admitted pupil, who must be shown the manner of keeping Christmas. The director's family has also been invited, and comes, bringing Christmas cakes or other little presents of the same kind, which are the more welcome as they are more unexpected. While all are rejoicing, the door opens and there enters, accompanied by a dozen pupils and a brother, a messenger in strange costume, carrying an immense game-bag, and a feathered hat. There is surprise in every face, for nobody expected any such apparition. Meanwhile the messenger comes forward, and delivers to each member of the family a large letter addressed to him. All hasten to open them; and after removing several envelopes it appears that each letter contains a small present. Who was the messenger, and whence come these tokens of friendship? Another family got news of the festival, and promptly determined to contribute to it; and so each of its members selected from his own property a gift to a comrade in the other family. One pupil was appointed to take charge of the gifts, and all accompanied him to enjoy the surprise of their brothers, and to partake in their joy. It is unnecessary to say that the impromptu visitors receive a cordial welcome; they take seats at the table and partake of the modest supper which is prepared; the singing goes on, and the festivities of the evening prolonged to a later hour than usual, end, as always, by prayer to God."

The institute of the brothers of the Rauhen-Haus, like the school of foremen at Mettray, forms an essential part of the organization. M. Wichern, like M. Edm. Demetz and de Brétygnères, has perceived that the work of reforming vicious and condemned children could not be intrusted to mercenary hands; and that it was necessary to accomplish it, to use motive higher than those of temporal interest. The brothers of the Rauhen-Haus are to a certain extent similar to the brothers of

charity, and brothers of Christian doctrine, in Catholic countries. To be admitted to the institute, they must furnish proof that their conduct has always been honorable, and safe from all reproach ; that they have always done the duty of a good Christian, and that they have truly a religious vocation ; that they have no infirmity, and enjoy good health and a robust constitution ; that they understand farming, or some trade useful in the establishment, or at least that they have sufficient mechanical talent to learn some one of these occupations ; that they have a certain amount of education, or the intelligence and disposition necessary to profit by the special course of instruction intended for them in the institution. They are also required to have the consent of their parents to their entering the proposed career, and the certificate of their exemption from military service. Their age at admission is usually from twenty to thirty years. Notwithstanding the strictness of these conditions, candidates are never wanting, and their number is usually even greater than that of disposable places.

The institute of brothers is supported, like the reform school, by subscriptions and private gifts, and has its own separate treasury, finances, and accounts.

The brothers, in their connection with the reform school, have charge of the direction of families, and of the supervision of pupils confided to their care. They keep them in sight, night and day ; they eat with them, sleep in their dormitory, direct their labor, accompany them to chapel, partake in their recreations and sports. Attached at first to families, as assistants, after a certain time of apprenticeship, they undertake, in rotation, the direction. They visit the parents of the children, and report to them their conduct and progress ; exercise an active and beneficial supervision of the pupils, after their departure from the school ; teach the elementary class ; assist the director in religious instruction and in the writing and correspondence of the establishment. The monthly enrolment or rotation of brothers in each family brings each brother successively in contact with all the pupils, enlarges their experience, facilitates their apprenticeship and assists in teaching practical knowledge, and as it were, brings into contact with all the families the experience acquired in each.

Besides these duties, the brothers in turn attend a special course of instruction presided over by the director, with the assistance of the two head teachers. This course occupies twenty hours a week, so distributed as to correspond with the working hours of the children, and including religion, sacred and profane history, German, geography, pedagogy, singing and instrumental music ; there is also a special course in English. The brothers are classed in two divisions, an upper and lower, each directed by one of the teachers. Each course lasts two years, so that the complete instruction given to each brother occupies, on an average, four years. At the end of this time, the brothers should be prepared to fulfill the duties of the " Inner Mission," whose agents they are. These duties, as we said at the beginning of this account, are as various as the needs which the mission undertakes to satisfy. The brothers, accordingly, at leaving the institute, are usually placed in one or the other of the following positions :

Chiefs or fathers of families in reform schools organized like that of the Rauhen-Haus ; overseers and assistants for moral discipline, in establishments for children ; instructors in the same ; instructors in agricultural schools ; directors, stewards, overseers, or watchmen in prisons of different kinds ; directors or fathers of families in hospitals and charitable institutions ; overseers of infirmaries ; agents of benevolent or mutual aid societies ; missionaries and preachers in colonies to America ; missionaries within the country, for journeymen and traveling apprentices, &c., &c.

The number of demands for brothers for these different purposes, or other similar ones, increases every year ; so that the director is continually trying to extend the normal institute intended for their preparation.

The printing office, the bookselling shop, and their dependencies, attached to the establishment in 1842, contribute the double purpose proposed by the founders ; they furnish occupation for a number of children during their stay at the Rauhen-Haus, at the same time that it teaches them an occupation which they can practice after leaving ; and also serve as a means of propagating the principles and views which have governed the work undertaken by M. Wichern with such unusual perseverance and so much success. Here is published yearly a double report on the situation of the reform school, and the condition and progress of the institute of

brothers and of the Inner Mission. There is also issued a review, appearing twice a month, under the title of "Flying Leaves," (Fliegende Blätter,) which is intended not only to inform the public of matters concerning the Rauhen-Haus, but also to give news of charitable establishments and operations at home and abroad. We have not examined the spirit governing these publications, and extending throughout the establishment, and consequently have not formed opinions on it. Some term it exaggerated; for our own part we are pleased to see there the expression of a sincere and profound conviction, and of a true Christian sentiment of compassion for evils and miseries requiring prompt relief.

The accounts of the different sections of the Rauhen-Haus are kept by the director, under the control of the administrative committee of twenty members, chosen from among the founders and benefactors of the establishment. Each section has its separate treasury and accounts. The treasuries are eight in number, namely :

1. Treasury of the reform school.
2. " " " institute of brothers.
3. " " " printing office.
4. " " " business establishment, and book shop and dependencies.
5. " " " childrens' savings, where account is kept with each, of expenses and receipts.
6. " " " brothers' savings.
7. " " " patronage of the institution.
8. " " " private gifts for particular purposes.

The accounts of 1844-45, fix the receipts and expenses of the school as follows: —

#### RECEIPTS.

From subscriptions,.....	\$2,107.40
" voluntary gifts,.....	632.80
" payments for board,.....	1,186.80
" charity box,.....	166.68
" sundry receipts,.....	35.42
Total,.....	4,828.08

This amount does not include farming produce, receipts from workshops, private gifts for particular purposes, nor gifts in kind, which make every year a considerable sum, and diminish by so much the receipts of the establishment.

#### EXPENSES.

Maintenance and repairs of buildings,.....	\$365.14
Insurance against fire,.....	25.70
Expenses of pupils leaving,.....	13.70
Board,.....	2,110.00
Oil and light,.....	119.42
Fuel,.....	323.70
Washing,.....	100.84
Expenses of order—supervision,.....	78.84
Clothing of children,.....	178.00
Physician and drugs,.....	47.14
Expenses of supervision,.....	208.56
Salary of director,.....	428.56
Farming and other tools,.....	48.28
Furniture and cooking utensils,.....	230.56
Salaries,.....	143.70
Expense of school,.....	24.00
Expense of cultivation,.....	224.00
Cattle,.....	78.56
Rents,.....	59.42
Expense of receiving children,.....	8.14
Presents to children,.....	4.56
Printing and postage,.....	7.42
Sundry expenses,.....	14.84
Total,.....	4,828.08

There were in the school in the same year, 100 persons—86 children, and 14 officers. The expense per head was therefore \$51.71; or counting children only, \$60.00.

We append the following notices of this excellent institution by two distinguished American educators.

Prof. Stowe, in his Report on Elementary Public Instruction in Europe, selects the establishment at Horn, as affording a striking example of the happy influence of moral and religious instruction in reclaiming the vicious and saving the lost.

Hamburgh is the largest commercial city of Germany, and its population is extremely crowded. Though it is highly distinguished for its benevolent institutions, and for the hospitality and integrity of its citizens, yet the very circumstances in which it is placed, produce, among the lowest class of its population, habits of degradation and beastliness of which we have but few examples on this side the Atlantic. The children, therefore, received into this institution, are often of the very worst and most hopeless character. Not only are their *minds* most thoroughly depraved, but their very senses and bodily organization seem to partake in the viciousness and degradation of their hearts. Their appetites are so perverted, that sometimes the most loathsome and disgusting substances are preferred to wholesome food. The superintendent, Mr. Wichern, states, that though plentifully supplied with provisions, yet, when first received, some of them will steal and eat soap, rancid grease, that has been laid aside for the purpose of greasing shoes, and even catch May-bugs and devour them; and it is with the utmost difficulty that these disgusting habits are broken up. An ordinary man might suppose that the task of restoring such poor creatures to decency and good morals was entirely hopeless. Not so with Mr. Wichern. He took hold with the firm hope that the moral power of the word of God is competent even to such a task. His means are prayer, the Bible, singing, affectionate conversation, severe punishment when unavoidable, and constant, steady employment, in useful labor. On one occasion, when every other means seemed to fail, he collected the children together, and read to them, in the words of the New Testament, the simple narrative of the sufferings and death of Christ, with some remarks on the design and object of his mission to this world. The effect was wonderful. They burst into tears of contrition; and during the whole of that term, from June till October, the influence of this scene was visible in all their conduct. The idea that takes so strong a hold when the character of Christ is exhibited to such poor creatures, is, that *they are objects of affection*: miserable, wicked, despised as they are, yet Christ, the Son of God, loved them, and loved them enough to suffer and die for them—and still loves them. The thought that *they can yet be loved*, melts the heart, and gives them hope, and is a strong incentive to reformation.

On another occasion, when considerable progress had been made in their moral education, the superintendent discovered that some of them had taken nails from the premises, and applied them to their own use, without permission. He called them together, expressed his great disappointment and sorrow that they had profited so little by the instructions which had been given them, and told them that, till he had evidence of their sincere repentance, he could not admit them to the morning and evening religious exercises of his family. With expressions of deep regret for their sin, and with promises, entreaties, and tears, they begged to have this privilege restored to them; but he was firm in his refusal. A few evenings afterwards, while walking in the garden, he heard youthful voices among the shrubbery; and, drawing near unperceived, he found that the boys had formed themselves into little companies of seven or eight each, and met, morning and evening, in different retired spots in the garden, to sing, read the Bible, and pray among themselves; to ask God to forgive them the sins they had committed, and to give them strength to resist temptation in future. With such evidence of repentance, he soon restored to them the privilege of attending morning and evening prayers with his family. One morning soon after, on entering his study, he found it all adorned with wreaths of the most beautiful flowers, which the boys had arranged there at early daybreak, in testimony of their joy and gratitude for his kindness. Thus rapidly had these poor creatures advanced in moral feeling, religious sensibility, and good taste.

In the spring, Mr. Wichern gives to each boy a patch of ground in the garden,

which he is to call his own, and cultivate as he pleases. One of the boys began to erect a little hut of sticks and earth upon his plot, in which he might rest during the heat of the day, and to which he might retire when he wished to be alone. When it was all finished, it occurred to him to dedicate it to its use by religious ceremonies. Accordingly, he collected the boys together. The hut was adorned with wreaths of flowers; a little table was placed in the center, on which lay the open Bible, ornamented in the same manner. He then read with great seriousness the 14th, 15th, and 24th verses of the cxviii<sup>th</sup> Psalm:

"The Lord is my strength and my song, and is become my salvation."

"The voice of rejoicing and salvation is heard in the tabernacle of the righteous."

"This is the day which the Lord hath made. We will rejoice and be glad in it."

After this, the exercises were concluded by singing and prayer. Another boy afterwards built him a hut, which was to be dedicated in a similar way; but when the boys came together, they saw in it a piece of timber which belonged to the establishment, and ascertaining that it had been taken without permission, they at once demolished the whole edifice, and restored the timber to its place. At the time of harvest, when they first entered the field to gather the potatoes, before commencing the work, they formed into a circle, and, much to the surprise of the superintendent, broke out together in the harvest hymn:

"Now let us all thank God."

After singing this, they fell to their work with great cheerfulness and vigor.

I mention these instances, from numerous others which might be produced, to show how much may be done in reclaiming the most hopeless youthful offenders by a judicious application of the right means of moral influence.

Hon. Horace Mann in his "Educational Tour," thus describes his visit to the Rauhen-Haus.

It was opened for the reception of abandoned children of the very lowest class, children brought up in the abodes of infamy, and taught not only by example but by precept, the vices of sensuality, thieving, and vagabondry, children who had never known the family tie, or who had known it only to see it violated. Hamburg, having been for many years a commercial and free city, and, of course, open to adventurers and renegades from all parts of the world, has many more of this class of population than its own institutions and manners would have bred. The thoughts of Mr. Wichern were strongly turned towards this subject while yet a student at the university; but want of means deterred him from engaging in it, until a legacy, left by a Mr. Gercken, enabled him to make a beginning in 1833. He has since devoted his life and all his worldly goods to the work. It is his first aim that the abandoned children whom he seeks out on the highway, and in the haunts of vice, shall know and feel the blessings of domestic life; that they shall be introduced into the bosom of a family; for this he regards as a divine institution, and therefore the birthright of every human being, and the only atmosphere in which the human affections can be adequately cultivated. His house, therefore, must not be a prison, or a place of punishment or confinement. The site he had chosen for his experiment was one inclosed within high, strong walls and fences. His first act was to break down these barriers, and to take all bolts and bars from the doors and windows. He began with three boys of the worst description; and within three months, the number increased to twelve. They were taken into the bosom of Mr. Wichern's family; his mother was their mother, and his sister their sister. They were not punished for any past offenses, but were told that all should be forgiven them, if they tried to do well in future. The defenseless condition of the premises was referred to, and they were assured that no walls or bolts were to detain them; that one cord only should bind them, and that the cord of love. The effect attested the all but omnipotent power of generosity and affection. Children, from seven or eight to fifteen or sixteen years of age, in many of whom early and loathsome vices had nearly obliterated the stamp of humanity, were transformed not only into useful members of society, but into characters that endeared themselves to all within their sphere of acquaintance. The education given by Mr. Wichern has not been an æsthetic or literary one. The children were told at the beginning that labor was the price of living, and that they must earn their



ad, if they would secure a comfortable home. He did not point them to ease or affluence, but to an honorable poverty, which, they were taught, was not in itself evil. Here were means and materials for learning to support themselves; but there was no rich fund or other resources for their maintenance. Charity had supplied the home to which they were invited; their own industry must supply the rest. Mr. Wichern placed great reliance upon religious training; but this did not consist in giving them dry and unintelligible dogmas. He spoke to them of Christ, as the benefactor of mankind, who proved, by deeds of love, his interest in the race, who sought out the worst and most benighted of men, to give them instruction and relief, and who left it in charge to those who came after him, and who had to be called his disciples, to do likewise. It is strange that, enforced by such a practical exemplification of Christian love as their fatherly benefactor gave them in his every-day life, the story of Christ's words and deeds should have sunk so deeply into their hearts and melted them into tenderness and docility? Such was the effect. The most rapid improvement ensued in the great majority of the children; and even those whom long habits of idleness and vagabondry made it difficult to keep in the straight path, had long seasons of obedience and gratitude, which any aberration from duty was only an exception.

As the number of pupils increased, Mr. Wichern saw that the size of the family would seriously impair its domestic character. To obviate this, he divided his company into families of twelve, and he has erected nine separate buildings, situated in a semi-circle around his own, and near to it, in each of which dwells a family of twelve boys or of twelve girls, under the care of a house-father or house-mother, as the assistants are respectively called. Each of these families is, to some extent, an independent community, having an individuality of its own. They eat and sleep in their own dwelling, and the children belonging to each look to their own particular father or mother, as home-bred children to a parent. There is a general meeting every morning,—at first in the chamber of Mr. Wichern's mother, but afterwards, when the numbers increased, in the little chapel, and their frequent meetings at work, or in the play-ground, form a sufficient, and, in fact, a very close bond of union for the whole community. Much was done by the children themselves in the erection of their little colony of buildings; and in doing so, they were animated by a feeling of hope and a principle of independence in providing a dwelling for themselves, while they experienced the pleasures of benevolence in rendering assistance to each other. Mr. Wichern mentions, with great satisfaction, the good spirit of the architect who came upon the premises to assist in putting up the first house. This man would not retain a journeyman for a day or an hour, who did not conduct with the utmost decorum and propriety before the children who were assisting in the work.

Instruction is given in reading, writing, arithmetic, singing, and drawing, and, in some instances, in higher branches. Music is used as one of the most efficient instruments for softening stubborn wills, and calling forth tender feelings; and its deprivation is one of the punishments for delinquency. The songs and hymns have been specially adapted to the circumstances and wants of the community, and it has often happened that the singing of an appropriate hymn, both at the gatherings in the mother's chamber, which were always more or less kept up, and in the little chapel, has awakened the first-born sacred feeling in obdurate and brutified hearts. Sometimes a voice would drop from the choir, and then weeping and sobbing would be heard instead. The children would say, they could not sing,—they must think of their past lives, of their brothers and sisters, or of their parents living in pain and misery at home. On several occasions the singing exercise had to be given up. Frequently the children were sent out to the garden to recover themselves. An affecting narrative is recorded of a boy who ran away, but whom Mr. Wichern pursued, found, and persuaded to return. He was brought back on Christmas eve, which was always celebrated in the mother's chamber. The children were engaged in singing the Christmas hymns when he entered the room. At first they manifested strong disapprobation of his conduct, for he was a boy to whose faults special forbearance had been previously shown. They were then told to decide among themselves how he should be punished. This brought them all to perfect silence, and after some whispering and consulting together, one, who had formerly been guilty of the same fault of ingratitude, under still less excusable circumstances, burst out in a petition for his forgiveness. All united in it,



reached out to him a friendly hand, and the festival of the Christmas eve was turned into a rejoicing over the brother that had been lost but was found. The pardon was not in words merely, but in deeds. No reference to the fact was afterwards made. A day or two after, he was sent away on an errand to the distance of half a mile. He was surprised and affected by this mark of confidence; and from that time never abused his freedom, though intrusted to execute commissions at great distances. But he could never after hear certain Christmas hymns without shedding tears; and long subsequently, in a confidential communication to Mr. Wichern, respecting some act of his former life, (an unburdening of the overlaid conscience, which was very common with the inmates, and always voluntary; for they were told on their arrival, that their past life should never be spoken of unless between them and himself,) he referred to the decisive effect of that scene of loving-kindness, upon his feelings and character.

One peculiar feature of this institution is, that the children are not stimulated by the worldly motives of fame, wealth, or personal aggrandizement. The superintendent does not inflame them with the ambition, that if they surpass each other at recitation, and make splendid displays at public examinations, they shall, in the end, become high military officers, or congress-men, or excite the envy of all by their wealth or fame. On the other hand, so far as the world's goods are concerned, he commends and habituates them to the idea of an honorable poverty; and the only riches with which he dazzles their imaginations are the riches of good works. He looks to them as his hope for redeeming others from the sphere whence they themselves were taken; and there have been many touching instances of the reformation of parents and families, for whom the natural affection first sprang up in these children's hearts, after they had learned the blessings of home and what the ties of nature really are.

One of the most interesting effects of this charity is the charity which it reproduces in its objects; and thus it is shown that, in the order of nature, the actions of good men—provided they are also wise—not less than good seed, will produce thirty, or sixty, or a hundred fold of beneficent fruit. Mr. Wichern makes a great point of celebrating Christmas, and the friends of the school are in the habit of sending small sums of money, and articles of various kinds to adorn the festival. This money has often been voluntarily appropriated by the children, to charitable purposes. They frequently give away their pennies, and instances have happened where they have literally emptied their little purses into the hands of poverty and distress, and taken off their own clothes to cover the naked. On one occasion, six poor children had been found by some of the scholars, and invited to the Christmas festival. There they were clothed, and many useful and pleasing articles, made by the givers, were presented to them. One of the boys read a passage from the history of Christ, and the Christmas songs and other songs of thanksgiving and praise were sung. To the sound of the organ, which a friend had presented to the little chapel, some verses welcoming the strangers, succeeded. The guests then departed, blessing the house and its kind inhabitants; but who can doubt that a voice of gladness, more precious than all worldly applauses, sprang up unbidden and exulting in the hearts of the little benefactors?

But among numerous less conspicuous instances of the change wrought by wise and appropriate moral means, in the character of these so lately abandoned children, the most remarkable occurred at the time of the great Hamburg fire, in May, 1842. In July, 1843, I saw the vast chasm which the conflagration had made in the center of that great city. The second day of the fire, when people were driven from the city in crowds, and houseless and half frantic sufferers came to the *Rauhe-Haus* for shelter, the children, some of whom had friends and relatives in the city, became intensely excited, and besought Mr. Wichern for leave to go in and make themselves useful to the sufferers. Not without great anxiety as to the force of the temptations for escape or for plunder that might assail them in such an exposed and tumultuous scene, he gave permission to a band of twenty-two to accompany him, on condition that they would keep together as much as possible, and return with him at an appointed time. This they readily promised; nor did they disappoint him. Their conduct was physically as well as morally heroic. They rushed into the greatest dangers to save life and property, and though sometimes pressed to receive rewards, they steadily refused them. At stated intervals they returned to the appointed place to reassure the confidence of their superior. On

one occasion, a lad remained absent long beyond the time agreed upon, but at last he appeared, quite exhausted by the labor of saving some valuable property. Mr. Wichern afterwards learned from the owner, not from the lad, that he had steadily refused the compensation offered to, and even urged upon him. When the company returned home at the appointed time, he sent forth another band under the care of a house-father, and these exerted themselves in the same faithful and efficient manner. This was done as long as the necessity of the case required. From this time the Rauhe-Haus was the resort of the poor and homeless, and not for days only, but for weeks. The pupils shared with them their food, and even slept upon the ground to give their beds to the destitute, sick, and injured. I can hardly refrain from narrating many other facts of a similar character connected with this institution, for if the angels rejoice over a rescued sinner, why should not we partake of that joy when it is our brother who is ransomed?

In his report for 1845, Mr. Wichern says, the institution was actually so impoverished by the demand made upon it at that time, and the demands upon public charity have since been so great in that unfortunate city, that the inmates have been almost reduced to suffering from the necessities of life, particularly as he was induced to receive several children rendered homeless by that calamity. To this object, however, even the children of the house were ready and willing to contribute portions of their wardrobe, and they submitted cheerfully to other privations. Mr. Wichern regretted above all other things the necessity of refusing many applications, and it is but doing justice to the citizens of Hamburg, to state, that on an appeal made by him for funds to erect a new building, they were generously and promptly raised by those who had such unusual claims upon their charity.

A single remark, I must be allowed to make. When an individual effects so much good, it seems to be often thought that he accomplishes it by virtue of some charm or magic, or preternatural influence, of which the rest of the world can not partake. The superintendent of the Rauhe-Haus is a refutation of this idea. Laboriously, perseveringly, unintermittingly, he uses MEANS for the accomplishment of his desired ends. When I put to him the question, in what manner he produced these transforming effects upon his charge, his answer was, "By active occupations, music, and Christian love." Two or three things should be stated in explanation of this compendious reply. When a new subject comes to the Rauhe-Haus, he is first received into Mr. Wichern's own family. Here, under the wise and watchful guardianship of the master, he is initiated into the new life of action, thought, feeling, which he is expected to lead. His dispositions are watched, his character is studied; and as soon as prudence allows, he is transferred to that one of the little colonies whose house-father is best qualified to manage his peculiarities of temperament and disposition. Soon after the opening of the establishment, and the increase of its numbers, Mr. Wichern found that it would be impossible for him to bestow the requisite care and oversight upon each one of his pupils which his necessities demanded. He cast about for assistance, and though he was able to find those in the community who had enough of the spirit of benevolence and self-sacrifice to undertake the difficult labor to which his own life was devoted, yet he soon found that they had not the other requisite qualifications to make their benevolent purposes available. He could find enough well-intentioned persons to superintend the workshops, gardens, &c., but they had not intellectual competency. So he could find schoolmasters who could give good lessons, but they were not masters of any handicraft. He was therefore driven, as he says, to the expedient of preparing a class of teachers, to become his auxiliaries in the work. For this end, he has superadded to his original plan a school for the preparation of teachers; first to supply himself, then to send abroad to open other institutions similar to his own, and thirdly to become superintendents of prisons. This last object he deems very important. Questions about prison-architecture, he says, have given a new literature to the world; but as yet, nothing, or but little, is done to improve the character or increase the qualifications of prison-keepers. I have often felt the force of this remark, in the numerous continental prisons which I have visited. Though the masters of the prisons have generally appeared to be very respectable men, yet the assistants or deputy-turnkeys have very often seemed to belong to a low order of society, from whose manners, conversation, or treatment of the prisoners, no good influence could be expected.

This second institution of Mr. Wichern is in reality a normal school, which the necessities of his situation suggested, and forced him to establish.

During the ten years of the existence of this institution, there have been one hundred and thirty-two children received into it. Of these about eighty were there on the 1st of July, 1843. Only two had run away, who not either voluntarily returned, or, being brought back, had not voluntarily remained. The two unreclaimed fugitives committed offenses, fell into the hands of the civil magistrate, and were imprisoned.

Who can reflect upon this history, where we see a self-sacrificing man, by the aids of wisdom and Christian love, exercising, as it were, the evil spirits from more than a hundred of the worst children whom a corrupted state of society has engendered; who can see this, without being reminded of some case, perhaps within his own personal knowledge, where a passionate, ignorant and perverse teacher, who, for the sake of saving a few dollars of money, or from some other low motive, has been put in possession of an equal number of fine-spirited children, and has, even in a short space of time, put an evil spirit into the bosom of them all?

What is most remarkable in reference to the class of institutions now under consideration, is the high character of the men, for capacity, for attainments, for social rank, who preside over them. At the head of a private orphan house in Potsdam, is the venerable Von Türk. According to the laws of his country, Von Türk is a nobleman. His talents and acquisitions were such that at a very early age, he was elevated to the bench. This was, probably, an office for life, and was attended with honors and emoluments. He officiated as judge for fourteen years; but in the course of this time, so many criminal cases were brought before him for adjudication, whose only cause and origin were so plainly referable to early neglect in the culprit's education, that the noble heart of the judge could no longer bear to pronounce sentence of condemnation against the prisoners; for he looked upon them as men, who, almost without a paradox, might be called *guiltless offenders*. While holding the office of judge he was appointed school inspector. The paramount importance of the latter office grew upon his mind as he executed its duties, until, at last, he came to the full conception of the grand and sacred truth, how much more intrinsically honorable is the vocation of the teacher, who saves from crime and from wrong, than the magistrates who waits till they are committed, and then avenge them. He immediately resigned his office of judge, with its lifetime and its salary; traveled to Switzerland, where he placed himself under the care of Pestalozzi; and, after availing himself for three years of the instructions of that celebrated teacher, he returned to take charge of an orphan asylum. Since that time he has devoted his whole life to the care of the neglected and destitute. He lives in as plain and inexpensive a style as our well-off farmers and mechanics, and devotes his income to the welfare of the needy. I was told by his personal friends that he not only deprived himself of the luxuries of life, but submitted to many privations in order to appropriate his small income to others whom he considered more needy; and that his wife and family cordially and cheerfully shared such privations with him for the same object. To what extent would our own community sympathize with, or appreciate the act, if one of the judges of our higher courts, or any other official dignitary, should resign an office of honor and of profit to become the instructor of children.

Even now, when the once active and vigorous frame of the patriarchal man is bending beneath the weight of years, he employs himself in teaching agriculture, together with the branches commonly taught in the Prussian schools, to a class of orphan boys. What warrior, who rests at last from the labors of the tented field, after a life of victories; what statesman, whose name is familiar in all the courts of the civilized world; what orator, who attracts towards himself tides of men wherever he may move in his splendid course; what one of all these would not, at the sunset of life, exchange his fame and his clustering honors, for that precious and abounding treasury of holy and beneficent deeds, the remembrance of which this good old man is about to carry into another world! Do we not need a new spirit in our community, and especially in our schools, which shall display only objects of virtuous ambition before the eyes of our emulous youth; and teach them that no height of official station nor splendor of professional renown, can equal in the eye of Heaven, and of all good men, the true glory of a life consecrated to the welfare of mankind?

## HOLLAND.

---

THE government of the Netherlands was one of the earliest in Europe to classify its criminals—separating those under eighteen years from the older, by placing the former at first, of both sexes, in a central penitentiary at Rotterdam, and after a trial of the inconvenience of associating the boys and girls under the same roof, by removing the girls to a separate establishment at Amsterdam. M. Cousin, in his report on "*The state of education in Holland as regards schools for the working classes and for the poor,*" gives the following account of a visit to the institution at Rotterdam in 1836.

### PRISON AND SCHOOL FOR JUVENILE OFFENDERS AT ROTTERDAM.

I saw a charitable institution at Rotterdam, so singular in its nature, and where primary instruction forms so important a part, that I must say a few words respecting it; I mean the penitentiary for young boys. I shall give a sufficiently correct notion of the excellent system upon which the prisons in Holland are managed, by saying, that the central prisons are divided into two classes, the one for young people below eighteen or twenty years of age, the other for older persons. The central penitentiary for young persons, established at Rotterdam, used to receive young prisoners of both sexes; they were rigidly separated from each other in the court yards, and in the rooms where they got their meals, and there were distinct schools for each sex. In spite of all these precautions, however, experience demonstrated the necessity of separating them entirely, and of having one penitentiary for boys and another for girls. The girls are at Amsterdam; the boys at Rotterdam. I examined the last with the most minute attention.

The object which they have in view in those places is not only to make the young people submissive and correct in their conduct during the time of their imprisonment, but to improve them. The imprisonment itself, and the severity of the discipline, constitute the just punishment for the offense; for it is indispensable that there should be punishment. But the chastisement would not be adapted to its proper end, if it did not tend to improve the criminal, and every possible care is taken that the prison should deserve the title of a penitentiary. They work upon the young offenders by the combined effects of the prison discipline; 1st, by the discipline to which they are subjected, in order to give them notions of order and of submission to authority; and 2dly, by the labor they have to go through, for which purpose there are workshops of different kinds. The system of the house is military; all the officers are dressed in uniform, and preserve a grave and decent deportment, which of itself is an excellent lesson. The diet is wholesome, but very coarse; and so it ought to be. There is not a separate cell for each prisoner, but the dormitories have only a small number of beds, which are all hammocks, and every thing was clean and conveniently arranged.

The school consists of about sixty young prisoners, all dressed alike in coarse but clean linen jackets and trousers. I was very much struck with the progress which their copy books showed they had made, and frequently in a very short time; and I was particularly pleased with their singing. We must, however, recollect that it was not in intelligence these youths were wanting. The master is a young man, with a grave and mild manner, who seems like the father of his pupils. It had been proposed to give him one of the jailers as an assistant to keep order; this he declined, assigning as a reason, that it would look as if he was afraid; and so he manages the whole school himself. He devotes his

whole life to this sacred duty: he knows every one of his pupils individually, and endeavors to gain their confidence. He does not lose sight of them even after they have left the house, but continues to look after them; they get situations upon his recommendation, and he keeps up a regular correspondence with every one of them. But such a system would be impossible, if the pupils were not limited to a small number; were not this the case, all that one man could do would be to instruct them as well as he could, so long as they remained under his immediate care; and it would be impossible for him to look after them in their future career. If, in such an establishment, the number of prisoners be considerable, they ought to be carefully separated, and committed, in divisions of fifty or sixty at most, to the care of one master, who should be specially charged, not only with the duty of instructing them, but with their education, and who should be not only responsible for them at the time, but should continue to watch over them afterward.

I was surprised to learn, that this central prison for boys, the only one in all Holland, did not then contain more than from sixty to eighty prisoners; so that, adding seventy, who were expected from a depôt at Leyden, there were, at most, only 150,\* out of a population of 2,500,000! To find a solution of this phenomenon, I had only to reflect upon the excellent schools I had every where met with. The charges upon the towns for the support of the schools produce then this result, that there are fewer offenses and fewer crimes; and consequently less to pay for police, and for the prevention and punishment of crime. In Rotterdam, a commercial town, of nearly 100,000 inhabitants, filled with merchandize, and where the number of canals and bridges afford great facilities to depredators, robberies are rare, and burglaries, accompanied by acts of violence, so much so, that the gentlemen who accompanied us, assured me that it would be very difficult for them to mention any. It is with grief that I contemplate the mistaken zeal, the illogical reasoning of certain philanthropists, and even of certain governments, who bestow so much pains upon prisons, and neglect schools: they allow crime to spring up and vicious habits to take root, by the utter neglect of all moral training and of all education in children; and when crime is grown and is strong, and full of life, they attempt to cope with it; they try to subdue it by the terror of punishment, or to mitigate it, in some degree, by gentleness and kindness. After having exhausted all their resources, both of thought and of money, they are astonished to find that their efforts are vain; and why, because all they do is in direct opposition to common sense. To correct is very important, but to prevent is far more so. The seeds of morality and of piety must be early sown in the heart of the child, in order that they may be found again and be made to shoot forth in the breast of the man, whom adverse circumstances may have brought under the avenging hand of the law. To educate the people is the necessary foundation of all good prison discipline. It is not the purpose of a penitentiary to change monsters into men; but to revive in the breasts of those who have gone astray, the principles which were taught and inculcated to them in their youth, and which they acknowledged and carried into practice in former days, in the schools of their infancy, before passion and wretchedness, and bad example, and the evil chances of life had hurried them away from the paths of rectitude. To correct, we must excite remorse, and awaken the voice of conscience; but how can we recall a sound that had never been heard? how are we to revive a language that had never been taught? If to demonstrate, presupposes principles already agreed upon, if we are to correct, we must also presuppose an admitted rule; some feeling of obligation and of duty; a knowledge of good and evil; which, though forgotten, has not been rooted out; some pre-existent virtuous habits, which are to be brought back by judicious treatment, and be made to triumph over those more recently acquired, which had shut out the earlier and better feelings. I approve of, nay, I bless with my whole heart, every kind of penitentiary; but I consider that they must forever remain almost fruitless, unless their power to reclaim is made to rest upon the effect of schools for the people universally established, attendance upon which is obligatory, and where instruction is considered as only one of the means of education.

---

\* Many of these juvenile offenders were mere vagabonds, whom the tribunals do not hesitate to commit to prison, because they know the pains that will be bestowed on their moral education in the penitentiary.



# AGRICULTURAL REFORM SCHOOL

OF

RUYSESELEDE, BELGIUM.

THE following account of one of the most interesting educational institutions of Belgium, is mainly a translation from a Report\* by M. Ducpetiaux, Inspector General of Prisons and Charitable Institutions, to the Minister of Justice, on Agricultural Colonies, Rural Schools, and Schools of Reform, for indigent, vagrant and mendicant children and youth, in 1851.

## 1. Purpose of the Reform Schools; preliminary measures; basis of organisation.

The attention of government has long been directed to the condition of the poor youth, beggars, and vagrants, who are sheltered in the alms-houses and imprisoned by the courts. From the misfortunes which have of late years fallen upon the population both of East and West Flanders, the number of these children and youth has rapidly increased. According to a return made in 1848, this increase, for the three years preceding, was as follows:

YOUTH REGISTERED.	1845.	1846.	1847.	TOTAL.
In prisons,.....	2,575	5,886	9,352	17,813
In alms-houses,.....	1,823	2,914	3,697	8,434
Total, .....	4,398	8,800	13,049	26,247

Thus, in the short space of three years, 26,247 children and youth of both sexes were registered as admitted into the prisons and alms-houses. There are undoubtedly repetitions in this number; the same children are recorded twice, thrice, or even oftener, on the same register. But on the other hand this estimate did not include children admitted into prisons with their parents; numbering, during the same period, some thousands.

It is to be remarked, besides, that the principal alms-houses, being entirely filled during the crisis of distress, were obliged to limit or even to suspend admission. Hence a great part of the increase in the number imprisoned. Shut out from the alms-houses, many of these unfortunate people, to escape from hunger, cold, and death, asked admission into the prisons, and even committed small misdemeanors in order to gain the right of such admission.

So wretched a spectacle has shown the necessity of energetic measures to oppose a barrier to this invasion of poverty, and to snatch this mass of unfortunate youth from influences which, by perpetuating their degradation and their misery, expose society to incessant perils and increasing expense.

The department of justice prepared a plan, chiefly with this design, for the establishment of special reform schools, for poor youth, beggars, and vagrants of both sexes. This plan was presented to the Chamber of Representatives, Nov. 17, 1846; and was thoroughly examined by a committee of the central section, (*section centrale*,) which reported on it, May 6, 1847. The government prepared a new plan, based on this report, which it submitted to the Chamber of Representatives,

\* Colonies Agricoles, Ecoles Rurales et Ecoles de Reforme pour les indigents, les mendiants et les vagabonds, et spécialement pour les enfants des deux sexes, en Suisse, en Allemagne, en France, en Angleterre, dans les Pays-Bas et en Belgique. Rapport adressé à M. Tesch, Ministre de la Justice, par M. Ducpetiaux, Inspecteur Général des prisons, &c. Bruxelles, 1851.

Feb. 28, 1848. This having been thoroughly discussed by both Chambers, was passed into a law concerning alms-houses and reform schools, April 3, 1848.

The fifth article of that law enacts that the regular alms-houses shall be used exclusively for the reception of adult paupers, beggars, and vagrants. That the government shall erect special establishments for young paupers, beggars, and vagrants of both sexes, under sixteen years of age.

These establishments shall be so organized as to employ the boys, as much as possible, in agriculture, and to instruct them in such labor as may be profitably practiced in the fields. The two sexes shall always be placed in distinct and separate establishments.

By article 7, the expense of support to be paid by the communes for the youth admitted into these establishments is never to exceed, for the communes of each province, the expense of support of the inmates of the alms-houses of each province.

The organization, management, and discipline of these establishments are determined by royal decrees, which are not to issue without hearing the permanent deputations of the provinces in which they are situated.

Six hundred thousand francs (about \$120,000) is appropriated for the land and buildings for these establishments, and for fittings, furniture, and other necessary expenses.

The government is to make an annual report to the legislature, of all action under the above law, and of the condition of the institutions established in conformity with it.

Government engaged actively in the execution of the law of the 3d of April, 1848. The necessary preparatory investigations and operations occupied a portion of that year; and on the 8th of March, 1849, a royal decree ordered the establishment of two reform schools in the commune of Ruyselede, (West Flanders;) one to receive 500 boys, and the other for 400 girls and young children of from two to seven years old.

Separate buildings are to be used for these two institutions, so as strictly to preserve the separation of the sexes. These, however, are to be so arranged as to admit of a common direction, to combine their labor economically, and to render certain mutual services, so as to reduce the expense of management and house-keeping.

The former of these establishments may be regarded as definitely organized; it will soon be able to receive its entire complement. The erection of the second depends at present upon the extension of the estate, of which we shall have occasion to speak below.

### 2. *General arrangement of the agricultural reform school for boys.*

This establishment occupies the premises of a sugar-house erected some years since, which came into the hands of the government, in the beginning of 1849, and has been altered and enlarged for its present use. The farm which belonged with them has been so much enlarged, as to bring it into convenient business communication with an estate of some 200 hectares, (about 500 acres;) a road has been built to open a direct communication with the canal, and with the railroad from Gand to Bruges; the transshipment and transport of manure has been facilitated by the construction of a wharf and of a large cistern at the edge of the canal; lastly, a steam-engine of five horse power has been erected for milling grain, raising water, heating the main building, and cooking for the workmen and cattle; arrangements are in progress for connecting with it an elevator, a thrashing machine, a straw-cutter, a turnip-cutter, &c. All these machines will economize labor, and will enable the managers to employ to the best advantage the strength and skill of the laborers, instead of employing them in turning wheels and in other purely mechanical and monotonous labor.

### 3. *Arrangement of the buildings of the school and farm.*

The buildings of the reform school are regularly arranged, and may be considered under two heads, viz., the school proper, and the farm.

1. The school comprehends all the necessary buildings for the offices the operations, and the accommodation of the officers; which occupy the two wings toward the road. The central building contains, in the lower story, the dining-room of the pupils, furnished with tables seating 500 children, two school-rooms, the principal office for business and the dining-room of the officers; in the second story,



large dormitories, each furnished with a hundred and twenty-four cots, a student's chamber, and wash-stands for the pupils. In the garret is a large *voir* filled by the steam-engine, which distributes water to all parts of the establishment. The rooms on the first floor are warmed by a furnace.

On the right of the central building, facing from the road, are the kitchen of the school, the bakery, the steam-engine with its appurtenances, the pantry and the wash-rooms; to the left, the kitchen of the officers, a plunge-bath or swimming-baths, a fire-pump, and in the second story, the infirmary of the pupils with its dependencies. Lastly, the play-ground of the pupils is bounded on three sides by a building of one story, over which are ample granaries; in this building are workshops, the forge, carpenter's shop, spinning and weaving rooms, the tailor's, the shoemaker's and straw-weaver's shops, &c., as well as a temporary wash-house, to be used until the completion of the girls' school. The chapel stands at one corner; built in a style at once simple and elegant; and near it, as in the reform school at *Mettray*, is a small cell for such young beggars and vagrants as are sent to the school for punishment, and for the pupils in such aggravated or exceptional cases as require such quarantine or discipline.

The farm buildings, standing near the school, comprehend a dwelling-house for the farmer and the farm laborers, stables for from 80 to 100 head of cattle, a stable for two horses, two piggeries, a sheep-fold, a poultry-yard, two covered receptacles for manure, a roomy barn, and a large carriage house for the carriage and farming tools, over which are lofts for hay. A watering place for the cattle, and large cisterns for liquid manure and for drainings complete these arrangements; which on the whole and in detail, furnish a real model farm.

All the buildings which we have enumerated, together with the two court-yards of the school and the enclosure around which stand the mills and wood-houses, form nearly a regular parallelogram, of 135 metres long, and 200 wide, (about 445 feet by 650.)

*Extent and division of the estate.*

The property of Ruyssselede contains 126 hectares, 89 ares, 10 centiares, (about 312 acres;) it forms an isosceles triangle with the vertex to the northwest and base to the southeast. It is bounded on one side by the new road laid out by the establishment, and on the others by public roads, so that it is quite separated from the estates adjoining. It is divided into squares, chess-board-wise, generally containing from 1 to 3 hectares ( $2\frac{1}{2}$  to  $7\frac{1}{2}$  acres) each, and separated by rows and avenues of larch, fir, and wild cherry, which last serve for cart-paths, &c. The soil is a gray sand, without any mixture of clay, and therefore light, friable, and easily worked. But it also, to become productive, requires careful cultivation, and large quantities of manure, especially liquid manure. For this reason the authorities of the school have concluded an arrangement with the jail (*maison de correction*) at Gand, for the annual delivery of about 10,000 hectolitres (about 4,200 bushels) of solid and liquid manure.

*Measures of organization; decrees and instructions.*

The department of justice, which has jurisdiction over the reform school, has extensively taken different measures for their organization. The royal decree of March 8, 1849, determines the number, duties, and salaries of the officers, and appoints a committee of from three to five members of the legislature for the inspection and supervision of the reform schools. The decree of May 7, 1849, confirmed this arrangement by determining the mode of filling vacancies and the jurisdiction of the committee.

To prevent the continued imprisonment by the commissioner of beggary and vagrancy causing much inconvenience, the decree of February 28, 1850, ordered their immediate transfer to the reform schools, where they will serve out their terms in separate quarters.

A royal decree of the same date with the last, extends the provisions of the law of December 14, 1848, for the assistance of liberated convicts, to young persons, beggars, and vagrants, at their dismissal from the reform schools. There shall be opened in each of these establishments a register of the offers which may be made by farmers and other employers, to hire, on certain conditions, such of the pupils as may possess the requisite qualifications.

The ministerial circular of March 2, 1850, calls the attention of public prosecu-

tors to the purpose of the reform schools, and furnishes invariable rules for the arrangement of transfers to, and among them. Another circular, of the same date, sends similar instructions to the governors of provinces.

Lastly, the royal decree of July 3, 1850, specifies the conditions and forms of admission to the reform schools, and of dismissal from them.

By this decree, and by the law of April 3, 1848, the reform schools are especially designed.

1. For young paupers, under sixteen years of age, who present themselves voluntarily for admission, with a certificate from the municipal authority of their place of settlement, or from the municipal authority of the neighborhood where they happen to be, or where their usual residence is.

2. For young paupers holding a certificate from the permanent deputation, from the governor of the province, or from the commissary of the district (*arrondissement*) in which the place of settlement of such paupers, their residence, or usual locality, may be.

3. For children and youth sentenced by the commissioner of beggary or vagrancy.

4. For children acquitted by him, but retained under the ——— penal code to be educated, up to a certain age, in a house of correction.

5. For children not guilty of any misdemeanor, indented with farmers, artisans, or charitable institutions.

6. *Numbers; entries, &c.*

The first pupils entered in March, 1849, shortly after the purchase of the property and the commencement of the preparatory work. There were admitted at first 19 children from the alms-house of Bruges, then 15 from that of Combre; a little after these were admitted 63 young beggars and vagrants acquitted by the courts as having acted without knowledge, but detained under the 66th article of the penal code, who had been placed in the juvenile penitentiary of Saint Hubert, for want of any proper receptacle. These, with 24 received singly during the same time, make a total of 121 pupils on the 1st of January, 1850.

From that time to January 1st, 1851, the number has been as in the following table:

Acquitted by the courts, but detained by law in a house of correction, ...	92
Sentenced on application of communes, .....	156
Sent by benevolent institutions, .....	3
<b>Total, .....</b>	<b>251</b>

Young paupers entering the reform schools voluntarily, are kept for at least six months the first time; and for at least one year, if they have been in the school before, or if they have before been inmates of an alms-house. At the end of that time, the civil authority of their place of settlement, their family, or any responsible person, may claim their dismissal, upon engaging to provide for their education, apprenticeship, and support. Demands for such purpose are to be addressed to the permanent deputation of the council of the province to which such pupils belong; directly, if made by the civil authority of their place of settlement; if by their family, or by strangers, then through the civil authority which would have jurisdiction in the case. The deputation determines upon the security offered, and authorizes or refuses the dismissal of the pupils. In the absence of any claims made as above, the deputation, after consultation with the inspecting committee and with the director of the schools, may authorize the dismissal of the pupil, provided he is in a condition to earn his own living. The dismissal of children and youth sentenced by the commissioner of beggary or of vagrancy, is ordered by the governor of the province in which is their place of settlement, or if that can not be found, by the minister of justice.

Such dismissal always depends on these conditions, viz.: that the pupil has remained at least two years in the reform school, if sent there for the first time; and at least four years, if he is an old offender; and, that he is in a condition to earn his own living, or at least is claimed by the civil authority of his place of settlement, by his family, or by some responsible person, under a guaranty that he shall not return to begging or vagrancy, and that he shall be furnished either with work or with sufficient support. The acceptance or refusal of this guaranty is

st to the governor and to the minister of justice, respectively. The minister or the governor may always authorize a dismissal before the time fixed, if their be special reasons for it. Before such authorization, however, the minister or governor is to advise with the committee of inspection, the director of the establishment, and the civil authority of the place of settlement of the pupil.

The time of dismissal of children acquitted by the commissioner of beggary and vagrancy, is determined by the sentence under which they are placed in the school.

There are even children in these establishments, under the decree of September 19, 1848, in order that it may not be rendered necessary, by their bad conduct or otherwise, to imprison them again. The authorities of the reform schools, in such cases, are to suggest such arrangements as the circumstances shall indicate.

The pupils at leaving the schools, are informed by the director what consequences will follow their recommitment to the school.

The committee of inspection of the reform schools returns to the minister of justice, at the beginning of each year, a list of those pupils whose term has passed the limits fixed above, with the reasons of such prolongation. The minister, if proper, then orders their dismissal. The committee also returns annually to the minister a list of the names of those pupils who have arrived at their eighteenth year, with any opinions or advice in the premises.

Among the 18 pupils who left in 1850, there are,

2 who ran away, one eight days after entering, and the other after a stay of about three months. The conduct of this last had been satisfactory, and he appeared to take pleasure in the care bestowed on him. One Sunday he received a visit from his parents, and the next day he disappeared. He has not been discovered up to the present time, although active search was made; 2 who were sent home at the end of eight days, as the civil authority of their respective places of settlement was unwilling to consent to their final admission; 1, who was sent to the alms-house at Bruges, on account of serious disease. The following shows the length of the abode of 13 others in the school: two for 1 year, 7 months, 15 days; two for 1 year, 4 months, 7 days; one for 1 year, 3 months, 3 days; two for 1 year, 2 months, 16 days; two for 1 year, 1 month, 20 days; two for 1 year, 15 days; one for 11 months, 15 days; one for 8 months, 20 days: the average time is 1 year, 2½ months.

At their departure, two were 16 years old; seven were 15 years old; two were 13 years old; two were 10 years old; two had been sentenced by the commissioner of beggary, and were returned to their parents under the guaranty of the local authority of their communes; the 11 others belong to the class of children detained under the 66th article of the penal code. They were claimed immediately upon the expiration of their judgment term, by the communes of their places of settlement; 8 were taken by their parents, under the supervision of the local authority; the other 3 were placed under the care of the committees of employment (comités de patronage) of Gand, of Ninove, and of Audenarde.

#### 8. *Age of the pupils.*

The age of the 269 pupils, January 1, 1851, was as follows:

21	aged less than 10 years.
45	" from 10 to 12 years.
94	" " 12 to 14 "
80	" " 14 to 16 "
29	" over 16 years.

#### 9. *Civil and social condition.*

In respect to their civil condition they may be classed as follows:

28	illegitimate children.
42	without father or mother.
43	" father.
88	" mother.
64	having both parents.
3	foundlings.
1	abandoned child.

Such is the social position of the unfortunate youths; most of them deprived of family relations; and the parents of those who have them are, for the most part, to be found in the alms-houses or prisons. 40

10. *Committee of supervision.*

The supervision and inspection of the school are entrusted to a committee of three, by the decree of March 8, 1849. These three gentlemen, who have contributed powerfully from the beginning to the success of the school, by their zeal and their efforts, are the Chevalier Ernest Peers-Ducpetiaux, Frederic Van der Bruggen, and Henri Kervyn, provincial inspector of primary instruction at Gand.

11. *Persons employed, salaries, emoluments.*

These are,

	Francs.	Dollars.		Francs.	Dollars.
1 director, .....	4,000	about 800	1 gardener, .....	400	about 80
1 chaplain, .....	1,200	" 240	1 assistant gardener, ..	300	" 60
1 treasurer, .....	1,200	" 240	4 laborers, for teams, } stables, and farm } work, at 200 fr., .. }	800	" 160
1 secretary, .....	600	" 120	1 cook, .....	200	" 40
1 supernumerary, .....			1 miller and baker, } and 1 housekeeper, } both, .....	250	" 50
1 physician, .....	600	" 120			
2 teachers, at 600 fr., ....	1,200	" 240			
1 chief overseer, .....	600	" 120			
3 overseers, at 450 fr., ..	1,350	" 270			
1 occasional overseer, ..	400	" 80			
1 head farmer, .....	600	" 120	Total, 21	13,700 fr.	\$2,740

These officers receive, besides their salaries, the emoluments specified in the decree of March 8, 1850, viz. : board, lights, fuel, washing, furniture, and medical attendance in sickness, except that the director, who keeps house does not receive board, washing, or furniture. The overseers have, besides, a uniform valued at 50 francs, (10 dollars,) and the laborers, each a suit of clothes valued at 20 francs, (4 dollars.) There are two tables for the officers ; one for the officers proper, presided over by the chaplain, the other for the farm laborers, at the head of which is the farmer. All those employed, except the director, are single ; a condition rendered necessary by the arrangements of the establishment, and the impossibility of accommodating families in it. At some future time it will be proper to examine the practicability of preparing some tenements for families. Having started in the present footing, (*à partir du présent exercice*), there will be room for the employment of some additional officers, and particularly for an increase in the number of overseers, proportionable to that in the number of pupils. These overseers should be chosen, by preference, from among practical mechanics, and should have the direction of some of the workshops. The remaining shops may be entrusted, as at present, to the oversight of paid workmen ; such as those whom the establishment has already engaged as a locksmith and blacksmith, a machinist and fireman for the steam-engine, a wheel-wright, &c.

The officers, before receiving a definite nomination or engagement, are taken on trial, and undergo a sort of noviciate, which test their zeal and their aptitude. This plan has succeeded perfectly.

12. *Plan for erecting school of foremen.*

During the investigations pending the establishment of the reform school, it had been suggested to connect with it a special school for foremen, like that of Mettray and at the Rauhe-Haus at Hamburg ; but it was abandoned as difficult, complicated, and expensive. But although it has not been thought practicable to gather from elsewhere the material for a seminary of capable and faithful workmen, it has been understood that the institution would endeavor to educate within itself such subordinate agents as it might require. This furnishes an opening to those pupils who may be distinguished by good conduct or capacity ; and already, after scarcely eighteen months of operations, there took place, at the beginning of the present year, the formal emancipation of one of them, a young man of activity and intelligence, and quick at all kinds of work, who has taken his place among the laborers upon the farm. Others will surely follow his example, and under its stimulus will be ambitious of the honor of serving such an establishment where they have found (so to speak) a new existence, and the certain prospect of ultimate success.

13. *General dietetics.*

The diet of the pupils has been assimilated as much as possible to that of agricultural laborers. It is simple but abundant ; plain, but healthful.

14. *Provisions.*

The food is furnished according to a bill of fare at the average expense, according to the price current of about 21 centimes (4 cents) a day for each pupil. This expense is certainly less than in any other similar establishment, in this or any

her country. The pupils nevertheless have meat twice a week ; for which purpose hogs are killed on the farm, and their flesh served up alternately with beef. The bread is rye, unbolted. The grain, potatoes, legumes, milk, and butter, are the productions of the establishment, which diminish the amount of actual expenditure. With the extension and improvement of the present cultivation, these crops will increase, and ultimately, when there shall be as much land under cultivation as will be required by the full number of pupils, it is to be hoped that the establishment will itself furnish all the essentials for its own consumption.

#### 15. *Clothing.*

Each pupil receives at entering the following articles : 5 shirts, 2 pair pantaloons, 2 pair working pantaloons, 1 vest, 2 blouses, 2 neck cloths, 2 pocket handkerchiefs, 1 belt, 1 cap, 1 straw hat, 2 pair understockings, 1 pair shoes, 2 pair wooden shoes, (sabots,) 2 towels, 1 comb, and 2 brushes, (1 for clothes, 1 for shoes.) The expense of this wardrobe does not exceed from 32 to 35 francs, (\$6.50 to \$7.00,) according to size. Most of these articles have hitherto been furnished from the workshops in the jail of Gand ; but as soon as the workshops of the reform school are organized, it will make and finish, as far as possible, all the necessary clothing and bedding for its inmates. The tailors' and menders' shop is ready in operation ; even the youngest of the children make straw hats ; the spinning and weaving shops are begun, and will be in action before the end of the winter. The shoemakers' shop is in a like state of forwardness. The only difficulty is in finding foremen capable of directing the young operatives ; but the activity of the director will undoubtedly soon remedy it.

#### 16. *Sleeping arrangements.*

The bedsteads are of iron, with a press for clothing ; the bedding consists of a raw mattress, a pillow, a pair of linen sheets, and one, two, or three cotton coverlets, according to the season. The bedsteads, which are manufactured at the jail of Gand, cost only 22 to 23 francs (\$4.50 to \$4.75) each, including the press, which is also of iron. They are arranged in four rows in the dormitories. These are lighted all night, and besides that, the overseer can see from his chamber, at a glance, all that passes ; a night watch has been organized. An overseer, attended by two pupils, passes through all the premises, and especially through the dormitories, to see that all is in good order.

#### 17. *Fire and light.*

These are put upon the most economical footing. The entire first story of the central building, including the eating room and the schools, is warmed by the steam-engine. Lamps are used for lights, and the colewort (colza) cultivated on the farm furnishes part of the oil. The temporary wash-room is managed by pupils, in anticipation of the organization of the school for girls, who will take charge of the washing and laundry departments of both establishments.

#### 18. *Health.*

The healthy condition of the school gives a testimony in favor of the regimen introduced. Many of the children, at their entrance, were infected with diseases more or less severe, with rickets or scrofula. But both diseases and symptoms were rapidly disappeared before pure air, field labor, and regular living. This is so true, that it is easy at a glance to distinguish by their appearance pupils lately admitted from those who have been inmates for a longer time. The latter are generally strong and active ; they are rosy, and their whole appearance denotes health.

In 1849 no infirmary was opened ; in fact, there was no case of distinct disease, and consequently no death ; and the medical department, including the visits of the inspecting physician, cost only 95fr., 34c., (about \$20.00.)

In 1850, from a number of pupils averaging 171, there were only 12 admissions to the infirmary. The number of days under treatment was 72, giving an average of 6 days to each patient. The whole expense for drugs and materia medica of all kinds, both for the pupils and for such laborers as were hurt or bruized during the building, was only 48fr. 94c., (about \$10.00.) There was no death. Children sick with severe or incurable diseases, and consequently unfit for all labor, are sent to the infirmary of the alms-house at Bruges, by an arrangement made with that institution. The reform school pays for their support and treatment at the rate of 50 centimes (about 10 cents) a day each.

#### 19. *Moral training.*

The moral training has been the object of more paternal care, if possible, than

the physical. It has been supposed that the poor children sent to the reform school needed food for the soul, no less than for the body; that it was designed not only to snatch them from misery, disease, and death, but to change their habits, to correct their vices, to teach them their duties, to relieve them of their almost hereditary degradation, and to elevate them in their own estimation, as well as in that of society. Notwithstanding the difficulties inseparable from an entirely new organization, and the embarrassments occasioned by building, from the first entrance of the first pupils they have been held under a strict but kindly supervision; and up to this time there has occurred no act of insubordination of a nature seriously to interfere with the steady discipline of the establishment.

#### 20. *Successive admission of pupils.*

The successive admission of pupils, a few at a time, has contributed much to this result, by facilitating the work of the officers; it has also resulted in the formation of a class in which the newly arrived pupils are enrolled.

#### 21. *Classification.*

The school is divided, at present, into 5 divisions of from 50 to 60 pupils each, arranged as much as possible according to age. There is an overseer to each division. Each division is separated into two sections; over each section is a captain (chef) and assistant, (sous-chef,) selected by the director from among such pupils as distinguish themselves for good conduct and industry. Each division has also a trumpet, (clairon.)

#### 22. *Exercises of the day.*

The division of time is so regulated as to occupy every moment of the pupils, to prevent fatigue by variety and frequent succession of exercises, and to prevent them from escaping supervision. It varies somewhat, according to the season; and is at present arranged as follows, for summer and winter, Sundays and feast-days:

##### 1. *Summer.*

HOURS.		HOURS.	
5	Rise.	1 to 5½	Working hours.
5 to 5½	Prayers, washing, (soins de propreté,) bed-making, roll-call.	4½ " 5½	Catechism for children not having received their first communion.
5½ " 6½	Exercise and manœuvres.	5½ " 5½	Supper.
6½ " 6½	Breakfast.	5½ " 7½	School instruction.
6½ " 7	Arrangement of labor.	7½ " 8½	Gymnastics.
7 " 11	Working hours.	8½ " 9	Roll-call, reports.
11 " 12	Singing class, practice by the band, (répétition pour la fanfare.)	9	Prayers, bed-time.
12 " 12½	Dinner.		Saturday, 5 to 8, cleaning work-shops, baths, &c.
12½ " 1	Play.		

##### 2. *Winter.*

HOURS.		HOURS.	
5	Rise.	1 to 2	Gymnastics and military exercises.
5 to 5½	Prayers, washing, &c., bed-making, roll-call.	2 " 5½	Working hours.
5½ " 6½	Singing class.	4½ " 5½	Catechism for children not having received their first communion.
6½ " 7	Breakfast.	5½ " 6	Supper.
7 " 7½	Arrangement of labor.	6 " 8	School instruction.
7½ " 12	Working hours.	8 " 8½	Roll-call, report.
11 " 12	Practice by the band, (répétition pour la fanfare.)	8½	Prayer, bed-time.
12 " 12½	Dinner.		Saturday, 1 to 4½, cleaning work-shops, baths, &c.
12½ " 1	Play.		

##### 3. *Sundays and feast-days all the year.*

HOURS.		HOURS.	
5 to 5½	Rise, prayer, washing, &c.	2 to 4	Catechism and religious instruction.
5½ " 7½	Clothes inspection, bed, &c., do.	4 " 5½	Gymnastics, military exercises, or walk.
7½ " 8	Breakfast.	5½ " 6	Supper.
8 " 8½	Play.	6 " 8	School instruction.
8½ " 9½	Mass, sermon.	8 " 8½	Roll-call, report.
9½ " 11	Singing class.	8½	Prayers, bed-time.
11 " 12	Play, games, (recreation, jeux.)		
12 " 12½	Dinner.		
12½ " 2	Play, games.		



The results of this arrangement may be stated as follows :

	Hours.	
	Summer.	Winter.
Labor,.....	8½	8½
School instruction,.....	1½	2
Music, vocal and instrumental, .....	1	1
Gymnastics, manœuvres and military exercises,.....	2½	1
Meals,.....	1	1
Play,.....	1	1
Rising, retiring, washing, roll-call, &c., .....	1	1½
Sleep,.....	8	8½
An hour's catechism for pupils not having received their first communion, which is subtracted from working hours. ....		

### 23. *Physical training, gymnastics, military manœuvres, and exercises.*

It will be observed that gymnastics, manœuvres, and military exercises, especially in the summer, occupy a considerable portion of the day. To understand the necessity and good effect of these exercises, it would be necessary to see the deplorable condition of the majority of the children at their entrance, and the favorable change which appears in their appearance and health, after staying some time in the institution. Rickets, scrofula, want of elasticity in the limbs, difficulty of walking, all rapidly disappear under the drill of the manœuvres ; which tend not only to confirm the health and to increase the strength and activity of the children, but also to accustom them to discipline, to awaken their power of attention, and to furnish them an agreeable variety of employment, while preparing them for different useful occupations. The fatigue of these exercises, while not amounting to exhaustion, predisposes the pupils to sleep, and may perhaps be considered a most effective safeguard against the shameful habits and secret vices induced by sedentary life, which are only too frequent in public and educational institutions, but which are fortunately being destroyed in the beginning at Ruyselede.

Under the very zealous and skillful direction of the director of gymnastics, the exercises are performed with very remarkable interest and accuracy. The school battalion manœuvres with almost as much precision as the best battalions of the army ; a platoon, armed with condemned carbines, marches at the head and marks time ; the bayonet exercise and skirmishing are as good as play to the children ; and those among them who shall go into military service will have already passed through all the drill of the conscripts.

### 24. *School of naval apprentices.*

To complete this department of instruction, of which we presume no one will deny the utility, it is sought to connect with the gymnasium a school of naval apprentices, for the war and merchant marine. Such an establishment, which the minister of the interior lately mentioned as promising materially to alleviate the distress in Flanders, by opening a new occupation to the laboring population, might be advantageously and economically attached to an existing institution, whose inmates, consisting principally of abandoned children, beggars, and vagrants, seem well adapted to become sailors. In several pauper schools in England, and recently in France also, at the school of Mettray, there have been established classes of naval apprentices, several of the graduates of which have immediately found employment in the sea-port towns. Imitation of this example would doubtless produce a similar result. For this purpose it would be sufficient, as at Mettray and at Norwood, near London, to add to the gymnastic apparatus the masts and spars of a brig, with their sails and rigging, and to procure the attendance of a seaman twice a week, to direct the manœuvres. According to the estimates which have been made, the necessary apparatus would cost about \$2,000, which would be reduced to \$1,200 or \$1,600 if it could be procured at second hand.

25. *Provision made for intellectual, moral, and religious education as developed in the following articles.*

### 26. *School organization.*

The course of study, which was only outlined in 1849, has been completely organized during 1850. The pupils are divided into two classes, each subdivided into sections. Over each class is a teacher, assisted by a certain number of monitors chosen from among the pupils, for whom is arranged a special daily course, to prepare them for their business. Among these monitors are some who exhibit



dispositions and skill quite remarkable; and who may probably become distinguished instructors.

### 27. *Course of study.*

The studies, pursued alternately in French and Flemish, are reading, writing, grammar, dictation, intuition, exercise of memory, arithmetic, mental and written, the legal system of weights and measures, general geography, the history of the country, the rudiments of linear drawing, and vocal and instrumental music. This course can hereafter be extended, according to the progress of the pupils, so as to embrace all the knowledge useful to a workman, and which can contribute to his intellectual, moral, and professional accomplishment. At the beginning it was necessary to limit the course to the most elementary rudiments.

### 28. *Method of teaching.*

The method followed is that of M. Braün, professor of pedagogy in the normal school at Nivelles, (intuitive method.) To acquaint the instructors of the school at Ruyssselede with this method, they were sent for several months to the normal school at Nivelles, where they studied with success the course in methodology. In consequence of these preparatory studies, these officers are thorough masters of their business; they display both zeal and perseverance; and from this time forward the schools at Ruyssselede will rank among the first institutions of the kind in the country.

### 29. *Order of exercises. Winter.*

Week Days. Hours, P. M. 2nd Class (beginners.)

SUNDAY	6 to 6½	Articulation and writing.
	6½ " 7	Reading.
	7 " 7½	Weights and measures.
MOND.	7½ " 8	Do. practically applied.
	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.
	6½ " 7	Reading.
TUES.	7 " 7½	Arithmetic, mental.
	7½ " 8	" written.
	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.
WED.	6½ " 7	Reading.
	7 " 7½	Reading, (intuition.)
	7½ " 8	Exercises in memory.
THURS.	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.
	6½ " 7	Reading.
	7 " 7½	Reading, (intuition.)
FRIDAY	7½ " 8	Exercises in memory.
	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.
	6½ " 7	Reading.
SATUR.	7 " 7½	Arithmetic, mental.
	7½ " 8	" written.
	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.

Week Days. Hours, P. M. 2nd Class (beginners.)

SUNDAY	6 to 6½	Articulation and writing.
	6½ " 7	Reading.
	7 " 7½	Weights and measures.
MOND.	7½ " 8	Same, applied.
	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.
	6½ " 7	Reading.
TUES.	7 " 7½	Arithmetic, mental.
	7½ " 8	" written.
	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.
WED.	6½ " 7	Reading.
	7 " 7½	Reading, (intuition.)
	7½ " 8	Exercises in memory.
THURS.	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.
	6½ " 7	Reading.
	7 " 7½	Reading, (intuition.)
FRIDAY	7½ " 8	Exercises in memory.
	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.
	6½ " 7	Reading.
SATUR.	7 " 7½	Arithmetic, mental.
	7½ " 8	" written.
	6 " 6½	Articulation and writing.

Week Days. Hours, P. M. 1st Class (beginners.)

SUNDAY	6 to 7	Writing.
	7 " 7½	Arithmetic, mental.
	7½ " 8	" written.
MON.	6 " 6½	Dictation, Flemish.
	6½ " 7	Correction of do., spelling.
	7 " 8	Reading, Flemish.
TUES.	6 " 6½	Dictation, French.
	6½ " 7	Correction of above.
	7 " 8	Reading, French.
WED.	6 " 6½	Explanations of forms of letters.
	6½ " 7	Letters written in blank book.
	7 " 7½	Oral translation.
THURS.	7½ " 8	Writing phrases dictated.
	6 " 6½	Geography.
	6½ " 7	History of the country
FRIDAY	7 " 7½	Arithmetic, mental.
	7½ " 8	" written.
	6 " 6½	Weights and measures.
SATUR.	6½ " 7	Written application of do.
	7 " 8	Reading, French.
	6 " 7	Grammar.
SUNDAY	7 " 8	Drawing from a model.
	6 " 6½	Geography.
	6½ " 7	History of the country

Week Days. Hours, P. M. 1st Class (beginners.)

SUNDAY	6 to 7	Writing.
	7 " 7½	Arithmetic, mental.
	7½ " 8	" written.
MON.	6 " 6½	Dictation, Flemish.
	6½ " 7	Correction of do., spelling.
	7 " 8	Reading, Flemish.
TUES.	6 " 6½	Dictation, French.
	6½ " 7	Correction of above.
	7 " 8	Reading, French.
WED.	6 " 6½	Explanations of forms of letters.
	6½ " 7	Letters written in blank book.
	7 " 7½	Oral translation.
THURS.	7½ " 8	Writing phrases dictated.
	6 " 6½	Geography.
	6½ " 7	History of the country
FRIDAY	7 " 7½	Arithmetic, mental.
	7½ " 8	" written.
	6 " 6½	Weights and measures.
SATUR.	6½ " 7	Written application of do.
	7 " 8	Reading, French.
	6 " 7	Grammar.
SUNDAY	7 " 8	Drawing from a model.
	6 " 6½	Geography.
	6½ " 7	History of the country

### 30. *Instruction in Singing.*

A solfeggio lesson is given every morning from six to seven to the second class, and one in singing at the same time to the first class. The method used is that of Galin-Paris-Chevé, partly combined with the ordinary method by notes. Some of the more advanced scholars are also learning church music, and can already sing the service of the mass.

### 31. *Instrumental music; military band.*

In March 1850, a military band was organized of fifteen instruments of copper, (on the plan of Sax,) namely: 1 small bugle in *e flat*, 3 tenor bugles in *b*, 2 alto bugles in *e*, 2 cornets á piston, 1 small key trumpet, 2 cylinder trumpets, 2 cylinder trombones, 1 tuba in *b flat*, 1 base tuba in *f*. A master attends twice a week from Bruges, and notwithstanding that none of the children knew a single note, a few months since, he has trained thirty young musicians who are equal to most of those of the regimental bands. The band plays at exercises, and marches at the

head of the scholars when they walk in the neighborhood ; it amuses them on Sunday, and figures in all the solemnities of the establishment. There are, besides, 8 trumpets, which sound for roll-call, and fill the place of bells in the public offices. The instruction of the pupils in the use of wind instruments will doubtless furnish some of them with useful and lucrative occupation ; all those who are capable of it will be admitted to the musical corps of the army, on their dismissal.

**32. Apparatus and furniture ; library.**

The school-rooms are spacious, well lighted, and provided with all the necessary furniture and apparatus ; desks, seats, platforms, tables, maps, weights and measures, models, &c. A library of the best books, moral, instructive, and amusing, is in process of formation for the use of the officers and pupils.

**33. Mental acquirements of pupils at entrance.**

Of 245 pupils, January 1, 1851, at their entrance were : 42 knew how to read and write ; 22 knew the alphabet ; 181 completely ignorant. Those children who had acquired some degree of instruction, had received it at the school of the penitentiary at Saint-Hubert ; those from the alms-house of Cambre and Bruges, were mostly quite as ignorant as the young beggars and vagrants who entered the school from time to time.

**34. Instruction actually given to the pupils.**

**35. Religious department.**

The want of accommodations and the small number of pupils did not allow, at first, of the appointment of a chaplain to the school ; all that could be done was to erect a temporary altar in a sufficiently large room, and by the kindness of the curate of Ruyselede, every Sunday and feast-day, one of the vicars of the commune attended to say mass and to give religious instruction. This temporary arrangement lasted until June, 1850. At that time, the appointment of the Abbé Bruson to the place of chaplain, caused the school as it were to enter upon a new phase of existence. The all-powerful influence of religion has united with that of the discipline and supervision, to realize the work of reformation to which all the efforts of the faculty are directed. The worthy ecclesiastic to whom has been confided the work of instructing these poor children, has become their friend and father ; they all love and respect him. Constantly among them, he studies their characters, inquires their wants, and does not spare good advice.

**36. Religious condition of the children at their entrance and after their stay at the school ; report of the chaplain.**

The result of the inquiries made at their entrance, and of the examination made by the chaplain, shows that the great majority of the children sent to the reform school, are ignorant of the essential truths of religion. Of 245 pupils present at the end of 1850, 142 had, it is true, received their first communion ; but of this number only 13 knew the whole catechism, and only 11 of these answered satisfactorily. The others had only begun the principal lessons, and had almost entirely forgotten them. But let us hear the chaplain himself, who, in a report addressed to the committee of inspection at the close of 1850, reviews all the religious condition of the institution.

“ As to the children who have not partaken of their first communion, some on account of their youth, and some on account of the sadly neglected condition in which they have vegetated, it would be fortunate, so far as these last are concerned, if they knew their prayers and the most important religious truths. There are among them 35 from 13 to 16 years of age, of whom 11 scarcely know their prayers, and 12 have only begun to learn two or three lessons in the catechism. All the pupils are obliged to attend mass on Sundays and feast-days, during which they receive a short lesson. So far as circumstances permits, divine service is performed with singing and music ; and when the new chapel shall be finished, I see no reason why there should not be, as in parish churches, the solemn celebration, by singing, of matins, high mass, vespers and benediction. Prayers are said at rising and going to bed, and before and after meals. I think it would also be useful if the teachers should see that the recitations are begun and ended with a short prayer, or at least with the sign of the cross.

The pupils who have not yet received their first communion, recite daily for an hour in the catechism. They learn the letter of the book simultaneously, and the

sense is afterward explained to them. Every day are added new questions and answers, and the former ones are repeated. Thus they make rapid progress.

The religious instruction is given in Flemish, which is the language of the great majority of the pupils. By their continual intercourse with each other, they learn both French and Flemish rapidly enough; but as a precaution, and not to give any excuse for wrong doing, care is taken to repeat, to the Walloons especially, in French, the instruction which has already been given in Flemish.

I desire here to express my hopes for the future of all these poor children, whom a judicious charity has lifted from a miserable, ignorant, and brutish degradation. The regularity of their conduct, the excellent spirit which animates them, the good order existing continually and every where, the good examples which they furnish to one another, the good habits which they acquire, the willing regularity with which they perform their religious duties, the aid, support, and advice which they continually receive from instructors interested in and devoted to their work and above all the excellent character of the principal authority of the school which is the soul of the whole institution, and which is above all praise, are not only presages of a better future, and foundations for hope; they give convincing assurances that from the reform schools of Ruysselede shall come laborious, honest, moral, religious, and therefore happy men."

#### 38. *Order and discipline.*

In the absence of any other set of rules, the inspector-general of charitable institutions, who has special supervision of the organization of reform schools, in conjunction with the committee of supervision and inspection, and the director, have made the necessary regulations to insure the discipline and good order of the establishment.

#### 39. *Moral accountability.*

A system of moral accountability has been established upon a basis at once simple and complete. For each pupil there is a file of papers, in which are preserved the examination at his entrance, the statement of his condition before entrance, his conduct and progress during his stay, his condition at leaving and afterward. This file contains also other documents concerning the pupil; judgments, certificates, letters, and all information which may inform the authority of the school to his standing and as to the results of his education in the reform school. These papers will furnish invaluable information for the exercise of judicious patronage.

#### 40. *Book of conduct.*

The head overseer has charge of a book, in which he enters regularly the communications daily made him as to the standing of the pupils, by the overseers, foremen of the workshops, captains of sections, &c. At the end of each month the director reviews these entries, and makes out the good and bad marks, for 1. general conduct; 2. order and neatness; 3. school studies; 4. religious duties; 5. work.

#### 41. *Class and register of honor.*

Those pupils who have received no punishment during three consecutive months, and have during each of those months received a fixed maximum of good marks, are admitted into a class of honor, from which the director selects the captains and assistants of sections. The names of those in this class are written upon a register which hangs in one of the principal rooms.

#### 42. *Rewards.*

The distribution of rewards is the duty of the director. They are entered in the running account with each pupil, in the reports of moral accountability which are submitted to the inspector-general and to the members of the committee of inspection, at each of their visits. The rewards are, 1. honorable mention; 2. public eulogy; 3. admission to certain confidential employments; 4. appointment as captain or assistant of section; 5. registration in the register of honor; 6. permission to learn to play some instrument, and to become a member of the band; 7. walks, short journeys, visits home, &c.

#### 43. *Names on the register of honor, January 1, 1851.*

The register of honor was made up for the first time, January 1, 1850. At the end of that year, it contained the names of 164 pupils, of whom 58 were registered once; 39 twice; 50 three times; 17 four times.

#### 44. *Erasures from the register of honor in 1850.*

No favors are granted except accordingly as the name of the pupil appears on

the register of honor. A single fault or bad mark is sufficient to cause the erasure of a name. The number erased during the year is 23, namely :

For insubordination, .....	7	For stealing fruit, eggs, carrots, &c.,....	5
" dirtiness, .....	4	" aiding and abetting the above,.....	1
" idleness, .....	2	" running away.....	1
" indecent proposals, .....	1		
" false accusation,.....	1	Total, .....	23
" gluttony, .....	1		

#### 45. *Punishments.*

While good conduct and praiseworthy actions are rewarded, crimes and faults are punished with more or less severity. The punishments used are the following: 1. reprimand; 2. detention during play-hours; 3. forced marching, with or without hand-cuffs, and with or without diet on bread and water; 4. loss of place of captain, or assistant of section; 5. dismissal from certain confidential employments; 6. deprivation of musical instrument and dismissal from band; 6. erasure of name from register of honor; 7. the prison.

No punishment is inflicted except by decision of the director. The captains of sections report to the overseers of divisions, they to the chief overseer, he to the director. Overseers may give a reprimand, and may put the pupils under detention from play-hours.

#### 46. *Punishments inflicted in 1850.*

The punishments are entered in a book, and carried to the account of the pupils who have incurred them. Their number, and the causes, are as follows :

Quarrels, .....	4	Blasphemy,.....	3
Violent assaults, .....	5	Indecent proposals,.....	2
Laziness, .....	27	False accusation,.....	1
Dirtiness,.....	35	Theft of carrots, fruit, eggs, &c., ....	13
Insubordination, .....	25	Assisting in above, .....	4
Negligence, .....	14	Trying to run away, .....	8
Turbulence, .....	15	Running away, .....	4
Refusing to work, .....	3		
Gluttony, .....	5	Total, .....	168

It has generally been sufficient to administer a public reprimand. In other cases, recourse has been had to the condemned squad, sometimes with hand-cuffs, rarely with diet on bread and water. There has been no use, hitherto, of the prison. One captain of section has been degraded. All the others have felt the honor of their position, have been justly proud of their distinction, and have deserved to retain it.

#### 47. *Preservation of morals and manners.*

As we have already observed, the preservation of the morals and manners of the pupils is the object of daily and hourly care; among the means used for this purpose, are the following: uninterrupted supervision; the nature of the work, which is performed mostly in the open air; gymnastic and military exercises; correction of habits of position—as, hands on tables in school, in dining room, &c.; inspection and lighting of sleep-rooms—there is a watchman in each room, and the overseer on guard makes frequent rounds; education, intellectual and religious; warnings and advice of the chaplain and director; provisions for special supervision.

#### 48. *Meetings and conferences of pupils and officers.*

On the first Sunday of each month, after mass, the officers and pupils all gather to a general assembly, under the presidency of the director. He then addresses eulogiums and admonitions to those deserving them, publishes rewards and punishments, appoints the captains and assistants of sections, and discourses upon the proceedings of the past month, with the purpose of keeping the pupils within their duty, of stimulating their zeal, and of rousing within them good sentiments and noble thoughts. These meetings, which hitherto have had a most salutary influence, will hereafter take place every week.

Further, the director proposes every Saturday afternoon to meet the principal officers for the purpose of advising with them upon any necessary matter, and to discuss the interests of the pupils, and the measures necessary to the continued and increased success of the establishment. There will also be kept a book of regulations and a journal of events at the school.

#### 49. *State of feeling in the school; results of system.*

The state of feeling in the school is at present excellent. The children are

obedient, respectful to their superiors, polite and obliging to each other ; disputes are rare ; the brotherly feeling prevailing among them is continually strengthened. They are attached to the institution ; they have its reputation at heart, and when one of them does any thing wrong, his severest penalty is the disapprobation of his companions, and the solitude in which they leave him. This interdict, put by the good upon the bad, is remarkable ; it is a powerful assistance to discipline ; and more than one child upon whom the warnings and counsels of the officers had taken no hold, has yielded to the moral pressure and salutary power of the public opinion of the school.

During the year now closing, there have been several opportunities to estimate the influence of the system of education introduced in the establishment. The agricultural and industrial exhibition at Bruges, September, 1850, where the reform school attended with its car, bearing the symbols of agriculture, the band, and the armed company ; the distribution of medals for the same exhibition, which took place a little after, at the commune of Ruyselede, and where the pupils attended to receive the premiums given to their collective labor ; the agricultural decoration granted to the head farmer for his good and faithful services ; the ceremonies of the jubilee at Bruges, in which those pupils took part whose names are in the register of honor ; all these have been powerful incitements of encouragement and emulation. By coming thus in contact with society, by seeing themselves surrounded with the evidence of so much care, the pupils have seen that their reinstatement therein was commenced. The wretched little beggar, the young vagabond without home or country, begins to experience the recognition, the love, and the understanding of the dignity, of humanity. The proofs of this transformation are numerous ; we will cite a few at hazard.

During the past summer the chiefs of sections, with an overseer, went to Bruges to bring a number of children from the alms-house there ; they were busy all the forenoon in washing them, changing their clothes, and preparing them to depart ; at dinner-time, being invited to take their meal with the others, they all, without concerted agreement for one reason or another, refused. On coming home at evening, fatigued with their journey, the director asked them the reason of that refusal. " We were hungry enough," said they, " but we had rather fast than eat beggars' soup." During the festivals at Bruges, several persons, pleased with the good appearance of the pupils, offered them money ; they all refused but one, who accepted a five franc piece (\$1.00) which he placed in a box containing aid for children leaving the school. At the distribution of medals at Ruyselede, the burgomaster who presided, offered to one of the pupils a piece of silver. " Thank you, sir," said he, " we have all that we need ; we should not know what to do with the money ; please give it to some one more unfortunate than we." During December last, the chaplain, at divine service, delivered a sermon, taking for his text the two first words of the Lord's prayer ; Our Father. This touching address made a deep impression upon the pupils, who spontaneously waited for the chaplain to come out from the chapel, saluted him with unanimous acclamations, and testified their gratitude and affection by an actual ovation. At the New Year it was the director's turn ; the pupils had prepared an agreeable surprise for him. At the moment when the clock struck the expiration of the old year, and the coming in of the new, the whole school came together to present to him their congratulations and regards, and to give him a serenade. Some days afterwards there happened the formal emancipation of one of the best pupils, who was placed among the laborers on the farm. On this occasion the director pronounced a feeling discourse, which was heard with religious attention, and which doubtless left useful impressions on their minds. We mention these things, because they appear to us to be the symptoms, we might even say the certain evidence, of a true reform. When we compare the present condition of the pupils with that in which they were at their arrival, we may measure with justifiable pride the distance between those periods, and the progress made in less than eighteen months.

The preceding details will show that the establishment at Ruyselede is not a prison—a place of penitence—but actually a true reform school, as its title indicates. The pupils enjoy a liberty limited only by rules to which they submit almost spontaneously, and with good will ; all idea of constraint is avoided ; there are neither walls, barriers, grates, nor bolts ; so that if the children remain in the



institution, it is because they are contented and choose to. The small number of escapes which have taken place, demonstrates the advantage of a system based upon confidence and persuasion. The officers do not hesitate when a pupil behaves well, if he belongs to a respectable family, to allow him to visit his parents, if in the neighborhood; these permissions have never been abused, and the pupils to whom they have been given have always returned at the hour prescribed. They can also grant other diversions by way of favor, as a reward of good conduct, and an incentive to more; on certain festival days the most meritorious pupils may be allowed to sit at table with the officers; during winter evenings they may be allowed to put off going to bed, and to employ themselves in such study or reading as they please, or to take part in familiar conversations upon instructive and amusing subjects. Games may be played, such as shooting with bow and arrow, bowling, skittles, &c. The institution, lastly, of annual festivals, as in the German schools, and especially the anniversary of the school, contribute to give variety and animation to the daily life of the pupils, to rivet the bonds of gratitude and affection between them and their benefactors, and to furnish agreeable reminiscences of their stay in the school.

**50. *Agricultural organization; employment of the pupils on the farm.***

The reform school of Ruyssselede, according to the plan on which it was founded, is especially an agricultural establishment. The whole organization of labor is based upon agricultural and kindred occupations, such as may be performed in the fields. The pupils work in the earth, sow and plant; the younger hoe or pull weeds; the older and stronger are employed in harvesting and thrashing. One brigade is specially attached to the farm, where its members in regular rotation are employed at the stables, the hog-pens, the poultry-yard, the manure heaps, the dairy, &c. Another brigade is employed in the kitchen-garden, under the direction and supervision of the gardener and his assistant. During these two first years, it has been necessary to employ laborers from without the school, to assist the inexperience of the children, and to perform some work too difficult for them; but after this year, the establishment can undoubtedly supply all its own labor.

**51. *Combination and alternation of agricultural and mechanical labor.***

During the season of cultivation, it is estimated that the farm work will regularly occupy from 250 to 300 children; these are selected in preference from among the country pupils, orphans, and abandoned children; the town children, who at their dismissal are to return to their families, will find employment in the workshops already organized, or shortly to be so; these same workshops will also furnish occupation for the farm-laborers during the winter, and whenever out-door work is necessarily suspended.

**52. *Choice and nature of occupation, according to the circumstances of the children.***

In the selection of occupations it has been requisite to harmonize the interests of the two classes of pupils, town and country children, so as to give them equal advantages for whatever situation they may take on leaving the school. This object has been carefully considered by the instructors, who, without coming to any very definite resolution on this point, have considered the following occupations as satisfying more or less the conditions required.

Blacksmithing, locksmithing, making and repairing farming tools, edge-tool making, trellis making, machinist's work. The erection of the steam-engine will allow of instructing pupils in managing it, and in the duty of fireman, &c.

Carpentry, joiner-work, wheel-wrighting, cooperage, wooden-shoe making, turning, carving in wood; saddle and harness making; shoe-making and repairing; tailoring and mending; painting, glazing, masonry, hod-carrying, brick-making, plastering, &c.; basket-making, straw-plaiting, hat, mat, and broom-making, &c.; nail-making, brush-making; making toys and chains; making various woven articles; carpets, slippers, &c.; manufacture of flax; breaking, hatcheling, spinning, winding, weaving, &c.; milling, baking, cooking; domestic labor; education as musicians, soldiers, sailors, &c.

**53. *Occupations already introduced into the reform school.***

Some of the above-named employments are already introduced into the school. The workshops of the blacksmith and locksmiths, carpenters, wheelwrights, coopers, tailors, basket-makers, and straw-weavers, are already in operation; the

spinning and weaving shop is entirely fitted up, and contains 60 spinning-wheels, 6 twisting machines, 9 bobbin machines, 1 reel, and 1 warp machine. It is waiting for a foreman, to be put in operation. The tailors' shop is directed by an overseer; over the others are placed good workmen, paid by the day or the month, who work themselves while directing the pupils under them. It has been the practice to choose overseers from among workmen skillful enough to direct the principal workshops of the school. By thus combining supervision and direction of work, strict economy will be conjoined with strict discipline. There are already among the overseers a laborer, a gardener, and a tailor, exercising these duplicate functions.

54. *Number of pupils in different occupations.*

The 245 pupils present at the beginning of 1851, were occupied as follows:

*A.—Farm and garden.*

1. Kitchen-garden, .....	30	4. Stables, .....	4
2. Thrashing, .....	12	5. Farm, various operations, .....	20—70
3. Teams, .....	4		

*B.—Workshops.*

6. Tailors and menders, .....	30	12. Plumber's apprentices, .....	1
7. Joiners and carpenters, .....	13	13. Straw-plaiters, hat and basket weavers, .....	40
8. Blacksmiths and locksmiths, .....	8	14. Mending roads with gravel, breaking stone, .....	28—125
9. Wheelwright's apprentices, .....	2		
10. Cooper's " .....	2		
11. Machinist's " .....	1		

*C.—Domestic service.*

15. Baker's assistants, .....	2	21. In Infirmary, .....	1
16. Washermen, .....	11	22. Acting as porter, .....	1
17. Cooks and pickers, .....	12	23. Trumpeter on guard, .....	1—48
18. Monitors of neatness, .....	15	24. Sick in infirmary, .....	2
19. Waiting on officers, .....	2		
20. Cooking for officers, .....	3	Total, .....	245

It will be seen that all the pupils are occupied, notwithstanding the winter; there is no want of work; and if the number of arms were greater, it would not be difficult to use them. About sixty of the children are under 12 years old. These are employed in the easiest and least fatiguing work; they plait straw and make hats for the whole school. The older and stronger are set at work requiring more strength and intelligence. But whenever weather permits, or an emergency demands, they all leave the workshops for the fields, where they render whatever assistance they are able. There are several advantages in this change of occupations; the succession and variety satisfy the curiosity of the children, sustain their activity, and preserve them from the inevitable fatigue of monotonous and uniform labor; allow of consulting their preferences and aptitudes, and will have the general effect of giving them simultaneous practice in different occupations, which will be of assistance to them hereafter.

55. *Inducements to labor; absence of pay.*

The pupils receive no wages; before being paid for their work, they should make up the expense of their maintenance, education, and apprenticeship. Besides, an alms chest has sufficed to supply the necessary outfits at their departure. For pecuniary emolument have been substituted elevation to higher classes; emulation; moral encouragements; praises bestowed upon industry and progress. The plan has perfectly succeeded. The pupils labor with gaiety and good will, and they do not even dream of money, which indeed they would not know what to do with while remaining in the establishment.

56. *Condition of property at occupation; extension of clearing and cultivation; kitchen-garden, nursery, and orchard.*

The agricultural operations have gone on as usual during the past year. At the occupation of the land, in the end of 1848, the fields presented a most deplorable aspect. Neglected, exhausted, overgrown with weeds, and with couch-grass, which still persists in growing, in spite of care and repeated hoeings, they seemed to defy the most persevering efforts. During 1849, nevertheless, about 63 hectares (160 acres) were put under cultivation. In 1850, the clearing has been continued, and cultivation extended, in the whole, over about 98 hectares (245 acres.) A kitchen-garden has been laid out, occupying about 4½ hectares



(10 acres,) arranged in the best manner; the walks are bordered with fruit trees, and it is surrounded with a hedge of gooseberry and raspberry bushes, and mulberry trees. One side of the kitchen-garden is a small nursery of fruit, forest, and ornamental trees, intended to furnish material for plantations and for the instruction of the pupils. For the same purpose there has been laid out an experimental field, where grain and seeds of different sorts and of the best varieties are planted. Thus will be discovered those best adapted to the soil of the establishment, and whose cultivation will present most chances of success. The orchard was infected with an unhealthy blight; and contained only a few mangy and withering apple trees. It has been renovated, and now serves for a pasture for young cattle.

57. *Manure.*

(Method of procuring manure, during early part of farming operations.)

58. *Rotation of crops.*

(Area in different crops; rotation used.)

59. *Lost harvest; estimate of value of property.*

(Items of calculation in estimating totals of farming expenses.)

60. *Agricultural accounts.*

(Reference to appendix for details.)

61. *Balance of receipts and expenses.*

(Summary of expenses and returns from farming operations.)

62. *Average product per hectare.*

(Names, quantities per hectare, and value of crops.)

63. *Experiments in cultivation; necessity of proportioning cultivated land to amount of labor and of required provisions.*

(Outline of experiments made; need of enlarging cultivated area stated.)

64. *Number of cattle.*

(Names and number of stock.)

65. *Farm apparatus.*

(Names and number of vehicles and implements.)

66. *Inventory of provisions in store.*

(Value of provisions on hand.)

67. *Revenue of property in 1848 and 1850, compared.*

(Condition of establishment, and revenue, at those dates.)

68. *Medals received by the reform school at the agricultural exhibitions of Ghent and Bruges.*

Notwithstanding its recent organization, the reform school sent specimens of its productions to the exhibition opened at Ghent, September, 1849, where it received a silver medal for its flax, which was remarkably good. In 1850, at the agricultural exhibition of Bruges, it took seven new medals, besides the agricultural decoration of the second class, bestowed upon the head farmer. These remunerations compensated labor; and the remembrance of them will not fail to stimulate the zeal and activity of both pupils and officers.

69. During the three years, 1848, 49, and 50, there have been made to the school appropriations amounting in all to 602,500 francs (120,500 dollars,) as follows:

	Francs.		Dollars.
1848, .....	4,000	=	800
1848, .....	171,500	=	34,300
1849, .....	195,000	=	39,000
1850, .....	232,000	=	46,400
<hr/>			
Total, .....	602,500	=	120,500

70. *Summary and classification of expenses.*

	EXPENSES.		Total.
	1848-49.	1850.	
Preparation, maintenance, clearing, building, &c.,	\$2,900.00	\$	\$2,900.00
Price of property; building, &c., .....	61,936.77	27,656.90	89,593.66
Agricultural expenses, .....	4,780.07	6,170.06	10,950.16
Workshop expenses, .....	18.61	485.96	504.57
Salaries and paid wages, .....	4,464.55	12,087.06	16,551.61
<hr/>			
Total, .....	74,100.00	46,400.00	120,500.00

**71. Receipts.**

During the last two years, the receipts of the establishment have amounted to 118,152 francs, 25 cents. (\$23,630.45;) of which \$11,210.67 has been, paid into the treasury for board of pupils and from sales of produce, and \$12,419.77 were in kind, being value of produce raised and consumed in the establishment.

**72. General financial results.**

The result of the financial summary, omitting the expenditures for farming and for workshops, which are more than balanced by existing values of property, cattle, machinery, tools, raw material, and provisions in store, is as follows:

1. There has been expended from the sum of 600,000 francs, (\$120,000,) appropriated to the reform school by the law of April 3, 1848, 447,968 fr., 34 cts., (\$89,593.67,) in the organization of the school for boys.

2. There therefore remains, available for establishing the school for girls, 152,032 fr., (\$30,406.40.)

3. The expense of management and support of the boys' school for 1849 and 1850, was 82,758 fr., (\$16,551.60.) The number of days' maintenance of pupils for the same time, was 89,508; the average expense per day was therefore 90 centimes, (18 cents.) But in this estimate are included the expenses of furniture, &c., bedding and clothes for 500 children; which are in fact advances, not properly charged to the account of ordinary expenses for the two seasons for which the estimate is made. After deducting these extraordinary expenses from the expenditure for 1850, as well as personal expenses carried to the farming account, the actual expense for the year, of the boys' school is as follows:

	Francs. c.		Dollars.
1. Board of officers, .....	9,483.32	=	1,896.66
2. Other housekeeping expenses of officers, ....	6,172.81	=	1,034.56
3. Sleeping expenses of officers, .....	177.00	=	35.40
4. Uniforms of overseers, .....	119.06	=	23.81
5. Board of pupils, .....	13,676.65	=	2,735.33
6. Wardrobes of pupils, .....	2,025.00	=	405.00
7. Sleeping expenses of pupils, .....	640.00	=	128.00
8. Heating of establishment, .....	287.21	=	57.44
9. Lights for establishment, .....	1,403.76	=	280.75
10. Apparatus for personal neatness, .....	198.59	=	39.72
11. Washing, .....	651.74	=	130.35
12. Office expenses, .....	188.77	=	37.75
13. School expenses, .....	731.60	=	146.32
14. Religious expenses, .....	200.40	=	40.08
15. Infirmary expenses, .....	48.94	=	9.78
Total, .....	35,004.85	=	7,000.97

The number of days' maintenance being 62,462, there follows:

	fr. c.		\$ cts.
Daily expense per head for board, .....	0.21.89	=	0.04.38
"    "    "    "    other, .....	0.34.15	=	0.06.83
Giving daily expense of support, .....	0.56.04	=	0.11.21

The expense of board and maintenance of the officers may be stated as follows.

	francs. c.		Dollars.
1. Board, .....	4,560.88	=	912.17
2. Cook's wages, .....	206.50	=	41.30
3. Washing, .....	355.59	=	71.12
4. Fuel for cooking, .....	49.84	=	9.97
Total, .....	5,172.81	=	1,034.56

Number of days' maintenance, including cook's, 4,667; consequently,

	Fr. c.		\$ cts.
Daily expense of board, per head, .....	0.97.72	=	0.19.54
"    "    other    "    "    .....	0.10.56	=	0.02.11
Whole daily expense of board and housekeeping, .	1.08.28	=	0.21.65

Lastly, the farm household has cost as follows :

	Franks. c.	Dollars. cts.
1. Board, .....	2,424.19	= 484.84
2. Lights, .....	70.00	= 14.00
3. Heating, .....	35.00	= 7.00
4. Washing, .....	246.18	= 49.23
5. Clothing for laborers, .....	27.36	= 5.47
Total, .....	2,802.73	= 560.54

The number of days' maintenance is 3,301 ; consequently,

	Fr. c.	\$ cts.
Daily expense per head, of board, .....	0.73.43	= 0.14.69
" " " " " other, .....	0.11.47	= 0.02.29
Daily expenses per head, of all, .....	0.84.90	= 0.16.98

If it has been possible, during 1850, to reduce the daily expense each of the pupils to 56 centimes (11 cts.,) it may be hoped that this rate will be reduced yet more when the school shall be enlarged to its full extent, and when the general expenses of officers and government shall be apportioned upon a greater number.

The high rate of expenses for the former years resulted from the necessity of buying in market or in trade the greater portion of the provisions, fodder, and manure, used in the establishment. The production of these articles will not be upon its true economic footing, until the school shall provide for all its essential needs from the produce of its own cultivation and its own workshops. To accomplish this purpose, we repeat, that it is indispensable to put at least 200 hectares, (500 acres) under cultivation ; that is, at the rate of one hectare (2½ acres) to five souls, of a total population of about 1,000. It will otherwise be difficult or impossible to reduce the expenses to the amount to be paid by the communes, and much more to 20 or 25 centimes (4 or 5 cts.) a day, as desired.

73. *Expenses for 1851.*

74. *Estimate for 1852.*

75. *Erection of school for girls.*

76. *Filling of complement of boys' school.*

77. *Insufficiency of the school, necessity of an auxiliary establishment.*

According to the statements of the alms-houses, the number of boys from 6 to 18 years old, in those establishments, January 1, 1848, had arisen to 542. Since that time there has been a slight decrease, but there are now nearly 500, including the young beggars who have been transferred from the alms-houses of Bruges and Cambre to Ruyselede. Besides, this last institution is destined to receive certain classes of children who have not heretofore been sent to the alms-houses. If now we consider that the period of remaining at Ruyselede is longer than that usually passed in the alms-houses, it is evident that the reform school is altogether incompetent to receive all that class of population for whom it was intended.

Hence the necessity of attaching to the school at Ruyselede an auxiliary school capable of containing from 100 to 150 children. The reason of recommending such a subordinate school is the considerable expense necessary for a new separate establishment ; while an auxiliary school, like the detached farms at Mettray, would cause only comparatively a small one. This auxiliary, situated as near as possible to the principal school, would be under the same government with it. It would be sufficient to erect upon the farm leased or bought, a building large enough for sleeping-room, sitting-room, refectory and school-room, with two or three apartments for the overseers. The housekeeping could be done at the farm-house. In matters of religion, the pupils might be associated with the people of the village. Perhaps an arrangement could be made with the village schoolmaster to give a daily lesson. Before being sent to the branch school, the pupils should stay long enough at the central school to acquire the necessary discipline and education. Every Sunday, if the distance be not too great, they might go to that establishment, and engage in the ordinary exercises there.

This arrangement is evidently as simple as economical. Under good direction, with land enough (60 to 80 hectares—150 to 200 acres,) the auxiliary school, instead of causing extra expense, would cause an actual saving to the principal school.

78. *Conclusion.*

To judge of the reform school at Ruyselede, and to appreciate the results obtained there up to this time, it is necessary not to lose sight of the date of its establishment, and the short time since the entrance of the first pupils. Its experience is hardly begun; the foundations are laid, but they are yet to be submitted to the test of daily practice. If the expectations of government have hitherto been realized and even surpassed, in some respects, this result must chiefly be attributed to the devotion and zeal of the committee, the director, of the officers generally; but it is far from this point to definitive success; and to attain this without miscarriage, requires a steady perseverance which nothing can discourage, and the firm resolve to overcome the difficulties and obstacles which can not fail to present themselves.

When the agricultural department shall be on a thorough footing, it will be proper to extend and perfect it so as to bring the amount of production up to the demands of the population. The stable, the dairy, the piggery, the poultry-yard, should furnish regular profits. The inexperience of the young beggars who had never handled a tool before in their lives, their idleness, which great pains were necessary to overcome, their vicious and enfeebled constitutions which had to be built up, were so many obstacles which must be taken into account. But now that these embarrassments are in great part removed, that the school and the farm have a definite organization, that the pupils have acquired, with the habit of discipline, a degree of strength and skill, undoubtedly the attention of the authorities can be more particularly directed to financial matters, and can take cognizance of many details hitherto necessarily neglected.

The workshops in process of organization will also help to lessen the expense of the establishment. The combination of mechanical and agricultural labor will afford opportunity to vary occupation and to distribute them accordingly to the fitness and future interests of the pupils. Each of these should learn at least one trade completely, and the rotative method at present introduced in the farm-work is accommodated to this design of the apprenticeships.

The department of instruction should be completed. The children should do no work without having it explained to them. A purely mechanical and entirely uniform occupation brutifies the workman, while varied and intelligent labor increases his power and elevates his mind. Already, during the past spring, the head gardener has held classes at which he has explained to the pupils under his charge the theory of the operations which they are called to practice in the ground; these might be arranged likewise for other departments of labor. There will be also a permanent course of linear drawing, for the benefit of carpenters, locksmiths, blacksmiths, wheelwrights, &c. All the pupils will be taught the fundamental rules of arithmetic; which will enable them to make the calculations connected with their work, and to keep the simple accounts required in it.

After providing for present exigencies, it is necessary to care for those of the future. The extension of assistance to the pupils at leaving the reform school, may be very advantageously used in prescribing certain conditions of apprenticeship or hire. Among these conditions will be a stipulation for the sending back to the school, in certain cases of pupils guilty of misconduct, or not possessing the qualifications requisite for the business they have undertaken. This arrangement will have the double advantage of facilitating the finding of places, and of preserving over the pupils, after their dismissal, a guardianship, the want of which is now felt as a defect. It will also be proper that the authorities of the school should have the privilege of putting out the children, on proper occasions, without waiting for the prescribed time of dismissal, as well as that of prolonging their stay, when there is no opportunity of finding places for them. Later, when the reform school shall have come into complete operation, and shall have been fully developed, the means may be sought of favoring the emigration of those pupils who are not bound to their country by family ties, and who may find abroad, means of occupation and of success in life unattainable in Belgium. To this class belong foundlings, abandoned children, orphans, children of those condemned to infamous punishments, &c. But it should be clearly understood that the patronage and protection of government will follow these young emigrants to their new country, and that a return is always open to them if their hopes abroad should fail. The reform school will thus become a sort of nursery of material for colonization,

both at home and abroad. Thus prepared, pursued by young and vigorous men, animated with a lofty sentiment of devotion, the work of colonization, which would surely fail if intrusted to a few miserable artizans, men generally weakened by privations, idleness and vice, would, we are confident, be crowned with full success. The pupils sent from our preparatory schools would accomplish a mission analogous to that of the hardy pioneers who patiently laid the foundations of the greatness of the United States, by opening to the population which followed in their footsteps abundant sources of labor and of gain.

One of the greatest difficulties in the organization of reform schools is undoubtedly the finding of capable and devoted officers, willing to associate in the reform undertaken by government. To overcome this difficulty it has already been contemplated, as has been mentioned above, to establish at Ruysselede a school of foremen and overseers, like the institutes of Mettray and of Horn, and the normal schools of Switzerland. Economical consideration caused the postponement of this plan, which however might shortly be resumed by the help of the advantages of this institution, without additional expense. The captains and assistants of sections, and the monitors of the workshops and schools, already form a sort of preparatory class of all necessary classes of officers; whose members might be employed not only at Ruysselede, but also at any auxiliary or similar establishments hereafter to be created. To assist and encourage this arrangement, the most capable and deserving members of this class might be admitted to attend the course of instruction in the normal schools, or in the agricultural, arboricultural, or horticultural schools recently erected under the patronage and with the assistance of government. This would prove a valuable stimulant and reward of emulation, and one from which the reform school would reap a rich return. This object, held out to legitimate ambition, would be the crowning feature of the system which we are seeking to apply; a system which aims at the reformation and reinstatement in society of the numerous population of young pariahs who have scarcely any other prospect in life than an almshouse, a prison, or an early death.

The arrangement for prolonging the stay of the children in the reform schools will not only tend to insure their reformation, but will also secure the return, by their labor, of part at least of the expenses of their education and apprenticeship. The result will be that these expenses will be strictly limited within the amount of the public appropriations. We have already seen that in 1852, the finances of the school had been established upon a footing so economical as to require the administration of the institution to use its own income to cover its expenses. If, as we hope, this requirement has been satisfied, the economical problem of the establishment of reform schools may be considered solved. Henceforward these institutions may be established upon a satisfactorily stable foundation, and there need be no hesitation in allowing them all the development of which they are capable.

# VISIT TO RUYSSSELEDE AND BEERNEM.

BY

ROBERT HALL, RECORDER OF DONCASTER.

---

OUR next visit was to the reformatory institutions of Ruyssselede and Beernem, in Belgium; and I must premise that Belgium is governed by the same laws as France, having adopted the various codes of the first Napoleon; the scale of living amongst the peasantry is lower than it is even in France; the religion is much more exclusively Roman Catholic, and the observances of that religion are much more generally and more scrupulously complied with than in France: the population is less warlike, and less easily acted upon by the stimulus of honor; and the hard-hearted quality of their parsimony is attested by the fact that the paupers who become chargeable to the parish used until very recently—indeed I doubt whether the system is entirely abolished—I say these paupers used to be put up by auction to be let out to the person who would undertake to maintain them at the lowest charge to the parish. Every one was allowed to calculate the disadvantages which childhood or infirmity would entail, and the profits to be derived from the remaining strength of the aged or the growing powers of the young. They were often knocked down to the highest bidder amidst the most revolting remarks, and when handed over to their task master were for the most part exposed to severer treatment than the greatest criminals in the worst organized prisons; even very young children were so put out, and were generally bought to be used as instruments of mendicancy.

Such a state of things as this called loudly for the interference of the legislature and government: the legislature and government did at last interfere, at least as regards the children and young persons. By a law passed in 1848, it was ordered that government should create special establishments for young paupers, beggars, and vagrants, and employ the boys, as much as possible, in agricultural labor, and bring them up to callings capable of being profitably exercised in the country. The first of these institutions was established at Ruyssselede for 600 boys, in 1849, and at Beernem near Ruyssselede for 300 girls, in 1853: they may in fact be regarded as one institution, being both under the management of the same director, and being made to work into one another as will appear in the sequel. We first visited Ruyssselede, the establishment for boys, and, as the day was a thorough soaker, our observations were necessarily confined to the house and its immediate vicinity.

You will observe that I speak of *the house*, not of *the houses*, for though the system at Ruyssselede has in a great measure been modeled upon that of Mettray, where the young people live in separate families, the paramount consideration of expense caused the Belgian government to adopt the cheaper course of purchasing the buildings of a large sugar manufactory and adapting them to the purposes of a reformatory institution: but this unfortunately rendered it quite impossible for them to adopt the formation of distinct families. There is another fundamental difference, which is of more importance to the English student than to the Belgian: the inmates do not belong to precisely the same class as at Mettray. At Mettray they are exclusively young criminals, acquitted on the score of ignorance, at Ruyssselede less than half belong to this class; the rest are poor children sent by the parishes, or by benevolent societies or individuals: in other words the same establishment serves both as reformatory and as industrial school. There appears to be very little difficulty about this where the principle of qualified acquittal is acted upon, but there will be strong objections against adopting such a course in England as long as we adhere to the principle, of first convicting the youthful offender and inflicting preliminary punishment for his offense.

M. Pol, the director of the Institution, received us very cordially, and conducted us personally over every part that could be visited on a thoroughly



any day: he is a man of powerful make, with an open, good natured countenance, and a frank easy manner, and no one can be long in his company without discovering that he has a heart cast in the same mould as those of Demetz, Verdier, and Ducpétiaux: he considers that his system is that of Mettray, simplified and reduced to a scale of expenditure more compatible with Belgian notions. Thus, as at Mettray, there are no prison walls; there are such walls and means of ordinary security, as would be found in ordinary farm buildings of the same magnitude, but nothing to remind the inmates that they are kept in as prisoners: at first the desertions and attempts to desert were numerous, but last year there were only five attempts at desertion, and these were unsuccessful. His success in this respect affords us a most valuable example, for he worked under great disadvantages; instead of beginning as at Mettray with a staff of assistants twice as numerous as the first consignment of children, he began with two assistants to manage 60 children, so that the work of assimilating the raw material of the untutored population was necessarily very slow: now that the body at large have been brought into good training, new comers are introduced only in small numbers, and the assimilating powers of large majorities upon small minorities are brought into full operation. At present the whole body of officers and servants, including the director and the chaplain, who have to manage, teach, and overlook 600 boys, amounts to the number of eighteen, and M. Pol seems to consider that the force is sufficient: I must confess I came to a different conclusion: not from any deficiencies that could be detected in the arrangements, or in the working of the system, but, with the exception of M. Pol himself, they had all of them the heavy careworn look of men who are hard worked; the results show them to be a most conscientious zealous body of men, indeed any assistant who should show any indications of being otherwise would be quietly withdrawn on the earliest opportunity. The right kind of men are difficult to find, but when you have found them, there is something almost sublime about the thorough devotion with which they give themselves up to their mission. For example at Mettray, the other day, there was too much reason to believe that certain pecuniary support would be withdrawn, to such an extent that the establishment must be wound up, and the further prosecution of it abandoned; whereupon the different employes, a body of young men from 21 to 35 years of age, not helpless creatures without resource to whom half a loaf would be better than no bread, but men of tried ability and vigor, who could at any time command more remunerative employment elsewhere—I say these young men waited on M. Demetz in a body, and offered to continue their services at half their salaries. Why? because their hearts were in the matter.

But to return to Ruyssselede, "as in water face answereth to face, so the heart of man to man," the heart of the teacher must sound the key note, or there will be no response in the heart of the taught: as soon as M. Pol had given me a short explanatory outline of his system, I applied my pierre de touche; do you sometimes gain the affections of any of your young people? The reply was given with a smile almost amounting to a laugh—"We should do very little good if we did not gain the hearts of the great majority: yes, I trust we do gain the affections of almost all of them who remain any length of time with us, but the parishes remove some of them before any good effect can be hoped for."

I have already intimated that the domestic arrangements have in great measure been dictated by the original construction of the fabric, which afforded no facilities for subdivision into families, but several of the long large galleries which are to be found in factories. The consequence is that all the colonists take their meals together in one large refectory, and for sleep they are distributed in two or three large dormitories. For bed, board, and general superintendence, they are divided into divisions of 100 each, at the head of which is placed an overlooker, who is also the overlooker and teacher of a workshop, and, as he sleeps at the head of his division, has literally no relief by day or night: each division is subdivided into two sections, and the overlooker is assisted by a chief and under chief selected by the director, quarterly, out of each section, and respectively distinguished by a red or yellow stripe on the left arm: the beds of each division and section are placed together, and they dine together at the same table, the members of each section taking it by turns to prepare the tables &c.: when meal time arrives the divisions form in military



order on the grand square, and march off to their several tables to the music of a brass band; when all are in their places the trumpet sounds, the superintendents take off their caps, there is a dead silence, silence that may be felt for a minute and a half, but there is a frequent motion of little fingers figuring the sign of the cross as in Roman Catholic devotions, the children are saying grace before meat, in all the noiseless solemnity of the Society of Friends: again the trumpet sounds, and the whole body of hungry workers sits down to the quiet orderly enjoyment of its frugal repast: oh, it was a goodly sight to see six hundred rude but happy little faces smiling over their basins of soupe maigre and their scanty allowances of bread, yet it being a Friday, that was all their dinner, and at half past five they would have a supper on boiled potatoes; hard work and hard fare, aye and hard sleep o'nights, each in his clean comfortable little bed, with two little shelves for his Sunday clothes behind his pillow, in which, mid the cleanliness and neatness that reigns throughout the dormitory, he is taught to keep his own little belongings with cleanliness and neatness. In ordinary times the board of each child costs  $2\frac{1}{4}$ d., a day, and his total cost for board, lodging, clothing and everything, amounts to less than  $5\frac{1}{2}$ d.

There is such a strong general resemblance between the workshops, school-rooms, baths and chapel of any one reformatory establishment, and the workshops, school-rooms, baths, and chapel of any other, that I shall not enter into a particular description of those at Ruyssselede: all the children are taught more or less the ordinary duties of a farm laborer, and, according to their various capacities and tastes, some of the employments ancillary to agriculture: the object is to create a peasantry, not a school of philosophy: the cultivation of the intellect is limited to reading, writing, and arithmetic, and elementary information on the employments on which they are engaged; and the result sought for is the production of cartwrights not carriage makers, harness makers not saddlers, joiners not cabinet makers: yet genius would not find it utterly impossible to emerge, for one of the rewards of good conduct is admission to a good library. I don't know what some of our friends would say to it, but both here and at Mettray I found that the processes of buying and selling are held in very little honor, there being a general notion that communities of such magnitude ought to supply their own wants without losing time in going to market: thus as regards flax, every process is worked in the colony, from sowing the seed to making the blouse and wearing it: hitherto they have been in the habit of selling their cattle and buying their butchers' meat, but the other day, having a fat cow to sell, they could not get a bid above £4, probably through some short-sighted understanding amongst the neighboring butchers: for the colony slaughtered the animal themselves, and found that the produce in meat would have cost them above twelve pounds: the colony has ceased to be a purchaser of butchers' meat.

There are two special heads of instruction on which I must say a word. As a reward for good conduct the colonists who have a turn for music are taught it, both vocal and instrumental; as we approached one of the class-rooms we heard a volume of heterogenous trumpeting, and on opening the door found from 40 to 50 youths, each practicing his own part with as much abstraction and composure as if he were miles away from the sound of any instrument but his own. A mannerly salute from all immediately on our entrance; then a full brass band, supported by a big drum and two small ones, performed the last scene in Norma with admirable precision; one little fellow, the first trumpet, showed himself a master of his instrument and he knew it, and the boy who presided over the big drum struck it with an aplomb that was meant to tell us that he had a hand above drumsticks; I had heard the same music at either opera house, but I must confess that there was a moral beauty about the scene in the class-room at Ruyssselede, that went beyond Grisi and Jenny Lind. They then gave us God save the Queen in a satisfactory style, and we took our leave of the melancholy looking master and his promising class. M. Pol considers that music exercises a most salutary influence both on the performers, and those who take part in their concerts only as hearers; at Ruyssselede it has this further advantage, that the proficient is admitted into the regimental bands, which for children of that rank is a piece of valuable preferment.

The other special head of instruction that I alluded to is instruction in seamanship, so far as that can be given on dry land, on a piece of ground

fitted with the bulwarks, masts, rigging, and sails of a large ship. When I first saw this kind of contrivance at Mettray, I could not refrain from intimating a doubt as to its practical utility, but I find that I was quite mistaken. In France the experiment was tried at the suggestion of the Minister of the Marine himself, and the youths so exercised at Mettray are received on real ship board as sailors, not as lads. At Ruyssselede the success is still more striking: in the course of last year, the second of the experiment, no fewer than 64 colonists entered the mercantile and 3 the military marine, and their conduct has been so superior, that the establishment is overwhelmed with applications from ship owners. This is certainly a most important result, and most suggestive as regards reformatory institutions in our own country. We want sailors, and in all probability the supply will never fully meet the demand; the reformatory may be made a nursery for sailors, which will make up in religion, morals, and general instruction, more than will be deficient in experience of the actual rolling of the waves.

One of the young men that I have just spoken of brought with him on his return from his first voyage from the far ends of the world an offering of wax lights for the altar, a little act of acknowledgement creditable both to him, and to the institution, in the eyes even of those whose creed has little regard either for altars or wax lights. It can hardly be necessary for me to remind you that Belgium is eminently a Roman Catholic country: in fact they look down with some contempt upon the laxity of their co-religionists in France; at Ruyssselede there is a regular chaplain, and a chapel so arranged that the prisoners in cellular confinement may take part in public worship, and there is on the part of the director the greatest anxiety that the young people shall perform their religious duties. There is the same anxiety at Mettray, but there are some striking differences in point of practice: in fact there is a little controversy on the point between M. Blanchard at Mettray and M. Pol at Ruyssselede. At both institutions the children are brought to the point at which they ought to say their prayers, at Mettray the prayers are said aloud, at Ruyssselede all is solemn silence. "How do you know that your children pray at all?" asks M. Blanchard. "How do you know that yours pray with the heart? for, if not, they had better not pray at all:" retorts M. Pol. "Man is a creature compounded of body and spirit, and must worship with the body as well as with the spirit: and the outward act at all events assists in preventing the mind from wandering." Such is the reply of M. Blanchard: You will be amused at finding that as regards confession both the practice and the reasoning is reversed. You are doubtless all of you aware that particular confession by the penitent to the priest is one of the cardinal observances of the Roman Catholic church, one most generally rejected by English Protestants, though retained I believe to some extent by the Lutherans. Now every serious Roman Catholic master of a family, as a matter of course, sends all the members of his family to confession four times a year. Says M. Pol, "We have substituted ourselves for the parents of the children: we must deal by them as a pious Catholic parent would deal by his children: we therefore compel all our children to go to confession four times a year: we have then done our duty: what follows rests with the chaplain, who has the sole care of the children as regards religion." Now hear M. Blanchard: "There is nothing in religion so much to be dreaded as hypocrisy; laxity, lukewarmness, infidelity are none of them so bad, because none of them are so hopeless as hypocrisy; we are determined to spare no pains to prevent our children from becoming hypocrites, we therefore hold out no inducements of compulsion or reward for the performance of individual religious duties. Our church exhorts to retirement for purposes of meditation, and requires periodical confession, and the chaplain enforces the observances by precept and example: but the director and managers do not even by a look express a preference for the boys who comply with them: the chapel is open for meditation, but the boys who choose to retire must do so during play time: nearly all of them do in fact go to confession, but some neglect the duty entirely, and are not made sensible of the slightest difference of treatment or consideration on that account, we can not forget that the conductors of the most infamous journal that disgraced the Revolution of 1848 were educated at an institution where religious observances were strictly enforced." This difference of principle and practice in two systems both of them eminently successful is very striking.

When M. Pol pointed out the arrangement in the chapel for prisoners in cell taking part in the services, we naturally fell into a discussion of the system of rewards and punishments. At Ruyssselede, as well as at Mettray, the system is based upon the undeniable fact that the maintenance and education of the young men are a great deal more than a full remuneration for all the labor that they can perform; they therefore pay no wages even for the most efficient work, but at Mettray, as a stimulus to industry, small monthly sums are awarded as prizes to the hardest workers, and invested for them in the savings' bank, whilst at Ruyssselede there is no money recompense whatever, and in consequence no savings' bank, no savings' bank book for the colonist to learn a little bit of accounts by studying his own, no practical knowledge of the use of money. no opportunity of punishment by inflicting fines, but a very great pecuniary charge to the institution is avoided. The rewards in use at Ruyssselede are honorable mention, public praise, instruction in music, promenades beyond the limits, visits to their families, admission to the library, gifts of tools and other articles, admission as candidates for inscription on the list of honor, inscription on the list of honor, which is a list made up quarterly and hung up in one of the principal rooms of the institution: in addition to these rewards to individuals the director is authorized to award collective rewards to the divisions and sections which are distinguished by good behavior, and count the greatest relative number of inscriptions on the list of honor; the only collective reward that I heard spoken of is the custody of the standard of the colony, which is entrusted to the best behaved division. The punishments in use are reprimand, private or public, exclusion from play, exclusion from music, forced march with or without handcuffs, and with or without reduction to a bread and water diet, loss of confidential employment, erasure from the list of honor, cellular confinement. No punishment is inflicted on the instant, the culprit is simply told that he will be reported, and the case is brought before the council, which is held every evening by the director and his assistants, after all parties have had ample time for cooling down: every instance of punishment is registered. You will hardly believe it, but during the whole of the year 1853, on an average population of more than 500 colonists, there were only 160 inflictions of punishment, 65 of which were for mere infractions of discipline. A solemn assembly of the whole colony is held once a month, at which the awarding of recompenses, and the administration of remonstrances, is gone through with much form.

M. Pol has strong objections to the punishment by cellular confinement, which is so highly thought of at Mettray: M. Pol considers that the prisoner does nothing but brood over his own evil thoughts: M. Demetz finds that the salutary reflection that is forced upon him makes him reconsider the error of his ways: perhaps the difference may be that at Mettray, where the employes are numerous, even the prisoners in cell can be well looked after, whilst the very limited number of employes renders that somewhat difficult at Ruyssselede. "How do you cure idleness?" I asked of M. Blanchard at Mettray. He replied, "When I find a boy will not exert himself notwithstanding our exhortations and the example of his comrades, I tell him that we have no wish to make him work unless he likes, but we can't let him set a bad example to the rest, and I lock him up in a cell with access to an airy yard in which he may take as much exercise as he pleases: he has the same meals as if he was at liberty, but whilst prisoners for other offenses are compelled to do their share of work, he is rigidly deprived of all means of employing himself: he thinks it fine fun for the first day, but he soon gets tired of it, and as soon as he chooses to ask for work he is set at liberty: after this he very seldom relapses into idleness."

Full of the success of this treatment at Mettray, I asked M. Pol, "Don't you apply cellular confinement as a remedy for idleness?" "Never," said he, "it is the very worst thing you could do: when I find a boy is downright idle, I tell him that all men are fallible, perhaps he is right and I am wrong, perhaps idleness is the right thing and industry wrong, and that I have no wish to make him work against his will, but that I can't let him stand in the way of the workmen, he must sit somewhere where he won't be in the way: so I get a chair, and make him sit doing nothing in the middle of the workshop in which his companions are all lustily at work: this treatment for a very few hours brings him to his senses."

"How do you punish idleness?" asked I a few days afterward, at the reform-

story institution at Redhill in the county of Surrey. "Idleness is its own punishment here," was the reply: "we allow a small pecuniary recompense for work done, so that an industrious boy will earn from 3*d.* to 1*s.* a week, and is allowed to take 1*d.* out of it in treacle: three times a week the dinner is suet dumpling, which the boys are very fond of with treacle, and if a boy is idle he has no penny to buy treacle with." Thus it seems that morals as well as medicine have their allopathy, their homœopathy, and their hydropathy.

We did not see the infirmary, for it contained no patient at the time of our visit; the attendance upon the sick is not by sisters of charity but by the colonists themselves, that being one of the duties and privileges of the chiefs and under chiefs.

We did not see the cemetery, the weather was too rainy for us to go there, or into the farm, but the fact of there being a cemetery assigned for the burial of deceased officers and colonists exerts an important influence. In France and Belgium, as elsewhere, the mortal remains of the dead pauper are buried out of the sight of the survivors with no great ceremony: a few deal boards and shovelfulls of quick lime, and a hurried formula in a dead language gabbled over with little sympathy,—such are the earth to earth and dust to dust of the poor wretch that dies in prison, and there are not wanting persons who consider that it is quite enough. Not so thought the founders of Mettray: not so thought M. Ducpétieux and the Belgian government. It was a noble inspiration that led M. M. de Courteilles and M. Demetz, from the very beginning, to include in their arrangements one of those solemn sepulchral gardens which I never see without being reminded of the German word for cemetery, Gotta Arkner, (God's acre:) there, from the very first, at the end of the principal avenue, was prepared the tomb in which are already deposited the honored remains of M. de Courteilles, fulfilling, as far as human foresight could contribute thereto, the aspiration expressed so fervently in his last will, "With them would I live, with them would I die, with them would I rise again;" the same tomb in which, when the spirit of the just man is called to its reward, the remains of M. Demetz are to be deposited, by the side of those of his friend, whilst all around arise in severe serenity, the plants and headstones that mark the last earthly resting places of the officers and colonists who have died in the institution. A gentleman of the French bar gives an account of the funeral of a colonist which took place during his visit, with all the imposing ceremony of a procession headed by the clergy, and the emblems of the Roman Catholic church, and made solemn by the cadence of funereal music. It is said that no single act of forethought or kindness had so powerful an effect in winning the affections of the survivors, as the first funeral: there could be no suspicion of interested motives in caring for the dead: "It is true then that they value us for ourselves," was the general observation: "they don't shovel our dead bodies into a hole with quick lime." I have already mentioned we did not see the cemetery at Ruyssede, but I believe it is constructed on the same principle, and attended with the same effects.

And what is the general result of the system at Ruyssede? The result is that the most of the young people look back to it as their home, revisit it whenever they can, and always find a welcome to bed and board, as at home; for these visits of former colonists are much encouraged, as they are found to exercise a most salutary influence on those that are still in pupilage. Though the average period of detention is little more than a year, the number that have turned out ill after their being placed out in the world seems hitherto to be about 5 per cent.: any comparison in this respect with the French institutions would however be fallacious, for less than one half of the Belgian colonists have criminal antecedents, and they are generally placed out because they are considered fit to be placed out, and not merely because some definite period of detention has arrived. That the success of the institution at Ruyssede has been most complete it is impossible for a moment to deny; its young men are in such demand that the farm of the institution itself has to be worked with youthful hands of which the vigor hardly comes up to the good will; and all this is effected at so small a cost, indeed necessity is here as elsewhere the mother of invention, if the parsimonious farmers and peasantry of Flanders saw their youthful poor maintained on the same footing as at Mettray, they would burn the buildings, and stone the director. But I am satisfied that in the long run Mettray

will be found the cheaper system; for, as I have shown in my description of that establishment, it contains within itself the elements of reproduction: it would be invidious to cite names of persons as being qualified to succeed M. Demetz, but there they are, selected, trained, exercised for the purpose of commanding as chiefs, and not merely assisting as subalterns; much of the extra expense is caused by this very element in the system; and the nearer approach to self-government through a body of elective elder brothers will make the task of the successor all the easier; but what is to become of Ruyssede should M. Pol be removed? Why is St. Hubert, the other great Belgian reformatory, a failure? Is some one of the untiring camels, that I saw performing their never-ending tasks with so much patience, suddenly to be endued with the vigor and paces of the war-horse? Go to Ruyssede, observe it minutely, study it carefully, no chapter of practical wisdom will better repay the study, but beware of its self-consuming penny policy.

From Ruyssede we went to the girls' school at Beernem, which is conducted by sisters of charity, under the same director and chaplain as the boys' establishment at Ruyssede, of which it is in fact the complement, and is conducted on exactly the same plan with such alterations as are dictated by the difference of sex: the boys do the masonry, joiners' work, and the like of the female establishment, and the girls are to do the washing and the like for the male establishment. The superintendent sister conducted us over the buildings, which were admirable in arrangement and of the most scrupulous cleanliness and neatness; time forbids my entering into details, but the only points for criticism that the scrutinizing eyes of some of us could detect were the use of the same room as refectory and chapel, and the absence of the provisions for regular bathing that we found at the boys' establishment. The instruction is in reading, writing, and arithmetic, sewing, spinning, knitting, washing, getting up linen, simple cottage cookery, the management of the farm-yard and cow-house, and the cultivation of the kitchen garden. There we saw them all silently at work learning to be farm servants, and in due time to bless the homely store of the Flemish peasant, not qualifying themselves to inundate the world with a deluge of nursery governesses. On the whole they looked less sprightly than the boys; how should this be? Is it that working in silence is less congenial to the female nature? Or has the fact that they have no instrumental music something to do with it? It is, to say the least, a singular coincidence that of all the reformatory institutions which I have visited, those only can be said to be absolutely successful in which a prominent place is given to instrumental music. Is not the secret to be found in the words put by an acute observer of human nature in the mouth of his itinerant exhibitor of horsemanship—"People must be amused. They can't be always a learning, nor yet they can't be always a working, they arn't made for it. You must have us, Squire. Do the wise thing and the kind thing too, and make the best of us; not the worst."\*

Of the results of the girls' institution, at Beernem, I can not speak, for it has only just been established; but with all my difference of creed, I can not for a moment doubt but that a blessing will attend the faithful labors of those unpretending sisters.

---

\* "Hard Times."



# VISIT TO AGRICULTURAL REFORM SCHOOL AT RUYSSELEDE, IN BELGIUM,

In September, 1853, by REV. J. P. NORRIS, *Inspector of Schools under Committee of Council on Education, England.*

The establishment occupies an extensive range of buildings, formerly a sugar manufactory, but largely added to and adapted to their present purpose at the expense of the Government in 1849-50.

The entrance is flanked by two handsome residences, occupied by the director, the chaplain, and the other principal officers of the institution. In the open space between them have been erected the masts and rigging of a schooner, reminding one of Norwood. Beyond is the long front of the main building, three stories high, comprising, on the left, two spacious square school-rooms; on the right, the dining hall; and overhead, the four dormitories, each containing 124 beds, and measuring about 150 feet by 40.

Passing through the central gateway, under the belfry, we found ourselves in a spacious quadrangle, enclosed on its three remaining sides by a range of workshops and other offices, one story high, and of regular architecture, with the chapel in one corner. Outside this quadrangle, on the east, lie the kitchen gardens, and on the south the farm buildings.

Under the guidance of the chief superintendent, we made the tour of these buildings, commencing with the dormitories, and then passing through the long dining hall to the kitchen and engine room. The steam-engine, (four horses power,) is conveniently placed at the corner of the quadrangle, so as to chop vegetables, and boil them for the boys' dinner on one side, thrash and winnow corn and boil cow meat on the other, and serve the cooperage and forge-shops on the third.

The inspection of the workshops occupied more than two hours, and most interesting it was; the boys were all at their several trades, and seemed to work with alacrity and cheerfulness. Silence is required in all the workshops. Each is presided over by a master tradesman, who gives occasionally a lecture to his class upon the work in which they are engaged. These lectures are a recent experiment, and are attended with the best results. The following schedule gives the proportions in which the colonists are distributed through their several occupations:—

Tailors, menders, and darners, .....	84	
Shoemakers, .....	26	
Straw-plaiters and hat-makers, .....	63	
Flax-pickers, dressers, and winders, .....	22	
Spinners and weavers, .....	65	
Joiners, cartwrights, and coopers, .....	23	
Blacksmiths, locksmiths, and machinists, .....	20	
Bookbinders, .....	2	
Movable brigade, breaking stones, &c., .....	30	
Total in workshops, .....	—	335
Washers, .....	12	
Cleaners, &c., .....	31	
Cooks, bakers, and servants, .....	30	
Porters, trumpeters, &c., .....	6	
Total in household work, .....	—	79
The rest are employed in the farm or garden:—		
In the kitchen garden, &c., .....	50	
With the teams, &c., .....	9	
About the cow-houses, pig-styes, poultry, barns, &c., .....	24	
Total in agriculture, .....	—	83
Making in all, .....		497

The total number of colonists at the time of our visit was 527. Some were in

the infirmary, some few on leave, and two or three undergoing the punishment of confinement.

The proper business of the institution being "the reformation of destitute, mendicant, and vagrant juveniles," the *discipline* is of course its most important feature. And here there is a marked difference between Ruysselede and the Rauhen-haus or Mettray. In these latter colonies the children are grouped in families, and the order is that of the *family* throughout; at Ruysselede the discipline is *military*, and the arrangements resemble those of a *barrack*. The effect of this system appeared remarkably in the alacrity and precision of all their movements.

They are called each morning, (at five o'clock,) by a trumpeter; twenty minutes are allowed for washing, prayers, and making beds. They are then drilled for an hour and a half in the court-yard; and after breakfast marched off to their work in brigades, to the sound of fifes. At eleven o'clock the most deserving are taken from their works, as a reward, to practice instrumental music. They greeted us with the air of "God save the Queen," played admirably well on brass instruments. After dinner they are allowed half an hour for recreation; then an hour and a half of schooling, and three hours of industrial work. After supper, school again till eight, when they are summoned by the trumpeter to the muster-call, prayers, and bed.

Thus throughout the day they are under active supervision; nor is it relaxed at night. All night the lamps are burning in the dormitories, and each room has its superintendent. To this constant oversight, and still more to the persevering efforts of the chaplain and schoolmaster to bring religious influences to bear upon them individually, the rare need of punishment is to be ascribed. When reproof or degradation is disregarded, the only kind of punishment resorted to is solitary confinement for a day, or perhaps two days. Fifteen cells were pointed out to us adjoining the chapel, and within hearing of the services, resembling in their arrangements those of our model prisons. When one considers the class from which these 500 boys have been drawn, it is satisfactory to learn that more than two or three of these are seldom occupied at once. The rewards are public commendation, stripes of honor on the sleeve, promotion to offices of trust, admission to the band, and finally, on the expiration of their time, apprenticeship to some trade or service in the establishment.

The military effect is increased by the uniforms of the officers, and by the constant use of the trumpet instead of the bell. The boys' dress is very much what it would be if they were at their homes; and unless one sees them in the mass, one hardly finds out that it is a uniform. If the superintendent called boys to take messages, fetch keys, &c., they moved briskly, and seemed alert. There was no skulking, and no appearance of being afraid. Whilst we were in one of the rooms, a little fellow came in to fetch something, with his hat on; the superintendent called to him directly, "*Où est votre chapeau?*" he smiled, and took it off; he had lately come. They did not look merry, nor particularly happy, but certainly not the reverse; perhaps this was partly due to the rule of silence during work.

Of course the only sure test of success is to be found in the behavior of the colonists after leaving the establishment. Thus far it has been highly satisfactory.

Of 36 colonists, discharged in 1850 and 1851—

31 are reported irreproachable;  
2 conduct themselves tolerably;  
1 has been lost sight of;  
2 are ill conducted.



Of 135, discharged in 1852—

116 are reported irreproachable ;  
19 are conducting themselves tolerably ;  
3 are lost sight of ;  
1 is dead ;  
5 have relapsed into vagrancy or begging.

Of these 135, the average stay in the establishment had been two years. Ninety-five of them were sent back to their several communes, on the demand of the local authorities. Forty, more particularly distinguished for good conduct, were placed out by the care of the director. There is a fund to meet their wants on first going out.

The officers appear to be unanimously of opinion that agriculture is the best kind of employment for boys undergoing reformatory training. The necessity of accommodating the arrangements to this specific purpose, as well as the poverty of the soil, ought to be taken into account in estimating the results of the agricultural operations.

The area of land now under cultivation is about 256 English statute acres.

The most important of the crops appeared to be rye, (96 acres, worth £4 16s. per acre,) potatoes, (46 acres, worth £7 3s. 4d. per acre,) and kitchen vegetables, (15 acres, worth £8 5s. per acre.) Besides these, there were crops of oats, flax, rape, buckwheat, clover, roots of various kinds, and 8 acres of meadow and orchard.

The following is an account of the live stock at the end of 1852, (value about £700.)

29 cows,	50 pigs, Essex and Fleming,
13 heifers and bullocks,	17 sheep,
9 oxen, Fleming and Durham,	54 cocks and hens,
3 bulls,	7 turkeys,
10 horses,	26 pigeons,
1 ass,	4 peacocks.

The number of milch cows is now increased to forty-five. They are milked three times a day, and were reported to be giving 300 litres, that is, about sixty-six gallons, a day. The cow-house is well worthy of a visit; the fittings are entirely made of stone slabs, one massive block, with a trough cut in it, forming the head of each stall, and a large slab set on its side, the division. A central passage runs lengthwise down the building, and on either side are ranged twenty-two stalls. The arrangement of the farm-yard seemed to be of the most approved plan. The whole drains into a tank, and the mechanical operations are performed by the steam-engine.

It is not considered that the farm has yet reached its normal state ; during the preceding year several expenses have been incurred that will not recur to the same amount ; the agricultural implements were completed at a cost of £40 ; the live stock was increased at a cost of £58 ; it was necessary to purchase food for the cattle at an expense of £262 ; £27 worth of manure was bought, and £119 worth of seed.

These extraordinary expenses raised the total expenditure for the year to the sum of £1,749.

The value of the year's produce was £1,980.

This balance of £231 is clearly much less than what ought to be realized in a normal year, considering that the ground is rent free.

The farm accounts are kept distinct from those of the establishment.

The establishment charges, properly so called, for the year 1852, were as follow :—

Victualing, .....	£1,880
Officers' household, .....	374
Officers' salaries, .....	564
Fuel and lighting, .....	166
Cleaning, washing, and office expenses, .....	81
Expenses of school-room and Divine service, .....	16
Clothing for colonists, .....	400
Bedding and furniture, .....	96
Uniform of superintendents, .....	18
Medicine in the infirmary, .....	9
Maintenance of buildings and the steam-engine, .....	106
Total,.....	£3,710

Thus it appears that the expense of victualing is one-half of the whole, and that the cost of maintenance per head per day may be put down at *twopence halfpenny*.

Adding to this, for the other charges enumerated above, another *twopence halfpenny*, we get *fivepence* per day per head as the expense of the establishment.

It is probable that next year, when the girls' school will be in operation, and the improvements of the property will begin to tell, the expense will be materially lessened. It is hoped that the workshops may be made more profitable than they have hitherto been.

Adding to the expenditure given above, (£3,710,) an additional sum of £1,200, expended during the year, but represented by property still in hand, we get a grand total for the year of £4,910.

To meet this, £3,390 have been received on account of colonists from their several communes; and £241 have been realized by the produce of the industrial department. Total receipts, £3,631.

The establishment is not therefore yet self-supporting. A deficit of £1,279 on the year 1852, remained to be covered by the Government grant.

These figures have been taken from the annual report to the Belgian Minister of Justice. Considering that the colony is only three years old, they are most satisfactory.

At a time when the abolition of transportation is directing general attention in our own country to the subject of reformatory schools, this experiment, which has been so successfully tried at Ruysselede, can not fail to be regarded with interest.

It has been suggested to me that the establishment of such an institution as this in some of our mining or manufacturing districts—where the boys' labor would find a ready market—might be not only a most useful, but also a profitable speculation.

[NOTE.—M. Duepétiaux has been good enough to look over the sheets of this Appendix, and to supply me with more correct information on three important points.

1st. The schedule of employment gives an erroneous impression of the proper time employed in agriculture, which is by far the most important of the occupations of the inmates; the governor attaches the greatest importance to the alternation of field labor with the workshops.

2d. It is quite clear that during the current year the receipts will balance the expenditure, and therefore the Government grant will be entirely reimbursed.

3d. The girls' school was opened on the first of October, and bids fair to realize the expectations of its founders.]

# AGRICULTURAL AND HORTICULTURAL REFORM SCHOOL

OF

PETIT-BOURG.

---

Agricultural school of Petit-Bourg was founded in 1844, by the society for or children and youth, foundlings, abandoned children and orphans, in especially within the department of the Seine and Seine-et-Oise.

of which Count Portalis was president, is located at Paris; and the place is the ancient property of M. Aquado, at Evry-sur-Seine; which comprises a large château and its dependencies, and a park of about 150 acres, partly enclosed by walls, partly by the railroad of Corbeil. The estate is beautified upon sloping ground on the river Seine. Water is brought to it by canals, from a distance of several miles. It is conducted plentifully into the kitchen-garden, (ten acres, inclosed with high walls and intersected with low walls for montreuil espaliers,) after which it enters large basins which furnish bathing-baths, and to supply the wash-rooms and other domestic uses. Cultivated yards, alleys of horse-chestnuts, ploughed land, large and beautiful meadows, and copses, afford opportunities for exercise, sufficient for all

the kitchen-garden are a poultry-yard, a small piggery, and a building with many windows, containing good cellars, and in the basement story, apart from the working of the kitchen-garden, and for workshops for tradesmen. The first story is occupied by the laundry, the drug shop, the room for the sick, the infirmary, containing 16 beds and warmed by a stove, and by the room for sundry persons employed in the institution. In the upper story are the cells for punishment.

In the same garden, a large building, formerly used as an orangery, has been adapted up for the use of the pupils; it contains a spacious dormitory, which can accommodate, if necessary, 160 children; there are also two school-rooms, one for the teachers and the other for the pupils, and a wardrobe. The large apartment can be adapted to serve successively for a sleeping-room, school-room, refectory, and play-ground. By a simple, easy, and rapid manoeuvre, all the furniture of the room appears as if by enchantment; the tables rise close to the ceiling, and movable posts supporting them are placed in receptacles where they do not project into the room, the hammocks which were near the windows are moved to the wall, and those in the middle of the room rise to hide and ventilate the room in the garret, by means of trap-doors. The idea of this arrangement was derived from the agricultural school at Mettray, and is to be found in the school at d'Yèvre and in other establishments of the same kind.

The dormitory contains four rows of hammocks, and two aisles, at the ends of which are the more elevated hammocks of the overseers; who by this means can pass between the beds of the children without trouble. It is lighted during the day, and ventilated by apparatus like that used in most of the prisons of France.

The dormitory is a garret which serves for a drying-room; and connected with the same building is a shed, which is used as a repository for farming implements, stables and cow-house.

The basement is occupied in the basement by apartments for schools and for the residence of the director.

The first story is partly occupied by sleeping-rooms for the pupils.

Connected with the main building and its appurtenances, the pantry, the wash-room, the milk-room, the cellars, which are of great extent.

At the time of our visit, (September 2, 1849,) the number of scholars was 136. It was increased to 250, by receiving a number of young criminals,

acquitted in court as having acted without discernment, but detained under the 66th article of the penal code. This addition has since been made; the young prisoners have taken the place of poor and orphan children, and consequently the establishment at Petit-Bourg must now be reckoned among the reform schools.

The information collected by us relates to the first period of organization; which fact should be recollected in reading what follows.

The scholars at Petit-Bourg may be divided into two classes; 1. poor children and orphans, placed here by the hospitals and asylums at an expense of \$24 a year, besides clothes; 2. boarders, paying \$70 the first year, and \$50 for each subsequent year, always besides clothes. The number of this last class is 30.

The age of admission is generally set at eight years; the time of staying in the school may be as long as 5 years. This length is required, in fact, by the interest both of pulpit and school; by imparting mechanical skill to the former, and thus enabling him to repay part of the expense borne for him by the latter.

The officers of the school are fourteen, viz.:

A director without salary, having only lodging, board and fuel, washing, &c., for himself and family. This place is filled by M. Allier, who may be considered as the real originator and founder of the institution.

A book-keeper,	paid \$160.00
A teacher,	" 200.00
An overseer of farming,	" 200.00
A gardener,	" 140.00
A horticulturalist,	} paid from \$80.00 to \$100.00
A cutler and blacksmith,	
A carpenter,	
A wagon-maker,	
Two farm laborers,	
A cook,	
Two overseers, one at \$80, and one at \$40.00.	

Several women are also employed in different capacities, in the laundry, wash-room, infirmary, on the farm, &c.

All these persons receive lodging, board, and general maintenance. They wear no particular costume, and may be married.

The pupils arrive at half-past four in summer, and at half-past five in winter. Their bedtime is, nine in summer, and eight in winter.

Each pupil has his own wardrobe, marked with his number. The dress is a blue blouse for work, a Scotch blouse for Sunday, and gray linen pantaloons in summer. In winter, the pantaloons are of cloth of the color of yellow earth, and under the blouse, a waistcoat with sleeves, of the same material with the pantaloons. Instead of wooden shoes are worn, in summer, laced boots, and in winter, clogs with wooden soles. The cap is of felt, varnished on the top only, and with the words "Petit-Bourg" in front. Each pupil has also a woolen overcoat for severe weather. Recently pantaloons have been introduced, made of two different colors, to prevent escapes as much as possible.

The bedding consists of a hammock, containing a mattress and small pillow of grass, a sack, instead of sheets of linen or cotton, one cotton coverlid in summer, and two in winter. In the infirmary, the pupils have, upon an iron bedstead, a grass mattress, a woolen mattress, a coverlid of cotton and another of gray woolen, two common sheets, and a pillow of feathers.

Besides the dormitory, there are other sleeping rooms, containing from 15 to 20 pupils. Each sleeping-room, is lighted all night, and has its monitor, who is chosen from among the pupils, and charged to preserve order and silence. Besides these overseers, an overseer on guard passes continually through all the sleeping-rooms in succession, during the night.

At eight o'clock in the morning the pupils have a piece of bread for breakfast; at noon and at night, soup, and one dish besides. They have meat three times a week, including Sunday; salt meat twice, and fresh meat once. Their only drink is water.

The elementary instruction given to the pupils comprehends reading, writing, spelling, and arithmetic. There is added a little land-surveying, geography, linear design, singing, gymnastics, swimming, and use of fire-engine. There is also a course of agriculture and horticulture for those pupils intending to become farmers.

The religious instruction is given by the priest of the commune, who acts as chaplain. The pupils attend the village church, which is situated within the park inclosure.

As soon as the pupils arrive at the school, they are employed for about a fortnight in the kitchen-gardens, or in the fields, to allow them to gain health and strength, in which they are often deficient. They are then admitted to the workshops; their occupation being selected as nearly as possible with reference to their especial aptitude for it.

Several workshops have been established; of tailors, shoemakers, locksmiths, carpenters, cabinet-makers, house-painters.

According to the agreements made with the foremen of these workshops, the labor of the children is disposed of to them by contract, and they account to the school for it, at a fixed price per day for each pupil.

This price varies of course, according to the nature of the occupation; but it ought during the first year, to amount to an income averaging \$16.00 for each pupil, and equal to one-third of the expense of their board and maintenance.

This income the second year, ought to average \$16.00; and to cover the entire personal expenses of the pupil.

Afterwards, to the end of the apprenticeship, this income should increase so as to bring to the school a net profit equal at least to the advances of the first year.

A part of this income should be laid up for a reserve fund for the pupil. The amounts applied to this fund should be entered in a book in the saving's bank, and it was supposed that the society would be able to add to it, from beneficiary funds, a greater or less amount, according to the conduct of the pupil in the workshops, his capacity, and his devotion to his fellow-pupils and to the school.

All sums thus entered in the bank-book, should draw interest at 3 per cent., and should not become the property of the pupil unless he have observed punctually the agreement made between the society and his family. Departure before the time agreed upon, besides giving a right of civil action against the family, should deprive the pupil of all his rights to any sum in bank, and of participation in all other favors which the society might bestow upon him at the time of his going, such as wardrobes, tools, pocket-money, nomination of a patron, &c.

These ingenious contrivances to receive the apprenticeship of the pupils, reimbursement of their expenses to the society, and provision for their future welfare, do not appear to have answered the expectations of their originators. The contractors have failed, or have not accepted the conditions attempted to be imposed on them. Consequently, except a few workshops of small importance, working entirely for the institution, agriculture is the principal and almost the only occupation of the pupils. At the time of our visit, the employments were arranged as follows:

Farmers, 86; gardeners, 11; horticulturists, 5; tailors and menders, 10; shoemakers, 3; carpenters, 3; cutlers, 3; painters, 2; cooks, 2; clerks in offices, 3; in infirmary, 1; in steward's office, 1; total, 250.

The domain includes about 250 acres, of which 10 are in meadow; about 100 acres besides are leased, at \$30 per year per acre. There have usually been about 25 horned cattle; but a murrian which recently appeared among them has obliged the administration to sell them. There are 12 horses. The most lucrative and most useful branch of cultivation is that of the kitchen-garden, part of whose products are sent to market. The garden itself, which is a large one, seems to be well laid out. Irrigation is practiced in it, as by the market-gardeners at Paris. The sale of flowers, fruit, and legumes, furnish a principal revenue of the establishment. There are handsome green-houses, containing over 14,000 pots.

The moral and disciplinary regulations of the school, are described in the report of M. Allier, the director, to the general assembly of May 11th, 1845, at the Hotel de Ville of Paris, contain some excellent provisions. Unfortunately the absence of the director at the time of our visit, and the shortness of our stay, rendered it impossible for us to ascertain whether this excellent system had been exactly followed. But below is such information as we have extracted from the above-mentioned report, or received from the assistant who directed our visit.

The pupils are classed according to their conduct, in four divisions, viz.:

Division of probation.	Division of reward.
“ “ amelioration.	“ “ punishment.

As a means of stimulating their emulation while at work, a sub-classification has been adopted, which consists in arranging the pupils, in each workshop, into first, second, and third divisions. Each of these divisions has a little flag of a particular color. To belong to the first division is the highest ambition of the members of the other divisions. The same amount of work considering their relative strength, having been distributed to the pupils, and the time necessary for performing it being carefully calculated, the pride of each little group is set in action, and there results a pleasant strife to conquer in the game, which is silent as a game of chess, and as absorbing, and which, besides the honor of victory, does not lack material inducements; for a certain prize is delivered at the end of every month to the first division, and encouragement to the second.

"It is pleasant," says the reporter, "to see with what earnestness and good-will the children ply the plane, the hammer, the file, the spade, the rake, and look around to see where their comrades and adversaries are; for not only is there a struggle between two divisions, but also between the individual members of each division, for the first, second, &c., place in the division. The first in each division is the standard bearer.

"In this manner the hours pass rapidly away without punishment. At the end of the task, joy shines in the eyes of the victors, and the shame of the vanquished seems impatient for the revenge which shall give them the standard or the place of honor.

"At each judiciary meeting, good marks are also given to those who have done their work quickest and best, and bad ones to those who have labored ill or slowly. It often happens that the children gain an hour or two, by finishing their task before the appointed hour; this time they may dispose of at pleasure, in play, in working in other shops, in reading or drawing, &c.; but they usually ask for more work, or kindly assist their slower comrades, for the purpose of preventing the bad marks to which the latter are liable; for where the honorable rivalry of labor ends, there brotherly love begins.

"This system, which puts into action the powerful motives of interest and pride, while it preserves fraternal friendship, needs no commentaries. It is simple and true, because it is taken from nature. To judge of it, all that is necessary is to look at one's own heart and to question one's self."

The pupils assemble once a month for the special purpose of electing by ballot the monitor-general of the school and the monitors of the separate workshops. This operation is performed without any intriguing, and it has been remarked that the best scholars are chosen unanimously, or by an immense majority. The director, however, reserves a veto upon this choice; although he has very seldom been obliged to use it. The appointment of monitors by their peers is copied from the appointment of elder brothers at Mettray; as is also the appointment of a jury to try offenses committed by the pupils. The pupils usually accuse themselves, and affix, according to circumstances, the maximum or minimum of punishment. These spontaneous condemnations are submitted to the approval of their brethren the monitors, who revoke or confirm them; and are then carried before a supreme tribunal, of the officers, assistants and foremen of workshops, who give a judgment in the last resort.

"Although a little new and prompt," says the report formerly quoted, "our justice is none the less real justice, and tends daily to lessen the number of culprits and of those condemned more than once. It has this advantage; that the guilty can not claim to be innocent, nor to be too severely punished; for both monitors and we ourselves most often interfere to mitigate penalties, and sometimes to pardon, limiting ourselves to a reprimand.

"Meanwhile, if (which is very rare) any pupil denies the accusation brought against him, then public information becomes the duty of all pupils having cognizance of the fact charged; that no culprit may escape who aggravates his offense by a lie, and that no innocent person may be punished. In this case an inquest is held, before which the overseers and witnesses are heard. Accusers and defenders arise for the occasion among the pupils, and from monitors and assistants who decline voting upon the judgment pronounced in first instance by the monitors, and finally by the tribunal of assistants."

The punishments are as follows, in the order of their severity:

1. Simple reprimand.

2. Detention, with or without labor, from the recreations of the week.
3. Detention from the recreations of the Sunday.
4. Dry bread for one or more meals.
5. Passage from a higher to a lower division.
6. Lighted cell, with labor.
7. Dark cell, without labor.
8. Erasure of name from register of honor.
9. Loss for one or more months of votership and of eligibility.
10. Inability for one or more months to receive letters of pardon.
11. Inability for one or more months to partake or be present at distributions of alms.
12. Inability to see and embrace one's parents at the visit next after condemnation.
13. Inability for one or more months to carry the standard.
14. Inability for one or more months to assist sick companions.
15. Inability during one or more months to be chosen to assist at family festivals.

All these punishments are dreaded most on account of the shame accompanying them. It is likewise to be noticed that the severest are those which are of a purely moral character. Expulsion from the school is only inflicted upon pupils considered wholly incorrigible.

There is a similar gradation of rewards, based upon the same principle, as follows :

1. Honorable mention. This is a public complimentary notice, addressed to the pupil deserving it, to encourage him to do still better in future.
  2. Passage to a higher division.
  3. Registration in the register of honor. This registration is for two months ; and is the privilege of the division of reward only.
  4. Encouragements. These are small books.
  5. A crown over the place occupied by the pupil, in the school, or shop, or both, as he has deserved it in one, or the other, or both.
  6. Tools of honor. These are offered and gained as prizes.
  7. Prizes. These are usually books useful in the occupation of the pupil, moral tales, history, books of piety, &c.
  8. Becoming standard-bearer of division.
  9. Selection by their comrades to attend the family festivals. Once a month, the officers, assistants, and foremen, meet in the evening of Sunday around a table frugally furnished, as usual, but with one additional dish. The monitors are, *ex officio*, invited. After the desert, the singing master assembles the pupils present, and sings with them religious, moral, or national songs. After the singing, all separate, promising to endeavor to make the worst scholars worthy of attending at these modest feasts.
  10. Letters of pardon. These letters, which are only given with great reserve, empower those holding them to pardon pupils undergoing punishment, except in certain grave cases, of which the director is judge.
  11. Permission to watch with the sick. This also is a rare privilege, and cultivates among the pupils sentiments of benevolence and of fraternal affection.
  12. Honor of carrying and bestowing the alms of the school. The alms-chest is replenished in several ways. 1. One Sunday a month, all the officers, assistants, foremen, and pupils, go without meat, and the consequent saving is deposited in the alms-chest. 2. Once a month there is taken from the amount credited to each pupil in the savings-bank, 4 cents ; that is, 48 cents a year. A monthly collection is also made among the officers, assistants, and foremen, and the amount, along with that taken from the deposits for the pupils, also put in the chest.
- With this money the pupils of the division of reward, or those who have performed some laudable action, are enabled to go, on the first Sunday of each month, to carry to the aged poor of the village, sometimes garments, sometimes bedding, sometimes medicine, but never money.

Nothing has been neglected which might awaken the moral sense in the children of the school, or contribute to elevate their souls. For the same purpose the walls in different places are covered with such phrases as the following :

Silence.



God sees us.

Idleness impoverishes and degrades.

He who will not work should not eat.

Labor enriches and honors.

Let us be brothers.

Benevolence elevates man.

Children, grow up by labor. Men, some time labor will make you great.

Religion is goodness, every where and always.

To love the poor is to love God.

Evening and morning, after the usual prayer, the pupils address another to God for their instructors and benefactors.

Once a year a mass is sung for the repose of the souls of such instructors or benefactors as are dead ; after which ceremony, flowers are laid upon the graves of dead pupils.

There was much difficulty, particularly at the beginning, in finding competent and active assistants, and such as would be devoted to the success of the undertaking. Frequent changes in consequence occasioned great embarrassments. To encourage the agents of the school, they were given an interest in its profits, by reserving to them a percentage upon the produce of labor and of the workshops. The amount thus voluntarily distributed is retained by the society, and entered in a book called the book of division of profits. No one is permitted, on any pretext, to draw any or all of these funds ; and if any assistant or foreman leaves the school improperly, or is sent off for ill conduct, the amount so credited to him on book becomes the property of the other assistants and foremen, being divided equally among them.

A second book, called the savings-bank book, is also kept for entering the retention of 5 per cent. on all salaries. It is not permitted to draw this deposit ; but at the departure of the assistant or foreman, for whatever reason, it is paid to him, unless retained by the society as indemnity for damages due from him, for this book is kept to habituate the assistants to economy, and to put a sort of caution-money into the hands of the society. The same use is made of funds entered upon the book of division of profits, in case of malversation or loss. The amounts entered on the savings-bank book pay 3 per cent. to the depositor. The sums entered in these two books, together with the savings which some of the assistants are able to lay by, form considerable reserve funds.

Saturday evening every week, all the officers, assistants, and foremen, meet in a family council, and consider all the praiseworthy or reprehensible actions of the pupils under their orders. By this means no fault, however small, and no good action, however insignificant, can happen during the week, in school-room, court, workshop, dormitory, or play-ground, without being noticed. While the teacher for instance, praises a scholar for his conduct and progress in study, the foreman of his workshop may find him stupid and lazy. By such contradictions attention is drawn to the child ; all watch him to better advantage, and after a few weeks of study and minute observation, the true character of the child is discovered, and often his good qualities are brought out even by means of his faults.

This meeting has another purpose, to arrange a line of conduct for each pupil, to be followed out next day at an assembly called the meeting of emulation ; at which the officers, assistants, and foremen of workshops are present, as well as the pupils and visitors. At this meeting are performed the duties of the jury above-mentioned, and rewards and punishments are distributed. The idea of this meeting was copied from the school of Mettray, which, although there seems to be some unwillingness to avow it, has served as the type of the organization not only of the school of Petit-Bourg, but also of most other establishments of the same kind erected in France within a few years.

Petit-Bourg has not a school of foremen like that at Mettray, but it endeavors in a similar manner to form among the pupils a seminary for assistants who may successively fill vacant places.

The patronage of the scholars on leaving the school is nearly on the same basis in the two establishments. A patron is named for each pupil, who, in concert with the establishment, endeavors to find him a good situation.

To understand the financial condition of the school of Petit-Bourg, we have ex-

examined the accounts and estimates of the few last years, and have arrived at the following results :

In 1845, for 118 pupils, the expenses were \$15,032.80 ; being \$127.57 each, per year, and \$0.25 each, per day.

In 1846, for 123 pupils, the expenses were \$17,631.12, after deducting income of farming and workshops. The items of this expense are as follows :

Board of pupils,.....	\$00.10.4	per day each,.....	\$4,661.08
Clothing, .....	12.48	" year, "	1,535.03
Bedding, .....	1.24.2	" " "	152.73
Washing,.....	1.95.2	" " "	240.07
Fuel, .....	58.2	" " "	71.74
Light,.....	2.93.8	" " "	361.32
Mending clothes,.....	5.02	" " "	617.76
School expenses, .....	39	" " "	47.95
Sundries, ...			80.21
Rent, taxes, insurance, .....			1,554.41
Repairs, &c., furniture and buildings,.....			746.65
Expenses of offices and management, .....			2,678.05
Salaries and maintenance of assistants,.....			6,880.38
Entire expense, .....			19,627.38
Income from cultivation and shops,.....			1,996.26
Net expense, .....			17,631.12

The expense for each pupil, during 1846, therefore was \$143.34 ; or \$0.39 per day.

In 1847, the estimates for an average number of 125 pupils presented the following valuations :

Salaries and maintenance of officers, &c.,.....	\$6,720.00
Maintenance of pupils, \$60 each,.....	7,500.00
Fuel, lights, washing, .....	800.00
Taxes, repairs of buildings,.....	640.00
Expense of management, freight, traveling, .....	2,320.00
Shops, cattle, manure, &c., .....	1,000.00
Contingencies, .....	400.00
	19,380.00
Receipts, { Kitchen-garden, \$1,000.00 }	
{ Tilled land, woods, &c., 1,000.00 }	2,000.00
Net expense, .....	17,280.00

The expense per pupil, in 1848, was therefore \$139.04, or \$0.38 per day, not including rent.

In 1849, the expense was diminished by the increased number of pupils to \$94.67 ; or \$0.25 each, per day. The school purchased the estate of Petit-Bourg, in 1846, for \$54,000, raised by the grand lottery established for the school at that time, the net accruing from which, was more than \$100,000.

Connected with the prison of "La Roquette," in Paris, is an institution called the "Patronage Society," which has been formed voluntarily by benevolent individuals. Its object is to guide and provide for young prisoners on their liberation. Each boy has a patron who exercises an influence over him, even during his confinement, by counsel and exhortation. On his being set at liberty, his patron comes or sends for him, and places him in some situation for which he has fitted himself in the workshop of the penitentiary. Instead of being thrust out of the gates with rags on their backs, with which they entered them, and with just sufficient money to lead them into temptation, as was formerly the case, the poor lads are at present furnished with decent clothes, and gain at once an employment and a respectable livelihood. Their patrons visit them frequently, superintend their conduct, and by the affectionate sympathies they show them, encourage and confirm them in a virtuous course of life. They call them their children, and the reciprocal affection which often springs up between the little

outcasts and their protectors is really very beautiful. Numerous cases have occurred where youthful vagabonds and thieves have become exemplary characters through the parental kindness of the gentlemen who have adopted them. One instance is mentioned, in the society's reports, of a former inmate of "La Roquette" having formed an attachment to an amiable and industrial girl, when not having money to meet the expenses of his marriage, his patron gave him the means, was present himself at the wedding, and furnished the lodging of the new-married couple with chairs, tables, a bedstead, and some linen. The most unequivocal proof of the value of the society's exertions consists in this,—that before its existence, out of 217 youths that were liberated between the years 1831 and 1833, 99 were recommitted several times and for grave offenses; whereas since the association has entered upon its mission, out of 269 lads taken under their charge only 51 were again sentenced to a second term of imprisonment. And it is to be observed that the 99 recommitments above specified were merely those which took place in Paris, under the real names of the offenders; how many more happened in the provinces, and under false names, can not be ascertained. But all who are positively recommitted, whilst under the superintendence of the society are known, as they can not quit their situations without the fact being communicated to their patrons. A report of the society affirms that of those who have been guilty of no fresh transgression against the law, 58 were not only laborious, economical, and submissive to their masters, but join to those qualities virtues which must gain them general esteem; that 124, without being so remarkable, are nevertheless excellent young men, and good workmen, who give every kind of satisfaction to their employers and protectors; so that out of 269 juvenile delinquents there are 182 thoroughly reformed, who are the joy and glory of the society.

## PATRONAGE SOCIETIES.

BY M. JULES DE LAMARQUE.

---

THE following paper was read before the International Reunion of Charity in Paris in 1854, and printed in the *Les Annales de la Charité*, for June, 1855. The translation is taken from the *Irish Quarterly Review* for March, 1856 :

### *Patronage of Young Détenus, and of Juvenile Libérés.*

Government and private benevolence had no sooner extended their solicitude toward the Juvenile libérés, than the law of the 5th of August placed them under the patronage of the State. The first Society of Patronage, was formed in the year 1822, and in the year 1847, the Minister of the Interior, through the interposition of his numerous agents and the Municipal Authorities, made inquiries relative to the conduct of the Juvenile détenus at their places of residence, in order to be enabled to state the results of the moral and useful instruction they had received in the houses of Correction. In fine, the directors of these establishments, had also exercised a species of patronage in procuring them situations as workmen or servants, and have received the most interesting and flattering account of several of those boys they had brought up.

We shall now glance rapidly over these three modes of patronage, and explain their results.

The number of young criminals who leave annually those establishments of correctional education, is very considerable; during the Summer of 1852, there were 1,162, without reckoning the boys who had been sent in by their parents for correction. We can understand from this how necessary it would be to arrange work in which they could be employed, and even to organize something new.

The Government had taken from the Council of the State a draft of the public administrative rule, which will undoubtedly enable them to reap the benefit of the three systems which form the subject of this work.

### *Societies of Patronage.*

These Societies have been up to the present, but few in number.

We find the most important of them in the great centres of our population in Paris, Lyons, Strasbourg, Rouen, Toulouse, &c., &c. Space would not permit our describing each of these institutions separately. We will, therefore, limit ourselves to that of Paris, under the superintendence of M. Bérenger, (de la Drôme.) This institution, which has served as a model to other analogous societies, was founded in 1833, at the instance of M. Ch. Lucas, who has had the honor of founding several institutions of patronage. The statutes were arranged by a company uniting several members of the Institution, who, like their worthy president, M. Bérenger, (de la Drôme,) held high positions in the official world.

The Society apprenticed the boys who left the house of correctional education, at the expiration of the term of their imprisonment, and the Juvenile détenus to whom the Government gave provisional liberty, in order to prove what progress they made in virtue. These boys are replaced under strict watch, when it is proved that their conduct has not been correct. The former are called definitive libérés, and the latter provisional. The Society proposed this arrangement for the purpose of habituating their pupils to an honest and industrious life, and in order to prevent them relapsing.

The members composing this body, are divided into subscribers, patrons and donors; these are accepted without limit, in order to extend, as far as possible, their sphere of action. The subscribers are only called on for the sum they promised. The title of donor is acquired by giving 100 francs annually to the Society. The patrons have the most difficult task to perform, as their employment chiefly consists in procuring situations for the juvenile libérés.

The office of patron is held for three years. The Society have an asylum where all juvenile libérés are received, who, during this period, have either fallen ill or are unable to work. This asylum is placed under the immediate control of a general Agent, M. de Grellet-Wanning, a man of unalterable devotion, who resides in the Rue Mézières No. 9. He says mass every Sunday at an altar placed in the Assembly Hall.

The Society is under the immediate direction of a board, assisted by an Administrative Council, and aided by three committees, of material and funds, of management and inquiry.

The board is composed of a president, vice-president, of a secretary general or treasurer, in whom rests in fact the executive power of the Society.

The Administrative Council is composed of 12 members, deciding on all matters useful or advantageous to the Institution, which is submitted by them for approval to the board, or to one of the members of the Council. The duties of president and of vice-president, as well as those of secretary general or treasurer, have been carefully defined. The three Committees are each presided over by a vice-president, whose duty it is to see that the funds are well employed, taking care that the boys are provided for after their final liberation, and making inquiries in order to afford the Administrative an opportunity of placing a young provisional détenu at liberty, and entitling him to seek for reward. In fine, the General Assembly is convoked annually to render an account of the working of the Society, and every six months to hear the reports of the patrons on those confided to their care. In these re-unions, the Assembly nominate counselors to the vacant places. They introduce modifications in the laws whenever they find cause. Finally, they bestow rewards on the patrons who merit them.

A paid agent is employed—who accounts to the treasurer for the recovery of, and expenditure of monies received, takes charge of the minutes, keeps the register, prepares the questions, and makes inquiries relative to the management of the Superiors, and furnishes to the patrons every information necessary for the accomplishment of their mission. The general agent is also employed in procuring situations for the libérés, and trying to arrange with the head workmen the most suitable places, and also to supply for the time the absence of a patron who is ill or stays away. Finally, he is bound to prove monthly the presence of each boy in the place marked out for him by the patron.

The Society negotiates with different contractors, who supply them with every thing they require to clothe the libérés.

The patrons are admitted, after every possible precaution is taken, to guarantee their good conduct to the Society. Their duties are inscribed in a hand-book, *ad hoc*, and they can not take charge of more than six libérés at a time.

The president represents the entire Society, he corresponds with the established authorities, and it is to him that the demands made by the different public functionaries in the interest of the board is entrusted.

The strictest and most watchful surveillance is exercised over all the libérés, but particularly over those who are still under the restrictions of the clause 66 of the penal code, who have been entrusted to the board as provisional libérés. Those latter are never lost sight of by the patrons, and when they exhibit idleness or disobedience toward their masters, the patron, without waiting for a more serious fault, is bound to represent their misconduct to the president.

This man decides with the board whether the charge is of a sufficiently grave character to require immediate re-incarceration. But even in case the matter has been arranged, the patron is not released from his obligation toward his pupil, and is bound to reinstate him by virtue of a ministerial decision. All the acts of the Society are inserted with the greatest care in the register kept by the agent. The principal is kept in a large book, comprising at once the moral and financial account of each boy, where they have deposited as correctly as possible the history of his life, the information received relative to his family,

the progress he has made in advancement, and all the expenses he has occasioned the society.

Then follows the general register of all the members who compose the body, under the title of patrons, donors or subscribers, pointing out the assessments of each, and comprising an annual account, mentioning the date of payments.

Another register comprises the names of all the patrons employed, and of the boys under their care. A third points out the changes, either by getting in or removing any of the furniture belonging to the board.

Those registers are the ground-work by which can be proved the receipt of subscriptions, the expenditure of the funds, and the supplying of all kinds of food. Putting money in the savings' bank in the children's name, and the place where the cash is kept, are entered in two different books.

Another very important book points out to you, three months beforehand, the young détonus who are about to leave the houses of correctional education in the neighborhood of Paris, and the names of the Commissioners who will be employed to institute an inquiry into the conduct of those boys; there is also an account given of the acceptance or refusal of patronage by the libérés.

The minutes of the sittings of the Council of Administration, of the committee appointed to procure situations, and of the six months' assemblies, are entered in another book separate.

A register in which is copied the correspondence with the administration, the bar, the prefect of police, and other functionaries; finally, there are several secondary registers which complete the vocabulary of the agent's book.

We see, by what has gone before, with what care the Society takes note of the working, and the means necessary to ensure success. The asylum in the Rue Mézières, which was founded in the year 1846, has been very useful to the juvenile libérés, particularly during this time of commercial and political panic which we have had to pass. But it has also made considerable sacrifices to the board for its appropriation, and the support of the boys contained there. These sacrifices have been exclusively beneficial to the juvenile libérés, and whilst their expenses were observed to increase, the salaries of the clerks\* continued the same; the right assumed toward them by the asylum was to increase their work, and make them labor more diligently.

The resources of the Society are comprised in the collection of taxes, which the juries award for their advantage, of the subsidies granted by the Corporation and the prefect of the Seine, of the legacies bequeathed to them, and of the 70 centimes allowed daily by the minister of the interior, for the support of the provisional libérés.

They receive, besides, from the exchequer of this department a claim to any unusual taxes 51,450 francs.

In fine, the Government in order to acknowledge the services rendered by this Institution, has established it legally by a Royal Ordinance, dated June 9th, 1843.

Since the month of May, 1833, the period of its foundation, up to the 31st of December, 1853, the Society has protected 2,155 boys,† definitive or provisional libérés.

252 had renounced all patronage, 124 had been abandoned as incorrigibles; 112 are dead; 964 had ceased to be guardians at the end of three years; 144 provisional libérés had been reëntered into the house of correction; 506 had relapsed into crime, 88 of whom had belonged to the category of temporary libérés; 16 had been placed in hospital as lunatics, the remainder ran away.

During this period of 20 years, the Society received the sum of 457,265 francs, 55 cents; its expenses had been 381,824 francs, 89 cents. They had thus in their possession at the end of 1853, 75,440 francs, 66 cents; an important sum, which bore testimony to the good management of the board, and at the same time of the useful assistance it rendered not only to the Government, but also to private individuals. The receipts of the Society had been 25,947 francs, 33 cents; in 1854, the expenses had arisen to 25,342 francs, 10 cents, for 294 juvenile provisional or definitive libérés; every boy had therefore cost at an

\* These clerks are—a responsible agent at 1,400 francs; an agent for providing situations, 800 francs; a registrar and schoolmaster, 900 francs; an inspector, 900 francs; a housekeeper at 300 francs, and the porter got 360 francs.

† These boys go as penitents to the monastery de la Roquette.



average about 89 francs. In this account had been entered all kinds of expenses, the salaries of the clerks of the asylum, and a sum of 3,371 francs, 10 cents, employed in the recent building, and repairing of the establishment in the Rue Mézières. Amongst the 294 boys patronized by the Society in 1854, 65 were very well conducted; 127 well conducted; 24 wished to leave; 13 were badly behaved; 1 ran away; 23 relinquished the patronage after being submissive for some time; 7 had been given up altogether as incorrigible; 10 had been re-imprisoned in the penitentiary of la Roquette; 20 had relapsed into crime; 4 were dead. Whilst subtracting from the total number 294, the 23 boys who had renounced the patronage, the 7 who were abandoned as incorrigible, and those who ran away, there remained 263 young persons of whom only 20 had relapsed into error, that is to say, 7-60 for 0-0; this proportion was 75 to 100 before the establishment of the Society.

During the same year, (1854,) the average number of patrons staying at the asylum were 14 daily, and those supported in the establishment were 17. The average number of boys who assisted at the re-unions every first Sunday of the month were 80. These numbers prove the utility of this Institution.

There is another Society in Paris deeply interesting, which is engaged in protecting young girls from the department of the Seine, détenus libérés and destitute—founded by Madame de Lamartine and Madame la Marquise de la Grange, who was born at Caumont-la-Force. This institution, from 1841 up to December 31st, 1853, extended its care over 178 Juvenile détenus; 102 had got situations through its influence; ten relapsed into error; and 66 had escaped from their surveillance. Annexed to this establishment is a quarter set apart for correctional education, in which Madame la Marquise de la Grange is endeavoring to introduce all the improvements calculated to elevate the mind.\*

The Society for the patronage of the Juvenile libérés of the Rhone deserves especial notice, having tried to take under their guardianship subjects of a class unfortunately too numerous, young mendicants or vagrants, who though not condemned, are nevertheless a scourge to the country. The last accounts returned, published by the Society in 1847, showed that from 1840 to 1846, they had taken under their care 22 vicious boys who had not been sentenced or even tried; 16 whose moral state required the strictest surveillance; they had been confined at the asylum of d'Oullins; six others were placed as apprentices to trades-people; eight of these were well conducted, whilst the other eight gave frequent proofs of idleness and insubordination; three remained with the masters; one returned to his family. These twenty-two boys cost the Society 9,810 francs, 20 cents, or 445 francs, 91 cents each.

From 1836, the period of its foundation, to the 31st of December, 1853, the Society of Juvenile libérés of the Rhone, have protected 305 of these youths, 279 are in situations, and 26 not engaged.

These two classes have furnished 68 relapses, which establishes between the discharged and those who have fallen away, a proportion of about 22 to 100.

#### *Administrative Patronage.*

Let us see how this patronage is exercised, which has been instituted by a ministerial decision, February 17, 1847. From the time that the Juvenile libéré leaves the house of correction, the Director of the establishment furnishes a report to the Minister of the Interior, in which he points out the moral and religious character of the boy; the order of his intellect, the trade to which he has been brought up, the place where he desires to fix his residence. The Prefects are obliged to transmit a resume of these documents to the Mayors of the communes where the Juvenile libérés have fixed their abode, and these functionaries have in their turn to make known every six months to the heads of the government how these boys conduct themselves, their habits, and the way by which they gain their livelihood. The corporation, (or common council,) collect most carefully the information required from them. But a patronage whose only aim is to observe the acts of a young libéré without assisting him at the period of his liberation, is all but visionary.

On the other hand, as the Mayors communicate generally with the libérés

---

\* Madame Lechevalier, Inspectress-General of Prisons, has taken a very active part in the working of this Society.



through the intervention of the police officer or the forest keeper, who do not give to their office all the circumspection requisite, the position of these boys is ere long understood, and their employers are anxious to get rid of them, thinking that having them in their service, places them under the surveillance of the authorities.

Orders have been given it is true to the prefects to endeavor to remedy these serious disadvantages, and more can not be done in the absence of a law to remedy this evil by enabling them to employ more efficacious means. Be it as it may, such are the results of administrative patronage during the year 1853. The Mayors had received information relative to 861 libérés, of whom 124 were young girls. 197 boys and 68 girls escaped the patronage by changing their names and concealing their residences. They retain the management of

Satisfactory—304 boys and 36 girls.

Doubtful— 97 boys and 12 girls.

Bad— 52 boys and 5 girls.

49 boys and 3 girls have relapsed.

They have had 38 enlistments in the Army and Navy. The relapses, (deducting those who ran away,) have been 9 to 100 boys, and 5 to 100 girls.

#### *Establishments of Patronage.*

When leaving the establishments of correctional education the young détenus are supplied with suitable clothes and assistance for their journey. The directors of several of the colonies have found it necessary to watch over the lives of those boys, who being orphans, could not receive in the bosom of their families that protecting care and counsel, necessary to sustain them in a good course. Amongst the establishments inhabited by the greater number of their libérés, we will cite the colony of Mettray; the House of Correctional Education, Bordeaux, directed by M. l'Abbé Fissiaux; and that of Toulouse, the founder of which has organized in this city a Society of Patronage.

From 1841 to the 31st of December, 1853, the colony of Mettray has rendered assistance to 953 libérés, who had sprung from that source; 18 had removed themselves from under their kind control; 307 had obtained situations through the influence of the establishment; 157 entered the army; 6 were kept as servants in the establishment; 4 entered religious houses; 61 entered the navy; 66 were taken as military recruits; 231 returned to their relations; 103 relapsed. After deducting the 18 that ran away, we find the relapses have been 11 to 100.

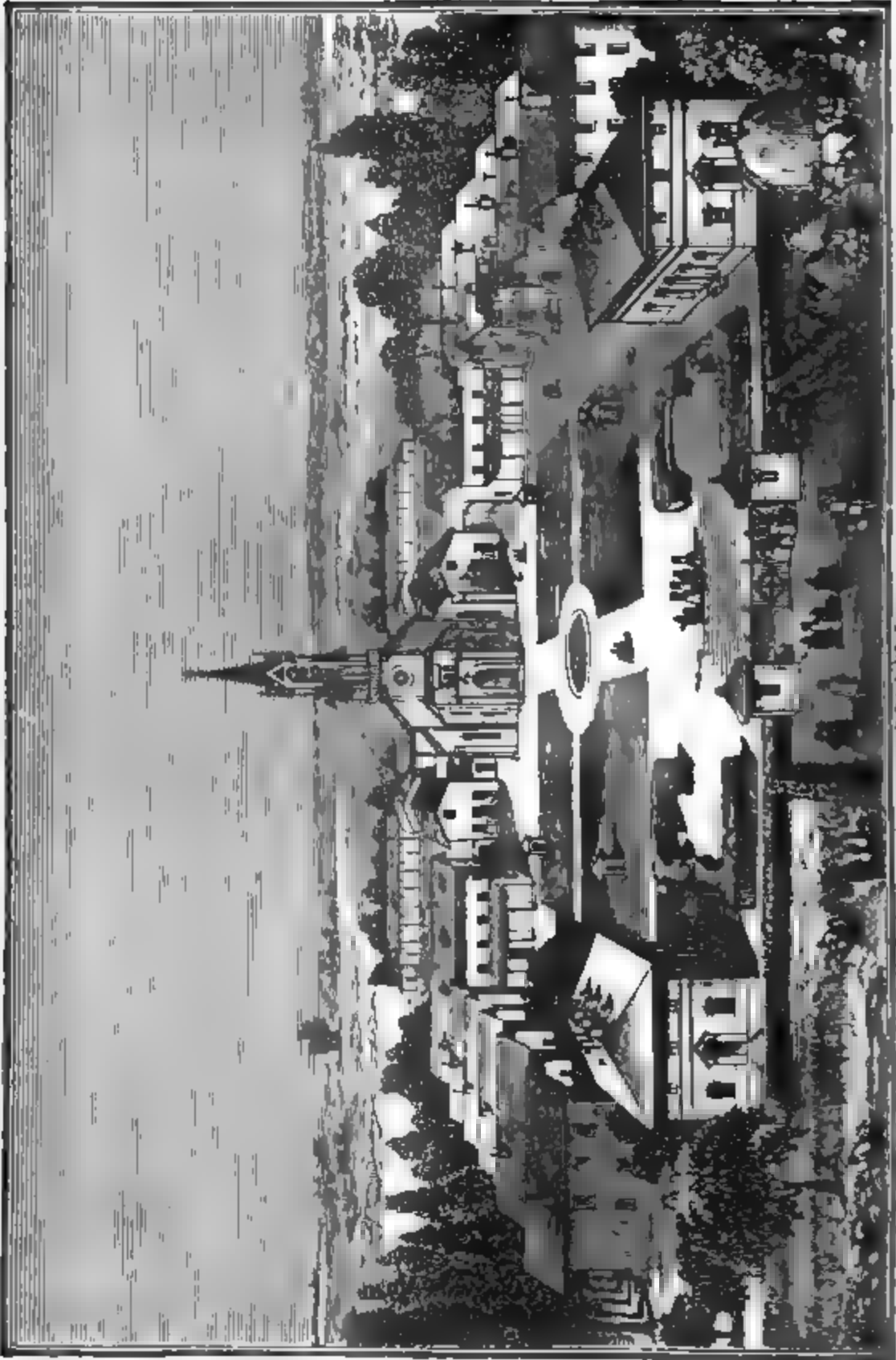
The libérés who go to Paris from Mettray, receive the protection of the Chief Agent, M. Paul Verdier, who engages in this work of devotion with a zeal and self-abnegation beyond all eulogy.\*

There are innumerable conventual establishments to which the State confides young female détenus, protecting in their asylums those who at the period of their liberation find themselves without homes or means of employment. The principal are the Solitude of Nazareth, near Montpellier;† the Refuge du Dorat in la Haute Vienne; the convent of the Good Shepherd at Angers and the communities which belong to them.

A recent inquiry has been made relative to 12,464, the number of juvenile détenus, who from 1837 to 31st December, 1853, left the Institution of Correctional Education, either publicly or privately. Of this number we can not point out more than 528 relapses; but as it would be impossible to discover what had become of the greater number of those boys, who concealed their track by changing their names and residences, in order, either to commence a new mode of life, or to continue in their old habits, it is more than probable that the greater number of those boys have contributed to increase the population of our penitentiaries. As for the young girls, their fate on leaving has been more dark and deplorable. Are not these facts sufficiently startling to prove the absolute necessity of an obligatory patronage, which is at once aiding and preventive, especially after pointing out the services rendered by this Institution, incomplete as it still is?

\* M. L. Alcan deserves equal notice; his position is that of obtaining situations for the libérés of Mettray.

† See the notice we have given to *The Solitude of Nazareth* in the *Annales* of the 1st of November, 1853.



GOVERNMENT  
AGRICULTURAL COLONY AT MONTREAL.

## METTRAY: ITS RISE AND PROGRESS.

FROM THE ANNUAL REPORTS.

---

THE following history of the Reformatory Institution or *Colonie Agricole et Penitentielle*, at Mettray, near Tours in France, drawn from the annual reports\* of the Directors, is copied, with a few omissions and additions, from the Irish Quarterly Review for December, 1856:

The reports are addressed to the members of the *Société Paternelle*, a small association originated by M. Demetz as the first step toward founding Mettray. It consists of the chief promoters of the enterprise, having for its President the Count de Gasparin, for Vice-President M. Demetz, and for Secretary-General the Count de Flavigny; but it has never interfered in the management of the institution, which has always rested solely in the hands of the Directors. It is consequently to their genius and self-devotion, that the system and the success of Mettray are alike owing, and strongly impressed as we had before been with their merits, we must confess it was not until after an attentive perusal of the seventeen annual reports which have now appeared, that we became fully aware of the exalted benevolence and the profound philosophy, which through M. M. Demetz and de Courteilles, have wrought such benefit to mankind—a benevolence, which neither the most arduous labors, nor the closest personal intercourse with the miserable beings it sought to reclaim, could weary or disgust—a philosophy, which, while successfully solving the most difficult of social problems, did not disdain to occupy itself with the minutest details of domestic economy.

To the second and succeeding reports, up to the period of M. de Courteilles' death, the names of both Directors are appended, but the first which was read to the *Société Paternelle*, at their first annual meeting on the 7th of June, 1840, is signed by M. Demetz alone. Referring to it in his opening address, the President, M. de Gasparin, says:—

The modesty of its author will not succeed in concealing from you the sacrifices and self-devotion on the part of M. Demetz and M. de Bretignères de Courteilles, by which alone we could have reached the position we already occupy. Abandoning the career in which they were engaged and the habits of a whole life-time, they gave themselves up with pious zeal to the cause of criminal reformation. Personal and pecuniary sacrifices they estimated as nothing; their philanthropy overcame every obstacle, and they find their reward in the approbation of their own consciences and of all good men.

By the 66th article of the Code Napoléon, children in France, under 16 years of age, who are found guilty of an offence, may be acquitted as having acted *sans discernement*, in which case they are liable to de-

---

\* Rapports Annuels des Directeurs de la Colonie Agricole et Penitentielle de Mettray. 1840 to 1856 inclusive. Tours: Imprimerie Ladeveze.

tention in prison for a certain number of years, according to the sentence of the magistrate before whom they are tried. He has, however, the option of treating them as adult offenders, in which case they undergo conviction. This, however, happens comparatively rarely; but until the establishment of Reformatory Schools, the child derived little or no benefit from his privilege of acquittal. He was still exposed, for a period often of many years, to the injurious influences of a prison where he was frequently associated with hardened felons. It was to give life and action then to this dead letter that M. Demetz resolved to establish the agricultural colony of Mettray.\*

We will now turn to the first report, only premising with reference to our translation, that for convenience sake we have retained the terms *colony*, *colon*, *chef de famille*, *sous chef* and *contre-maitre*, as our language possesses no words precisely equivalent to them. The two first are self-explaining; the *chef de famille* is the officer placed at the head of each family, to which he discharges the duties of a father, concerning himself more particularly with the moral supervision and bodily health of his wards. He has invariably been trained in the *Ecole Préparatoire*, as has also the *sous chef*, a youth who acts under the *chef de famille*, and in time rises to a similar post. *Contre-maitre* may be translated "industrial master;"† and during the early existence of the colony it was not indispensable that he should have been educated in the *Ecole Préparatoire*, though it is so now. If formerly, however, he had been educated he was permitted to take a share in the moral training of the colons, by filling the office of *sous chef*.

In June, 1839, the *Société Paternelle* issued its prospectus, and selected the village of Mettray as the site of the colony it had resolved to found. M. Bretonnières de Courteilles had offered a tract of land there, peculiarly suited to the purpose; and from that moment we became associated in the enterprise to which henceforth our lives are devoted. We now appealed to public charity in favor of an institution eminently calculated to benefit society, and we met with a warm response.

Five hundred subscribers gave in their names within the first year, including the king and the rest of the royal family, his ministers, many members of the Chamber of Peers, and of Deputies, judicial and educational bodies in various parts of the country, and more especially the inhabitants of the department in which the colony was established.

Our aim was to rescue young offenders from the influence of a prison life, and to replace the walls with which they had been surrounded, by liberty and labor in the open air.

We proposed by persuasive influence, by justice and kindness accompanied by strict discipline, to reclaim lads who, from their infancy upward, had never received any moral training, and had been subjected to no other restraint than that of brute force; we proposed, in short, to turn ignorant and dangerous vagrant lads into good, industrious and useful members of society. Such a problem could not be solved by ordinary means.

In order to succeed in detaining our first colons among us and in attaching them to our institution, we began by founding a school for teachers, which should supply us with devoted and efficient officers, and we strove to imbue

\* For a history of the preliminary steps see Report on Agricultural Colonies, p. 65.

† Foreman.

them with the spirit by which we were animated, that they might in their turn communicate it to the rest, and afford them a good example.

It was absolutely necessary that we should be able to show to those who were apprehensive of evil effects resulting to themselves from the assemblage of so many criminal lads in their vicinity, that even such a band might be well disciplined and harmless, and we have succeeded in dissipating all alarm and ill will, and in gaining the confidence of our neighbors.

On the 28th of July, 1839, we opened our *Ecole Préparatoire* with 23 *élèves* pupils,\* from among whom we have already selected several individuals now actively employed as officers in our institution.

While occupied in establishing this school, we were also engaged in erecting not far from it, the dwellings destined to receive our colons, the plan of which we will explain.

The houses are all detached; each is 12 metres [39 feet] long, by six metres, 66 centimetres [21 feet] wide, and consists of a ground floor, and over that a first and second floor. The ground floor, where the colons are employed when not occupied out of doors, is divided into four workshops by a partition, sufficiently low to enable the superintendent, placed in the middle, to overlook every compartment, without, however, it being possible for the boys in one to communicate with those in another, or indeed to see each other when seated; while the upper part of the room being left free, the temperature of the whole remains the same, however unequal in number may be the lads at work in the different divisions.

On the first floor is a dormitory for twenty children; the hammocks in which they sleep are so arranged that surveillance at night is easy, while in the daytime they are hung up against the wall, and the room is available for other purposes. They are suspended at night parallel with each other, but so that the heads and feet of the occupants shall come alternately side by side, by which means conversation, even in a whisper, is prevented, and it is made possible to place them very near together without any evil consequence.

Planks fixed on to posts by means of hinges, and which can be lowered at pleasure, form a table extending the whole length of the room, which may thus be used as a refectory, and when the tables are raised parallel with the posts, and the hammocks are hung up against the wall, a large clear space is obtained where in rainy weather the boys can be employed in various occupations and at the same time be continually overlooked. A little room is partitioned off from the larger apartment, and having the side which commands a view of the latter furnished with venetian blinds, the occupant can see without being seen; in this post of observation, the *chef de famille* has his bed, and as no one knows whether he is asleep or not, there is not a moment when the boys can feel sure his eye is not upon them.

The second floor is arranged on the same plan, and is also adapted to receive twenty colons.

Two *contre-maitres* keep watch at night in each dormitory, taking the duty alternately till morning.

Each house thus accommodates 40 children, divided into two sections, forming one family, presided over by a *chef de famille*, aided by two *contre-maitres*. In addition to these a colon is chosen monthly in each section, who with the title of Elder Brother assists the superintendents in the management of the household.

Each of these houses, containing 43 persons, cost, internal fittings included, 8,300 francs, [£332,] that is 193 francs [£7 14s.] for each inmate, or 9 francs 65 centimes annually.

---

\* It will be noticed that wherever the word pupil (*élève*) is used, it is applied to the students in this school, never to the colons. Admission to the *Ecole Préparatoire* is gratuitous; thus the Directors have the power of selecting as pupils those individuals who appear most likely to suit their purpose.

They are invariably chosen from respectable families, but often from such as have met with reverses in fortune, and to whom, consequently, the education and maintenance thus obtained is a great boon. If a pupil is found to be unfitted for the vocation of teacher, he is dismissed; endeavors, however, being made, if his conduct is not in fault, to provide for him elsewhere. Some leave of their own accord, and no attempt is ever made to detain either pupil or officer, after they have expressed a wish to depart. As the colony can afford to a few officers only salaries sufficient for the support of a family, a large proportion of them do leave after a few years' service; but owing to the excellent education they have received, and the high character they bear, they seldom fail to obtain good situations elsewhere.

Four houses are already finished; they stand 10 metres [33 feet] apart, sheds filling up the intervening space.

The ground floor of the first house is occupied by tailors, shoemakers, coopers and plaiters of straw, and there is a rope-walk in the adjoining shed. In the second house, is a carpenter's shop, the wood required being stored in the shed next beyond. In the third house we are this year cultivating silkworms, from which seven ounces of silk were obtained, and the third shed forms a covered court.

The fourth house contained six cells, (the punishment quarter not being yet erected,) and various apartments for the use of the officers. A forge and blacksmith's shop occupied the fourth shed; the fifth house, which was to be the chaplain's residence, was nearly finished. M. de Courteilles lived at his mansion at a short distance from the institution, but M. Demetz, the Sisters of Charity, and the officers inhabited adjacent buildings, which included also the chapel, infirmary, baths and several other departments of the establishment, among which were the general kitchen and various domestic offices.

The first house intended for the colons being ready by January, 1840, on the 22d of that month both the Directors repaired to the prison of Fontevrault, where they selected nine youths, with whose antecedents they had made themselves thoroughly acquainted, to return with them to Mettray.

All these nine colons behaved perfectly well from the time they reached Mettray, the change in their treatment appearing to produce an almost marvellous alteration in their conduct.

Toward the end of February, M. de Courteilles brought four colons from Normandy, and early in March M. Demetz added six more who accompanied him from Paris, and their numbers gradually increased from month to month by children coming from all parts of France; indeed in sending them

the departments farthest away considered the distance which separated them from us as a decided advantage; they knew that the boy would adopt with greater readiness the new course we pointed out if entirely cut off from old companions and associations so as to feel almost as if he were transported into a new world; and further important advantages must accrue from thus associating together children differing as widely in the place of their birth as in their national characteristics, and who will in course of time carry back with them to their homes the fruit of practical training and moral and religious culture.

Upon this latter point, the most important of all, we may say that M. Brault, our excellent and venerable chaplain, is thoroughly satisfied with the attention our lads give to his instruction, and with the zealous manner in which they perform their religious duties.

In the course of ten months then, we have provided house-room for 120 children, of whom 84 with the proportionate number of officers, are already settled among us. We have exerted our utmost efforts to win the confidence and affection of these lads, and hitherto they have yielded to the influences we have brought to bear, in a manner to afford us the liveliest hope for their future welfare.

The lads were at first chiefly employed in making a carriage road to the colony, in laying out gardens, in leveling the open courts, and in building more houses. The prejudice at first felt against them in the neighborhood had been already overcome by their good behavior, and some vinedressers had even asked permission to hire them, which had



been granted, when the applicants were respectable men, and lived sufficiently near the colony to render strict supervision of the young laborers, by their own masters, practicable.

Most of the lads having been employed while in prison in weaving, their health originally defective had been much injured by bending over the looms, and consequently many of them reached Mettray in a deplorable state of weakness and disease. The open air life there, however, produced a rapid improvement, and was so beneficial that it became a rule to select sickly lads from the prisons in the hope that their health would be restored by the change, a fact which sufficiently accounts for the delicate appearance of many of the boys, and for the deaths amounting to two per cent. of their number.

The colons spend only two hours and a half per day in the school-room, a period which is as necessary for bodily rest as for mental instruction. They are taught reading, writing and arithmetic, the authorized system of weights and measures, linear drawing and singing, which latter is very efficacious in promoting discipline and moral improvement, and whose favorable influence on very degraded natures we have already had opportunities for observing. \* \*

The events of each day will be found recorded almost hour by hour, in the journal kept by the upper contre-maitre in each family. Every thing which occurs is entered with the utmost exactness and detail in this register, of which we send a copy once in three months to your committee. It contains the whole history of the colony.

The punishments inflicted and rewards given, are summed up at the end of each month; the number and the nature of the offences committed and the names of the culprits, as also those of the lads who have not incurred blame, are all recorded, so that the conduct of each lad during any one month, may be compared with his behavior at a former similar period, and his progress thus ascertained.

\* \* Our regulations are severe and strictly observed. In food, clothing and bedding, our lads have only what is absolutely necessary; obedience and punctuality in the performance of their duties are rigidly enforced, and the smallest offence is punished. With all this, we have no walls, and yet not one of our boys has ever thought of escaping, not even on coming out of the cell, where many of them have undergone confinement for ten or fifteen days on bread and water diet. \* \* \* It is by convincing them that we are guided in all things by a sense of justice, that we acquire so powerful a hold upon our lads.

To afford them a proof of this and to furnish ourselves with an additional safeguard, we cause all lesser offenders to be tried before a tribunal, consisting of colons selected by us from among those whose names are upon the Tablet of Honor—reserving to ourselves only the right of mitigating such sentences as we consider too severe.

At the second annual meeting of the *Société Paternelle* the Count de Gasparin thus addressed them:—

The agricultural colony of Mettray is no longer a project; it has become a reality; its success is no longer disputed; it is acknowledged by the whole neighborhood, and attested by the crowds of visitors who come to see the institution; and many of you whom I address have had the opportunity of convincing yourselves with your own eyes, that your undertaking is firmly established, and that it fulfills the promises it held forth.

Yes, gentlemen, we have seen our lads, who came to us from prison overcome with bodily ailments, recover their health under the influence of the laborious and hardy system to which they are subjected at Mettray; we have seen their hypocritical expression of countenance change to one of modest self-possession, which testified to their moral regeneration, tranquil conscience, and their resolution to keep henceforth in the right path: we have seen dissimulation give place to candor, hatred of their fellow creatures to kindness, the schemes of a criminal course to the hope of regaining a respectable position in society. Those who have once rejoiced in such a spectacle can never forget it, and it



becomes their duty to make their experience widely known, that such results may not be confined to one spot in France, but may be multiplied on an extended scale. [This indeed has already to some extent taken place.] The institution has already borne fruit. \* \* \* \* \* It has been imitated in many parts of the kingdom by pious and benevolent men; an improved system is rapidly extending, and must ere long become general, for the contrast between the lot of children who enjoy its advantages, and that of those who are excluded from them, will be too painful to be long endured.

You will learn, gentlemen, from the report about to be read to you, the progress of the institution during the past year and that which may be hoped for in the next. We could not have obtained such results even with the aid afforded us by the Ministers of the Interior, of Agriculture and of Public Instruction, but for the generous offering of a man whose help every benevolent enterprise is sure to receive. The Count d'Ourches in bestowing upon us the sum of 140,000 francs, (£5,600,) has anticipated by many years the time at which Mettray would have arrived at its full development. With his assistance we are now able to finish the buildings whose completion we had been obliged to defer, and shall thus have it in our power to receive the full number of youths to which for the present we have felt obliged to limit ourselves.

The class of children admitted to the Institution at Mettray are thus described in the annual report for 1841:—

We learn from the information we have been able to procure, and from the answers of the children themselves to the questions we address to them on their entrance, that a large proportion have been accustomed to live by begging; that they have been badly clothed, ill fed, and have received no care from their parents, who made a profit out of the wretched appearance of their children, and often employed them as instruments of theft.

Though declaring that those children have acted *sans discernement*, the law has nevertheless treated them with great severity, for it may justly be said that they acted compulsorily, since they did but yield to the imperious commands of hunger.

We must admit, however, that there are among them some who are most precociously wicked, and who if not dealt with in time would infallibly become deeply criminal.

Our first care on the arrival of each is to study his character, in order to ascertain the treatment most suitable to him.

If we would operate successfully on the individual, we must convince him that he has been sent to the colony not only for his present good, but for his future welfare. He must be made to understand that if the work to which he is set here is more laborious than that in which he was employed while in prison, its purpose is to develop his physical powers while promoting his moral improvement. Finally, it is necessary to awaken in his heart those principles of religion and virtue without which no reformation is possible.

The wretched state of health in which most of the children came to the colony, together with the laborious life there imposed upon them, rendered a larger quantity of animal food necessary than they had received in prison.

It has been said that experience, which teaches us the importance of good conduct, teaches us also the importance of good health—certain it is, that the one exercises a great influence over the other, and we therefore neglect no means which can help to strengthen the constitution of our lads. Thus, throughout the winter, excepting a very few days when the cold was unusually intense, they have worked in a quarry near the colony, clothed in coarse cloth, and their feet having no other covering than their sabots.

The uniform they wear is extremely simple, and so made as to leave their limbs the greatest freedom of action, and thus promote their healthful development. Without being very remarkable it is sufficiently peculiar to attract attention to the lads in case they should run away, for it must never be forgotten that they enjoy perfect liberty; we desired in avoiding every prece-

ion which might recall the prison to their minds, to impress deeply upon them the conviction that at the colony they begin a new life, where force is replaced by persuasion. \* \*

Field labor, besides its importance in a pecuniary point of view, affords healthful exercise to the body, while it sufficiently occupies the mind to banish the evil thoughts which idleness is sure to induce; it affords another advantage in making rest absolutely necessary to the peasant at the very hour that his brethren who dwell in towns are entering into those amusements and dissipations which tend to enervate and demoralize the partaker. \* \*

To effect a complete reformation it was required to restore to this neglected class the habits and affections of the family circle, so dear to man, and which supply the firmest bands by which society is held together. This has been accomplished by dividing the colony into sections of forty boys, in each of which superintendents, called respectively the *chef de famille* and the Elder Brother, exercise an authority maintained by kindness and good counsel.

By placing the members of each of these sections or families in a position to provide for all their wants themselves, to build partly with their own hands their common dwelling, and to cultivate the field and the garden belonging to it, we created for them the associations of home, and a love for their own fire-side, and familiarized them with the feelings and the duties which arise there.

It was, we believe, impossible to discover a better means for raising these unhappy beings—the offspring of vice—in the eyes of the world, and in their own, and of converting them into useful members of society.

Thanks to the spot we have chosen, we may hope that the colony will eventually produce every thing it requires for its own consumption.

Vegetables being the chief article of the boys' diet, and having to be provided in proportion to their increasing numbers, twenty hectares, (about 50 acres,) of land round about the houses, and in the neighborhood of water, will be planted with vegetables of all descriptions; the land at a distance will be sown with cereal crops.\*

An agricultural master superintends the cultivation of the soil besides giving a course of lessons on this subject suited to the capacity of the lads. Each agricultural division consists of twelve colons and a sub agricultural master, who is either a good gardener, vinedresser, field laborer or hedger and ditcher, and who teaches the lads under his care the best methods of performing their work, and handling their tools. When the weather is bad the colons plait straw for making their hats; and in future, when our sheds are finished, the boys will, under their shelter, break stones for the roads, our intention being to make road-menders and even stone masons of some of them.

A great number are employed during the season in picking mulberry leaves for the support of silkworms; we are rapidly increasing this branch of industry, to which our circumstances promise high success. M. de Chavannes, Inspector of silkworm establishments, having been sent by Government into the Department of Indre-et-Loire, has been kind enough to give a weekly public lecture on the culture of the mulberry and the management of silkworms. Last year we gained a gold medal at the exhibition for silk, the product of our colons' labor. \* \*

It is a source of constant congratulation to ourselves that the colony was established on land unencumbered by buildings, and that thus we have been spared the necessity of modifying our system to suit preëxisting circumstances. It has been often said, with unhappily too much truth, in reference to our old prisons, whose unsuitable construction exercises so injurious an influence, that stones made their law.

We have now, (May 1841,) six houses completed, and the new buildings under construction are the school-room, the place of punishment and the chapel. It was at first thought that the former would also serve for the chapel, and that it might be used alternately for divine service and for the purposes of a school. We consulted several persons whose opinion deserved to have great weight

---

\* It has been said that the lads have a sickly appearance, and that their food is insufficient, consisting, as it does, largely of bread and vegetables. It must be recollected, however, that this is the ordinary fare of the French peasantry, who rarely taste meat, and that the duty of not placing individuals who have incurred the penalty of the law in a position of greater material comfort than their honest neighbors, is never forgotten at Mettray.

with us, and many instances of schools in which this plan is pursued were mentioned. But what may be very suitable for children who have early been trained to religious habits, can not be applied in the case of individuals utterly different from them.

There is no task so delicate and so difficult as that of leading back into the right path those whose early education has been completely neglected, and it is necessary every thing should tend, even in the smallest details, to promote the object we would attain. The words of the chaplain, the associations of the place, the solemnity of the service, the harmony of the chanting, should all operate together on the child's heart, reaching it though his ears and eyes.

The munificence of Count d'Ourches, by enabling us to build both a school-room and a chapel, has put an end to our difficulty. Count Leon d'Ourches, after having on a former occasion given us 10,000 francs, (£400,) has recently presented us with a donation of 130,000 francs, (£5,200.)

We know not how adequately to thank our generous benefactor, and are glad thus publicly to pay him the just tribute of our gratitude. \* \*

We have already succeeded in destroying, or at least in weakening to a great degree, the spirit of combination which our colons had acquired in prison. Now any one who does wrong is blamed by his companions, and incurs their displeasure. We feel assured that we have reached the point when the good operate on the bad, and that our lads are the first to repress the wrong acts committed among them. Lately, they obliged a comrade, who had behaved ill, to return a book which he had received as a reward. On a former occasion they demanded the expulsion of one of their number, saying that they did not like to retain among them an individual who disgraced them all. \* \*

Another time one of them told us of some misconduct which had occurred in the infirmary; it was endeavored in vain to ascertain who had informed us, when the lad stood up in the middle of his companions, and said in a loud voice, "It was I, and I am not afraid to own it." \* \*

At the last election of Elder Brothers they at once selected a colon who, having vainly urged one of his companions, who had been guilty of some fault, to own it, came openly and informed us of it himself. Sometimes the culprits themselves tell us of their offense, but, it must be confessed, such an event is very rare.

Six months ago the abbé Fissiaux, who is now at the head of the Agricultural Colony at Marseilles, having come to visit us, asked the lads to point out to him the three best boys amongst them. Their eyes turned instantly toward three colons, whose irreproachable conduct placed them far above the rest. He then applied a more delicate test, and one which rather alarmed us, not knowing what might be the result. He asked which was the worst boy. We expected that a certain lad would be pointed out by his companions, for there was no doubt on whom the choice should fall. All, however, remained motionless until, at length, one came forward with a pitiful air, and said, in a very low tone, "It is me." The worthy abbé embraced him affectionately, and said, "What you have just done convinces me that you are mistaken, and I do not believe you on your word." From that time the child has behaved tolerably well, which is a great improvement on his former conduct.\*

Another fact proving the good spirit which exists among our boys, and the happy influence exercised over them at the colony, is that when a serious offense has been committed by any of them, that very instant their games stop, they become silent on the play-ground, and for many days afterward not the slightest fault calls for punishment. \* \*

We endeavor to foster a spirit of charity in our lads, for any one who has had an opportunity of practically comparing the anguish of mind consequent upon a bad action, with the sweet and holy pleasure which a good one leaves behind, can scarcely relapse into evil ways.

We read to our colons an account of the disasters caused by the inundation of the Rhone, and several of them who had relatives at Lyons proposed, in order to send some help to those who had suffered from the floods, to give a portion of the savings they had brought with them from prison. The others wished to follow their example, and only regretted our attempt to moderate

---

\* He afterward became "*bon militaire*."

their eagerness—they wanted to give away all they possessed. Besides the sum we permitted them to bestow, we proposed to them to go without a portion of their food one day, and to add the money thus saved to the amount already subscribed—to perform, namely, by enduring this fast, an act of what has been rightly called *corporal charity*. This suggestion was received with delight by all but one, who murmured at the plan; his companions punished him for his conduct by condemning him to eat his full share seated alone at table, and he was so severely reproached for his selfishness that we think he is thoroughly cured of it. Perhaps this incident may induce the belief that the lads were carried away by general feeling, or that they yielded to external impulse. The following fact will prove the contrary. Very lately, one of them, having adopted the evil counsel of a workman who happened to have been employed at the colony, was put into the cell; on coming out he was told that the workman, who had a family to support, had been sent away, and that, perhaps, he and his children were without bread to eat, when the boy, deeply moved, exclaimed, "Let them give him every thing I have."

Our colons work in the kitchen garden where the trees are covered with fruit, without ever touching it. This is a fact which visitors have had opportunities of verifying, and which has caused them much surprise. We have, however, been able to teach our lads that their antecedents make that a serious offense in them, which if committed by others would be but a trifling fault.

In general they are humane and compassionate. \* \* \* A melancholy incident, which we must not pass over in silence, will convince you of their sensibility. For the first time since the foundation of the colony, into which a hundred and forty-three children have been admitted, we have a death to record. \* \* \* This loss was a very deep affliction to us, rendered the more severe by the gentleness and pious resignation of the poor child who died. Seized before he departed from Clairvaux, (the prison from which he came,) with a fatal disorder, he never left the infirmary during the fortnight he remained with us. A few minutes before his death, he said, "It is sad indeed to leave the colony so soon." His strength no longer permitting him to raise himself in bed, he begged the chef of the family to which he belonged, and who had watched all night beside him, to bend down, and kissing him, thanked him for all his kindness. His last words expressed repentance and gratitude. \* \* \* His companions attended his funeral, and we made the ceremony deeply impressive. The words pronounced at the edge of the grave produced a great effect on our lads; all wept, and no doubt they will retain a solemn remembrance of a scene witnessed by them for the first time. You well know, gentlemen, how these things are managed in our prisons.

We have obtained land for our little cemetery near at hand, and its situation is calculated to affect the mind deeply. The Elder Brother of the family to which the poor boy who died belonged, has it in charge to take care of the turf on his grave. \* \*

We have found means of employing a part of Sunday, a day so difficult to get through in penitentiaries and prisons, in such a manner that, while resting from labor, our lads are saved from idleness.

Two hours of the day are spent in gymnastic exercises. Children possess an exuberance of animal spirits which they must have the means of getting rid of, no matter how, and often this necessity has more to do with the blows they give each other than any malicious feeling. Every thing which tends to fatigue them helps to keep away evil thoughts, and we take care, therefore, that their games shall necessitate violent exercise that they may be tired by their play as well as by their work; thus at night they fall asleep the moment they lie down, and their slumber is unbroken till it is time to rise.\*

As attempts to escape might destroy the usefulness of our institution, we have classed them among the offenses which are punished by relegation to prison; but meanwhile we have sought, and it would appear successfully, to make our lads feel that having been set at liberty, as it were, on parole, it would be dishonorable on their part to run away from the asylum which has received them.

The words "God sees you" are written on almost every wall, that our colons

---

\* The boys rise at five A. M., the whole year round.

may be constantly reminded that if they can escape the vigilance of man, there is no hiding place from the eye of God.

Among our lads there is one about fifteen years of age who has a most peculiar and troublesome idiosyncrasy; he has a passion for appropriating every thing he can lay hands upon, for which it is impossible to account. It is an instinct with him as it is with some of the lower animals; thus, though he does not know how to read he steals every book he can reach; he has not made his first communion, and his religious sense has scarcely dawned, nevertheless he possesses himself of the various objects used in religious worship, hiding all these things in his hammock or in some hole. His faculties, it is true, are very imperfectly developed, but he is by no means an idiot.

He has been consigned to the cell eleven times, and as soon as he comes out he begins his thievish practices over again, and even in the cell he finds means to gratify this unfortunate passion; he hides within his wooden shoes the straw that has been given him to plait, and he has been found with strips torn from his counterpane twisted round his body under his clothes.

What will be the future lot of such a being? It is painful indeed to contemplate his probable fate. Still we will not give up the hope that our mode of treatment may be successful with him as it has been with so many of his companions, though it must be owned none of them ever exhibited such unaccountable perversity.

The punishments inflicted in our institution are,  
 Erasure from the Tablet of Honor,  
 Detention within doors,  
 Compulsory labor,  
 Bread and water diet,  
 Imprisonment in a light cell,  
 Imprisonment in a dark cell.

Before inflicting any of these punishments we have invariably recourse to preliminary measure of which the advantage is so great that we can not pass unmentioned.

If punishment is to produce a salutary effect it is imperative that its object should submit himself to it unresistingly, and indeed that he should be the first to feel that he had deserved it. To impress this conviction on the culprit's mind it is in the first place necessary that the penalty should be inflicted in calm and gentle spirit, and dictated by the strictest justice—that power of reason which convinces while it commands, as one of our excellent magistrates has so well said; secondly, that both he who inflicts and he who receives chastisement should be perfectly cool.

It is impossible that these conditions should exist at the moment when serious offense naturally exciting indignation has been committed; and therefore our masters are desired, when they have a complaint to make against any boy, to send him to the waiting-room, (*parloir*.) This is in fact our *salle de dépôt*, but we avoid the use of every term which would recall the prison to the minds of our lads. Being sent to the waiting-room never prejudices the boy's case, and consequently he goes there willingly. Directly this step has been taken we are informed of it, and we have then plenty of time to refer to his antecedents, and institute an inquiry if we deem it necessary.

During this delay the culprit begins to reflect on what he has done, the master becomes cool, we have time to consider the circumstances of the case, to consult together, and when at length we decide the matter, in perfect calmness and thoroughly acquainted with the whole affair, we are sure that justice is administered in a paternal spirit. \* \* \*

Of all the punishments which unhappily we are under the necessity of inflicting, we must confess that the cell alone exercises a moral influence; the rest, such as dry bread, being kept in on Sunday, &c., have a useful effect only on children under nine years of age, and always irritate older lads. Our officers have been struck with the change that seclusion in the cell has produced in the most obstinate dispositions. Indeed, our colonels themselves have expressed their opinion of it in very plain terms, and their authority in such a case is not to be despised. "As for us," they say, "we would rather have a whipping, but the cell does us more good."

Some persons have thought that *separate* confinement, as it has been well



defined by one of our most distinguished writers, and which has hitherto been very absurdly confounded with *solitary* confinement, should be thrown aside now that such success had been attained at Mettray, where the lads are associated together. But this is a very serious error which it is our duty to correct.

Separate confinement, instead of being opposed to our system is in perfect harmony with it, and is, in our opinion, its indispensable complement. \* \* In the United States, children, before being received into institutions analogous to ours, are subjected to a shorter or longer term of separate confinement; they lay aside in the cell the turbulent spirit they displayed outside, and silence and reflection prepare them for moral and religious instruction, and for the adoption of a new course of life.

Independently, however, of this wholesome influence, separate confinement is necessary also as a means of restraint. The course of treatment pursued at an agricultural colony does not admit of sufficient severity to intimidate undisciplined dispositions, some of which retain their vicious propensities, unless the fear of being sent back to prison can be made to exercise a wholesome influence over them. And again, the deprivation of liberty, which is part of the punitive power of imprisonment, can not exist with the kind of employment pursued at a reformatory school.

If, then, it is desired that the operation of the law should not be illusory, and that those likely to fall within her grasp should not hope to escape with impunity; if, above all, our threat of relegation to prison is not to be an empty one, it is indispensable that the colons before they come to us, should have experienced confinement there in all its harshness and severity.

Many of the boys who have come to us direct from ordinary jails, where there is no regular labor, and where the prisoners, especially if children, do almost what they please, ask to be sent back. In very cold weather some of them have even regretted the House of Correction, where, instead of working out of doors, exposed to the inclemency of the season, they were placed in well warmed workshops with just a shuttle in their hands.

It must be evident how embarrassing such requests are to us who wish admission to Mettray to be considered as a favor and a reward; though, on the other hand, they can not fail to remove the apprehensions of those individuals who fear that our system is not sufficiently severe.

But to return. We never should attain our end unless the treatment in prison were harsh enough to create a dread of being sent back there, or in one word, if separate confinement were not invariably the probation through which every colon must pass before coming to us.

For the rest, as regards this system, the effect produced by a less or greater period of detention is the only point about which there remains any difference of opinion; and the establishment of reformatory farm schools affords the means of conciliating all parties, by rendering it easy to abridge that period as much as may be thought desirable, without incurring the evils which would otherwise arise from too speedy liberation.

The value of the above remarks can not be over-estimated, especially when we know that fifteen years' additional experience has not altered the opinion of the surviving Director of Mettray upon the absolute necessity of subjecting the lad sent to a Reformatory School, to such previous treatment as shall make him feel the change to be a boon, and upon the expediency of this the first stage in reformatory discipline, consisting of separate confinement in a well-ordered prison or analogous institution.

The report dated 1842, was read at a much earlier period of the year than usual, namely, in January, and consequently narrates the history of the colony during only eight months, the previous one having been read in May, 1841. We are informed that,

Not a single colon failed at the musters during the year 1841. Their conduct has been good, better even than could have been hoped. In the course of

January half our lads incurred no punishment; in February, March, April and May, two-thirds; in June, July, August, September and October, three-quarters; and in November and December, four-fifths were exempt from its infliction.

These statements are not only highly favorable but very remarkable, when it is considered that the least infraction of the rules of the institution is visited with a penalty. Extreme severity of discipline is, however, accompanied by great personal kindness, and many gentle influences besides the affectionate demeanor of the officers, are brought to bear upon the colons.

Every child, and every man too, has a good side to his character by which he may be approached, and through which his feelings may be touched and softened; and if only this be carefully studied, and means earnestly sought by which the master may gain an influence over him, assuredly they will be found if the appeal be made from heart to heart.

However depraved and neglected may have been the early life of our lads, there is always some recollection and association connected with the village they came from, with its church spire, (their landmark,) or some attachment to their native place which may be profitably awakened.

Very few mothers are wholly bad. In the course of a miserable and disorderly life some brighter days have occurred when the father or the mother has bestowed a caress and given some good advice to their child. In cases where sickness or poverty has been the first cause of wrong-doing, often before yielding to its pressure, before entering the path of crime, the child has hesitated, sometimes resisted the temptation, and many times, even while giving way to sin, he has not stifled the voice of conscience.

In the course of 1841, an important change was made in the method of conveying mental instruction.

Originally all the lessons were given by the schoolmaster himself with the assistance of monitors. It was found, however, to be impossible, with such large numbers, for him to address himself individually to his pupils; the monitors were in fact the teachers, and the master did little more than keep order. By the new arrangement the chefs and sous-chefs give the lessons to the members of their own family, while the schoolmaster, passing from class to class, animates, directs and superintends the whole. The chefs, themselves well educated men, make excellent teachers, and their presence preventing the infraction of rules, which otherwise so large an assemblage of boys would have opportunities of committing, the number of offenses has been reduced to a startling extent. While there had been twenty-four instances of punishment during six months, under the old arrangement, a similar period after this change, afforded only two.

Nine colons had completed their sentences since the foundation of the colony, and had been placed out. All were behaving well, though some had been among the most troublesome at Mettray.

This circumstance is so remarkable and so gratifying, that we shall be excused for giving you the particulars of the conduct of two in whom we had the least confidence. M. ——— J., a Jew born at Paris in 1826, was at ten years of age apprehended there for a theft committed in company with other young vagabonds. The *Vie de Cartouche*, (an immoral book,) was found in his pocket.

Acquitted, but sentenced to be detained five years in a House of Correction, he passed three and a half at la Roquette and twenty months at Mettray. His father is dead, his mother in prison at Clermont, his brother has been several times convicted, and his sister is a most abandoned character. Obligated to live



in the streets of Paris, "my companions were bad," he told us, "and I lived like them, that is to say, by theft and by begging." Gifted with remarkable intelligence, and acquiring with wonderful facility whatever it was attempted to teach him, he nevertheless exhibited the most perverse disposition; insolent, violent and vindictive, he resisted every order of his masters, and poured forth abuse and threats of vengeance against any of his companions who he thought had used him ill, mistakenly declaring that his law authorized him in demanding an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.

He was consigned to the cell seven times during his stay at the colony, his seclusion amounting in all to a period of five months. Shortly before his liberation he seemed to delight in annoying the contre-maitre, and at last, just as he was about to leave, infringed the rules, thereby incurring punishment which he refused to submit to, saying he was going to be set at liberty. We replied, that no one was at liberty to do wrong, and that we should send him to the cell on bread and water diet, and keep him there until he was reformed. For two months we kept this lad thus under our care, seeing him every day and striving to convince him that his true interest made it imperative on him to amend his conduct, and to perfect himself in his trade as a shoemaker, that we might be able to apprentice him when he was fit to be at liberty.

This short but severe struggle resulted in our gaining the victory.

M——'s intelligence enabled him to perceive that efforts so persevering must be disinterested; overcome by us, he begged as a favor that he might be permitted to remain in the cell until he should so far have learnt his trade, as to have such a pair of shoes of his own making to shew to the shoemakers of Tours, as would secure him a good master.

We granted his request on condition that he would not leave the cell, and would work there industriously at his trade, telling him at the same time that he was free, and that his own wish alone detained him. The key of the cell was given to M——; he passed three weeks there, faithful to his word, working so diligently and with such right feeling, that we had at length the pleasure of placing him with one of the best shoemakers in Tours, where for six months his conduct has been irreproachable. His neighbors rejoice to see him in the shop of the excellent man who has received him into his house; he comes to pass almost every Sunday he can be spared at the colony, and is improving rapidly in his calling; indeed there is every reason to hope that his reformation is permanent.

T. ——— de l'Isere, twenty years of age, who came to us from the penitentiary at Lyons, in May, 1840, and left in October, 1841, gave us great trouble. A brazier by trade, he excelled in his calling; besides being unusually intelligent, he was active and industrious, and had brought with him from Lyons savings amounting to 600 francs, (£24.) He exercised considerable influence over his companions. Violent in temper, but professing great attachment to us, he appeared to restrain himself in order to prove his devotion to us. We hoped much from him, and secured him an excellent place with one of the best braziers in Tours, who was to give him, as soon as he left the colony, board, lodging and a franc and a half a day. A fortnight before his time was up, several pieces of money were stolen from the dormitory occupied by the pupils of the *Ecole Préparatoire*, by one of the colons who cleaned the room, R—— by name, the worst boy in the colony, and whom we immediately sent back to the penitentiary at Lyons. \* \* \* \* The wretched lad had no sooner committed the theft than not knowing what to do with the money, nor where to hide it, he gave it to T——, who was weak enough to take care of, or rather to conceal it, for several days. From that moment T——'s whole appearance changed, his conscience allowed him no rest; always uneasy, he constantly hovered about the place where he had hidden the purse containing the stolen money. For two days, as he afterward told us, he was continually on the point of giving it up to us, but the delay was fatal; he feared, after having postponed it so long, that his repentance would appear tardy and insincere; he remained silent, but his uneasiness had not escaped our notice, and we were inquiring the cause of it, when an Elder Brother informed us of the theft which R—— had committed, and of T——'s complicity. We took the latter to the spot where he had hidden the booty, and made him give it up, then having had him brought into the presence of his assembled comrades, we

tore in pieces his indentures, and made him confess his fault to the master who was about to have received him.

Thus all his companions saw every chance destroyed of his entering that path which, but for his offense, promised to lead him to prosperity.

We ordered him to the cell, and kept him there until we were convinced of his sincere repentance, when one of those excellent men who never despair of reclaiming a fellow creature, took him under his care, although we concealed nothing from him of what had occurred; and now T—— fills a confidential situation and is unexceptionable in his conduct. Excuse these details, gentlemen—you will appreciate their importance as we do; our officers were constantly saying, "If the Directors reform M—— and T—— they can not but reform all the rest."

The time during which these two lads were under our care was much less than it should have been, for they were little more than a year with us, and nevertheless we feel we may reckon on their future good conduct.

This report records that M. Giraud, (whom we learn from another pamphlet,\* having come to Mettray for one day, never left it till his death, performing meanwhile gratuitously the duties of accountant to the institution,) had resolved to build, out of the savings of a life of honorable industry, a house for the reception of a family of colons, which the Directors intended to call by his name. Another house too was about to be erected at the expense of Madame Hebert, of Rouen, in memory of a beloved daughter whom she had lost.

We learn from the next report, dated March, 1843, that 241 boys had been received at the colony by the end of 1842, of whom 45 had been placed out, and, under watchful patronage, the excellent effects of which are constantly brought before us, all, excepting three, were conducting themselves well. One of them—

D——, naturally of a violent, ungovernable disposition, who alluding to the circumstances of his birth, said, "I have no name now, but only give me a sword, and I shall know how to earn myself one," has been admitted as a volunteer into the 8th regiment of Hussars quartered at Tours. He has already won the esteem of his superior officers and of his comrades, and indeed belongs to the best set in his regiment; he has not been punished once though it is a year since he joined the army, and we are expecting that he will soon be made a brigadier. M——, the Jew, whose history we quoted from the preceding report, is fulfilling our most favorable expectations.

Another lad, T——, gave up his place in order to join his mother who was in the greatest destitution, and whom he wished to support by his labor. On leaving the colony to return to his relatives, he found on the road to le Mans, between six and seven miles from Tours, a parcel containing property to the amount of 75 francs, which belonged to the vice-president of the *Tribunal Civil* at Tours. T—— retraced his steps and faithfully delivered into our keeping the bundle he had picked up, and then resumed his journey homeward, where he well knew nothing but poverty awaited him.

Unhappily his virtue was not strong enough to resist the temptations of the position, in which with the best motives, he had placed himself, and he fell again into the hands of the police.

One of the three who relapsed robbed his master of two francs and a bottle of wine, to the great indignation of his former companions at the colony.

Our lads always feel the ill-conduct of one who has been among them, as a disgrace to themselves, and do not fail to express their disapproval whenever an opportunity occurs. We take care to keep them informed of the behavior

---

\* Notice Sur Mettray, par A. Cochlin. Tours.

their comrades who have gone to service. For this purpose a table elaborately drawn up is hung against the wall in the school-room. It contains the names of the colons who have been apprenticed, together with those of their patrons, their place of abode, and the information which is sent us every three months respecting their industry and moral conduct. These tables are read to the assembled colony whenever any new facts have been entered. The fear and the hope of having their names thus quoted with evil or good tidings, exercises a powerful influence over the youths, and this publicity produces an equally good effect on strangers. Patrons who come to the colony see the information which they have themselves transmitted respecting their wards copied word for word on the wall of the school-room, and thus they can convince themselves of the truthfulness of our mode of proceeding.

Experience continued to demonstrate the wisdom of abolishing all physical means of detention at the colony, the effect of which is to make the lads feel they are on their honor not to attempt to escape.

This is so true that a chef, happening one day to ask one of them who had tried twice over at the risk of his life to escape from prison, why he never thought of running away from the colony where he had to work much harder, he answered, "It is because there are no walls at Mettray."

The Duc Decazes paid a visit to the institution this year, and in speaking to the colons of the advantages and happiness which should flow from domestic life, quoted as an example of what this should be, the royal family, who had recently sustained a loss in which the whole nation shares.\*

His remarks produced such an impression that when he had left, our lads asked to subscribe the proceeds of a day's labor to the monument that France and the army are raising to the memory of a prince so deservedly esteemed and regretted, and whose name was one of the first inscribed in the list of our founders.

The Tablet of Honor at this time presented a very favorable aspect. Out of 172 colons, the names of 89 or more than half, were inscribed here.

The beneficial effect of the tablet is very apparent, and we have also every reason to be satisfied with the employment of Elder Brothers, elected, as they are, every month by their companions. The individuals chosen are generally well fitted for the post. Our chefs acknowledge that their coöperation is most useful in the management of the families, and upon the lads themselves the office has a powerful effect for good.

Every one who exercises authority over others feels it to be necessary to make his example conform to his precept, and thus we have seen lads who had acquired this distinction correct faults in which they had before indulged. Through them, too, we know every thing that occurs in play time, and indeed at all hours of the day, the Elder Brothers being on the same level with their companions; moreover, we acquire this knowledge without recourse to that system of espionage which degrades alike those who execute and those who employ it. The Elder Brother, wearing a badge upon his arm, feels that he is invested with authority; but though it is his duty to prevent causes of punishment, he has not the power to inflict it; he reports all infractions of the rules, and in so doing he is only fulfilling the duties of an office in which his brethren have placed him, they submit without a murmur to the consequences.

The choice which the lads make in their elections indicates the spirit and tone of the family; because if an insubordinate feeling prevailed, or if any hostility were entertained toward the chefs of the family, the boys would elect to fill the office of Elder Brother one who would be likely to aid their evil designs.

Of the 28 lads who, up to this date, had gained the honorable distinction of being elected Elder Brother, 18 had come from one prison, that of Fontevault, and indeed almost all the colons received thence at

---

\* The death of the Duke of Orleans is here alluded to.

Mettray were remarkable for their excellent behavior. This circumstance is explained by the course pursued by the governor who then presided over that establishment. He held out the hope of removal to Mettray as an inducement to behave well, and felt himself recompensed for the loss of his best boys, by the strong motive to good conduct with which he was thus able to inspire all under his care. His successor in office being unwilling to spare the lads who do him most credit, preferred to retain them in his own institution; the boys now sent from that prison are no longer distinguished among their companions at Mettray for good conduct, while Fontevault suffers from the absence in the lads of the potent incentive to right behavior, the hope of thereby bettering their condition.

The labor of the colons had yet brought but little profit, but the Directors having every reason to believe that the great object of their undertaking, namely, the reformation of their wards, was being realized, they could wait patiently till time and experience should make it successful as a commercial enterprise. This would have been more rapidly achieved had they been willing to exchange agricultural for mechanical occupation, but convinced of the importance of the former to the moral and physical regeneration of their boys, they regarded every other consideration as secondary.

The lads were delighted with harvest work, and thoroughly enjoyed getting it in. "Just look here," exclaimed one of them one day, when he was raising a huge sheaf of corn on his shoulders, having never before doubtless gathered more than a few scattered ears; "Oh! if my mother had this!" \* \* \* Children should be employed on fertile soil where they can soon behold the effect of their labor. Their interest in their occupation can only be awakened by speedy results, for even the morrow seems to their minds afar off. They witness with delight the young corn sprout from the seed they have themselves sown, and the vegetables which they have planted growing higher from day to day, while the spectacle of an abundant harvest attaches them to the soil they cultivate. \* \*

Some of them are placed in the flower and kitchen gardens, where, besides the cultivation of flowers and vegetables, they are taught how to bud and graft fruit-trees, an art which is practiced near our large towns and in the gardens of wealthy individuals, but generally much neglected in the country. \* \*

To stimulate the enterprising and active spirits of our young laborers, we allow them to compete in each class, among themselves, the trial, however, being made on the soil instead of on paper. Every month the boys assign their respective places to each, under the superintendence of their master, and once in three months these places are announced in the presence of the whole colony, when three rewards are granted to the three best workers in each class—namely, one franc, ( $9\frac{1}{2}d.$ ) 75 centimes, ( $7\frac{1}{4}d.$ ) and 50 centimes, ( $4\frac{3}{4}d.$ )

With regard to instruction in music.

We find that very great advantages are attached to this pursuit. The singing of our boys promotes good order, prevents conversation among them while moving from place to place, fixes good thoughts and good words in their memory, and attaches them to the institution where they first felt these happy influences. \* \* \* A knowledge of instrumental music, ensures them good pay and the prospect of advancement in the army; and practice in chanting gives them opportunities of being useful in whatever district we may find them employment, and brings them into advantageous communication with the clergy, and other respectable inhabitants of the parish; of this we have already had satisfactory proof.

Every individual who has acquired the power of doing any one useful thing

thoroughly well, will find opportunities for turning it to account. An instance of this occurred in the case of one of our lads whom we had placed in service at a little town in this department. He was amusing himself one Sunday by performing gymnastic feats in the market-hall, where he was seen by some respectable boys belonging to the town, who begged him to teach them the exercises. Thus he became their instructor, and they, out of gratitude, struck up a friendship with him which helped to keep him in the path of virtue.

Success of some kind, and the sympathy of our fellow creatures, are necessary to all of us. How many, alas! unable to win the approbation of the good, have been driven to seek the applause of the wicked. We can not make too great an effort to supply useful and noble objects of ambition.

Proofs of the increasing desire for instruction in the provinces, which we lately alluded to, have reached us in an interesting fact respecting the last colon who left us, and who is in service with a farmer of la Sologne.

This youth, D——, remained only a short time at the colony, and departed before he had received more than a very moderate amount of instruction. Nevertheless, he wrote to us lately to ask for some elementary books, for he said, among the rustic population in which he was placed, some respectable laborers who could neither read nor write, had begged him to teach them all he knew, promising to pay him a franc and a half a month; and he has now seven pupils.

His letter being read to our lads gave them substantial proof of the advantages of knowledge, and his excellent conduct will ensure us situations for thirty of his comrades in this department.

The chapel, for the building of which the liberality of Count d'Ourches had provided the funds, was now, with the exception of a few internal fittings, completed.

The chapel in the midst of our little settlement, and its steeple, are familiar objects to which our lads become strongly attached. It gives Mettray a home-like aspect to their eyes, and it is with pain that they part from it. When those who are in service come to see us, they express in the warmest manner the delight with which they recognize the church spire of the colony.\*

All the outward signs of religious worship affect the childish imagination, and nothing should be omitted which can deepen its impression on their hearts. We generally find them well disposed in this respect. The Bretons especially, all retain something of the religious customs of their country, and of the creed of their parents.

When in summer they practice the art of swimming, which is alike useful in developing their physical powers, and affording them the means of aiding their fellow creatures, our Breton lads never plunge into the water without first making the sign of the cross, and they always wear an image of the Blessed Virgin round their necks. Their companions never ridicule these outward signs of a devotional spirit, which secures respect because it is sincere, and besides we have so effectively brought every purifying influence to bear, that any such unworthy expression would find no echo among our lads.

The founders of Mettray did not escape the censure which has been lavished upon the promoters of similar undertakings in our own country, by those who imagine they detect injustice to the innocent in the attempt to reclaim the guilty. Is then their reformation a boon conferred on the guilty alone? Is it no benefit to the innocent man, be he rich or poor, but more especially the latter, since it is his class which suffers most from the deeds, whether of violence or dishonesty, of our criminal population, to be relieved from at least some portion of the risk to which he is exposed from their brutal and thievish propensities? May we not esteem

---

\* We asked one of them if he enjoyed coming back among us; he replied with a most naïve expression of pleasure, "Monsieur Demetz," (for our lads rarely use the title of Director,) "when I catch sight of the steeple of the colony, I can't walk any longer; I am forced to run." Letter from M. Demetz to the *Journal des Economistes*. January 4, 1856.

as a very real benefit to all who share it, the consciousness that ~~some~~ effort is being made to rescue our fellow creatures, sunk, often by ~~no~~ fault of theirs, in misery and crime, and by teaching them to use to ~~the~~ advantage instead of the injury of mankind, the powers with which ~~they~~ they have been gifted by our common Father, to make them useful members of the great human family? Again, is it no blessing to the honest ~~and~~ meritorious parents of the humbler classes who can not watch over ~~their~~ their offspring as the more wealthy are able to do, to have their children saved from the contamination of evil companions by the removal of these ~~from~~ among them? That it is so regarded by them we happen to have ~~con~~vincing proof in the fact related by Mr. Thomson of Banchory, that ~~an~~ an Industrial School at Aberdeen, established for the reception of the ~~most~~ degraded children in the town, was warmly supported by the working classes, who, during the first year of its existence, while the wealthier inhabitants contributed £150, subscribed themselves £250 toward its funds, assigning as a reason for this liberality, that their children had been greatly benefited by the clearance from the streets of the young vagrants who formerly infested them, corrupting whoever they came in contact with.\*

We maintain that great as is the boon conferred upon every individual reclaimed from a life of crime, the advantage to society if of no less magnitude; and when such reformation is effected by a system like that in operation at Mettray, and at many other institutions at home and abroad, where the material condition of the inmates is so regulated as to afford no temptation to the criminal, or cause of envy to the honest poor, we do not hesitate to assert that it is attended with no more incidental evil than is inseparable from every thing human. To dispute in which of the great works for the improvement of mankind, we ought to engage, is a melancholy waste of that energy for all of which ample employment may be found. Let us earnestly apply ourselves to the task lying nearest our hands, and rest assured that so we are best promoting the interests of our fellow creatures; but on this point we can not do better than quote the words of the Directors of Mettray:

It has often been said, "before you improve the lot of criminals, and try to reclaim them from their sins, you should ameliorate the condition of the poor, and reform the vices of society." This is telling us to relinquish our endeavor to remove the causes and repair the effects of the evil round about us, in order to snatch hastily at the good which all desire to attain. Undoubtedly the sores which cover the social body, are numerous, and we ought to study the cause of the evil, and seek to dry up its source; but while the accomplishment of this great work is yet unfulfilled, and while the best means to attain it are being developed, let each apply himself to one sore, and heal it if he can; he will deserve the gratitude of all around him, and meanwhile each separate cure will hasten the restoration of the whole body to perfect health.

The report for 1844 was read on the 12th of May, of that year, M. Duchatel, Minister of the Interior, presiding on the occasion. In the course of his address he said:—

Since the foundation of Mettray, not only the duties of my office, but my deep

---

\* Social Evils; their Causes and their Cure. Nisbett & Co., London, 1852.



and personal sympathy in the undertaking, have led me to watch its progress closely. During a recent visit I have been able to observe with my own eyes how fully, under the guidance of the capable and excellent men who devote their lives to this noble work, the results obtained respond to the hopes of the founders and friends of the colony. It is a grand and touching spectacle to behold those lads trained to order and to labor, strengthened and purified by the culture of the soil, and by the spiritual care they receive, and yet restrained by a discipline strict though beneficent, in accordance with the origin and the aim of the institution.

Morally lost while yet in childhood, through the neglect of their parents and the contaminating example of vice, our prisons in the old state of things would have left the greater part of them sunk in crime to the end of their lives. But you convert them into honest and industrious laborers, and through your exertions society no longer regards them as enemies to be pursued and punished, but as instruments useful to the welfare of all. When I examined the colony in its minutest details, and made myself acquainted with its daily course of events, I felt what a rich reward for their devotion and their labor, must the results attained and the hopes engendered, afford day by day to its two Directors, M. M. Demetz and de Brétignères de Courteilles, whose very names I love to pronounce.

In this report we find the following passage :—

Deeply convinced of the importance of first impressions, we make it a point to fetch our lads ourselves from prison. The intimacy which a journey produces, and the confidence resulting thence will be at once understood. Three days of traveling will make you better acquainted with the character of your companion, than a whole year of the intercourse of ordinary life, and we can not too soon gain a knowledge of the disposition of our lads, so as to know what methods we can most successfully employ for their reformation; possibly it is for want of studying the moral constitution of man as carefully as the physical, that hitherto so little comparatively has been accomplished by education.

During the journey we converse with the lads, and more especially we allow them to talk among themselves in our presence, by which we discover much of the tendency of their minds, and of the secret motives which guide them; thus, too, from the very first, we have opportunities of observing whether they are soberly or intemperately inclined, whether neat or slovenly, lively or dull, all of which characteristics inevitably reveal themselves in the familiarity which traveling permits.

When engagements deprive us of the pleasure of going ourselves to fetch our new colons, and of witnessing the first hope of liberty kindle in their hearts, we depute benevolent individuals, whom we can entirely trust, to supply our place. \* \* \*

On reaching the colony our first care is to distribute these new recruits among our families that, being widely dispersed, any unfavorable influence they might exercise shall be concentrated as little as possible, and so also that the old colons may, by their example and advice, predispose the new ones to obey our wishes. \* \*

Inscribed on the front of one of our houses are the words, "Let us love one another; for charity comes from God." This precept, which has penetrated deep into the hearts of our lads, exercises a potent influence on their habits.

We can affirm, strange and almost incredible as it may appear, that among our boys, who have hitherto lived among companions indulging the grossest propensities, and who have had none but the most brutal examples before them, nothing is more rare than a rude or coarse action, and that, on the contrary, there never occurs an opportunity of helping and comforting each other of which they do not eagerly avail themselves. Thus, if one of their comrades is dangerously ill, the struggle is for permission to watch at his bed-side; and their eagerness in this respect is carried to such an extent that we find it necessary to treat the privilege to discharge this irksome duty as a reward.

The organ in our chapel is played by a blind youth, whose infirmity has



excited the compassion of our boys; one of them said, "I would gladly give ~~two~~ two of my fingers to get him back his two eyes."\*

Some persons, though approving in many respects the system pursued ~~at~~ at Mettray, have not concealed from us their opinion that we employ too large ~~a~~ a staff of officers.

Doubtless they would be right if ours were simply an industrial institution ~~and~~, and our object were solely to instruct each lad in some trade.

In a factory a single superintendent may overlook fifty pupils in a workshop ~~shop~~. But morality can not be taught like a trade, and very different care and treatment are required to reform the character of a child from what will suffice ~~to~~ to train his fingers.

Without referring to the difficulty of superintendence in the case of field work ~~work~~ and farming operations, where the laborers are necessarily much dispersed ~~to~~, to replace evil by good aspirations is a task which can never be accomplished ~~but~~ but by often repeated efforts, and the employment of, we might almost say ~~a~~, a superintendent to each individual child we have to watch over. \* \* \*

Although in our choice of occupation for them we always consider the natural tastes of our young laborers, we do not thereby escape requests for permission to change from one to another; but this arises from the natural tendency which exists in the child, and in the man too, to imagine that the worst of all positions is the one he happens to occupy.

We have, therefore, made it a rule that, before such permission can be granted, the applicant must have risen to be one of the three highest lads in the workshop where he was first placed, and that his name shall be found on the Tablet of Honor. Thus, not being discouraged by a decided refusal, and feeling that compliance with his wish is only delayed, he returns to work with redoubled energy, and soon attains the rank which had been made the condition of change. But having by this time overcome the more important difficulties of his trade, and pleased with his success, gratified, too, by the little reward granted in such cases, and with the praise he receives, he becomes the most desirous of all concerned to persevere in the calling from which he has already reaped so many advantages.

Thus we overcome in our lads that love of change which induces men to take up one vocation after another, and often renders them incompetent to succeed in any one; and it is the more important to do this, because our boys seldom stay more than three years with us, a period absolutely necessary for acquiring any trade.

The Tablet of Honor continued to present very encouraging results.

Out of more than three hundred colons, several of whom had arrived so recently that it was impossible for them to have yet attained the distinction, the names of 133 were there inscribed, and it is further mentioned that during the last three months of 1843, only nine names were erased out of 104—erasure, be it remembered, following immediately on any breach of rules.

Four colons died in 1843.

Among the lads we have lost by death, there was one whose last moments were deeply touching, and produced a great impression on his companions. This was Bassière, aged 16, whose conduct had been irreproachable ever since he came among us. Elected an Elder Brother by his family circle, he discharged the duties of his office with zeal, firmness and entire self-devotion. There never was a calmer death-bed than his; his countenance wore a smile, and as his end approached the expression of his features was that of the most

\* News that a fire had burst forth in a factory near us arrived one day, and in seven minutes and a half our lads had started at full speed for the scene of the disaster, with their fire engine and all the necessary apparatus.

We were already half way there when we were informed that the fire had been got under. Though rejoiced that the evil had been put an end to, the boys were sadly disappointed in losing this opportunity for attesting their courage, and it is impossible to express the mortification and regret evinced by those of our colons who were under punishment at the time, and who, in accordance with our rules, were not permitted the gratification of risking their lives in the endeavor to serve their fellow creatures.

serenity; he spoke of a future life with earnest piety, and telling them that he besought his brother colons to be obedient and grateful to their superiors, who endeavored so sincerely to make them happy. He asked to die in the arms of M. de Courteilles, whom he called his father.

Of the 90 lads who had already quitted the colony, 79 were irreproachable in conduct, and four only had fallen again into the hands of the law; one of them being the poor lad T——, of whom we heard in a report, whose desire to help his mother, induced him to give up his situation at Tours, and return to his native place where the difficulties and temptations he encountered caused his ruin.

The 79, one who had entered a Zouave regiment with two others, was their guide and support, and by his good advice preserved from going astray. Another, named Blay, had been placed as *maitre* at a small reformatory school in Bretagne, whence the *per* wrote that he was exceedingly pleased with him, and was anxious to thank the Directors of Mettray sufficiently for having sent him so excellent an officer.

Another, named Boscher, had been placed in a situation in la Sologne, where he soon acquired his employer's confidence, and became his farm

to Paris to fetch a sum of 4,000 francs, (£400,) Boscher discharged his mission not only faithfully but prudently, for having heard of the temptations a stay there would afford, he resisted the wish to see something of the *colis*, and remaining only long enough to fulfill his errand, he brought the money safely to his master. Being afterward trusted to sell some cattle, he made an excellent bargain, and received 300 francs as their price. But Boscher's prudence failed him this time; he allowed himself to be tempted into a drink by one of the purchasers, and very little accustomed to wine he soon became completely intoxicated. Meanwhile the village clock had struck ten, and Boscher was not returned; he was anxiously watched for; toward eleven the rattling of a cart was heard; Boscher was come home, but he was dead.

He was searched, but no money appeared, and it was in vain they asked him what had become of it. The next day his master, who was resolved to discipline him, questioned him again, but he could recollect nothing of what had happened. Another servant, however, who had been desired to use the cart which Boscher had taken the day before, found some pieces of money among the straw, where on carefully searching further, and by an extraordinary and happy chance, the whole sum was discovered, not a single coin being missing. Great was the delight of the poor lad, to whom, however, his master thought it right to speak very severely. His fault was a source of deep regret, and he redoubled his efforts to atone for it. We have since heard that at the same time past he has again enjoyed his master's entire confidence, and has since done anything to forfeit it.

It may be felt that the names of those who have been at the colony, and have afterward done well, should be so freely mentioned, so that any persons may imagine that the loss said of such antecedents matters little, if the ex-colon is to succeed in life. Far, however, from the circumstance of his having been at Mettray militating against him, it is entirely an advantage to him to have it known. Thus,

Comte d'Ornano, commandant of the 9th military division, being present when our lads were passing under review, and observing in the ranks a former convict who then wore the uniform of an hussar, he kindly said to him, "Those who have been at Mettray shall be reckoned in your favor."

It has already been determined among the colons that the first who should be able to set up a shop should put over his door as his sign, [which are still much used in France,] "The Colon from Mettray;" and it was expected, when the report for 1844 was published, that Hermerel, a very steady lad, who was establishing a small trade as a tailor, would gain this envied distinction. When he had completed his apprenticeship, the curate of a village near Mettray, having heard him chant in the chapel there, wished him to settle in his parish, promising to become his patron. So good an offer was not to be rejected, and as there was no tailor in the neighborhood, and consequently Hermerel could not obtain work as a journeyman, the Directors of the colony hired a little room for him, and advanced a small sum with which to purchase what was absolutely necessary to enable him to take in work on his own account. The youth used to bring his village friends on Sundays to Mettray, and show them all over the colony, explaining its details with expressions of the most intense pleasure and gratitude.

The colony was deprived this year by death of its munificent benefactor, Count Leon d'Ourches, and the *Société Paternelle* caused his bust in bronze to be placed in the institution in a position where the lads could see it.

In the next report, (dated June, 1845,) we find the first mention of a former colon receiving a ring in virtue of which he becomes one of a little society, formed in 1842, of which all the officers of the institution, from the Directors downward, are members. The ring, (we have seen one,) is of silver, and is inscribed with appropriate emblems and mottoes. It is presented to every youth who desires to receive it, two years after his departure from the colony, provided his conduct has been irreproachable, and is accompanied by a certificate of membership, which the owner often has framed and glazed, and hung up as the chief ornament of his little dwelling. The object and effect of the society is to unite in a friendly bond those, formerly colons, who are living in respectability, and to cement the tie which yet connects them with the colony.

The colons who have settled at a distance from Mettray gladly correspond with us and with their former companions, to whom they frequently send excellent advice. This brotherly counsel, coming from those already gone out into the world, verifies and adds force to our warnings to those who remain behind. "Listen to what the Directors say," wrote one of them; "you hear the truth at the colony; but you only understand what you have lost, when you have left, and then you find how hard it is to gain your living."

We punctually answer all the letters we receive from our former colons, so that every addition to our number, imposes on us a double task. In the first place, we have to subdue and reclaim them when newly arrived, and secondly, to maintain a constant intercourse with them after they have departed. This latter duty continually increases, for it is not simple supervision that we exercise, but rather the unceasing watchfulness of a parent over his adopted child. Fortunately all our colons do not go to a distance; the greater number remain in our vicinity, and live as we may say under our eye, and within sight of the steeple of the little settlement, which has become a home to them. \* \* It is a source of pride to us to meet on every road round about Mettray, carts driven by lads who have been with us, whose good conduct affords a powerful stimulus to their former comrades. Many habitually spend their Sundays at the colony, where they mix with their school-fellows, join them in their

occupations, eat at the same table, and kneel before the same altar, the only difference between them is in their dress. \* \* Every meeting tends to mutual encouragement, and the good example which each affords to the other, seems to impose by tacit consent an obligation to conduct themselves well. Some of our lads are already earning 200 francs, (£8,) a year, as farm servants, [in addition of course to board and lodging,] and the advantages which these enjoy create a little useful emulation among the rest.

Mettray, containing as it does lads from fifty-two departments, offers many points of interest to the psychologist. During five years of experience and observation we have become convinced of the strong influence which his birth-place exercises on man, and how completely he is a type of its characteristics. The Breton is obstinate, persevering, religious and devout; he is best suited for field labor. The Norman and Alsacian are peculiarly adapted to take care of animals. We have received eighty-four Parisians at the colony, in whom we have observed an absence of premeditated wrong-doing, and an abundance of intelligence and vivacity, accompanied, however, by a want of discipline and an amount of levity, which yielded only to the firmest rule and severest means of correction; by addressing ourselves, however, to their understanding, we have never failed to produce an impression, and have in the end subdued them, by attaching them to us. One of them said to his *chef de famille*, "I could very well get away from the colony; nothing would be easier; and I have often wished to try, but thinking of the confidence our Directors put in us I could never find it in my heart to do it."

It was found necessary this year to sow a much greater breadth of land than before with corn, and it was accordingly determined to rent an additional tract. At the same time M. Augustin was engaged as Agricultural Superintendent, of whose skillful management and its important results we shall hear shortly.

Sheds, store-rooms, granary, carthouses, a building for storing agricultural implements and one for flour, stables, a dairy, a kitchen for the use of the carters, and for cooking food for the live stock, had been added to the colony during the past year, while in the course of the next it was hoped that various other farm buildings, including sheep-pens and cow-houses, would be completed.

As had happened on former occasions, a member of the government honored the annual meeting of the *Société Paternelle*, (held in May, 1846,) with his presence.

It was M. de Salvandy, Minister of Public Instruction, who presided this year. He delivered an eloquent address in which, after describing the position and duties of an ordinary teacher, he proceeded to speak of Mettray:

You, gentlemen, have set yourselves a more difficult and even a nobler task; you take under your care the corrupted child, who has plunged into vice, and from vice into crime, whose mental and moral being alike must be reformed; whose misled and depraved soul would become more and more deeply steeped in iniquity if you did not intervene to save him from himself, and to save society from his precocious wickedness.

This task you have undertaken—and more than undertaken, you have succeeded in it. You have proved that virtue is inherent in the human breast; that the good seed planted there by the hand of God, may always be found by man if only he truly endeavor to seek and to foster it; that there is no insurmountable barrier in the path from crime to virtue; that the fallen being whose evil course saddens the beholder, and terrifies society, is our fellow creature still; that we may yet discover in him the man whom God has made, and who is capable of loving and serving Him.

Thus Mettray has a character of its own, distinct among all the undertakings

of public benevolence, among all the valuable institutions which are one of the glories of our age; for, gentlemen, this age, though we sometimes greatly depreciate it, is not only rendered great by all its creations of art, by all its marvels of industry, which force back the limits put to man's powers, which in every sense enlarge our universe, and double the time that hitherto Providence had allotted us; it will be prized in time to come, for the spirit of devotion in man to man, for the endeavor to ameliorate the lot of those who are themselves unequal to the task, by them whom Providence has placed in happier circumstances; finally, for all these institutions both beneficent and useful which meet our eyes on every side. \* \* \*

Unconsciously, gentlemen, I have related your own history; I have traced out the course taken by the *Société Paternelle*, indicating the good it has effected, and what has been accomplished by the admirable institution at Mettray.

What spectacle could be more striking than that afforded by the distinguished men who surround me laboring together in this good work—men who have grown old in the great affairs of France, and who now devote the experience gained at the head of the state to an agricultural penitentiary which seeks unobtrusively to reform criminals.

But, in descending to undertake that charge, they are far from lowering themselves; on the contrary, they are raised in the estimation of others, and in their own, for they have undertaken a task at once the noblest and the most difficult—to restore children to society, citizens to the state, souls to God.

By whom was Mettray founded? By that magistrate who, after having from the seat of justice visited the culprit with chastisement, sought him and never quitted him till purified by repentance. By whom besides? By that distinguished man, by that soldier, illustrious as are all who bear his name, who having by choice spent his life in profound seclusion, has now surrounded it, involuntarily, and without seeking to do so, with a brilliant halo; in performing a good and holy work he sought, by a path which he believed to be unseen and unknown, the satisfaction of his own conscience, but he found glory, the purest of all glory, that which crowns the benefactor of mankind.

Let me indulge a personal reminiscence. The founder of Mettray and I were school-fellows. We met again beneath our country's flag. Since then thirty years have passed away—what years they have been you well know. During these thirty years we have never met; our paths in life have been different in all respects, and we remained wholly unknown to each other; his course was voluntarily a hidden one, mine was involuntarily patent and stirring; and here by chance to-day, if such things can be said to happen by chance, we have unexpectedly met to promote the interests of Mettray, which we shall each have aided, he by the devotion of his life, I simply by appearing amongst you for a moment. For even thus do I aid it, but because it is not I merely who am here—it is the state, it is popular power, it is royal authority, which, alike beneficent and watchful, I have the honor to represent before you, and in whose name I express sympathy and respect toward the good work in which you are engaged.

Just before leaving the meeting he again addressed it in the following terms:—

I am astonished to find that the Minister of Public Instruction, who must be deeply interested in the moral results obtained at Mettray, should contribute less than any other department of government to this undertaking. I now raise the aid afforded annually by the office of Public Instruction to the amount granted by the Ministers of Agriculture and of Commerce, namely, 12,000 francs, (£480,) or 7,000 francs more, yearly, to spend on your noble enterprise.

I beg pardon for thus disarranging the accounts of your able financier, M. Gouin, who, after being Chancellor of the Exchequer for France, has undertaken the same honorable post at Mettray, devoting himself to it with unwearied zeal.

The more extended agricultural operations entered into the preceding year are described by M. de Gasparin in a speech which, as relating to a development of one branch of the economy of the institution so important



in its results that it may claim to be regarded as the commencement of a new era in the history of the colony, we feel ourselves justified in quoting at length :

In calling the institution, which it had founded at Mettray, an agricultural colony, the *Société Paternelle* incurred a very serious obligation toward the public. It found it no easy task to organize a large school of agriculture from the elements there collected. What was its staff? Some very young, feeble and sickly children, who had been intrusted to it for far too short a time. What was its field of operations? It had only 12 hectares, [30 acres,] of land, including that upon which the buildings stood. What was its agricultural capital? Its resources were barely sufficient for its wants, and all extraordinary receipts had been already employed, or were tied up for years to come, in order to erect the buildings necessary to the undertaking. It was in this state of things that the Society, feeling how much its future welfare depended on the fulfillment of its obligations, and how important it was to hasten the full performance of its promises, undertook to bestow upon the country a real farm school.

Thus was realized the title it had assumed—thus will the children committed to its care be put in a respectable position in life, one favorable to their health and to their morals, one which will withdraw them from the temptations of our large towns, which will save them from relapsing into crime, and will ensure them constant employment.

To put this plan in execution the Society took upon a long lease a tract of about 203 hectares, [500 acres,] of tolerably good land at a rent of 11,560 francs, [£466, 8s.] This land bordered the colony on one side, and there were standing upon it two farm buildings, in which two families of colons were placed, who are thus located at the extreme end of our territory.

This step happily accomplished, there remained another and far more difficult one to be taken—that of finding a skillful agricultural superintendent who should save us from those mistakes which inexperience can never avoid, whatever be the enterprise embarked in.

We fixed upon M. Augustin, who was already known by his success in other similar undertakings, and who has justified our most sanguine expectations. He has evinced in the course of this year a perfect knowledge of his profession, the power of seeing at a glance what is right to be done, and an amount of resolution without which all other qualities are useless.

The shoal upon which agricultural undertakings are most often wrecked is the insufficiency of capital expended in cultivation; much more is thought of acquiring a vast extent of land than of retaining the funds which will be necessary to make it fruitful. We took care not to fall into this error, and knew well the large sum which we must have at our command if we would not drag on for many years in an inferior position, which would have compromised the institution, and thrown discredit upon agricultural pursuits in the eyes of our lads and of our neighbors, who were very attentively watching for the result of our scheme with no lack of unfavorable predictions respecting it.

Our calculations, founded on circumstances analogous to our own, proved that we should need an amount of capital, in cattle, revenue, or else in labor, equivalent to 180 francs, (£7, 4s. 0d.,) per hectare, or about 36,000 francs, (£1,440,) and the same value in labor and manure, besides implements, with which fortunately we were already tolerably well supplied. A sum, however, of 60,000 francs, (£2,400,) we needed to have at our disposal immediately in order to begin our agricultural operations.

This amount we obtained, thanks to the credit granted us by our excellent colleague, M. Gouin. One-half is secured upon our live stock, the value of which has increased and continues to increase daily; the other, namely, the cost of cultivation, is provided for by the harvest we have gathered. The appearance of the crops in the month of April, when M. Augustin entered upon his duties, was far from promising any such result; on the contrary, indeed it seemed then as though it would scarcely repay the expenses of cultivation.

His knowledge and resolution, however, soon altered this state of things. Perceiving the deplorable condition of the seed-corn, he forthwith purchased some stable manure in Tours with which he covered it, proceeding at the same

time to sow clover upon the wheat. Its condition changed rapidly, and it yielded a magnificent harvest amounting in value to more than 40,000 francs, (£1,600.) Meanwhile all the fallow ground had been prepared and sown with various crops, potatoes, beet root, carrots and rutabagas, which enabled us to feed 78 cows from this land which hitherto had been unproductive. In the ordinary course of affairs, with a less skillful superintendent, this improvement would have been delayed a year at least.

We might give you details of the agricultural results obtained at Mettray this year, but we have thought it better to reserve them till next season, when our position disembarassed from the peculiar circumstances incident to the first year of such an enterprise, may be clearly and simply set forth in such a manner as to justify the highest expectations from the ability of our overseer, and the zealous care of those in authority. But the result already gained is somewhat remarkable. To have got such crops from the very first year, after paying rent, repairing the mistakes of the former tenant, and bringing the land into excellent condition,—to close our accounts with a clear profit, and from badly sown impoverished land, coming into it when the young corn was in a deplorable state, to have obtained a harvest worth, at a rough calculation, 67,000 francs, from land paying 11,560 francs rent, is, I venture to say, a feat of which it would be difficult to find another example.

An early passage in the report for 1849 demonstrates the firm root the institution had taken. It was no longer an experiment—it was a success.

At our early meetings, when the colony was still in its cradle, and was yet scarcely understood; when its object was hardly comprehended by the public, and the expediency of our course might appear doubtful, it was the duty of the Directors to enter into full details, and to answer objections raised by persons of weight and reflection; it was their duty to overcome the injurious prejudice of those who recognized our lads only as culprits condemned by the law, whose reformation appeared chimerical; thank God success has crowned our efforts, your labor is appreciated, and it is now well known that youths at Mettray come there to receive moral training, and not to undergo punishment.

Your example has not been barren; generous hearts have been filled with a noble emulation, and numerous colonies, the offspring of yours, have been founded in several departments; we may unhesitatingly affirm that your cause is now established, and that agricultural colonies have taken their place among the charitable institutions of our country.

It is with lively satisfaction that we assure you of the continued and increasing prosperity of Mettray.

We began with ten boys, our roof now shelters four hundred and twelve; notwithstanding this important increase in the number of our colons, order and regularity have been maintained, and the discipline is unrelaxed. To obtain such results we have had to redouble our care and vigilance; but we have been admirably seconded by our officers, to whose worth we rejoice to have this opportunity of bearing public testimony.

Our system of discipline is maintained by severe penalties and by rewards, which we endeavor to render valuable in the eyes of our lads.

In the course of the present year, we have had recourse to a mode of correction which we trust will be approved by you. Certain cases have arisen in which it appeared to us domestic correction would be insufficient; we desired that our wards should become early aware of the severity they might encounter in that world which they must enter on leaving us, and thus imbibe a salutary dread of its just punishments. Thus, a theft having been committed by one of the colons, we thought it best, upon the above considerations, not to employ our ordinary means of correction; we informed a magistrate of the circumstance, and a policeman was sent who arrested the culprit in the midst of his comrades, just as would have been the case with a dishonest laborer at work on a farm. The accused was forthwith tried in the Court of Justice at Tours, and his sentence was read aloud to his assembled companions.

This display of public authority, and the natural operation of the law produced a deep impression, and by means of intimidation has had an excellent effect.



But we are desirous to add, that side by side with this inexorable severity, without which obedience could not be enforced among a youthful and restless population such as ours, we neglect no opportunity for encouraging those who respond to our efforts to benefit them, never forgetting that to punish effectively we must also reward at the right time.

After analyzing the conduct of the youths who had already left the colony, of whom the number of relapses was in 1846 only between six and seven per cent., the report continues: —

This proportion certainly need not discourage us, and yet we can confidently affirm that it would be far less if the lads remained longer at Mettray; often the period of liberation arrives after a stay of only two or three years, and sometimes we have been obliged to discharge children of scarcely twelve years of age. In this there is a double evil which we would point out to the attention of magistrates; time has not been allowed to complete our course of training, and the lads are too young to resist the bad examples and pernicious influences to which they are about to be exposed, often even in the bosom of their own families. \* \* \*

On Christmas day, as our lads were coming away from evening service, a man out of breath rushed among us crying, "They have set fire to Gaudières!" (one of the outlying farms of our institution.) In seven minutes the engines and our lads were ready to start, and all hastened to the scene of the misfortune under the guidance of M. Hubert, a gentleman who gave up an appointment in the Fire Brigade at Paris in order to come to Mettray. Thanks to his admirable direction the efforts of the young firemen and of all who assembled to give their help, were crowned with speedy success; in two hours the fire was extinguished without causing more injury than the loss of three thousand trusses of straw; the buildings and their contents being moreover insured.

We have a pleasant duty to discharge in recording the praiseworthy conduct of M. Hubert, who had already on another occasion saved at the peril of his own life those of two workmen who had fallen down insensible at the bottom of a well which we were having cleaned. Such actions do not seek the reward of praise, but we deemed that in telling you of our lads, we ought also to say a few words respecting the right-hearted and devoted men who second us so well in the difficult task we have undertaken, and who understand how thus to enforce their lessons with the irresistible power of example.

The fire of the 25th of December appears not to be attributable to ill-will. From the evidence elicited by the judicial inquest it seems that it was kindled by a little girl whom epilepsy had reduced to a state of idiotcy. She has been arrested, and it is for the judge to decide whether she acted knowingly, (*avec discernement*.)

This occurrence has obliged us to take increased means of precaution.

Until it happened, one person only remained during the night in charge of the outlying farms, the boys going thither in the morning and returning in the evening; we have since decided that henceforth forty boys shall remain there always, living and sleeping at the separate farms. This, which is now simply a prudential measure, may eventually lead to the happiest consequences as regards the multiplication of agricultural colonies in France.

In the outlying farms which are members of Mettray, our system is seen on a limited scale, which easily admits of imitation, and visitors may be convinced by their own eyes that an agricultural colony can exist with a very small number of colons, and yet confer immense benefit upon agriculture.

The time devoted to intellectual instruction had been lessened to ten hours per week, and was afterward further reduced to eight.

Side by side with religious teaching and elementary instruction we place industrial education. We desire that on leaving Mettray our lads should be able, without undergoing the laborious life of an apprentice, under often a very harsh master, to support themselves, and to earn what are usually considered good wages. Two-thirds of the colons are employed in agriculture, the rest are occupied in our workshops, in trades connected with agriculture, or which are required to supply the colony.

M Augustin, the director of our agricultural department, gives lectures on agriculture, and then setting his class to work on the land, he is able to simplify the difficulties of theory by reducing them to practice. M. Jules Petelard, formerly head Veterinary Surgeon in the 8th Regiment of Hussars, and member of the *Indre-et-Loire* Agricultural Society, gives another course of lectures on the constitutions and treatment of domestic animals; these important lessons are listened to by our children with a fixed attention very unusual at their age, proving how true it is that if they are to love their labor, it must interest their understandings.

Our lads are occupied as follows:—

Agricultural laborers, .....	276
Gardeners, .....	31
Wheelwrights, .....	18
Blacksmiths, .....	12
Farriers, .....	10
Makers of Wooden Shoes, .....	14
Carpenters, .....	12
Tailors, .....	18
Shoemakers, .....	12
Masons, .....	6
Sailmakers, .....	3
	—
	412

Perhaps we should offer some explanation regarding the above table. Why, it may be asked, have sailmakers in an agricultural institution? We offer one word on this point. All our colons sleep in hammocks, and we require work-people among us, who can provide and repair this sort of bedding. Further, it must not be forgotten, that we have at Mettray a large number of lads from the coast of Bretagne, who have already made coasting voyages, and are irresistibly attracted by a sea-faring life. One of our masters, who was formerly the mate of a vessel, teaches them the manœuvres of a ship,\* and gives them useful instruction in a sailor's vocation, which seems to be by nature theirs.

The number of lads who had now been placed out in the world amounted to 197, of whom twelve only had relapsed into crime. Of the remainder the conduct of 173 was irreproachable; perhaps the following particulars respecting some of them may not be found uninteresting:—

Among those who have profited by our efforts in their behalf, we can not resist the pleasure of mentioning G——, who after being one of our best colons, is now serving in the 8th Regiment of Hussars. He is a good soldier, and has won the approbation of his superior officers. His comrades, far from reproaching him with having been at our institution, call him among themselves and as a term of endearment, "*Little Mettray*."

Thus, in the army, the name of the colony has in some degree become his; let us hope that Mettray will have brought happiness to him, and that he will do honor to Mettray.

We will also recall M—— to your kindly remembrance. M. Marion, Vice-President of the tribunal at Nantes, who has undertaken the patronage of this lad, writes us that M—— makes the best use of his wages, and devotes a portion to the relief of his father, although the latter has not always recognized the duties which this relationship imposed. "This feeling of filial piety," (adds M. Marion,) "which shows itself, notwithstanding the faults of the parent, is too generous and too rare among us to pass unnoticed."

You will not learn without interest that six of the colons from Mettray have married. One of these young heads of a family called B——, now a farmer near Loudun, came with his wife to see us, and their visit produced a very marked and touching effect upon his former companions. O—— is married at Nantes; he lives near his mother, and is her comfort and support. M. Marion

\* In the principal court of Mettray are fixed the bulwarks, masts, tackle, &c., of a large ship, the gift of the Minister of Marine, upon which the boys, who are likely to become sailors, are exercised in nautical duties.

wrote again to us lately, and speaking of C—— says, "This little household is admirably conducted."

This year, as in former ones, the *Conseils Generaux*, the *Cours Royales* and various corporate bodies, indeed all who had before given aid to Mettray, have continued their support.

We desire particularly to acknowledge the generous assistance accorded to us by M. Delalleau, Rector of the Academy at Poitiers. This distinguished man is well aware of the touching and purifying nature of assistance rendered by the young whom fate has gifted with wealth and happiness, to the wretched of their own age; he believes that to inculcate charity among the youth in our schools is a holy and salutary lesson—not that charity whose efforts are limited to alleviating individual suffering, but rather that enlightened and foreseeing charity, which, like Providence, considers the future as well as the present, and which turns every opportunity of diminishing misery into a means both of relieving those immediately afflicted, and of securing the well-being of society in time to come. M. Delalleau did not over-estimate the kindly feeling of the different masters in the college when he besought their zealous coöperation, and the pupils, responding to the appeal of their preceptors, sent to Mettray the money which had been given them to spend as they pleased. A similar example has been afforded by the schools of medicine and of law at Poitiers, the colleges at Amiens, Limoges, Orleans, Poitiers, Pont-Levoy and Tours; by the Ecole Neopédique at Paris, conducted by M. Louis Leclerc, and by the Loubens Institute. Besides these the municipal college of Rollin has lately enrolled itself among our founders. The Director of the latter college considered it his duty to pay a visit to Mettray in the course of his vacation. His approbation of our system of instruction, and his expression of sympathy, when fully acquainted with our labors, are deeply gratifying, and we gladly take this opportunity of assuring him of our lively sense of his kindness.

The above information gives valuable proof of the increasing interest in Mettray, which, as we have gathered from former reports, was gradually spreading among all classes of society in France.

"Gentlemen," said M. Hebert, Minister of Justice and of Worship, in the course of a most eloquent address delivered at the eighth annual meeting of the *Société Paternelle*; "you have recognized the fact that the same labor which renders the earth fruitful, purifies and strengthens the human heart. Our country's soil inspires a love for it in those who cultivate as much as in those who defend it; and in the midst of the fertile plains of Touraine, in that model farm which has arisen and now prospers under the hands of the reclaimed outcast, your young laborers do not learn only how to drive the plough, they learn how in becoming more useful, to become also more worthy members of society."

The sympathy and approbation of one high in power could never have been more acceptable, judging by the opening passage of the report by the Directors:—

Since the foundation of the colony, we have never yet passed so difficult a year as that which has just elapsed, and never have we had greater need of your counsel, your confidence, and your support.

Our internal management has encountered many difficulties, our financial estimates have been unavoidably exceeded, our institution has been threatened from without; nevertheless, we have passed through this anxious period better than could have been hoped, and that Mettray should have remained unshaken is proof that it is based on solid foundations.

The department of Indre-et-Loire, has, as you are aware, been the scene of disturbances, and the colony ran some risk, owing to the excitement which had seized upon the inhabitants of the villages round about Tours, from which we are not far distant. Hunger, caused by the dearness of bread, and evil passions roused with sinister design, incited men, who are ordinarily among the most peaceful, to riot and pillage. The agitators had cast their eyes on the colony, and had laid a plan to entrap our officers, whose uniform they would have rejoiced to see among them; numerous and threatening mobs, came to our very door, but they never crossed our threshold.

We will not detain you longer by detailing events which happily are now past; but we must not omit to inform you that in the midst of the excitement which encompassed us, and of the sounds and threats which reached our ears, our youths justified our good opinion and deserved our confidence, by the calm attitude they preserved, by redoubled order and diligence, and by proofs of devotion and subordination, which contrasted forcibly with the disorder without, and demonstrated, in the most striking manner, the inestimable value of judicious training and firm discipline.

We have yet further evidence to offer to you. Fire, which during the last two years has done great damage in this district, at last attacked the church of the village of Mettray; as it was, it suffered to the amount of 10,000 francs, (£400;) not a stone, however, would have been left, but for the two fire-engines from the colony, and the united aid of our colons and the neighbors.

Our young firemen, under the direction of their chief, M. Hubert, gave on this occasion ample proof of their zeal and courage.

The Directors record that many distinguished fellow-countrymen came in the course of this year to inspect the colony, which was also attracting much attention abroad; Mr. Gladstone visited it at that period, and gave convincing proof, on his return to England, of his high appreciation of its excellence, by aiding with his time and fortune in the establishment of the Philanthropic Farm School at Red Hill, which more nearly resembles Mettray than any other reformatory institution in England. The report also states that

Lord Brougham has discussed this year in the House of Lords, with all his extraordinary eloquence, the juvenile delinquent question, which he regards as one of the gravest his country has to deal with.

"To show the effects of these experiments, [in reformatory treatment,] he would take the French institution at Mettray as affording more details. \* \* Besides this one there had been twelve others of a similar character established in France, which were founded in consequence of the great success that attended the original institution. He avowed that, if he were animated with feelings of rivalry toward France, if he were animated by those national feelings of rivalry which pervaded the bosoms of Englishmen—those national feelings would lead him more to envy the French people for the erection and usefulness of such institutions, than for any glory they might have derived from their Algerian colonies, from their Spanish marriages, or even for all that redounded to the glory of Napoleon. He envied them for what they had, and which this country wanted—those noble and useful institutions. \* \*

"Let us rather rival their noble and generous nature by imitating them in the erection of twelve establishments similar to Mettray, and thus taking the first step toward the amendment of our criminal law, which would be the first real attempt that had ever been made since we had a criminal law."

Referring to the evils of short imprisonments the report continues:—

In a word, every youthful offender who is thus thrown prematurely upon the world, finds himself under precisely the same conditions which caused his fall, and which can scarcely fail to plunge him again into beggary and crime. We have omitted no opportunity during the past eight years of pointing out this miserable and injurious operation of the penal code, and of urging the Minister of Justice, and the members of both Chambers, to introduce an amendment more in accordance with the spirit of this article; it should be framed to provide for the education in an appropriate institution until they have attained their twentieth year, of all children committed under the age of 16, and detained by virtue of article 66.

Another subject which we find dwelt on again and again, and to which, as we have already had occasion to see, the Directors attribute a large share of the success they have attained, is the elaborate and efficient system of patronage by which they exercise a kindly surveillance over

all the youths who leave the colony. As it would be impossible for the Directors of Mettray to perform this duty personally, they obtain the assistance of benevolently disposed individuals, (of whom an abundance are always to be found,) residing in the various neighborhoods where the colons are placed in service. These persons are denominated patrons, and as the duties of their office are at present but imperfectly understood in this kingdom, and as we are convinced that a system similar to that which is so efficient in France, is equally essential here to the successful operation of reformatory schools, we shall venture to give a passage, though of considerable length, which will explain the course pursued by our neighbors:—

We have already placed out 286 youths, (89 during the year 1846,) each under the care of a good patron, provided with a small sum of money, the fruit of his industry, with a suitable wardrobe, and having a trade in his hands in which we aid him to find employment; thus a lad when he leaves Mettray begins a new life; he has been saved from himself, to use the words of M. Agénor de Gasparin.

He is as much sought after by the farmers and the various employers of labor round about us, as the convict coming direct from prison is avoided and driven away from every workshop where he may offer himself. \* \*

The reformation of the neglected child and his good conduct after he has left us, being the object which the founders of Mettray had in view, permit us, gentlemen, to give you some details on those points, by reading extracts from our correspondence with the patrons of our lads.

M. Lefebvre, commissioner of police at Beaumont-Sur-Oise, writes us:—

"I am exceedingly pleased to inform you that the time passed by G—— at the colony at Mettray has been most beneficial to him, and I consider him now as a pattern to lads of his age; I shall do my utmost to keep him in the situation where you placed him."

The Mayor of Beurlay writes, "My surprise at the change I found in Auguste D——, has been very great; he has become civil, attentive and modest; indeed I did not recognize him until his name was mentioned."

M. Marion, Vice-President of the *Tribunal Civil* at Nantes, who for a long time past has kindly undertaken the patronage of all our lads there, says, "I can speak only in terms of praise of the Mettray lads, who, since their liberation, have resided in this town; not one of them has relapsed into crime.

"I was a little uneasy about the two T——'s, in consequence of the masons here having struck, but they had no inclination to join their riotous meetings.

"I beg to draw your kind attention to C—— and his family; his conduct deserves your sympathy. Under the above-mentioned circumstances he has displayed honesty of purpose, right feeling and courage which are above praise. He would be glad to have a view of Mettray," &c., &c.

I should gladly quote the whole of M. Marion's letter, which is full of touching details, but it is too long for the limits of our report.

M. Daguin, Secretary-General to the Prefecture of the Jura, informs us that B——, by working hard, is able to wholly support his aged grandmother, and that his conduct is excellent.

To conclude our quotations, and to satisfy you of the trustworthiness of the information we lay before you respecting the youths whom we have placed out, permit us to read to you at length the form which our kind correspondents are good enough to fill up. They are the chief magistrates and different authorities, and persons occupying the most respectable positions in the various localities, who generously take upon themselves this charge. This form was filled up by M. de la Pierre, a manufacturer, who wrote to us from Clamecy, on February 1st, 1847:

"Sir,—Being always desirous of complying with your wishes, I hasten to forward to you the statement of the conduct of J. V——, one of the numerous individuals rescued by your institution, which takes them from our prisons, and returns them to society corrected of all their faults.



"I am glad to have nothing but what is favorable to tell you of this young man. He fulfills every religious and social duty; he always regrets living so far from the colony, and being thus deprived of the pleasure of seeing his benefactors there.

"I have the honor to be," &c., &c.

This letter was accompanied by the following form:—

#### QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS.

- Ques.* Christian and surname of the colon? *Ans.* J. V.  
*Ques.* Name and residence of the patron? *Ans.* M. de la Pierre, manufacturer at Clamecy  
*Ques.* Does he perform his religious duties? *Ans.* Invariably.  
*Ques.* Does he repeat his prayers morning and evening? *Ans.* Regularly.  
*Ques.* Does he go to church? *Ans.* Regularly.  
*Ques.* Is he diligent? *Ans.* Yes.  
*Ques.* Does he show intelligence? *Ans.* Rather good will than intelligence  
*Ques.* Is he obedient? *Ans.* Nothing to find fault with on this head.  
*Ques.* Is he civil? *Ans.* Always.  
*Ques.* Is he careful of his personal appearance? *Ans.* No.  
*Ques.* Is he economical? *Ans.* Yes.  
*Ques.* What different occupations has he been employed in? *Ans.* Until now he has been employed only in field labor; but his father, notwithstanding ill health, being obliged to work at his trade as a carpenter, in order to support his five children, now employs him to work with him, he being himself very weak.  
*Ques.* Does he occupy himself sometimes in reading and writing? *Ans.* Yes.  
*Ques.* What books does he read? *Ans.* Religious, moral and instructive works.  
*Ques.* Does he attend an adult school? *Ans.* He has neither time nor opportunity.  
*Ques.* What are his leading tastes? *Ans.* None that are evil.  
*Ques.* What are his most striking characteristics? *Ans.* Goodness of heart, obedience, gentleness and civility.  
*Ques.* Does he hear from his family? *Ans.* He is now living with them.  
*Ques.* How does he spend Sundays and fête days? *Ans.* At church, in walking, or with his father.  
*Ques.* Has he any friends or connections? *Ans.* None.  
*Ques.* What character do the persons bear with whom he associates? *Ans.* He associates only with his father, who is poor, but honest.  
*Ques.* What are his wishes for the future? *Ans.* To learn to work so as to help his father.  
*Ques.* Does he think of the colony? *Ans.* Constantly.  
*Ques.* Does he acknowledge the benefit he received there? *Ans.* Yes.  
*Ques.* In what manner does he speak of it? *Ans.* With the warmest gratitude.  
*Ques.* Has he been ill? *Ans.* No.  
*Ques.* What is the behavior and character of the people for whom he works? *Ans.* Before working with his father he was with very excellent people who employed him in field labor.  
*Ques.* Do they perform their religious duties? *Ans.* Yes.

#### *Particulars of his conduct whether good or bad.*

In consequence of a long and painful illness, his father had fallen into extreme destitution, which still continues. Accustomed to the use of tobacco, he had been obliged to forego it, his utmost means being needed to obtain food for his family, when on the first of January this lad having received a few sous as a new year's gift, hastened with them to his father, who, however, refused to accept them. Your former pupil went then himself to exchange his sous for some tobacco, which he brought to his father. The latter wept while relating, only yesterday, this kind act of his son.

The minute information thus obtained respecting every colon, (not one of the 286 who were now placed out had been lost sight of,) enables us to accept with perfect confidence the statistics relating to the numbers reformed, as it also goes far to account for those numbers being so large. With respect, however, to the relapses, it must be recollected that they do not, of course, include the boys who are sent back to prison. Of these we hear as follows:—

In 1846, the number of lads sent back to prison from the colony since its foundation, amounted to 34, including five during that year.

While acknowledging our failure in dealing with the deeply rooted depravity of those youths, and, moreover, the necessity we were under of inflicting upon them a punishment which should deter their companions from following their evil example, we have never lost sight of, or compassion for, those unhappy individuals; 16 of them are dead,—the first actually died of remorse. He

belonged to a noble family in Bretagne, whom poverty had reduced to the necessity of cultivating with their own hands their few remaining acres. "Remember," wrote one of his relatives to him, "your aged father sank his head upon his breast the day you brought disgrace upon us by appearing as a felon at the bar, and has never raised it since." A monomania for theft was this lad's ruin, and pursued him at Mettray, where he found means of stealing even in his cell.

As regards the others we have been gratified to learn, and often by correspondence with themselves, that their conduct in prison was generally better than that of their companions; many of them write to us expressing their contrition, and come to see us on their liberation. Some grains of the good seed took root even by the wayside, and bore fruit though tardily. Many of those lads have behaved well since their discharge from prison.

In the course of this year the colony sustained two sad losses from its staff of assistants, the first that had occurred since its foundation, in the death of one of the estimable sisters of charity, and of a sous chef—a youth of great promise.

Almost all the farm buildings, which we heard of in the preceding report as in progress or contemplated, were now completed, and a mill had been erected and was already at work.

Between the publication of the reports for 1847 and 1848, the political aspect of France had entirely changed. The Orleans family, which had always shown favor to Mettray, and most of whose members are inscribed as founders of the institution, had utterly vanished from the country, and it remained to be seen how far their successors in power would be willing and able to aid the good work.

Meanwhile, despite the shock which made itself felt from one end of France to the other, we learn that the position of the colony was tranquil and secure.

While keeping our wards, as it was our duty to do, free of all political influence, it is nevertheless right you should know they have not remained in ignorance of the important changes which have occurred, and that they are deeply interested by them. The eager curiosity of such restless and intelligent lads has never failed to follow closely the course of events, when indeed it has not been in advance of them.

We had no other means of preserving order among our colons, than by informing them calmly, but unreservedly, of what was taking place in Paris. Besides, many of them would certainly have learnt it from their relatives. The interest with which they received our communications proves, in the most convincing manner, how fully we have succeeded in kindling in their breasts a feeling of honor, together with a genuine love of their country and of home. The colony has become a home to them; they have attached themselves to us, as a son is attached to his father, and confidence in us and a sense of duty have kept them around us.

After relating to them the news, we always concluded by an appeal to their sense of gratitude, and by assuring them that under a republican government, the performance of our duties, readiness to work, and obedience to the law, should be the rule for all; that it was especially under such a government that each could and ought to stand alone, supported by his own ability and his own merit; that we should be the first to set this example to all; we, who in founding our institution, had taken for our motto, "Let good workmen trust in the future," (*aux bon travailleurs, l'avenir!*) "If order and respect for all that deserves respect, be banished from the rest of France," we said to them, "let it be on this spot of ground in an obscure village, that a wholesome example of them shall be afforded by a colony of lads, of whom all the world despaired." We can assure you, gentlemen, these words were heard and appreciated; we are convinced of this by the fact that not only has the strict and systematic order of our



customary discipline not been disturbed, but, on the contrary, the number of infractions has sensibly decreased since the Revolution of February.

This was indeed remarkable at a time when almost every public school, and even some private ones, were in revolt, and proving their national origin by throwing up barricades.

But though so far as it depended on the officers and the colons, the prosperity of Mettray was undisturbed by external agitation, it could not wholly escape being affected by the convulsion of February.

The distribution of our young laborers among the different workshops has undergone, since February, a most untoward change.

In consequence of a decree by the Provisional Government suppressing labor in prisons and in charitable institutions, we have been obliged almost entirely to close the workshops of our smiths, wheelwrights, sabot makers, joiners and rope makers, in other words those which are most profitable.

We still manufacture the articles we require for our own use, but external sale is strictly forbidden. This measure has had three injurious results.

1. It has obliged us to discontinue employing as apprentices, lads who had worked in that position a considerable time, an obligation equally disadvantageous to them and to us, for their labor had begun to be profitable to us, and on their side would have insured them good places when liberated.

The change too of occupation, and the being obliged to give up so suddenly and with so little reason a trade they were fond of, inspired, as may easily be supposed, discontent among even our best lads, and made them all the more indisposed to field labor.

2. Our workshops had been much enlarged, and we had fitted them up on a liberal scale; we had engaged excellent teachers whom we were obliged suddenly to dismiss; we had received large orders; in fact the ruinous prohibition against work has deprived us this year of 25,000 francs, (£1,000,) clear profit.

3. These losses are the more unfortunate for us that it will be difficult to replace them or provide better for the future.

At the time when every evil passion of the working classes was inflamed, and they were led astray by those who excited in them hatred and even vengeance toward any who seemed to be competitors, all our neighbors looked with fear upon us. Local ill-will, however, had no just foundation, for we had never sold our goods at less than the current price; on the contrary, we had from the first, invited the neighboring tradesmen to share the advantage of our manufactures by offering to consign to them wholesale, every description of article that they could sell retail, by which they would have gained twice as much profit as by their own goods, which, not being so well made nor so cheap, were not so much liked as ours.

Their mistaken opinions made our neighbors forget the good conferred upon the country for the last ten years by an institution which has spent more than a hundred thousand francs on the soil. \* \*

The government has recognized the difficulty of our position, and has granted its benevolent aid to the colony. We continue to receive the same daily allowance, and the subventions accorded by former administrations.

Among the combatants in the streets of Paris, which included persons of all ranks and of all opinions, Mettray was not unrepresented, but it was on the side of order that her children fought.

Permit us to return for a moment to the conduct of those of our lads who are now members of the *Garde nationale mobile*. They performed a gallant part in the lamentable days of June, but we should in particular mention Louis Francois Richard, who was born at Paris. He came to Mettray in 1843, and left the colony in 1845. His conduct while there was invariably good, and his name appears on the Tablet of honor. After his liberation he maintained himself honestly by his labor.

Having enlisted in the 8th Battalion of the *Garde mobile* when it was first organized, he distinguished himself even in that gallant band. He took part in the encounters of the Faubourg St. Antoine. After several barricoades had been

carried he rushed to the attack upon the last three which still blocked up the faubourg. Here he fell into the hands of the insurgents, who had planted on his, their last remaining stronghold, the flag of the 8th legion of the National Guard, which they had carried off from the council-house of the *arrondissement*. Richard freed himself from their hands by an immense effort, and then, with resistible courage, threw himself on this barricade in the midst of a murderous fire; there he recaptured the flag, and had the signal honor of restoring it to the hands of the National Guard, who were struggling to regain it. Conducted by them in triumph to the National Assembly, the *Moniteur* announces that he here received from President Sénart, his decoration as *Representant*, with the promise of that of the Legion of Honor.

All our lads who have become soldiers have behaved remarkably well. Priat, of whom we have spoken to you several times already, has obtained the rank of sergeant in the Zouave's regiment; three other colons are corporals in regiments of the line.

Frequent reference has been made in the passages we have quoted to the *Ecole Préparatoire*; and some particulars of that invaluable branch of the institution, which we find in the report for 1848, give too much useful information to be omitted.

The results already obtained by our *Ecole Préparatoire* deserve your attention.

- Of 155 pupils admitted,  
 17 are still at Mettray, where they fill the various offices of secretary, accountant, treasurer, schoolmaster, steward, labor-master, *chefs* and *sous-chefs* of families;  
 9 have left Mettray to become teachers;  
 15 have taken various situations, (in railway, insurance and commercial companies, &c., &c.);  
 10 have entered the army;  
 5 have become agricultural superintendents;  
 19 follow industrial occupations;  
 19 have left the colony from want of capacity;  
 1 is dead.

There are at present about eleven pupils in the school; several are trying to obtain a schoolmaster's certificate; others devote themselves more particularly to agriculture, both theoretical and practical.

All help as monitors in giving instruction to the colons, and thus commence their apprenticeship in the difficult art of guiding and reforming their erring fellow creatures.

At a time when the subject of agricultural colonies engage universal attention, our *Ecole Préparatoire* can not but acquire fresh importance, and demand increased care.

We can not forget that it is to this establishment that the success of Mettray is in great part owing. We can rely with confidence upon the success of agricultural colonies, only when they are conducted by practical and experienced men. The school, then, in which government can meet with such individuals, deserves to be considered eminently useful. Such, gentlemen, we trust, will be the case with our *Ecole Préparatoire*; such is the object we proposed to ourselves in establishing it, and to attain which our efforts have been unceasingly directed.

1849 found the finances of the colony seriously depressed by the prohibition to manufacture goods for sale. Meanwhile, expressions of sympathy and offers of pecuniary aid came from Holland and from England, and the colony received a visit from Louis Napoleon, then President of the Republic, accompanied by several of his ministers. They fully recognized the importance of the institution, but nevertheless the Directors had great reason to fear that the subventions which each successive government, since that of Louis Philippe, had continued to grant, might now be withdrawn. To avert this threatened ruin, they asked

for a committee to be appointed by the chamber of Representatives to visit Mettray and report upon it to government.

Happily their investigations resulted in the subventions being continued, but the loss of profit from the workshops remaining closed, necessitated a reduction in the staff of officers. The Directors dismissed twenty of their assistants, parting from them with deep personal regret, and grieved for the decreased efficiency of the institution which must result from their departure.

There are very few events recorded in the report for this year, but we find instead very elaborate and important statistical details on the number of youths received and of those placed out, of their parentage, of the proportion whose names were inscribed on the Tablet of Honor, of the degree of instruction they possessed on entering the colony, usually very small, and of the time devoted to its acquisition while there. This had latterly been increased and amounted now to fourteen hours per week, which was found amply sufficient to enable them to acquire the elementary knowledge—reading, writing and arithmetic, and, in some cases, linear drawing and music—which it was considered desirable to teach. A certain portion of the above-mentioned time was moreover occupied in religious instruction, but to youths, who were preparing for their first communion, the chaplain devoted an additional hour daily. From the report for 1850, we learn:—

Sixty-five of our wards have made their first communion, and in the most satisfactory manner; and a large number have renewed it. \* \*

We have no fixed time for the performance of this solemn duty; it is determined chiefly by the amount of religious knowledge, and the fervor of the aspirant. \* \*

At Mettray a large number of our children are foundlings; it is impossible to form an idea of the neglected state of these poor creatures, whose birth is their only offense.

Many of them have done nothing from quite infancy, but watch cattle, and their brutalized condition is often on a level with that of the animals among whom they have lived; indeed, we have had boys who seemed to have acquired their most degraded attributes. Thus, if they quarreled with a companion, they would, after regarding him sideways, rush against him, and overturn him by butting at his chest with their heads, all done with such incredible rapidity that their adversary had no time to save himself from the blow.

The health of the colony continued to be exceedingly satisfactory.

We can not but call upon you to rejoice with us that Mettray has been preserved from the scourge of disease which has found victims even at our very door. The penitentiary at Tours lost two-thirds of its inmates in three days. It may be answered, that Mettray is situated on a high table land, free from stagnant water and injurious exhalations. But the houses in our close vicinity are in a similar position, and nevertheless in one of them a whole family was carried off. \* \*

It is shown, by examining our register, that the number of boys admitted into the infirmary diminishes in proportion with the length of their stay at the colony, which proves how much their constitutions must be strengthened by their healthful mode of life.

We never allow lads, who have been placed out at neighboring farms, to go to the hospital; if they fall sick they return to the colony. We claim the right to relieve them in suffering and in sorrow, as a father does his children.

The time spent in curing their physical ailments, we make additionally profitable by re-awakening in their hearts the good principles, which, during

their residence at the colony, we endeavored to implant. Our excellent sisters of charity, seconded by the chaplain, lose no opportunity for exhortation, and their counsel is always received with gratitude.

Thus our lads return into the world strengthened both in body and mind; and our gratuitous hospitality has the happiest influence on their characters, for by such evidence they are convinced of the disinterestedness of our advice, and feel all the more willing to follow it.

Referring to the family system the Directors remark:—

In our endeavor to replace the home which has failed in its duty, we do not conceal from ourselves that the imitation can never equal the reality, and consequently, whenever our wards come from respectable families, we lose no opportunity for enabling them to meet, in order to preserve the bonds of natural affection.

Our colons often beg permission to send some help, out of the little fund which accrues from a portion of their earnings, to a father or mother suffering from poverty, and we always incline a favorable ear to such requests, being only too glad to foster every generous sentiment in their young hearts. If the amount of their savings is too small to meet the want, we add enough to make it sufficient, and nothing is so potent in exciting their feelings of gratitude toward us. We generally appreciate kindness rendered to those dear to us more highly than if we were its immediate object.

When the character and conduct of the parents are good, we allow them to see their children, and often their fathers, more often their mothers, come from a great distance, frequently on foot, even in the worst weather.

Our lads are not in a position in which strong passions are brought into play, and we may rejoice that it is so; but owing to this circumstance, when speaking of what concerns them, the incidents we have to relate are necessarily very simple. Love of labor, obedience to their officers, religious feeling, such are the virtues which we usually have occasion to mention. Some of our colons have fortunately, however, had opportunities of distinguishing themselves by rendering a service to their fellow creatures, and even in saving human life.

One day a bull on the farm became infuriated, and rushed at the woman who has the superintendence of the dairy, when the lad Bourdin, seeing the danger which threatened her, instantly threw himself just in the animal's path, and with a stick struck it a tremendous blow between the horns, which enabled the terrified woman to escape. The boy was not deceived as to the risk he ran, and said to us afterward with much simplicity, "I made sure it was all up with me."

Another colon, also quite recently, named Roch, having seen the wife of a laborer fall into a piece of water, which was more than three metres [10 feet] deep, jumped in to rescue her, and was fortunate enough to drag her to the edge.

The lads who belong to the department of the Seine are those who give us most trouble, for all our efforts do not always avail to prevent their returning to the capital, which has an irresistible attraction for them, and whither, moreover, their families usually urge them to come; and you are aware that under no circumstances is our active and watchful care more constantly needed, than for those poor lads who are exposed to all the temptations of a great city.

The following passage enables us to judge of the position which the colony had attained in the course of ten years of active existence:

If Mettray, even at the present time, has not yet assumed its rank among first-rate agricultural establishments, we can assure you it is not for want of making the most strenuous efforts in that direction. But the task is a difficult one. Many and very different objects are there sought to be obtained. Intellectual instruction, moral training, the requirements of strict discipline, fixed hours which can not be changed, the employment of youthful and inexperienced hands, of which, moreover, we have often more than we know how to occupy render the task of cultivating the land well and economically, and of producing good agriculturists, a very hard one. \* \*

Now, however, that our efforts have effected, in a moral point of view, all we dared to hope for, and even more than that, when we recollect the perilous trials we have passed through, and the class we have had to deal with, we intend to devote our utmost efforts to repair the losses which the agricultural

portion of our enterprise has incurred, and also to place agricultural training on the footing which it ought here to occupy.

After ten years of strenuous exertion we have the right to say—"Either Mettray is an exceptional and ephemeral institution, and ought to receive neither the help which might retain a benevolent but useless experiment in existence, nor praises which would afford it futile encouragement,—or Mettray is the first stone laid of a complete system of correctional education, founded in no rash love of novelty, but on the eternal principles on which society itself is based, and susceptible of infinitely varied application."

In the latter case it ought to be unreservedly adopted, that so difficult an enterprise may not be left at the mercy of this or that favorable disposition which may fail us at any time, nor dependent on our individual efforts to obtain aid, which, whether more or less successful, entail considerable loss of time, seriously interfering with the good management of the institution.

It devolves upon you, gentlemen, the founders of Mettray, to ensure the permanency of your work.

We gave ourselves ten years for accomplishing this great experiment; that period is completed to-day, and we may safely say, **METTRAY IS ESTABLISHED.**

Praise has succeeded detraction, approval has taken the place of objections, and the most convincing testimony authorizes us in adding, *Mettray is understood.*

Both at home and abroad our plan has been eagerly adopted, and similar institutions projected or already established elsewhere, enable us to exclaim, still more rejoicingly, *Mettray is imitated.*

Finally, if our anticipations and our wishes do not deceive us, the day is not far distant, when your system being applied to all those children who before that period had been a burden or a source of alarm to the state, they will, by promoting its prosperity, become to it a mine of wealth.

The report for 1851 contains no new facts of importance, but it again insists on the ruinous consequence of sending lads to Mettray for so short a period as two or three years, and upon the advantages resulting from effective patronage. It mentions also that the cultivation of the colza plant had been introduced, and promised to be highly remunerative.

In 1852 a most elaborate report was issued by M. de Gasparin on the state of the agricultural department, which it appears was then in a very flourishing condition.

In the course of this year the Directors were away from the colony for a considerable time, owing to ill health.

Officers and colons, whilst we were absent from the colony, redoubled their zeal, in order to prove their attachment to us, and to our esteemed representative, M. Blanchard, whom they alike love and respect, and whose task they sought to lighten. This fact affords a most convincing answer to the objection we have often heard raised, that the existence of Mettray depends on two men. Mettray, we affirm, rests on an educational system based on established principles, and will bear fruit long, very long after those who originated it shall be no more.

Little did he who spoke or those who heard these words imagine in how short a time the prophecy they contained was in part to be fulfilled; on the 10th of September of the same year, M de Courteilles died. "He was attending the sick bed of a youth, who had to all appearance become thoroughly hardened, when the latter, for the first time since his admission into the colony, exhibited some sign of contrition. The joy which M. de Courteilles experienced on the occasion reminded him of an extract from a sermon of the Abbé Lacordaire, which he had inserted in his work on prisons. \* \* \* \* He went for the volume, and was reading the

passage to the friends that were around him, when the book dropped from his hand; he was dead.\*

"Thus," writes M. Demetz, "the colony lost its firmest stay, and I the tenderest and most faithful friend, the companion of my early years, the adopted brother given me by God.

"It may seem rash in me, to those who knew the force of his character—the power of his genius, to have consented henceforth to take upon myself alone the responsibility of this great enterprise. But it is to those very qualities, which circumstances enable me better than any one else justly to estimate, that my resolution must be attributed. M. de Courteilles has placed the administration of the colony on so sound a basis, that I have only to execute what he has already organized. His zeal and devotion were never more evident than in the year which has just elapsed; the narrative of its events demonstrates the greatness of his creative genius. He regarded the position attained by the colony, both in a moral point of view and in respect to discipline, as most satisfactory, an opinion which has very recently received ministerial confirmation,† but he deplored the irregularities still apparent in our domestic economy, and which resulted from the want of sufficient means to conduct it methodically; and it was to this department of our institution more particularly that he devoted the last days of his life."

The great increase in the number of inmates at Mettray had rendered the existing storehouses altogether inadequate to its requirements; it had consequently become necessary to purchase articles of consumption almost from day to day, which caused inevitably some waste in their use, and made it impossible to take advantage of a cheap season to lay in a large stock. To meet this evil M. de Courteilles commenced building extensive magazines, which, when finished, not only enabled the managers to purchase largely when prices were low, but to keep a much more exact account of their expenditure in this department than had before been practicable.

In addition to the large storehouses that M. de Courteilles had begun, he urged forward the works by which a more abundant supply of water was secured to the colony.

Every day he was occupied in overlooking the workmen, so much so that his health suffered visibly from these excessive demands upon his strength; but when we besought him to moderate his zeal, he would reply in the beautiful words of Scripture, "So long as the flesh is able, the spirit should be willing."

You know how forgetful youth is by nature, but it is not so with our children. Exposed to sufferings of every sort, and having never received one mark of kindness from their infancy upward, until Providence, through you, took pity on their misery, they are amazed to find that any one cares for them, and the smallest reward, the slightest proof of interest, affects them deeply. Judge, then, gentlemen, what they must have felt when deprived of him who had devoted, even sacrificed, his life to them.

I will not attempt to describe to you the state of the colony during that mournful season, but the grief expressed by youths who have long left us will enable you to understand what theirs must have been who, to the very moment of M. de Courteilles' death, were the objects of his tender care.

The following is a letter from Hermerel, now established at Caen:

*"Caen, September 27th, 1852.*

"Monsieur Demetz,—I awaited with the intensest anxiety the confirmation of this news. My master came to my house on the 12th of this month to bring me some work, when seeing the portrait of my revered M. de Courteilles hanging against the wall, together with the engraving of Mettray, he exclaimed

---

\* Mettray, a Lecture, by Robert Hall, M. A.

† Letter of the Minister of the Interior, dated April 18th, 1853.



all at once, 'Why that's Mettray there, and here's one of the founders; it is the very one who died yesterday afternoon of apoplexy.' I could not speak a word, and meanwhile he went away. As soon as I came to myself, I ran after him to ask him where he heard the news; he said he saw it in a newspaper, and I ran to every place where newspapers are taken in, but I could not find out if it was true. But I could scarcely avoid believing it, for why should a man who knew nothing of Mettray invent such a thing. I was in the most dreadful suspense till I received your letter, and ever since then I have been in the most dreadful grief. I can not tell you, Monsieur Demetz, what I feel; I will only say, that I seek in spirit the tomb which covers the dear remains of M. de Courteilles, and there my heart pours forth its bitter sorrow.

"What a terrible blow Providence has inflicted on you too; but I know, Monsieur Demetz, you are bearing it with the resignation you always show. God alone is our Master, and we must ever yield to His will. After such fearful proof of His power all we can do is to humble ourselves before Him.

"Children at Mettray, with grief I learn the loss we have all sustained. It is a dreadful loss, and one we can never replace. M. de Courteilles is no more. He was one of the colony's supports, and this support it has lost. He still watches over us from above, but we can see him no longer. He is no more amongst us. He will never again console the sick, nor the prisoner, nor ever praise good conduct more, nor be seen at any of your meetings. Ah! my dear lads, he is gone from us forever! But every step we took at Mettray he guided; we were the objects of all his thoughts, of all his solicitude: he watched over us while he slept, he worked for us while we rested. What proof of our regret can we give worthy of such care and such sacrifices? No, dear school-fellows, we can give none—for it was his earthly life he spent to save our souls. But, dear colons of Mettray, let us try to prove our respect for his memory, let every action show how truly we mourn him. Let your games, your laughter, be less boisterous. Break not his rest—he lies beside you, and his spirit is ever with you;\* as for me, I share your sorrow; your grief is mine also, for I owe him more than any one. A servant deprived by death of a good master mourns him for a time at least; a son never ceases to regret the loss of a good father, but we have lost far more than a good master, or even father—we have lost a saviour.

"Have we not then greater cause than they, to make our mourning life-long; and that every one who in future visits Mettray may know how great a loss the colons have sustained, I beg, M. Demetz, to be so good as to allow them to wear black collars to their coats instead of red, and to let the banner of each family be covered with crape for at least a year. But this is nothing in comparison with what the colony owes him. I have no need, my dear boys, to ask you to pray for him, for that is your first duty. As for me, I trust M. Demetz, and the officers under you, you will not think me wrong in putting on mourning for him; my heart will mourn too, and like my school-fellows I shall never forget him who was everything to me. M. Demetz is left alone over you, my dear friends; his charge is greater than ever, and besides he too has lost his friend. Try to lighten the task which this dreadful event has rendered double to him. Let offenses be less frequent, let the elder ones guide the little ones aright, let those who have learnt something teach those who know nothing, and let all, animated with one spirit, endeavor to make the grief of your masters less bitter, and their life among you more happy.

"Farewell, my dearly beloved school-fellows. May heaven receive the prayers we all offer up for the repose of the soul of the deceased, our revered M. de Courteilles, who loved us to the end of his life; and may it be pleased to grant many, many years more to him, who is yet spared to us.

(Signed,)

HERMEREL."

You will not wrong us, by imagining we have permitted a word of this letter to be altered.

Another letter equally expressive of the love and veneration inspired

---

\* By his own direction M. de Courteilles was buried in the cemetery of the colony; & even in death he is not separated from those to whom his life was devoted. His epitaph in these words, "J'ai voulu vivre mourir et resusciter avec eux;" they are an extract of his will.—ED.



by M. de Courteilles, is given in the report, but our space will not permit us to transcribe it. M. Demetz received

Numbers of letters, which, though less well expressed, are equally touching. We have preserved them all, and shall keep them, as affording the most striking testimony to the worth of our friend. It is not given to every one to inspire such regret. \* \*

If, in the hearts of young children, some of them very young, and untrained, our grief found such an echo, judge what we met with in our officers, educated almost entirely under our own eyes, and who had lived on terms of intimacy with him whom it was impossible to behold without being attracted to him by an irresistible power. These excellent young men have felt that the best way to honor the memory of their benefactor is to follow his exhortations, and it is simply an act of justice on my part to assure you that the management of the colony has never been more easy. Right feeling is apparent throughout, and each performs his duty without my having even to remind him of it.

This was a mournful year for the colony, which, during its course, lost many friends besides M. de Courteilles. One of these, M. Blouet, was the architect, to whose happy adaptation to the requirements of Mettray of what he, in company with M. Demetz, had seen in similar institutions abroad, much of its success is owing. Madame Hébert, the foundress, as it will be recollected, of one of the houses inhabited by the colons, died in 1853, and also M. Bezancon, a munificent benefactor to the colony from the time of its foundation.

The report is preceded by a portrait of M. de Courteilles—it represents a man of distinguished appearance, and most benevolent countenance—but the record of the past year's events no longer bears his signature. May that which yet remains long be spared!

In 1854 we find reference to the assemblage of the colons in the great hall which takes place every Sunday :

On Sunday an account is given before the assembled colony of the conduct of each family, and the work it has accomplished during the past week, and particulars respecting its individual members, are related. Every boy who has deserved well receives encouragement; every family whose conduct has been satisfactory receives a reward. This emulation among the different families has always had a good effect. It was not, however, sufficient, and we thought it might be possible to excite this spirit of rivalry in good conduct to still further results, by fostering it not only in individuals but in the various families, so that it should animate the whole colony,

With this view we have established a kind of "prize of honor," (*prix d'honneur*,) to be granted to the family which has incurred no punishment during the past week; it consists in the privilege of carrying the national flag upon which this simple legend has been inscribed, "*Honneur à la Famille*———."\*

During their military exercises, the family which has earned this distinction, marches at the head of the colony whose standard-bearer it has become. The important aid we receive from this struggle as to who shall behave best, will be proved better by figures than by the most eloquent words.

Before the introduction of the flag the number of boys inscribed on the Tablet of Honor amounted to 66 per cent.; it is now 74½, and we should add that 37 lads now at the colony have come to us within the last three months, and consequently are not yet privileged to have their names placed upon the tablet. Under the same influence the number of colons consigned to the cell, which was formerly 2 per cent. per day, is now reduced to one and a quarter.

Every week, as has been already stated, we give to those families, whose conduct has been particularly good, a little reward. This is generally an

---

\* The name of the successful family is written on a small scutcheon, fastened to the staff of the flag.

engraving representing either some courageous action, or else a religious subject; sometimes it is a print of one of our great battles, or of a naval encounter. The sublime scene of the death of the Archbishop of Paris,\* and the deed of self-devotion by the sister of charity, who, in the midst of a fierce street skirmish, saved the life of an officer at the risk of her own, are thus brought under the notice of our lads, and these engravings, conveying as they do an invaluable lesson, decorate the walls of the boys' rooms, and form a little gallery illustrative of moral greatness, piety and heroism.

The report gives most encouraging particulars respecting a large number of the youths who had left the institution, contained partly in letters from patrons, and in one signed "A former colon." The writer, who had settled at Lima, after expressing the warmest gratitude and affection toward the Director and the officers of the colony, begs that his name may be inscribed on its list of founders, stating that he has transmitted the sum of one hundred francs in aid of its funds, a donation by which he would become entitled to the coveted distinction.

We find also the following passage referring to a visit paid to the colony by Lord Brougham :

He did not depart from the institution without leaving there a proof of his generous sympathy, and we look forward to having ere long funds sufficient to build a house on which will be inscribed, (as in the case of those constructed at the expense of different departments,) the words, "Founded by England."

We are informed, by the report for 1855, of a change in the time allotted to the instruction of the younger boys, whose numbers had recently much increased. It was now found best to allow them to spend a larger portion of the day in the school-room than their companions, their labor being of comparatively little value, while their aptitude for acquiring elementary knowledge is much greater than at a later period. The progress made by the pupils was on the whole highly satisfactory. Out of the 649 colons in the institution 396 could read, and 268 could write well, while the most uninstructed had made some progress in these arts, and the arithmetic class was very promising.

---

\* The event alluded to in the report occurred during the terrible Three Days of June, 1848. We were in Paris in the autumn of that year, and of course saw all the places rendered memorable during the preceding few months. It may be supposed we did not fail to visit the spot which the death of the noble-hearted prelate has made hallowed ground, and there the particulars were narrated to us of that fearful scene.

Hoping to stay the dreadful carnage, and to act as mediator between the government and the rebels, the Archbishop departed from his palace on Sunday evening, the 25th of June, for the Place de la Bastille, where the fighting was then hottest. Passing along the Rue St. Antoine, the excited populace, aware of his intention, implored him to persevere, overwhelming him with prayers and blessings. Some few warned him of the peril he was incurring, but to these he replied, that duty forbade him to regard his own safety, and he was heard often to repeat to himself the words, "*Bonus autem pastor dat vitam suam pro ovibus suis.*" Truly he proved himself no hireling! He stopped from time to time beside the ambulances, blessing and absolving the wounded. On reaching the Place de la Bastille, where a barricade had been thrown up across the embouchure of two streets, which form an acute angle, he prevailed upon the officer commanding the government troops to stop firing that he might parley with the insurgents. The latter ceased also, when accompanied by his two *grands vicaires*, and preceded by a man bearing a bough for a flag of truce, he advanced toward the barricade. The rebels descended from it to meet him, and there appeared reason to hope that his mission of peace would prove successful, when the report of a gun, possibly a random shot, was followed by a cry of "Treason!" and instantly the fusillade was resumed more fiercely than ever. The prelate and his no less courageous attendants, were thus in the midst of a cross fire. He still advanced, reached the barricade, and climbed to the summit, where he was visible to the combatants on both sides. The balls whistled round his head as he addressed the multitude, but he remained unharmed, though one of his vicars had his hat pierced in three places. While descending from the barricade the Archbishop was struck by a bullet in his side. The blow was mortal. A faithful servant, who had followed him unperceived, caught him in his arms, and he was carried from the spot. He survived only a few hours, during which his sufferings were intense, but borne with the calmness and resignation which belongs to true heroism.—Ed.

Orphrasière, an off-shoot from Mettray, of which we shall hear more in the next report, was founded this year.

The inundations of June, 1856, which overwhelmed the valleys of some of the largest rivers in France, caused great damage to the city of Tours. It was indeed threatened almost with submersion, its safety depending on the resisting power of a levee, which, at one time, appeared likely to give way. The Mettray youths had, on the occasion of a former flood, rendered great assistance, and their help was again thankfully accepted.

During the disaster which ravaged our fertile districts, our lads—whom a journey in England prevented me from myself leading to the scene of action—were in the foremost ranks to oppose the evil. M. Blanchard was at their head, admirably seconded by the rest of our officers, whose names I could not here enumerate.

The zeal and devotion with which each one performed his duty on this occasion, called forth the following letter from the Municipal Council of Tours after those terrible days of trial:—

*“ To the Director of Mettray.*

“ Sir,—At the time when our city was exposed to imminent danger, you generously thought of offering us the help of your young *colons*; we gratefully accepted it, and a few hours only elapsed before these brave youths, furnished with tools which were familiar to them, came to assist our terrified inhabitants in opposing the violence of the flood.

“ For two days and a night they worked incessantly, with unheard-of energy and ardor, without letting order and discipline be relaxed for an instant in their ranks.

“ They remained with us to the last, when every means of safety had been tried. After all the fatigue they had undergone for us, the *colons* of Mettray still wished to lighten the misfortune which their courage was not able to avert, and these poor lads devoted their savings to the relief of those who had suffered by the floods.

“ This devotion and generosity have excited the warmest admiration of our citizens, which it is our gratifying duty to express.

“ All honor, then, to those poor boys who have so nobly gained for themselves a place in society, whence the misfortunes of their youth, often undeserved, seemed to exclude them! All honor to the institution which has inspired such generous feelings!

“ The Municipal Council of Tours has decided that a commemorative medal shall be offered to the colony of Mettray, to perpetuate the remembrance of the brotherly help it so freely gave to our city. I shall shortly have the honor of transmitting it to you, sir; but the council was unwilling to delay any longer expressing to you their deep gratitude, and I rejoice to be their channel of communication on this occasion.

“ With sincere respect,

“ Allow me to subscribe myself, &c., &c.,

“ E. MAME, Mayor.”

The medal, which I have received from the Mayor, (always as ready to reward good deeds as he is the first to perform them,) bears the following inscription:—  
“ A la Colonie de Mettray, la Ville de Tours, reconnaissante. Inondation, 1856.”

The Cardinal Archbishop of Tours added his testimony to the heroic conduct alike of officers and *colons* from Mettray.

Speaking of the increasing development of the manufacture of agricultural implements, and the industry of the young workmen, the report continues:—

To assiduity they often unite considerable skill, and give proof of no mean capacity. One of them has invented a root-cutter, (*coup-racine*), which accomplishes twice as much work as an ordinary root-cutter. We sent this imple-

ment to the *Exposition Universelle*, and it having gained a second prize, we resolved to take out a patent for it. We decided upon this step in order, firstly, to secure our property in a useful invention, but more particularly with the view of encouraging the efforts of our young colons, and sustaining their zeal.

Many specimens of their handiwork have gained prizes at agricultural shows both at Paris and in the provinces.

An additional department, entitled "*Arts et Metiers*," has this year been added to the *Ecole Préparatoire*, which will provide for the education of industrial teachers, serious evils having occasionally arisen from employing as trades-masters individuals who had not been brought up in that institution; it is intended henceforth to employ no officer who has not been trained there.

The advantages of employing in the management of reformation those only who have had a special training for the work is thus shown.

We are happy, Gentlemen, to have it in our power to mention here the benefits of this preparatory school, of whose utility there has never been a doubt for an instant. Even strangers who have visited Mettray, have rendered justice to it, and proclaimed its importance. We have on this head, a testimony of high authority in a letter to Lord Brougham, recently published by Mr. Hill, Queen's Counsel.

This learned gentleman, after mentioning all the conditions necessary for the prosperity of an agricultural colony, does not hesitate to point out as most indispensable, the preparatory institution of a school constituted on the plan of ours.

In addition, there is a circumstance so conclusive, and so much to the honor of this institution, that we hasten to bring it under your notice.

The Colony of Ostwald which contains no less than 350 young détenues, was far from producing the results which were expected from it; and it was about to be closed, when the Municipal Council of Strasburg on which it depends, decided on our recommendation, to accept as Director, M. Guimas, one of the earliest of our pupils, and latterly occupying an important post with us. I had the pleasure myself of conducting him to Ostwald, and he was installed in his new functions the first day of February last. It is scarcely in our power to thank as we ought, the authorities of the city of Strasburg, for the cordiality with which they received us.

Since this man, whose zeal is boundless, has been at the head of the house, a complete change has been effected in the dispositions of the children. The desertions have diminished in a wonderful proportion, although the discipline has increased in rigor; and now the same authorities who had refused any sacrifice at all, are the first, in presence of the good realized, to require additional buildings in order to accommodate a greater number of children.

Thus, gentlemen, you have the satisfaction not only of having founded Mettray, but of having contributed to save Ostwald into the bargain.

Results like these are to us the most powerful encouragements; and at the sight of the good which the agricultural colonies are daily accomplishing, we feel our zeal redouble in order to prepare for our country, men worthy to direct such institutions, and to fulfill so noble and holy a mission.

In direct connection with Mettray there are little colonies of forty children in ordinary farm-houses, still subjected to the discipline of the institution, and besides these there is a colony, called the Orphrasière, established in 1849 at a distance of eighty miles.

This little colony has been located on the land of the Orphrasière on the friendly proposal of M. Manuel, proprietor of that vast demesne. No praises in our power to bestow would be worthy of his generous disinterestedness.

Our farmers with the example of the specimen we have just founded, will henceforward as we hope, enter with more confidence on the way we have been so long endeavoring to open for them. The orphans and the foundlings who

press so heavily on the funds of the departments, will be also employed in a manner profitable both to themselves and the country.

Prudence imposes on us a duty, not to neglect any precautions necessary to success in this new experiment. We have taken care to send to the colony of the Orphrasière those children who are approaching the term of their liberation.

The great mistake of all those penitentiary systems which have been tried up to our own time, is, allowing the individual to pass at once from a state of the strictest seclusion to a state of boundless liberty.

The Orphrasière lying far away from Mettray, offers to our children a state of transition by which they can make their first essay of liberty, being still liable to a certain restraint. It is by having recourse to all these precautions, by observing these gradations, that we can hope to render the once vicious man an upright member of society.

The results of the system of Patronage toward the colonists who leave Mettray, is thus set forth :

But the proof of the utility of your foundation is particularly to be found in the conduct which the children observe after their liberation. You will thereby comprehend the importance, we attach to "Patronage," the sole means of inducing them to persevere in the good path on which they have entered.

This Patronage has now attained large proportions, as we never abandon our young charge, and as the "latest dismissed," still add to the number of their predecessors, and considerably swell our expenses for which we receive no compensation from government.

Hearts less confident than yours in the resources of charity, would have been dismayed by the consequences of such engagements, but you have felt that "Patronage" was the indispensable complement to your work, and that in order to organize it, you should not recoil from any sacrifice: and besides, we are bound to believe that the exercise of Patronage on the children who have quitted the colony, has a healthy action on those now present: by its means our influence on this youthful population increases from day to day. Our children can not be ignorant of the solicitude with which we shall watch over their destiny when they will have become free: they know the sacrifices which we impose on ourselves in order to be useful to them; and they show their gratitude by the only means in their power, viz.: that of conducting themselves with propriety.

1,040 young colonists have quitted Mettray from the establishment to the first of January 1855, of them

421 have devoted themselves to agriculture.

301 have betaken themselves to trades.

249 have entered the army: we are happy to mention one of them, a soldier in the 3d Zouaves now at Sebastopol, already decorated with the cross of the "Legion of Honor." He has made himself one of the subscribers to the foundation of Mettray.\*

69 have entered the Marine.

---

1,040

The number of 301 children who have embraced industrial professions may appear large, but it is more strange that it should be so restricted, as out of 1,817 children who have been admitted at Mettray, 908 belonged to our large towns. This large proportion of children brought up among crowded populations, accounts for the number of the "relapsed" which however has not been on the increase. It remains as at past periods, 10 per cent. as appears from the official return of "Criminal Justice," recently published by M., the Minister of Justice. This stationary result may be considered as a progressive one, if we take into account the length of time elapsed since the liberation of our first colonists.

We can not conclude these observations on "Patronage" without addressing our thanks to those who have seconded us in this work, and whose zeal, instead of diminishing, seems to increase in proportion as their task becomes more

---

\* This is not the sole instance of the kind which we have to record. What can be more interesting than to see Mettray supported by those to whom it once gave refuge!

difficult. We would wish, gentlemen, if the number were not too great, to pay to each individual, the tribute of gratitude due for his efficacious help; to recount with what persevering efforts the greater number have endeavored to act (for good) on the children as well as their parents, well knowing that the best counsels have little influence in presence of evil examples on the part of the family.

We will content ourselves by naming M. Verdier, Agent-General of your Society, who with a disinterestedness beyond all praise, has charged himself with the "Patronage" of all our children in Paris. We can hardly form a correct estimate of the difficulties which this office entails, or the incessant goings and comings of every kind which it exacts. M. Verdier is dismayed by no obstacles of this kind.

As to the sanitary condition of the colonists, the Report contains the following paragraphs:

The visits of the physician take place every day.

Formerly, the service of the infirmary was confided to one of the colonists; frequent changes were the result which could not be otherwise than prejudicial to the management of the sick. To remedy this inconvenience, we have not hesitated notwithstanding our limited finances, to appoint an infirmarian who is charged specially with this service, and who acquits himself, as we are happy to say, with laudable punctuality. He is placed under the control of two Sisters of Charity who are entrusted with the care of our infirmary and dispensary.

Vaccination has been tried on 141 children, to wit:

51 vaccinations.

90 revaccinations.

The latter experiments have been successful in 27 instances, and, gentlemen, it is a source of much pleasure to us to announce to you, that there has not occurred amongst us since the founding of the establishment a single case of small-pox, though this very year, both the ordinary and confluent small-pox have attacked a certain number of children in the neighboring communes.

The physicians of the establishment encourage us in the notion "that this immunity is the result of the care taken, according as the colonists are admitted, to vaccinate those who have not yet undergone this operation, and to revaccinate those who have."

Further on, they add this information which we are very happy to communicate to you:—"As to the cholera which visited Tours in the month of July, and did not disappear till the end of October, we have not had a single case."

We can not announce such a circumstance, gentlemen, without feeling it our duty once more to thank that Providence which to this day has preserved Mettray from that scourge, though it has raged even at our gates.

M. Demetz thus speaks of a new feature in the establishment at Mettray, for a class of children not yet convicted of crime:

We can not conclude this report, gentlemen, without introducing to your notice, a new institution which has been added to the one you have never ceased to invest with your solicitude, and which appears to us equally worthy of your sympathies.

This addition enables us to fill up in our correctional regime, a truly deplorable void, and to obtain results of the highest importance in the interest of families.

The legislator while adopting the principle of agricultural colonies for young convicts, ought to have equally taken into account those children whose vicious inclinations, or obstinate characters, stubbornly resist all instruction, and all efforts of domestic discipline; and who, without having been guilty of an infraction of the penal laws, do not the less deserve severe punishment. We speak of children detained at the request of the father, on the ground of "Paternal Correction."

If we wish to achieve a reform as complete as it possibly can be, we should come to the aid of youth whatever be its social position, and combat its evil propensities wherever they manifest themselves.

In France, detention under the head of *correction paternelle* is the only means of repressing the transgressions of youth. But Paris alone offers, and there but



in an insufficient manner, a house for the reception of such children, which holds out some guarantee to the heads of families.

In the provinces there exists no establishment of this kind. Children under age, whom their parents might wish to correct by withdrawing them from the evil counsels and evil examples which are perverting them, would there be mixed pell-mell with the suspected and even the convicted: thus they would be exposed to greater dangers than those from which it is wished to guard them. What father of a family would venture to give to his son, for companions, male-factors and others, the refuse of prisons.

We do not hesitate to say, that solitary confinement only, can act with efficacy in such cases. It is necessary to have witnessed its effects in order to form a correct idea of the happy influence which it obtains over the character. A complete transformation is effected in the individual submitted to its operation. As he can not procure either indulgence or amusements, nothing is at work to remove from his mind the exhortations and counsels he has received. Reflection is perpetually holding before his eyes the picture of his past life. In solitude there is no place for pride, for self-love. The child is obliged, in his own despite, to enter into himself: he no longer blushes for yielding to the promptings of his conscience, which has been so justly called the "voice of God." Little by little, he becomes accessible to religious sentiments: labor now becomes an occupation for him, and very soon a pleasure; he gives himself up to it with ardor; and that which he has hitherto considered as a painful task, becomes a comfort, even a necessary, so that the greatest punishment that can be inflicted on him is to deprive him of employment.

The short period of his detention dissipates whatever fears the solitary system may excite in the minds of some individuals.

We always take the precaution before receiving a child of this class into our colony, to announce to him his parents' wishes that he should be placed under restraint. We give him to understand that we have obtained a delay in his favor: we exhort him to profit by this new proof of indulgence, letting him understand at the same time that if he does not, he shall be the object of severe chastisement. We have the satisfaction to inform you that in the greater number of cases this announcement has sufficed. Thanks to this weapon placed in their hands, many parents have made their hitherto despised authority, fully respected.

When the menace has had no effect, and we are obliged to put the threat in execution, the boy on entering Mettray changes his name for a number by which he is henceforth designated; the letters of his family, preserved with care, are delivered up to him when he quits us, so that there may remain no traces at any time, of a "past" which is so desirable to be never drawn from oblivion.

To the charge made both in France, (*Journal des Economistes*,) and in England, (*Quarterly Review*, January, 1856,) that the discipline of Mettray destroys the family feeling, (*esprit de famille*,) M. Demetz replied in a letter published in the former journal—from which we make brief extracts :

Mettray does not receive children from their homes, but from prisons, in which place the life they pursue is very different from that of a domestic hearth; and further, that almost all these poor children have been led to evil precisely because they have no families, or only such as do them harm.

From its foundation to the 1st of January, 1856, the colony of Mettray has received 1,984 juvenile offenders. Of this number there are—

846 illegitimate children.

876 children who have lost father or mother, or both.

116 foundlings.

304 children who have a step-father or step-mother.

117 children whose parents live in concubinage.

408 children whose parents have been convicted.

What does Mettray do for them? The very first principle called into action at the colony is the *esprit de famille*. It, therefore does not destroy, but restores this feeling in our young delinquents.



In an essay we very recently published on Agricultural Colonies, we earnestly insisted that it was the duty of every man aspiring to found an institution destined to receive poor and abandoned children to create in it a home feeling, if they desire to supply, as far as possible, to the child the family it has lost, or which has neglected its duty. We said in that essay that the reason why we have made no greater progress in education is because we have too often substituted discipline for moral action.

But in order that a moral principle should first be thoroughly understood, and then properly applied by those whose duty it is to give it effect, we must embody this sentiment in a form bearing no distant resemblance to a real family. It is for this reason that we erected small detached houses. Our population, which now exceeds 660 lads, is thus divided into small families, each having a chief trained in the normal school, (which we previously established in order to educate officers competent to their duties,) under whose authority forty boys are placed. This chief bears the title of *pere de famille*; a title, by the way, which is justified by his kindly watchfulness. Two *colons*, who are called elder brothers, assist him. We desired, by these titles, to awaken in the hearts of our boys, and of the chiefs, a consciousness of those duties which family life imposes. In such cases names have more meaning than might be imagined.

When a family passes a week without having incurred punishment it earns a right to a collective reward. Sometimes it is an engraving illustrating a trait of benevolence or of courage. This engraving is hung up in the house, and remains as a memorial of the good conduct of the family. Sometimes the reward is a game, in which all can take part; the well-disposed, in the hope of this recompense, say to the ill-conducted, "We will watch over your conduct, for fear you should spoil our week." In this way we draw tighter the bonds between the different members of these little societies, by establishing among them an identity of interests.

As long as the boy remains in the colony, he is the object of a lively, we may say a tender solicitude. He is instructed in the truths of religion—the basis of all good education; we endeavor to create in him good resolutions, and to induce him by every possible means to persevere in them. Above all, we neglect nothing by which we can appeal to his sense of honor, through which a Frenchman, no matter what is his station in life, is always accessible. The proof that this feeling has not been without influence over our population is, that though there are no walls, no gates at Mettray—a circumstance which led to the happy remark of one of our high officers of state, "What a singular prison," exclaimed he, on visiting Mettray, "where there is no other key than the *clef de champs*;" notwithstanding their severe discipline, their toil, their hard living, their light clothing—cotton being their only wear in winter as well as summer—their bare feet only protected by *sabots*, whatever may be the weather, water their only beverage—we have needed only to tell our lads that they are in some measure prisoners on parole, to ensure that not one out 1,934 *colons* received at Mettray should be absent at the muster.

No one disputes the good effects of music. The sound of the trumpet, which breaks the monotony of their exercises, and gives them precision, inspires our lads with a strong liking for a military life, which we select for a large number of them.

The hazardous career of a soldier suits their love of enterprise; and thus, too, the burden of the conscription [*l'impôt du sang*] is lightened, which bears so heavily upon youths of irreproachable character, who are the pride and mainstay of their parents. We also train our lads for sailors, with the help of the masts, sails and rigging of a ship, given to us by the Minister of Marine. Many of them who come from the shores of Bretagne have already made coasting voyages, and long for nothing so much as to go again to sea. Thus we train up soldiers, sailors, and agricultural laborers;—to defend our native soil and to enrich it is our great object.\*

We have established a fire brigade, that we may afford assistance should a fire break out in our neighborhood; but we have made a regulation to the effect,

---

\* Indeed, it strikes one that there are few of us who would not learn something from a course at Mettray; and that at least, the raw recruits of our army would be better qualified for service by a little of the multifarious instruction there imparted.—*London Times*, December, 1855.

that those members who may be undergoing punishment shall not accompany their comrades, that they may feel privation from rendering a service to their fellow-creatures to be a penalty.

We do not disguise from ourselves, however, the fact that our efforts would produce no good result, if we lost sight of our children as soon as they gain their liberty,—that critical moment, when they find themselves beset on all sides by the temptations of the outer world.

They never leave the colony until we have secured a place with employers upon whom we can entirely depend. A patron\* chosen in the neighborhood whither the youth is sent, watches over him with unremitting care, and aids him with advice.

*Colons* who have been engaged by farmers in the neighborhood of Mettray, or who having gone into the army, happen to be quartered at Tours, come every Sunday to spend the day at the colony. The same place is laid for them at the family table which they had used to occupy; they kneel at the same altar with their former school-fellows; they dine with them, and join them in their sports. Thus we withdraw them from the influence of the tavern, whither they might be led by want of occupation; and we have no fear of overstepping the truth, when we say that the day is to the greater number a *jour de fête*.

We asked one of them if he enjoyed coming back amongst us, and he replied, with a most naïve expression of pleasure, "Monsieur Demetz," (for our lads rarely use the title of Director,) "when I catch sight of the bell-tower of the colony, I can't walk any longer; I am forced to run."

Youths who have been with us have no need to fear want of employment, which too often ruins a workman's hopes for the future. As soon as they are out of work they return to the colony, and put themselves under the protecting wing, so to speak, of the chief of the family who has brought them up, who knows their character, and has won their affection. Then they resume in every respect the life of a *colon*, and submit unreservedly to the discipline of the household. We provide for their wants, on the understanding that they will work industriously. We seek a new situation for them, and it is not until one has been found that we consent to part with them.

If one of our lads is ill, and is living in the neighborhood, we send for him to the colony. We never allow him to go to a hospital; we claim the privilege of alleviating his sufferings and sorrow, as a father does those of his children. We endeavor as earnestly to strengthen in his heart the love of virtue as to cure his bodily ailments. We seek to revive his religious feelings; and should he die, we have the consolation of knowing that he dies like a christian.

No youth ever leaves us until his health is completely restored. Convalescence is a time of still greater difficulty to the workman than illness itself, and more dangerous to his future well-being by exposing him to struggle with want. If he loses his employment, is overwhelmed by difficulties, or falls sick, the colony is always open to him; it is a home for him.

We maintain an unflagging correspondence with the youths we have placed out, as well as with their patrons; the number of letters we have written and received amount to at least four thousand. We never regret their multiplicity, although the correspondence is a very onerous one, not only for the time it absorbs, but for other sacrifices which it entails.

To sum up, the greater part of our boys had no home. In every case, we took them from prison, where no domestic influence can exist. They first experience it at Mettray, where every thing concurs to assist its beneficent operation; it endures the whole time of their stay, and they feel its good effects even after their departure.†

To this sketch of the Rise and Progress of Mettray, drawn from the annual reports of the Directors, we add (Fig. 1.) a Perspective of the buildings, for which we are indebted to Phillips & Sampson, Boston, publishers of Coleman's European Agriculture.

---

\* A member of a Patronage Society.

† The observance of religious duties, the love of labor, the *esprit de famille*, the influence of good example, the cultivation of the sense of honor, the habit of discipline, the proper use of liberty—in these grand yet simple elements, consists the whole reformatory system, all the regenerating influence of Mettray.—*Notice sur Mettray, par M. Cochin.*

ACCOUNTS OF THE AGRICULTURAL COLONY AT METTRAY, BY VISITORS FROM ABROAD.

*Report of M. Ducpetiaux, to the Minister of Justice in Belgium.*

THE following account of the school of Mettray is taken from notes made during a visit there in September, 1849, with special reference to certain matters of organization, administration, discipline, and statistics. Its purpose was altogether practical; for which reason, it enters into details which are usually overlooked in visiting such an establishment, only to form a more or less complete idea of it, or to write a description.

The peculiar character of this establishment is owing to the qualities of its officers. There are there two men—M. Demetz and Viscount de Courteilles—bearing titles, and enjoying all the advantages of fortune and high social position, who devote themselves exclusively to an unobtrusive and wearisome employment. Their virtues and their example have gathered around them a band of young men animated with the same spirit, and who have sacrificed unhesitatingly their own interests to that of the work in which they are associated. Unfortunately, this number has recently been diminished by the necessity of retrenching the expenses of the establishment within the bounds of the strictest economy. The reform in this direction has only operated upon the corps of officers. Some, thinking their number too great, thought it might be reduced without inconvenience. This, however, was not the opinion of the committee sent in 1849, by the committee on labor of the national assembly, to visit the school of Mettray. This commission declared in its report, that *the school was a great source of good, and would save to society a still greater sum of evil*; and ended by saying that the government *could receive nothing but honor from taking the school of correction at Mettray under its protection*. Hon. M. Gillon, representative from the department of the Meuse, spoke with regard to the officers, as follows:

“The large expense at Mettray is owing to the number of persons employed; but this large number is required by the plan of the school, which is, to use moral influences, and to use them so well that the children will remain honest people all their lives. It is of great importance to them to leave the school with health improved, mind educated, and knowing an occupation which puts them above want; but moral reformation, the social affections, the principles of honesty and religion, good habits and qualities of heart, are a thousand times more important; and these it is impossible to bestow upon the children without costly and numerous preparations. It would be possible, instead of building a separate house for forty only, to lodge them in large rooms like barracks; instead of placing a head of a family over every forty children, an overseer might take charge of eighty or a hundred; but in that case the personal influence of the directors or of their subordinates, coming from a more distant point and extending over a greater surface, would be less deep and thorough, and the effects less salutary and lasting. Nature gives only a few children to one father.

“That cheaper arrangements might have been made, we do not deny; but it is difficult to believe that in that case such complete and satisfactory results would have followed. Certainly those which we actually witnessed at Mettray do not appear to have been too dearly purchased.”

Notwithstanding the justice of these observations, an imperious necessity forced the directors to dismiss twenty assistants; by which a saving was made of \$3,585. After this reduction, the officers and assistants of the school and their salaries were, at our visit in September, 1849, as follows.

A.—OFFICERS.

Two directors, without salary.	One treasurer, \$400, and same.
One assistant director, without salary.	One book-keeper and chashier, \$240, and same.
One general agent at Paris, without salary.	One head teacher, \$200, and same.
One chaplain, \$360, and lodging	One head overseer of labor, \$240, and same.
One principal secretary, \$400, lodging, board, and uniform at \$12 per annum.	

B.—CHIEFS OF FAMILIES.

Eleven chiefs of families, \$100, lodging, board, and uniform at \$12 per annum.	One singing-master, (employed also as clerk,) \$100, and same.
One jailor, \$100, and same.	

C.—SUB-CHIEFS OF FAMILIES.

Twelve sub-chiefs of families, .....	40 dollars.
--------------------------------------	-------------

D.—FOREMEN OF MECHANICAL WORKSHOPS.

One master tailor, \$60, with board and lodging.	One foreman of painting, glazing, and lighting, \$120, and lodging.
One master blacksmith, \$200, and lodging.	One master carpenter, \$140, and lodging.
One master wooden-shoe maker, \$180, and lodging.	One master rope-maker, \$140, and lodging.
One master wheelright, \$180, and lodging.	Two masons, paid by the day, at (1 fr. 75c.) 35 cents.

E.—AGRICULTURAL FOREMEN.

Ten agricultural foremen, \$60, with board and lodging.	Two gardeners, paid by M. Courteilles, but whose labor is given to the school.
---	--

F.—TEAMSTERS.

One head wagoner, \$80, with board and lodging.	Three drivers—two at \$60, one at \$50, with board and lodging.
---	---

G.—OTHER ASSISTANTS.

One watchman, \$120.	One farm watchman, \$60, with board and lodging.
One domestic, \$60, with board and lodging.	One miller, \$200, in full.
One messenger, \$60, with board and longing.	

All those in lists B, C, D, E, F, and G, have also a uniform, except the gardeners and the miller.

H.—SISTERS OF CHARITY.

Seven sisters of charity, \$30, with lodging and maintenance, except clothes. Of the seven, one is the superior; the others respectively have charge of expenditure, cooking, washing, work-room, infirmary, and pharmacy.

The medical supervision is intrusted to a physician of Tours, who visits daily the sick of the school.

The entire number of officers and assistants, paid and unpaid, is 65, besides 7 sisters of charity. Their proportion to the number of the pupils, is one to seven. The amount of salaries is \$6,410; of other allowances, \$4,565, namely:

Board of maintenance of 55 assistants, at 20 cents a day, average, .....	\$4,015
Uniform of same, at average of \$10 per annum,.....	550
Total,.....	\$4,565

The whole expense for personal services is therefore \$10,975; that is, for 522 pupils, an expense of \$21 a year each.

Each individual employed may have twelve days' vacation a year, which are arranged according to his own convenience and that of the establishment, but so that not more than two are absent at the same time.

The preparatory or training school of foremen continues to answer the purpose of its creation; it is an actual seminary from which the establishment draws its best and most devoted officers.

Admissions to the preparatory school are not allowed, except for very particular reasons, before the age of sixteen years; they are much more frequently at seventeen and eighteen.

No fee is demanded for the instruction; the school provides for them, and gives them an education in the knowledge requisite for overseers, teachers, and farmers. They occupy a separate location, in the building with the infirmary. They occupy, in case of need, the places of the heads and sub-heads of families, act as substitutes generally, and serve as clerks. After a certain period of probation, those who have not the necessary qualities or capacity, are sent home to their families.

Of 157 pupils admitted to the preparatory school, up to 1st January, 1849, are still at Mettray, where they fill the places of secretary, treasurer, cashier, teacher, store watchman, conductor of labor, chiefs and sub-chiefs of families; 9 have left Mettray, to enter the profession of teaching; 14 are engaged in different occupations, (roads and bridges, railroads, insurance offices, trades;) 10 have entered the army; 5 are farming overseers; 31 are practicing industrial occupations; 51 have left the school for want of capacity; 1 is dead.

The school of foremen has now 12 pupils, of whom several intend to teach, and the others to practice horticulture or agriculture.

#### NUMBER ADMITTED.

The school proper has increased only slowly and progressively. During the ten years since its foundation, its numbers have enlarged as follows:

December 31, 1840,.....	77	December 31, 1845,.....	376
" 1841,.....	134	" 1846,.....	425
" 1842,.....	176	" 1847,.....	528
" 1843,.....	221	" 1848,.....	526
" 1844,.....	339	" 1849,.....	560

The last reports on the condition of the school, in 1848 and 1849, furnish some interesting statistics, from which an opinion can be formed upon the actual condition of the school, and the results up to this time of the arrangement and discipline introduced there.

One thousand one hundred and eighty-four children have been admitted into the school, from its establishment in June, 1839, to December 31, 1849. In 1849 alone, there were 144 admissions.

Of this number were present, January 1, 1850, 546. In November, 1849, the number of pupils was 563—the greatest since the opening of the school.

Of 1040 children admitted up to 1st January, 1849, 237 were illegitimate, 742 born of a first marriage, 61 were of parents married a second time.

During the same time there entered 13 children under 7 years old, 222 under 12 years old, and 805 over 12.

The 560 scholars who composed the school in the end of 1849, were occupied as follows: 336 farming, 71 gardening, 141 learning trades, 12 cooks, lamp-lighters in infirmary, &c.

The occupations learned at Mettray are almost all connected with the labors of the field. Such are the trades of the wheelwright, blacksmith, farrier, carpenter, mason, wooden-shoe maker, shoemaker, tailor, rope-maker, sail-maker. The pupils have not made any additional clearings; but they have dug a hundred acres of land, eighteen inches deep. They have also made and repaired all the roads of the school and the farm. The soil of the latter, although presenting some difficulties on account of the boulders scattered over it, is nevertheless, in general, fertile. It produces grain of all kinds, wine, cider, various fruits, legumes, fodder, madder, &c.

The decree of the Provisory Government which put an end, in the beginning of 1848, to labor in the prisons and benevolent institutions, forced the authorities of Mettray to close half their workshops, and to send the hands to agricultural labor; which explains the large number of pupils employed there.

This change has not taken place without great embarrassments, and difficulties of daily occurrence. All peculiarities and characters are not fit for agricultural labor. The apprentice to a carpenter, a wheelwright, or blacksmith, who was just about becoming a journeyman, regretfully remembers his trade; becomes disgusted with the labor of the farm; and murmurs, and is dissatisfied at the government which condemns him to involuntary labor. It is not now, as formerly, the preference or the talent of the children which must be consulted, but the necessities of the new situation of the school.

Notwithstanding these difficulties, the conduct of the pupils has continued good, as is shown by the register of honor. The average number of names in this register, during 1849, has been 224; of whom are registered—

For the first time,.....	56	For the fourth time,.....	22
For the second time,.....	29	For the fifth time,.....	19
For the third time,.....	18	For the sixth time,.....	16

For the seventh time,.....	12	For the eleventh time,.....	5
For the eighth time,.....	10	For the twelfth time,.....	4
For the ninth time,.....	9	For the thirteenth time,.....	4
For the tenth time,.....	8	For the fourteenth time,.....	5

And one, each of the following numbered times—fifteenth, sixteenth, seventeenth, eighteenth, nineteenth, twentieth, twenty-first.

In 1847, of 509 pupils, were registered 226 names; in 1848, of 522 pupils, were registered 257 names; and the same year 46 names were erased. The children remain in the school, in general, for a period of not more than three years; and as the register of honor is written up every three months, it is easy to see why the number of names entered more than twelve times, is very small.

Since the opening of the school, 528 pupils have been put in situations, 105 of whom were placed during 1849. Of these 528—150 are in military service, either by conscription or voluntary enlistment—127 in the army, and 23 in the navy; 17 are married, and most of them have children; 150 have remained of irreproachable deportment; 26 have conducted moderately well; 6 have run away from their guardians; 46 have relapsed. Of these last, 33 are from towns, and 19 from Paris—the remaining 11 from the country. Their number may at first sight appear painfully large, but on considering the condition in which these children have been placed, it seems surprising that it is not greater; for, of 528 children leaving during ten years, 43 were foundlings; 46 are of parents re-married, (step-children;) 222 have neither father or mother; 106 are illegitimate; 18 are of parents living in concubinage; 142 are of families of bad reputation; 77 are of parents now in prison.

With such parentage, was there not good reason to fear for their future?

At Mettray, as at most other schools of the same class, it is often noticed that the children sent from the towns show repugnance to agricultural labor. Of 200 pupils from the department of the Seine, 9 only have finally settled in that employment. These children belonged mostly to families of mechanics, who spoke contemptuously, in their letters, of rural occupations. The children born in the country fortunately have different feelings.

The annual reports furnish interesting details of the nature and results of the patronage extended to the dismissed pupils, and of the efforts made to find them situations. The success of these operations in 1848 and 1849, has surpassed the expectation of the directors. The number of pupils in situations increases yearly, and forms a numerous outside population, constituting really a second school, outside the first. The correspondence of the officers with these young people is daily, and requires special agents and continual care. There is, in truth, almost no end to the assistance given to the pupils of Mettray. The establishment sustains to-day more than 509 pupils, whom it has really adopted, and whom it watches vigilantly; and this number is increasing daily. But this occasions no fears to the authorities of the school, because they are convinced that for so good a work, there will never be any lack of sympathy.

The pupils are permitted, when out of work, and until there is a good situation found for them, to re-enter the school and take their place temporarily in the family of which they formed a part. This receives them like a brother, and divides its food with them.

The pupils who continue to conduct themselves well for two years after leaving Mettray, receive from the directors a symbolic ring with the device, "Faithfulness surpasses all," (*Loyauté passe tout.*)

The penalty of continued misconduct is the replacement of the pupil in the central establishment. This was inflicted during 1848 but three times—twice for immorality, and once for assisting in an attempt to run away.

The sanitary condition of the school is very satisfactory, and the number of deaths has been very small. From its foundation in 1840 to 1849, during 10 years, it has lost only 59 children. The number and per centage of deaths during that period has been as follows:

Year.	Number.	Rate.	Per cent.	Year.	Number.	Rate.	Per cent.
1840 .....	2	1 to 51	= 2	1845 .....	4	1 to 84	= 12
1841 .....	7	1 to 26	= 4	1846 .....	7	1 to 76	= 12
1842 .....	1	1 to 40	= 2½	1847 .....	10	1 to 50	= 2
1843 .....	3	1 to 47	= 2½	1848 .....	17	1 to 51	= 5
1844 .....	5	1 to 144	= ½	1849 .....	8	1 to 134	= ½



Of the 17 pupils deceased in 1848, thirteen were diseased with pulmonary consumption, one with typhoid fever, one with tuberculous meningitis, one with scrofulous consumption, and one with dropsy. In 1849, of four deaths, two were from pulmonary consumption, one from typhoid fever, and one from scrofula. This small mortality is the more surprising, because cholera and dysentery made great ravages in 1849 in Tours and the vicinity.

The amount of mortality depends especially upon the health of the children when they arrive at the schools. According to the reports of the physicians employed at Mettray, that place is perfectly healthful. The pupils have up to this time escaped all the epidemic maladies which have ravaged the country. Investigation of the register shows that the number of children admitted to the infirmary decreases in proportion to the increase of the length of their stay in the school; which proves that their constitutions are invigorated under the regimen there established.

Of 1184 children admitted at Mettray, up to December 31, 1849, 717 came completely ignorant; 270 had some notions of reading; 143 knew how to read; 54 only knew how to write.

The pupils have 14 hours of school instruction a week, divided as follows: Religious instruction, 2 hours; reading, writing, and arithmetic, 10 hours; vocal music, 2 hours. The chaplain also teaches the catechism an hour every day, to those children who have not received their first communion—generally 9-10ths of the whole. The elementary instruction given to the pupils is equivalent to that received by the mechanics in the towns. The classes are formed in each family under the direction and supervision of the head instructor. The chiefs and sub-chiefs have assistants chosen from among the pupils, and who receive daily a special lesson two hours long from the head instructor. At certain periods of the year, each family selects six of its best scholars, who, together with those selected by the other families, write compositions. These exercises are followed by the delivery of prizes. By this double arrangement, of the daily classes in the families, and the meeting of them all, is secured all that emulation which springs from the strife of many competitors.

One of the general inspectors of primary schools, who was recently sent to Mettray by the minister of public instruction, sums up as follows the amount of instruction given at the time of his visit:

"The pupils are children deprived, for the most part, until they come to Mettray, of all instruction, moral or intellectual. All that is indispensable for them is the first rudiments of reading, writing, and arithmetic, and instruction in religion. In addition to this, however, have been taught to the more intelligent, linear drawing and singing church music. Lessons in vocal and instrumental music are given to the best pupils, by way of reward.

Upon the whole, I am of the opinion that the school of Mettray deserves the testimony of your highest good wishes, and that it will be proper to grant to it a subsidy from the public funds, for the increase of the joint school established there for foremen and pupils."

Besides the practical instruction resulting from the employing of the pupils in agriculture, they attend, once a week, a course of lessons in agriculture, horticulture and veterinary practice. The directors of Mettray propose to adopt for this course the course of study of the agricultural schools; they also intend to establish a special agricultural school for young persons other than the members of the school proper, who may wish to study such a course, regarding for this purpose the usual course of cultivation in the neighborhood.

The division of the pupils into families is a characteristic of the discipline at Mettray: each family occupies a separate building, containing its dormitory, refectory, and school. This house is 39 feet long by 21½ feet wide, and containing a basement and two stories. The outer room of the basement serves for a workshop; in some of the houses it is divided into compartments by a partition low enough to permit a single overseer in the middle, to inspect all the divisions, and high enough to prevent the children, when seated, from seeing each other, or communicating. The air circulates in the open space above, so as to keep all the compartments at the same temperature, whatever the number of children employed in each. The first and second stories are each thrown into one spacious room, which, by an ingenious arrangement, serves in turn as dormitory, refectory, play-



room in bad weather, and school-room. Two beams, fixed by a hinge at one end are erected against the wall, one on each side of the door. To arrange the refectory, these are lowered and rested on uprights; in which position they separate the room into two divisions, leaving a passage in the middle for the overseers; boards are laid crosswise the room, upon the beams, resting upon them and the wall, and the refectory is ready. To prepare the dormitory, instead of the boards are arranged hammocks, stowed along the walls, which are taken down and hung to the beams. These hammocks are slung parallel to each other, but so that of every two children, the head of one is toward the wall, and of the other toward the beam. This arrangement hinders talking, and facilitates supervision. Above each is a cupboard containing the effects of the pupil, which he is required to keep very neatly.

At one end of the room is a small alcove shut in from it by blinds, permitting the occupant to look through without being seen. Here the "chief of the family" sleeps. He has the supervision of two sections of 20 children each, and is assisted by a "sub-chief" and two "elder brothers," chosen from among the pupils.

This arrangement is the same for all the houses except two, one of which serves for the lodging of the chaplain, and the other contains the business offices of the school. The space of 33 feet, which separates the houses from each other, is occupied by sheds which serve as depositories for farming, and for shelter from rain. The house where the youngest of the children are lodged has been placed, by a touching inspiration, under the protection of Mary, the patron of the afflicted and of the motherless. The other houses have carved upon their fronts the names of the individuals or towns whose liberality contributed to the foundation of Mettray.

The ten houses are arranged upon two sides of a spacious court, planted with shrubs and covered with turf. At one end of it is the church, a simple and majestic structure, rustic yet elegant; at the other is a pavilion which serves as a dwelling house for M. de Metz, one of the directors. In front of this are erected the mast and spars of a ship, with their rigging and sails. This apparatus, which is quite perfect, is to be used for the exercises of the naval apprentices. It was presented to the school by the minister of marine.

To the right and left of the church are two buildings containing a large school-room, a store-room of farming tools and models, lodgings for assistants; behind it is the house of correction, surrounded with a walled court-yard. This is a small prison consisting of cells, built so as to form a prolongation to the church; so that the children when shut up may attend divine service, and see the priest at the altar, without leaving their cells, or seeing one another. This is arranged simply by drawing a screen.

Around the house of correction are arranged the farm-yards and buildings, a handsome range of stables for cattle, barns, a piggery, horse-stables, a dairy, &c.; and a little further the cemetery. The principal stable, which can accommodate fifty head of cattle, is divided lengthwise by a wide passage, on both sides of which are arranged the mangers.

Near the entrance to the establishment, but a little on one side, is a separate building containing the infirmary, the laundry, the school of foremen, the apartments of the sisters of charity, the kitchen, the wash-room, the bakery, the shop, &c.; before it is the gymnasium and its apparatus; behind it, the kitchen-garden.

All the buildings have been erected after the plans of the architect M. Blouet, who has himself directed the operations in the most honorably disinterested manner. From the accounts which we have seen, it appears that each house for pupils cost \$1,520; the cow-house \$5,089.40, and the chapel and prison, \$18,934.20. Adding to the price of each house the sum of \$480 for movables and other expenses, we have a total of \$2,000; equal to an annual expenditure of \$100 for each family, and of \$2.50 per pupil.

The cemetery which stands some distance from the buildings, forms a parallelogram, where the graves are arranged in regular order. At the head of each is planted a cypress; in the middle of the cemetery is erected a cross. The "elder brothers" have the care of the cemetery. All the children attend the funerals; and the directors, on these occasions, address them in simple and touching words, which make upon their minds the impression which the funeral ceremony makes upon their imagination.

The expenses of the school are so calculated as to furnish each pupil with necessities, but with no superfluities.

The bedding consists of a simple hammock, a small grass mattress, a pillow, pair of sheets, and one or two coverlids, according to the season.

The wardrobe given to each pupil at his admission, contains,

1 shirt, \$1.20; 2 blouses, \$1.34; 3 pair pantaloons, \$2.07; 2 pair gaiters, \$0.30  
1 cap, \$0.40; 1 straw hat, \$0.25; 1 pair shoes, \$1.20; 1 pair wooden shoes  
\$0.23; 2 blacking-brushes, \$0.10; 1 hair-brush, \$0.05; 1 comb-brush, \$0.05  
1 comb, \$0.05; 1 black neckcloth, \$0.20; 1 red do., \$0.15; 1 woolen blouse  
\$1.21; 1 woolen waistcoat for winter, \$1.00; 1 pair drawers of fustian for winter  
\$0.40; total, \$10.20.

The shirts, and washed clothes in general, are owned in common; and are changed often enough to obey the requirements of neatness. These clothes include for each child 3 shirts, 3 handkerchiefs, and 2 pair winter stockings.

At leaving, the pupil also receives a complete wardrobe, viz., 2 pair pantaloons, 2 blue blouses, 1 waistcoat, 1 cap, 1 pair suspenders, 3 cotton shirts, 2 cravats, pocket-handkerchiefs, 3 pair under stockings, 1 pair shoes; of which the expense is estimated at \$6.00.

The labor and age of the children require substantial nourishment, which is furnished as follows:

Two days per week.

Bread, 26½ lb. (750 gr.) costing,.....	\$0.03.6
Dinner; meat, four-tenths of a pound, legumes, bread, and soup,...	0.02
Supper; potatoes and butter; salt and onions, .....	0.01
Drink, .....	0.00.4
	<hr/>
	\$0.07

Five days per week.

Bread, 26½ lb., .....	\$0.03.6
Dinner; beans or other legume, butter, salt, onions, .....	0.00.6
Supper; legumes, butter, .....	0.01.6
Drink, .....	0.00.4
	<hr/>
	\$0.06.2

The weekly board of each pupil at Mettray cost, September, 1849, \$0.45; at the reform school of Ruyselede, at the same time, it was not over \$0.28.

The daily arrangement of time varies with the seasons. [*See appendix.*]

At entering the school, the pupil is interrogated as to his birth, the condition of his family, the fault which brought him before the court, and in short all the details of his short and often sad history. This information is entered in a register, where also is written afterwards whatever concerns each pupil, his stay at the school, his conduct and situation after his departure. An examination of this moral account is very interesting; it shows the good effect of the management and discipline of the establishment. We made minute investigations into the elements of these modest annals, for the purpose of preparing a similar system, which we have introduced into the reform school at Ruyselede.

After having been examined, the pupil is placed in a family, and set at work either on the farm or in a workshop, in a manner suitable to his age and strength, and as much as possible, to his individual fitness. It has been considered proper to teach or continue the child in the occupation of his family, if it have an honest one, for the pupil, at the expiration of his term, should naturally return to his parents, and render them his services. This very practical consideration demands respectful attention.

The classification by families establishes among the pupils who compose them a sort of community of interest and bond of brotherhood. All feel under obligations to each, and each to all. Interest and emulation are excited among the pupils with as much skill as propriety. Part of the work is given out by tasks; and the self-respect of the pupils urges them to show themselves worthy of this mark of confidence. They are taught to consider it honorable to be useful to their comrades, and especially to their masters; and accordingly none are employed in detached services; for cooking, baking, in the kitchen-garden and infirmary, in waiting upon the foremen's table, except those whose conduct has been good. From time to time are held general meetings of the pupils in the workshops; the children decide on each others merits, and the highest receive a small individual reward,

which is placed in the savings-bank. No regular wages are ever given for labor. Neither the payments nor prizes, of which we have spoken, are given, except to pupils whose names are upon the register of honor. The distribution is made once a week for the school, and once a month for the workshops; the amount may average \$5.00 per pupil. The elder brothers have a special payment of \$0.20 a month, besides a ration extra on Sunday, and for them, likewise the payments made for labor and good conduct are doubled.

The classification of the pupils by families, as above remarked, is the peculiar characteristic and the pivot of the discipline of the school. The families are formed by means of a nucleus, around which are arranged and aggregated the new pupils. This plan allows of the preservation of the family feeling, and of its peculiarities and associations. The regulations inserted after this notice give complete information as to the organization and discipline of the families, and the privileges and duties of the chiefs, sub-chiefs, and elder brothers.

The elder brothers, chosen by the pupils within each family, can not inflict punishments; they only note marks for ill conduct. These bad marks are read by a director, on Sunday, in the general meeting of all the officers and pupils. In this same meeting, the director gives a detailed account of the situation of each family, distributes penalties and rewards, gives news from pupils gone and in places, reads extracts from their correspondence, and communicates all matters of interest to the school.

Each chief of a family makes a special report on the conduct of the pupils; this is read at the meeting of the chiefs of families and officers, which takes place every Saturday afternoon. At this meeting, over which a director presides, is arranged the outline of the report for the general meeting on Sunday, the list of rewards and punishments, &c.

The punishments are as follows:

1. Public admonition;
2. standing still—deprivation of play;
3. dry bread for one or two meals;
4. being shut in a cell on Sunday;
5. imprisonment in lighted cell;
6. ditto, in dark cell, (the duration of this imprisonment is never told, but it is not generally more than two or three days. The imprisoned pupils perform two hours' exercise a day, at an ordinary step, and at the gymnastic step, in the yard around the house of correction. During these exercises, the more culpable wear handcuffs;)
7. dungeon for not more than three days;
8. erasure from register of honor;
9. replacement in the central establishment.

Some offenses are adjudicated by the pupils themselves, who are appointed a jury for that purpose; the directors reserving only the power of moderating the verdict. When a gross offense is committed, the foreman sends the offender to the "hall of reflection," an isolated apartment, where he remains some time before being visited by a director. During this interval, the child recovers from his anger, the director then hears his story, and punishment, if necessary, is never inflicted on him while irritated.

Rewards are individual and collective. The latter are bestowed upon families, and consist of public eulogies, and of presents and tokens of remembrance, which are preserved with care. The others consist of eulogies, public likewise, gifts of articles of daily usefulness, rewards for labor and for application while in school, and favors of different kinds. But the principal encouragement, and that most valued, is registration in the register of honor, which is granted only to pupils who have been three months without punishment, and who have, besides, distinguished themselves for good conduct.

All these ingenious details, showing the high order of intelligence which presides at Mettray, and also a profound knowledge of the character of children, have been more or less imitated in most of the other reform schools, and especially at that of Petit-Bourg, where we find the elder brothers under the name of monitors, the jury of pupils, the weekly meeting of officers, the register of honor, &c.

We have seen that the industrial organization at Mettray received a rude blow by the decree of the provisional government (in 1849) above-mentioned. At the time of our visit, however, the workshops were beginning to be re-established. Of the 11 families in the school, 7 were more especially occupied in agriculture; the 4 others, although furnishing a certain number of agriculturists and horticult-

turists, were chiefly employed in the workshops, at wheelwrighting, blacksmithing, locksmithing, carpentry, shoemaking, tailoring, rope and sail-making.

To have the right of changing to another workshop, the pupil must rank among the first three of his family, and be registered in the register of honor.

The school cultivated, at first, only 30 acres; it has now extended its improvements to more than 500 acres. Of this extent it owns about 37 acres; the remainder is leased from neighboring proprietors.

In 1847, the division as to crops was as follows:

	Acres.		Acres.
Winter wheat,.....	150	Winter vetches, .....	20
Spring " .....	7½	Spring " .....	15
Winter oats,.....	52	Grape vines,.....	20
Spring " .....	80	Meadow,.....	62½
Mangel wurtzel,.....	12½	Hemp,.....	3
Peas, .....	3	Kitchen-garden, .....	22½
Indian corn,.....	10	Jerusalem artichokes, .....	2½
Potatoes,.....	8½	Clover, sanfoin,.....	25
Beans, .....	7½	Wood,.....	10
		Total,.....	491½

There are, moreover,  $15\frac{3}{4}$  acres, occupied by play-grounds, roads, buildings, underwood, and pasture, making a total of 505 acres, the entire domain of the school.

Numerous springs rise from the slopes. A small river and a brook flow the whole length of the farm, from northeast to south. The brook is used to irrigate an extent of  $37\frac{1}{2}$  acres. The river can not be used for that purpose, being used by a number of mills, very near each other. The school has no manufacturing establishment; but it owns a grist-mill with three run of stones, to which might be added a cleaning machine, or a machine for cutting woolen rags. The farming apparatus is sufficient.

Three families of pupils live on three farms worked by the school. A fire which occurred upon the farm of Gaudières, but which was soon put out, occasioned this arrangement. It was supposed that one watchman was not sufficient during the night. Providence, as it always does, brought good out of evil; auxiliary schools have thus been founded, which may serve as models for establishments smaller than Mettray. We know that this system of small schools has long existed in Switzerland and Germany, where it has produced the best results. It has been advocated in France by the Hon. M. de Rainneville, who has put it in practice on his farm of Allonville, near Amiens. M. Achille Duclèsieux has also devoted himself enthusiastically to its introduction into Brittany, having successfully established an experimental school at Saint Ilan, (Morbihan.)

Besides the chief and sub-chief of the family occupying it, there is attached to each farm at Mettray a farming overseer and a female housekeeper. Each farm occupies from 75 to 100 acres. The buildings are so arranged as to contain, besides the barn and stable, the necessary room for the housekeeping and lodging of the family. There is a common kitchen, and a separate room for the chief. The apartment of the pupils is arranged so as to serve in turn for sleeping room, refectory, school-room, and covered play-ground. It is usually from 45 to 52 feet long, and from 23 to 26 feet wide. For securing a healthy atmosphere are used ventilators, in the ceiling. The furniture consists of a hammock for each pupil, three pair of tables, twelve benches, shelves along the wall for stowing property, two cupboards, the sub-chief's bed, and the cooking apparatus and farming tools. An inventory is given in appendix F. The cost of furnishing the establishment, and putting it in working order, may be estimated at (1,100 to 1,200 francs) \$220 to \$240. The school furnishes provisions for, and directs the administration of the three farms, although each of them has its separate accounts, kept by the chief of the family.

In other respects, the regulations and discipline of the detached families upon the farms, are quite the same as those of the families resident at the central establishment. In case of sickness, the pupils are carried to the central infirmary and treated there. Every Sunday the detached families pass the day at the central school, and join in the exercises, meetings, and sports of the other families. Thus is maintained the common bond among them.

Agricultural labor is the principal occupation at Mettray now, and the existing workshops can be considered only as dependencies upon the agricultural establish-

ment. This state of things demands the greatest care in cultivation, which unfortunately is by no means in a satisfactory condition. Being pressed by circumstances, and by the necessity of extending the area of cultivation in proportion to the growing number of inmates, the directors at Mettray have had to struggle with great local difficulties. Much of the land hired requires labor, long, costly, and difficult for children to perform. Many large stones must be moved before the plow or spade can be used. This slow operation is hardly performed before the leases expire. The school, therefore, probably does not recover its advances, and the proprietors of the land, and not the school itself, receive the advantage of its severe labors. Add to this the frequent change of the farming overseers, each using a different system and different processes, and it is easy to account for the unfavorable pecuniary result of the agricultural operations of Mettray. In 1848, this branch of the establishment incurred a considerable debt, which has probably now been paid; but the necessity is demonstrated of a radical and intelligent reform in this department. The directors are seriously occupied about this matter; if we might offer them our advice, it would be, to inquire in the first place if it would not be best to limit cultivation to the land already cleared and in good condition, and to turn the rest, if possible, into meadows. By concentrating upon the former the labor and the manure which have proved insufficient for too extended an area, there would no doubt be obtained crops better, and relatively more abundant. The kitchen-garden in particular should be so enlarged as not only to answer the demands of the establishment, but to yield a surplus, which would probably find a market in the neighborhood and at Tours.

The school at Mettray has ever since its origin enjoyed lively sympathies, commanded not only by its object and its usefulness, but also by the personal character of its founders. General and municipal councils, courts of appeal, civil and commercial tribunals, royal and private families, all have hastened to its aid. Juries have made collections for it. M. Leon d'Ourches has given to Mettray \$32,000. Others, instead of giving money, have generously provided the school with farming tools, clothes, books for the library, pictures, vases, and ornaments for the church. These unostentatious offerings have been considerable. The government has not confined itself to paying all the personal expenses of the children confined there, but has also assisted the establishment with considerable annual appropriations.

The ordinary expenses from 1839 to 1848, were ..	\$117,519.74	
Extraordinary do.,.....	96,297.38	
Total expenses,.....		\$213,817.12
Receipts from without,.....	\$187,365.98	
“ at home,.....	12,071.27	
Total receipts, .....		\$199,437.25
Balance of expenses over receipts,....		\$14,379.87

The annual expense for maintenance of pupils, assistance of dismissed pupils, school of foremen, and advancement of capital, (*amortissement du capital*,) divided by the number of pupils at Mettray, gives the following results :

Year.	Population.	Expense per head per day.	Year.	Population.	Expense per head per day.
1840,.....	57,.....	\$0.46.1	1845,.....	345,.....	\$0.96.9
1841,.....	113,.....	.21.4	1846,.....	400,.....	.27.9
1842,.....	160,.....	.20.9	1847,.....	450,.....	.26.1
1843,.....	188,.....	.28.3	1848,.....	500,.....	.20.1
1844,.....	280,.....	.26.3	1849,.....	536,.....	.19.

It appears that the expense has regularly decreased, according to the increase of the population. This diminution has continued through 1848 and 1849, in spite of the breaking up of the workshops and of the consequent decrease of profits on labor. This result is due to the economy introduced by the directors into different branches of the service. By persevering in this course, reorganizing its mechanical labor, and adopting a system of agriculture which shall put an end to deficits and bring in a profit, the school of Mettray will undoubtedly succeed, in a short time, in overcoming the difficulties which it has hitherto encountered, and in settling its organization upon a firm financial basis. This is the more necessary, since the government, after 1849, pays only 14 cents a day,

instead of 16, for each pupil, and only \$14.00, instead of \$16.00, for wardrobe at entrance.

## APPENDIX.

## A.—EMPLOYMENT OF TIME.

*Summer*

Hours.	SUNDAYS AND FEAST-DAYS.	Hours.	WORKING DAYS.
5.	Rise, arrange beds, and clothes, &c.	5.	Rise, make beds.
5½.	Dressing, washing, &c.; prayer.	5½.	Dress, wash, &c.
6.	General cleaning up.	5½.	Distribution of work.
7.	Breakfast, and play hours.	7½.	Breakfast, and play.
8.	Mass.	8½.	Distribution of work.
9½.	General meeting for discipline.	12½.	End of work.
10½.	Play.	2.	School begins.
11½.	Military exercise · exercise with fire-pump.	3½.	Distribution of work.
1.	Dinner and play.	6½.	Instrumental band practice
2.	Vespers and benediction.	7½.	End of work; put up tools.
3.	Gymnastics.	8.	Supper.
5.	Moral lesson, by director, or school.	8½.	Prayer; evening singing.
6.	Baths, or play.	9.	Bedtime.
7.	Supper.	10.	Curfew.
7½.	Prayer, singing, and arrange property.		
8½.	Bedtime.		
10.	Curfew.		

NOTE.—Elder brothers are chosen the first Sunday of each month.

*Winter Season.*

Hours.	SUNDAYS AND FEAST-DAYS.	Hours.	WORKING DAYS.
6.	Rise, make bed; order, effects.	6.	Rise, make beds.
6½.	Dress, wash, &c.; prayer.	6½.	Dress, wash, &c.
6½.	General cleaning of house, &c.	6½.	Distribution of work.
7½.	Breakfast, and play.	7½.	Breakfast, and play.
8.	Mass.	8½.	Distribution of work.
9½.	General meeting for discipline, &c.	12-45.	End of work.
10½.	Play.	1.	Dinner, and play.
11½.	Exercises; military, and with fire-engine.	2.	Distribution of work.
1.	Dinner, and play.	6.	School.
2.	Vespers, and benediction.	7.	Supper.
3.	Gymnastics.	7½.	Prayer, singing.
5.	Moral instruction, or school.	8.	Bedtime.
6.	Reading class.	10.	Curfew.
7.	Supper.		Instrumental music three times a week, at noon.
7½.	Prayer, singing; ordering, effects.		
8½.	Bedtime.		
10.	Curfew.		

NOTE.—Elder brothers are chosen on the first Sunday of each month.

## B.—REGULATIONS OF INFIRMARY.

1. The infirmary is directed by a sister of charity; it is a place of quiet and repose; silence must always be observed there; order and propriety must always reign there; children making trouble will be marked the first time, and punished by the sister. If they renew their disorderly conduct, they will be removed to a cell, where their medical treatment will be continued.

2. The police regulation of the infirmary belongs to the superior of the sisters of charity, and to the sister having charge there. The pupils must treat them with obedience and respect; failure to do which would be ungrateful.

3. Each bed is numbered.

4. Each pupil entering the infirmary will be taken thither by the chief of the family, who will deliver him directly into the hands of the sister in charge. The sister will enter in a register opened for the purpose, the pupil's name, the letter of his family, the number of the bed he occupies, and the date of his entrance.

5. At the first visit of the physician shall be entered, if practicable, in a special column, the nature of the disease.

6. Two registers shall be opened, one for the entrance and discharge of pupils, and the number of days passed in the infirmary, and the other for prescriptions and medical observations.



7. A journal shall also be kept by the sister, of the conduct of the children in the infirmary, in which she shall enter the punishments inflicted by her, and the offenses requiring severer penalties. The foreman on guard shall come for this journal every Saturday, and carry it to the council, where it shall be read, and shall carry it back every Sunday morning.

8. In the absence of the sister, the pupils shall obey the pupil in charge, who shall make note of all offenses, and report them to the sister.

9. Each pupil shall come to the infirmary dressed in a cap, neckcloth, blouse, pantaloons, and shoes, and shall have his comb and hair-brush. The sister shall give the chief of the family a receipt for the linen and other effects brought by the pupil. If any pupil shall come without the above articles, the pupil in charge of the infirmary shall get them from the chief of the family alone.

10. Every pupil discharged from the infirmary shall be delivered to the foreman on guard, to whom the sister shall send word by the pupil in charge, at a quarter before eight in the evening, on Monday and Friday, when he goes to supper. The foreman on guard, at his return to duty, shall send the pupil to the chief of his family. To facilitate this service, the sister shall give the list of pupils leaving, daily, to the overseer of labor, who shall insert it in his report.

11. The coming of the physician shall be announced by a signal. The pupil in charge of the infirmary shall touch the bell, upon which the foreman on guard shall cause the trumpet to sound. This visit takes place twice a week, on Monday and Friday.

12. The chief of the house of correction shall report to the physician, at each visit, the sanitary condition thereof.

13. No pupil shall be taken to see the doctor without the written certificate of the chief of his family. The night guard is especially charged to take them to the doctor, upon proof that they have such certificate.

14. There shall take place a dressing (pansement) every day at half-past eleven, for sick pupils. The foreman on guard shall conduct them to it regularly, with an elder brother, so that the pupils shall be at the infirmary at half-past eleven.

15. Any pupil falling sick during working hours, shall be put forthwith under charge of the chief of his family, who alone shall have authority to conduct him to the infirmary. In his absence, the sub-chief shall perform this duty in his place.

16. The treatment ordered for pupils sick at the family, shall be explained by a note which the sister shall send to the chief of the family, who shall superintend the execution of the directions.

17. Whenever the directors shall enter the infirmary, all pupils not confined to their beds shall place themselves at the foot of their beds, and remain there until the gentlemen go out.

#### C.—REGULATIONS FOR CHIEF OF FAMILY.

1. The school is divided into families of 40 children. Each of them is directed by a chief, who is under the immediate supervision of the head secretary.

2. The insignia of the chief of a family are two ornaments worked upon the sleeves, and black velvet on the cap. He has authority over all officers of a grade lower than his own.

3. The chief of a family has under his orders a sub-chief and two elder brothers, who assist him in the supervision of the family. He reads, every month, to his sub-chief and elder brothers their duties.

4. The chief of a family has charge of the education of its children. He oversees their primary instruction, under the direction of the teacher. He has charge of their dress and support, attends to their wants, corrects their faults; in a word, he is the father of the family, and is to fulfill all the duties of the station to the children, as if he were so in every respect.

5. The chief of the family keeps the journal and all papers belonging to the family. He has charge of the correspondence of those who can not write, but he is forbidden to mail them until they have been left unsealed at the business office of the administration.

6. He is responsible for all the property and keeping of his house, linen, furniture, bedding, clothing, lighting, in short every thing upon the inventory of the family.

7. The chief of a family should understand the platoon exercise, for the purpose of managing his family the better during general meetings. He presides over all the sports and movements of the family, watches over its order, and its work, the good condition and neatness of his house, and all his children. He makes an inspection of property daily, and one of clothing weekly.

8. He lives all the time with his family. He rises first, and goes to bed last. He keeps at hand the keys of his doors and cupboards, shuts the house at night after curfew, during religious services, Sundays and feast-days.

9. The chief of a family inflicts punishment upon his children, conducts to the parlor those who have committed a grave offense, and to the infirmary those who are sick. He sends to the night-guard, with a written certificate, all children of his family whom the doctor should see, and who are not permitted to be so seen without such certificate.



10. He is to visit at least twice a week, those of his children who are in the cells or the infirmary, and to report such visits to the directors.

11. Every Saturday he receives from the sister having charge of the washing, the clean linen, and every Monday he delivers her the dirty linen. He is forbidden to retain any thing. He receives also for safe keeping all articles given to the good pupils.

12. Whenever the chief of the family is not at the same time foreman of a workshop, he is occupied during working hours in some of the business offices.

13. He directs a division in school, attends the music class, gymnastics, baths, and all the meetings of the whole school.

14. He performs in his turn the service of day and night watchman, and of waiting on visitors.

15. The chief of a family has leave of absence for a day every month, and every year a vacation. Whenever he wishes to be absent from the school, he will notify the secretary the evening before, who will report the same to the directors.

16. The chief of the family is allowed to be up, in his room, until curfew; at which time every one else in the house must be in bed.

17. The chief of the family is recommended not to have any thing about which may tempt the pupils.

18. The chiefs of the families will send all the children to the foremen of the workshops, and the latter will send the children, at their return, to the chiefs; during these movements, the pupils should always be in their ranks. The chiefs of families will not detain any pupil from his work, or call him off from it, without having received written orders therefor.

19. If the chief of a family finds it impossible to perform his duty, from sickness or any other valid reason, he will immediately notify the secretary, who will fill his place.

20. The chiefs of families will call the children down from their meals by sound of trumpet, for the purpose of sending the sick to receive the physician's visit, or the dressing, every day at 25 minutes past one at latest.

21. For communications relating to their duties, the chiefs of families are to report themselves at half-past ten every morning to the director, who will attend to their requisitions, and give his personal attendance at their families, if it should be required.

#### D.—REGULATIONS OF SUB-CHIEF OF FAMILY.

1. Each family is divided into two sections. The sub-chief commands one of them, under direction of the chief.

2. The insignia of the office of sub-chief are a lace sewed upon the sleeve. He commands all officers of a grade below his own.

3. The sub-chief is under the immediate orders of the chief, and should pay him obedience and respect.

4. The sub-chief assists the chief in supervision, and in taking care of the pupils during play-hours, in the sleeping and eating rooms, and whenever the family is together.

5. He fills the place of the chief, when the latter is absent. He should understand the theory, and be able to command the manoeuvres, of the platoon exercise.

6. The sub-chief notes all offenses committed by the pupils, and reports them to the chief, who alone has power to inflict punishments.

7. The sub-chief keeps the attendance roll of the family, by letters and numbers. He calls the roll three times a day, and keeps himself constantly certified of the presence of the pupils. He marks all the effects of each pupil with his matriculate number.

8. He has special supervision of the pupil in waiting, and of those whose duty it is to clean up after every meal, and on Sundays.

9. The sub-chief teaches one division of pupils. He should be present at music class, exercises, gymnastics, baths, and all times when the school is together.

10. He performs in his turn the duty of day and night watch, of waiting on visitors, and of filling the place of foreman of a workshop.

11. The sub-chief is allowed to sit up in his room at night until curfew, when all others in the house must be in bed.

12. From the first distribution of work until breakfast, the sub-chief may attend in the monitor's class, to complete his education.

13. The sub-chief will not be absent on any pretext, without having notified his chief.

14. The sub-chief has a day's leave of absence every month, and a vacation every year. Whenever he may wish to be absent from the school, he will notify the secretary in writing the evening before, who will report the request to the directors.

15. The sub-chiefs are recommended not to have any article about them, which may tempt the pupils.

16. Whenever from sickness, or other valid reason, the sub-chief can not perform his duties, he will forthwith notify the secretary, who will supply his place.

17. The sub-chief will not join in any of the plays of the pupils. He is forbidden to read or write, during the hours of recreation, with his colleagues, or any one else.

**NORM.**—The best chief is not he who speaks loudest and punishes oftenest, but he who gives just commands, whose words are concise, persuasive, and such as to command respect, and who punishes seldom.

The intelligent chief should study the character of his children, so as to be able to adapt his words and manner to the age and peculiarity of each.

**E.—REGULATIONS FOR THE ELDER BROTHERS.**

1. The elder brother is chosen by the pupils, by secret ballot. He must be chosen from among the names on the register of honor. If the director approves the choice which has been made, he announces the appointment for one month, gives him an embrace, and attaches to his sleeve the lace which is the ensign of his office. The elder brother will merit the title and the confidence bestowed upon him, by exemplary conduct.

2. The elder brother may be re-elected.

3. There are to be two elder brothers in each family.

4. At the first sound of the trumpet the elder brother will rise, will order the rest to rise, will dress himself promptly, assist the young children, and help the chief and sub-chief in the supervision of the dormitory, and of washing and dressing.

5. In the family and workshop, in all the exercises within the house, and wherever he may be, the elder brother will assist his chiefs in supervision, will see that all movements from place to place, within the house, are made with propriety, silence, order, and regularity. He will reprimand pupils committing the slightest error, and will mark in a book used for that purpose, those who do not obey his first admonition.

6. When the family is together, the first elder brother carries the colors, and stands at the right hand of the first rank; the second behind him, in the rear rank. They will dress the ranks of the pupils, and should learn to direct the manoeuvres of the platoon exercise.

7. The elder brother will assist the chief and sub-chief in supervision of sports. It is there that he is to occupy himself earnestly in preventing disputes, imprudence, and impropriety, in reproofing gross expressions, and forbidding dangerous games.

8. It is the special duty of the elder brother, through the pupil in charge, to maintain the dormitories, the interior of the house, and the sheds, in constant neatness.

9. The elder brother, under direction of the chief and sub-chief, will announce bed time, and will see that the proper movements are orderly made.

10. The elder brother, who shall see any grave violation of rules, shall immediately report it to the chief of his family, or the foreman of his workshop.

11. An elder brother is designated every day in turn, to assist at the dressing (at the infirmary.)

12. The elder brother is exempt from all extraordinary services.

We can not better close this extended account of the Mettray institution, than by quoting the published opinions of an English and American observer.

M. D. Hill, Esq., recorder of Birmingham, thus speaks of a visit to Mettray in 1848: "In the year 1848 I made my way to Mettray, near Tours, in France. I was received with the utmost kindness, and admitted into the fullest confidence by M. Demetz, the illustrious founder of the institution—a judge who descended from the bench because he could not endure the pain of consigning children to a prison when he knew their *future* would be made worse than their *past*. I examined, or rather cross-examined, each department of the institution, with all that unamiable incredulity which thirty years' practice at the bar may be supposed to have generated; I began with a sort of prejudice—a determined suspicion—fighting my way backward, step by step, until, as proofs advanced, the conclusion was forced upon me that my position was untenable. I found that at Mettray, where they possess and exercise the power of compulsory retention, and where, for desertion, a boy is sent back to the prison from which he had been withdrawn—the amount of reformation reached to what I at first thought the incredible proportion (but which I fully verified) of 85 per cent."

Mr. Coleman, in his *European Agriculture*, after giving a brief description of Mettray, as an agricultural institution, remarks: "When one looks at the innumerable herds of children, turned, as it were, adrift in a great city, not merely tempted, but actually instructed, stimulated, and encouraged in crime, and observes them gradually gathering in and borne onwards on the swift current with increasing rapidity to the precipice of destruction, until escape becomes almost impossible, how can we enough admire the combined courage, generosity, and disinterestedness, which plunges in that it may rescue some of these wretched victims from that frightful fate which seems all but inevitable? I do not know a more beautiful, and scarcely a more touching, passage in the Holy Scriptures than that which represents the angels in Heaven as rejoicing over a repenting and rescued sinner. It is, indeed, a ministry worthy of the highest and holiest spirits, to which the Supreme Source of all goodness and benevolence has imparted any portion of his Divine nature.

"If we look at this institution even in a more humble and practical view, as affording a good education in the mechanical and agricultural arts, its great utility can not be doubted: and much good seed will be sown here, which, under the blessing of God, is sure to return excellent and enduring fruits.

"I should have said before, that there is connected with the institution a hospital which was a model of cleanliness, good ventilation, and careful attendance; all the services of which were rendered by those indefatigable doers of good, the Sisters of Charity."

## VISIT OF LORD LEIGH TO THE REFORMATORY ESTABLISHMENT AT METTRAY.

THE following notice of the establishment at Mettray is from the pen of Lord Leigh, who has employed a short visit in France in the useful object of gathering personal experience and information of the various institutions of this class in the country of our neighbors and allies. They were addressed in a letter to a member of the committee employed in carrying out the plans of such an institution in Warwickshire, in which the noble writer has from the first taken an active part. The letter, intended only for the use of those acting in his own country, may be equally useful to others.

"According to your request, I propose to send you a short account of one or two of the reformatory institutions which I have seen in France, but I shall confine my observations chiefly to Mettray. The conduct of the Colonie Agricole of Mettray has the advantage of resting entirely with our admirable friend M. Demetz, who first set the institution on foot about 17 years ago, in company with a friend, the Vicomte de Bretignières de Courteilles. It has been supported by private subscription, by his own and his friend's benevolence, and by assistance from government at the rate of 70c., or 7d., per head a day, with a gift of 35f. on the admission of the child into the colony, and 35f. at the close of two years more, with an annual subscription of 50,000f. or (2,000l. English money,) lately diminished to 25,000f. or 1,000l. The present number of children is 681, and of *employés* fed at the expense of the institution, 56. The buildings stand in the middle of a flat open plain, remote from any town or large village, without wall or enclosure of any sort, for the purposes at least of confinement. The church stands in the middle of the buildings at the further end. It is open at all times, but service is only performed in it on Sundays. M. Demetz observed on this point that he objected to daily service, on the ground that workmen in every day life would be unable to attend it, and that to drop a duty which had been inculcated as one had an injurious effect upon the mind. The *colon*, when first he found himself unable to attend daily service, would feel that he was neglecting a duty, and when at war with his own conscience would soon give up going to church at all. In speaking also of La Grande Trappe, which is in the hands of monks, M. Demetz said that, although he had not seen it, he feared upon this principle that it was probable, that when once the young *détenu* restored to the world found out how dissimilar real life was from what he had hitherto seen of it, and the impossibility of carrying out the religious practice to which he would have been most likely trained in La Grande Trappe, there would be great danger that his eyes over-opened, and the constraint once removed, he would become wholly reckless and neglectful of the observances which the lawful business of the world still gave time for.\* At the same time, the children have full liberty, the church doors being open, if they wish to spend a few minutes in prayer to do so, but if they desire to do this it must be during the hours placed at their disposal for play. These hours are the hour after dinner and the two half hours after breakfast and tea.

The boys are divided into families of, in general, from thirty to fifty each, to which families they remain attached during the whole period of their detention; and when they return to visit Mettray, when out of a situation, they invariably seem to turn again to their old family. We ourselves saw a promising young soldier who had been wounded in the Crimea, and was now quartered at Tours, revisiting his old haunts and the house in which he had been brought up, and when the children were being marshaled—as they always are to the sound of music in marshal order preparatory to meals or return to labor—assisting in get-

---

\* As this observation of M. Demetz is founded on a mistake as to fact, I beg leave through your wide-spread journal to inform the public, from personal knowledge, that the *détenus* at La Grande Trappe hear mass only on Sundays and holidays, as at Mettray, that the system pursued at La Grande Trappe is mainly the very same as at Mettray in every respect, with this exception,—that the brothers of the third order who work the reformatory at La Grande Trappe have no pay, but volunteer their services out of charity.—*Letter to Editor of Times by George B. Burder.*

ting the little ones of his former family into their proper rank and place. There are twelve houses, (exclusive of the farmhouses,) for the boys, divided into three stories; the two upper form the sleeping and living rooms, while the ground floor is used for a workshop; the family division, however, is not carried out in the workshops, as boys of various families are brought together to learn the same trade. M. Demetz observes that it is very desirable to teach boys who come from towns, and who belong to families practicing them, trades, as he says that he has found by experience and former failures the impossibility of inducing town boys to attach themselves to country life. He started with the idea that he might exclude trades altogether, but his long experience has taught him that this did not answer; nevertheless, he makes a very great point of agricultural occupations, and something rather less than half the whole number of children are employed directly upon the farms. To return to the family division, to which I conceive the success of Mettray to be greatly due. I am of opinion that this system alone allows of attention to every individual child, which is indispensable to the reformation of each individual character, while it procures for children, who have perhaps never experienced them before, the happy influences inspired by the love of home. A *chef de famille* or *employé* has the constant superintendence of one of these families. He is assisted by one of the *élèves*, or young men in training to become masters hereafter, who does not, however, remain permanently attached to one family; and by two *frères aînés*, who are chosen from among and by the boys themselves.

The *frères aînés* are in the position of monitors, and are distinguished by a red mark upon the sleeve of their jackets. M. Demetz is at very great pains, in introducing new boys, to place them judiciously as regards the families. For example, in France there is a great difference of character observable in different provinces, and he takes care that the volatile nature of one disposition shall be balanced by the steadiness, not to say stolidity, of another. The family division presents great advantages on the introduction of any number of boys into the institution; for when there is an accession of bad boys—who, if turned in with ever so great a number of others, would remain a nucleus of evil, attracting all the evil round it till it swelled and corrupted the whole mass—by a careful subdivision, and by introducing but one or two boys into a family of improved and improving character, the spirit of evil is probably soon repressed by the preponderating good around, and no permanent injury is done. To return to the *chef de famille*. He occupies a little closet at the end of the children's bedroom, which is in shape an elongated square; therefore, it is the more possible for him to overlook the whole through a little window opening into his room, added to which the children lie with head and feet alternating. No conversation whatever is allowed during the hours for work, meals or sleep. The hammocks, (which the children at Mettray all sleep in,) were recommended to us on many grounds, although I am not prepared to give a decided opinion myself upon them. M. Demetz said that in summer the boys lie in them in comfort and decency, with scarcely any covering whatever, and in winter very little makes them snug and warm, not to mention the great economy of material and of space. The supports for the hammocks on the outer side are in the day time hooked to the walls, and at night, at a given signal from the *chef*, are dropped into grooved supports, projecting from the posts which support the roof and stand out in the room. Though stout beams, they were easily lifted by the children together. All retire to rest at the same hour, only the little ones get up later in the morning. A light is kept burning in the rooms all night. Half the children sleep on one floor, half on another. The *chef de famille* sleeps near one half, and the *élève* near the other. The children have three meals a day—meat twice a week. The cost of their diet averages forty-five centimes, or  $4\frac{1}{2}d$ . The trades the children learn are various—tailoring, shoemaking, *sabot* making, with blacksmiths', wheelwrights', and carpenters' work; and they also make agricultural implements. They take turns to assist in the domestic services of the house and kitchen. Washing is done every day in an admirably organized laundry, and the boys wash their own clothes. It is the *chef d'atelier* who adjudges the little rewards in money which are given to the best workmen among the *colons* at the close of every three months, to the amount of about  $3\frac{1}{2}f$ . for the best, with a graduated scale down to the 8th, if the family consists of from forty to fifty boys, but only down to the 4th, if it consists of from twenty to thirty.

The *chef de famille*, however, puts his veto upon the reward if the conduct of the child in the family has not been satisfactory. Whatever the reward may be, it is always doubled if the recipient is in the position of a *frère aîné*. Part of the money is put into the savings' bank at Tours, and, I believe, one-fourth is at the disposal of the child, at the discretion of the *chef*, but the account books are entirely in the hands of the controller of the finances of the establishment. A boy in receipt of any money has to make payment for any part of his dress which requires to be renewed before the stated time arrives at which fresh clothing is given out, which otherwise is all furnished by the institution. On the other hand, if his clothes are found in good condition at such time, he receives the benefit of it by having the money which would have been laid out in clothes placed to his account. The dress is uniform and extremely simple, and just what would be worn by the boys if working at home—viz.: a plain brown blouse or short tunic, canvas trousers, *sabots*, and straw hat. The money in the bank is paid to the boy on his leaving Mettray, unless, by his desire, it is allowed to remain yet longer. The boys wash in open sheds, attached to the various houses, and connecting them at the back. There is a large fountain at hand, from which they carry the water in large tubs to the sheds. Twice a week they are taken in divisions to a reservoir to bathe and learn to swim in summer.

The strictest discipline is observed, and nothing is overlooked. Dry bread is an occasional punishment, but the cell is a more frequent one. Every fault which has called for reproof is registered, and a most careful and detailed conduct book is kept, showing the behavior of every child. Here are seen at a glance his name, previous residence, habits, health, appearance in detail, the crime for which he was convicted, every possible information which can be gleaned with regard to himself and his family, with a most careful and complete report of his behavior since admission. When a fault calls for punishment, before it is inflicted upon the child, he is made to retire into the cell which takes for the time being the name of *Salle de Reflexion*; he is kept there for an hour or so, and meanwhile the *directeur* reviews his conduct book, takes into careful consideration the previous circumstances and conduct of the boy, his general character, his advantages and disadvantages, and, having carefully weighed them, and taken time to collect himself, and give the boy leisure to reflect upon his fault, he is in a position to pronounce, as far as human discernment goes, the exact measure of punishment deserved by the child. Those confined to cells have an hour's exercise a day in chopping wood, or in some similar occupation. The cells are bare rooms, with sufficient light and air for health. Punishment is administered for apparently trifling faults. We found four boys in four cells on the occasion of our visit. One was there for refusing to sing the day before, two for taking chestnuts, and the other for being found near the cellar, where he had no business to be. I think it will be allowed that these are not offenses of a very grave nature, and, as the discipline is so strict, that it is satisfactory, there were so few boys from a larger number. The cells are so placed and arranged that those in them, although unseen, can be admitted to take part in the church service, at the back of the altar of the church, on Sundays. Eight Sisters of Charity undertake the housekeeping of the establishment; an account of all that will be required of them on the coming day is handed in to them the evening before, by the controller of the finances.

There are six farms attached to the institution. The land consists altogether of 260 hectares, or about 520 English acres. The farming is overlooked by a very gentlemanlike person in the pay of M. Demetz. The land appears well cultivated, and a large stock of horses, cows, and pigs are kept. It must be an excellent thing, I think, for children to have the care and tending of dumb animals—'*Emollit mores, nec sinit esse feros.*' The farm buildings are as simple as possible—just such as the *colons* are likely to find themselves in in after-life. Each of these farms has a separate establishment with a separate kitchen,—there being but one kitchen for the principal stock of buildings which I have hitherto spoken of. To each farm is attached a *chef de famille* and a respectable farm laborer and his wife, who is housekeeper and cook. The boys employed on the farms only associate with the body of boys employed otherwise on Sundays and feast days, when they go up to enjoy their holidays together. They are employed to work hard, and to adhere altogether to agriculture; they sleep in hammocks like the rest, and sleep, eat, and learn in the same airy barn-like room. The walls in all the rooms are hung here and there with improving prints and engravings, the



subjects being for the most part religious or military. There is a large, rough, wooden and thatched open outhouse put up in a field, where the children are made to break stones in wintry, rainy weather. They do all their work by the piece, so as to excite and accustom each child to industry. The boys, moreover, are made to practice gymnastic exercises, and every thing they do, they seem to do heartily.

A ship has been put up—on dry ground, of course—for the boys to gain as much knowledge as they can of seamanship, and an old sailor is engaged to instruct them. Some of the boys, also, are formed into a fire-brigade, and have rendered at times substantial assistance in the neighborhood, and only the other-day saved the village church of Mettray from destruction by fire. The children are taught singing, but only as a means to the grand ends; and in order not to give an opportunity for individuals to distinguish themselves, or for the creation of fine solos, they are very much taught to sing in parts, or at least only in masses; and if a boy shows any turn for drawing, he receives a little instruction in it, but only in linear drawing. Evasion is looked upon with much severity. If a boy has escaped, a flag is hoisted on the top of the church by day, and a lamp by night. A reward of from 30f. to 40f. is given to the person bringing the boy back. It is scarcely possible, without a personal visit to Mettray, to form a correct idea of the amount of study and attention which is devoted to the consideration of every particular, and of every child in particular. The family division makes this easy by concentrating the attention of the several *employés* allotted to the same number of children; if assembled in an undivided mass the same amount of good could never possibly be effected, for the attention of each one would be divided by the whole number; nor could the interest in each other be awakened which now exists between the *chef de famille* and his young people. As for the *employés* themselves, who are gentlemen by nature, if not always by birth, it is quite impossible to see and converse with these intelligent, well-educated, and benevolent men without feeling how great must be their elevating influence upon the character and general tone of the boys. The two principal *employés* are in receipt of 160l. per annum each. They are of a standard of intelligence and ability which would insure their advancement in any profession, and one feels their devotion to be the more admirable. M. Demetz has been very particular in placing his *employés* in a respectable and comfortable position, and has built for the two principal ones excellent houses a little apart from the houses for the boys. The wives of these two gentlemen are perfect ladies, and we had the pleasure of meeting them at dinner at M. Demetz's house.

There are many things at Mettray, suggested by the military spirit of the French, which would at first sight appear, perhaps, impossible to carry out in an English institution; but I see no reason why the feeling of 'honor,' which I believe to be as strong in an English child as in a French one, should not be appealed to with advantage in an English reformatory. Why should not we have the table of honor hung up where every one can see it, upon which is inscribed the name of every child whose conduct during the last three months has not called for punishment? With regard to the almost military discipline and order with which the children go through their movements before and after work or meals, I consider that by it a great saving of time is made, and five or ten minutes upon every change of movement are saved which would be otherwise lost in collecting and adjuring stragglers, both young and old.

Let me mention and recommend, too, the box placed within general reach, *pour les objets trouvés*, which is a delicate way of allowing a boy whose temptations have been stronger than his virtue to listen to the reproaches of his conscience, and, without being publicly brought to shame, to restore the theft which lies heavy on his soul.

I will say no more of Mettray at present, except that the instruction given is firmly based upon religion, and includes reading, writing, and arithmetic, but very little beyond it.

Lesson hours do not exceed one or two hours a day. I must add that the children are first received as innocent, and as having sinned without discernment, and therefore irresponsible for their actions; but when they have been once admitted to the benefit of the instructions given them in the institution they are considered to be capable of discernment, and become subject to the strict rules observed in the institution."



The London Times devotes a leading article to the subject of this letter, from which the following passages are taken :

" M. DEMETZ and his enlightened coadjutors evidently do not proceed on the idea of carrying out a general principle. They have entered into a paternal relation with their families of young unfortunates, and have adapted their treatment to characters and emergencies. Nothing but the purest and most ardent philanthropy would lead a man to devote himself to a task compared with which the management of a prison is simple, the making of laws easy, and the work of a missionary interesting. Experience shows that a very moderate amount of zeal and capacity suffices for the duties of jail chaplain. If you want a clergyman for the sole charge of a populous district, you may find plenty who seem to think there is not much martyrdom in the task. But if a man wants to die to the world in good earnest, and henceforth to enjoy no satisfactions but those which arise from the performance of duty, let him learn from M. Demetz, and adopt a family of that ungainly, disappointing, and almost impracticable class, called "juvenile offenders." It is, indeed, the work of an apostle. M. Demetz makes himself "all things to all men" in his dealings with his young *protégés*. He renders their occupation while at Mettray as similar as possible to those to which they will return, and therefore the best preparation for them. He gives them the opportunity of improvement in their trades, and requires such observances of religion, such an arrangement of the hours, such a division into groups, such a system of rewards, such moderate punishments, such a dress, such habits of industry, economy, and cleanliness, such a rule of promotion, such instruction, and even such amusements, and such performance of public duties, as shall render the little world of Mettray as much as possible a preparation for the great world without. A lad who has spent two months in breaking stones learns to take his place at the roadside, but a boy at Mettray is taught all the duties of a citizen. He is even taught to assist in putting out a fire, to chant in the church service, to use his pencil sufficiently for the purpose of trade, to practice gymnastic exercises, to march to the sound of music, to swim, to cook, to wash, to manage cattle, to keep accounts, and to assist, if fit for it, in the management of the rest. Indeed, it strikes one that there are few of us who would not learn something from a course at Mettray ; and that, at least, the raw recruits of our army would be better qualified for service by a little of the multifarious instruction there imparted. There are very few people who have not some charge or other to bring against those who had the conduct of their education on the score of some serious omission. A laborer or an artizan would hardly find a want in the school of Mettray.

It is for the special information of the gentlemen concerned in our new reformatory establishments that Lord Leigh has visited Mettray and drawn up this account. In the discharge of his errand he has enabled the French to compare notes with us, and we have their remarks on our own practice. They are surprised to find that, before we admit a lad into a reformatory institution, we think it necessary first to stigmatize\* him for life, and to incapacitate him for the army or

---

\* My friend, the Rev. Sydney Turner, comments upon your observations and uses these words:—"I must solemnly protest against the philanthropic phrase of not stigmatizing the young criminal by imprisonment before you reform him ;" and further—"With reference to M. Demetz's views on this subject, I know that as lately as August last he was decidedly in favor of preliminary correction, not only as a safeguard to society, but as a means of moral impression and improvement to the boy himself."

Anxious to be supported by the testimony of a friend who visited Mettray last November,

navy, as they suppose, by requiring a preparatory period of imprisonment. It is even so, and certainly the moral benefits of a fortnight's durance must be dearly purchased by the acquisition of an ineradicable stigma. Yet the matter is full of difficulties, which the account before us, full as it is, does not entirely explain. Through what stage, by whose authority, or on what rule of selection, are the inmates supplied to these reformatories; when are they discharged, and what usually becomes of them? Capacious as Mettray appears to be, we should want many such institutions to hold all who might be driven into them by a season of general distress. Many a parent, if not in our rural parishes, at least in our towns, would be only too glad to let his children find their way into a place where they were taught useful trades, good habits, regularity of life, some amount of accomplishments, and, generally, the duties of a good subject, without any stigma. In fact, Mettray is nothing more nor less than an industrial university, a vast boarding-school for the poor. Apart from the associations which would prevail even at Mettray, a boy would learn much more there than he would at any national or other charitable school that we know of. He would learn, in fact, to be a man. Thus the sketch before us assumes a new, and, we must add, a more important character. If it is good for young offenders, it must be better for honest boys; and, if the former require as much, the latter deserve more. Why should not every town child of the working classes be taught arts and accomplishments, which are useful not only to wean from crime, but still more to obviate the tendency? It is, then, to our educational authorities that Lord Leigh's report will be most useful, and we trust that they will not think the school children in their charge too good for 'reformation.' "

---

in company with myself—a high authority himself upon such matters—I wrote to him, before taking notice of Mr. Turner's observations, to ascertain whether he had formed the same opinion as myself as to the light in which M. Demetz regards our law. I quote from his reply:—

"Although M. Demetz has more than once stated to me that he thought a short confinement in a separate cell, before a boy is sent to Mettray, was serviceable to his moral health, he has constantly inveighed against what he considers the unwise provision of our law,—that children must be condemned, and subjected to punishment as criminals, before they are sent to reformatory schools. Indeed, he is so strongly of this opinion, that he told me that one of the principal objects he had in view in visiting England next spring, was to have an opportunity of impressing this upon the leading people here interested generally in the subject, as he was satisfied that we should never arrive at all the success possible in the reformation of youth until the stigma of condemnation should have been removed from them. It is quite true that in almost every case the boys are confined before they are removed to Mettray; but they are sent for that purpose either to La Roquette, in Paris, which, to avoid the name of 'prison,' is called 'Maison d'Education Correctionnelle de Jeunes Détenus;' or to special 'quartiers correctionnels' in the departmental prison—thus again avoiding the injurious name."—*Letter to Editor of Times.*

# ESTABLISHMENT OF ST. NICHOLAS,

PARIS.

REPORT OF E. DUOPETIAUX.

---

In 1827 Monseigneur de Bervanger, at that time directing a charitable association of mechanics under the protection of St. Joseph,\* (the first experiment in those adult classes which have since accomplished so much good,) conceived the idea of opening an asylum for orphan and poor children, for their training to the laborious occupations which must one day support them. He soon collected seven in the garrets of the Faubourg Saint Marceau; such was the modest beginning of an enterprise since so largely developed. By charitable aid it became possible after six months to hire a larger tenement; others were occupied in succession, the rent rising from twelve hundred francs to five thousand. At last, convinced that buildings of its own were necessary to the establishment of the institution upon a substantial footing, Mgr. de Bervanger decided to purchase two roomy houses, one at Paris, 112 Rue de Vaugirard, and the other at Issy, the ancient *château* of that name, now 36 Grande Rue, capable together of accommodating about a thousand children, all boarders.

The Paris house is the principal one, that at Issy being only a sort of auxiliary where the younger children are kept, in preparation for their removal to Paris.

The house in Paris has been portioned out upon a plan which seems to us to contain many defects, especially in regard to classification, and to ease of household services and supervision. The small court which gives entrance from the *Rue de Vaugirard* is lined on one side with cook-shops and refectories, and on the other by the laundry. In front is the building occupied by the management. Behind this building extends a large area divided into a garden for the use of convalescents, and a play-ground. A large building surrounds this area, and stretches on one side quite to the Rue de Vaugirard. The work-shops occupy the basement and first story of this building. Above are the dormitories. The chapel, infirmary and recitation rooms are in the wing that extends toward the street. The buildings have been erected with an economy which we fear has been secured at the expense of strength. Thus, although new, they present a general appearance of dilapidation, which, together with the lack of neatness, makes a sufficiently unfavorable first impression upon the visitor's mind.

Children are not received, except at from eight to twelve years of age. Those less than ten are sent by preference to Issy, where they receive special attention. They are required to bring a copy of their record of baptism, and a certificate of vaccination, unless they have had the small pox. Before final admission, they are

---

\* This association, commenced in 1822, lasted until July 1830. It was composed of nearly seven thousand mechanics of various kinds, a thousand or twelve hundred heads of commercial houses or manufactories also belonging to it under the name of protectors. On Sundays and feast days the members met for divine service; recitations and games occupied the rest of the day. Mechanics holding a commendatory certificate from their cure, were lodged and boarded gratis until employment could be found for them, and schools were open every day at the hour for quitting work.

examined by one of the physicians of the institution. Orphans are required to present a copy of the record of the death of their parents.

The price of board, payable monthly in advance, is four dollars a month for orphans with no parent, and five dollars, for children not orphans. Four dollars are also paid to cover ordinary expenses at the entry of the new pupil. For this moderate sum, the establishment undertakes the general charge of providing for the maintenance, instruction and apprenticeship of the children.

The number of pupils had reached eight hundred in 1845, and nine hundred in 1846. It has varied little since the last date. This number consists of very heterogeneous elements, although some of them belong to poor and honest artisan families; and though there are even some scions of noble families, ruined by the revolutions, most of them have no family, no known parents, no name, and were running in utter abandonment to certain destruction. Charitable societies or generous patrons have rescued them and entrusted them to the care of Mgr. de Bervanger, who alone in the institution knows the secret of their birth. To preserve this secret, each child is designated only by a number by which he is known in the house.

The regulations are the same for all. The diet is adapted to the age, appearance and appetite of the pupils. It is at breakfast, soup and bread; at dinner, three times a week, soup, bread and meat, with a dish of legumes instead of the meat; on the other four days, at lunch, a piece of bread; and at supper, bread, legumes, or salad, or fruit. Sundays a little wine is allowed, and at the annual festivals, a dessert also. The food of the officers scarcely differs from that of the pupils except in quantity, and some slight additions of milk, wine, and fish. The whole is regulated by a bill of fare according to which, the distribution is made.

The establishment furnishes clothes and washing for the children, does their mending, and provides for each a mattress, bolster, two coverlids, two pair of sheets, four pair of stockings, four napkins, two pair of pantaloons for winter and two for summer, a waistcoat, a coat of cloth or knitwork for winter, five blouses, a cap, two pair of shoes, six handkerchiefs, two belts, suspenders, and combs; all marked with the number of the scholar. It also provides books, paper and pens for the classes. Children are received with whatever they have on, and at leaving, are permitted to wear away their every day suit.

Although the system of education in the establishment is a christian one, the director, out of regard for the character and prejudices of the mechanic population of Paris, has avoided giving it a clerical or monastic character. The teachers are laymen, and the name of "brothers" which they use to each other or receive from the pupils, is simply a token and bond of affection. The management of Saint Nicholas is entrusted, amongst the superior, a council of administration, and certain almoners and intendants. Under their orders the brethren are employed; the principal of them being the sacristan, the cashier, the procurator, the prefect of studies, the prefects of health, of music, and of the workshops. Mgr. de Bervanger has laid down the attributes and duties of all persons employed, in a sort of constitution containing excellent precepts, and which might be consulted to great advantage in the organization of similar establishments.

The household proper, cooking, expenditure, washing and ironing and the infirmary are in charge of a number of sisters of charity. The number of persons employed is seventy grown people, permanently; twenty-five masters or foremen

of exterior workshops; and thirty persons, hired by the day. Seven or eight of the children are also employed.

This large force permits the maintenance of an active and continual watch over the childrens' department; and any who are likely to corrupt their companions, are at once sent back to their parents or guardians. The brothers sleep among the children. One is watching in the dormitories, during the whole night, and the rooms are kept constantly lighted for fear of accidents. The children change about their sleeping places from time to time, and great reserve is practiced in regard to this arrangement, that there may be no way for the children to learn any thing evil. The older children get up at half past five in summer and six in winter; the younger always at a quarter past seven. All go to bed at eight in winter, and nine in summer. The instruction includes reading, writing, arithmetic, and spelling; the elements of French grammar, geography and history, grammatical and logical analysis, book-keeping, linear drawing, practical geometry, singing, a thorough knowledge of instrumental music, gymnastics, swimming, the rudiments of physics, chemistry, practical natural history, land-measuring and gardening.

The instruction in physics, chemistry, natural history, geometry and instrumental music, is given only to the children in the first divisions; as also that in book-keeping, linear drawing, and singing. All the pupils are permitted to learn gymnastics and swimming, if their parents or guardians have consented. The instruction in surveying, and in some other of the above studies is given while horticulture is taught, at lasey.

The children do not remain in school more than three hours together, and are kept busy on one subject from half an hour to an hour and a half at the furthest. Those who do not work in the shops spend eight hours daily in studying and reciting, except the smaller ones, who rise later, and have but six hours and a half. A class consists of from fifty to seventy pupils at most. There is an examination several times a year, and a solemn distribution of prizes at its conclusion.

The business of the brothers is to render the studies attractive and varied, and to habituate the children to tell what they have learned or observed. They permit them to ask questions, and answer with good humor. Nothing is left to arbitrary decision; the smallest details are regulated according to rule; and the children know their rights and the penalties for non-fulfilment of duty.

The brothers extend their care not only to the instruction, but also to the general training of the children. They endeavor to imbue them with all such knowledge and habits as may insure their future prosperity by rendering them honest, industrious and skillful artizans, by making them enjoy their labor, by destroying notions consistant only with a high social position, and by fortifying them against the bad examples which they will probably meet in the world.

Musical instruction occupies a large place in the system of education. Music is reckoned not only a means of recreation and enjoyment, but as an art which may become a useful means of subsistence to the young graduates. A number of them have in fact obtained situations of more or less value, in regimental bands. The establishment owns five thousand dollars worth of musical instruments, which when not in use are arranged in glazed cases. Besides the military band, the musical director has organized a choir for the chapel. Every Sunday at four o'clock in the afternoon, the children chant a *Salve* with remarkable skill, upon which occasion part of the chapel is open to strangers.

In the principal area of the establishment are erected a gymnastic apparatus,

see-saws, and various other machines, for the amusement of the scholars. Swimming lessons are given at Issy, where there is a large basin; the pupils at the Paris house march out there from time to time, with their band at their head, to practice various exercises.

Various workshops have been established for pupils who are to serve their apprenticeship in the establishment; including, besides the bakery, the shoemaking shop, the tailor's shop, &c., which are kept up for the use of the institution; others in various occupations which are partly trades, and partly arts, and are especially followed in Paris. Such are the occupations of chaser in bronze, watchmaker, lacemaker, designer of patterns for woven fabrics, mathematical instrument maker, ornamental worker in gold and silver, engraver in jewels and metals, maker of bronze settings, worker in imitation jewelry, embosser, saddler, hardware man, maker of lackered snuff-boxes, worker in steel ornaments, ironmonger, painter on porcelain, worker in ivory, machinist, and cutler. Unfortunately, the revolution of February, which threw the industrial interests of Paris into disorder, did not spare the workshops of Saint Nicholas; and many of them are discontinued, or unprosperous. Efforts are however making by the administration to repair these misfortunes and to maintain regular labor.

The pupils do not enter the workshops except upon the express application of their relatives or guardians, and only after their first communion. The manual labor occupies on an average eight and a half hours per day; and the apprentices attend school two hours daily, unless their parents or guardians prefer to have them spend that time in the workshops, in order to become sooner perfect in their occupation. The apprenticeship occupies from two to four years, according to the trade. When it is ended, the pupils are allowed, if they choose, to remain in the establishment, and whatever they earn over and above their expenses is deposited, if they wish, to their credit in a savings' bank. Parents are permitted to have their children educated for whatever business they choose, having reference to their inclinations, strength, and intelligence. At the time of our visit, the number of apprentices was about a hundred.

The workshops are an expense to the establishment; but as pecuniary gain is no part of the scheme, the same maintenance is given to the children in the shops as to the younger ones, although their support costs more. Those who labor need more food; and besides, a larger number of overseers is necessary, to keep up the prescribed amount of supervision. The profits from work done go to the foremen of the shops, which makes them interested in carrying forward the apprentices, and in conforming to the regulations of the establishment. They are likewise obliged to furnish the tools used by the apprentices. The masters are especially holden to conduct themselves toward the children like kind fathers; and not to keep them at work too long in any one part of their employment, but to instruct them in the whole of it. All this is stipulated in the engagements made between the parents and the masters, and with the approbation of the establishment, which, however, does not bind itself to continue to keep any of the parties, either masters or apprentices; in order that it may always be able to remove from the institution any individuals whose presence is esteemed harmful.

In the classes, workshops, &c., the children receive good marks for application and for progress. Thrice a year they receive books, images, &c., in exchange for these marks, at a certain rate. The record of these marks is posted in the parlor of the house every week; as are also the marks given for weekly composi-

tions, and the quarterly record, which last is sent to parents or guardians. Pupils whose names remain upon the good conduct list during the whole quarter, receive a reward at its termination. There is a formal distribution of prizes, annually, just before the short vacation.

For the encouragement of the children, the managers arrange for them from time to time special recreations, for which some little expense is incurred. During the summer there are long walks, on which the pupils carry their provisions in their knapsacks; in winter, there are exhibitions in natural philosophy, ventriloquism, &c. These amusements are much desired by the children, and stimulate them proportionately to good conduct and sustained application.

There is a sufficient play-hour between the periods of study and of labor. The hours of recreation on Sunday, are from eight to ten, forenoon, an hour at noon, and from two to four, afternoon. On week days, they are an hour each, at half past eight, noon, half past three, and in the summer at eight in the evening. These periods are of half an hour only for those employed in the workshops. Sunday afternoon at three, the pupils from the workshops perform pieces of military music to an audience of their relatives who have come to visit them. During play hours the pupils may practice gymnastic exercises. Thursday, weather permitting, the brothers walk out with the children not engaged in the workshops; those being taken out on Sundays during the summer.

Parents and guardians may see their children in private every day, but during play hours only, and when the children have not been shut up for punishment. There are three vacations a year; three days at new year's, three at Easter, and eight immediately after the annual distribution of prizes. Pupils are not allowed any vacation in September, unless at the request, or with the permission, of the person paying their board.

The house is governed in a manner altogether paternal. The masters are aware that harshness brutalizes, destroys every honorable sentiment, and inspires a distaste for study and labor. Even when punishment is necessary, the children are to be convinced if possible that severity is resorted to only for their good. Punishments can almost always be commuted for with good marks. Those guilty of grave misdemeanors are shut up during play hours, under charge of a brother; but these detentions are not to take place during all hours of recreations, as some fresh air and exercise is necessary for the health of the children. If there is no amendment, they are forbidden to take their usual walks. Very seldom, the allowance of food is curtailed. The idea of shame and of penalty is attached to many things quite indifferent in themselves. The general rule is to incline the children to good conduct by encouragement; and in punishment, regard is always had to their health. No prison is used, because the regulations permit no child to be alone without supervision, and moreover, because it is undesirable to accustom their minds to that form of punishment. Those whose thoughtlessness is likely to lead the others astray, are kept apart. A jury of the most steady children returns verdicts against violators of the rules, or such as have tempted their comrades to any considerable transgression. In such cases the punishment applied is a humiliation similar to that used in the regimental discipline, unless the parents prefer to withdraw the culprit. The masters are cautious to prevent the abuse of this authority, but the practice has succeeded well, and punishments under it have become rare. To maltreat the children is strictly forbidden, on the prin-



ciple that judicious and moderate means will prevail where an indiscreet severity could only irritate.

The regulations and discipline are alike in the two houses at Paris and Issy, except as required by the difference of age in the inmates. The latter also serves as a convalescent hospital for invalids from the former, where they can enjoy country living, and exercise in the open air. A horticultural school is likewise established there with a green house and an orangery.

The plans of the superior of Saint Nicholas include the founding of an analogous establishment for young girls. This would be close by that at Issy, but entirely separated from it. It would be of great advantage by saving part of the two thousand four hundred dollars a year now expended for sewing and washing. The kitchen garden ground there, brought entirely under cultivation, would furnish the necessary fruits and legumes for its consumption. This combination would be very similar to that adopted at Ruysselede.

It is difficult if not impossible for us to state a decision upon the merits of the enterprise of M. de Bervanger. At the time of our visit, the vacations were just ending, and the reassembling of the pupils occasioned, doubtless, more disorder than usual; various important repairs were in progress; most of the workshops were either unoccupied or going on only irregularly. Accustomed to the strict propriety of the Belgian establishments, we were probably more displeased than many other visitors would be, at the appearance of certain portions of the building, and at the careless manner in which that important matter seemed to be attended to. Nevertheless, the zeal and devotion of the director are certainly worthy of all praise. Confined to his own individual resources, and deprived of all official patronage, his perseverance has overcome impediments which would certainly have stopped any man not inspired by truly charitable purposes, and by confidence in the excellence of the principle upon which the establishment is founded. By the side of the numerous high schools and boarding schools intended for children of the rich and middling classes, he has undertaken to establish a modest boarding school for poor and morally neglected children. This end has been attained. The work is doubtless susceptible of numerous improvements, but even as it stands, it has solved an important problem, namely, that of reforming and maintaining at the lowest possible price, in the midst of a great city, a numerous class of poor, who, without such assistance, would inevitably have grown up to swell the ranks of the mass of vicious men who always gather in centers of population.

The cost of purchasing and furnishing the two houses of Paris and Issy, was nearly \$240,000. Of this sum there was unpaid, in 1849, about \$125,000. This debt, if funded, would represent a rent of about \$6,200; not at all too large for an establishment so useful and important.

In 1844, of an average number of seven hundred and fifty children, and a hundred and six persons employed, the total expense was \$39,843.52. Deducting receipts for sales from workshops and elsewhere, amounting in all to \$2,156.31, the annual expense remains at \$37,647. Each child, therefore, costs \$50.25; about fourteen cents a day; about one-third of what the pupils at Petit-Bourg cost.

For complete education and maintenance of one thousand pupils—the number which both houses can accommodate—the director estimates that he ought to receive \$60,000 a year, of which \$24,000 would be for food, gardening, and payment of certain female assistants, and \$12,000 for interest.

This is sixty dollars a year for each child, which is the fixed rate for those not orphans. The deficit occasioned by the reduced rate of \$48.00 at which orphans are received, would be made up by gifts, subscriptions, and returns from sales.

The following notice of this institution is given by Rev. George Foxcroft Haskins, in his *Travels in England, France, Italy, &c.*, 1854.

But of all the institutions which I visited in Paris, none interested me so much as that of St. Nicholas. The great aim of the institution is to provide for the wants of these boys, a large portion of whom were orphans; to inspire them with a love of virtue and of industry; and to fit them, by the practice of their religious duties, to become one day not only good christians, but also skillful workmen. It is an institution of charity, because the sum demanded for board and tuition, one dollar a week, is so small as to come within the means of the poorer classes, and of those benevolent individuals and societies who have at heart the reformation and instruction of the destitute and abandoned. How many of these boys, think you, are sheltered, fed, and instructed in this home for the homeless and deserted? A hundred or two? More than that. Three hundred, perhaps? More than that. Five hundred? Yet more. There are at the present time more than *twelve hundred* boys in this mammoth refuge! They are divided into two departments, a senior and a junior, according to age. I visited both departments. All are governed by the same rule, and all are under the fatherly direction of Mgr. Bervanger. The two establishments are about half a mile apart.

This institution is governed and disciplined by a congregation or brotherhood, composed of secular priests and laymen, who devote themselves to this work, with a single eye to the glory of God and the welfare of youth, demanding nothing for their labors but a bare support, looking forward for compensation to the treasury of God.

The first and great aim of the directors and teachers is, to infuse into the boys a love of virtue and religion; the second, to impart elementary and scientific instruction; the third, to accustom them to habits of industry, and teach them a profitable trade.

The spiritual direction and religious instruction of the children is confided to the reverend fathers of the order of St. Dominic, who give four pious instructions every week. Catechism is taught every day. The scholars are divided into twenty classes, according to their age and degree of intelligence. They are not allowed to make their first communion till they have attained the age of eleven or twelve years. The singing and music at mass and vespers is performed by the pupils, under the direction of their musical teachers. I think I shall never forget the pleasure and edification with which I assisted at the Divine offices at St. Nicholas, on the Sunday which I passed in the institution. It was in the chapel of the senior department. There were about six hundred and fifty boys present. All behaved with the most perfect decorum. In discipline nothing was wanting. All appeared to unite in the singing, but without a discordant note. The time was so well observed, that every word was articulated and heard as if pronounced by a single voice.

In the schools are taught reading, writing, arithmetic, orthography, grammar, geography, history, book-keeping, drawing, geometry, vocal and instrumental music, chemistry, and natural history. Out of the schools are taught surveying, agriculture, horticulture, gymnastics, swimming, and various handicrafts.

There are about twenty workshops attached to the institution and within its precincts. Before the children commence their apprenticeship, their tastes, their preferences, their physical strength, and their intelligence are consulted. I observed, in passing through the shops, a large number of boys employed busily in carving, cabinet-making, turning, musical instrument making, jewelry, brass finishing, tailoring, shoemaking, &c., &c. The boys are apprenticed for a certain number of years to master workmen, who pay to the institution, for the board of their apprentices, the same as is demanded for the other inmates.

# CENTRAL PRISON AND REFORM SCHOOL,

AT

GAILLON, IN NORMANDY.

---

THE following account of the governmental Reform School at Gaillon, in Normandy, is taken from VISITS TO CONTINENTAL REFORMATORIES, by Robert Hall, M. A., *Recorder of Doncaster*, England, and read as a lecture before the Leeds Mechanics' Institution, and Wakefield Mechanics' Institution, 1855.

It is now more than forty years since the compilers of the French Code Pénal struck out a new course of treatment, and enacted that young persons under sixteen years of age should, under ordinary circumstances, not be found guilty of offenses which they should be proved to have committed, but should be acquitted as having acted without discernment, and then not punished, but detained for education; within the last twenty years establishments have been formed in various parts of the continent for the education of these children. In the spring of the present year I called the attention of my fellow townsmen to one of these establishments, that of Mettray in France, which has now been in operation for upward of 15 years: I have since that spent three days there, and my favorable opinion has been more than confirmed; I may take occasion to mention incidentally a few points which escaped my observation on my first visit, but I am not going to repeat any thing that I have already published in print: it will be sufficient to state, in general terms, that Mettray is a private establishment, with government assistance, which receives for reformatory education boys under the age of 16 who have committed offenses but have been acquitted as having acted without discernment; of these it has at present near 600, divided into families of forties, each family has its family house, and is governed by two young men specially educated for the purpose, who are assisted by two boys, members of the family, elected quarterly by ballot by the forty members of the family; the boys are taught agriculture and the common handicrafts which are necessary to agriculture: the place is the reverse of a prison, for there are neither walls nor gates; the boys are most carefully impressed with the assurance that they are not undergoing punishment; and there is an infinite variety of contrivances for giving to each family a common interest, and encouraging the family feeling: the result of all this is, that during the whole of last year there was not a single attempt to run away; in fact, the directors have fully succeeded in gaining the affections of their children: during the whole fifteen years the number of relapses amongst the young persons who had been set at liberty is only eleven per cent.—a very small proportion when we consider that they had all of them exhibited vicious tendencies by the early commission of offenses, and that simple vagrancy would be counted as a relapse.

Besides thirty-five private institutions for the education of this description of délinquents, France possesses several government establishments for the same purpose; and, in his report on prisons for the last year, the then minister of the interior, M. de Persigny, seemed to regard the government establishments, as being, at the very least, as efficient as the private institutions. I found on inquiry that the one which is situate at Gaillon in Normandy, is considered to be second to none, if not itself the very best, and having procured the proper authority, I proceeded to inspect it.

The Maison Centrale of Gaillon, stands on a hill in a very pleasant, healthy situation, more by token no inmate was attacked by the cholera, during either of the former visits of that pestilence, nor up to the time of my visit during the

last year's return. It consists of various ranges of buildings divided into courts, the general effect of which is best seen from the outside: they had a considerable fire a little while ago, the work of some of the prisoners; a whole pile of building seems to have been destroyed and is now in progress of re-construction. The chateau was formerly the residence of the Cardinal d'Amboise.

M. Le Blanc is a slightly built, vigorous man, apparently between 30 and 40 years of age, with a pleasing countenance and easy manner, but evidently accustomed to absolute command: he bears the decoration of the legion of honor. He received me very politely, and himself conducted me all over the establishment at the house itself.

The total number of inmates is 39 guardians, including the chef and two sous chefs, but not the directeur and aumônier, who do not live within the walls, 1214 adults and 686 young persons all acquitted under article 66: no females are confined there: the aumônier is the only ecclesiastic: there is no female assistance or superintendence at all, "ni frère ni sœur." Of the 39 guardians 15 are assigned to the children; of the remaining 24 there are 3 chefs and sous chefs, 5 porters, 5 affected to special services, 1 always absent on leave, and allowing for sickness and other accidental absences, the number of guardians actively engaged in looking after 1214 adults is from 7 to 8, or, adding the director and chefs, about 1 to 100. In the superintendence of the workmen, there are a few contre maîtres whom I understand to be free workmen, and surveillants selected by the director from the prisoners of good conduct; the system is silent but not separate. M. Le Blanc is not in favor of the cellular system, except as a punishment for prison offenses.

The principle of the system adopted for the adults is that of teaching them a trade and making them work at it. I was taken through rooms in which various trades were being carried on. In the adult department the work is done for manufacturers at certain prices fixed by contract, in some instances by the piece, in others by the day; a tariff of the prices is put up to view in every work room. These wages are received by government, who pay over a portion to the prisoner partly in direct payment, partly by carrying half of this allowance to his credit so as to provide him with a sum of money on his liberation. The total amount of this allowance varies from five-tenths to one-tenth of the wages paid by the contractor, according to the gravity of the sentence, or the number of convictions: but an individual in the lowest class may by good conduct raise himself into a higher class till he gets to three-tenths, so by bad conduct a prisoner in a higher class may reduce himself to one-tenth; they for the most part become good workmen: I was taken through a room in which they were at work making shoes, bottines, slippers, fine brushes, coarse brushes, accordions, and the several parts which enter into the construction of an accordion, and probably some other articles which I have forgotten: also, other rooms in which the work was the carding of silk and the weaving it into the stuff of which silk hats are made, and another room in which the work was the making of straw plait. All the men seemed to be working with a good deal of energy, without any appearance of dejection physical or moral, only in the finer work which required close attention they seemed much more serious; I rushed to an *a priori* conclusion that the ameliorating influences of industry would be more discernable amongst the latter, but M. Le Blanc assured me that there was no distinction of that kind.

The dietary consists of rations of brown bread, soup, vegetables and meat twice a week; such prisoners as have earned a little money may buy a few comparative luxuries, such as butter, milk, sugar, and the like at the canteen. In consequence of the fire, the dormitories are at present crowded with additional beds, but, with the exception of one very large dormitory, they generally contain about twenty, each prisoner having his bed to himself as clean and comfortable as could be imagined; at least one guardian sleeps in each dormitory, the rooms are lighted all night, and the surveillants are constantly walking their rounds.

The general effect upon my own mind, of my inspection of the adult department, was that the prisoners were palpably much better off than they would have been if they had been at liberty, and that, as a body, they must be fully conscious of the fact; indeed it is clear that, to some extent, the French prison serves the purpose of our workhouse. The liberated convict has a place of

residence assigned to him, where he is to find work as best he can, though it is constantly happening that he is sent to a place where he has no friends, and where there is no market for such labor as he has to supply: he goes to seek labor elsewhere, and thereby becomes guilty of rupture of ban, of which he is convicted and is sent back to prison, and this new conviction is counted against him a case of *récidive*; M. Le Blanc called my attention to the fact, that the worst subjects under his care are by no means those who have the greatest number of convictions set against their names, as these consist for the most part of ruptures of ban in the honest attempt to seek for work. This is shown by the fact, which I take from the tables published by M. le garde des sceaux, that of 8068 *récidivistes* who were discharged during the quinquennial period 1848—1852 and were again convicted before the end of 1852, the relapses by vagabondage and mendicancy were 1485, and those by rupture of ban 1346, and the figures seem to show that the latter generally take place in the first year after liberation. No persons, however, are sent to the *maisons centrales* unless the sentence exceeds a year's imprisonment, for shorter terms the committals are to the departmental prisons, where the confinement is cellular, and the treatment in other respects stricter. Whilst M. Le Blanc was inspector at Rennes, he knew a case of a liberated convict, who, being desirous of resuming his quarters in the *maison centrale* committed some offense, for which to his infinite disgust he was sentenced only to six months imprisonment. Having no taste for passing that period in a departmental prison, he forthwith began abusing the magistrate, in consequence of which his term was increased to ten months, which was the reverse of what he wanted, as it was four months more in the departmental prison. Upon this he redoubled his invectives, adding threats of what he would do to the judge at the end of the term: this was visited by a change of sentence to fifteen months, but as these would have to be passed in a *maison centrale* his end was answered, his mask of turbulence was laid aside, and he retired from the tribunal with a respectful bow.

I was now conducted to the department of the *jeunes détenus*. These are principally, according to their antecedents and the employments of their families, divided into two bodies, the industrial who occupy part of the *maison centrale* itself, and the agricultural who are located on a farm about three miles from the *maison centrale*, to which they come twice a week, on Sundays and Thursdays, to attend divine service, and the court which is held on those days for the trial of prison offenses committed by the *jeunes détenus*. I was first introduced to the *quartier des preuves* in which new comers are first placed in order to try them, and see what they are fit for; there was nothing particular about it, but this difference at the very outset from the system at Mettray excited an involuntary smile. No one was in it at the time, and we proceeded to a large garden laid out with walks, which are open to the young *détenus* during periods of recreation, but if I understood aright, they have nothing to do with the cultivation. The young people were just turning out of the class-room in double file; their dress did not differ much in character from that in use at Mettray, but it looked older and not so tidy; the body had very much the appearance of a workhouse school, and there were no marks of that *esprit de corps* which animates almost every countenance at Mettray: they did not even fall quite naturally into the military step, but their teachers had to excite them to it, and to beat time; one of them had his head clean shaven, of which more anon; others bore complimentary tablets on their backs, with characteristic legends such as "*Voleur*" &c. We then passed through the workshops of the different trades which they are taught: here the work is not done for contractors, but for the government, and no wages are paid, it being considered, that the board, lodging and education are more than an equivalent for the work done; I understood that there was some slight pecuniary rewards to the *surveillants* and others, but my attention was diverted at this point of my inquiries, and I omitted to return to it. The children are thus taught a great variety of trades, the particulars of which have escaped my memory; all the building and other work in the establishment is done either by the children or the adult convicts: the employment which struck me most was that of the ornamental wood carvers, who were turning out some very clever specimens of workmanship, which would have excited a great sensation had they been sent to the educational exhibition; as part of his day's work, each child has an hour and a half's schooling, more



than that is found to be tedious at the time, and to make them conceited at the end. The director selects a certain number of the best behaved to act as surveillants, these wear a distinguishing badge. The dormitories are large rooms, containing a great number of beds, all exquisitely clean, with each boy's Sunday clothes neatly folded and placed upon his bed; my visit was on a Monday morning, Sept. 11th, 1854: all this had a much more comfortable look than the hammocks at Mettray. The refectory is a large hall used also as the class-room, and as the chapel, of which it forms the nave when the folding doors which separate it from the chapel, properly so called, are thrown open. There is nothing peculiar in the dietary, except that on Sundays and Thursdays they are allowed what is called a gratification. What that gratification is on Thursdays I did not catch, on Sundays it consists in the distribution to each boy of half-a-pound of preserve, which he is allowed to eat as he likes: the glutton dispatches it forthwith, and his propensity is noted; on the other hand those who wish to make a better use of it, as a seasoning for their bread during the week, are supplied with the means of keeping it for that purpose. They are justly proud of their bakehouse, the produce of which, *experto crede*, is excellent.

For my visit to the farm, M. Le Blanc committed me to the guidance of the excellent inspector M. Delaunay, and finding that I wished to return to Paris by the three o'clock train, which I could not do if we performed our expedition on foot, he was kind enough to order the tilbury of the establishment to be placed at our disposal, and right pleasant was our drive through a steeply undulated and well wooded country. The farm consists of 214 hectares including 40 hectares of wood and a small portion of moorland not yet brought into cultivation, it is traversed in various directions by well made private roads, the work of the colonists. I was taken to two farm houses, one an old building of no great size, the other a new construction of considerable size, built by the colonists for the purposes of the colony. In the refectory of the latter we found the children in class, pursuing according to their several ages and abilities the usual course of primary instruction; there were no particular marks either of energy or lassitude, but I thought them too much crowded; the dormitories are exactly like those of the industrial colonists at the maison centrale: everything was extremely clean and rather left an impression of over comfort. They are very proud of their horned cattle, from which they draw a large quantity of milk, which finds its way to the market at Evreux in the shape of butter: they have some very fine specimens of the Dutch, Flemish, Cotantin and Breton breeds: the latter are very small, smaller than the Alderney with which, however, they seem in shape and color to have affinity. There I learned that the peculiar grain in the color of the Norman horses is called *pommel *, whilst the broader and more variegated dapple of a cotantin bull was called * caille*. They did not ordinarily breed or feed for the market, but some beautiful little Breton calves were destined for Fontevault. There is no peculiarity in the mode of cultivation adopted. The farm yards are walled like other farm yards in the country, but in other respects the colonists are not confined by walls; in the classes I noticed three more shaven heads, and learned that the shaving of the head is one of the punishments for evasion. Attempts at evasion are not unfrequent, but they are always unsuccessful, as the dress is peculiar, and a reward of twenty-five francs is given to any person who brings a fugitive back.

I have already mentioned the punishment for evasion; in both the adult and the juvenile departments the usual punishments are inflicted for prison offenses, but are preceded by a formal trial before a tribunal consisting of the director, the *aum nier* and I think, the chief guardian; for the adults this is held daily, in a room fitted up for the purpose, and called the *Pr toire*: for the *jeunes d tenus* it is held twice a week in the presence of the colony assembled in their *Salle   manger*. The punishments are standing with their face to the wall, standing out whilst the others are eating, deprivations of the gratifications of the palate, reduction of diet, cellular confinement, and, as a last resort, confinement in chains. M. Le Blanc encourages correspondence of the prisoners with their families, and the visits of the latter to their relatives in prison, as a means of keeping up and strengthening the family tie: it also supplies him with a means of punishment by the suppression of it, and in the case of the juveniles, by making them come in disgrace before their parents; for juveniles he also makes

occasional use of whipping; that being a domestic punishment, he considers that he who stands in loco parentis may sometimes apply it with advantage.

I may be wrong, but the impression on my mind was, that the system was likely to be less deterrent than that of Mettray; in the first place there is a less complete change in the mode of life, they sleep in ordinary beds like other people, they are in more close association with each other, and there being only one guardian to 40 or 50 colonists, with only one aumônier to 1900, and no sisters of charity or the like, they are comparatively free from that constant surveillance and interference of superiors which is so very disagreeable to the wild unreclaimed character; but what impressed me most strongly was, the instruction which is given in branches of industry which command very high wages: when I saw wood carvings, the work rather of an artist than of an artisan, I could not help asking myself whether this was not likely to be regarded in sober truth as a college for the poor? There is no such danger about agriculture or the trades immediately ancillary to it, nor even about the military profession. The danger being one that is adverted to by M. de Persigny, I inquired of M. Le Blanc how the matter stands according to his experience. He says that many parents do unquestionably send their children out begging, with a feeling that the worst that can happen will be that the state will relieve them of the charge of their children; this however is by no means the same thing as bringing them up as thieves.

There does not seem to be much difficulty in obtaining employment for the young persons on their discharge, and exertions are made in each particular instance to obtain the patronage of some charitable individual in the neighborhood; such as are placed in Paris are confided to M. De Berenger's society; when unable to obtain work, and totally friendless, they sometimes come back to the colony and ask to be put to their old work, an hospitality which is accorded until a place is found for them. M. Delaunay however considers that the case of the orphans requires special provision, and suggests that something might be done for them on the tracts of unreclaimed land in various parts of France, which are the property of the state. I asked him if they ever succeeded in gaining the affections of the young people committed to their care: he said no, the numbers were too large for the teachers to establish any individual hold. Both he and M. Le Blanc expressed themselves strongly against some of the private colonies, as being mere private speculations conducted without any real regard to the welfare of the children, but they did not affect to place their own work on a level with Mettray, on the contrary they assigned reasons why it could not be so: the refuse rejected by the private colonies as being incurable is necessarily sent to the maison centrale, which has no such means of purification or punishment: M. De Metz too is absolute master, he may spend his money as he likes, and may make any changes in his system and try any experiments that occur to him according to his own judgment and good pleasure; the director of a maison centrale on the contrary has a limited sum placed at his disposal, for every sou of which he has to give a minute account, and both in expenditure and general management he is tied down to a strict routine in which the Minister of the Interior has alone the power to make the slightest variation.



# REFORM SCHOOL OF PETIT-QUEVILLY,

NEAR ROUEN.

REPORT OF E. DUOPETLAUX.

---

THE reform school of Petit-Quevilly was founded in 1842, by M. Lecointe, who, with the assistance of the Society for the Assistance of Juvenile Prisoners at Rouen, appealed to his fellow citizens to enable him to commence the work. He raised a sufficient sum by subscription, and in September, 1842, began with six children from the prison of the Bicêtre at Rouen. After a time the number was doubled, and so remained for more than two years. Toward the end of 1844, M. Lecointe succeeded in overcoming the various obstacles which had impeded him, and gradually increased the number of his pupils, until it is now, (1851,) about one hundred and fifty. They are all juvenile delinquents under art. 66 of the penal code, and as at Mettray, Petit-Bourg, &c., the government pays about fourteen cents a day each toward their maintenance, and grants fourteen dollars as an outfit for each pupil at entrance.

The school comprises four divisions; of punishment, of probation, of reward, and of rehabilitation. At entrance, all are ranked in the first class. To pass from it to the second, or from that to the third, the pupil must have escaped receiving a bad mark for two months. For entry upon the roll of rehabilitation, he must have lived irreproachably for six consecutive months. Only the pupils of this highest grade are permitted to go into town, to work for persons outside the premises, and to take grades of rank according to their conduct. The classifications are made by the use of a system of marks, and the color of the collars of their blouses serve to distinguish the four classes. Those in the division of punishment—who by the way are very few in number—wear a yellow collar; in that of probation, a blue one; in that of reward, a red one; in that of rehabilitation, none at all. The rewards are as follows, in order: Good marks; entry on the roll of reward; entry on the roll of honor and rehabilitation; the right of electing foremen; grades for good conduct; permission to labor without the premises; permission to do errands in the town; application to government for liberation and employment. Punishments are: Bad marks; suspension of grade; descent to inferior grade; degradation, if in the lowest grade; dismissal into a lower division; deprivation of amusement; deprivation of privilege of visiting relatives; entry in the roll of punishment, with yellow collar; confinement to bread and water; sending away again to prison.

Punishments are inflicted by a jury of pupils whose names are upon the rolls of reward and rehabilitation. The cell is unknown, neither is corporal punishment in use. Every Sunday, after service, there is a public moral examination. The foremen report before the remaining pupils, who are called upon to answer, if necessary, and receive punishment or reward, as the case may be.

The pupils are chiefly employed in horticulture on a large scale; as being more profitable to the institution than any mode of cultivation, and as allowing the training of gardeners, who easily find situations.

The elementary instruction includes reading, writing, the four rules of arithmetic, and linear drawing. Some children learn also the rudiments of vegetable physiology. Pupils who can read, write and compute, study also a course of geometry, applied to arts and trades, and a course of instruction in raising fruit-trees. One of the foremen instructs in church music.

Of three hundred and sixty pupils admitted into the school since its foundation, one hundred and eighty-eight could neither read nor write, thirty-two could read a little, forty could read pretty well and write a little. The director has found that the intelligent children are very few in number; fifteen in the hundred make some progress; forty-five in the hundred begin to make progress only two or three years after entrance, and at the age of sixteen or seventeen. The rest, at their liberation, only know how to read a little; but the greater part of all of them become smart workmen, and able to make their own living. Contrariwise to the experience of Mettray, Petit-Bourg, and other similar institutions, it is observed that the graduates of Petit-Quevilly generally prefer farming and gardening, to trades.

The pupils are divided into three platoons, with a sergeant-major, sergeant and corporal over each. The discipline of the establishment is purely military; combined movements are made to the sound of the drum; and there are some copper instruments for a military band.

At leaving, the pupils receive some assistance to enable them to maintain themselves until settled. With the help of what they earn by working outside the institution during their residence in it, a fund is accumulated, which may sometimes reach as much as ten dollars each, and whose amount for each graduate is fixed by the director, according to the merits and needs of each pupil, and the condition of the fund.

The director is entrusted with the charge of placing and overseeing those who are liberated. Unfortunately his numerous occupations do not permit him to keep track of them, as far as would be desirable, and thus to determine the results of the training of the school. According to the information he has collected on this subject, however, he estimates that six *per cent.* are incorrigible, fifteen doubtful, and that the rest conduct themselves satisfactorily.

Since its foundation, eighty-five pupils have been liberated. Of this number, six have become gardeners and nurserymen, sixteen domestics and farm laborers, eleven mechanics, amongst their relatives, one a journeyman mason, four shoemakers, two cabinet makers, two tailors, four factory hands, four soldiers, five sailors; and of thirty, no information has been received since their liberation.

## ASILE AGRICOLE, OR RURAL ASYLUM,

AT

CERNAY, NEAR MULHAUSEN.

---

CERNAY is a town in the department of Haut-Rhin, eight miles from Mulhausen, with a population, in 1852, of 3997, engaged in the manufacturing of cotton and linen goods, and in iron and copper foundries. The following account of a visit to the *Asile Agricole* of this town, is taken from the English Journal of Education for 1858, and credited by the editor to the *Guardian*.

I recently visited at Cernay, (an insignificant place between Colmar and Mulhouse,) an institution called an *Asile Agricole*. It differs from that of Mettray and others, in receiving, not condemned, but only destitute children, and such as have shown evil and depraved propensities. In 1847, a few benevolent gentlemen of the neighborhood, finding pauperism on the increase, and some sort of asylum very much needed for the reception of orphans, and the children of the poor allowed to contract habits of idleness and mendicity, determined to make an attempt to open a place of this kind. A society was formed, and a suitable foundation fund raised; a house and a piece of waste land were hired, whither each member was entitled, on payment of 100 francs per annum, to send an orphan or neglected child, when the consent of the parents could be obtained. Secondary, of course, to religious instruction, the great means of reformation relied upon was agricultural employment, as at Mettray; but as here no absolute criminality could be inferred, nor punishment supposed, the family system was much more freely carried out. With this view, it was resolved that the number of children should not exceed thirty, in order that the personal, and as far as possible paternal, influence of the director over each individual might not be changed into the mere authority of a governor over the mass. The extent to which this principle has been carried out, is one of the most striking features of the establishment, and is regarded as that to which it is chiefly indebted for its successful results. The contact between the head of the house and every member of it is immediate and constant. When I went to visit the place with a member of the society, we found M. Zweifel, the director, employed, flail in hand, in thrashing out his harvest, surrounded by a dozen of his children, armed with the same instrument. The whole party were singing at their work, and merrier or happier laborers could not be seen. M. Zweifel is one of those men brought up in the severe practical school of Fellenberg and Vehrli, the celebrated Swiss Agronomers, who can turn his hand to any thing. With such assistance only as he can derive from one or two of the eldest boys, this one individual transacts the entire business of the whole establishment. For a couple of hours, morning and evening, he instructs thirty boys, of all ages between eight and seventeen, some of whom have to learn their letters, whilst others are advanced to the elements of land surveying. The *cahiers* shown to me of their writing, drawing of agricultural instruments from nature, plans, &c., &c., were most remarkable, when it is borne in mind that nearly all the pupils are handed over to M. Zweifel in a state of the *lowest* degradation and ignorance.

During the day he is personally engaged with them in every description of field and garden labor. By the efforts of his boys and his own, aided only by a single grown-up farm-servant, a large portion of the barren plain of Cernay has been brought into a state of high cultivation; and the example set of better and more scientific modes of agriculture has been of the most essential service to the small farmers of the locality, whilst the boon of providing them with steady and intelligent laborers is universally felt and acknowledged.

Each child of sufficient age has a small garden allotted to him, which he is taught to cultivate both with flowers and profitable produce, and which he is allowed to dispose of for his own benefit.

By his especial desire every appearance of grandeur, such as is perhaps too often found in large public establishments, is carefully avoided, the buildings and all accommodations are kept down to the level of the mere peasant's abode, only maintained with neatness and propriety. It has been too frequently found that the grandiosity of such establishments, even as that at Mettray, has rendered the inmates discontented with mere cottage life. No uniform of any kind is adopted, and the fare is exactly such as the children have been used to at home. The institution has no pretension to being more than such as every parish might establish with ease and benefit, and its object is to prevent pauperism and crime, rather than to correct them.

On the rare occasion of a holiday, the director, accompanied by the whole troop, makes an excursion to some of the neighboring woods or Vosges mountains, invites their curiosity, and instructs them in the names and qualities of the trees, quarries, &c., which they fall in with. This life of incessant labor is led from year's end to year's end, with never-ceasing heartiness and cheerfulness, by a man evidently of enlarged mind, education, and ability, for a stipend only just raised from 1,000 to 1,200 francs, (\$200 to \$250.) Nothing but being heart and soul in the work could ever induce a man to support the burden, and it says much for the system, that the initiation into it makes such teachers. In the garb of a peasant thrashing out corn, M. Zweifel handed to me copies of his letters to Ministers and Prefects, which showed him, at least, fit to be their private secretary, if not to fill their place.

The practical results of the asylum are represented in the last, (seventh,) report of the president of the society and the directors, as of the most gratifying description. In six years, forty-one young persons have left it, rescued from pauperism, and with acquirements and habits which enable them to gain an honest livelihood—an immense boon to a small commune. All of them had been placed out by the institution, either as apprentices or with small farmers; of these, two only have turned out ill, the last case being that of a young man exceptionally admitted at the age of sixteen years, and of whom nothing could be made under a mere voluntary system.

In a country like Alsace, religious instruction was necessarily a difficulty. The asylum, though founded entirely by Protestants, has always admitted the children of Catholics, who form, indeed, the bulk of the lower population. M. Zweifel, a Protestant, and a man of the most unaffected piety, insisted upon the absolute necessity of himself, as *père de famille*, performing morning and evening prayers with all his children. The strictest care was taken that these prayers should contain nothing but what was common to both religions. But, although the attendance at mass by the Catholics was most regular, and M. le Curé, equally with M. le Pasteur, have full liberty of religious instruction offered him, I am sorry to say the Romish clergy regard the institution with an evil eye, and harass rather than protect it. Some time ago the Curé preferred a formal complaint to the Prefect against it, as a school of Protestant propagandism. A commission composed of Catholics was appointed to inspect it—the Curé was invited to make his charges, which amounted to the fact of the Catholic children having been absent from mass four times in the course of three years, and of their assembling at morning and evening prayers with the Protestants. The absence at mass was found carefully noted and explained in the daily entries of the director, and the Curé was formally reproved by those of his own persuasion.

# PHILANTHROPIC SOCIETY FOR THE PREVENTION OF CRIME;

AND THE

RED HILL REFORM SCHOOL AND FARM, (ENGLAND.)

---

THE Philanthropic Society was established in 1788, and incorporated in 1836, for the Prevention of Crime, by the reformation of Juvenile Offenders, and by the Industrial Education of the destitute offspring, of convicted felons.

At the outset both boys and girls were received, and were distributed into families occupying distinct houses. Each family pursuing a different trade, all the children being destined as far as practicable, for apprenticeship to farm labor—the Society thus anticipating that form of organization, and much of the detail of arrangement, which are now thought in Europe to be indispensable to the successful working of a reformatory for young offenders and criminals. These points are distinctly presented in the annual report of the Society for 1788 and 1789, from which the following extracts are taken:

A single child was first put out to nurse, to which several more were soon added; when the number amounted to twelve, a small house of £10 per annum rent was hired, in a situation where more could easily be obtained as they might be wanted. A matron was placed there, to superintend the household concerns, and the government of the wards; such of them as were capable, were employed in knitting stockings, and weaving of lace and garters.

A second house was soon hired; and presently a third; the number of wards was increased to twenty; and among them were several from ten to fourteen years old. The boys and girls were now separated. A shoemaker was placed in the second house; several of the elder boys began this necessary branch of manufacture, and already the whole seminary is supplied with shoes made within itself.

In the third house is a tailor, who has a certain number of wards under his tuition. It is intended that all shall learn knitting, spinning, or some such employment as may be useful to them in old age and infirmity.

Agriculture is the grand source to which the Society looks for employment for their wards. Agriculture, man's natural labor, and the primary spring of riches, of health, and of happiness.

Our populous cities and towns are already too much crowded with manufacturers, mechanics, and menial servants, who flock from all parts of the country. *To preserve the just balance, let us, then, send to wholesome air and exercise the miserable wretches, who are now perishing upon dunghills in London, and form them into a hardy race of husbandmen, from the waste of society, to populate and cultivate the waste and barren parts of the country.*

*The mode of living is in distinct houses, as separate families. A manufacturer has a house for himself and his wife, if married, and a certain number of wards, whom they are to regard as their own children. In these respects, the design is to approach as nearly as possible to common life.*

They have two banyan days every week, or days when meat is not allowed. Their beds are laid on a kind of wicker hurdle, which is removed in the day time to gain room for work. Utility only is consulted in every arrangement, and as the wards are forming for the humble station of laborers, it is thought an important care not to accustom them to conveniences and indulgences, of which afterward they might severely feel the want.

They have regular hours for every avocation; and prayers in the established form of worship every morning and evening. To preserve good order, and to

give them ideas of services to each other, certain wards are appointed daily as stewards for domestic offices; these lay and remove the cloth, and wait on their companions at table. They are called to every different exercise by the ringing of a bell. Each master or mistress keeps a day-book of their children's conduct, minuting down any fault or desert that is proper to be noticed. This day-book is an index to the character, and a most powerful instrument of forming it to good. The calendar of their faults is termed the *black book*, and the disgrace of being on this list is more dreaded by them than a chastisement.

They are governed rather by the influence of rewards than punishments; to be omitted in the former, keeps the same distinction between merit and demerit as being included in the latter, while the one exalts and the other debases the mind.

At certain times they are called together, the book of character read and commented upon, and praise or blame publicly bestowed.

To the most distinguished, there is given, weekly, a ticket or testimony of good behavior, and they are taught to consider these tickets as treasures, which they are to be diligent in accumulating.\*—Report for 1788, pp. 33—36.

The first part of the school of morals at present in practice is a day-book kept in every house by the several masters and mistresses, as a record of faults and virtues, in their daily manners, occupations, and intercourse with each other. This record gives to their actions a sort of perpetuity, the idea of which operates with wonderful force as an incentive to a laudable, and a preventative of an improper conduct. Those who would despise a flogging, are kept in awe by the black book (as the calendar of faults is named;) and this simple means has already produced an astonishing effect in the manners of these children, and almost removed every trace of their former evil propensities.

From these several day-books the materials are collected into one common book, in the form of a ledger, in which an account is opened with every ward; he being made debtor to his faults, and creditor by his praiseworthy actions.

Every Sunday evening, between the hours of six and eight, the school of morals is opened: in this school an officer, called the regulator, presides. He explains to the children the nature of faults and virtues, as they tend to their happiness or misery, in a simple manner, and with familiar exemplifications, suited to their capacities. He then distributes rewards and punishments.

These consist chiefly in tokens of honor or disgrace. Those against whom no faults worthy of notice are alledged for the preceding week, have a ticket expressive, generally, of good behavior. These tickets are preserved for each proprietor. Those who are found guilty of slight faults only, are punished merely with the deprivation of one or more tickets. Faults of a more serious kind, or frequent repetitions of slighter faults, are noticed by badges of disgrace, which are to be worn till a certain term of good behavior shall purchase their removal. Chastisement is as rarely bestowed as possible, and is performed with solemnity in public. Every transaction, either of reward or punishment, of these weekly schools, is registered.—Report for 1789, pp. 38—40.

A carpenter was placed to occupy the fourth house which was hired. There are now six shoemakers, six tailors, six carpenters; and for the time and their ages, the progress made in these several callings is by no means contemptible. The other boys knit stockings or weave garters.

The girls are employed in needlework and knitting; they are in general, younger than the boys, and have, consequently, made less advances in industry.

A place has been hired adjoining to the house, for a carpenter's shop; a small spot of garden ground has been also taken, and the boys assist the gardener at their leisure hours.—Report for 1789.

This system was not long adhered to, the Society gradually concentrating its operations into one main establishment in St. George's Fields for residence, and mechanical industry, with a small probationary school of reform for the more vicious and criminal boys, in Bemandsey. This scheme was discontinued in 1817, on the ground of economy, and established instead, on a part of the large premises in St. George's Fields. Here the great object was to train all

---

\* This idea was adopted from the practice of Mr. Raikes, of Gloucester, the Institutor of Sunday Schools.



the inmates to some mechanical pursuit, and after the evidence of suitable proficiency, the boys were apprenticed to a master in the branch of business, or their friends assisted to find them employment. The whole number of children, admitted up to 1848, was upward of 1400.

In 1846, Rev. Sidney Turner was appointed resident chaplain, to which office was assigned not only the religious but general superintendence. In consequence of his representations, a change in the location, organization and employments of the institution was effected. Having visited Mettray, and other farm schools of the same character in France and Germany, in company with Mr. Paynter, a police magistrate, and of Mr. Gladstone, the treasurer of the Society, it was recommended by him to transfer the institution to the country, where the boys could be taught gardening, agriculture, and out-door employment. In his report for 1848 he remarks:

A well organized country establishment, indeed, carried on upon a large scale, and especially conducted on the system of *family* distribution and superintendence, which has been found so successful at Hamburg and at Mettray, seems to promise so many, and such varied and permanent advantages, as may fully justify the interest which the more active members of your body have taken in it, and the sympathy which has been so widely and liberally evinced in the success of your efforts among the well-wishers to the juvenile offender's reformation. Many of the most serious of the obstacles that impede the good working of a large London School of industrial and religious discipline, such as the Philanthropic, will at once be removed or greatly lessened by the transfer of the school to a country situation.

In London it is impossible to give the boys those occasional *holidays*, which are so useful as encouragements to their industrial exertions, or to employ them in the execution of commissions, the taking out letters, &c., which is so useful as an exercise of the boy's moral responsibility, and train him to deserve the trust and confidence of others, without exposing him to the falling in with his former corrupt associates, and renewing their connection with him. The boy is necessarily, for the most part, kept secluded, and thus brought up upon an artificial system; whereas, after a short interval of probation, it should be the plan of the reform school that receives him, to make all his habits as natural as possible, and as near to those of the common life he has to enter into, when his course of discipline and education is over, as a proper superintendence and observation of his conduct will admit of.

So again as to his *employment*. In a London school, it is impossible to introduce any but the commoner and more sedentary trades, such as tailoring, shoe-making, mat, brush, and basket making, and the like; and as the numbers admitted into the institution increase, and the boys are placed out earlier than formerly, the amount of employment is found insufficient to give them that *full regular* occupation which is so essential to their proper training; and the value of the boy's work is greatly diminished, the boy leaving the workshop almost as soon as he has made sufficient progress in his art to make his labor profitable. Let the institution be a large one, and a really agricultural one, a *genuine Farm School*, as far as possible, both self-supplying, and self-supporting, and there would be little difficulty in ensuring the presence of that most essential condition of success—*constant*, and yet *varied* employment.

The advantage of such a country school would be no less seen, I believe, in the greater opportunities it would give the boy trained in it of being *useful in after life*, and so of earning a sufficient maintenance.

After some difficulty in procuring an eligible situation, an estate of about 140 acres, known as the Red Hill farm, near Reigate, in the county of Surrey, on the Brighton Railway, was obtained on a lease of 150 years, with the privilege of purchase at any time, on specified terms. Buildings were erected for a dwelling house for the director, a farm house and appurtenances, a chapel, school-room, and two lodging houses, each capable of accommodating fifty-six children and their overseers.



# REFORM SCHOOL AND FARM

FOR

JUVENILE CRIMINALS, AT RED HILL, NEAR REIGATE.

---

The school at Red Hill was commenced in April, 1849, by the admission of three lads ; and in the course of two months of fifteen more, mostly above fourteen years of age, and from country districts. At the close of the year there had been admitted sixty-five boys, including those which were at the institution in London. The following sketch of a visit to Red Hill within a year after it was opened, which was originally published in Chambers' Journal, will throw light on the organization and practical working of the institution.

On alighting at the Red Hill station, we were received by a neat young groom, who drove us in a small vehicle, very carefully and well, over a mile and a-half of roughish road to the chaplain's residence, into which we were politely ushered by another youth, who announced us to our host.

"Surely," I said when that gentleman arrived, "neither of those lads were ever convicts?"

"Yes," was the reply ; "one was convicted once—the other, who is from Parkhurst, twice ; but they are both so thoroughly reformed, that we trust them as fully as we do any of our other servants—some times with money to pay small bills."

On advancing to a sort of balcony to look around, we found ourselves on the top of one of that low range of eminences known as the Surrey Hills, with, if not an extensive, a cheerful and picturesque landscape to look upon. Immediately to the left stood a pretty group of buildings, comprising the chapel, a school-room, and two houses, each to contain sixty boys ; the foundation-stone of the first having been laid by Prince Albert no longer ago than the 30th of April. These unpretending but tasteful Gothic edifices, relieved, as they were, by a back-ground of thick foliage, which stretched away at intervals to the boundaries of the estate, gave a sylvan, old-English character to the scene, which will doubtless be endeared to the memory of many an emigrant when laboring out his mission in the Antipodes. In front, in a dell, beyond a cutting through which the South-Eastern Railway passes, and half-hidden by tall trees, the farm-house in which the boys, now on the farm, are accommodated, partially revealed itself ; while beyond, a cottage, in which the bailiff of the estate lives, was more plainly seen.

Dotted about the farm—of which our terraced point of view afforded a perfect supervision—were groups of juvenile laborers steadily plying their tasks. One small party were grubbing a hedge, their captain or monitor constructing a fire-heap of the refuse ; a detachment of two was setting up a gate, under the direction of a carpenter ; a third group was digging a field of what we afterwards found to be extremely hard clay ; and a fourth was wheeling manure. We could also see flitting to and fro, immediately about the farm-house and offices, several small figures, employed in those little odd jobs that the "minding" of poultry, the feeding of pigs, the grooming of horses, and the stalling of oxen, entail upon the denizens of a farm-steading. The systematic activity which pervaded the whole estate, and the good order in which every thing appeared, bespoke rather an old-established than a recently-entered farm.

Having been gratified with this scene, we descended, under the guidance of our reverend host, to take a nearer view of the operations. On our way, he informed us that the extent of the farm is no more than 140 acres ; but that, small as it is, he hoped, with some additions readily obtainable, that as many as 500 boys would be eventually trained upon it. It appears to have been admirably chosen for the purpose. These acres include every variety of soil, from light sand to the stiffest of clay, the generality of it consisting of ferruginous marl, the color of which

doubtless gave the name to the hill over which it is chiefly spread. The more stubborn part of the estate will not only supply what is chiefly required—labor—but will also be the means of instructing the pupils in the proper method of cultivating consolidated soils; while the modes of dealing with lighter land will be exemplified in the more friable sandy earths.

While approaching the nearest knot of young laborers, it happened that the recollection of a visit I had paid some years ago to the town-house of the society arose vividly in my mind. I remembered well, that although generally healthy, some of the boys seemed pale, and when you addressed them, answered furtively, and did not look straight into your face. But the ruddy, smiling countenance which was now turned up to return the pastor's greeting, formed a striking contrast to what I had noticed on the previous occasion. It beamed with health and pleasure: the first due to a free life in the country, changed from a pent-up existence in town; and the latter to the affable kindness of his treatment. The boy was "puddling" (ramming earth round the foundation of) a gate-post, and replied to certain suggestions respecting his mode of doing his task in a frank, fearless, but perfectly respectful manner. We passed on to the hedge-grubbing. This is hard work, and the boys were plying away manfully. Will lent force to every stroke of the pick, and every incision of the ax. The moment the director came in sight, a smile rose to every face. A large, spreading, obstinate root was giving a couple of the young grubbers a vast deal of trouble, and the superior, supposing the boys were not going about their task in the best manner, suggested an alteration in their plan. It was pleasing to see, instead of a servile or a dogged acquiescence in this hint, that the elder lad at once gave his reasons for the mode he had chosen for unearthing the root. A short argument ensued between the master and pupil, which ended in the decision that the latter was right. This showed the terms on which these two individuals—who might be described as antipodes in station, in morals, and in intellect—stood towards each other. The law of kindness (the only code practiced here) had brought both into perfect *rapprochement*. No restraint existed, except that imposed by propriety and respect. The monitor or captain of this group was also "drawn out" by our *cicerone* to explain the means by which he kept up ventilation in the burning heap which he was replenishing with refuse. This he did not manage very scientifically, but in a manner which showed he thoroughly understood the principles of combustion, and that his mind, as well as his hands, were engaged in the task.

At Red Hill free intercourse is cultivated and courted. No discipline is enforced which involves punishment so severe as to be much dreaded, and not the slightest restraint upon personal liberty is imposed. Any boy is free to leave the farm if he chooses to make his escape; there is neither wall, nor bolt, nor bar to hinder him. Five instances only of desertion have occurred since the school has been in actual operation. Of these misguided youths, who were all of the youngest class of inmates, three have returned of their own accord, begging to be again admitted; two others were sent back by their friends, the desire of seeing whom was the motive of their elopement. Although the labor is severe, the clerical chief has managed to instill into those under his charge a patient endurance, if not a love of it, and a tolerance of the restraints it imposes, far superior to the temptations of the miserable lawless liberty of their previous career of crime. It should, however, be remarked, that the lads in the Farm School have all suffered for their offenses, by imprisonment, or some other penalty, before their admission to it, and come mostly as volunteers under the impulse of repentance, and a desire to do better for themselves. The "colons" of Mettray, on the contrary, are all "détenus"—are literally convicts still under the sentence and restraint of law.

"Those boys whom we have left," I remarked, "are possibly the best-disposed in the school, and never were deeply dyed in crime?"

"On the contrary," was the reply, "among them are youths who have not only been frequently convicted and imprisoned for felonies, but were, before coming here, habitually addicted to faults which the laws do not punish. They seldom spoke without an imprecation, were frequently intoxicated, and were guilty of other vices, which one would imagine their youth precluded them from indulging in. Yet you now find them expressing themselves with propriety, and conducting themselves quite as well as most of the farm-boys in this parish."

At the extremity of the estate, beyond the bailiff's house, was a party of

younger boys digging a field of obstinate clay nearly as hard as unbaked brick. The superintendent, who directed their operations, gave them a good character for perseverance, and added, that he was some times surprised at the aptitude displayed by the boys when farm-tools were first put into their hands. Although their previous mode of life proved they could never before have been used to delving, draining, trimming hedgerows, &c., yet the intelligence many of them displayed when set about such work for the first time caused their instructor—whose former experience had lain among country parish apprentices—to marvel greatly. The truth is, the schemes and contrivances—criminal though they were—in which these lads were forced to engage to relieve the miseries of their old mode of life, have a tendency to sharpen their wits and brighten their intellects. As the most hardened metal takes the highest polish, so these youths, when thoroughly reformed and trained, are most often the brightest workmen.

To each their benignant pastor gave a kind word, even if it were one expressive of disapprobation for some fault; of which he pointed out the evil consequences with such plain and convincing reasoning, that the delinquent expressed contrition either in words or by a more expressive, because more spontaneous, look. He had manifestly tried to study each character, and adapted his arguments to suit its peculiarities, using such means of cure as were most efficacious for the special moral diseases under which the patient happened to labor.

In this lies the true secret of all reformatory efforts undertaken for the young. As in medicine, so in morals much depends upon adapting the remedies to the character and kind of disease. To bring every sort of mental obliquity under one mode of treatment, or one set of rules, is as irrational as if a physician were to treat his patients in classes, and administer to each class the same physic. Nothing can be more plain, than that, to cure immorality, the moral sentiments must be addressed; and this is impossible, or at most ineffectual, where the peculiarities of each moral ailment is not studied, and where any system of general routine is followed.

Conversing on this topic, we arrived at the farm-house, where we saw the scholars engaged in a variety of home duties—from baking and storing bread to mending stockings, in which useful avocation we detected two juniors in an out-house.

In the evening, at six, the boys were assembled in the school-room for instruction and prayers. An additional interest was occasioned by the circumstance of the resident chaplain having only the day before returned from a second visit to Mettray. After a prayer, and the reading and exposition of an appropriate chapter from the Testament, he gave the assembly an account of what he had seen, and read the answer to an address he had taken over to the Mettray boys from themselves, which we translate as follows:

**“THE BOYS OF THE AGRICULTURAL COLONY AT METTRAY TO THE YOUTHS OF THE PHILANTHROPIC FARM-SCHOOL.**

“DEAR FRIENDS AND BROTHERS IN THE LORD: Mr. Gladstone and Mr. Turner, your respected directors, have come to visit our colony, and we can hardly tell you how much pleasure we felt when Mr. Gladstone, after speaking to us about the farm-school, read to us your address.

“Thanks, dear friends, for this generous impulse of your hearts. You have well understood our feelings. Yes, we are—we shall always be—your brothers. The same love of what is good animates us both.

“Tears of joy and thankfulness glistened in our eyes as we heard your kind wishes for us; and our honored and excellent directors, the Viscount de Courteilles and M. Demetz, have been equally moved by them. Your sentiments are indeed noble and Christian.

“Dear brothers, we all owe much to God, who has directed the honored friends by whom both we and you are superintended. Do you pray—let us pray—for the founders of both our schools. Let us pray for their happiness, and for the welfare of the asylums which they have opened. When you kneel down each night before God, think of us in France, who, on our part, will add to our petitions a prayer for you in England.

“Like us, you say you have erred—you have known trouble. But like us, too, you have resolved to have done with your past life of disorder. You will succeed

in this, dear friends, for the providence of God has sent you enlightened and Christian friends. You have found in Mr. Gladstone and Mr. Turner what we have found in our worthy founders and directors. Let us follow their lessons. So shall we march among the foremost in the path of honor and virtue in which they lead us.

"Dear friends, we form this day an affectionate alliance with you—one that shall last. The ring which our directors send will be the substantial symbol of this union of our hearts with yours. You will see these words engraved on it, 'God, honor, union, recollection'—words which are our motto. Let them be also yours. Let us be grateful. Let us join together in strife against what is evil. Let us support one another in what is good. Let us love each other to the end.

"Dear friends and brothers, health and happiness to you all.

(Signed by the elder brothers and monitors.)

"LANOS, BELLONET, ANGEY, MAUCHIN, GUY, JOSSET.  
MARI, COLLOT, SOUVIGNE, HEBERT, CHEVALIER."

This was, the bearers of it were assured, the veritable composition of the subscribing boys. It was read on this occasion amidst the most profound attention. When the assembly broke up, the lads separated to their play-ground in an orderly manner. The young groom, however, departed for the stable to prepare the vehicle for our departure; for our most interesting visit was nearly over.

In a parting conversation with the resident chaplain, he told us that thirty-six reformed boys had already been sent to Algoa Bay; and that, despite the storm of disaffection raised in Cape Colony against the introduction of convicts, the lads were well received. They had scarcely stepped on shore, before every one of them was engaged, and the accounts since received of them were highly favorable.

Although the important results which will assuredly flow from this experiment can only be carried out by the extension of its plans, yet large numbers of pupils in such establishments would, for the reasons we have given, be an evil. Centralization and generalization would be as inevitable as they are much to be dreaded. To do any good, the mind of each boy must be influenced separately; and in a large school, this would be impossible for one superintendent to accomplish. The Philanthropic School is now within manageable bounds, and the chaplain knows each lad almost as intimately as he does his own children; but when the establishment is extended to 500 pupils, as is contemplated, much of his influence over individuals will cease. To obviate this, it is intended to make each "family" consist of sixty individuals, guided by a master (with an assistant) and his wife. The softening restraint instinctively imposed by the mere presence of a woman—setting aside her higher influences—will be most beneficial. Much—all, we may venture to say—will, however, depend upon the tact, temper, demeanor, and patience of these most important functionaries. It is here, indeed, that the point of difficulty in effecting the reformation of vicious habits and impulses in the young presents itself. Nearly all reformatory *systems* have failed from the unskilfulness, from the want of long-suffering forbearance, and of prompt but kindly firmness, on the part of those to whom the task of reformation has been confided. It is the possession of these qualities by the reverend principal, in an eminent degree, which has brought about the pleasing state of things we have described at the Red Hill Farm, and we look with some anxiety to the time when, notwithstanding his general supervision, the smallest of his functions will have to be delegated.

As we arrived at the Red Hill railway station for our return journey some time before the train started, we employed the interval in making inquiries as to the character the Philanthropic boys bore among their neighbors, who, we were previously informed, had at first looked upon the new colony with dread.\* Every account we received was, we are happy to find, favorable: the ex-criminals had not occasioned a single complaint.

---

\* A bargain had nearly been concluded at one time for a farm to the north of the metropolis; but so great was the horror of the contiguous gentry, that one of them actually presented the society with a donation of £1000, on condition that the scene of reformatory operations should be removed; and accordingly it was shifted to Surrey.



# GOVERNMENTAL PRISON FOR JUVENILE CRIMINALS,

AT

## PARKHURST PRISON, ISLE OF WIGHT

---

"This is a penal establishment for boys who have been sentenced to transportation, usually between the ages of 10 and 18, but even at 8 or 9 many have been thus sentenced, with a view of getting them here, and not long ago there were as many as 60 or 70 at this tender age. On the boy's first arrival at the prison he is placed in a probationary ward, where he is kept in separate confinement for 4 months or more. During this time he is not allowed to hold any intercourse with the other boys, but for at least five hours he is at different times in the presence of others, either for exercise, instruction, or religious service, and during the time he is in his cell, he is supplied with occupation and books, and is visited by the officers of the establishment. This is not, therefore, a stringent separate system. The boys appear in good spirits, cheerful and happy, nor does their health in any way suffer; indeed, boys have frequently asked to go back to the probationary ward after having left it, from feeling there a degree of security from temptation to commit prison offences, and consequently to incur punishment. After this the boys are placed together where they learn trades, and converse or play with each other, under the eye of warders—the meals being taken together, 360 in a large hall. The boys remain at Parkhurst from 2 to 3 years, sometimes longer, during this time a highly favorable change is generally perceptible in the whole disposition of the boy, there is a great difference between the first and second year, and a still greater difference between the third and the former year. The state of health has been remarkably good, only fourteen deaths having occurred during 8 years, among nearly 1,200 boys. On leaving Parkhurst they are generally sent to the colonies, and much depends on the circumstances in which they are there placed. In Western Australia, there is an officer of the government, styled the Guardian of Juvenile Emigrants, who is appointed to apprentice the boys and to see that the conditions of the indentures are fulfilled, visiting them once in six months. It is feared that in other colonies such provision has not yet been made, and that the boys are consequently exposed, on arriving, to much danger of falling back into dishonest means of gaining a livelihood. Excellent reports have been received recently of the conduct of boys sent out to Western Australia;—of 62 boys, 50 were first-rate lads, but 12, about 1-5th, were very troublesome, and great difficulty was felt in disposing of them. This has also been experienced in making satisfactory arrangements for those sent very young to Parkhurst, who after passing through the appointed time, and having received the requisite instruction, were not old enough to be sent abroad, and having a prison brand affixed to them, could not be otherwise placed out. For such cases, Col. Jebb feels it would be most desirable to provide District Penal Schools similar to Parkhurst, where they could be properly arranged for, leaving only the boys above the age of 15 to come into the hands of government for transportation."

Thus far the establishment would seem a good one, were it restricted to such boys of 15 or 16 and upwards, as have so thoroughly resisted every attempt to reform them, that their absolute removal from society is the only safeguard from their evil influence on it. But what is to become of the young boys,—of the female convicts altogether? These have been quite uncared for in the provision made for the older boys.

Above 2000 of the annual fresh supply of male juvenile delinquents are under the age for Parkhurst. Mr. Neison's statistic tables show that, during the 9 years for which the tables are drawn, females constituted one-fifth of the total tried at assizes; about one-fourth of the summarily convicted, and of the whole number re-committed, one-third were females. But of those 14 years of age and under, only between one-seventh and one-eighth were girls. A yet more striking fact is derivable from a paper delivered into the Lords' Committee in 1847, by Mr. Chalmers, Governor of Aberdeen Prison. The percentage of female prisoners in all the prisons of Scotland, is nearly one half; of juvenile female prisoners under 17, between one-fifth and one-sixth? but the per centage of *re-committants of juvenile female prisoners is greater by one-half* than that of males. This statistic fact would indicate that young girls are generally much less prone to crime than boys of the same age, but that their tendency to it rapidly increases with their age, and that when they have once embarked in a criminal career, they become more thoroughly hardened than the other sex. The correctness of these painful results is proved by the testimony of the Bishop of Tasmania before the Lords.



After speaking of the fearful condition of the female convicts in the colonies, which surpasses in degradation and vice even that of the men he adds :—

“Female felons are so bad, because, before a woman can become a felon at all, she must have fallen much lower, have unlearned much more, have become much more lost and depraved than a man. Her difficulty of regaining her self-respect is proportionally greater. There is nothing to fall back upon—no one to look to. I believe that the experience of almost every parish priest in England would lead him to the conclusion that there are many cases in which in our village girls are kept straight, not so much by their own good principle, as by the check imposed upon them through the dread of shame, the fear of fathers, mothers, friends and relations. Let that check be once removed, and their future progress is rapidly downward. When they go out as convicts every thing is gone, every restraint is removed, they can fall no lower.”

An experienced temperance advocate has stated that, while the cases of drunken men who have become reformed and steady teetotalers have come very frequently before him, *he has never known an instance of a woman, given to intoxication, being really converted*; this will probably be common experience. The records of the teacher's journal are quite in accordance with these painful facts.

“One little girl only, at all connected with our school, has been taken before the magistrates, while such occurrences among the boys are frequent. We have not, then, in the school, the criminal class of girls, and only in a few cases the sisters of the boys who have been convicted of theft; that many girls who are already known thieves, exist in Bristol, the weekly police reports sufficiently show; *but these will not come to school*. Nor will the low and degraded girls that infest the neighborhood; in the early period of the school several of these came for a time, but have since discontinued. The girls who attend are rather the very poor and low, than the vicious. Their general appearance usually strikes strangers as superior to what would be expected in such a school; this arises from the circumstance that girls are more easily able to improve their dress by their industrial habits, and also that girls are more quickly susceptible of improvement than boys. Any effort, therefore, soon tells on them; but this very flexibility of nature, renders them more liable to fall when under bad influence. On the other hand it is far more difficult to call out their intellectual powers than those of the boys, and thus to interest them in their lessons; this arises not only from the difference in their natures, but from the circumstance that while the boys have been sharpening their powers by roving the streets, the girls have been confined to their wretched home. The dullness and stupidity they manifest, united with great vulgarity, is a serious hindrance to their improvement, but persevering efforts has done much for them.”

When we reflect that the early moulding of the young child's mind depends almost entirely on the mother, and that these neglected children, who are in great danger of joining the criminal class, if they have not done so, are to become the parents of the next generation, surely express provision should be made for their training and reformation. As yet they have been unprovided for by the government, and Parkhurst only exists for the boys.

Let us now endeavor to ascertain from public documents how far the juvenile prison at Parkhurst is fulfilling its mission. As confinement here is the only authorized mode of disposing of young transports, rather than subjecting them to the system adopted for adults, Sergeant Adams frequently sent juvenile offenders to it, before the rules of admission were defined, yet this is the opinion he expressed of the Institution before the Lords in 1847:

“I was about three weeks ago at Parkhurst, in the Isle of Wight. They there act upon the principle of cooping up, and it seems to me a mistaken one. They have 40 solitary cells, and every child who is sent to Parkhurst is locked up in one of those cells for four months after he goes. I call it solitary; perhaps the word ‘separate’ is the term used, but it is solitary in this respect, that he is there for the whole twenty-four hours, with the exception of when he is in chapel, and two hours when he is at school, where he is in such a pen that he can see nobody but the minister. His sole employment is knitting, and reading good books. No good conduct can make him there less than four months, and if his conduct is not good, he is there until his conduct is good. At this time there are several boys who have been in those cells from six to twelve months. It seems to me that it can only make them sullen. \* \* When the prison was first established, the boys were allowed occasionally a game of play; that was entirely put an end to. Within the last three months they have been allowed occasionally to play at leap-frog, but no other game. Of course, if boys are allowed to



play at leap-frog and no other game, leap-frog will be the only game at which they will not care to play. I asked what were the rewards held out for good conduct, and they told me the only rewards were permission to attend the evening school, and the privilege of going to the governor to get information of their friends. Why, one half of them have no friends to ask after, and as to the other half, the less they know of them the better. The privilege also of attending evening school, though a great and proper one, might be rendered more valuable if accompanied by the privilege of half a holiday, and a game of cricket. That they can behave ill in their solitary cell is quite clear, because otherwise a boy could not be there for twelve months; but what that ill behavior is, or what the good behavior is, I did not ask, for I thought I ought not to pry into those questions."

Such is the opinion of the prison expressed by a benevolent and experienced man. Let us turn for further particulars to the printed reports presented to both Houses of Parliament.

"The number of prisoners, 79, sent back to Milbank for transportation in 1846, was, from peculiar circumstances, unusually great. A number of ill-disposed and discontented boys having been discovered, who manifested no desire to avail themselves of the course of instruction and training pursued at Parkhurst, but mischievously employed themselves in unsettling and perverting others, it was deemed expedient to remove the greater portion of them in the month of April, and the salutary effect of that step has been very apparent since that time in the improved conduct of the remaining prisoners. The other individuals returned for transportation were boys, who having repeatedly incurred minor punishments for misconduct, had been placed in the penal class, and while there, did not evince any real desire to amend."

It seems, then, that after some years of experience, sufficient moral power was not obtained to control as many as 79, who were therefore sent back to people another country. At Mettrai, the number of morally incurable was, even from the earliest times, only occasionally one or two. We see also that even this strict penal discipline cannot preserve the less vicious from moral contamination, from "ill-disposed and discontented boys." The last report will show whether any great progress in moral influence has been made in five years. The Governor reports:—

"The number of attempts to escape has been very large this last year, (1849,) 34 prisoners in all have run away, 30 of these while out at farm labor. All of them, however, were speedily re-captured. None of the boys who made these attempts had so far as I can ascertain, any hope or expectation that they would really be able to secure their liberty; but having found that two boys who had run from the land, and had committed a robbery previous to their re-capture, were removed to Winchester Gaol, they determined to try to get relief by such a course of proceeding, from the restraint and discipline of Parkhurst, which they found to be intolerably irksome. Having no power of forethought or rational consideration, they yielded to the impulse of an unfounded notion, that *any* change from Parkhurst would be for the better."

When a youth who had twice attempted to escape from his former confinement, was asked why he did not make a similar effort at Mettrai, he replied, "*because there are no walls*;" from that penal asylum there have been for many years no escapes; here there are "enclosures long believed to be impassable," sentinels with loaded guns, and a certainty that there is no possible escape from the island? yet the inhabitants of the surrounding district are in constant fear of finding runaways in their houses, nor is the apprehension diminished by the fact of two conflagrations having been kindled by the prisoners during the last year. Why does this state of feeling exist at Parkhurst? The Visitors give in their report a sufficient clue to it.

"Among youths such as are confined at Parkhurst, who are precocious without experience, very restless and adventurous without being guided by reason, very excitable, credulous when one of themselves asserts a fact, or advances a proposal, yet suspicious of all that may be stated or urged by their officers, even to an extent that could hardly be believed by those who did not continually watch the workings of their minds, it is most difficult to make them understand what is for their immediate, as well as their prospective benefit."

What wonder is it, that with such a state of feeling, with nothing to exercise and give free vent to their "restless and adventurous" spirit, with no "direct and sufficiently powerful stimulus in the way of remuneration for work efficiently done," their pent up energies should break out into frequent acts of disrespect to the officers, violence, wanton damage of property, and even theft, as well as disorder and prohibited

talking, for which an average of 445 boys incurred, in 1844, 4105 separate punishments, (among them 165 whippings,) making an average of above 10 per diem! If the governor is able to state in the last report, that the behavior of the majority "was generally quiet, orderly, and obedient; he feels obliged to add:—

"That while there has been a general observance of outward regularity and attention to the prison rules among the greater portion of the boys, and serious breaches of order have been of comparatively rare occurrence, there has not been that evidence of a general and growing desire to improve in moral conduct and industrial energy, which I anxiously looked for, and the apparent absence of which causes me much disappointment. Prisoners are generally indolent, boys especially."

Those who have accorded in the principles of reformatory action which were laid down in the first chapter, and have been our guide in the consideration of all the schools that have passed before us, will feel no surprise that the governor's hopes are unfulfilled, not, it may be, through any fault of his own, but through the radical error of the whole system. It attempts to fashion children into machines, instead of self-acting beings, to make them obedient prisoners within certain iron limits, not men who have been taught how to *use their liberty without abusing it*; without this knowledge, and the power of employing it, we have seen that the best instruction, the Word of God itself, but little avails its possessor. Such a system must fail; for the boy whose heart has never been purified and softened by any good home influences, who has always done "what is right in his own eyes," will never give a *willing* obedience where his powers can have no free exercise, where there is no softening power of love to subdue him, where he can never hear from woman what should have been the entreating tones of a mother, where he regards with profound suspicion the appointed agents of his reformation. It is utterly vain to look for any real reformation where the heart is not touched, where the inner springs of action are not called into healthful exercise; this can not possibly be done for children under the mechanical and military discipline of Parkhurst.

We have thus endeavored to scrutinize the system adopted in this establishment, and to point out its radical defects, because it is the only reformatory prison for boys existing under government direction, and is regarded by many as a model one. Of the details of its management it is unnecessary to speak; they appear, from the reports to be well planned, and carried out with due attention to the health of the boys, and their instruction in mental and industrial pursuits, while the expense is probably as moderate as is possible under the circumstances. There is only one other point to which we would draw attention. Parkhurst is especially intended for the training of boys, who at the end of two, or at most three years, will be prepared to go out as colonists, and the regulations now laid down, make 14 and upwards, the age of admission. The governor has, in his report, stated his opinion:—

"That the admission of youths of 18 and upwards, or of lads who have pursued a course of crime for several years, till they have become habituated to and hardened in it, is very much to be lamented, as it seriously impedes all efforts made for the reformation of our inmates. Such characters as those above described, having been many times imprisoned, have lost all sense of degradation, have no desire to become respectable characters, and have no intention to earn their subsistence by honest means whenever they may regain their liberty. Abject slaves themselves to sensual appetites and propensities, the only voluntary activity they manifest is a continual effort, by persuasion, by threats, by false promises, or by ridicule, to make other prisoners pursue their vicious example in opposing all means which may be tried for their moral improvement."

But at the end of the preceding year there were 393 out of 622, 18 years of age and upwards, some of them "convicted of atrocious crimes," which, he justly feared, would "afford subject for eager investigation and debasing discourse among a certain class of the prisoners." When young men have arrived at that degree of audacious depravity, can it be doubted that unless sufficient moral force is in action to neutralize their influence, they must be most unsafe companions for boys? And if youths have been allowed thus to go on in a career of crime until they have been "so many times imprisoned, that they have lost all sense of degradation," surely a school for boys is a most unfit place for them.

## CONFERENCES ON PREVENTIVE AND REFORMATORY SCHOOLS,

AT

BIRMINGHAM, IN 1851, AND 1853.

---

THE reformatory movement in Great Britain received a powerful impulse in the right direction by the discussions, and published proceedings of two Conferences held in Birmingham, on the 9th and 10th of December, 1851, and on the 20th of December, 1853,—of which we proceed to give an account.

On the 9th and 10th of December, 1851, a “Conference on Preventive and Reformatory Schools,” was held at Birmingham, at which several of the most active promoters of this class of schools attended and compared the results of their observations and experience, with a view of deciding on the proper course of action to be adopted by the legislature and individuals, to reach and reform the “perishing and dangerous classes” of children and juvenile offenders in England. The following seem to be the results arrived at, as set forth in the report of the proceedings:

The children whose condition requires the notice of the conference, are:

1. Those who have not yet subjected themselves to the grasp of the law, but who, by reason of the vice, neglect, or extreme poverty of their parents, are inadmissible to the existing school establishments, and consequently must grow up without any education; almost inevitably forming part of the “perishing and dangerous classes,” and ultimately becoming criminal.

2. Those who are already subjecting themselves to police interference, by vagrancy, mendicancy, or petty infringement of the law.

3. Those who have been convicted of felony, or such misdemeanor as involves dishonesty.

The provisions to be made for these three classes, are:

For the first, free day schools.

For the second, industrial feeding schools, with compulsory attendance.

For the third, penal reformatory schools.

The legislative enactments needed to bring such schools into operation, are:

For the free day schools, such extension of the present governmental grants, from the committee of council on education, as may secure their maintenance in an effective condition, they being by their nature at present excluded from aid, yet requiring it in a far higher degree than those on whom it is conferred.

For the industrial feeding schools, authority to magistrates to enforce attendance at such schools, on children of the second class, and to require payment to the supporters of the school for each child from the parish in which the child resides, with a power to the parish officer to obtain the outlay from the parent, except in cases of inability.

For the penal reformatory schools, authority to magistrates and judges to commit juvenile offenders to such schools instead of to prison, with power of detention to the governor during the appointed period, the charge of maintenance being enforced as above.

We make some extracts from the remarks of the different speakers, for the sake of the facts and suggestions which they contain.

The Chairman, M. D. Hill, Esq., Recorder of Birmingham, thus comments on the propositions before the conference :

The perishing and dangerous classes of society consist of a numerous and increasing body of young persons, who are being trained in a way they should not go; by some they are called the Arabs of the streets; by others the outcasts of society; by others again, human vermin. However designated, the terms employed make it manifest that they are sometimes objects of fear, sometimes of aversion, often of pity; that they are not of society, but somehow for its misfortunes interwoven with it. It is this class which forms the head-spring of that ever-flowing river of crime, which spreads its corrupt and corrupting waters through the land. It can not be dried up. It has never yet been purified. Nor, indeed, have any well-directed efforts, at all commensurate with the magnitude of the evil, ever been instituted. It therefore, becomes of the very deepest importance, not only with regard to the temporal and eternal happiness of that particular class, but for the safety of all, old and young, high and low, rich and poor, that the state of neglect and mistaken treatment in which these miserable beings are found, should cease to exist. \* \* \* The classes in question are divided into two great and important branches: those who are living in ignorance, vice, or neglect, but who have not come under the animadversion of the law, and have not yet received any sentence from its ministers. These form the unconvicted branch. The other branch is composed of those who, for whatever offense, and before whatever tribunal, have come under the grasp of the law.

By respectable classes of society, I take not into consideration, when I employ the term, whether the individual is rich or poor. I call that man a respectable father, whatever may be his station, who is imbued with a right sense of responsibility to God and his children; who cares incessantly for their welfare; and who, while before all things he values a religious and moral training, yet also desires instruction for them in such branches of knowledge as will enable them to fight their way through the competition which besets every path in life. But the class we have in view is deeply below this. The poor but respectable man who discharges his duty to the best of his ability, is far above the negligent parent, and infinitely above the perverting parent, who wilfully abuses his charge. The difference between the highest in the realm and the lowest is measurable; but the difference between the respectable father and the man who corrupts his child is immeasurable, and consequently infinite. Now, the fact is, that these two classes can not be brought into connection in schools. It is a curious circumstance that the objection does not come so much from the higher class as from the lower. The children of that lower class will not place themselves in a position to be looked down upon, as they call it. Their love of education and training is not strong enough to overcome this objection; and you can not persuade them to enter the national schools. But if you could it would still be far from expedient to exert such an influence, because these poor creatures possess great powers for mischief. Thrown upon their own resources they have learnt self-reliance; they despise all restraint, both for themselves and others; and they would become the most dangerous leaders into evil courses, and the most fatal seducers of the better trained children, who, brought up under the eye of their parents, have not at their early age the power of self-government to resist the seduction. But there is an advantage to the better class in making distinct schools for this lower branch. Take these children away from the streets; let them no longer infest the path of the good man's child, and you destroy the danger which, I can tell those who are unacquainted with their humbler neighbors, weighs heavily on the minds of parents in the respectable class, keeps them in fear and trembling, lest their children should be corrupted by evil companions. Again, there is another advantage arising from these separate schools. We find that whenever a means is given to a lower class by which it is raised in the social scale, a stimulus is applied indirectly, but with great force, to the classes above it.

Now, let me go to the second branch, which is composed of two classes. The first consists of those who have been convicted of some petty offense, that does not necessarily imply the loss of honesty. With this class we shall interfere to

some extent; but we shall not dethrone the parent altogether. For this it is proposed that schools shall be established called feeding schools. And here steps in the principle of coercion, which it behooves you and the public, and through you and the public, the legislature, maturely to consider. Where, either through neglect or perversion, the parental tutelage has been abused, or through misfortune it has failed—as where the father has done his best, but the child's nature resists his authority—we hold it to be the duty of society to step in and prevent the child falling into ruin. But we do not go beyond what is absolutely necessary. We furnish the child with food so that he may be able to attend the school; and we compel his attendance by some punishment if he does not come; not so much to operate upon the child as upon the parent, who not unfrequently keeps the child from school to employ him for his own purposes, sometimes to beg, and sometimes to steal. I forbear to state what kind of education is to be given in these schools, beyond saying that literary and scientific knowledge will be secondary if not tertiary. Our object is not to make learned thieves, but plain, honest men. We will sedulously keep in view that labor is, by the ordination of Providence, the great reformer; and thus is the primal curse wrought into a blessing beyond price.

I pass then to the second division of the second branch, which may be termed a third class. There the child has been convicted of an act of dishonesty. And I dwell on that offense, not more because of its gravity, morally considered, than because it leads to the conclusion that the child has entered on crime as a calling. So long as offenses are clear of dishonesty, as in cases of assault, and so forth, so long no criminal can make them the means of livelihood; but an offender once embarked in the practice of dishonesty will never be reclaimed, except by a long course of reformatory discipline. His daily wants compel him to repeat his offenses until not only his conscience has become indifferent to guilt, but his moral sense is gradually inverted. He prides himself on his zeal and dexterity, and if, as in the case of younger criminals, he assists in the maintenance of his parents and the family of which he is a member, he soon persuades himself that his pursuits are not merely blameless but laudable. Now, then, in my mind—and I here, as elsewhere, speak the sentiments of those I represent—the parent has abandoned his authority, and abdication must be followed by revolution. The child must be taken under the protection of the public; he must be sent to the reformatory schools; not, however, for two or three months only; he must be treated as if he had—what he most assuredly has—a dreadful disease upon him; and he must be kept under treatment until cured. The parental authority is gone; the boy leaves the home to which he owes nothing but his existence, which has become a curse; and will be retained in the school according to the sentence of the judge or the magistrates by whom he was sent. Now, it would not be wise for us to attempt such a violent change, as to call on the authorities so to frame the sentence in its form as to authorize the conductors of the school to detain the child until he is cured; but when it is felt by the public that the boy is subjected to a treatment which confers an inestimable benefit on him, both as to this life and that to come, then the term of sentence may be, without any shock to public feeling, extended to such a period as will give reasonable expectation that it will be long enough to effect a thorough reformation. And now is the time to enter on the great question: Is it possible to reform these offenders? I know it is the belief of many—entertained in private, but not openly avowed—that to aim at reforming thieves is to attempt impossibilities. I know a shrewd gentleman, who said he would walk a hundred miles to see a reformed thief. I think I could cure him of scepticism, and furnish him, at the same time, with many wholesome excursions. I will not go far into the question myself; I will leave it mainly to gentlemen present, who have personal knowledge on the subject—who come here to-day as witnesses, and are ready to depose to most important facts. But I must not altogether pass by this vital part of our case. We have an asylum in this county, at Stretton-on-Dunsmore, which was established in 1818, by the benevolent magistrates of Warwickshire. It has, therefore, been in existence a sufficient time to enable us to speak with the confidence arising from long experience. At first, while the experiment was new, and the managers found nothing around them from which to derive instruction, the number reformed was only 48 per cent. But you must recollect that Stretton-on-Dun-



more is not a prison, nor a prison disguised. There are no physical means of keeping a convict at the place; and, until lately, there were no legal means to bring him back if he chose to depart; and even now the legal means are not so easily worked as could be desired, as some of us well know. We find, therefore, that the failures are generally composed of those boys who can not be induced to stay until they have felt and become convinced that advantage will accrue to them from remaining; consequently the boys deserting are in general the new comers. The real benevolence of his treatment becomes manifest to the lad if he remain long enough (and no long period is required,) to distinguish between kindness and indulgence. He also makes another discovery equally essential to his contentment with his position. He finds that the professions of good-will towards him, and the strong desire to confer lasting benefits upon him, which he hears from those under whose care he is placed, are sincere. For the first time in his life, perhaps, he finds that he may safely put confidence in those around him, and then, but not till then, does he slowly, but surely, open his heart to wholesome feelings of reverence and affection. And thus alone can the soil be prepared for the good seed. He remains, then, among a race of beings in whose existence he had previously no more belief than we have in that of fairies and good genii—he remains, and is reformed. I have said, that at first the reforms at Stretton were 48 per cent., or in other words, that where 48 were reformed, 52 turned out ill. That proportion has, however, been gradually raised, and the last time I made inquiries on the subject, the reforms had reached 65 per cent. I am afraid, however, that the financial position of the institution reflects discredit on the county of Warwick, and especially on the town of Birmingham, which, I grieve to say, has added more to the inmates and less to the funds of the asylum than any other district. There is another institution of which I have some knowledge. In the year 1848 I made my way to Mettray, near Tours, in France. I was received with the utmost kindness, and admitted into the fullest confidence by M. Demetz, the illustrious founder of the institution—a judge who descended from the bench because he could not endure the pain of consigning children to a prison when he knew that their *future* would be made worse than their *past*. I examined or rather cross-examined, each department of the institution, with all that unamiable incredulity which thirty years' practice at the bar may be supposed to have generated; I began with a sort of prejudice—a determined suspicion—fighting my way backward, step by step, until, as proofs advanced, the conclusion was forced upon me that my position was untenable. I found that at Mettray, where they possess and exercise the power of compulsory retention, and where, for desertion, a boy is sent back to the prison from which he had been withdrawn—the amount of reformation reached to what I at first thought the incredible proportion (but which I fully verified) of 85 per cent.

Well, if these two statements obtain your confidence in their accuracy, there is an end of the question; but you shall hear the witnesses to whom I have appealed, who, under different circumstances, and in other places, have been personal cognizant of facts, the relation of which will induce you, perhaps all the more readily, to put faith in those which I have laid before you. If then we take the question of the possibility of reformation as settled, at least for the present, let me touch for an instant on the subject of cost; for, although in public few will identify themselves with an objection founded on expense alone, yet in private the word *cost* is pretty frequently heard. Let us see what is our position. We have doubtless the power of postponing our duty to the body of children to which I have referred; and it must be confessed that we exercise this noxious privilege pretty freely. We have the power of letting them grow up in ignorance, vice, and crime—of neglecting the plant when young and tender—and of toiling to make it straight when old and stiff. But in this, as in all other debts, we pay most usurious interest for our procrastination. Let us now see what the expense is of reforming a boy at Stretton-on-Dunsmore. In order fairly to ascertain that expense, you must not only take the cost of the reclaimed, but of those also who are failures. Just as the carpenter, when he buys his timber, pays an equal price for that portion which he cuts away into useless chips as for that which remains in his finished work; so that the cost of his roof or his floor is not to be calculated simply by the quantity of wood therein found, but by the whole quan-

tity required in its fabrication. The cost of reforming a boy, then, under these circumstances, is from £12 to £16 a year. Or, having regard to the whole average time demanded for a cure, about £31. Now, before I contrast this cost with that of dealing with a criminal in later life, let me call attention to Mettray. The accounts of that admirable establishment are kept on a very perfect system, and with great minuteness—in such perfection that some of our merchants might study book-keeping with advantage in the counting-house of Mettray. Well, the gross cost of a boy at Mettray is £20 a year; but then you must know that at Mettray not only the cost of those not reformed is added, but the cost of a most valuable department of the institution, namely, that of a house of refuge, where those who have gone out into the world, if employment fail them, or if they shall be placed in circumstances in which they require the care of a friendly hand, may ever find a welcome and a home. Taking, therefore, the reformed, the unreformed, and the guests, the gross cost is £20 per annum; but by the productive labor of the boys the cost is reduced to £12, the average labor of each boy amounting to £8 a year. The total cost of each reformation at Mettray is, as I have before stated, £42; greatly above that of Stretton, no doubt; but then it is to be considered that the reformations at Mettray are 20 per cent. more numerous than at Stretton, and a little reflection will convince every one who hears me that the additional 20 per cent. implies the existence of a more powerful, and consequently more expensive, reformatory apparatus at Mettray than at Stretton. The secret lies in the employment of a far greater number of teachers and superintendents at Mettray in proportion to the number of the lads; but I can answer for it that the enlightened and benevolent conductors of Stretton would, if their funds permitted, gladly pay the additional cost to obtain the additional success. We will now contrast the cost of a vigilant reformatory administration, taking hold of its subject in his earliest years, with that of our established system, or want of system, by whichever term it may be most appropriately designated. Here the lad is left to rove abroad with very short intervals of restraint, living either on misplaced and most pernicious charity, (so called,) or by depredation; but will any one, having the slightest tincture of knowledge respecting such lads, for a moment affirm that although the cost of their subsistence and evil training finds its way into no account, and therefore does not appear in our statistical tables, it is, in truth, of so small an amount as £12 or £16 a year? I know there is a prevalent fallacy that a cost which does not come out of rates or taxes, or some public fund, is no cost at all. Why, when the thief comes into my house—as he did some time ago—and afterwards being found in the garden, was angrily thrust forth into the highway by the gardener, who did not know that the intruder had £10's worth of silver plate in his pocket to console him for the indignity; why, when that £10 was gone, was I the less a sufferer because it neither went in rates nor in taxes? Again, if a thief is under the control of the law, you put him on very spare diet—his beer is gone—his tobacco—all are gone. He is ruthlessly bereft of all his luxuries; and no creature on earth revels so wastefully in coarse luxury as your thief. Such is the burden which the thief at large casts on the community; and though we have no means of calculating its exact weight, we can not fail to see that, as between the thief in freedom and the thief in custody, the prison must be under prodigal management indeed if he is not less costly to the public when his rations are doled out by the gaoler than when he is roaming at liberty and helping himself. Nevertheless, his treatment under the hands of the law is, according to our present system, a very costly impost. Of his tendencies in childhood or early youth, which lead by a sure consequence to crime, we take little note. He wanders about the streets without control, he forms habits of idleness, he learns to gamble, he is precocious in debauchery, and we let him alone. At length his acts become cognizable by law; but unless he is singularly unfortunate, his career of impunity is not yet run. In the course of time, however, it comes to an end, and he appears before the magistrate for what is called his first offense, meaning thereby his first detection. A short imprisonment ensues, just long enough to dissipate any unfounded horror which he may have entertained of a jail, to blazon his name on the criminal roll, to make him acquainted with the body of which he is now a full member, and to turn his mind to the advantage of exercising his profession in such a manner as to escape as much as possible the casualties incident to his way of life. On every



committal he is told to take warning, and he does take it, though not precisely in the sense in which it is given. He receives it as a warning, not against crime, but against detection, and acts accordingly. Nevertheless, in spite of all his care, he falls from time to time under the animadversion of the law. Now, I am putting aside all higher considerations, and pinning myself down to pounds, shillings, and pence. Fix your attention, I beseech you, on the necessary cost of this process. Ordinary individuals require only the care of a physician when the body is ailing, and of a clergyman for their spiritual maladies; but your malefactor demands the constant care of a suite of attendants belonging to neither of these professions. He is apprehended by one or more of the police, who, having sacrificed much time and labor to obtain a satisfactory introduction to him, attend him to his new home with the most watchful care. His apartment in this home, or, as it is more commonly termed, his cell in the prison, is by far the most expensive dwelling which he ever entered, except in the pursuit of plunder, and the number and salaries of those who minister to his wants form an item of cost to which his private life has no parallel. When the proper hour arrives, he is handed into his carriage, and set down at the stipendiary magistrates's. \* \* \* And not only is the time of the magistrate employed in his affairs, but the aid of lawyers is called in—a class of men who have never been open to the reproach of undervaluing their services. Now, to all the expenses of a prosecution, which are paid for out of the public funds, such as the salaries of judges and recorders, counsel and attorneys, and the various officers of the court, and gratuities to witnesses, you must add the value of the time occupied by grand juries and petty juries in their public duties, avoiding, as you must do, if you desire to arrive at just results, the error to which I have before adverted, of assuming that when an expense is borne by individuals, and is not drawn from the public funds, it may be left altogether out of estimation. At length, after the drama of apprehension, trial, conviction, warning, and short imprisonment has been repeated, until it has lost all its interest either to actor or audience, the criminal arrives at the *ultimum supplicium*—transportation, a most expensive process, as I will proceed to show. A petition was presented to parliament by the magistrates of Liverpool, in the session of 1846. This petition set forth the cases of fourteen young offenders, impartially chosen, by which it appeared that these fourteen persons had been frequently committed to prison, none less than eight, one as many as twenty-three times. The cost of each of these fourteen youths, in apprehensions, trials, and imprisonments, was, on the average, £63, 8s. Not one of them was reformed, ten of them were transported, the cost of which, and their support in penal colonies, must be added. The cost of transportation in each case would be £28. That of control and residence in the colony, £54, at the least. So that each of the ten, who were transported, have cost the country, in those expenses which are chargeable on the public fund applicable to that purpose, a sum amounting to £145, 8s.! Such is the cost of a hardened offender, more than three times that of a reformed thief at Mettray, and almost five times as much as at Stretton-on-Dunsmore. And so great is even the *pecuniary* advantage of *conversion* over *perversion*. Surely here is matter for deep and humiliating reflection!

Rev. W. C. Osborn, Chaplain of Bath Jail:

When I became chaplain of the Bath jail in July, 1843, I determined to keep a most accurate account of all the children who might come under my care. During the first year there were about ninety-eight children sent to jail, of which number no less than fifty-five were first committals. During the following years I kept a strict account of these children, and the result has been of the most disheartening character. I can show you in detail the number of committals of each of those children during the six subsequent years, or even up to this time; and you will be surprised to be informed that within six years these children appeared in our jail no less than 216 times. I ventured to lay before a committee of the House of Commons a statement of the expense of these children. I will not trouble you with the details; but I may tell you that the result of the calculation was this, that having been in our jail for an aggregate period of twenty-seven and a-half years, having been committed 216 times, we find that in the six years subsequent to their first committals their cost to the public by imprisonment, prosecutions, plunder and destruction of property, by their maintenance in unions,

(making a fair allowance for their supposed occasional and temporary periods of honest industry) can not be estimated at a sum much less than £6,063. They have consequently been living most expensively upon the country. In fact, they have cost us a sum of money that would have kept them at a boarding-school for the whole of the time. Aye; and having lost all this money, in what position are they at the expiration of the six years? Fifteen of them have been transported, five have died, five of them are living we know not how or where; but there are about thirty of them in a condition which must, sooner or later, issue in their being sent to one of our penal colonies. The children committed for the first time in the year ending July, 1844, (pursuing the same mode of calculation,) have in five years cost about £4,000; and those committed for the first time in 1845, have already cost about £2,000. Now, in the returns laid before Parliament, on the motion of Mr. Monckton Milnes, M. P., it appears that there were in 1848 and 1849, throughout the country, no less than 7,000 first committals of persons under seventeen years of age. But I will take them at 5,000, and assuming that Bath presents a fair average of cost, the amount lost to the country, or expended on those children alone, who are committed for the first time, is half a million per annum. That is a startling assertion certainly; but it is fully borne out by the statement as to the cost of juvenile crime, made by Mr. Serjeant Adams, Mr. Rushton, and other witnesses examined by the select committees of the two Houses of Parliament. In the position in which I am placed, I have opportunities of knowing the condition of these children; and although the system adopted at Bath is, I believe, as good as, if not better than, that adopted elsewhere, yet I must say, that our treatment of these poor destitute creatures has been, and is, most cruel, unjust, and unchristian. Just look for a moment at these children—many so young that they can scarcely reach the top of the bar with their heads—many so little that when in chapel they have to stand on the seats that they may be seen—children who are so unconscious of the degradation of being in jail, that they will make the zebra-dress they wear supply them with amusement; and the mode of punishing them is such as to harden, not to reform and instruct them. I can not help feeling that our conduct towards them is most unjustifiable, and I trust that God will not visit us with his anger for our treatment of these poor, ignorant, sinning, yet unconsciously guilty creatures. We have given them justice—justice without mercy—justice without scales—for there has been no measurement of the cruelty of our treatment of them. It has been calculated that there are 700 orphans committed to the prisons of our country every year; that there are 2,000 committed of those who are deprived of one of their parents; so that there are nearly 3,000 children every year, who are left without their natural guardians to guide them in the paths of duty, and instill into them the practice of virtue, incarcerated in our prisons. Look at the manner in which many of them become criminal. A man, hardened in crime, gathers these children round him, and makes them his agents; he sends them to beg, to pick pockets, and teaches them how to do it; such instances are known to me. He takes them to the very shops they are to rob, points out the shoes they are to steal, the gown-pieces they are to filch; and being less expert than the adult, they are discovered, and thrown into prison. Thus, while the older villain escapes, the child begins his criminal life, which we know too frequently ends in being sent out of the country as a transported felon. I might give you many cases of this kind; but I forbear. I would, however, refer for a moment to whipping in prison. It has been determined lately to introduce whipping as an element of punishment. I do not think it is attended with any good effects. It is no uncommon thing to hear these children say, "Oh, sir, whipping will do me no good; I know all about that; I have had enough of it before." They have been cuffed and knocked about their whole life long by drunken and brutal fathers and mothers, so to them it is no new thing; and I point to the state of our jails to show that this system of whipping in our prisons is not calculated to reform but to harden. If we look at some of the crimes—they are called crimes—of which these poor children are guilty, what do we see? They run away from the union workhouse—their home, they have no other—and what is the penalty? They are sent to jail. Are the children of the middle classes sent to jail when they run away from home or boarding-school? A few months ago some orphan children ran away from a union workhouse, and went to see the races; they were

caught, brought back, and sent to prison for taking away the union clothes, which they had on them. At the same time the son of a governor of a union house ran away from home for the same purpose. And when he returned was he imprisoned? No! and we do not wish that he should; but why, then, should we punish by imprisonment in a felon's jail the fatherless child, while his destitute condition pleads for mercy and forgiveness at our hands? Their other offenses are acts of vagrancy and petty thefts; sleeping in out-houses or under hay-ricks, having no better places to lay themselves at night, when driven from their homes, or while wandering over the country. As to their robberies, they are, at least at first, of the most trifling kind, to which they are urged by hunger, temptation, and example. I would, before I conclude, refer for a moment to the condition of these children on being discharged from jail. I need not tell many of the gentlemen present that they are in a most deplorable state. They are often without friends, without a home, without one single soul to care for or to think of them. I have said without friends; but I say it with this exception, that their only friends are criminals, men who, standing at the prison door, and who have been within those doors, welcome them back to their old haunts of guilt, to pursue their evil courses afresh—to associate with them in lodging houses and similar places—to become learned in every thing that is evil, and in every thing that is destructive to society. No wonder that we have so much to complain of in the destruction of property, and in the expense of police, when we allow these children to go so long uncared for. No one will give them honest employment. A person who was once a prisoner in Bath jail, but who is now a respectable tradesman, wrote to me a few days ago to send him an errand boy. This man was himself a reformed criminal; but what did he say? "Don't send me a lad who has been in jail." Does not that speak to every one of us most strongly?—does it not show how lamentable is the condition of the unfortunate child—unfortunate enough to have ever entered the prison walls,—which circumstance even prevents a reformed criminal giving him employment?

Rev. Sydney Turner, Resident-chaplain of the Philanthropic Society's Farm School at Red Hill, near Reigate, Surrey, pointed out the hindrances to the effectual check of juvenile delinquency, in the want of proper industrial, correctional, and reformatory schools, and to the want of authority in magistrates to compel attendance at such schools.

To illustrate these hindrances, let me refer to the reformatory school with which I am connected, and with which I am best acquainted—the Philanthropic Farm School. The philanthropic society, by which this institution has been established, was formed upwards of sixty years ago, being the first association, as far as my inquiries go, for the reformation of criminal and vagrant children in England. Since its formation, in 1788, the society has had about 3,000 children under its care, out of which number something like two-thirds appear to have been reclaimed from criminal habits, and permanently improved and benefitted. The society used to carry on its operations in London. In 1848–9, however, we followed the example of Mettray, and removed our school to Red Hill, in the neighborhood of Reigate. Now, I may fairly claim for our Red Hill farm school that it has proved three important truths. First, that the reformation of young offenders is a very possible thing, if you seek it by the right means, viz.: by kindness, religious influence, and industrial occupation. Religious influence and teaching will not alone effect it; you must add the practical illustrations of *patience, gentleness, and kindness*; and even these together will not be thoroughly effective without the help of regular and healthful labor. It has proved, I say, that these agencies are at once indispensable, and tolerably certain to succeed. It has proved also, that with regard to the sort of labor you employ there is none so useful, as a means of moral discipline, as country labor—no reformation, in short, so effective as a free, open, **FARM SCHOOL**. The society's school in London did little as compared with what has been done since it was transferred to Red Hill, wall and gates dispensed with, and the boys subjected to the wholesome influence of open air, free discipline, country associations, and country habits. The philanthropic school has proved another thing, that the boys in-

structed in it are at no loss to find employment in the colonies. Nearly eighty young settlers have gone out from the farm school, thirty-seven last year, and thirty-eight this year. These lads have been welcomed kindly, and have found ready employment, and their conduct has been such that we have letters from gentlemen in the colonies, not to protest against the sending such lads out, but requesting us to send them some more. But in spite of all this, what is the feeling that continually depresses me and my fellow laborers in the work? We feel that we are carrying on an isolated work—that what we do is so little, compared with what is to be done, that our powers and resources are cramped; that we have no adequate means of detention and restraint, and that we have not sufficient pecuniary means to carry out our efforts on such a scale as to make them economical and largely useful. \* \* \* But it may be asked, “What sort of detention do you want?” I might answer, that we want some such system of juvenile correction as they have in France, in Belgium, in Switzerland, Holland, and I may now add, in Piedmont also. Let us take it as a principle, that a boy under a certain age shall not be treated on the same footing as an adult; that his age, the neglect or vice of his parents, and the depraving circumstances of his childhood, shall be taken into account. That he shall be considered as a subject for reformatory training, rather than mere punishment. That he shall, therefore, at some early stage of his career, while yet open to better influences, be placed in a position to have the better feelings of his heart developed, and to become a voluntary agent—I say, *become a voluntary agent*, because while untaught, and while ruled by his criminal habits and associates, he is not a free agent; he is a slave, and we must free him. Let him then be sent to a correctional school—a school provided, let me add, by the government; for I know of no other way in which the object can be obtained. But the difficulty arises that such treatment of the young criminal would be, or would at least seem to be, more or less an encouragement to crime. Theoretically it may appear so, but practically this might be obviated. First, by separating the child from the parents by the power of detention, and sending it to a correctional school *at a considerable distance*. Secondly, by requiring the parents to contribute a certain amount in aid of the support of the child while detained in the school. Let this principle be recognized as an essential that we can not do without, and its practical execution enforced in every possible case; it will be most effectual answer to the objection to which I have referred. A third condition should be, that the discipline of the school should be really and effectually corrective, so as to afford no temptation to the boy to qualify himself for it.

Rev. John Clay, Chaplain of the County House of Correction at Preston, submitted some remarks on the question of compelling parents to pay for or contribute to the cost of training to habits of morality and industry the children whom they have allowed to become discreditable and dangerous to society.

Our juvenile criminals being drawn from a population (North Lancashire) among whom the means of employment are abundant, it will be no matter of surprise, though it will be of sorrow, that, in the great majority of instances, the young creatures who have been allowed to run into crime had parents who were well able to secure for them a suitable training to industrious and moral habits. For some months I have kept a particular account of the earnings of the families to which our juvenile offenders belong. Taking the last 50 committals as sufficient to lead us to a general conclusion on the subject, I may state that of these young victims of parental neglect,

6	belonged to families—most of which were <i>Irish</i> , passing through the neighborhood, or recently settled in it—earning a precarious and uncertain livelihood.
5	belonged to families earning from 10s. to 20s. weekly.
18	“ “ “ “ “ 20s. to 40s. “
10	“ “ “ “ “ 40s. to 60s. “
1	“ “ “ “ “ upwards of £3 “

Now, with scarcely an exception, these children had been completely neglected

by their parents. Some of them—objects of the jealousy and cruelty of a step-father or step-mother—had had their homes made insupportable to them, or had been actually driven from them. A few examples may serve to give an idea of the elements of juvenile criminality in one part of the country. A boy of eleven says: “I came from Ireland with my parents two years ago; three older brothers get 11s. altogether in a factory; *four of us go about begging. My parents do no work at all.*” Another boy, aged fifteen, also Irish, says: “My mother wont live with my father, he drinks so; I live with my father in lodgings; he lets me do as I like.” The earnings of this father, mother, and boy, are 26s. Two boys, brothers, aged, respectively, sixteen and eleven, were committed for the *third* time for “breaking and entering a warehouse.” On the occasion of a previous committal of these children, I learned that their father had been in the habit of reading to them the demoralizing penny trash containing the lives of Turpin and Sheppard, and that these robbers had been held up to the deluded children as benefactors of the poor! When the young culprits returned home after the expiration of their imprisonment, they found a step-mother awaiting them. The father, who, on the trial of his children, had been severely and justly reprimanded by the court for his neglect of them—and who seems to have *intended* to take more care of them when they returned home—only exchanged his indifference to their moral welfare for brutal harshness. The younger child said to me, on his last committal: “My father licked me with a rope ’till the blood ran down my back, and my step-mother was watching!” So much more ready are such parents to strike than to teach! Here is a father—and there are thousands like him—who first corrupts his child’s moral instincts, and then cruelly chastises him for the consequences of his own lessons! I must not omit to mention that this man’s earnings were upwards of £3 weekly! Many more illustrations of the unchristian training to which multitudes of children are exposed might be given, but I will pass on to the conclusion which I believe myself warranted in drawing from the facts I have submitted—that parents ought to be compelled, by law, to defray part, or the whole, of the expense incurred in giving that religious and industrial education which they themselves have culpably neglected to give. It may be that, in many cases, the parents are unable to contribute any thing towards this expense; but this inability will often be found to arise from wilful idleness, drunkenness, or other vice; and when such causes of poverty are proved, I see no just principle which would be opposed to making parents of this character liable to penalty for their misconduct towards their children, and, as a consequence, *theirs* towards the community. I have, indeed, a strong conviction that if—in justifiable cases—the sins of the ignorant and erring child were visited upon the neglectful or vicious parent, such a proceeding would produce benefit, by reminding or warning fathers and mothers of the necessity of paying more attention to the duties incumbent on them. Whatever may be ultimately devised for fixing upon parents a more decided responsibility for their children’s conduct, it is clear—proved by an overpowering mass of distressing evidence—that measures must be taken to rescue the perishing and dangerous classes of children from their present condition—for their own sakes—and for the sake of the general safety. Such measures will doubtless involve considerable expense. I know well that I now speak in the presence of those who require these measures to be taken from the best and highest motives—who are actuated by the most enlightened views and by the largest charity—who remember that the work they have undertaken is in humble and faithful obedience to One who “*is not willing that one of these little ones should perish;*” but I know, also, that the success of the work will depend, in a very great degree, upon obtaining the assent of persons who may desire to see economical advantages in the courses proposed. Well, what would it cost, on the one hand, to give two or three years’ moral and industrial training to a neglected child, who would otherwise enter upon a course of life destructive to himself and dangerous to society? Upon the Red Hill plan, which, under the zealous and untiring care of Mr. Turner, has been crowned with such happy results, it would cost—say for three years—£75. Upon the Aberdeen plan, which seems to me admirably adapted to the circumstances of a large town, and respecting which we shall hear more fully from one of its great founders—the cost for three years would not exceed £15 or £20. But, on the other hand, what would it cost the community



to permit such a child to pursue its course through a sea of crime, until it is landed in one of our penal colonies? I will endeavor to show this cost; and, in order to avoid any liability to exaggerate, I take my data, as far as practicable, from official documents. By the last report (15th,) of Captain Williams, inspector of prisons for the home district, it appears that the entire number of persons sentenced to transportation in 1849 was about 3,100. In the inspector's elaborate and valuable tables the *ages* of the transport convicts are not given, and I therefore look to the very instructive criminal statistics published by Captain Willis, the chief constable of Manchester, and to the details which are given in the Liverpool calendars; and assuming that the ages of transports, generally, are represented in those returns, it would appear that of the 3,100 I have mentioned, 43 per cent. are under twenty-one years old—1,333; 45 per cent. are between twenty-one and thirty years of age—1,395; and 12 per cent., or 372, are above thirty years of age. Now, it is not taking too much for granted to say that criminals, sentenced to transportation before they reach thirty-one years of age, have commenced their criminal career at a time of life when they should have been learning a better way. But society has "*ignored*" their very existence. Let us see what society pays for its indifference. Offenders, generally, are not sentenced to transportation until they have appeared at the bar four or five times. I will, therefore, suppose the expense of between three and four prosecutions, at assizes or sessions, to be £50. The average imprisonment of each offender *before* transportation may be taken at three years, and the expense of it at £65; three years' probation in separate confinement, at Parkhurst, or public works, £50; removal to the colonies, &c., &c., £35; total, £200. So that when 3,000 sentences of transportation are passed in a year, we may consider them tantamount to a notification to the public that a last installment of a sum exceeding half a million sterling is about to be called for! To be as precise as the nature of this inquiry will allow, the 2,728 convicts under thirty-one years of age, to whom I have already alluded as having run the career of juvenile criminality, represent a *cost waste* of £545,600! But let it be remembered that the felony of this kingdom—and whether juvenile or adult, it belongs to this question to consider the fact—is not maintained, while at large, for nothing. Having investigated to a considerable extent, the rates of income derived by thieves from their practices, and having obtained estimates of the same thing from intelligent and experienced convicts themselves, I believe myself to be within the real truth, when I assume such income to be more than £100 a-year for each thief! Well, then, allowing only two years' full practice to one of the dangerous class previous to his sentence of transportation, I do not know how the conclusion can be escaped that, in one way or another, the public—the easy, indifferent, callous public—has been, and is mulcted to the amount of more than a million sterling, by, and on account of its criminals annually transported! But its criminals who are not transported! still living on their dishonest gains, or in our costly prisons! We must not forget them in our calculations of the cost of crime, though it will be sufficient for my present purpose merely to refer to them, and to say that I am convinced that their cost to the community *in* and *out* of prison amounts annually to some millions! This assertion may be somewhat startling; I will only state one fact in support of it. Some years ago a committee of inquiry into the annual depredations of the Liverpool thieves, stated the amount of those depredations at *seven hundred thousand pounds*! Need more be said on the economical part of this momentous question? Need I ask you to balance between the charge of training the young outcasts of the country to godly and industrious habits, and the waste of money, time, and *souls*, consequent upon our neglect of an undeniable Christian duty? \* \* \* To show the good effect of prison discipline on juveniles, I can offer the direct testimony of gentlemen filling the posts of superintendents to our county police, to show the same thing. My last report, which contains full details of these police returns, is that for 1848—according to which, it appears that of sixty-three young offenders, under twenty-one years old, who had returned to their homes after discharge from prison—eleven could not be found, ten were no better, three were improved, and *thirty-nine were more or less reformed*. I almost fear that I draw upon your credulity in making this statement; but believe me that the law of "*kindness*," so eloquently enforced by the learned recorder of Ipswich, can do, by the Divine blessing, much good even in a

prison. It was not that these children stood most in need of reading and writing, of learning their catechism, of committing to memory chapters from the Holy Scriptures—they stood most in need of what had never yet approached them—of something to touch, soften, and humanize their hearts and desires. I believed that, in almost every instance, these misled creatures had never in their lives heard words or tones of kindness or affection; that they never had dared to suppose that any one cared for them, or desired, for their own sakes, that they should learn to speak and do things that are right. I endeavored to show them their mistake—that there were people who felt for them, who pitied them, who loved them; who earnestly desired to promote their happiness both here and hereafter. These endeavors were not unsuccessful; and I found that as the heart softened and opened, so the mind expanded; and the reading and scriptural teaching, which, otherwise, would have been mechanical and irksome, were received with eager thankfulness, as something conducive to the great object of repentance and amendment.

Rev. T. Carter, Chaplain of the Liverpool Jail, spoke in reference to the inadequacy of the existing system of prison discipline to secure the reformation of juvenile criminals, and the present cost to society for the conviction and punishment of this class.

Liverpool has one of the largest jails in the kingdom. The commitments during last year were upwards of 9,500. Of that number, upwards of 1,100 were juvenile offenders, under sixteen years of age; and of these the proportion of recommitments amounted to more than 70 per cent. This one fact must give you some idea of the inefficiency—the utter uselessness—of such institutions as the Liverpool jail for the reformation of criminals. Indeed—and I say it advisedly—if it had been the object in Liverpool to devise a scheme for the promotion rather than the prevention of juvenile crime, no contrivance could have been hit upon better calculated to accomplish that object than the Liverpool jail. And yet that jail has been held up as one of the best regulated in the kingdom, under the old system; and that I believe with justice; and if these are the results of one of the best regulated, I leave you to judge what must be the case with others, not so well conducted. Now, I must invite your attention to the manner in which these juveniles are treated. The course followed with them is to send them from the police court to the jail in the prison van, wherein they are mixed with offenders of all classes and ages. On arriving there, they are first taken into the reception room, which, I may state, on the female side has six compartments or cells opening out from it—three on each side; and sometimes there are as many as five persons crammed into these cells, which, when designed and built under the direction of Howard, were intended to hold only one. In these cells, girls are mixed with adults, and remain often from four o'clock in the afternoon until two next day, when they go before the surgeon, in order to satisfy him that they have no disease which shall disqualify them from mixing with other persons. When they have passed that muster, as I may term it, the juvenile offenders are sent into what is called the school class. In this class, there have been as many as sixty girls under sixteen years of age; and yet there are but twelve rooms or cells for them to sleep in, and here they are doomed to remain from half past seven in the afternoon until seven o'clock in the morning in winter, so that the inmates pass the whole of that interval in a situation where they can not possibly be under the control or supervision of the officers, and are left to unrestricted conversation, which you can readily imagine to be of such a character as not to tend to their edification. Now, it so happens, that with the best intentions on the part of the matron and the female warders, who have the charge of them, it is quite impossible to prevent the mixing of the unsophisticated with experienced thieves. There are many instances in which the same cell has contained five girls, one of whom has been under sentence of transportation—two others in jail, and convicted of felony several times before—while the remaining two were novices in guilt, and young in the career of vice. Now, what must be the result of such a state of association? It is right that the criminal should be reformed because I hold that the object of improvement is not merely the pun-



ishment, but the reformation of the offender. And yet the very first step we take in Liverpool, with a view to that object, is to mix up children of seven or eight years of age—for we have one now waiting for trial who is not eight years old—with persons who have been for a long period hardened in a career of vice. When I tell you that I have one of my own children of the same age, I need not assure you that I never look on one of those poor little saplings without feelings of the deepest commiseration. These children are or have been, as dear to their parents, as mine are to me, and I feel that when they are taken into jail for the purpose of punishing their crimes and reforming them, you have no right—I have no right—the country has no right—to put these unfortunate little ones in such a position as must inevitably issue in their utter depravation. Such, then, is the result on the *female* side of the prison; on the *male* side matters are no better. \* \* \* What, I would ask, can it be but ruinous and disastrous, as our jail returns exhibit? I have already mentioned the proportion of recommitments; and I can illustrate, from my own inquiries, the after careers of some of these offenders. I take a page, then, at random from the school register of four years ago, and I find that of the thirty whose names are upon that page—not selected cases, but taken in the order in which they came to jail—eighteen have been transported; two are now in jail, having been frequently recommitted in the mean time; one out of the thirty is in employment; one has emigrated; two have died, one immediately after being discharged, the other shot in the streets during a public disturbance; leaving six, out of the thirty, whose history I have not been able to trace, but who, in all probability, have quitted the town and neighborhood of Liverpool, to visit Birmingham or Manchester, or some other large town. I find, also, that the average number of times in jail of these thirty is eight and a half; the average time spent by them in jail is fifteen months; the cost to the *borough of Liverpool*, on the average, is £32, 15s.; while the further cost of transportation of those eighteen averages £48; the *gross* average expense of each of these *thirty* criminals being £62, 7s.

The cost of every young criminal to Liverpool is illustrated in a memorial of the magistrates to Parliament, asking for a reformatory school, in the following statement:—That the costs of apprehension, maintenance, prosecution, and punishment, was of

No. 1.....	£129	5	6½	No. 8.....	£72	1	4½
No. 2.....	71	2	10½	No. 9.....	52	9	7½
No. 3.....	74	1	10½	No. 10.....	64	18	9½
No. 4.....	71	13	1	No. 11.....	28	10	4½
No. 5.....	47	9	3	No. 12.....	39	8	10½
No. 6.....	64	6	6½	No. 13.....	26	10	10
No. 7.....	99	2	5½	No. 14.....	47	7	7½

And thus these offenders cost the public..... £888 9 1

It thus appears that the average cost of these fourteen prisoners was about £63, 8s.; while I have shown that the average cost of thirty boys, who were not selected, bear in mind, as the worst cases; not taken at random, but in the order of their commitments, was £62, 7s.; showing almost coincident results. And here I must inform you that I have not taken into account the cost of maintenance in the colonies, and the loss of property by the community. If I did it would add immensely to the calculations I have laid before you. And yet I may say, that in Liverpool jail, which was referred to by the late excellent inspector of prisons, Mr. Hill, as one of the cheapest in expenditure in the kingdom, the average cost per head of the prisoners is only £12, whereas in many other jails it is £15, and in some nearly double. But great as is the expense of juvenile crime, the charge entailed upon us must not be estimated solely by the expense incurred on account of the offenders whilst they remain in that category. After they reach the age of seventeen or eighteen, they pass out of the class of juvenile offenders, and become adults, their habits of crime becoming more fully developed, and the expense, of course, being greatly increased. I find that, taking forty-two individuals—male adults—at this moment in Liverpool jail, who were first received there as juvenile thieves, the aggregate commitments amount to 401, or 9½ times each on the average. The average career in crime was five years and four

months. These are all known thieves, and their cases are looked on (humanly speaking) as entirely hopeless. Under present circumstances the course pursued can only have a corrupting and vitiating effect upon those who have not yet arrived at years of maturity. Of the forty-two instances to which I have referred, there are six under sentence of transportation. One first commenced his career of crime at the age of nine years, and has been nineteen times in jail; and when I mention that, I need not bring forward any further proofs of the uselessness of all attempts at reformation, so long as there is not a radical change in the present vicious arrangements. There is another of twenty years of age, who, since being sentenced to transportation, has made a violent and determined attempt on the life of one of the officers of the prison. I will show the same results with the females. Out of twenty-six females, all of whom commenced as juveniles, I find that twenty-five have been in jail, on the average, seven times each; the other I do not think it fair or proper to bring forward as an average example, because she has been fifty-seven times in jail. The average time each is known to spend in jail is five years. Now, I think I have established my position that the Liverpool jail, although singled out for special condemnation by the inspector of prisons, is the most effectual institution that can be devised for transmitting and propagating crime. Such is the evil, and such its extent. What can we look to as its remedy?

Rev. Francis Bishop, Minister of the Liverpool Domestic Mission Society, submitted some remarks, which pointed out the preliminary training school for the young criminals of Liverpool.

In four of the best streets, occupied by the honest and industrious working classes in Liverpool, there are 411 children between the ages of five and fourteen. Of that number 206 go to a day school; 29 to evening ragged schools; and 176 go to no school at all. Now, if we look at those streets which supply the inmates of the prisons—the worst class of streets—we find most disheartening results. An inquiry instituted about a year ago gave the following statement, which is equally applicable to the present state of matters. In Brick street, there were 436 children, between five and fourteen years of age, and of these only 51 went to school—some of them only to an evening school—leaving 385 who went to no school whatever. In Crosby street, which was referred to by the reverend gentleman who last addressed you, there were 484 children, between the ages of five and fourteen, only 47 of whom went to school, leaving 437 who received no education at all. In another of this class of streets, which is very populous, an inquiry was made yesterday morning. The street to which I refer is called New Bird street, and it was intended to have ascertained the condition of the whole of the inhabitants as regards education; but it was found that the time was too short, and accordingly only the first three courts were taken—not selected—but taken in order. Well; it was found that there were 119 children between the ages of five and fourteen; and only 3 out of that number went to school. Including the front houses adjoining these courts, we found that there were 163 children between the ages I have mentioned; and of that number 16 went to a day school; 4 to an evening ragged school; and no less than 143 to no school at all. Now, these are very startling facts, and I mention them merely to afford you a fair specimen of the educational condition of the streets of Liverpool in which the classes whose welfare we are met to promote, reside; and although I believe that the juvenile population of Liverpool is somewhat worse than that of great towns generally, yet I am afraid that the condition of Birmingham, Manchester, and London, is not greatly superior in this respect. \* \* \* My opinion is that we shall never be able to reach this class of juvenile offenders so as to operate effectually in diminishing their numbers, until we make the parents feel, and that through the pocket. They must be made to understand, by being required to contribute to the maintenance of their children, when they come within the grasp of the law, that they can not throw off with impunity the sacred obligations which the Almighty has imposed on every parent. I will say no more than that compulsory attendance must also be enforced on the vagrant class—that class who are on the high road to crime—by some such mode as that adopted in Aberdeen.

Mr. William Locke, Honorary Secretary to the London Ragged School Union, remarked:

It is now about eight years since a few friends in London joined me in the establishment of the ragged school union; but since then we have managed to increase the number of schools, in London alone, from sixteen to one hundred and two. We have now about fifteen thousand children, who are being taught in these schools; above one hundred and sixty paid teachers; and above one thousand three hundred teachers who give voluntary assistance. Now, although I have no wish to shrink from the work, yet I have come here to declare that we are not equal—depending as we do upon voluntary contributions alone—to the great task we have undertaken. It is true that in some of our schools we have the ragged now clothed, the dirty become clean, and the riotous made orderly, so that many who visit us can not see the difference between these and any other schools. These desirable results are brought about by collateral cases, such as the clothing clubs, the industrial classes, the mothers' associations, and kindred institutions, which come in with powerful assistance to improve the habits, appearance, and nature of the children. But still with all that aid, we are unable to cope with the great evil, or to put a check upon juvenile crime; and we feel that still there is a very large class we make little improvement upon. This class consists of vagrants, mendicants, and petty thieves, who require to be fed before they will be taught, and for whom more industrial, refuge, or feeding schools are required than our funds can sustain. There is, in London, a very large number of children coming under that category. Lord Ashley, in the House of Commons, some years ago, said there were 30,000 of them; but my opinion, at the time, was that the number was much larger. I believe that there can not be less than 200,000 of them in the entire country, and from this class, I am quite sure, come nearly all the juvenile criminals in our prisons. They are the very seed plot of crime. Now, how are we to meet this mass of vice and wretchedness? Many of them are starving in the streets; many of them are indeed "perishing for lack of knowledge as well as feed." In three points of view this great class have been considered, viz.:—as expensive—as dangerous—and as perishing; but there is another point arising from these; they are greatly to be pitied. With regard to the expense, no one can doubt but that it is excessive, not only as respects the property they steal, but in their apprehension, their trial, their maintenance in prison, and their transportation. We have information from some of these boys, who live by thieving, of the great sums of money they expend in the course of the year, that would astonish you all, filched from the pockets, or houses and shops, of the industrious classes. They are dangerous, with regard to society, in disturbing the peace and morality of the neighborhood where they dwell; but, in another sense, they are dangerous, viz.: in their evil example thus shown to the better class of children, and in inoculating others with their vicious habits. But they are also perishing, and the objects of our deep commiseration. They are without education or instruction of any kind; they are ignorant of all good; they are criminal, in many cases, from dire necessity, and "more sinned against than sinning." They are not, therefore, to be visited with the same kind of punishment we inflict upon adult criminals. Nay, I hold it to be now an acknowledged principle, that we should not treat as criminals those children who had no sense of right and wrong—and I very much doubt if we have any just right to punish children for breaking laws with which we have never made them acquainted, or for violating duties which we have never taught them to respect. Look for a moment at their pitiful and forlorn condition; in one night Lord Shaftesbury found no less than thirty-five of these poor children sleeping—huddled together under the dry arches by Field Lane, Smithfield. Night after night fancy these boys—or just picture to yourselves one of them herding there unwashed, unfed, uncared for by the thousands around—to snatch a weary sleep; and coming out from his hard, damp, comfortless bed in the morning—it may be in a cold, dull, winter's day—without friends, without a home, without a single soul in all the wide world to care for or to guide him. How, I ask, is it possible for such a lad, starving for bread, to escape the commission of crime? These children, without character and without any employment, must be vagrants or thieves in order to live—and therefore are they to be deeply commiserated.

Some of these very boys we have succeeded in rescuing. Thank God for it. From one of them (I mean one of those found in Field Lane) who emigrated, we have a letter stating that he is earning 35s. a week as a printer in Melbourne, (a most gratifying fact,) and thanking us most heartily for all that has been done for him. And will any body tell me that these children have not hearts, and can not be reformed? I could tell of cases, not by tens but by hundreds, in which boys and girls, taken out of the mire and the gutter—the very sweepings of the streets—as it were, have become honest and useful members of society. Out of some 400 boys whom we have sent to the colonies from various schools, we have hardly heard of a single return to criminal practices; but on the contrary, we find that in almost every case they are doing well, and earning an honest livelihood. \* \* \* As regards those children we can not reach—those who need to be fed, and even lodged, ere they can be taught—how can we expect to gather fruit from thistles, or to draw pure water from a muddy source? We may endeavor to reform them after falling into crime, and it is our duty; but the chances are that we shall only be partially successful. Would it not be far better to prevent them falling into crime at all? It was truly and eloquently said by Dr. Guthrie, that it is a beautiful sight to see the life-boat dashing through the waves to save the shipwrecked mariners; but much more beautiful was it to behold the lighthouse beacon which might prevent the wreck altogether. I perfectly agree with the committee on juvenile crime of the county of Aberdeen, a short passage from whose report I beg leave to read. They assert:

“That the present mode of dealing with juvenile offenders has not attained the end desired; that neglected outcasts, for whom neither the funds of the public, nor the generosity of private individuals, have cared, have been allowed to grow up in the midst of a Christian people, without any instruction in the first principles of religion and even morality, and are not, at least in the first instance, the legitimate objects of vindictive punishment—that it is just and right, before inflicting punishment, and branding for life with the character of a felon, to give the outcast child a chance of improvement—to put clearly before him the path of duty; and if after this training, he wilfully depart from it, then society has done its duty by him; and if he incur merited chastisement, he must, in his heart, acknowledge that he has deserved it.”

This being the case, it strikes me that the work will never be thoroughly done by private benevolence. A great public good should be the work of the public. When I first took up the subject of ragged schools, they were merely evening schools, for gathering in from the streets outcast, neglected children. Such I still consider to be the genuine ragged school. But now, when we find it necessary for a large class to be fed, and clothed, and lodged, and cared for, and sent abroad, &c., &c., I am inclined to say I can not undertake all this. The parish or government must help us; and it is their duty, on the score of economy, philanthropy, and self-preservation, to do so.

A. Thompson, Esq., Chairman of the Aberdeen County Prison Board, made a short statement of the Industrial Schools in Aberdeen, established mainly at the suggestion, and by the efforts of Mr. Sheriff Watson.

We have now had an experience of ten years, the first of our schools having been established in October, 1841. We commenced that school with about twenty boys, and we gradually increased the number to seventy or eighty, which is about the utmost limit our experience leads us to believe an industrial school ever ought to be allowed to attain. Two years afterwards we established a small school for girls; that school has since been divided into two, and in each of these there are now from sixty to seventy scholars. But we found that, although we were able to accomplish a certain amount of good in the city of Aberdeen, still we had not by any means attained all the good we desired. We found the streets infested by little vagrants and beggars ready to commit all sorts of annoying depredations. We therefore resolved to avail ourselves of a local act of Parliament, by which it was provided that begging and vagrancy were crimes punishable by the magistrates. You will be perhaps surprised to learn that in Scotland we have

no vagrant act, and that vagrancy is not an offense there which, of itself, and alone, can be punished, as in England—but in the city of Aberdeen this power is possessed by the magistrates, under the provision of the local police act, and they gave the aid of their authority to the gentlemen who wished to extend the operation of the industrial schools to a class of children still lower in the social scale than those who were already in attendance. Accordingly, orders were given on a certain day in the year 1845, to the police, to capture every little vagrant boy or girl whom they might find in the streets, and in the course of two hours seventy-five were collected—and if you can conceive seventy-five dirty ragged little children, trained up in all sorts of vice and wickedness, and unaccustomed to any sort of restraint, collected together in our small apartment, you may form some idea of the scene of confusion and uproar which ensued. The whole of the first day was spent in endeavoring to bring them into something like order, and in furnishing them with the only thing they seemed to appreciate, viz.: three good substantial meals. When dismissed in the evening, they were informed that they might return the next day or not just as they pleased, but if they did not come back they would not be allowed to beg in the streets. Next morning, to the delight of all interested, almost the whole of them returned, and the system has been pursued from that day to this. When we began this plan there were in Aberdeen 280 children known to the police, who lived constantly by begging and petty thefts. For the last seven or eight years scarcely one had been seen, cases do occasionally occur, but they are very rare. We have almost completely succeeded in extirpating the race of juvenile beggars in Aberdeen.

The next step in the history of our experience is perhaps the most interesting of all. Our establishment at first, of the boys' and girls' school, certainly cleared the streets of one part of the juvenile delinquents, but neither the worst nor the most dangerous class. Those whom we caught on the second occasion were those training up manifestly to fill our prison cells. Now what are the results as to them? The number of boys and girls in the schools last described are generally about 100—of those who have been at this school, seventy-one have since we opened been placed in situations where they are now maintaining themselves by their own honest industry: and what is perhaps still more satisfactory, of the whole 171 who have passed, or are now passing through our hands, not one individual has been taken up by the police for any offense great or small.

When the schools were first started—like many other new and untried schemes—they met with considerable opposition, but a few resolute friends stood by them. The first success was not very obvious, and after they had been opened about two years the funds fell off, and we experienced that “excruciating agony,” want of money, which was referred to by one of the gentlemen who has preceded me, and, in consequence, the number of children in the schools was reduced to the lowest possible point. But by this time the scheme had begun to take some little hold of the public mind, and I am rejoiced to tell you that the working classes of Aberdeen came forward and expressed an earnest desire that the schools should not be given up, but that if possible they should be carried on and extended. They offered to raise subscriptions among themselves, and subscription papers were accordingly carried round, both among the higher and among the lower classes, and I have to say, that of the whole amount contributed, two-thirds came from the hard earnings of the working men and the working women of Aberdeen. By this most happy and timely addition to the funds we were enabled to get over the difficulties which threatened us, and we have been just able to keep moving ever since. The total number of children at all the schools is somewhere about four hundred.

There are still two or three more statistical facts which I wish to place before the meeting. We were much annoyed in the county of Aberdeen by the number of juvenile vagrants who came out from the city. We employed the rural police to prepare returns to see what effect the juvenile schools were producing. The first return was not thought of until the year 1845. We were then informed that in that year (1845) the rural police apprehended 62 little children, or juvenile vagrants, who were traveling alone throughout the county, begging or stealing on their own account. In the year 1846, the number was reduced to 14; in 1847 it was further reduced to 6; in 1848 the number was again 6; in 1849 it was reduced to 1; and in 1850 it rose again to 2! so that we have pretty thoroughly disposed of that class of offenders.



It is a practice with us, as it is I believe in England, for women to go out begging through the country, attended by children, sometimes their own, and sometimes hired, with the sole end and object of exciting compassion, and obtaining additional alms. In 1841 the rural police stopped in the county of Aberdeen 1,203 of these persons. That number was gradually reduced year by year, until, in 1850, there were only 387—less than a third of the number we had nine years before.

There is another test which, with your permission, I shall furnish you. In the year 1841, before the schools were opened in Aberdeen, the juvenile commitments to the Aberdeen prison amounted to 61. In the year 1850, the number was reduced to 14. But I can give you a still more striking evidence of the value of these schools. In 1845 we were obliged, in a great measure, to close the doors of our schools, for the reasons which I have already mentioned. I have stated that in 1841 there were 61 juvenile delinquents; in 1842 the number was reduced to 30; and in 1843, when the schools were partly closed, the number rose again to 63. Now here, I think, is correct evidence of how the schools are working. Open the schools, and keep the children in regular attendance, and the juvenile vagrants disappear; juvenile crime is diminished—shut the doors, and they immediately reappear, flourish, and increase.

We have, in addition to our proper schools, what we term a child's asylum, and this is an essential part of the system. It is a place to which any child found wandering or deserted is conveyed in a friendly manner by the police. It is attached to the House of Refuge, and the directors of that establishment give every possible facility for superintending the management of the children. The children are kept here until the committee meet. Formerly they met every day, but now it is not necessary to do so; they are summoned when required. Each case is investigated most minutely; if it appears that the parents are able to take charge of the children, or that they ought to do so, they are sent for and remonstrated with, and induced, if possible, to do their duty. If it appears that they have a claim upon any parish, then a correspondence takes place between the committee and these parochial authorities, and the child is sent to its parish; but in the greater number of cases the child is placed at once in one of our industrial schools. The object of this minute scrutiny is to prevent improper persons getting upon our very limited funds. We wish to keep these funds sacred for the persons who are really suitable objects, and who belong to the city. In all our schools the system is the same. As a general rule, the children learn about four hours' lessons in the day, four to five hours' work, one to one and a half hours' play, and three good substantial meals. Much has been said to-day, and the importance of the question can not be denied, as to the policy of *compelling* the children to attend these schools. Hitherto our experience has shown us that no compulsion is necessary beyond the attraction of the three substantial meals. Most of them were previously unaccustomed to a regular supply of wholesome food; they soon learn its value, and require no other inducement to return daily to their work and lessons; and I venture to say that the attendance of these poor children, the very outcasts of society, at these schools, is more regular than among schools of a higher class. With regard to time, I may state that they come in summer at seven and in winter at eight o'clock in the morning; there is then an hour or an hour and a half's religious and miscellaneous instruction, such as geography, facts in natural history, and occasionally a singing lesson. The children then spend a short time in play, and afterwards breakfast. From ten to two they work. At two o'clock they dine, and after some recreation they work from three to four, and from four to seven they have lessons suited to their different ages, and at seven they have a plain substantial supper, and a short religious exercise follows; after which the whole are dismissed to their homes. Now this plan of sending them back to their homes is a point upon which we have had many anxious consultations. The propriety of allowing them to return to their degraded and debased parents was questioned by many as being calculated to destroy the moral influence which the school exercised over them. But our experience tends to show that the reverse is the case. I frankly admit that it is a doubtful question, and many exceptional cases may occur; but we know also instances in which the saving knowledge of truth obtained at school has been communicated to the outcast parents through the little child. We think, then, that we have been successful in Aberdeen to a great extent, and, in-

deed, even beyond the extent we hoped to obtain when these schools were first established. The two great principles which we have endeavored to act upon are these—to show the children from the first that we really and truly love them, and desire their good, and that all our exertions, whether in the way of teaching, or feeding, or remonstrating with them against evil conduct, are solely and only with the desire of doing them good, and that lesson the children themselves seem to have learned. But above and beyond this, we have sought to base our every step upon God's revealed word, \* \* \* We have been told truly to-day of the expense the public are put to in keeping the youthful convict in prison. If I remember aright, the lowest estimate was £18 or £20 a year. That is precisely our own experience in Scotland. But when we get hold of these children, and instead of sending them to prison, bring them to our industrial schools, we find the whole expense of teaching and feeding them is under £5 a year. And of that expense, on an average, about £1, 5s. is saved to the school by the work of the children. So that we can bring up children—so far as man can do it—honestly, and industriously, and religiously, at an expense of £3, 15s. per annum. Whereas, if you send them to the poor-house, they cost about £10 per annum each with us, and I believe a larger sum in this country. If they are sent to prison, we know that the expense is from £18 to £25; and if we send them upon the distant voyage to Australia, we know that the cost altogether amounts to a sum not much, if at all, under £300 sterling. Upon an average of cases, we find that five years' training in the industrial schools is sufficient to make the child a useful member of society; and suppose the expense to amount to £5 per annum, we have then the choice of making one of these children an honest and virtuous member of society for £25, or of sending him ultimately into a penal settlement, at a cost, including his previous training in crime, of about £300. It appears to me that there can be little choice to a wise man in the matter. Sir, I have often thought, when I have passed a little ragged urchin in the street, one of the numerous class who are being trained up to a life of crime and misery, "My poor little fellow, you are just a bill of exchange for two or three hundred pounds sterling, drawn upon the public of Great Britain, and the last farthing of that sum you will certainly cause us to pay before your career is ended." Much has been said to day of the expense of our prisons, but that is, after all, trifling compared with the enormous expense, and the serious loss the country is put to, by the depredations these persons commit. A single instance was alluded to, in which a large amount of plunder was carried off; and you yourself, Mr. Chairman, alluded to a case that had occurred in your own family. But it is not the plunder from the rich, and the quantity of plate, jewelry, and money, that is so taken, that creates the greatest amount of inconvenience; but it is the extreme suffering caused to the working and industrious classes by having their hard-earned property taken from them. If you look at the records of trials and convictions before judges, and in police offices, you will find that a large number of cases occur in which the property is stolen from this class. Many of them, too, are afraid to appear to prosecute, and no small part of those crimes are committed against the poorer classes of society, which never appear at all.

Rev. H. Townsend Powell, Chairman of the Warwick County Asylum, (who has given, without fee or reward, his time, attention, and talent, to the institution for twenty-six years,) gave the following account of the earliest reformatory institution of England, which is situated at Stretton-on-Dunsmore in the county of Warwickshire:

The institution commenced its operations in 1818, and in 1827 it was clearly ascertained that up to that period forty-eight per cent. of the whole number who had been subjected to the experiment had been permanently reformed. It was also made clear that a saving had been effected in the county expenditure, resulting from the diminished number of prosecutions, the cost of which was charged on the county rates. Under the second master, the proportion of reformations was 58 per cent. of those who had quitted the institution. Under the present master, it has risen to 64 per cent; and, if we take the latter part of his time only, since the last improvement in management has been introduced, it has risen to 68 per cent.



The system adopted is a system of kindness and persuasion, blended, nevertheless, with salutary coercion and correction. \* \* \* This is effected by daily setting before him the comforts of a well-ordered family—by occupying and interesting his mind—by sending him on little embassies of confidence, and exciting in him a feeling of respect for himself and his own character, and inducing him to participate in that *esprit du corps* which regards the honor of the institution, of which he is a member, as if it were his own. \* \* \* It is acknowledged by all that “evil communications corrupt good manners;” and therefore all are anxious to separate uncontaminated juveniles from old offenders; but it is not so generally acknowledged that association is no less availing for the propagation of good than evil. \* \* \* I adopted the conclusion that *association is no less availing for the purpose of reformation than it is for the purpose of contamination*, and that the difference is this: where the preponderating moral influence is in favor of evil, there evil will increase: on the contrary, where the preponderating moral influence is in favor of virtue and religion, there virtue and religion will flourish and abound. This principle has been invariably borne in mind in conducting the institution at Stretton-on-Dunsmore, and I can not help thinking that if it were in a more favorable locality, and a power of detention, but without bars, and gates, and walls, were given us by law, we should be able to exhibit a yet more favorable result than any which has yet appeared. But, if we are to carry on our experiment on a larger scale, I would still urge the adoption of the suggestion contained in the memoir of 1827, viz.: that the institution should consist of one or more establishments, under the same general surveillance, but varying in strictness of discipline; so that the return of the criminal to honesty, should be accomplished by a corresponding return of liberty.

In pursuing this subject, we will introduce a particular account of the organization and management of several of the institutions referred to in the foregoing discussion, and will begin with the Rauhen-Hause at Horn, near Hamburg, which may be regarded as the pioneer and model of all the others.

# THE RED LODGE GIRLS' REFORMATORY SCHOOL

AT

BRISTOL.

---

THE Red Lodge was originally the site of a monastery of a brotherhood of White Friars, whose house was dissolved by Henry VIII. It was afterward one of the lodges of the ornamental grounds of the "Great House," now Colston's School, built by Sir John Young, a Bristol merchant. The celebrated George Fox is said to have preached from the garden steps to an audience assembled around him. In later times it became a ladies' school, in high repute in the west of England; and afterward the celebrated author of the "Natural History of Man" made it the scene of his learned researches.

Two years ago, (1854,) Lady Byron, to whose pecuniary aid, devoted efforts, and wise counsels, the cause of Juvenile Reformation is so largely indebted, learning that these premises were on sale, and were admirably adapted to be employed as a Girls' Reformatory School, purchased them for the purpose, on condition that Miss Carpenter should undertake the whole management and responsibility, subject only to the Government inspectors. The Act of Parliament was then passed which gave a power of legal detention over sentenced children to certified Reformatories: this considerably diminished the difficulty of management; and though the Government allowance of 5s. per week for each child would by no means cover the expense, it yet made the demands on private benevolence far less than before.

This school is established for the reformation and restoration to society of girls who have cut themselves off from it by dishonest practices. It is therefore not limited to those who are under sentence, or even to those who have been legally convicted of theft, should they require reformatory discipline. Of the thirty-five girls now in the school, seven are sent and paid for by friends or relations; two only have not been brought before a magistrate, but these do not indicate less evil propensity than others. The whole of the girls may therefore be considered as inevitably destined to a life of crime if not thus brought under reformatory treatment; and yet very few of them indicate worse natural dispositions than ordinary children, but, on the contrary, display encouraging indications of fair qualities, and the rudiments of an estimable character, when the baneful effects of early neglect and evil influences have been removed by patient and watchful care.

The means employed in the school to effect this object were thus stated in the first report for 1856:

"Daily reading and inculcation of the Scriptures, with prayer, and other

direct religious and moral instruction.—Intellectual training, calculated to excite a taste for useful information, and to awaken the higher faculties.—Regular industrial occupation, especially such as will call forth the energies, or exercise patient application; choice being especially made of such kinds as will fit the girls for domestic service, and prepare them for any situation in life in which they may probably be placed.—Innocent amusements, such as may serve to occupy the girls' minds, and distract their attention from injurious objects of thought. The society of persons of virtuous character and loving spirit, who may insensibly win them over to love virtue, first for their sakes, then for itself.—The availing one's self of every suitable opportunity to act on the child's inner nature, and to rekindle the Divine life within her.—The great object of the religious instruction of these children will be to give them accurate and rational acquaintance with the Holy Scriptures; a firm conviction of the truths they contain, a loving faith in their warnings and promises, and a deep and actuating love of God our Heavenly Father, and of his Son our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. They will be taught to seek in all things the aid of God's Holy Spirit, and by prayer and supplication to make known their wants unto Him. It will be attempted to make religion a daily influencing motive; whether they eat, or drink, or whatever they do, to do all to the glory of God."

While the girls are treated with kindness, and taught to regard their instructors with affection and confidence, and the house as their home; yet the importance of a steady, firm control is strongly felt, and they are not allowed indulgences which would unfit them for their future sphere of life. The simplest food, clothing, and furniture are employed which are consistent with health, neatness, and order; and no artificial contrivances for saving labor are employed, such as wringing machines and drying closets, which, however useful in large establishments, would unfit the girls for the ordinary work of private families.

This school is adapted to receive fifty girls, and is now full. No case of absconding occurred during the past year, and a satisfactory degree of improvement is observable among the inmates.

#### PRINCIPLES, RULES, AND REGULATIONS OF THE RED LODGE GIRLS' REFORMATORY SCHOOL, BRISTOL.

##### OBJECT OF THE SCHOOL.

This school is established for the reformation and restoration to society of girls who have cut themselves off from it by dishonest practices.

As a long period is usually necessary for the effectual reformation of such children, which can seldom be obtained without the power of legal detention, the school is particularly intended for children sentenced to a Reformatory School under the Act passed in August, 1854, 17 and 18 Vict. cap. 86; but it will be open to other cases of moral destitution.

##### CONDITIONS OF ADMISSION.

No girl is to be admitted if above 14, and it is preferred to receive children under 12; no child will be declined on account of extreme youth, as it is better at once to withdraw from her home a child, however young, who shows a propensity to dishonesty which can not be checked in the circumstances in which she is placed.

No girl will be retained above the age of 16.

No girl will be admitted with any infectious disorder.

No girl will be admitted who is a fit subject for a penitentiary.

The parties sending girls to this school must be responsible for a provision being made for them on leaving, as it will be generally undesirable that they should return to the unfavorable circumstances in which they fell into crime.

Two suits of strong under-clothing and shoes are to be sent with each girl.

It will be in the power of the superintendent to deviate from these rules under peculiar circumstances; but this will not be done readily.

When girls are sent to this school *not* under the Act, a payment of 5s. per week will be expected, *quarterly in advance*.

## GENERAL PRINCIPLES OF MANAGEMENT.

The girls admitted to this school will be usually found to be entirely devoid of any good principles of action; particularly addicted to deceit, both in word and actions; of fine, but misdirected powers; of violent passions; extremely sensitive to imagined injury, and equally sensible to kindness.

The first step toward their reformation will be to awaken a feeling of confidence in their instructors, and to prove to them the anxiety for their welfare that is felt for them; they should be made at the same time to feel that they must yield to a control which will be kindly but firmly exercised; their passions must be as little excited as possible, and when they are so, "overcome evil with good" must be the teacher's watchword. The misdirected energies must be called into healthy exercise, and wisely guided; the intellectual faculties must be judiciously cultivated; and above all, religious and moral principles must be directly enforced, and indirectly, but still more powerfully, taught by the daily life of the teachers, and their evident obedience to truth and duty.

## MEANS EMPLOYED FOR THE CARRYING OUT OF THESE PRINCIPLES.

Daily reading and inculcation of the Scriptures, with prayer, and other direct religious and moral instruction.

Intellectual training calculated to excite a taste for useful information, and to awaken the higher faculties. Regular industrial occupation, especially such as will call forth the energies, or exercise patient application; choice being especially made of such kinds as will fit the girls for domestic service, and prepare them for any situation in life in which they may probably be placed.

Innocent amusements, such as may serve to occupy the girls' minds, and distract their attention from injurious objects of thought.

The society of persons of virtuous character and loving spirit, who may insensibly win them over to love virtue, first for their sakes, then for itself.

The availing one's self of every suitable opportunity to act on the child's inner nature, and to rekindle the divine life within her.

## RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION.

The great object of the religious instruction of these children will be to give them accurate and rational acquaintance with the Holy Scriptures; a firm conviction of the truths they contain; a loving faith in their warnings and promises; and a deep and actuating love of God our Heavenly Father, and of his Son, our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. They will be taught to seek in all things the aid of God's Holy Spirit, and by prayer and supplication to make known their wants unto Him. It will be attempted to make religion a daily influencing motive; whether they eat or drink, or whatever they do, to do all to the glory of God.

All sectarian teaching will be strictly forbidden.

The girls will attend divine service twice on Sunday with the teacher, at the nearest place of worship which appears eligible.

Regular religious instruction will be given on Sunday afternoon by the superintendent, or by some one authorized by her.

## SECULAR INSTRUCTION, AND INDUSTRIAL TRAINING.

Reading, writing, and the simple rules of arithmetic, are to be carefully and thoroughly taught; also such knowledge of geography as will enable the girls to read with intelligence ordinary books of an interesting and instructive character; and such general information will be given, as will make them more able to discharge well the duties likely to devolve on them in life.

A small library of instructive and entertaining books will be provided.

Singing will be made a part of the moral training, and regular instruction in it will be given.

The girls are to be employed from one to two hours a day, at least, in household work, three hours every afternoon at useful needle-work, and a portion of the day at knitting.

The older girls are to be taught washing and ironing, with cooking, and other special kinds of house-work which may help to prepare them for domestic service.

At least an hour every day should be devoted to active exercise, and, if possible, a walk should be taken beyond the premises three times a week.

## REGULATIONS RESPECTING THE GIRLS.

The clothing of the girls will be uniform, but simple and neat, such as would be suitable for any girl in the laboring classes of society.

Great attention is to be paid to personal neatness and cleanliness.

The food will be wholesome and sufficient, but perfectly simple.

The girls must be led to feel that the allowance made for them by the Government, or by friends, by no means supports them, and that they must do all that lies in their power to aid in the expense of their maintenance. As an encouragement and stimulus,

however, to exertion, a third of the profits arising from each girl's sewing and knitting will be credited to her, and will remain in the hands of the matron, to be withdrawn by the girl at the discretion of the matron, or remain in her hands until the girl leaves school, to aid in providing an outfit for her.

When any girl is newly admitted, she must for a time sleep apart from the others, and be under the especial care of the teacher; nor must she be allowed to mix freely with other girls, until it appears that she can do so without injury.

**RULES TO BE READ TO EVERY GIRL ON ADMISSION, AND ALWAYS ENFORCED.**

The girls who come to this school must remember that they do so in order to enable them to be honest and industrious members of society in this world, and to prepare them for another and a better.

To effect this, the labor and care of their instructors will be of little avail, unless they also use their own earnest efforts to improve themselves, and endeavor at all times to obey God's commandments, "not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but as fearing the Lord."

In addition to the laws of God which are contained in His Holy Word, every girl is required to attend strictly to the following rules:

I. Every girl on entering the school is to begin with a new character; she must as much as possible forget the evil of her past life, and on no account ever converse with any of her companions respecting any of the circumstances attending it.

II. No girl must on any consideration go out of the premises without a pass, unless with a teacher.

III. Strict obedience must be paid to the superintendent, matron, and teachers; respectful attention to superiors, and kind consideration to companions.

IV. All irreverent use of God's name, low and vulgar language, slang words and nick-names, are absolutely forbidden.

V. Order, neatness, and cleanliness are especially to be attended to; "a place for every thing, and every thing in its place," being the rule of the house.

VI. Diligence and activity in the work appointed are expected from all; "Diligent in business, serving the Lord."

VII. Great care must be taken of the property of others, and of every thing used in the school. Willful or careless waste or injury of the school property must be paid for from the girl's earnings.

VIII. No girl must possess any money without the knowledge of the matron.

IX. No books, pictures, or papers of any kind, are to be introduced into the school, nor are any letters to be sent or received, without the permission of the superintendent.

X. Whoever knows that these or any other rules laid down are broken, without informing the matron of the same, becomes herself an accomplice, and is besides doing injury to her companion, by encouraging her in evil.

**THE TEACHERS.**

Those employed in this work must do it from their hearts, as a sacred duty, to which they will devote themselves with their whole power.

Entire confidence and good understanding must exist among themselves and with the superintendent, who will endeavor, as far as in her lies, to support their authority and influence, with her own.

The girls must be always under watchful care, though treated with confidence.

The teachers must rely more on their own personal influence to secure obedience, and on awakening a sense of duty in the girls, than on any enactments or rules. They must never converse with the girls respecting their past history, which is to be confided to the superintendent *only*; and they must carefully avoid any expressions or mode of treatment, calculated to awaken resentful feelings in the girls, or make them feel themselves members of a degraded class.

Punishments should never be inflicted arbitrarily, nor with any vindictive feeling, but made as much as possible the natural consequences of actions.

The best teachers will secure obedience and good conduct with the least punishment.

No intoxicating liquors, except for medicinal purposes, are to be admitted into the house.

**VISITORS.**

This school will not be made a show place. Persons interested in the object may be admitted on Thursday afternoon from 2 to 4, but at no other time without an order from the superintendent. Visitors are particularly requested to abstain from any allusion to the past condition of the girls.

Voluntary teachers who are able and willing to give useful instruction to the children, in conformity with the regulations of the establishment, will be gladly welcomed by the superintendent.

Visits from parents and friends of the children must be regulated by the superintendent, nor will any one be admitted without an order from her.

## HARDWICKE REFORMATORY SCHOOL

---

THE following paragraphs are copied from different numbers of the Irish Quarterly Review. They show what can be done by two energetic men to start a reformatory, without the aid of large appropriations of state, county or city funds, and without a cumbersome Board of Managers.

In March, 1852, Mr. George Bengough and Mr. T. B. L. Baker, two magistrates for Gloucestershire, opened a reformatory school for boys, in a cottage with a few acres of land attached, on Mr. Baker's estate at Hardwicke, near Gloucester, under the title of "The Children's Friend School;" Mr. Bengough, devoting himself to the personal superintendence and training of the friendless and outcast inmates of the school, lived for many months under the same roof with them, and gave many hours daily to their religious and moral instruction. At a comparatively small cost the school has become fairly established. Beginning with three boys, its managers have gradually increased the number of inmates to sixteen, of whom Mr. Baker writes in 1854 as follows: "Five of these boys, we believe, we could safely recommend for service; five have much improved; the other six have not been with us long enough to show material improvement, but a great point has been gained from the elder boys having acquired a readiness to assist instead of opposing us, and a better tone of feeling which they impart to the new comers." The example set by the promoters of the Hardwicke School shows how easily and simply reformatory agency can be brought to bear upon its objects, and how effective and successful that agency will prove when employing, as its instruments, religious influence and industrial occupation. Mr. Baker states:—"We have now a cottage for our bailiff, two rooms for our schoolmaster, and schoolroom and bedroom for twenty boys. We have a carpenter's shop, pigsties for sixteen pigs, stalls for three cows, and we are commencing some more pigsties and a barn. The whole cost of the buildings has been about £250. For the first year we could only undertake the cultivation of one acre; last winter we ventured upon six acres. Our land—stiff blue clay—was hard for small light boys to dig; but our six acres were well worked, and our crops testify to the effects of spade husbandry. We have now taken ten acres in hand. We hope to increase considerably next year."

In April, 1855, in reply to a statement in the Leeds Mercury that the Hardwicke School had come to an end, Mr. Baker writes a letter to the editor, from which we make the following extracts:

When Mr. Bengough and I began our experiment three years ago, we were told that a school of *eighty boys* would scarcely be sufficient to provide for the requirements of Chektenham—to say nothing of Stroud, Gloucester, and the mining districts of the Forest of Dean. We began with a school of *three*. We increased it till we had at one time *thirty-six*. We have at present *thirty-two*. But for nearly ten months we have proclaimed that we were ready and willing to take *all the boys of the county whom the magistrates thought fit to send us*; and the magistrates have never found boys enough to raise our number above 36, nor do I now believe that they ever will do so.

This falling off in the supply of *youthful offenders*, I suppose, must, by a slight exaggeration, have been turned into a report of the school having ceased. But I assure you there is no fear of the latter. I am in hopes shortly of *feeling safe*—I had always rather move too slowly than to quickly—in attacking the Bristol boys, and I have no fear of getting a sufficient supply from thence to keep up the school for many years. Such a diminution in crime as I have stated will appear incomprehensible to those who have not tried it. Many



things are incomprehensible to those who will not inquire. But a very short explanation may give some idea of the fact.

I do not consider that two years' imprisonment in a reformatory school is the proper punishment for every child who gives way to a childish temptation and steals an apple that lies within its reach. I do not believe it to be just or right to violate the course of nature, and to take away from its parents every child of the lower classes *that is found out* in doing what, unhappily, many children of the higher classes might do without more punishment than a well deserved scolding of the nursery maid. On the other hand, where theft becomes habitual, and still more, where the boy is teaching others to steal, the action of a reformatory school is of the highest importance. *For such* let it be kept—not for every boy whose schoolmaster finds him obstinate and stupid, or whom some overseer wishes to get off the parish rates.

I have now a boy in our school, who for two years had always two apprentices (as thieves) under him. They were often caught and sent to jail, and he then took others. That boy must have trained ten or twelve thieves, and would have gone on training more. He is now one of the best and most trustworthy boys I have, because one of the strongest characters. The weeding out of a few such boys as this from a large district will *partly* explain the diminution of crime, but it wants an actual study of the subject to understand it altogether.

I have acted now for nearly a quarter of a century on jail committees, lunatic asylum committees, &c., &c. I know pretty well what they are; and I think them well adapted for the purposes for which they are used. But I would lay five to one on the success of a school undertaken by a country esquire who had his heart in it; I would equally lay five to one against one established by a committee supported by rates.

Six weeks ago I was at a meeting of, I believe, the managers of every reformatory establishment in England, and the question was especially discussed; and I think the opinion was nearly unanimous that any other system of payment than the present one, viz.: a weekly payment for each boy, would be highly undesirable. I believe that no good reformatory school has ever yet been established by other than voluntary contributions—from Mettray downward—if, indeed, we may except Parkhurst, which I take to be the best school yet attempted by any government.

I hold far more strongly than I did, before I had three years' actual experience on the subject, that the fortnight in jail—*supposing it always to be in separation* from other offenders—has an admirable effect; and I think all who have been used to a certified school will tell you the same. At the same time if a boy can not be kept separate from others—(you have only to confine him to his night cell for the time)—of course it will do no harm.

In commencing land for a reformatory school, I should hope that this would be done—not by public advertisement replied to by any man who has a piece of land he wishes to be rid of, and who has no further interest in the matter than the getting the highest accommodation rent he can—but that some gentleman of consideration in the county may be found who would offer land in his own estate *at a fair rent*. The sanction and support of neighboring country gentlemen is, I believe, of greater value than those who have not tried it would suppose.

I say *at a fair rent*, because, however rich or liberal the landlord may be, I should much prefer that he should charge exactly a fair rent than give it *gratis*. If he be able, in addition, to take the principal or entire *management* of the school into his own hands, (not so onerous a task as those who have not tried it would suppose,) it will be an incalculable advantage, and I believe he would find the pleasure amply repay the few hours a week it would cost him.

Were I then to suggest the terms of an agreement, they would be a lease of 21 or 50 years, determinable at three years' notice by the subscribers. If there happen to be an old farm house, or a row of three or four cottages on the land, I would make them available, though they might be far rougher than a county committee would ordinarily approve of. But if there be no buildings available, let some plain buildings be put up, which will be easily convertible into four ordinary laborers' cottages, and will cost no more than four ordinary laborers' cottages would do.



In commencing the school, you know my strong opinion is that there are not one but three objects to be borne in mind from the commencement. First, to establish the school for the reformation of youthful offenders; secondly, to provide places for them when reformed; thirdly, *to carefully select* the boys whom you should first take.

For the third point, namely, the selection of the boys, it is important to check the common opinion that the school is intended simply for the benefit of A., B., or C., certain criminal children. I have always held that our school was to be used more for the benefit of the honest than the dishonest, by removing the former from the latter. But if so, as you can not take all the bad boys of the county at once, as you must begin with a few and increase by slow degrees, it is important that you should weed out the worst boys first.

In the commencement of the actual working of the school, forgive my saying that care should be taken to get a man fit for the particular work; you will probably find it necessary to have a bailiff and a schoolmaster. The latter would appear at first sight to be the most fit to be the head; but if so, you must take care that the boys are not brought up, more to pass an examination than to work on a farm. I prefer a bailiff for the head man, as I think he is more likely to be steady and less given to change. But whichever you take for your chief, I should strongly recommend that he should spend a month at least at some reformatory school on trial, to see whether he is fit for the work or not. A man who feels sure that he understands a reformatory school because he is used to a prison—or because he is used to a parish school—would probably find himself sadly at a loss when he came to try it.

With regard to the *management*, I confess myself strongly in favor of a committee of *one*. A large committee may be useful in getting subscriptions, and in examining and checking the expenditure, but *a committee can not reform a boy*. One magistrate who lives close at hand, and can frequently walk in and chat with the boys, can do more than all the committees in England. A committee can't lay its hand upon a boy's shoulder and lead him apart, and persuade him to open his heart in private; one magistrate or clergyman, one gentleman in short who takes interest in the work, can easily do it.

In 1856, Mr. Baker submitted his *Third Report*:

The rapid spread of the system throughout the whole of England has exceeded the hopes of its supporters. \* \* I have every hope that within three years nearly every county may feel as Gloucestershire alone can as yet—that there is a *locus penitentiae* for every boy whom the magistrates in their discretion consider to require the treatment of a reformatory school.

Another point of great importance is, that the act of last session, for enforcing the payment of some part of the maintenance of such children, (by their parents,) has at length come into operation. Many parents have willingly consented to pay; but a short time ago the first contested case, as I believe, in England, was tried at Bristol; and the parent, a man earning large wages, was sentenced to pay 3s. 6d. a week. We have every hope that this will soon be carried out thoroughly, and that all parents, even the very poor, will be compelled to pay, at least as much as the child would have cost them had he been honest. This at any rate they *can* pay. If they can pay more, they should be made to do so. It has been for a long time a sad injustice that the parents of a criminal child should actually be benefited by his son's crime.

The first and most important observation is, that we have lost the active services, though not the name, nor, I believe I may say, the warm interest, of him by whose energy and devotion our school was first called into existence; and so well organized that it can now proceed without his help. After originating this school, and giving much assistance to the organization of that for Devon and Cornwall, Mr. Bengough has now undertaken the charge of that at Kingswood, near Bristol, which will, I trust, ere long make a clearance of all the worst juvenile criminals of Somersetshire; a range of utility of which any might feel proud.

During this year the average number of our boys has been increased by more than a third of the number of last year. This, however, must not be taken as a proof that crime is increasing. Of thirty-six committed to us in the year, nine have been received from other counties, and thirteen more were cases sent to us

on the first conviction, and who appear rather to have been boys momentarily led astray than hardened offenders.

Indeed, a strong change has been perceptible in the general character of the boys received. The sharp, clever, highly educated, (in the usual acceptation of the term,) but determined thief,—who has run his evil course for some years, and been often convicted, and is able and willing to corrupt others,—has given place to a set who appear to have erred from a want of knowledge rather than a determined propensity.

In the year we have received thirty-six boys; twenty-seven from our own county, and nine from other counties. Of our own twenty-seven—three are from Gloucester, eleven from Cheltenham, and thirteen from different parts of the county. Of the town boys, only four have been of the class who are employed in corrupting and instructing others; five others have been very bad boys, two middling, and three I believe only led astray by momentary temptation. At one time, indeed, the youthful marauders of Cheltenham appeared to be scared, and for a time gave up their evil courses. One or two, I am sorry to say, have since returned to them, and, until they can be caught, the mischief will be again rapidly spreading.

With regard to what we more strictly call the reformation of the boys, (although this is a term I never like to use in the past tense, as we can not possibly say that any boy is *reformed*,) we have received in the whole, up to last Christmas, ninety-four boys, of whom,

Absconded, 5; removed without our consent, 3; apprenticed, 7; in trade, 8; in service, 3; at sea, 6; emigrated, 1; returned to their friends, 6; gone to other schools, 31; now in the school, 24; total, 94.

Of the thirty-one whom we have put out in the world, either as apprentices, in trade, or the like, three have since been dishonest,—two of them under very strong temptations, and the third was unwisely allowed to leave the school much too early. Four others have turned out idle or in some way unsatisfactory, and have been discharged from their places, but are now working honestly. The other twenty-six are still going on satisfactorily.

The fact of thirty-one boys having been removed to other schools also requires some explanation. In commencing a school, great difficulty is often found in getting what may be termed a good moral tone. Where all are wild it is difficult to tame any, but when once the majority of the boys have acquired habits of at least order and discipline, any new comers insensibly adopt the same, and the training is comparatively easy.

Acting on this idea, I suggested to the managers of schools of several counties, the taking a certain number of boys, who have been half-trained in some older establishment, to form a nucleus for the new school. I engaged, when such boys were taken from me by any manager, to receive half the number of newly-convicted boys in return.

This suggestion has been largely adopted; and I have sent in the last six months, twenty-eight boys to other schools, all of whom I believe are, on the whole, well reported of. This has been a great assistance to us for the present, and for some little time longer it will continue to be so; but I must remind the gentlemen and farmers of our county, that ere long it will be necessary to find places for our reformed boys. This will be no heavy burden if all will endeavor to help. If one place is found in each parish once in ten years it will probably amply suffice.

But if all are utterly careless of every consideration except that of *getting rid* of criminals from their own neighborhood, without caring for what may become of them, no care or expense laid out on a reformatory school can be of any avail.

The total cost of the school for the first three years was £1,328. 19s. 2d., exclusive of the prime cost of building, but inclusive of purchase of stock.

The large number of schools arising in all parts of England has caused a great demand for schoolmasters and bailiffs. This I have been anxious to supply as far as I could, and have had a considerable number of men training in the school to act as masters or bailiffs elsewhere, amounting to an average of three extra masters throughout the year. I am happy to add that, besides many masters of other schools who have spent from a few days to a fortnight here, and many who have come for a short time and given it up, six men trained here have gone to other schools, five of whom have hitherto given satisfaction.

## EXPERIENCE IN REFORMATORY SCHOOLS.

When I first entered upon this work, I possessed little or nothing of any special qualification for it: my only practical acquaintance with boys having been acquired in an occasional experiment at teaching in a village Sunday School. As must have been expected, therefore, I made not a few blunders at starting. The greatest of which perhaps was that in undertaking to be practically the master, as well as the manager of the school, I undertook more than I had the time or power to perform. But such was my utopian idea of what was required and what I could do, that I at one time contemplated dispensing with the assistance of a bailiff, or any assistance at all. The evil results of this error were two-fold. In the first place, though I was as much as possible on the spot myself, taking usually the main part of the labor of teaching in the school at night, and latterly also of superintending the boys at their meals, still, owing to my frequent absence on magisterial or other business, a larger proportion of attention and labor fell upon the bailiff than he was well able to bear.

I should therefore most strongly urge it, as of primary importance, to secure in the staff such a division of labor as will relieve all those engaged from the strain of a too constant attention to what is undeniably a very harassing and laborious task, the supervision and control of children of this peculiar class. But another, and as I consider it, an evil result, from my having thus undertaken more than I was able to perform, was that the bailiff became practically, and, (always of course under Mr. Baker,) still is the head of the Hardwicke Schools. Now, however important the formation of a habit of industry may be, and deprecating as one must over dosing children, especially of such a class, with direct religious teaching, it is most essential that some one habitually with them should be able to awaken their attention and interest in religious truth, and daily under the Divine blessing send it by a few forcible words home to their hearts. Of the influence which a habit and power of teaching such as this and a well trained mind had on the general tone of the school, we had ample evidence with our second master, a young man from Kneller-Hall, who unfortunately remained with us only a short time. Now, as it seems to me, a man qualified as I have described, must be out of place if in any way subordinated to one of inferior mental training to his own. And the bailiff, with many important qualifications for his work, is not able, and indeed never undertook, to supply the directly educational element, which is yet the most important in the system of a reformatory school. \* \* Mr. Baker would place the bailiff as the chief in importance as an agent in reformation, if not in authority in the school; while I have always strongly felt, and where I had the opportunity pressed my conviction, that the *first* point to be secured, (next of course to a right *heart*,) is an educated mind, and that the agent in the industrial portion of the system will be then a secondary consideration, and a want not difficult to supply.

Here, too, arises several questions, on which I experimented, not always successfully, in my own person, as to the position and intercourse of the master of school, with the boys, as carrying out the theory of the family system.

The family theory and its full development from the first engaged my earnest attention, and I have since thought much upon the subject, and I really can not help coming to the conclusion that it is a mistake, and a mistake which has partially originated, in our adoption of the word family into our language upon this subject, as an equivalent of the French "*famille*." The infusion of a HOME feeling toward the reformatory or refuge is not necessarily dependent on the boys holding a filial relation in any real sense to the master of the school. As a school, (and so far as a school is so,) as a "household" is the true practical aspect in which, (it seems to me,) it should be regarded. The relation of a teacher to his scholar, the master to his disciple, does not preclude, in fact calls eminently for the display of love, and in some sort a paternal interest on the one side, and a respectful but not in ordinary cases, a filial attachment on the other. If circumstances would allow of the subdivision of numbers to such an extent, as that one head should have charge of from ten to fifteen children only, as is the case in one at least of the foreign reformatories, there would still be no true counterpart of the family as we understand the word. For ten children of one family would never be found of ages so nearly the same, so that the rela-

tion of each to each would be wanting, even if that of each to the head could be realized, where, as is the case with us, so many of the children have parents over-indulgent rather than the reverse at their real home. To regard the reformatory then, as a school, it seems to me will make one's treatment more systematic and consistent, and more really practical than to aim at giving it in one or two particulars a complexion which can never be thoroughly carried out. The disadvantageousness of very large numbers will still stand upon considerations of another kind, the difficulty, namely, of finding one man capable of sufficiently individualising a very large number of children, and the necessity of calling in the aid of an assistant in such cases, who can scarcely stand in the same position to them as the real head.

But to return to the faults of my first management.

Commencing with an exaggerated idea of the power of kindness to do alone what is only to be brought about by firmness in requiring obedience and maintaining respect, I committed, at starting, the great error of treating my boys *not* with too much kindness, but with too little strictness and regularity of discipline. In seeking to win their confidence I encouraged them to be so unreserved as often to overstep the barrier of due respect: and both these errors have been subsequently the cause of much otherwise needless trouble.

We commenced with three boys, who, before the school was quite completed, were accommodated by the bailiffs at their residence; and this also interfered with the adoption of a settled system from the first. The three boys were all from London: very good specimens of a class which is to be met with only in London and large towns; and as far as my experience has gone, superior in every respect, not only in knowledge of evil, but in capabilities for good to the youthful criminals of a country district such as ours. There can be no question at the present stage of knowledge of the reformatory system, that to commence with a very small number of boys is the foundation of success. But it admits, I think, of a question, whether we acted judiciously in commencing with boys of so difficult a description to deal with, and it was almost unquestionably unwise to have them all from the same place.

The system of punishments and rewards which I had looked to as likely to prove, under ordinary circumstances, a sufficient stimulus to good conduct, and deterrent from bad, was, with a few slight differences in detail, that which I had seen so admirably working at the Philanthropic Society's Farm School at Red-Hill, and of which, Mr. Sydney Turner has spoken as the key of the whole system there.

I allowed, to well conducted boys, a small sum weekly, in proportion to the skill and diligence in work, awarded generally at the discretion of the bailiff as I could not succeed, from various causes, in getting the much better system of piece-work fairly carried out. I never, however, heard any discontent expressed at his awards; a maximum being prescribed, and general rules made known, by which they were made.

Of this weekly reward a certain proportion was deducted for each given offense, omitting fractions; thus dishonesty forfeited the whole; lying, three-fourths and so on. At one time I allowed them these sums in money, but I found, by experience, that this practice gave rise to an almost irrepressible amount of gambling, and tended also to encourage and somewhat facilitate attempts to abscond from the school. I therefore had the sum entered to their credit, till they wished to purchase sweets, on which they were only allowed to spend a portion, or any other articles with it, or perhaps additional luxuries at meals.

To render such a system as this efficient, demands great faith in its eventual success, and consequent perseverance in it on the part of the officers, and on the part of the boys depends on that which is not the growth of a day or even of a few weeks, a satisfactory moral tone generally in the school. In setting it in operation at first, it will have usually to be backed up by a ready appeal to more sensible modes of correction, where its influence is not sufficient, but always with a return to it, and a trial of it again and again, until, as it eventually will, it succeeds. The fines, too, must be made sufficiently heavy to entail, as a tolerably near prospect, a curtailment of food or other indulgence. By a somewhat extraordinary application of this their consequence in one case, I made their influence more appreciated at the Hardwicke School. I had occa-

sion to give a mark to one of the boys there, an impassible, idle, easy-tempered simpleton, when he derisively asked for 100. I accordingly took him at his word, and the 100 marks gave him bread and water three days in the week for a period of six weeks. It put a stop to such remarks for the future. Of course, however, cases occurred in which punishment by fine was inadequate. On two occasions we had recourse to the ultima ratio of a public flogging, inflicted either by, or in the presence of Mr. Baker, and myself, and with all the solemnity of form and circumstance with which we could invest it. I have once before publicly recorded my conviction that inflicted in this way, it is calculated to exert a sound moral influence on the sufferer and the other boys. The offenses in these two instances were a fifth attempt to abscond, and offering personal violence to the schoolmaster in the school. For other bad, though less serious offenses, we resorted to confinement in a light cell; occasionally, but *very* rarely extending to as much as three or four days; (and then usually, principally for safe custody, when a boy had attempted to abscond,) for twenty-four hours is ordinarily found sufficient to reduce the most refractory to order.

In the infliction of the other severer punishments from time to time required, I endeavored, as far as possible, to establish a moral relation between the punishment and the offense. Thus one punishment, and one which I found very sensibly felt, was confinement to the walk in front of the school-room, and the offices, sometimes strictly to the school-room itself at all times but the hours of work: and this was generally inflicted on boys who attempted to abscond, or were guilty of any act of dishonesty; and I endeavored to impress upon all the boys the moral necessity of it, as the delinquents had proved that they could no longer be trusted out of sight.

When not subjected as a punishment to this restraint, they enjoyed a considerable amount of liberty. In fact, at one time, I can hardly say that they had strictly any bounds at all, except that they were not allowed to cross the canal, which is about two hundred yards below the school to the east, and were required, as a general rule, not to wander to any great distance from the school, for which in fact they had no time.

I encouraged in most instances their acquisition of property, and the appropriation of their working tools. At first I had grievous complaints of their pilfering from one another, (especially in regard to the produce of some gardens, with which I endeavored to interest them, not, however, very successfully;) but being quite unable to remedy this, I not unwillingly left it to redress itself, as it soon did; endeavoring to deduce from it how unbearable would be the state to which society must come in time, if dishonesty were not repressed by law. For thieving in an ordinary way there was of course but little temptation or opportunity in such a school as ours; but surrounded as it is by a number of orchards, and allowed as the boys were, a great deal of liberty, especially on Sunday afternoons, it might have been expected that we should have had many cases of pilfering apples to punish. But though we certainly had some, yet on the whole they were very few.

But accurate as one's general principles and well arranged as one's system may possibly be, it is by no means an easy matter to act up to them in the various cases and with the various tempers and dispositions, with which in a school of many boys one must have to deal. Thus even the very promptitude of punishment which in most cases is so salutary, is in a few instances better exchanged for more winning and patient treatment.

I feel no hesitation in deprecating as the result of my experience, any extension of the limit in age which is now fixed, unless it be such an extension, say up to nineteen, as will include a large class who are now excluded, not on any definite principle, from the benefits of Reformatory Institutions aided by the state, and will compel the foundation of institutions with such modifications as will be suitable for the reception of older inmates—and to which inmates found too old for the present existing schools might be transferred.

A fair average success has attended the plan originated by Mr. Baker, of apprenticing boys to farmers or unskilled trades without a premium, and on such terms that a small but yearly increasing weekly payment is made by the master to a savings' bank, the accumulation to be for the *boy's* benefit, if he leaves at the end of his term with good character; for the school, if he is discharged or returned to the school with a bad one. The employer is always



requested to return the boy to the school, if he becomes troublesome, or himself becomes unable, from any cause, to keep him; and as this is looked upon by the boys as a great punishment if it were always acted upon, and known to be so, it would afford a great security for the boys' good behavior.

But there is one particular which marks peculiarly the criminal class of boys, (as I have been told the same is found among the inmates of our female penitentiaries,) in which they are all nearly alike, and with which, it is, in nearly all cases, equally difficult to deal—an inveterate habit of lying; as one of them once told me, any one of them would tell a lie if they thought they could get any thing by it; and even where there was no apparent advantage to be gained, it seemed almost more natural for them to say what was untrue, than what was true; and the ingenuity and plausibility of the tales which some of the most uninventive looking boys have told me, has occasioned me no little surprise.

I have already adverted to the decided difference that appears between the boys from larger towns, especially London, and those from country districts. There is an intensity about the former, which characterizes them in a very marked manner. In the country indeed, one does not find those large associations of thieves of all ages, and many of them men of considerable talent, that exist in our largest towns, and therefore, among other points of difference, the intellect, in the one class of our young criminals, is much more active and more educated than in the other. It is not surprising, therefore, that among the regular practiced thieves from London, I discovered what I had not anticipated, the existence of a systematic and theoretical, as well as practical infidelity, which they had picked up from their elder associates. My experience has not shown me any approach to a similar evil in the simpler, but perhaps equally mischievous boys, coming from the country or country towns. On the contrary, strong sectarian prejudices, especially as Protestants or Roman Catholics, many of them rather amusingly, because very ignorantly, display. Of the general outlines of religious truth, I have found very few indeed, comparatively, wholly ignorant at the age at which they came to me. But having learned it as a task at school, it is very hard indeed to *interest* them in such teaching at all; the least difficulty existing where they do come, devoid of religious instruction altogether. The time for teaching indeed generally is to most of them, the most trying period of the day. The enforced stillness, their utter distaste to which, by inducing, very many of them to play truant, originally led them into crime, the call upon them to fix their attention and the irksomeness of beginning the rudiments of reading, under the ordinary system, especially to the older ones, all oppose great obstacles to doing much in this way. Some things, especially, when orally taught, I found they are quick enough to apprehend; more than boys of their average age in our common schools. But the ordinary reading books suitable from the shortness of the words in which they are written, to their reading powers, are miserably behind the requirements of their minds. A set of reading books adapted to ragged and reformatory schools, is a want which I long to see supplied.

## REFORMATORY MOVEMENT IN ENGLAND.

---

THE physical and mental condition of the poor in England is an instance of the failure of even the vastest legislative and pecuniary provision, without corresponding care for mental and moral training, either by the family or the school, to secure happiness or prosperity among the poor. Instead of substituting for the conventual schools, as was done in Scotland, a system of schools capable of educating the whole body of the people, the vast funds and properties confiscated at the reformation were squandered or given away, and the great army of poor, who had received their living and what learning they got at the hands of the monks, were left unprovided for, either in body or mind.

The poor-law system, the only such substitute up to the time of the late juvenile reformatory movements, originated in the time of Elizabeth; and, so far as children are concerned, was simply a scheme for supporting them up to a certain age as cheaply as possible, at parish expense, and then binding them out to a trade; and this utterly without reference to parents or home. The state of things which the poor-laws were intended to remedy, and their reference to adults only, appear from the preamble of the statute of 14th Elizabeth, which recites that "all the parts of this realm of England and Wales be presently with rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars, exceedingly pestered, by means whereof daily happeneth in the same realm horrible murders, thefts, and other great outrage, to the high displeasure of Almighty God, and to the great annoyance of the common weal."

Improvements in the poor-laws, with a view to bettering the condition of pauper children, were soon and continually suggested and attempted, in and out of parliament. Sir Matthew Hale, about 1650, suggested an industrial school in each parish. Similar plans were put forward by Firmin, in 1678; by John Locke, while secretary to the Board of Trade, in a bill brought before parliament; and by Pitt, in another, in 1796; both, however, being unsuccessful.

The little success of these governmental efforts is strikingly shown by late statistics of juvenile pauperism and crime. In 1849, eight per cent. of all the prisoners in the English and Welsh jails, being 12,955 out of 166,941, were under seventeen years of age; the whole number of children under sixteen, in the work-houses in the same, was 48,188, and those receiving out-door relief, i. e., paupers living in pauper homes, 276,618; in all 332,706 children, dependent upon the state for both physical and mental support and training, and getting very little of the first, and substantially none of the last.



Of the series of private efforts which were naturally made to supply this failure by the state, the first attended with important results was the origination of Sunday Schools, by Robert Raikes, of Gloucester. Mr. Raikes, in a charitable visit to what was called the Bridewell of Gloucester jail, was much moved by the condition of a class of prisoners committed for trifling offenses, but there kept in the company of the worst felons. Finding them excessively ignorant, he set about furnishing them with some instruction and work; and his success turned his thoughts to the question of preventing such cases by providing the proper instruction for poor and vicious children. The second stimulus, immediately resulting in the establishment of the Sunday Schools, Mr. Raikes thus himself describes:

"Some business leading me one morning into the suburbs of the city, where the lowest of the people, (who are principally employed in the pin manufactory,) chiefly reside, I was struck with concern at seeing a group of children, wretchedly ragged, at play in the street. I asked an inhabitant whether those children belonged to that part of the town, and lamented their misery and idleness. 'Ah! sir,' said the woman to whom I was speaking, 'could you take a view of this part of the town on a Sunday, you would be shocked indeed, for then the street is filled with multitudes of these wretches, who, released on that day from employment, spend their time in noise and riot, playing at chuck, and cursing and swearing in a manner so horrid, as to convey to any serious mind an idea of hell rather than of any other place. We have a worthy clergyman, minister of our parish, [Rev. T. Stock?] who has put some of them to school; but upon the Sabbath day they are all given up to follow their own inclinations without restraint, as their parents, totally abandoned themselves, have no idea of instilling into the minds of their children principles to which they themselves were total strangers.' Can nothing be done, I asked myself, for these poor children? Is there any one who will take them to a school on a Sunday?"

The schools which Mr. Raikes, with the efficient assistance of Rev. Thomas Stock, established, under the care of four respectable women, were quite successful, and became even singularly attractive to the "set of little heathens," as Mr. Raikes terms them, of the neighborhood. This modest enterprise was the beginning of a system which has extended until, in 1850, there were in England and Wales 23,514 Sunday Schools, with 318,135 teachers, and 2,407,642 scholars.

The next private enterprise of importance for the reformatory education of the young was the Philanthropic Society, founded by Arthur Young, in 1788; which received, brought up and bound out to trades, orphans of both sexes, giving them some literary training and some knowledge of the occupations which they were to follow.

The honor of first practically instituting a Ragged School,—that is, a school where destitute children are taught letters and labor, and provided with food, clothes, or lodgings,—belongs to the poor crippled cobbler of Portsmouth, John Pounds. Beginning with his own nephew, he gradually

gathered in his little shop a class of thirty or forty boys and girls, whom he taught reading and writing and his trade. In 1830, the Hon. Miss Amelia Murray and Capt. E. P. Brenton founded a Children's Friend Society, which sought to reform the vagrant and criminal children of London in its schools, and afterward to find respectable employment for them. This society operated, in many respects, upon principles similar to those of Mettray and the Rauhe Haus.

In 1833, the Ealing Reform School was founded by Lady Noel Byron, who has, from that early day to the present, been one of the wisest and most efficient promoters of the movement for juvenile reform; and whose liberality, besides the Ealing School, the Red Lodge School at Clifton, &c., has borne the expenses of the valuable labors of Miss Carpenter. In the same year, Mr. Walker founded the first Ragged School in London.

The English government had already made attempts at educating pauper children, by means of work-house schools, before 1836; and in that year a system of district or union schools, made up of pupils from the work-house schools, was inaugurated by the establishment of the Norwood School, which was followed by an act of parliament for the establishment of such in general, in 1846. In 1839, it had also recognized the principle of the separate imprisonment and industrial training of juvenile criminals by the establishment of Parkhurst prison.

But these official efforts were not attended with any very encouraging success. The first promising efforts for preventive and reformatory juvenile education were again from private sources. In 1849, upon the representations of Rev. Sydney Turner, who had examined Mettray and other continental reform schools, the institution of the Philanthropic Society was made an agricultural school, and transferred to Red Hill. The effects of the good results here experienced were reinforced by the work of Miss Carpenter on reformatory schools, and her energetic efforts in connection with it. These led to the conference at Birmingham of those interested in the subject of reformatory education, in 1851. This conference, again, led to the parliamentary inquiry of 1852-3, which was thorough and earnest, (although Mr. Monckton Milnes' bill, for the better care and treatment of juvenile offenders, had been somewhat contemptuously rejected by the House of Commons, only two years before, in 1850,) and to Lord Palmerston's act, in 1854.

This act, together with those amending and defining it, has recognized four principles of essential importance to reformatory institutions, namely:

1. That the crimes of the young need a different treatment from those of adults.

2. That it is the interest and duty of the State to rescue and educate such children as misfortunes, or the misconduct of their parents, throw into situations of moral danger.

3. That the coöperation of religious zeal and individual benevolence is more advantageous to the State than mere government establishments.

4. That the parents or near relatives of young offenders should be compelled by law, if necessary, to contribute to the cost of their reformation.

Of the various institutions in England for reforming vicious children, the most prominent are Parkhurst, Red Hill, and Messrs. Baker and Bengough's school, at Hardwicke, in Gloucestershire.

This latter school is perhaps the best instance of the progress of juvenile reform in England. It was established, in 1852, by Mr. Baker, a country gentleman and magistrate of Gloucestershire, and Mr. George Bengough, a recent graduate of Oxford University. This school has selected the worst juvenile criminals, those who are the centers or heads of the evil, and, by Mr. Bengough's personal intercourse and influence with them, as a member of the same little family, has succeeded remarkably in transforming them into decent and useful members of society. After proving the power of the means used upon a first set of boys from London, Messrs. Baker and Bengough gathered in the worst boys they could find in Gloucestershire. So thorough a reformation has this single school worked, that whereas there were formerly, in Cheltenham alone, some twenty boys, under fourteen, who had been convicted more than twice, there were not known, in 1856, more than two boys in the whole of Gloucestershire, who had been convicted more than once. Boys have been sent from other counties to Hardwicke; and what is of much greater significance, county reform schools, more or less modeled after it, have been or are being erected in more than twenty of the counties of England.

A proper conclusion to this brief and insufficient enumeration, is the summary of reformatory institutions in Great Britain and Ireland, given in "The Philanthropist," for May, 1857. According to this, the whole number of such institutions is ninety-one, and of their inmates five thousand two hundred and seventy-six.

All these efforts, it is true, have made only a small impression upon the vast mass of pauperism which existed and yet exists in England. This is an actual nation by itself, almost as distinct, permanent, and self-propagating as a body politic; three and four generations together have often been seen to come up in a troop for their hereditary weekly portion to the overseer; and the family names of paupers stand on the parish books for a century together. Thus the great fountain of vice, beggary and crime remained untouched; and the efforts at reformatory action have hitherto only done good by advancing nearer and nearer this fountain, in healing the streams of evil which flow from it.

Still, the position and prospects of the English Reformatory cause is on the whole encouraging. To the large number of active institutions above mentioned, others are being added. Increasing numbers of the most intelligent and benevolent persons of influence are joining in the movement, and in the various other benevolent undertakings related to it. The Committee of Council on Education grants important pecuniary aid to such schools as come up to a given and attainable standard of excellence; and an increasing interest in all measures tending to ameliorate the condition of the poor, young or old, and to raise them to a position more suitable to a free and powerful nation, is rapidly pervading all classes of society.

## REFORMATORY MOVEMENT IN SCOTLAND.

---

SCOTLAND furnishes a valuable example of the reformatory and preservative power of a judicious system of common schools. About 1700, after half a century of oppression, there were, besides many actual paupers and wretchedly poor, two hundred thousand vagrant beggars, usually thieves and every way criminals. Yet, fifty years later, in 1757, there was not one capital conviction in the country; and, for a century afterward, paupers and criminals were but very few. This reformation and prevention has been almost altogether due to the Scotch system of parochial schools, which was commenced in 1494, was advocated by John Knox and his fellows in 1560, was extended in 1615 and 1633, and finally established upon an efficient footing by an act of parliament in 1696. Under this, each parish furnished a school-house, a house and garden for the schoolmaster, and paid him a fixed annual rate, besides which he received a fixed tuition fee from parents.

The masters were required to be of good character, members of the Scottish Kirk, and able to teach the "common English studies," some practical mathematics, Latin, and the rudiments of Greek. Their incomes were respectable, and their social position in many respects as high as the ministers; and in these schools the Scottish people, high and low together, have acquired very much of the sobriety, morals, information and shrewd and reflective habits, which have rendered their small nation so prosperous and influential in the realms both of matter and of mind.

The population and wealth of Scotland increased, however, and large masses gathered to the great manufacturing cities. But there was no corresponding increase in the number of parochial teachers at such points, nor did their incomes increase correspondingly with the general advance in expenses and expenditures. The consequence was of course a gradual mental and moral deterioration; and, in the end of the eighteenth century and the beginning of the next, a condition of popular ignorance and vice became apparent, which aroused public attention anew to the defects of existing educational means; and a series of strenuous private and public efforts was commenced for their improvement, which is even yet in progress; and, in pursuance of which, bills have been annually attempted to be carried through parliament, for the last three or four years, for re-organizing the parochial system.

The Society for propagating Christian Knowledge, founded in 1701, the Gaelic School Society, and various local school societies, have for a long time been more or less supplementary to the parochial system. Of the later series of efforts above referred to, are the Sabbath and Sessional schools, established at Edinburgh, in 1813, the Normal School, and then the three others which grew from the latter, the labors of the Glasgow Educational Society, the system of Assembly schools resulting from the same

exertions which established the Edinburgh Sessional School, the Aberdeen industrial schools, local industrial and reformatory schools at Edinburgh, Glasgow, Dundee, Ayr, &c., and church and state appropriations of more than \$100,000 a year.

The most systematic and successful enterprise of this class was instituted and carried out by William Watson, Sheriff-substitute of Aberdeenshire, who organized, in 1841, a system of industrial schools, which embraced in its operations all classes of idle vagrant children, and cleared a large town and county of juvenile criminals and beggars; thereby establishing an enviable reputation as a wise political economist, an efficient magistrate, and a practical benefactor of his country and race. His plan, which was developed gradually, embraced, first, gratuitous education. This succeeded only partially. He next held out three substantial meals a day, and four hours of useful, but self-imposed occupation. This was a stronger inducement; but all the vagrant children did not come. Then, under the police act, all street begging was prohibited, and all found begging were sent to the industrial school for food, instruction and work. And, to reform those who still gained their bread by thieving, a child's asylum was founded, to which these young criminals were sent to school, or to be taught useful knowledge and a trade, instead of a prison. By these various agencies, street vagrancy and juvenile crime has been annihilated. Some of the features of this system have been tried in nearly all the large towns in Great Britain, and with a success greater or less, as the plan adopted has embraced more or less of the Aberdeen system.

The success of Sheriff Watson's enterprise induced Rev. Thomas Guthrie to attempt a similar one in Edinburgh, the result of which has been the establishment, in 1847, of two "industrial feeding schools" there, one called the "Original," and the other, an off shoot from it, the "United Ragged School. The separation arose from a difference of opinion as to religious instruction; the "Original" being distinctively a Protestant school, while, at the "United," religious instruction is given separately to children of the Protestant and Catholic communions. Both, however, are doing good, substantially in the same field; although the size of the city has prevented the accomplishment of such a thorough cleansing from juvenile beggary and vice as has happened at Aberdeen.

Reformatory instruction in Scotland has received a decided impulse from the operation of an act known as Mr. Dunlop's act, passed in 1854, which empowers magistrates to commit children guilty of offenses, and vagrant children, to a proper reform school, for a definite term of years, and provides for the payment of the expenses of such children by the parents if able, otherwise by the parish. The recognition and enforcement, in this act, and in Lord Palmerston's similar act for England and Wales, of the duty of parents to provide for the support of their criminal children, constitute a very marked and valuable feature in the late reformatory operations of Great Britain, and one whose soundness is already proved by its good effects.

The following memoranda of visits to three Scotch reformatories, are copied from the *Irish Quarterly Review* for June, 1856.

## INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL, GLASGOW, (ROTTEN ROW.)

IN this school the great majority of the children are those sent thither by the magistrates, under Dunlop's act, for being in a state of destitution; the remainder are admitted from charity, for the same reason. All the children are fully fed, and those sent by the magistrates are lodged as well as fed: the diet is porridge and milk for breakfast and supper, and Scotch broth or pea-soup and bread for dinner. From the healthy and hearty appearance of the children, it would appear that the food is sufficient. The building of the institution, though old, is roomy and in a high, airy situation; and there is a play ground adjoining.

The master, Mr. Wilkie, kindly accompanied me over the establishment. The boys were employed in making paper bags for grocers, &c., and in picking cotton waste: they seemed to be working with spirit. The master informed me that there was no difficulty in obtaining work for them—that, indeed, twice as much work could be obtained as the children could do. The girls whom I saw were employed in sewing and knitting; and I learned that they do the house-work and make the clothes. Trades are not taught in this school. I was informed that it was not considered desirable to make shoemakers or tailors of the children, since the journeymen in those trades are generally in a low moral position.

The religious instruction consists of reading portions of the Scriptures; no catechism is used. A large part of the pupils have been the children of Irish Roman Catholic parents, yet hitherto the school has come into no collision with the Roman Catholic body. On Sunday the children attend public worship, the boys at a Free Church and the girls at an Established Church—an arrangement dictated by the convenience of accommodation.

One of the lady directresses, whom I found superintending in the girls' school, informed me that great pains are taken to find situations for the pupils when they are of an age to quit the institution. Factory work is objected to, as leaving the children too uncontrolled. It is thought undesirable also that the lads should be employed as errand boys, since they would be so much in the streets, and have unoccupied time on their hands. For the girls, domestic service is preferred, particularly in the families of working men or small tradespeople, it being found that the position of servants in gentlemen's families is too great a rise for them. The boys are chiefly apprenticed to trades, such as carpenters, smiths, &c.: a large number have been taken into ship-builders' yards, the owners of which are friends of the institution. A supervision over the pupils is kept up for some years after they leave the school; and when out of work they are, I believe, permitted to return to the school till they can obtain employment. One condition is made with the persons to whom the pupils are intrusted, viz., that they shall cause them to attend a Protestant place of worship. The children have generally turned out well, and some of them have risen to a respectable position.

## REFUGE FOR BOYS, (DUKE STREET, GLASGOW.)

This establishment is in an open, airy situation, on the east side of Glasgow; the building is large and roomy, though in a style of architecture of more pretension than is, perhaps, suitable to an institution of this character.

The boys have all been convicted of offenses, and are sent here to be detained for seven years, if necessary, for their reformation. I was informed, however, by Mr. McCallum, the superintendent, who kindly showed me the institution, that it is rarely necessary to keep a boy for more than four years. Many of the pupils



have been in prison. Mr. McCallum much prefers that they should be sent direct to the institution without having been in gaol. The pupils are taught trades, such as tailoring, shoemaking, carpentry, &c. The trades are taught by men who also, I believe, superintend their pupils at other times and sleep with them at night. These men are workmen thoroughly skilled in their crafts, and are paid full wages. The consequence is, that the pupils become really good workmen, and are able at once to gain a livelihood on leaving the institution. I saw some ladies' boots and shoes, which were very well made. The proceeds of the work, I was informed, pay the cost of the raw material, the wages of the teachers, and leave a surplus, which is devoted to the general expenses of the establishment. No part of the earnings is given to the pupils.

The lads were plainly but neatly dressed in the usual working garb of Scotland, and seemed to be well fed. The diet, I learned, was of the ordinary Scotch character, viz., porridge and milk for breakfast and supper, and barley broth or pea-soup with bread for dinner.

There is a steam-boiler which supplies steam for heating purposes, and also to an engine drawing a fanning apparatus which ventilates the house. This is intrusted to the care of two of the boys.

When I visited the institution, it being near the dinner hour, most of the boys were in the play-ground, which is spacious and airy: some of them were being instructed by a drill-sergeant in the sword exercise. Upon the ringing of the dinner-bell all who were in the play ground formed into columns at the word of command, and marched, in good order, into the dining-hall. The military discipline, Mr. McCallum informed me, is considered useful as accustoming the boys to prompt obedience, and saving much time in proceeding to work, meals, &c.

When the pupils leave the establishment, great pains are taken to provide them with situations at a distance from Glasgow. The majority emigrate to Canada. Many of the owners of vessels trading from Glasgow to that country take the lads out gratis, two in each ship. The institution furnishes them with an outfit, and a bag of biscuits toward their provisions; and they are expected to make themselves useful on board. On arriving in Canada, they are received by persons friendly to the institution, who procure them employment. Of those who do not emigrate, many are apprenticed to shoemakers and other artisans in the country, and some have gone into the army and navy.

It is calculated that 85 per cent. of the boys who leave this establishment ultimately turn out well. This, however, is upon the assumption that those whose career is unknown are going on aright; Mr. McCallum, however, believes that any who went wrong would be heard of. This success is probably in a great measure to be attributed to the removal of the pupils from Glasgow, which prevents their associating with their old connections.

There is also a refuge for girls in Glasgow, but I had not an opportunity of inspecting it.

The combined effect of these institutions, and the industrial schools, has been to reduce crime to a considerable extent. In the last year, though the price of provisions was high and trade not good, the number of prisoners in the jail of Glasgow was one hundred less than in the preceding year.

#### EDINBURGH UNITED INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL, (SOUTH GRAY'S CLOSE.)

This school is conducted in a large roomy old house in an inclosed court, formerly the dwelling of a nobleman. I arrived a short time before the dinner hour. I went through several rooms where the children were engaged in industrial



employment, particularly shoemaking and tailoring, while some of the younger ones were making paper bags and handboxes. I learned that the shoemakers and tailors were allowed a small portion of the proceeds of their labor, as a penny per pair for shoes, &c. Those who had attained to some skill had learners under them, (called apprentices,) some one, some two, and even three. The work done by the apprentices is placed to the credit of the boy-teacher. The boys working at trades were in different rooms, each under the care of a master. The children appeared to work with spirit.

The account of the industrial department, I find, shows a balance of loss; but, as the clothing consumed by the children themselves is not credited, the real loss, if any, will be trifling.

That a more favorable financial result is not obtained is to be attributed to the youth of the children, who leave the school so soon as they are deemed competent to fill private situations.

I went into the kitchen, which was very clean, and saw the dinner prepared. It consisted of Scotch broth, of a nourishing palatable description, with brown bread. The children breakfast and sup on porridge.

It was interesting to see them at dinner. They were placed at tables containing about 13 or 14 each. At the head of every table is an elder boy or girl, whose duty is to count the number at the table, and, if any are away, to account for their absence.

I did not happen to be present at the hour when religious instruction is imparted, but I learned that the clergy of each denomination attend and teach the children of their creeds in separate rooms. This plan, I understand, has met with perfect success. While it insures to the children a thorough religious training, experience shows that it is unaccompanied by any tendency to sectarian discord.

There are at present more than one hundred inmates in the school, of which about two-thirds are Roman Catholics. A large number of children have, at different times, left the school for various situations in which they have been placed, and have mostly turned out well.

The combined effect of this school, and of a larger one which has been for some time established on principles similar, except as respects the religious instruction, has been absolutely to annihilate juvenile mendicancy in Edinburgh, and very greatly to diminish the number of the youthful inmates of the jail.

Major Arthur Mair, of Edinburgh, one of the most active and earnest friends of these schools, thus writes:

"One principle is, I believe, peculiar to our school—it is equality of religious creeds. We have one hour, (10 to 11, A. M.,) appointed for religious instruction, when the different sects retire to separate rooms to receive their religious instruction, from the teachers of their own faith: for the remainder of the day they all work together, in the fear of God, and in the love of one another, at least this is our aim, and we believe our endeavor has been blessed. We are chiefly composed of Presbyterians, Episcopalians, and Roman Catholics. We have worked together now for eight years most unanimously, and the children who have left us in the course of that period have generally behaved well.

If you will carefully read the reports, I think you must come to the conclusion that we have done something to simplify the religious difficulty. From the very commencement, we have acted by one another in a true and honest spirit, and though we are always most happy to see the clergy of every denomination

coming amongst us, and taking an interest in our children, yet we have studiously avoided having any of them on our committee. The venerable old Bishop Carruthers is the only exception, and he was a man any school might have been proud of having at its head.

We have constantly on our platform at the general meetings clergy of every creed. We have frequently the clergy of the Church of England, the Presbyterians and the Catholics, instructing the children, of course in separate rooms, but at the same hour; daily from 10 to 11 o'clock. It is open to all, and I frequently pass during that hour from one to another, to see what is going on; *but mind, each department* is under the sole supervision of its own religious instruction committee, and *they*, by the constitution and rules of the school, can not be meddled with by any persons but members of their own church. For the *one hour* this distinction is made; we then join harmoniously together, and I am sure I never during the day think for a moment what is the creed of any particular child. We all acknowledge the same God, and there are general rules of guidance which can not give offense. One of our teachers is a Presbyterian, the other is a Catholic—our superintendent is of the Church of England—our pupil teachers are Catholic or Protestants as it happens, so are all the servants of the institution. I never think of asking to what sect they belong. We have a man to teach the shoemakers, I know he is a Catholic.

I do not know what the tailor is, or the turner, or the bookbinder, or the printer,—but I know we have never had a word of difference or of unkindness amongst the children or the teachers. May not we then hope that the blessing of heaven may rest upon our endeavors, and that we may be the honorable means of bringing up children, who through life will obey the great command, to love as brethren.

We also have a housekeeper and a woman under her. For some years the head-woman was a Catholic, but we found it very difficult to get a woman of the class we required, and so were driven to take a Protestant, but the under-woman is a Catholic. As far as I can judge, this school has been and is working on a true and faithful principle."

## REFORMATORY EDUCATION IN IRELAND.

---

As early as in the 7th century, English and Scotch students resorted to Ireland for education. From the 8th century to the 18th, says Bayle, Ireland was "the most civilized country in Europe, the nursery of the sciences." Besides the higher institutions of learning, there remain records of a system of conventual schools, with teachers employed expressly for instructing poor scholars gratis.

But instead of a system of parochial schools, assisted by the state and supervised by the local clergymen of the pupils' parents, which succeeded so well in Scotland and would have found a basis at least as good, in existing institutions in Ireland, the whole series of English legislation from the act of Henry VIII., in 1537, for establishing parochial schools, down to the latest of the modern educational associations, the Kildare-Place Society, dating from 1811, constituted a system of avowed attempts to make Englishmen and Protestants out of Irish Catholics. The act of 1537, which provided for parochial schools, bound the Catholic clergy, under oath and under penalty of a heavy fine, to keep "a school to learn English," if any pupils should offer. An act under Elizabeth, A. D., 1558, provided for diocesan schools, of a higher grade. During subsequent reigns various other statutes were enacted on the subject generally, showing some slight progress in liberality. But, although the Catholics were four-fifths at least of the whole population, yet this whole course of legislation prohibited them from endowing, managing or teaching schools, or even from educating their own children abroad; and the penalty for any Catholic acting as a schoolmaster, assistant schoolmaster, or private tutor, was transportation for the first offense, and the pains of high treason for the second.

Of the succession of Protestant associations which continued these efforts at a later day, the Society for promoting English Protestant schools in Ireland was the first. It was established in 1733, to take charge of the Charter schools, which Primate Boulter had set in operation two years before. The Association for Discountenancing Vice followed, in 1800, and lastly came the Kildare-Place Society, which was in active operation until about 1835. Altogether, these societies expended nearly seven millions of dollars of public money in their vain undertaking.

Wiser and more liberal efforts for an unsectarian education began to be made as early as 1806, when a commission was appointed to examine the condition of schools in Ireland. Another was appointed in 1824; and, after still further efforts during several years, the present Board of National Education in Ireland was appointed, and commenced its operations in 1831.

This body, composed of influential persons, both Catholic and Protestant, has labored with much wisdom and success. At the end of 1854,

the schools under its charge numbered 5,178, having more than a half a million of children on the rolls. These schools include 155 agricultural, and 142 work-house schools, besides various training schools, industrial schools, &c. The annual appropriation for the Board has increased from about £4,328 to about £200,000; and the influence of its labors is accomplishing a visible change in the moral and physical condition of Ireland. The system has lately been completed by the establishment of the Queen's colleges at Cork, Belfast, and Galway, which are based on similar principles, and offer a completed education without sectarian influence or tendency.

These "National Schools," although in fact both preventive and reformatory, are not technically so. Education expressly such, is not yet making progress in Ireland as rapidly as in England, although interest in it is increasing, and the need of it is, if possible, greater. The statistics of juvenile crime in Ireland are startling. In 1853, the number of offenders, aged not more than sixteen, arraigned in Ireland, was 15,600; of whom, were committed for trial, 12,238. And in 1854, of a total of 10,786 so arraigned, 7,640 were convicted. In Dublin alone, of a whole number of 240,248 persons taken into custody by the police, during the four years from 1849 to 1852, inclusive, 63,332, being over one-fifth, were less than twenty years of age.

To meet the moral and physical needs of such a class, both Protestants and Catholics have of late years made commendable exertions. The oldest Ragged School in Dublin is the Lurgan Street School, established in 1830, and to which a department for lodging and feeding boys was added in 1851. The Mill Street Ragged Schools were founded, in 1850, by Mr. Daniel Molloy. The Townsend Street Schools were opened in 1852. Among the ladies interested in these schools are the wives of Archbishop Whately, and of Hon. Thomas Lefroy, and others of the most influential families in Dublin. The pupils of these schools are employed as shoe-blacks, messengers, &c. The Ragged School Broomer and Messenger Society, organized 1852, procures for its scholars a somewhat higher grade of employment, and obtains good situations for them at graduation.

These are Protestant schools; and number in all about 200 "ragged" pupils. There were, however, in 1853, six Catholic schools, under charge of a committee of leading Catholics, with an aggregate attendance, including week-days and Sundays, of 2,730. The corresponding figure for the above Protestant schools is about 1,000; the number aided with food, lodging and clothing in the Catholic schools not being given. Mr. Connellan states the whole number of Ragged Schools in Dublin, 1853, at nine, with 664 pupils. Other similar schools have been added; among others, St. Joseph's Industrial School, and the Andean Free National School, excellently conducted by Mr. M'Gauran; both Catholic.

The example of Dublin is being followed in Cork and other Irish cities, but we are at present unable to give precise information of their progress or present condition.

## CHARACTERISTICS OF EUROPEAN REFORMATORIES.

---

In the movement for juvenile reform in Europe, some important principles of operation are perceptible. We shall here briefly state them.

1. Perhaps the most prominent of the points alluded to is, the Family Principle in organization. Of the modern reformatories, established to do a better work than the great centralized European orphan-houses and alms-houses, many receive only from ten to twenty children; a number not too great to allow family discipline and family influence. Larger establishments, as at Horn and Mettray, are sub-divided into family groups, under the charge of an "elder brother," or assistant of some grade. Under the influence of the benevolent and assiduous oversight of such guardians, these minor groups are pervaded with a spirit nearly approaching that of the natural family, and seem to afford the best possible substitute for the parental care of which the pupils are deprived.

2. Relations of these institutions to their originators and the supervising authority. The best of the European institutions have been first established upon a small scale, by one person, with the aid of a little society or of a few friends, or perhaps himself being sole originator, manager, teacher and pay-master; sometimes in his own private house. As the results of such labors become visible, his friends grow interested in it, and assist him with money or services; perhaps a few, or many, furnish funds sufficient to procure lands and buildings, and to provide some scanty salary for the officers. Now it is, and not before, that the appeal is made to the State; by showing that definite and important good is already done, and that moderate assistance will secure the safe and permanent continuance of the means of such good. In return for such aid, the State is invested with a supervisory power; and the reports of the institution are made to it, and to the public.

3. The motives and preparatory training of the teachers employed. In Europe, the student of juvenile reform is continually surprised at the almost missionary spirit which must operate in the various corps of assistants as well as superintendents at reformatories, to keep them where duty is so severe and wages so scanty. It is only a spirit of the most immediate, practical, home benevolence, looking to the benefit of the nearest and neediest, and influencing a class with whom, with us, such motives have too little weight, which calls out this class of laborers in the field of reform.

The pioneers in the modern reformatory enterprise, were mainly unprepared for their work by study or experience. But they almost immediately annexed to their institutions normal departments, varying in

character and distinctness, for the professional training of their assistants and successors. The members of these departments render important assistance in the daily conduct of the institution, and at the same time pursue a comprehensive course of study, thus obtaining extended and combined knowledge of the theory and practice of their profession.

4. The character and purpose of the industrial training given. Although some of these institutions prepare their pupils for trades, it is the object in most of them to train them for earning a living, as farmers, gardeners or nurserymen, and to accustom them to such a life; the country, and rural occupations, being regarded as the situation most favorable for the future morals and usefulness of the class of pupils trained in them. This also counteracts the existing tendency in the population to concentrate in and about the already overgrown European cities.

5. The extent to which women coöperate in the maintenance and carrying on of the institutions. The funds which support them are frequently wholly or partly gathered by a society of women, organized for the purpose; a force of female teachers is employed wherever the institution receives female pupils; and the system of "patronage" for the graduates is frequently in charge of a female patronage society. The women constituting these societies are pious, of great respectability, deeply interested in their work, and judicious and energetic in prosecuting it; and, in many instances, of high social position.

6. Contribution to the support of criminal children by their parents. Instead of permitting such parents,—usually themselves useless if not also criminal members of society,—to cast upon their more diligent and upright fellows all the care and expense of the children whom they have ruined, a custom is gaining ground of applying to such parents for a periodical payment in aid of their support. In England, Bavaria and Belgium such an application is sanctioned by law; and, in case of refusal, means of coercing a proper contribution are provided.

7. Economy. Notwithstanding that the average number of teachers and officers in the European reformatories is much larger than is usual in the United States, the average expense per pupil is surprisingly small. This is due, not only to the inexpensiveness of the buildings occupied, and smallness of the salaries paid, but to numerous economies secured by the judicious improvement of the labors of the pupils in farming, gardening, trades, &c., so that the institutions are, to a considerable degree, self-supporting.

8. A system of patronage, for continuing assistance and influence to the pupil after leaving the institution, until he is securely established, both in respect to occupation and morals. This department is under charge either of the officers of the institution or of a society organized for the special purpose, or both, and sometimes with State aid. Such societies consist either of men or women; and the help thus afforded to their beneficiaries is an important and indeed an indispensable appendix to the education of the school itself.

9. The distinctly preventive character of the movement generally. Not only do separate institutions exist, as well for the morally endangered as for the vicious only, but the best of the reformatories proper are, to a large extent, preventive in character. Orphans, neglected children, those already beginning to go astray, are received and cared for on the sound principle that prevention is better than cure, whether as to morals or money.

It may be added that nearly all the excellences above enumerated are directly or indirectly traceable to the extensive existence of personal, practical, active and painstaking charity among the individuals of European communities.

TABLE.—EXISTING THE DATE OF OPENING,—CAPACITY OF ACCOMMODATION,—NUMBER, AGE, DETENTION, REFORMATION, DEATHS, ESCAPES, AND EMPLOYMENT OF INMATES.—EXTENT OF GROUNDS.—AGGREGATE COST OF BUILDINGS AND GROUNDS.—NUMBER AND SALARIES OF OFFI- CERS.—ANNUAL EXPENSE AND COST PER CAPITA, OF THE STATE AND CITY REFORM SCHOOLS IN THE UNITED STATES.

TITLE.	LOCATION.		DATE.		Capacity of Accommodation.	Present No.			Whole No.			Average Age when Admitted.	Average Period of Detention.	Per Centage of Reformed.	Division of Time.				Acres of Land.	Annual Expenses.									
	City.	State.	When Established.	When Opened.		Males.	Females.	Total.	Males.	Females.	Total.				Since Opening.	Last 12 M'nths.	Since Opening.	Last 12 M'nths.		Hours of labor.	Hours of sleep.	Hours at school.	Hours at meals.	Hours of Recreation.	Aggregate Cost.	Annual Expenses.	Cost per Capita.	No. of Officers and Employees.	Aggregate Salaries.
House of Refuge, 3.	New York.	N. Y.	1834	1825	1000	496	51	547	3312	1097	7003	17	63	75	32	3	97	40	9	4	1	1	40	\$330,441	\$42,005	\$5.05	31	\$9,119	\$13,415
House of Reformation, 2.	Boston.	Mass.	1823	1823	140	158	159	1633	1633	1633	1633	12	16	70	3	3	3	5	9	4	1	3	6	\$75,000	\$14,230	\$5.00	3	\$1,200	\$1,500
House of Refuge, 4 (white day 2).	Philadelphia.	Penn.	1830	1828	432	181	63	244	3391	1173	4554	19	19	69	43	1	9	57	9	4	1	3	6	\$393,000	\$7,066	\$5.18	10	\$2,300	\$2,450
House of Refuge, 4 (colored day 4).	Philadelphia.	Penn.	1838	1830	184	91	32	123	305	305	591	13	18	70	14	1	9	7	9	4	1	1	1	11,019	\$1,019	\$7.41	16	\$3,096	\$3,406
House of Refuge, 2.	New Orleans.	La.	1841	1847	210	148	52	200	629	148	777	12	12	70	10	7	127	25	8	4	1	5	25,000	\$16,000	\$9.00	13	\$5,870	\$1,900	
State Reform School, 1.	Westborough.	Mass.	1847	1848	550	545	545	1900	..	..	1900	19	19	75	90	90	11	16	9	4	1	2	130	\$133,700	\$7,383	\$5.38	26	\$10,673	\$7,794
Western House of Refuge, 1.	Rochester.	N. Y.	1846	1848	375	330	330	838	838	838	13	14	75	10	8	10	14	9	4	1	1	48	\$110,000	\$30,000	\$6.00	22	\$13,345	\$12,000	
House of Refuge, 2.	Cincinnati.	Ohio.	1845	1850	504	191	37	328	874	362	1076	13	14	75	9	3	9	10	7	9	4	1	19	\$175,000	\$26,879	\$12.00	14	\$3,859	\$2,530
Reform School, 2.	Providence.	R. I.	1850	1850	160	99	44	143	393	87	479	14	14	75	3	1	9	5	7	4	1	3	100	\$40,000	\$15,045	\$9.10	14	\$2,559	\$2,530
State Reform School, 1.	Cape Elizabeth.	Maine	1850	1853	240	308	308	771	771	771	13	13	75	10	10	9	5	7	4	1	1	3	100	\$92,000	\$24,001	\$9.10	16	\$4,832	\$2,606
House of Refuge of West. Penn., 1.	Pittsburgh.	Penn.	1851	1854	322	141	51	192	218	96	314	13	13	75	1	1	4	1	9	4	1	3	150	\$107,237	\$13,500	\$15.00	16	\$6,190	\$4,903
State Reform School, 1.	St. Louis.	Mo.	1853	1854	140	87	34	121	307	96	403	13	13	75	2	2	10	9	6	4	1	40	\$94,380	\$14,273	\$119.00	14	\$4,032	\$1,435	
House of Refuge, 2.	Chicago.	Illinois	1853	1853	100	67	..	67	104	1	105	18	18	75	2	2	10	10	6	4	1	25	55	\$151,487	\$17,611	\$100.00	12	\$3,578	..
House of Refuge, 5.	Baltimore.	Md.	1849	1855	300	125	83	148	147	26	185	19	19	75	3	3	3	3	8	9	4	1	100	\$50,000	\$12,000	\$55.00	10	\$3,300	..
State Industrial School for Girls, 1	Lancaster.	Mass.	1855	1856	300	76	76	152	78	78	156	11	11	75	4	4	3	3	7	4	1	9	40,000	\$8,500	\$65.00	10	\$2,000	..	
Asylum and Farm School, 3	Boston.	Mass.	1853	1853	100	100	100	301	301	301	11	11	75	4	4	3	3	7	4	1	1	9	40,000	\$8,500	\$65.00	10	\$2,000	..	

(1.) Established and managed by officers appointed by the State. (2.) Do., by the City. (3.) Do., by Corporations. (4.) Do., by union of State, City and Corporations. The Total Cost of Land and Buildings exceeds \$2,000,000, of which sum about \$200,000 was paid by individuals. Annual Expenses, in 1856, was \$320,954; of which sum, (a.) was paid by State and City; (b.) by City; (c.) by income of permanent funds; (d.) by annual donations, or by union of (a. b. c.)



## PUBLICATIONS ON REFORMATORY EDUCATION AND INSTITUTIONS.

---

### I. EUROPEAN.

**COLONIES AGRICOLES, ECOLES RURALES, ET ECOLES DE REFORME**, pour les indigents, les mendiants et les vagabonds, et spécialement pour les enfants des deux sexes, en Suisse, en Allemagne, en France, en Angleterre, dans les Pays-Bas et en Belgique. Rapport adressé à M. Tesch, ministre de la justice, par Ed. Ducpetiaux . . . Bruxelles, 1851. 4o. 2 cols. pp. 208. (Agricultural colonies, and rural schools and reform schools, for paupers, mendicants and vagrants, and especially for children of both sexes, in Switzerland, Germany, France, England, the Netherlands and Belgium. A report to M. Tesch, minister of justice. By Ed. Ducpetiaux. Brussels, 1851.)

This exceedingly clear, condensed and full document, gives (in French) details and statistics, narrative and tabulated, of origin, management, organization, expense, and mental, moral and religious training and discipline, fuller in proportion to the importance of the institution, and especially complete and interesting upon the great schools of Mettray and Ruysselede.

Besides these two, more or less account is given of sixty-four other institutions, being all those of importance in Western Europe, and including as well orphan houses and other preventive and repressive institutions, as reformatories proper.

The report contains also plans and elevations of the buildings at Ruysselede, Mettray, and the Rauhe Haus, and a valuable report to the government of Belgium, embodying a plan of organization for farm-almshouses for adult beggars.

It has also short summaries of the history of juvenile reform in the countries of which it treats, and a terse and able summary of the author's own views upon reformatory institutions, as deduced from the extensive array of facts included in his investigations.

**FLIEGENDE BLÄTTER** aus dem Rauhen Hause zu Horn bei Hamburg. Mittheilungen über freie Vereine, Anstalten u. s. w. Herausgegeben von Dr. Wichern . . . (Flying Leaves from the Rauhe Haus at Horn near Hamburg. Containing information upon free churches, institutions, &c. Ed. by Dr. Wichern.) Monthly. 12o., pp. 36 each.

This is the organ, not only of the Rauhe Haus itself, but of that whole religious and reformatory movement in Germany, known as the Inner Mission. It includes reports of the proceedings of the agents of this movement and of the various churches and institutions connected with it, and of the progress and condition of the Rauhe Haus itself. At the printing and publishing office established at the Rauhe Haus, a large number of works for the young and for adults, conforming to the views of the Inner Mission, ethical, biographical and entertaining, have been issued; of which lists are from time to time given in the advertising pages of the *Fliegende Blätter*.

**SOCIÉTÉ PATERNELLE**. Fondation d'une colonie agricole de jeunes détenues à Mettray . . . Paris . . . B. Duprat . . . 1839. (Paternal Society. Foundation of an agricultural colony for young detainees, at Mettray. Paris: B. Duprat. 1839. 8o., pp. 112.

**RAPPORTS DES DIRECTEURS DE LA COLONIE AGRICOLE DE METTRAY**. (Reports of the directors of Mettray to the founders.) 12o.

This account of the foundation of Mettray, with its annual reports, forms a series of annual pamphlets from 1839, and yet continued. They include full and interesting accounts of the progress of Mettray, with anecdotes, documents, &c., and various engravings. Among others, is the head of Vicomte Bretigneres de Courteilles, one of the original founders of Mettray, now deceased.

**ANNALES DE LA CHARITE.** Revue mensuelle destinee a la discussion des questions et a l'examen des institutions qui interessent les pauvres. Journal de la societe d'economie charitable. . . . Paris. A. Le Clere et Ce. (Annals of Charity. A monthly review for the discussion and examination of questions and institutions relative to the poor. Journal of the Economical Charitable Society. Paris: A. Le Clere & Co.) 80., pp. about 800 a year.

This monthly now forms thirteen handsome volumes, from 1845 to 1857 inclusive; and contains a large mass of information relative to the ancient and modern history, and present condition and progress, of institutions of all classes, intended for the succor and reform of the poor and unfortunate; including not only reformatories proper, but hospitals, charity schools, benevolent societies, &c.

**THE IRISH QUARTERLY REVIEW.** Dublin: W. B. Kelly. London: Simpkins, Marshall & Co. Price 2s. 6d. per number.

Appended to each number of this ably conducted Quarterly from June, (No. XIV.) 1854, there is a "*Quarterly Record of the Progress of Reformatory Schools and Prison Discipline*"—averaging at least 100 closely printed pages, and containing reports of Institutions, accounts of public meetings in reference to Juvenile Crime and its prevention and reformation, and the ablest papers which have appeared from the British press on the subject. The series constitutes a Documentary History of the Reformatory Movement in Great Britain since 1854. In them will be found a particular account of the Mettray Institution, and of the movements of M. Demetz.

**THE PHILANTHROPIST and Prison and Reformatory Gazette;** London: Published at the Book Society, 19 Paternoster Row. 5s. per annum.

This Monthly Journal is a valuable Record of Social Amelioration and of Charitable Institutions in Great Britain. It is now the organ of the National Reformatory and Refuge Union, of which the Earl of Shaftesbury is President. The number for February, 1857, contains the "Prize Essays on the Practical Management of Reformatories and Refuges, with respect to Food, Labor and Rest."

**REPORT FROM SELECT COMMITTEE [OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS,]** on criminal and destitute juveniles; together with the proceedings of the committee, minutes of evidence, appendix and index. . . . December, 1852. Fol., pp. 551.

Do. June, 1853. Fol., pp. 542.

These two solid reports contain evidence, oral and documentary, furnished to the respective committees of the English House of Commons, by Rev. S. Turner, Miss Carpenter and other leading philanthropists, relating to all questions of theory and practice in juvenile misery and crime, and their prevention and reform; a great mine of authoritative materials, from which have been gathered the substance of numerous publications upon the subjects discussed. Among the documents in the appendixes to these reports are, extracts from many reports on prisons, &c., of chaplains and inspectors; narratives of individual juvenile offenders; rules and regulations of Parkhurst and other institutions; Recorder Hill's charges to the Birmingham grand jury; Mr. Fletcher's paper on the Continental Farm-School system; Rev. S. Turner's report on the organization of Mettray; report of the French National Assembly's committee on juvenile offenders; many documents relating to Philadelphia House of Refuge, &c.

**FIRST CONFERENCE on Reformatory Schools at Birmingham. 1851.**

**SECOND CONFERENCE, do., 1853.**

The proceedings of the First Conference at Birmingham, were of unusual interest, and had a powerful influence in stimulating the action of Parliament and the efforts of benevolent individuals in different sections of England. The most valuable statistics and suggestions contained in the Report and the Proceedings, will be found in "*Barnard's Papers on Reformatory Education and Institutions.*"

**FIRST PROVINCIAL MEETING OF THE NATIONAL REFORMATORY UNION, held at Bristol in August, 1856. London. Cash. 172 pages.**

This pamphlet includes a very valuable "Inaugural Address," by Lord Stanley, and Papers on "*the Reformatory Institutions in and near Bristol,*" and on the *Relations of the Reformatory Schools to the State*, and the management of Female Reformatories by Mary Carpenter; on *Inefficiency of simply Penal Legislation*, by Lord Brougham; on "*Punishments in Reformatory Schools,*" by E. B. Wheatley; a "Visit to Mettray," by Frederick Hill; "*the Industrial Schools of Scotland, and the working of Dunlop's Act,*" by Alfred Hill; "on the *Connection of Juvenile Crime and the Drinking Habits of Society,*" by B. Crossman; on "*Ship Reformatory and the Liverpool Akbar Hulk Reformatory;*" on "*Providing for the inmates of Reformatories on their discharge,*" by Rev. Sydney Turner, and "*on Previous Imprisonment for Children sentenced to Reformatories,*" by Sir Stafford Northcote.

**SOCIAL EVILS; their Causes and their Cure. By Alexander Thomson, Esq., of Banchoory. London: James Nisbet & Co. 1852. 16s., pp. 176.**

This little volume contains a clear exposition of the principles on which the Aberdeen Reformatory Movement was conducted, and the details of the successful management of the Industrial Feeding Schools.

**THE PHILOSOPHY OF RAGGED SCHOOLS. London: William Pickering. 1851. 16s., pp. 128.**

**MELIORA: or Essays on the present state and prospects of Society. Edited by Viscount Ingestre. 2 vols. London: J. W. Parker.**

These volumes embrace forty contributions by the active promoters of preventive and reformatory institutions and agencies in England—such as Model Lodging Houses; Public Baths; Ragged Schools; Adult Education; Popular Amusements, &c.

**JUVENILE DELINQUENTS, their condition and treatment. By Mary Carpenter. London: W. & F. G. Cash. 1853. 12s., pp. 388.**

**REFORMATORY SCHOOLS, for the children of the perishing and dangerous classes, and for juvenile offenders. By Mary Carpenter. London: C. Gilpin. 1851. 12s., pp. 353.**

These two volumes contain a calm, comprehensive and practical discussion and presentation of the history, principles and details of Reformatory Education and Institutions.

**TWO PRIZE ESSAYS on Juvenile Delinquency. By Micaiah Hill, Esq. and C. Cornwallis. London: Smith, Elder & Co. 1853. 12s., pp. 431.**

**JUVENILE DEPRAVITY, £100 Prize Essay. By Rev. Henry Worsley. London: Charles Gilpin. 1849. 12s., pp. 275.**

**CRIME IN ENGLAND, its relation, character, and extent, as developed from 1801 to 1848. By Thomas Plint. London: Charles Gilpin. 1851. 12s., pp. 187.**

**CHARGES TO THE GRAND JURY of the Borough of Birmingham. By M. D. Hill, Recorder. 1857.**

**PUNISHMENT AND PREVENTION.** By A. Thomson, of Banchory. 1857.

**CRIME.** By Frederick Hill. Murray. 1858.

**VISIT TO METTRAY.** By T. Paynter and Rev. S. Turner. 1845.

**THE FARM SCHOOL SYSTEM OF THE CONTINENT.** By Joseph Fletcher.

**REFORMATORY SCHOOLS IN FRANCE AND ENGLAND.** By P. J. Murray. 1854.

**VISIT TO CONTINENTAL REFORMATORIES.** By R. Hall. 1855.

**VISIT TO METTRAY.** By Lord Leigh. 1856.

**EDINBURGH REVIEW.** Nos. 204, 206.

**LAW REVIEW.** Nov. 1850. Feb. 1855. Feb. 1856.

**QUARTERLY REVIEW.** Nos. 194, 195.

**NORTH BRITISH REVIEW.** Nos. 48.

**ECLECTIC REVIEW.** Dec. 1848.

**REPORT ON SCHOOLS IN WORKHOUSES AND PRISONS, in Ireland, 1853.** By J. W. Kavanagh.

**PAPERS, PAMPHLETS, AND SPEECHES on Reformatories and Juvenile Crime.**  
Edited by J. Symons, 1855.

**CRIME AND CRIMINAL OFFENDERS.** By S. Richardson. Jarold.

**PRISON DISCIPLINE.** By John Field.

**CRIMINAL LEGISLATION.** By George Combe.

**Annual Reports of the**

“ **PRESTON HOUSE OF REFUGE.** By Rev. John Clay.

“ **DURHAM REFUGE of Discharged Prisoners.**

“ **IRISH REFUGE of Discharged Prisoners.**

“ **RED LODGE REFORMATORY, for Girls, at Bristol**

“ **KINGSWORD REFORMATORY, for Boys.**

“ **HARDWICK REFORMATORY, near Cheltenham.**

“ **RED HILL FARM SCHOOL.**

“ **EDINBURGH INDUSTRIAL SCHOOLS.**

“ **ABERDEEN FEEDING SCHOOLS**

“ **AKBAR SHIP REFORMATORY, Liverpool.**

“ **FINCHLEY INDUSTRIAL SCHOOLS.**

**A PLEA FOR RAGGED SCHOOLS ; First, Second, and Supplementary.** By Rev Thomas Guthrie. Edinburgh.

**RAGGED SCHOOLS ; their Rise, Progress and Results.** By John Macgregor. S. Lowe & Son.

**A PRIZE ESSAY ON RAGGED SCHOOLS and similar Institutions.** By G. I. Hall. 255 pages. 1855.

**THE ROOKERIES OF LONDON, Past, Present and Future.** By Thomas Beames. Bosworth. 1850.

**PUBLIC BATHS AND WASH-HOUSES.** Rivington. 1850.

**A PLEA FOR INDUSTRIAL SCHOOLS and Improved Dwellings for the Poor, as the best means for decreasing Juvenile Crime.** London : Masters. 149 pages.

**SCHOOL ECONOMY : or, Mental and Industrial Training.** By Jellinger Simons J. W. Parker. 188 pages.

[Most of the above, with other valuable documents, will be found entire in the Record of the Irish Quarterly Review, and in the pages of the Philanthropist, and the substance of many of them is included in “*Barnard's Papers on Preventive and Reformatory Institutions and Agencies.*” F. C. Brownell: Hartford. 1857.]

- Beuggen, 71.  
 Carra, 76.  
 Cernay, 267.  
 Dusselthal, 72.  
 Hardwicks, 331.  
 Hofwyl, 55, 147.  
 Horn, 109.  
 Krutalingen, 61.  
 Mettray, 20, 167, 216.  
 Petit-Bourg, 249.  
 Petit-Quevilly, 259.  
 Birmingham conferences on, 307.  
 Rev. S. Turner on, 297, 314.  
 Allier, M., director at Petit-Bourg, 250.  
 Allonville, M. de Rainneville's school at, 224.  
 Amusements, 22, 74, 124, 241, 288.  
 Antecedents of inmates, 213, 299, 315, 365.  
 Apprenticing, 24, 122, 214, 337.  
 Assistants, 115, 183, 210, 234, 253.  
 Association of prisoners, 313, 326.  
 Auxiliary school, 279.  
 Augustus, M., agric. sup't at Mettray, 189, 191.  
 Bachtelen, reform school at, 69.  
 Baker, T. B. L., and Hardwicks school, 331.  
 Baltimore, house of refuge, 354.  
 Barnard, H., report on supplm. agencies, 6.  
 Basin, founder of school at Masnil St. Firmin, 143.  
 Barol, Madame, 104.  
 Begging, 324, 347.  
 Beguines, 33.  
 Beernem, Rob't Hall's visit to, 232.  
 Belgium, 24, 151, 261.  
 Bengough, George, and Hardwicks school, 331.  
 Berenger de la Drome, M., 149.  
 Bervanger, M. de, charitable labors of, 237.  
 Beuggen, seminary at, 71.  
 Bessancon, M., 207.  
 Birmingham, reform conferences at, 307, 357.  
 Bishop, Rev. F., on Liverpool training school, 320.  
 Blanc, M. le, director at Gallon, 245.  
 Blochmann, Dr. C. J., his life of Pestalozzi, 23.  
 Bouet, M., 207.  
 Bosch, General van den, 147.  
 Boston Asylum and Farm School, 354.  
 Bristol, Red Lodge reform school at, 336.  
 Brothers' Institute, Raube Haus, 19, 126.  
 Brougham, Lord, on juvenile reform, 153, 196.  
 Brenton, E. P., 341.  
 Buildings, 21, 189, 249, 263, 296, 323, 331.  
 Burdorf, Pestalozzi's school at, 46.  
 Children's Aid or Friend Society  
 Christmas festival, 124, 125.  
 City boys, peculiarities of, 211.  
 Cincinnati Reform School, 354.  
 Clay, Rev. John, on juvenile of  
 Classification, 152, 223, 250, 293.  
 Commencement, 333, 334.  
 Compulsory payments by parents  
 Conditional pardons, 151.  
 Confidence in well doing, 326.  
 Confinement, solitary, 177, 213.  
 Convicts, 306.  
 Correctional discipline, 156, 311.  
 Correspondence with discharge  
 Cost, total, 225, 242, 255, 278.  
 " for salaries, 70, 216, 250.  
 " per capita, European, 71  
 242, 255, 279, 311, 325, 1  
 " per capita, American, 254.  
 Country boys, 323, 333.  
 Courts, in aid of discipline, 192.  
 Coleman, Mr., account of Mettray  
 Conferences on reform schools,  
 Connecticut State Reform School  
 Contents, 7.  
 Cornu, M., on young detainees.  
 Courteilles, Vicomte de, 20, 154.  
 Cousin, on Rotterdam reform school  
 Crime, cost of, 312, 316, 317, 321.  
 Dangerous Classes, 306, 321.  
 Daily routine, 116, 123, 220, 224.  
 Deaths, 220.  
 Detention, period of, 153.  
 Detainees in French law, 155, 2.  
 Detaellan, M., 195.  
 Demetz, and Mettray, 20, 167.  
 on agricultural colonies, 147.  
 on Raube Haus, 153.  
 Diaconissenanstalt, Kaiserwerth  
 Diesterweg, Dr. A., biog. of Pestalozzi,  
 Diet, 223, 233, 245, 283, 292.  
 Discharged inmates, 30.  
 Distribution of new comers, 134.  
 Dormitory, 220, 247, 249.  
 Dress, 222, 233, 265, 329.  
 Drouin G., and Institute of Char.  
 Ducrestaux, M. Achille, school at  
 Ducrestaux, on agric. ref. school  
 report on Bachtelen, 69.

- Establishment of St. Nicholas, 237, 243.  
 Escapes, 116, 184, 175.  
 European institutions, 351.  
 Expense, *see* cost.  
 Expulsion, 253.  
 Family principle, 47, 122, 153, 213, 220, 355, 351.  
 Faucher, Leon, 151, 152.  
 Family tie, how strengthened, 116, 203, 214.  
 Farms, outlying, 223, 233, 263, 298.  
 Farm labor, 71, 129, 148, 173, 191, 195, 275, 297.  
 Festivals, 118, 124.  
 Fellenberg, M. de, and Hofwyl, 55.  
 Female reform school, 101, 252, 327.  
 Female delinquents, 303, 320.  
 Fessiaux, M. l' Abbe, 148.  
 Fines, 338.  
 Fire brigade at Mettray, 214.  
 Fliedner, Rev. Thomas, and Kaiserswerth, 81.  
 Fliegende Blatter, (Flying Leaves,) 123.  
 Food, *see* diet.  
 Foremen, school of, 22, 168.  
 Free day school, 307.  
 France, reform agric. colonies in, 20, 147.  
 Freres Chretiens, 135.  
 Gaillon, Central Prison at, 244.  
 Garance, M. Aubanel's school at, 147.  
 Gasparin, Comte de, 167, 148, 171.  
 Garden labor, 129, 249.  
 Gaols, bad system of, 319.  
 Germany, ancient schools in, 38.  
     modern schools in, 40.  
 Giraud, M., 180.  
 Girls, reformatories for, 103, 104, 327, 354.  
 Gladstone, Hon. Mr., 300.  
 Glasgow, industrial schools at, 345.  
 Government aid to voluntary efforts, 231, 251.  
 Government institutions, 244, 254, 315, 277.  
 Hall, Robert, 244, 232, 238.  
 Hardwicke agricultural reform school, 331, 342.  
 Haskins, Rev. G. F., 23, 243.  
 Heathen charities, 11.  
 Hale, Sir Mathew, 339.  
 Health, 174, 202, 212, 245, 267.  
 Hill, M., M. D., on Mettray, 229, 308, 310.  
 Holidays, 297.  
 Home feeling, 124, 149, 324, 214.  
 Honor, feeling of, 181, 234.  
 Howard, 101.  
 Hofwyl, Fellenberg's school at, 55, 147.  
 Holland, reform education in, 151, 293.  
 Hospitals, Mrs. Jameson, on women in, 91.  
 Hubert, M., 193.  
 Ignorance, 321, 322.  
 Industrial Feeding Schools, 323, 344.  
 Infidelity, 338.  
 Infirmary, 228, 267.  
 Instruction, 71, 121, 131, 171, 178, 235, 239, 270.  
 Intractable children, 155, 212.  
 Industrial Training, 129, 329.  
 Inner mission, 108.  
 Ireland, educational reform movement in, 349.  
 Irish Quarterly Review, 161, 167, 314, 355.  
 Jameson, Mrs., on woman's social place, 89.  
 Jews, charity of, 11.  
 Juvenile criminals, French laws on, 149.  
 Juvenile offenders, 291, 292, 307, 318, 321, 322.  
 Jury of boys, 23, 258.  
 Kavenagh, I., 358.  
 Kaiserswerth institution, 81.  
 Kay, Dr., account of Vehrli, 66.  
 Krutzlingen Normal School, 61.  
 Kuratli, M., director at Bachtelen, 69, 146.  
 Lamarque, M., on patronage societies, 149.  
 La Roquette, prison; patronage societies, 255.  
 La Grand Trappe, 231.  
 Land, 151.  
 Legras, Madame, 95.  
 Le Blanc, director at Gaillon, 245.  
 Lecomte, director at Petit-Quevilly, 259.  
 Leigh, Lord, visit to Mettray, 231.  
 Liverpool, juvenile crime in, 318, 320.  
 London, juvenile crime in, 321.  
 Locke, John, 339.  
 Lucas, Mr., inspector general of prisons, 149.  
 Lying, 114, 338.  
 Management, 329, 332.  
 Mann, H., 130.  
 Maryland House of Refuge, 354.  
 Maine State Reform School, 354.  
 Marseilles, agric. establishment at, 148.  
 Massachusetts State Reform School, boys', 354.  
     " " " " girls', 354.  
 Mesnil St. Firmin, agricultural colony at, 148.  
 Mellora, or Essays on Social Reform, 357.  
 Mettray, agricultural colony of, 148.  
     De Metz' account of, 147, 160.  
     anecdotes of, 159, 160, 174, 178, 182, 193, 203.  
     history of, 20, 167.  
     Ducpetiaux' account of, 21.  
     statistics of, 217.  
     organization of, 220.  
     regulations of, 226.  
     Mr. Hill's account of, 229.  
     Mr. Coleman on, 230.  
     Lord Leigh's visit to, 231.  
     London Times on, 235.  
     letter from boys of, to Red Hill boys, 300.  
     discipline of, 175, 222.  
     results of, 181, 187, 190, 192, 197, 201, 209, 213.  
     agricultural department, 204.  
     family spirit, 213.  
 Military discipline, 290, 260.  
 Motives, 133, 181, 207, 314, 234, 276.  
 Music, 131, 183, 239, 270, 284.  
 Name of institution, 113.  
 New comers, 22, 133.  
 Netherlands Society of Beneficence, 147.  
 Neuhoft, Pestalozzi's school at, 33, 148.  
 Neudorf, reformatory for girls, 101.  
 New Orleans, reform school at, 354.  
 New York City, House of Refuge, 354.  
     " " State Western House of Refuge, 354.  
 Nightingale, Florence, 87, 91.  
 North British Review, 358.  
 Normal school, 58, 145, 201.  
 Norris, Rev. J. P., on Ruysselede, 289.  
 Officers, 121, 186, 217, 250, 266, 281, 311, 233.  
 Orphans and their Asylums, 14, 26, 71, 74, 82, 313.  
 Osborne, Rev. W. C., on juvenile offenders, 312.  
 Ourches, Count Leon d', gift to Mettray, 174, 186.  
 Oxenstiern, 155.  
 Parental payments, 333, 334, 315, 320.  
 Papa John's Asylum, 31.  
 Parliamentary reports, 356.  
 Parkhurst prison, 303.  
 Patronage, administrative, 164.  
 Patronage Soc., 72, 149, 161, 163, 197, 211, 333.  
 Personal influence, 216, 300.  
 Pennsylvania Western House of Refuge, 354.  
 Petit-Quevilly, Ducpetiaux, on school at, 259.  
 Pestalozzi, educ. efforts of, for the poor, 33, 146.  
     life of, by Blochmann, 84.  
     influence of, on popular schools, 38.  
     biography of, sketch by Diesterweg, 38.  
     influence of, on European schools, 44.  
     personal character of, its influence, 53.  
     centennial birth-day of, 54.  
 Petit-Bourg, agric. school at, 249.  
 Philanthropist, 356.  
 Physical training, 121, 269.  
 Philadelphia House of Refuge, 354.  
 Philanthropic soc. for prevention of crime, 295.  
 Pol, M., director at Ruysselede, 282.  
 Poor-laws, English, 339.  
 Pounds, John, 340.

- Powell, H. T., on Stretton-on-Dunsmore, 325.  
 Preventive and reformatory education, 5.  
 Prisons, women as nurses and officers in, 101.  
 Providence Reform School, 854.  
 Preliminary punishment, 235, 299, 303, 283.  
 Profits of labor, 182.  
 Provisional freedom, 151, 306.  
 Printing, 127.  
 Prisons and Schools, 234.  
 Punishment, 176, 192, 223, 241, 247, 253, 259, 272, 286, 336.  
 Quarterly Review, 358.  
 Ragged Schools, 321.  
 Raikes, Robert, Sunday Schools begun by, 340.  
 Raube Haus at Horn, account of, 18, 107, 112.  
     why so named, 113.  
     details of progress of since 1835, 114.  
     Sundays and holidays at, 117.  
     results of, 118.  
     Miss Carpenter on, 121.  
     origin of, 112, 118.  
     M. Ducpetiaux on, 121.  
     view of, 109.  
     plan of, 111.  
     finances of, 128.  
     Prof. Stowe on, 129.  
     Hon. Horace Mann on, 152.  
 Recke, von der, 79.  
 Redhill reform school, 295, 298.  
 Red Lodge reform school Bristol, 327.  
 Reform conferences at Birmingham, 307.  
 Reform institutions in the U. S., table of, 354.  
 Reform school, first, 14.  
 Reform schools, agricultural, 15.  
 Reformatory education, England, 339.  
     in Scotland, 343.  
     Ireland, 349.  
     the U. S., 353.  
     works on, list of, 357.  
 Reformatory experience, European, 351.  
 Religion, influence of at Ruysselede, 255.  
 Reports on conduct of graduates of Mettray, 198.  
 Register, 233.  
 Religious difficulty, 347.  
 Religious instruction, 170, 202, 231, 243, 251, 258, 271, 285, 329, 335, 348.  
 Results, 122, 258, 290, 287, 305, 309, 310, 325, 331, 334, 346.  
 Rewards, 23, 181, 223, 253, 259, 272, 336.  
 Rome, pagan, charity of, 11.  
     her earliest reform school, 14.  
     list of charitable institutions in, 26.  
     San Michele at, 14, 24.  
     Tata Giovanni's juvenile asylum at, 31.  
 Rotterdam, school for juvenile criminals at, 293.  
 Ruysselede, Ducpetiaux, report on, 251.  
     origin and organization of, 252.  
     internal arrangements of, 254.  
     order of exercises at, 258.  
     discipline of, 272.  
     statistics of, 276, 292.  
     financial results of, 278.  
     results of, 280.  
     Robert Hall's visit to, 282.  
     Rev. J. P. Morris' visit to, 289.
- Rural  
 Salle,  
 Salari  
 Salvar  
 School  
 School  
 Scotia  
 Sexes,  
 Short  
 Ship d  
 Shu'tl  
 Sisters  
 Small  
 Soldier  
 Societa  
 St. Ma  
 St. Vi  
 St. Jol  
 St. Nic  
 St. Yo  
 Stans,  
 Stratic  
 Sunda  
 Sunda  
 Superi  
 Switze  
 Tablet  
 Tata G  
 Teache  
 Thieva  
 Thoms  
 Traini  
 Trogen  
 Trades  
 Trial, f  
 Turin.  
 Turner  
 expe  
     on a  
 Vagran  
 Veenbi  
 Vehrli.  
 Verdie  
 Visitor  
 Volunt  
     251  
 Von Th  
 Volmer  
 Von Al  
 Walls,  
 Watson  
 Weekly  
 Westho  
 Whippi  
 Wicher  
 Wirtem  
 Women  
 Woodbi  
 Yverdu  
 Zeller, 1  
 Zeller, 2  
 Zellweg  
 Zweifel,

Published by F. C. Brownell; Hartford. Price \$.



# INDEX TO VOLUME III

OF

## BARNARD'S AMERICAN JOURNAL OF EDUCATION.

- ABERDEEN**, reform school at, 780, 802.  
**Academy of Music**, 227.  
**Adams**, Serjeant, on Parkhurst prison, 20.  
**Adrian**, Emperor, charities of, 564.  
**Agriculture**, benefit of at Mettray, 682.  
**Agricultural labor** in ref. est., 673, 725, 755.  
**Agricultural brothers of St. Vincent de Paul**, 575.  
**Agricultural laborers**, English, ill situated, 258.  
**Agricultural reform school at Bachtelen**, 597.  
     Beerneem, 648.  
     Gaillon, 744.  
     Horn, 5, 603.  
     Mettray, 667—768.  
     Petit-Bourg, 653.  
     Petit-Quevilly, 749.  
     Red Hill, 753.  
     Ruyselede, 622.  
**Akerly**, Dr. Samuel, 318.  
**Alabamian**, on an American university, 213.  
**Alphabet**, errors in teaching, 327.  
**American Asso. for Adv. of Science**, 147, 150, 151.  
**American Institute of Instruction**, 125.  
**American polity rests on universal education**, 92.  
**American Journal of Education**, (Russell's,) 140.  
     " " " (Barnard's,) 825.  
**American Journal of Science**, 148.  
**American University**, difficulties of, 214.  
**Amusements**, active, for scholars, 42.  
     in reformatories, 241, 574, 755.  
**Analogy** the medium of expression, 53.  
**Anecdotes**, value of in moral instruction, 76.  
**Anglo-Saxon element**, 102.  
**Annals de la Charite**, 812.  
**Antoninus Pius**, girls educated by in charity, 564.  
**Antonius**, M. Aurelius, charities of, 564.  
**Apparatus**, much not needed in teaching, 253.  
**Apprentices** entitled to education, 99.  
**Archery**, 39.  
**Aristotle**, 45.  
**Art** as branch of education, 467.  
**Artists**, will not instruct, 468.  
**Ascham**, Roger, biography of, 23.  
     methods of study, 24.  
     uses of teaching, 25.  
     penmanship, 26.  
     vocal music, 27.  
     instructor of Queen Elizabeth, 28.  
     marriage, 34.  
**Association of American geologists**, 147.  
**Attendance at school**, how enforced, 82.  
**Augustus**, charities of to Italian orphans, 564.  
**Austria**, educational progress of, 275.  
**Aylmer**, 28, 32.  
**Bachtelen**, reform school at, 597.  
**Baker**, T. B. L., 789, 800.  
**Baltimore Public Library**, lectures, gallery, 220.  
**Barnard**, Henry, articles by, 155, 184, 191, 567.  
     obituary of Dr. Robbins, 279.  
     Papers on Ref. Ed., 816.  
     remarks at Norwich, 205.  
**Barnard**, J. G., article by, 537.  
**Barol**, Madame de, 510, 511.  
**Bazin**, M., agricultural brothers instituted by, 575.  
**Bath**, jail of, young criminals in, 770.  
**Beerneem**, reform school at, Mr. Hall's visit to, 648.  
**Beggars**, drowned by Diocletian, 564.  
**Beggary and vice of young in Belgium**, 621, 642.  
     how exterminated, 781.  
**Beguines**, 499.  
**Bengough**, George, 789, 800.  
**Belgium**, beggary and vice of young in, 621, 642.  
     international congress in, 231.  
     reformatories, 621.  
**Benefactions of Nicholas Brown**, 296—312.  
     Cyrus Butler, 305.  
     A. W. Gehren, 10.  
     Paul Farnum, 397.  
     George Peabody, 227.  
**Bervanger**, Mgr. de, St. Nicholas institution, 787.  
**Beuggen**, school at, 383.  
**Biography**; of Roger Ascham, 23.  
     Nicholas Brown, 291.  
     Valentin Haüy, 477.  
     Dr. Nicholas Medcalf, 23.  
     Dr. Harvey P. Peet, 366.  
     Abbe de la Salle, 437.  
     Jacob Vehrli, 389.  
**Birch**, the prose and poetry of, 462.  
     " Birch, the," a poem, 463.  
**Birmingham conference on reform schools**, 765.  
**Bishop**, Rev. F., on juvenile crime, 778.  
**Blind**, institutions for, 484.  
     labors of Valentin Haüy for, 477.  
**Blochman**, C. J., death of, 274.  
**Bologna**, early charity school at, 566.  
**Bond**, Robert, 23.  
**Booth**, Dr., lecture by, 252, 265.  
**Boston Farm School**, 811.  
     " House of Refuge, 811.  
**Botta**, Prof. V., article by, 513.  
**Braidwood**, John, 348.  
**Brain**, 241.  
**Bread**, manufacture of, 233.  
**Brenton**, Capt. E. P., 799.  
**Brethren of the Common Life**, 566.  
**Bristol**, Red Lodge at, 785.  
**Bristol diamonds**, 156.  
**British Association for Adv. of Science**, 147.  
**Brockett**, L. P., article by, 477.  
**Brothers' institute**, at Horn, 610.  
**Brougham**, Lord, on Mettray, 696.  
**Brown**, Nicholas, biography of, 291.  
**Brown University**, gifts of N. Brown to, 297.  
**Brussels**, philanthropic congress at, 233.  
     society for erecting model houses, 236.  
     early charity school at, 566.  
**Burton**, Warren, extract from, 456.  
**Bury St. Edmunds**, early school at, 566.  
**Butler**, Cyrus, gift to Butler Hospital, 305.  
**Butler Hospital**, Providence, 304, 309.  
**Byron**, Lady Noel, efforts for juvenile reform, 799.  
**Callemarchas**, or Callimachus, 45.  
**Cambray**, early dominical school at, 566.  
**Canada**, educational experience of, 240.  
**Cara**, rural school at, 599.  
**Carpenter**, Mary, on the Rough House, 10.  
     publications by, 814.  
**Carracci**, school of, from Lanzi, 467.  
**Carter**, Rev. T., on juvenile criminals, 776.  
**Cecil**, Sir William, 45.  
**Cernay**, agricultural asylum at, 751.  
**Cervetti**, Francis, 543.  
**Charitable institutions**, historical sketch of, 563.  
     at Rome, list of, 580.  
**Charity**, injurious in schools of design, 471.  
**Charity schools**, early, 566.  
**Cheke**, Sir John, 24.  
**Chess**, 29.  
**Children's friend society**, 789, 799.  
**Christian and heathen charities**, 564.

- Chicago, public high school at, 531.  
 plans of building, 536.  
 course of study, 536.  
 Chicago Reform School, 811.  
 Children, how retained at school, 246.  
 instructed after leaving school, 247.  
 Christian Brothers, account of, 437.  
 Christian Charity, Emperor Julian on, 505.  
 Christianity recognized by American law, 96.  
 Cicero, 27, 29.  
 Cincinnati House of Refuge, 811.  
 Citizenship as connected with education, 88.  
 City boys, 221, 338, 796.  
 City education, how disadvantageous, 323.  
 Civility, example of, 77.  
 Class instruction in Lyceums, 248.  
 Classical studies, value of, 199, 202.  
 Clay, Rev. John, on juvenile criminals, 773.  
 Coleman, Mr., account of Mettray, 730.  
 Coleridge, H., his "Northern Worthies," 23, 28.  
 Coleridge, S. T., 26.  
 College code of honor, 66.  
 College community, nature of, 66.  
 Common schools and Academies, 301.  
 Communication, power of, 324.  
 intellectual and moral effects of, 325.  
 value of, 325.  
 Competition at examinations, 267.  
 Composition, errors in teaching, 331.  
 Comidas, 158.  
 Conjugation of verbs in English, 101.  
 Connecticut Historical Society, library of, 281.  
 Connecticut State Reform School, 811.  
 Contents of Number 8, 8.  
 9, 289.  
 supplement to No. 9, 290.  
 Conversations-Lexicon, 6.  
 Country education, advantages of, 323.  
 Courage, instance of, 77.  
 Course of study, Chicago High School, 536.  
 Courtesies, Viscount de, death of, 647, 704.  
 labors of for Mettray, 572.  
 Cousin, V., report on education in Holland, 619.  
 Cowdery's Moral Lessons, 80.  
 Crabbe, Rev. G., poem on school mistress, 461.  
 Grammar, at University, 267.  
 Criminals, young, French patronage for, 661.  
 Cristall, Belisarius, 383.  
 Dangerous classes, how to reach, 705.  
 who they are, 706.  
 Dawson, J. W., article by, 428.  
 Deaf and Dumb, New York Inst. for, 347, 363.  
 Deaf and Dumb, education of, 358.  
 De Bazelaire, on Tata Giovanni's asylum, 583.  
 Delalleau, M., efforts of for Mettray, 636.  
 DeMille, J., 169.  
 "Village Schoolmaster" by, 169.  
 Demetz, M., labors for Mettray, 572.  
 Denmark, model dwellings in, 237.  
 Despotism, educational policy of, 87.  
 Dictionary, chained to desk, 117.  
 English, 161.  
 Webster's and Worcester's, 319.  
 Diocletian, drowning of beggars by, 564.  
 "District School, as it was," quoted, 456.  
 stanzas on, 458.  
 Dole, J., article by, 161.  
 Dowe, Thomas, obituary on, 284.  
 library of, 284.  
 Dramatic personation in expression, 57.  
 Drawing, errors in teaching, 337.  
 as an imitative art, 55.  
 instruction in, 469, 471, 473.  
 Ducpetiaux, Edward, 280.  
 account of Nachtelen, 597.  
 Curra, 599.  
 Mettray, 716.  
 Petit-Bourg, 658.  
 Petit-Quevilly, 749.  
 Reuho Haus, 608.
- Ducpetiaux, Edward, 280.  
 conc  
 Duffal  
 Dunlop  
 Dwelli  
 Dwig  
 Edinbu  
 "  
 "  
 Educa  
 corr  
 how  
 prin  
 shou  
 Educa  
 Elgin,  
 "  
 Elizab  
 taug  
 tran  
 Elizab  
 Elner  
 Elocut  
 Emoti  
 effec  
 form  
 insp  
 offic  
 Endow  
 Englas  
 early  
 educ  
 outli  
 poor  
 refer  
 Englis  
 "  
 "  
 Erasm  
 "Even  
 Europ  
 Evenr  
 Everet  
 Exami  
 Exami  
 Exclue  
 Expre  
 Expre  
 cult  
 Family  
 at M  
 Fancy  
 Farnu  
 Farnu  
 Feellu  
 an i  
 infl  
 in d  
 univ  
 influ  
 "  
 as g  
 Fellen  
 Femah  
 Femah  
 "  
 Firmis  
 Plank  
 early  
 Fledm  
 Food 1  
 "

- Fowles, W. B., teaching moral philosophy, 76.  
 Fox, W. J., remarks by, 250.  
 France, patronage societies in, 661.  
   reform education in, 572.  
   sisters of charity in, 501.  
 Free academy, 191.  
 Fuller, Thomas, 154.  
   on the good schoolmaster, 23, 155.  
   on recreation, 45.  
 Gaillon, central prison and reform school of, 744.  
   organization of, 745.  
   discipline at, 746.  
   farm of, 747.  
 Galen, quoted, 27, 42.  
 Gammell, Prof. W. article by, 291.  
 Gard, Mr., mentioned, 349.  
 Gasparin, M. de, on Mettray, 690.  
 Gehren, A. W., benefactions of to Rauhe Haus, 10.  
 Geography, Dr. Vogel's works on, 274.  
   in America and Germany, 274.  
 Germany, educational information as to, 278.  
 Gesture, 338.  
 Ghent, early charity school in, 566.  
 Gibbs, J., article by, 101.  
 Gifford, W., autobiography of, quoted, 254.  
 Glasgow industrial school, 803.  
   "  refuge for boys, 803.  
 Goldsmith, Oliver, 153.  
 Goodwin, Pres., remarks of, 195.  
 Gothic element in English language, 102.  
 Governmental reformatories, 642, 811.  
 Grammar, defects in teaching, 830, 843.  
 Grammar schools, English, 209.  
 Grammata, in Greek schools, 84.  
 Grant, Mr., 23.  
 Gratitude, example of, 78.  
 Greece, educational polity of, 84.  
 Greek language, introduced into England, 25.  
 Green, L. W., on Kentucky normal school, 217.  
 Grey, Lady Jane, 33, 39.  
 Grindal, William, 24.  
 Guille, Dr., treatment of Haüy, 482.  
 Guthrie, Rev. T., 802.  
 Gyroscope, Major Barnard on action of, 537.  
 Hale, Sir M., on parish industrial schs., 577, 797.  
 Hall, Robert, account of Gaillon, 744.  
   of Ruysselede and Beernem, 642.  
 Harlowe Reform School, 789, 800.  
   results of, 790, 791, 792.  
 Haskins, Rev. G. F., on St. Nicholas, at Paris, 748.  
   on San Michele, at Rome, 580.  
 Haüy, Valentin, memoir of, 477.  
 Haven, J., article by, 125.  
 Heathen charity, 563.  
 Hebert, M., testimony to Mettray, 695.  
 Hebrew educational polity, 83.  
 Hecker, work of on real schools, 275.  
 Hieronymians, 566.  
 High School, Chicago, 531.  
   "  "  public, 184.  
 Hill, M. D., account of Mettray, 729.  
   speech of at Birmingham conferences, 765.  
 Hofwyl school, 591.  
 Holland, criminal and reform institutions in, 619.  
   dwellings for the poor in, 237.  
 Home reform, 238.  
 Honor, college code of, 65.  
 Hood, T., on flogging, quoted, 464.  
 Hooker, N., 203.  
 Horace, quoted, 157.  
 Hornbook described, 465.  
 Hospitaliers, 498.  
 Hospitals, Mrs. Jameson on, 497.  
 Hotel-Dieu at Paris, 493.  
 Houses for the poor, 234.  
 Howard, on women hospital ass'ts, 499, 506.  
 Howard, on women as prison assistants, 507.  
 Hubbard, Mr., benefactions of, 211.  
 Ignorance should prevent citizenship, 99.  
 Illustrations; Rauhe Haus, 7, 9.  
   Nicholas Brown, 289.  
   N. Y. Deaf and Dumb Institution, 346.  
     ground plan, 364.  
   Dr. Peet, 367.  
   Paul Farnum, 397.  
   Cottage of Shenstone's school-mistress, 455.  
   Valentin Haüy, 477.  
   Chicago High School, ground plan, 536.  
     view of, 537.  
   Mettray, 696.  
 Imaginary Conversations, by W. S. Landor, 38.  
 Imagination, office of in expression, 52.  
   significance of, 53.  
   sphere of, 53.  
 Imitation, tendencies of in expression, 55.  
   in drawing, 55.  
   in music, 56.  
 Imprisonment before reform school, 735, 762.  
 Industrial reform school at Aberdeen, 802.  
 Infant Schools, in Sardinia, 513.  
 Infidelity, sectarian, 97.  
 Informer, false estimate of among students, 69.  
 Inner mission, in Germany, 6.  
   Brothers of, 8.  
 Insane, Butler Hospital for, gift to, 804.  
 Instruction, code of Christian Brothers for, 444.  
 International Philanthropic Congress, 231.  
   "  system of exchange, 233.  
 Ireland, educational statistics of, 1855, 272.  
 Jails; their statistics and influence on young;  
   Bath, 770.  
   Preston, 773.  
   Liverpool, 776.  
 Jameson, Mrs., on social state of women, 495.  
 Jardine, George, 133.  
 Jews, charity among, 563.  
 Johnson, Walter R., 141.  
 Journal of Education, 140.  
 Julian, Emperor, on Christian charity, 565.  
 Junius, Francis, 157.  
 Juvenile Asylum of Tata Giovanni, 583.  
 Juvenile offenders, 19, 770, 772, 773.  
   cost of, 775, 777, 783.  
   English, 1849, 797.  
   extirpated in Aberdeenshire, 802.  
   homes of, 774.  
   jail treatment of, 776.  
   operations with at Aberdeen, 780.  
   on reforming, 790.  
   origin of, 778, 779.  
 Kaiserswerth institution, account of, 487.  
 Kay, Dr., account of Vehrli, 394.  
   on Christian Brothers, 443.  
 Kent, James, quoted, 96.  
 Kentucky State Normal School, 217.  
 Kirchen Tag, 6.  
 Kirke White, error of in overstudy, 42.  
   tribute of to his teacher, 42.  
 Labor in reformatories, 612, 635, 640, 740.  
 Laborer's Friend, quoted, 231.  
 Laboratoire hospital, 503.  
 Lady Jane Grey, described by Ascham, 82.  
 Lady Temper, (Queen Elizabeth) 30.  
 Lamarque, Jules de, article by, 661.  
 Landor, W. S., Imaginary Conversation by, 38.  
 Language, scope of in expression, 58.  
   value of, 59.  
   compared with mind, 130.  
   errors in teaching, 326.  
   first lessons in, 340.  
   study of, 344.  
 Lanzi, school of Carracci described by, 467.  
 La Roquette, prison patronage society, 659.  
 Layng, Rev. H., poem on "The Rod," 462.  
 Learning, progress of, 262.  
 Lectures to United Asso. of Schoolmasters, 262.  
   courses of popular, 248.  
   in Baltimore, 227.  
 Legras, Madame. See Marillac.

- Leigh, Lord, on Mettray, 731.  
 Leisure not requisite for acquiring knowledge, 241.  
 "Leonard and Gertrude," account of, 414.  
 Letters to a young teacher, by G. Thayer, 71, 313.  
 Lewis Mechanics' Institute, 252.  
 Lexicographers. English, 161.  
 Library: economic, of Society of Arts, 271.  
     of Dr. Robbins, 281.  
     of T. Dowse, 284.  
     of Brown University, 299.  
     of Providence Athenæum, 304.  
     provision for, 226.  
 Liverpool, juvenile offenders at, 776.  
 Lloyd, Sarah, original of Shenstone's s. m., 466.  
 Lloyd, Robert, 160.  
 Locke, John, on parish industrial schools, 577.  
     " William. on juvenile crime, 779.  
 London, juvenile crime in, 779.  
 Loofborrow, H., noticed, 351.  
 Lunatic asylums, female assistants in, 506.  
 Lyceums a necessity, 242.  
     " subjects of instruction in, 250.  
     " not a charity, 250.  
 Lycurgus, 85.  
 Lytton, Sir E. B., address by, 259.  
 Magnanimity, example of, 79.  
 Maine State Reform School, 811.  
 Mann, Horace, on college code of honor, 65.  
     on Raube Haus, 614.  
 Marillac, Louise de, 501.  
 Martial, quoted, 36.  
 Maryland Historical Society, 228.  
 Maryland Reform School, 811.  
 Massachusetts, moral instruc. recognized by, 74.  
 Massachusetts Hist. Soc., Mr. Dowse's gift to, 284.  
 Mass. State Reform School for Boys, 811.  
     " " " " Girls, 811.  
 Mathematical heads, 27, 28.  
 McNeill, Sir J., on Miss Nightingale's services, 493.  
 Mechanics' Institute, Manchester, 251.  
 Mecklenburg, ignorance in, 1856, 278.  
 Medcalf, Dr. Nicholas, 23.  
 Medical practice and mental science, 135.  
 Mental labor, value of, 269.  
     " science as a branch of education, 125.  
 Mesnil-St-Firmin, founded, 575.  
 Mettray, history of, 667.  
     organization, 574, 669, 720, 731.  
     discipline, 671, 676, 712, 722, 732.  
     food; production of it, 672.  
     spirit of pupils, 575, 674, 703.  
     results of, 575, 695, 677, 702, 703, 708.  
     patronage after leaving, 696, 711.  
     thanks to pupils from town of Tours, 709.  
     health of, 712, 720, 727.  
     family system in, 703, 713, 722, 727.  
     Ducpetiaux' account of, 716.  
     expenses, 716.  
     condition of, 714, 718.  
     preparatory school at, 701.  
     colony from, 710.  
     farm of, 724.  
     timebill, 726.  
     Mr. Hill's account of, 729.  
     Mr. Coleman on, 730.  
     Lord Leigh on, 731.  
     London Times on, 735.  
     Mr. Hill's speech on, at Birmingham, 768.  
     Lord Brougham on, 696.  
     effects of political changes on, 699.  
     weekly assembly at, 707.  
 Milton, John, 28.  
 Mind, the study of, 128.  
 Model lodging houses, 234.  
 Modern languages, Am. schools lacking in, 277.  
 Moral instruction, in schools, 71.  
     importance of, 72.  
     special instruction in, 73.  
     recognized in school laws of Massachusetts, 74.  
     best method of giving, 74.  
 Moral quality of actions, 66.  
 Morrison College, 217.  
 Morysine, Sir Richard, 31.  
 Mulcaster, Richard, 158.  
 Muller, E., on model houses for the poor, 234.  
 Murray, Miss A., 797.  
 Music, study of, 27.  
     Galen on, 27.  
     Plato on, 27.  
     Ascham on, 27, 45.  
     Milton on, 28.  
     as an imitative art, 55.  
     errors in teaching, 337.  
     usefulness of, 572, 648.  
 Natural advantages, how to be managed, 335.  
 Natural History, educational aspects of, 428.  
 Nat. Hist. Soc. of Montreal, from lect. before, 428.  
 Nerva, charities of, 564.  
     colonized beggars' children, 564.  
 Netherlands, early educational charities in, 506.  
 Neudorf, reformatory-prison at, 507.  
 Neuhoof, Pestalozzi's school at, 409, 585.  
 New Jersey, Farnum preparatory school in, 397.  
     State Normal School, 221.  
     plan of, 220, 222.  
 New Orleans Reform School, 811.  
 N. York instit. for deaf and dumb, article on, 347.  
     plan of buildings for, 363.  
     instruction in, 358.  
     Dr. Peet's management of, 358.  
 New York City House of Refuge, 811.  
 New York Western House of Refuge, 811.  
 Nightingale, Florence, 498.  
 Normal School, Kentucky, 217.  
     " " New Jersey, 221.  
     " " female, Saxony, 274.  
     " " Kruitzlingen, 389.  
 Normal schools and other institutions, 417.  
     " " and society, 417.  
 Normal schools in Sardinia, 517.  
 Norris, Rev. J. P., on Ruysselede, 649.  
 Norwich Free Academy, 129.  
     dedication exercises at, 193.  
     plans of, 189, 192.  
     advantages of, 193.  
 Norwood industrial school, founded, 799.  
 Notices, 288.  
 Number, science of, 129.  
 Obedience, example of, 77.  
 Obituary, of Dr. Robbins, 279.  
     " " Thomas Dowse, 284.  
 Odeschalchi, Cardinal, benefaction of, 566.  
 Oldham Lyceum, 241, 251.  
 Olmsted, D., article by, 147.  
 Organization at Carra, 605.  
     Gaillon, 745.  
     Mettray, 574, 669, 720, 731.  
     Red Hill, 753.  
     Red Lodge, 736.  
     Reform schools, 790.  
     Raube Haus, 15, 607.  
     Ruysselede, 622, 642.  
 Oratory, and study of mind, 135.  
 Orbilius Pupillus, 157.  
 Orphan House at Trogen, 590.  
 Orphrasiere, colony from Mettray, 710.  
 Osborn, Rev. W. C., on juvenile criminals, 770.  
 Ostwald, reformed by Mettray graduate, 710.  
 Palmerston, Lord, on good penmanship, 26.  
 Palmerston's act, principles of, 779.  
 Parental duty in education, 99.  
 Paris, patronage society in, 659.  
 Parkhurst prison, 19, 760, 761.  
     defects of, 22.  
     imprisonment in, 762.  
     results of, 762.  
 Parochial schools, Scotch, 801.  
 Patronage societies, 661.  
     at Paris, 659.  
     at Mettray, 696.

- Paul, Vincent de, 501.  
 Paula, of Rome, 497.  
 Peabody, George, donation to Baltimore, 226.  
 Pedagogue, meaning of, 156.  
 Peet, Dr. H. P., notice of, 352.  
     memoir of, 366.  
 Pember, Robert, 25.  
 Pennmanship, importance of good, 26.  
 Pennsylvania Western House of Refuge, 811.  
 Personation, effects of in expression, 64.  
 Perceptive faculties, practicable training for, 339.  
 Persus, educational polity of, 87.  
 Pestalozzi, J. H., memoir of, 366, 401, 525.  
     " " Evening hour of a hermit," extracts, 411.  
 Pestalozzi-foundation, Dresden, pupils in, 274.  
 Petit-Bourg, agric. reform school at, 653.  
     discipline of, 656.  
     expenses of, 658.  
 Petit-Quevilly, reform school at, 749.  
     discipline at, 749.  
 Petrarch, anecdote of, 76.  
 Phelps, W. F., article by, 417.  
 Philadelphia House of Refuge, 811.  
 Philanthropic Society, London, 753, 798.  
     refuge of, 677.  
 Philological contributions, 100.  
 Phonetic and empirical methods in language, 341.  
 Pitt, W., proposal of for industrial school, 677.  
 Plato, 88.  
 Pliny, study of recommended, 26, 29.  
 Pol, M., director at Ruyssede, 642, 643.  
 Politeness, example of, 78.  
 Poor, Pestalozzi's views of education for, 587.  
     interest of in industrial schools, 684, 781.  
 Poor-laws, English, and education, 797.  
 Porter, Noah, remarks by, 200.  
 Portraits in Vol. III;  
     J. H. Wichern, 1.  
     William Russell, 139.  
     Nicholas Brown, 201.  
     Dr. Peet, 336.  
     Valentin Haüy, 477.  
 Pounds, John, 778.  
 Poverty a cause of crime, 12.  
 Powell, Rev. H. T., on juvenile reform, 783.  
 Preston jail, juvenile criminals in, 773.  
 Providence Reform School, 811.  
 Primary education in Sarlinia, 613.  
 Prison, Gallon central, 744.  
     " Rotterdam, for young, 619.  
 Prisons, women assistants in, 507.  
 Providence, public institutions in, 308.  
     " Athenaeum, 304, 306.  
 Public High School, article on, 185.  
     at Chicago, 531.  
 Public schools, objections to, 96.  
 Quantity, science of, 129.  
 Radewins, Florentius, 593.  
 Ragged Schools, at Edinburgh, 802.  
     at Glasgow, 803.  
 Raikes, Robert, 798.  
 Raube Haus at Horn, 5, 8, 10, 570, 603.  
     plans of, 7, 9, 570, 604.  
     daily routine, 15, 607.  
     results of, 16, 608.  
     anniversary at, 17.  
     Christmas at, 108.  
     Brothers' institute at, 571, 610.  
 Haumer, C., Von, life of Pestalozzi, abridged, 401.  
 Reformatory conferences, Birmingham, 766.  
 Reformatory schools, outline hist. of, 563.  
 Reading, defects in teaching, 328.  
 Real schools in Austria, 276.  
 Red Hill, reform school at, 753.  
     organization of, 753.  
     Mr. Turner on locating in country, 735.  
     visit to, 756.  
     condition of pupils, 757.  
     letter to pupils of, from Mettray boys, 758.  
     results of, 773.  
 Recreation a necessity, 342.  
 Red Lodge industrial school for girls, 785.  
     regulations of, 786.  
 Reform school, Benggen, 383.  
     Bachtelen, 597.  
     Ruyssede, 621.  
     Red Hill, 753.  
     Aberdeen, 780.  
     Red Lodge, (female) 785.  
     Rome, 606.  
     Hardwicke, 789.  
     Mettray, 607.  
     Carra, 599.  
     Petit-Bourg, 653.  
     Petit-Quevilly, 749.  
     Raube Haus, 5, 570.  
 Reform schools, qualifications for teacher of, 509.  
     history of, sketch, 507.  
     organization of, 790.  
     management of, 791, 793.  
 Reformed thieves, possible, 767.  
 Reformatory Education and Schools, 561, 817.  
     American, 811.  
     European, 567, 809, 816.  
     books on, 812, 817.  
     buildings, 599, 622, 669, 671, 789.  
     cellular confinement, 646, 786, 790.  
     cemetery, 647, 721.  
     cost, total, 602, 612, 637, 659.  
         per capita, 602, 612, 639, 723, 769.  
     daily routine, 607, 628, 726.  
     dietary, 600, 654, 673.  
     discipline, 650, 656, 733, 758.  
     dresses, 600, 619, 627, 654.  
     escapes, 618, 625, 813.  
     farm labor, 611, 673, 683, 725, 790.  
     family organization, 599, 615, 703.  
     festivals, 601, 608, 756.  
     instruction, industrial, 605, 644, 703.  
         religious, 645, 743, 787.  
         school, 600, 605, 630.  
     music, 615, 630, 644, 738.  
     officers, super, 620, 641.  
         assistants, 576, 641, 643, 658.  
         training of, 610, 641.  
     patronage, 590, 606, 661, 748.  
     punishments, 633, 656, 676.  
     rewards, 632, 646, 667, 704.  
     results, 634, 647, 671.  
 Reformatory institutions, English, 1857, 890.  
 Refuge for girls at Turin, 519.  
 Religion and the state, 96.  
 Religious instruction at Ruyssede, 646.  
     in Edinburgh United Industrial School, 804.  
     reformatory, power of, 615.  
 Representation in expression, 57.  
 Repression an educational error, 322.  
 Republicanism and education, 89.  
 Respectability, what, 766.  
 Retrospective Review, 89.  
 Rhetoric, teaching of, 833, 343, 844.  
 Robbins, Dr. T., obituary of, 276.  
 Roberts H., on dwellings and health of poor, 238.  
 Rod, the, poem by Layng, 462.  
     " use of, miscellaneous on, 463.  
 Rogier, C., 233.  
 Romans, charity among, 563.  
 Rome, first reform school at, 566.  
     early orphan asylum at, 563.  
     list of charitable institutions in, 573.  
     hospital San Michele at, 580.  
     asylum of Tata Giovanni, 583.  
     juggan, charity of, 503.  
     educational polity of, 86.  
 Rotterdam prison, school for young, 619.  
 Rousseau, influence of his works in Zurich, 404.  
 Russell, William, article by, 47, 321.  
     on expressive faculties, 40, 321.  
     educational labors of, 139.  
     portrait of, 139.  
     publications by, 144.

- Ruysselede, reform school at, 621.  
     organization, 622, 642.  
     daily routine, 628, 650.  
     instruction, 629.  
     discipline, 632, 646.  
     feelings of pupils, 633.  
     employments, 635, 639.  
     finances of, 638, 651.  
     results of, 649, 647, 650.  
     Recorder Hall's visit to, 642.  
     Rev. J. P. Norris' visit to, 649.  
 Salford free museum and library, 251.  
 Salle, Abbe John Baptist de la, 437.  
 Salvandy, M. de, on Mettray, 689.  
 Sampson, Abbot, school of, 591.  
 San Michele Refuge at Rome, 580.  
 Sardinia, public instruction in, 513.  
 Saxony, female normal school in, 274.  
 Scaliger, 31.  
 Schoenberg, Prince, his normal school, 274.  
 School and teacher in literature, 449.  
 School architecture; Chicago high school, 536.  
 School programmes, 277.  
 Schools of design, American why failures, 460.  
     how to conduct, 472.  
     and Pestalozzi compared, 413.  
 Rural school at Carra, 599.  
 School motives, Sir E. B. Lytton on, 259.  
 Schoolmaster, Ascham's, 37.  
     " in English literature, 155.  
     " the good, by T. Fuller, 155.  
     " village, by Goldsmith, 158.  
     " " Deille, 159.  
 Science of the human mind, 123.  
     " " why neglected, 128.  
     " " importance of, 129.  
     " application of to the arts, 249.  
 Scientific associations, 147.  
     " discovery advances the masses, 265.  
 Scotland, 239.  
     outline of reform education in, 801.  
     parochial schools, 801.  
     industrial schools, 801.  
     visits to reformatories in, 803.  
 Secondary schools in Sardinia, 518.  
 Seneca, quoted, 91.  
 Serranus, 31.  
 Severus, Alexander, his charity school, 564.  
 Shenstone, W., "The Schoolmistress," 449.  
 Shooting as an amusement, 44.  
 Shuttleworth, Sir J. Kay, address by, 245.  
     on Vehrli and Krutzlingen, 389, 394.  
 Sisters of Charity, 501, 575, 648, 717, 738.  
 Smith, Eldridge, on Norwich Free Academy, 293.  
 Societe paternelle, 667.  
 Society of Arts of London, examinations, 255.  
     economic library, 271.  
 Soeurs grises, 408.  
 Sparta, educational polity of, 85.  
 Speech, in expression, 58.  
 Spelling, instruction in, 318.  
     standard of, 318.  
 Stanford, Rev. John, 347.  
 Stanley, Lord, address by, 241.  
 Stansbury, Rev. A. G., notice of, 350.  
 State, educational power of, 82, 95, 100.  
 St. Louis Reform School, 811.  
 St. Mary in Aquiro, orphan asylum, 596.  
 St. Nicholas institution at Paris, 579, 737, 743.  
 Stock, Rev. T., and Sunday Schools, 798.  
 Stolcus, 26.  
 Stowe, C. E., on Rauhe Haus, 613.  
 Stretton-on-Dunsinore, results of, 767, 783.  
 Sturmius or Sturm, John, of Strasburg, 25, 33, 35.  
 Sunday in Reform Schools, 697, 707.  
 Sunday Schools, origin of, 798.  
 Superficial education to be avoided, 93.  
 Sweden, model dwellings in, 237.  
 Switzerland, 28.  
     model dwellings in, 237.  
     first in agricultural reform schools, 567.  
 Sydney, Sir Philip, 42.  
 Sykes, Col., address of, 258.  
 Tablet of honor, 681.  
 Taste, significance of, 59.  
     power of in expression, 60.  
     as influenced by culture, 60.  
 Tata Giovanni, juvenile asylum of, 583.  
 Teacher, demands on, 125.  
     social standing of, 269.  
     country, simple habits for, 395.  
     for reformatories, 574, 575.  
 Teachers' Institutes, 142.  
 Teaching, and science of mind, 138.  
     moral principles of successful, 386.  
     course of Vehrli's, 393.  
 Teutonic origin of English language, 101.  
 Thalassius, 35.  
 Thayer, G. F., articles by, 71, 313.  
 Theology as affected by study of mind, 134.  
 Thieves, life of, 769.  
     reform treatment of, 769.  
     expense of to community, 770.  
     gains of, 775.  
 Thomson, A., on Aberdeen reform schools, 780.  
 Toxophilus, or the School of Shooting, 24, 49.  
 Trajan, Emperor, public charities of, 594.  
 Translation, double, 29.  
 Transylvania Univ. and State Normal School, 217.  
 Trogen, orphan house at, 590.  
 Turin, male helpers in hospital at, 504.  
 Turk, von, 618.  
 Turner, Mr., on relig. test in Teachers' Asso. 263.  
 Turner, S., on reform for young criminals, 772.  
 Tusser, quoted, 157.  
 Udal, Nicholas, 157.  
 United Association of schoolmasters, 292.  
 United States, educational facilities in, 81, 94.  
     school attendance in, 82, 94.  
 University, idea of, 213.  
     " Orator, Cambridge, 24.  
 Usher, school, described by Lloyd, 169.  
 Utterance an instinct, 321.  
 Vehrli, Jacob, account of, 389.  
 Verbs, inflection of English, 101.  
     of Gothic, 102.  
     Anglo Saxon, 102.  
     German and Dutch, 103.  
 Vice and beggary in Belgium, 1851, 621.  
 Vienna, sisters of charity in, 590, 593.  
 Village Schoolmaster, by Goldsmith, 158.  
     " " Deille, 159.  
 Vogel, Dr. Carl, 273.  
 Wallis, T., on New England schools, 240.  
 Washington and the cherry tree, 75.  
 Watson, Sheriff William, labors at Aberdeen, 802.  
 Wayland, Francis, his Moral Science, 75.  
     remarks at Norwich, 193.  
 Webster, Noah, review of dictionary, 161.  
     merits of as a lexicographer, 163.  
 Wells, W. H., article by, 531.  
 White, H. K., poem on dame school, 460.  
 Whitworth, W., on education in the U. S., 239.  
 Wichern, John Henry, biography, 5.  
     portrait, 1.  
     founder of Rauhe Haus, 5.  
     publications of, 6.  
 William of Wykeham, influence of, 269.  
 Wilson, Rev. T., poem on "The Red," 464.  
 Wimmer, Dr., correspondence from, 273.  
 Winthrop, R. C., remarks on Mr. Dowse, 285.  
 Wirtemberg, reform schools in, 590.  
 Women, training of for social place, 485, 485.  
 Woolsey, Theodore, remarks at Norwich, 194.  
 Words, neglect of meaning of, 328.  
 Wordsworth, quoted, 100.  
 Working classes, lodging for, 234.  
 Wykeham, William of, 219.  
 Young, Arthur, founded Philanth. Soc'y, 796.  
 Zeller, C. H., 384.













